

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

#### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + Refrain from automated querying Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

#### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/



MARKATO.

700

550

From the Sibrary of Samuel Miller, STIS. In Memory of Sudge Samuel Miller Breckinridge, SSI '50. Presented by Samuel Miller Breckinridge Long, '03.

> Library of Princeton University.

Samt glliller. \$7:00

DEMONSTRATION

OF THE

# MESSIAS.

IN WHICH

The TRUTH of the CHRISTIAN RELIGION

Is Proved, against all the Enemies thereof;

But especially against the

# JEWS.

# In THREE PARTS.

By the Right Reverend Father in GOD, RICHARD late Lord Bishop of Bath and Wells.

The Second Edition Corrected.

With several large Indexes to the Whole.

AUGUSTIN. Epist. VOLUSIANO.

Venit Christus, complentur in ejus ortu, vitâ, dictis, factis, passionibus, morte, resurrectione, ascensione, omnia præconia prophetarum.

#### L O N D O N:

Printed for John Osborn and Thomas Longman in Pater-Noster-Row; RICHARD FORD in the Poultry; AARON WARD in Little Britain; and Samuel Billingsley in Chancery-Lane. 1726.

Digitized by Google

•

of the Million



# To the Right Reverend Father in God

# HENRY Lord Bishop of LONDON,

# One of the Lords of His MAJESTY's Most Honourable Privy-Council.

My Lord,

HE following discourse, such as it is, I do with all humility present to your Lordship. The argument it treats of commends it self, and challengeth regard from all the disciples of Jesus. The design of it is to prove our Jesus to be the Messias. This is a truth of the greatest moment, and as such was much insisted upon by the first preachers of the Christian Religion, and deservedly placed in our ancient Creed in the head of the other articles of our Christian Faith, and next after the article in which we own the belief of a God. And whatever defects there may be found in the following tract yet, as I am certain that I have chosen a most excellent subject, so I have pursued it with a sincere and honest intention.

IF any should find fault with this well-meant discourse, and condemn me even for that, for which I am not able so much as to accuse my self, it shall be so far from creating me any trouble, that it will not surprize me, as any thing that is new and strange is wont to do. Whatever my mistake or my faults may be, I shall be so far from being pertinacious in either of them, that no man shall be more welcome to me than he, who shall assist me in discharging me from them. Nor do I desire to live any longer in this world, than whilst I am disposed both to

find out the truth and to follow it.

I THINK my self more especially obliged to give your Lordship an account, how I spend my time. And that consideration moved me to prefix your Lordship's name to this following discourse. But that was not the only motive which induced me to it. All that have the honour to know your Lordship, have great cause to bless God for you. The Clergy of this great City are very sensible of their happiness. They look upon your Lordship as a great blessing, and a good The Jews have a saying in their books, that when the shepherd is angry with the sheep, he placeth over them a blind guide. Those who are under your Lordship's care justly look upon you as bestowed upon them as a token for good; they think themselves favoured greatly, in your Lordship, by the great Bishop and shepherd of their souls. I was willing to take this opportunity of testifying my most unseigned thankfulness to God for your Lordship. That God would long preserve your Lordship, and assist and prosper your endeavours for the good of his Church; that he would pour upon you the blessings of this life, and preserve you to the unspeakable glory of the next, is the most hearty prayer of,

My LORD,

Your Lordship's most dutiful

and obedient Servant,

RICHARD KIDDER.

JUN 28 1901



# The CONTENTS of the several Chapters in these Parts.

# PART I.

HE Preface, page 1.

The Introduction, p. 3.

Chap. I. Of the name Jesus,
p. 1. and Christ, p. 9.

Chap. II. Of the agreement between Jews
and Christians concerning the Messis 1 As, p. 13, and of the promises con-

cerning him, p. 15.

Chap. III. Of the Birth of CHRIST, as born of the family of David, p. 19, in Bethlehem, p. 20. of a virgin, p. 23, at the time foretold, p. 25, and when he was generally expected, p. 27.

Chap. IV. That the MESSIAS was to be a prophet, p. 30, and converse in Galilec, p. 32, come into the second temple, p. 34, be meek and just, p. 35, and do many wonderful works, ibid.

Chap. V. Of the miracles which Jesus

did, p. 36.

Chap. VI. The miracles of Jesus compared with those of Moses, p. 56, of the church of Rome, p. 59, and of A- pollonius Tyanæus, and some other heathens, p. 62.

Chap. VII. Of the sufferings of CHRIST, p. 67, of his crucifixion and death, p. 73, and burial, p. 90.

Chap. VIII. Of the resurrection of CHRIST, p.92, and the time when he rose, p.103.

Chap. IX. Of the ascension of Christ into heaven, p. 106, and the effusion of the Holy Ghost, p. 116, and the success of the Christian religion, p. 117. Chap. X. What was predicted of the

Chap. X. What was predicted of the Messias, was fulfilled in Jesus,

p. 129.

Chap. XI. The Christian religion is more excellent than that of Moses, p. 135, and far excelled the Pagan religion, p. 136. The law of Moses came from God, p. 138, it was not unalterable, p. 139, it was defective, p. 140, which defects are supplied by the gospel of Christ, p. 150. The application of the whole, p. 162.

# PART II.

Chap. I. THE Christian dostrine wants not sufficient motives of credibility; but the Jews have the same or greater reason to believe the four Gospels, which they have for receiving the writings of Moses, p. 1. An account of the principal causes of their infidelity, p. 20.

Chap. II. Our SAVIOUR vindicated for cursing the fig-tree, p. 36, 38. His prayer at his death vindicated, p. 41. The various accounts of the resurrection

reconciled, p. 43. How the temple was forty and fix years in building, p. 48. The prohibition of swearing vindicated, p. 46. The calling the loving one another a new commandment, p. 51. and the prohibition of polygamy and divorce are not inconsistent with the law of Moses, p. 52.

Chap. III. The belief of the perpetual virginity of the virgin Mary is not inconfiftent with Matth. i. 25. p. 54. These following texts vindicated and explained

Digitized by Google -

### The CONTENTS.

plained. Matth. xix. 17. Why callest thou megood? p. 56. Matth. xx. 23. To fit on my right hand and on my left is not mine to give, p. 58. Mark vi. 5. He could there do no mighty work, p. 59. Mark xiii. 32. But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no not the angels, which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father, p. 59. Mat. xii.40. As Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth, p. 61. Matth. ii. 23. He dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene. p. 64. Matth. v. 43. It hath been said Thou shalt love thy neighbour and hate thine enemy. p. 68. Joh. vii. 38. He that believeth on me, as the scripture saith, Out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. p. 70. Joh. xix. 28. That the scripture might be fulfilled, he saith, I thirst. p. 71. and ver. 36. That the scripture might be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken, p. 71. The mistakes charged on the Evangelists by the Jews vindicated, particularly, that Abiathar is put for Abimelech, Mar. ii. 26. p. 72. Barachias for Jehoida, Matth. xxiii. 25. p.73. and Jereremiah for Zechariah, Matth. xxvii. 9. The misapplying of texts of scripture charged on the Evangelists by the Tews vindicated, particularly, Mat. ii. 15. Out of Egypt have I called my fon. p. 76. and ver. 16, 17. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, In Ramah was there a voice heard, lamentation and weeping and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not. p.79. In all which the Evangelists are vindicated. ut prius.

Chap. IV. The sentence against Ananias and Sapphira, Acts v. vindicated. p. 84. Act. vii. 4. vindicated. p. 85. Act. vii. 14. vindicated, p. 86. Act. vii. 16. vindicated, p. 88. Act. vii. 42, 43. vindicated, p. 90. The time of Saul's reign,

Act. xiii. 21. defended, p. 91. St. Paul's circumcising Timothy, Act. xiii. 21. defended, p. 93. The quotacion of S. Paul, I Cor. xv. 54. Death is swallowed up in victory, defended, p. 95. St. Paul's expression, Gal. iii. 16. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made, He faith not, And to feeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ, defended, p. [85]. St. Paul's quotation, Eph. iv. 8. And gave gifts unto men, defended, p.[86]. St. Paul's quotation, Heb. i. 5. Thou art my ion; this day have I begotten thee, defended, p. [87]. St. Paul's expression, Heb. i. 6. Let all the angels of God worship him, reconciled with Heb. ii. 7. Thou madest him a little lower than the angels, and ver. 9. where'tis said, that JESUS was made a little lower than the angels. p. [88]. St. Paul's quotation of Jer. xxxi. 31. Behold the days come (saith the LORD) when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah, vindica-St. Paul's quotation, ted, p. [89]. Heb. x. 5. from Psal. xl. 6, 7. Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me, vindicated, p. [89]. difference between S. Paul and S. James concerning justification by faith and works reconciled, p. [92]. St. John vindicated, Rev. vii. 5, 6, 7, 8. in omitting the tribe of Dan, when he reckoned up the rest, p. [95].

Chap. V. St. Matthew's quotation, chap. i. 22, 23. Behold a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel,

vindicated, p. 97.

Chap. VI. The objections against the account, which the Evangeliss give of the genealogy of Jesus summed up, p. 108.

Some general considerations towards the abating the force of these objections, p. 111.

Chap. VII. St. Matthew's dividing his generations, ch. i. 17. vindicated, p. 112.

His expression, chap. i. 11. And Josias

begat

# The CONTENTS.

begat Jechonias and his brethren, vin-

dicated, p. 115.

Chap. VIII. St. Matthew's affirming, ch. i. 12. that Jechonias begat Salathiel vindicated, p. 120. also ver. 12. that Salathiel begat Zorobabel, p. 121. and ver. 13. that Zorobabel begat Abiud, vindicated, p. 123.

Chap. IX. St. Matthew's leaving out three kings at once, and affirming ver. 8. that Joram begat Ozias, vindicated,

p. 124.

Chap. X. St. Luke vindicated for inferting his fecond Cainan, chap. iii. 36.

p. 130.

Chap. XI. St. Matthew and St. Luke reconciled, tho' St. Matthew reckons but two and forty generations from Abraham to Jesus, and St. Luke reckons fix and fifty, p. 137. St. Matthew reckons the genealogy from Solomon the fon of David; but St. Luke from Nathan, p. 137. And Salathiel in St. Luke is not the same person, who is so called in St. Matthew, p. 140.

Chap. XII. The Evangelists vindicated, who derive Joseph both from Solomon and Nathan, and make him the son both of Jacob and Eli. p. 141.

Chap. XIII. The necessity of having the genealogy of Joseph proved, as in St.

Matthew. p. 145.

Chap. XIV. Of the opinion, that S. Luke gives the genealogy of JESUS by his

mother. p. 156.

Chap. XV. The following questions answered, 1. Why St. Matthew begins his
genealogy with calling Jesus the son
of David, and of Abraham? p. 113.
2. Why David is named before Abraham?
p. 164. 3. Why Jacob is saidhere, not
only to have begotten Judas, but his brethren also? p. 164. 4. Why David is
only called king? p. 166. 5. Why the
women are mentioned in the genealogy
of St. Matthew? ibid. 6. Why it is
said, that Josias begat Jechonias and his
brethren? p. 167.

Chap. XVI. Of the Elias, who was to come, and how the prophecy was fulfilled in John the Baptist? p. 169.

# PART III.

Chap. I. THAT the law of Moses is not of perpetual obligation, p. 1.
Objections answered, p. 19.

Chap. II. Of the prophecies of the peaceable times of the MESSIAS, p. 28. Objection from Mat. x. 34. I came not to fend peace, but a fword, answered, p.43.

Chap. III. Objection against Matth. xii. 3, 4. Have ye not read what David did, when he was hungry, and they that were with him? answered, p. 47. as also against Luke iv. 25. In the days of Elias, when the heavens were shut up three years and fix months. p.49. Objection against the purification of the virgin Mary answered. p. 50. Etion against the discourse of CHRIST, Mark x. 19. concerning what must be done to inherit eternal life, answered, Objection concerning the dep. 50. stroying t be herd of swine, Matth. viii. 32. answered, p. 51. Objection against Matth. xxvi. 32. that | Esus faid to his

disciples, I will go before you into Galilee, answered, p. 53. as also against the credibility of his ascension, ibid. Concerning the cock crowing, p. 55. Objection against Joh. xvi. 7, and 13. It is expedient for you, that I go away, &c. answered, p. 56. Concerning the time of the eating the passover, p. 59. Of Pilate's washing his hands, p. 65. Of the weight of the myrrh and aloes. ibid. Objection against Matth. xxviii. 18. All power is given to me in heaven and in earth, answered, p. 66. Obje-Etion against Joh. xxi. 25. If the things which Jesus did, should be written. every one, I suppose, that even the whole world could not contain the things which should be written, answered. p. 67. Objection against Gal. iii. 10. For as many as are of the works of the law, are under the curse; For it is written, Cursed is every one, that continueth not in all things, which are written

### The CONTENTS.

written in the book of the law to do them, answered, p. 69. Objection agam/t Heb. ix. 19. He sprinkled both the book, and all the people, answered, p.72. Objections against the epistle of St. James answered. p. 76.

Chap. IV. Of the Trinity, and objections

against it answered. p. 78.

Chap. V. The testimonies of Philo the Jew concerning the Trinity, and the Aspe. p. 93.

Chap. VI. Objections against Philo answered, wherein it is proved, that the Heathens had some knowledge of the Trinity, and that they had it from the Jews. p. 110.

Chap. VII. That the time is past, in which the Messias was to come, p. 129. proved from the scepter's being departed from Judah, and the lawgiver from between his feet. Gen. xlix. 10. p. 130. Objections answered, p. 138.

Chap. VIII. That the MESSIAS is come, proved, from the glory of the latter house being greater, than that of the former. Hag. ii. 6, 7, 8. p. 146. jections answered, p. 148.

Chap. IX. That the promise of the MES-SIAS is absolute and not conditional, p. 156. and that he came in the last days, p. 162. How times are divided

in scripture, p. 164.

Chap. X. An historical account of the false Christ's, p. 166. The various opinions among the Jews concerning the coming

of the Messias. p. 185.

Chap. XI. What methods are to be avoided by those, who attempt to convert the Jews, p. 187. What methods are tobe used, p. 189. Objections against such endeavours answered, p. 200. Conclusion, p. 203.

N.B. That the Annotations mark'd thus [\*] are added to the works of the Author by another hand, and were not in the former edition.

N.B. 2. That in the second Part, between page 96 and 97. are added twelve other pages, beginning thus [85] and ending thus [96].

## ACATALOGUE of the Authors, who are mentioned in this Book.

English Authors.

₹Udworth. Gregory. Hammond. Hornbeck. Lightfoot. Lively. Mede. More. Pocock. Speed's Cloud of Witnesses.

Latin Authors.

Abricius. Allix. Altingius. P. Amelot. Augustinus. Baronius.

Bellarminus. L. Brugensis. Buxtorfius. Casaubon. Cicero. Cotelerius. Cyprianus. Dickenson. Diodatus.

Edzardus de Shiloh. Constantinus, L'Empereur. Fagius.

Fortalitium Fidei.

Fuller.

Petrus Galatinus.

Gentius.

Glossa ordinaria. Hackspan. Heinfius. Hieronymus.

Hottinger. Hugo Grotius.

Juvenal.

Vulgar Latin Translation of the Bible.

Johannes à Lent. Limborch. Lipmannus. Livius.

Nicolaus de Lyrâ. Maij Synopsis. Petrus de Marcâ. Martialis.

Mills. L. de Modenâ. Munster. Noldius. Outram. Paræus.

Petitus.

Pliny's

## A Catalogue of Authors.

Pliny's Epistles. Pocock. Pontanus. Possinus. Prudentius. Raimundi pugio fidei. Salmeron. J. Scaliger. Selden. Seneca. Father Simon. Spizelius. Suctonius. Sulpitius Severus. Cornelius Tacitus. Tertullian. Tractatus Theologiæ Poli-Valerius Maximus. Victor Antiochenus Virgilius. Voisin. Vorstius. Vossius. Usferi Chronologia. Wagenselius.

#### Greek Authors.

Ælius Spartianus.
Marcus Antoninus.
Apuleius.
Arianus.
Barnabas's Epistles.
Basilius.
Berosus.
Clemens Alexandr.
Chrysostomus.
Epistetus.
Epiphanius.
Eusebius.
Herodotus.

Justin Martyr. Nicetas. Nonnus. Numenius. Origenes. Philostratus. Photius. Plato. Plutarchus. Procopius Gazæus. Septuagint Translation of the Bible. Socrates's History. Theodoret. Theophylact. Theophilus Antiochenus.

#### Hebrew, Jewish, and Oriental Authors.

Abchath Rochelim. Heb. Aben Amram. Heb. Aben Ezra. Heb. Abravenel. Heb. Abu'l Pharagius. Arab. J. Albo Ikkarim. *Heb*. Baba Kama. *Heb*. R. Bechai. Heb. Benjamini Itinerarium. H. Bereshith Rabba. Heb. Bilibra Veritatis. Heb. Liber Cosri. Heb. Elias Levita. Heb. Rabbi David Gantz. Heb. Jacchides. Heb. Talkut. Heb. Flavius Josephus. Greek. Josephus Ben Gorion. Heb. R. Solomon Jarchi. Heb. Rabbi Isaak Chizuk Emunah. Heb.

Juchasin. Heb. Rabbi David Kimchi. Heb. Lipmmanni Nizachon. H. Maimonides. Heb. Liber Manuscriptus Lusitanicus. Heb. Markanti. Heb. Menasseh Ben Israel. Lat. Michal Jophi. Heb. Midrash Tehillim. Heb. Mishneh. Heb. Nizachon Lipmanni. Heb. Nizachon Vetus. Heb. Persick Translation of the Bible. Philo Judæus. Greek. Pirke Rabbi Eliezer. Heb. Rittangel. Heb. Samaritan Translation of the Bible. Seder Olam. Heb. Seder Olam Rabba. Heb. Seder Zeraim. Heb. Sepher Hammitsvoth. Heb. Shebet Jehuda by Gentius. Heb. Siphra. Heb. Syriack Translation of the Bible. -Talmud Babylonicum. Chald. Talmud Hierosolymitan. Chald. Targum Hierosolymitan. Chald. Targum Jonathanis Ben Uzziel. Chald. Targum Onkelosi. Chald. Toldoth Jesu. Heb. Zemach David. Heb. Zohar. Heb.

# THOSE OF

# Names of the Subscribers to Bishop KIDDER's Demonstration of the MESSIAS, which came to the

Undertaker's Hands.

HE Reverend Mr. Arrowsmith. The Reverend Mr. John Antleby. The Reverend Mr. Francis Arnet Vicar of Holbeach, in Lincolnshire. The Reverend Mr. William Arnold.

Mr. Peter Arbouin. Bookseller in Mr. Robert Akenhead, Newcastle.

The Reverend Charles Brent, M. A. Rector of Christ-Church in Bristol.

The Reverend Mr. Thomas Bures. The Reverend Mr. Theodore Bolten.

The Reverend Mr. Brittan.

The Reverend Mr. William Bisset.

The Reverend Mr. John Barber. The Reverend Mr. Samuel Birch, of Holbeach, Lincolnshire.

The Rev. Mr. John Billingsley, of Dover. The Rev. Mr. Humphry Barrow, 7 Books.

John Bernard, Esq; Mr. John Bodicoat.

Mr. James Benson. Mr. Tho. Beak, of Stourmouth in Kent.

Mr. James Bradley, Merchant in London.

Mr. Stamp Brooksbank.

seller.

Mr. Jeremiah Battley, of London Book- The Reverend Mr. John Gill. seller.

C. The Reverend John Capon, LL. D. The Reverend Mr. John Green. Rector of Waltham-Abbey.

The Reverend Mr. Chapman, of New-

College.

The Reverend Mr. Cockshut.

The Reverend Mr. Robert Chorley.

The Reverend Mr. John Cox.

Mr. Edward Collet. Mr. Henry Collet. Mrs. Frances Cockayn. Mr. John Catcher, Merchant in London. Mr. William Cray.

Messieurs Clark and Hett of London Booksellers.

Mr. Thomas Cox, of London Bookseller. Mr. William Cossley, of Bristol Book-. seller.

D.

The Reverend Mr. Delarócque.

*Mr*. Thomas Davis.

Mr. John Drew. Mr. John Darby, of London Bookfeller. Mr. Peter Dunoyer, of London Bookseller.

The Reverend John Evans, of Deal, M. A.

The Reverend Mr. John Evans. Mr. Sam. Edwards, Merchant in London.

Mr. George Eaton.

The Reverend Mr. Henry Francis. Thomas Ford, of Ashburton  $E_{q_3}$ 

Mr. Ebenezer Fletcher.

Mr. Benjamin Fuller,

Mr. Francis Fayram, of London Bookseller.

Mr. John Brotherton, of London Book- The Reverend Mr. Goddard, of New-College.

The Reverend Mr. Richard Goodwin.

The Reverend Mr. Strickland Gough.

Mr. Joshua Gee. Mr. Thomas Goddard.

Mr. John Gopp.

Mr. George Gray.

Mr. Peter Green.

H.

The Reverend Mr. Thomas Hawes. The Reverend Mr. Jer. Hunt, 2 Books. The Reverend Mr. Joseph Hill,

The

### A List of the Subscribers.

The Reverend Dr. Holcomb, Prebenda-The Reverend Mr. John Oakes. ry of Canterbury. The Reverend Mr. Hunt, of Hart-Hall. Mr. Christoper Oxley, Surgeon. The Reverend William Hyde, A. M. The Reverend Mr. Pomfret Rector of Vicar of Long-Sutton, Lincolnshire. The Reverend Mr. John Hubbert. Chittenden in Kent. The Reverend Mr. Edward Henwood. The Reverend Mr. Samuel Price. The Reverend Mr. William Prior. The Reverend Mr. Charles Hardestee. Mr. Richard Holmes. The Reverend Mr. Edward Pain. Mr. John Hiat. Mr. John Preston. Mr. Robert Harrison. Mr. William Hinchcliffe, of London Mr. Henry Proctor. Bookseller. *Mr*. Pugh. James Pettit, of Darking Gent. The Reverend Mr. George Jacomb Vicar Mr. J. Pemberton of London Bookseller. of Houghton. The Reverend Mr. Walter Johnson of The Reverend Mr. Thomas Ridgley. The Reverend Mr. James Read. Gedney in Lincolnshire. Messieurs William and John Innys, Book- The Reverend Mr. Tho. Richardson. The Reverend Mr. Sayer Rudd. sellers in London. Mr. Benjamin Roberts. The Reverend Mr. Killinghall. Mr. Tho. Russel of London Merchant. The Reverend Mr. William King. S. M. Mr. C. Rivington of London Bookseller. The Reverend Mr. Joseph King, of Rum-*Sir* Philip Sydenham, *Bart*. Mr. David Ketcherel of London, Mer-The Reverend Mr. Robert Smyth of Pcchant. terborough. The Reverend Mr. Edward Sandercock. Mr. James Saunders.
Mr. Theodore Saunders, of London The Reverend Mr. Lynch, Rector of All-Hallows Breadstreet. The Reverend Mr. Tho. Leavesley. Bookseller. Mr. Jonathan Lawton. Mr. Joshua Lyons. The Rev. Mr. John Tren of Colchester. Mr. James Leman. The Rev. Mr. Abraham Taylor. Mr. Benjamin Lorkin, Merchant in Lon- Mr. William Taylor. Mr. Bern. Lintott, of London Bookseller. Mr. Gerard Van-Neck. Mr. John Leech, Bookseller in Knutsw. The Reverend Mr. Waddell, Vicar of Preston in Kent. The Reverend Daniel Mayo, M. A. The Reverend Mr. Nicholas Warren. The Reverend Mr. Abraham Mulliner. The Reverend Mr. George Wigget of The Reverend Mr. Joseph Morris. Hatfield Broad-Oak in Essex. The Rev. Mr. Tho. Mole, of Uxbridge. *The Reverend Mr*. Edward Wallin. Mr. William Moore. The Reverend Mr. Samuel Wilson. Mr. Matthew Wilkins. Mr. Edward Mills. Mr. Henry Miles. Mr. Daniel West. Mr. Ebenezer Musse. Mr. Richard Wilkin, of London Book-The Reverend Mr. Newton, of Winghum Mr. John Wyat, of London Bookseller. Mr. Tho. Woodward, of London Book-The Reverend Mr. John Newman.

The Reverend Mr. John Noble.

Mr. Anthony Norris.

Mr. Roger Warne, Bookseller in Chip-

pinham.



#### THE

# PREFACE.



T is said of our Blessed Saviour, upon his healing a withered hand (when the Jews watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath-day, that they might accuse him) that he looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts. Mark iii. 5. He looked on them with anger, and with com-

passion at the same time. Thus have all the sincere disciples of Jesus been affected towards that people ever since our Saviour's time, and very fit it is that they should imitate their great lord and master. He that loves his lord, and his holy religion, cannot but he moved with some degree of anger when he considers how that people persecuted Jesus and his followers, and have ever shewed an unplacable hatred against the incomparable religion, which they planted in the world. They do in their books, which we have in our hands, reproach our Blessed Saviour; and with great hitterness disparage and calumniate those holy writers, which give us an account of our Saviour's birth, of his life and doctrine; and these practices of theirs have been an occasion of many evils which have befallen them, and have drawn upon them the anger of the christian states or kingdoms where they have lived. Nor is it strange at all that christians should be moved with some degree of indignation against those men who scots at that Jesus whom they worship.

BUT how excusable soever this indignation be, yet it ought to be attended with pity and compassion. This we may learn from the example of Jesus, who was grieved for the hardness of their heart, and did to the last breath pray for these men who had no pity or compassion upon him. And the apostle of the Gentiles, who had been greatly persecuted by the Jews, was so far from being unconcerned for them, that he most solemnly professed that he had great heaviness and continual sorrow in his heart upon their account. And so great was his charity that he could wish himself accursed from Christ for their sakes. Rom. ix. 1, 2, 3.

AND whatever opinion christians may have entertained, concerning the conversion of the nation of the Jews; it must be granted that it is our duty

duty to do all we can toward the gaining so good an end. And whatever is done to this purpose, by any christian states, or particular persons, however it may miss of its desired effect, will not fail of a It is very well known where the Jews are obliged to hear the reward. sermons or lectures of the christians: And there are those charitable persons in the church who would much rejoice to find them under the same obligation in other states and christian kingdoms also. A lecture for this very end and purpose might have good effects: For though it be not effectual where it is used, yet it is no hard thing to assign very considerable reasons how that comes to pass. Thus much is certain, that if we would gain the Jews it will become us to do all in our power to that purpose: and though some men have other obligations, yet every christian is obliged, in his dealings with them, to use them with great humanity, to trade with them with exact justice and simplicity, and to adorn our religion by an exemplary life and conversation.

FOR the following discourse, I am to acquaint the reader that I do not send it abroad as a just tract designed only against the Jews. Had this been my design I should have taken other methods. I intended the advantage of the christian reader also; and hope that the younger among them may receive some benefit thereby. It is our common christianity which I here desend; and I have attempted to explain some dissipult places of the holy writ which have been perverted by some men, and scoffed at by others. In all that I have done I have sincercly pursued after truth; if I have any where mistaken I shall most readily and thank-

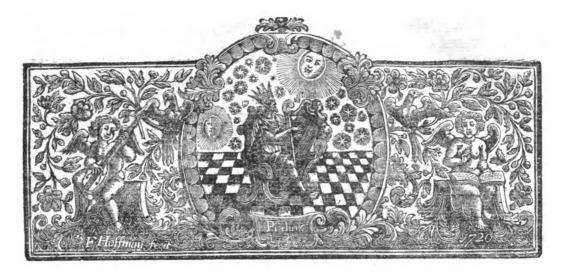
fully bearken to him who shall shew me my error.

I do intend a second part, in which I design to examine the objections which we find in the Jewish writers against the truth which I have defended in this sirst, and against the religion which Jesus taught. I shall in that particularly consider their pretences for their unbelief: and they are such as these, viz. That their law is of perpetual obligation; that the promise of the Messias was conditional; and the time of his coming not fixed; that there are some prophesies relating to the Messias and his

times not fulfill'd in Jesus, &c.

I do very well know that there are in the church of England a great number of men who are better fitted for such an undertaking than I am: I should be so far from esteeming it a disappointment if any of them would prevent me, in what I design farther, that it would be matter of rejoycing to me. And if what I have done already may be but an occasion to excite some other person to do better, I shall think my time well spent, and be very well content that what I have here offered should be laid aside or overlooked.

THE



THE

# INTRODUCTION.

DO intend with God's affistance, in the ensuing discourse, to prove that our Jesus is the Christ: and shall by way of introduction to this weighty argument reslect something upon the words of St. Peter to the Jews, Act. ii. 36. And for the better understanding those words it is to be remembered that our Jesus, before he lest his disciples, promised them the presence and the aid of the Holy Ghost; and a little before his ascension

into heaven, he commanded them that they should not depart from Jeru-salem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which (saith he) ye have heard of me. Act. ii. 4.

Nor did our Saviour fail to make good his promise; but when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they are filled with the Holy Ghost, and spake with divers tongues as the spirit gave them utterance. This happened at Jerusalem at a great solemnity, and at a time when the devout and religious of several nations were together in the city, who heard the apostles speak in the language of their several countries, the wonderful works of God. And they were all amazed, and were in a doubt, saying one to another, what meaneth this? ver. 12. And there were among the rest very evil men that were so malicious as to mock and say, these men are full of new wine. ver. 13.

This calumny St. Peter disproves, and lets them know that they spake by the power of the Holy Ghost. And then he preaches to them the resurrection and ascension of Jesus, who was approved of God by miracles, and wonders and signs: And he gives them to understand, that as this Jesus had received of the father the promise of the Holy Ghost, so he had also now bestowed this Holy Ghost upon them, the effect of which gift they saw and heard: and thereupon concludes (as well he might) that he

Digitized by Google

is the Messias that was promised. Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ, Act. 36. 2

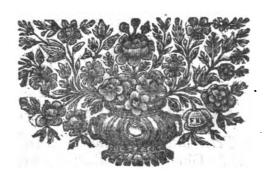
BEFORE I proceed I shall take notice of the word emolnon: God hath made that same Jesus: That is, says Chrysostome κατέςησεν, he hath ordained or appointed Jesus to be Lord and Christ. And the Greek word will well bear this sense as well as the Hebrew; Thus it is said of our Saviour, Mar. iii. 14. emoinos dudena, i. e. he made twelve, or, ordained twelve, as we translate it well. He chose twelve says the Syriac version. Again Gen. xli. 34. "''' ''' '' Καὶ ωοιησάτω Φαεσω καὶ καταςησάτω, as the lxxii. render it. That is, let Pharaoh make and appoint officers; and not as we have rendered it, let Pharaoh do this, and let him appoint. Again, It is the Lord that advanced Moses and Aaron (or made) as it is in the margin of 1 Sam. xii. 6.

AND we usually speak after this manner: when men are advanced to dignity and office they are said to be made what they are afterwards called. To make a conful, a captain, or general, signifies no more than to ap-

point them and raise them to those dignities and offices.

So that the meaning of these words is as if the apostle had said, let all the Ifraelites therefore be assured of this great and very evident truth, that that Jesus, whom the Jews have crucified, is by God the Father (who hath raised him from the dead, and taken him up to his right hand) constituted and appointed head of the church. and instated in the kingly office of the Messiah.

THAT Jesus is the Christ, or Messiah, that was foretold, is that which the apostle would have the Jews be assured of: and this was the doctrine, which the first preachers of christian religion did mainly insist upon: It being not only an article of the christian faith, but such an one as is the foundation of the rest. Who is a liar, says St. John, but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? 1 Joh. ii. 22. We read that Saul confounded the fews which were at Damascus, proving that this is very Christ, Act. ix. 22. He preacheth the same doctrine at Thessalonica, Act. xvii. 3. And at Corinth, Act. xvili. 5. And of Apollos we read, that he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publickly, shewing by the scriptures that L Jesus was Christ, ver. 28.



 $ADE_{-}$ 



A

# DEMONSTRATION

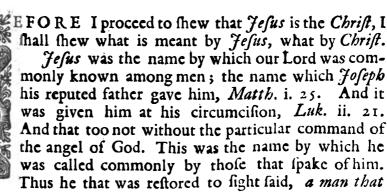
OF THE

# MESSIAS.

\*

## CHAP. I.

Of the name Jesus: That this name by which our Saviour was called, and distinguished from other men, is no objection against the prediction, Isa. vii. 14. The importance of the name Jesus. In what sense our Lord is said to be a Saviour. His salvation compared with the deliverances mentioned in the old testament. Of the word Christ. Of anointing things and persons, and the design of it. Of the anointing of Jesus. Some account of the Fewish constitutions about anointing with their holy oil.



is called Jesus made clay, &c. Joh. ix. 11. This was a name in use among the Jewish people, and a name which others had as well as our Jesus; and

we have mention of several men to whom that name was given, Col. iv. 11. Heb. iv. 8. And the Jewish writers mention him by the name Jesus; indeed they call him by the word ישוי but not but not they; They cut off the last letter, as Elias Levita 2 tells us, because they do not acknowledge him to be a saviour. But yet they do not deny that he was known and commonly called by the name Jesus which he received at his circumcision.

It is true indeed it was foretold that a virgin should bring forth a son, and it is said they shall call his name Emmanuel, Matth. i. 23. That these words are meant of our Saviour is also undeniable. And though the Jews object against us from this place, that either the words were never meant of our Saviour, as the evangelist will have them, or that they were never verifyed in him; because he was called by the name Jesus, and not Emmanuel;

though, I say, they may thus object, yet they do but trifle in it.

For, if they look into their Prophets, they will find b, that being called, or called by such a name, does not infer that the thing or person so to be called shall be commonly known by that name, as a man is by the name by which he is known and distinguished from other men. Tis enough that they shall be that which they are called, and that what is foretold shall truly belong to them; as will appear from the following places, Isa. i. 26. lx. 14. lxii. 4. Fer. iii. 17. Ezek. xlviii. 35. Zech. viii. 3. There are many things said of our Saviour which serve to describe his office, and acquaint us with his persections and relation, and were never intended for his name, by which he was to be known among men. His name shall be called wonderful, counsellor, the mighty God, the everlasting father, the prince of peace, Isa. ix. 6. That is, the Messiah shall be all this, though not commonly known and called by these names c.

For the word Jesus, if we consider its Hebrew original, it signifies a saviour; and for that reason this name was given to our Lord because he was to save his people from their sins, Matth. i. 21. And the angel tells the shepherds, unto you is born this day in the city of David a saviour, Luk. ii. 11. And the Apostle says no less when he says, God hath raised up unto Israel a saviour Jesus, Act. xiii. 23. This word saviour imports very much, and is very agreeable to the great design of our Lord's appearing. Lactantius d observes that the name Jupiter, that the heathens gave their God, was unbecoming a deity. For Jupiter being no more but Juvans pater, an helping father, it was a term of diminution. For one man may help another: And 'tis no great matter to help; but to fave and deliver imports much. Non intelligit beneficia divina, qui se tantummodo à Deo juvari putat; He hath too mean and low an apprehension of the divine benefits that thinks God does only help him. This is to attribute too much to our selves and too little to God. He that helps me adds his strength to mine, but he that saves shews his own power only. We were without all help and hope too: our Lord rescued us, and saved us, we contributed nothing toward our deliverance. He is the saviour of mankind: our intire deliverance is to be ascribed to him: and 'twill well become us to consider, how justly this name of Jesus belongs to him, and to meditate a while upon the greatness of that salvation and deliverance which our Lord hath wrought for us.

Now

Eli. Levit. Thisbit. p. 151.

b Orig. contra. Cels. l. 1. 5 Theophylast. in Matth. i. 23.

Lastan. institut. l. 1. c. xi.

Now our Lord might well be called Jesus, a saviour.

1. As he hath published and made known to us the gospel, which is the power of God unto salvation: our Lord hath brought life and immortality to light, and hath shewed us the way to eternal life. There was no express promise of eternal life in the law of *Moses*: temporal blessings were promised to the obedient, but they had no assurances given them of a glorious immortality. The way to this our Lord hath revealed plainly.

2. He procured this for us also, he bought it with no less price than his precious blood. And now we stand reconciled to God by the death of his son, and then we may justly expect to be saved by his life. Rom. v. 10.

3. He confers this salvation upon us: he is set down at God's right hand, and hath received all power in heaven and earth. God hath exalted him with his right hand to be a prince and a saviour, to give repentance unto Israel, and forgiveness of sins, Act. v. 31. We receive from him the power of his grace here, and justly expect from him the glorifying of our souls and bodies hereafter.

And it will well be worth our while to enter into a meditation of this falvation and deliverance which our Lord hath wrought for us. And to that purpose let us compare it with those deliverances which were wrought of old for the people of the Jews. For those deliverances may well be called salvations, and those men that were the instruments of them may be called saviours; for so they are called in the holy scripture. 2 King. xiii. 5. Neh. ix. 27. with the lxxii. Judg. iii. 9, 15.

A MONG those saviours there was one who was not only an eminent type of our bleffed saviour, but who had the same name that was given our Saviour at his circumcission; And that was Joshua the son of Nun: For Joshua and Jesus are the same name, and Joshua is called Jesus, Heb. iv. 8. and view Neb. viii. 17. 'Tis true indeed his name was Hoshea, and so he is called; but upon his being chosen to spy out or search the land of Canaan, Moses changed his name from Hosbea to Joshua; Num. xxiii. 16. i. e. he made an honourable alteration of his name (as Philo e observes) when he added to the name he had the first letter of the Tetragrammaton: and he made this addition to his name, by putting to it the first letter of the name of God, when he sent him to search the land of Canaan; so that for the future he is a faviour, and by God's appointment was set apart to introduce the Ifraelites into the land of promise: Moses the lawgiver did not bring the Israelites into the promised land; this was left for Joshua to do. Now that land was a type of heaven; and Joshua, of our Jesus; and what the law did not, that the gospel does: It hath brought life and immortality to light. And though Moses, who brought the Israelites out of Egypt, and Joshua, who introduced them into the good land, and others who afterward fought their battels, were great deliverers of their people, yet all these deliverances put together come greatly short of that which our Lord hath wrought.

I. For these deliverances were but temporal, our Saviour's is eternal. Those worthies fell asleep, and then the Israelites fell under the malice and power of their enemies, and ill neighbours; then were they liable to the impressions of their enemies, who did inslave their people, and sack

their

ε Ούτω μετιχαςάχθη τὸ τὸ τῶ λιχθέντ 👁 νόμωτμα πρὸς ίδιαν Βελτίσια. Philo Julæ de mutat. Nominum.

their city, and burn their temple, and carry them away to a strange land. Their enemies were not dismayed with the great names of Moses and Joshua, Gideon and Sampson. These great men were dead and could yield no succours to the oppressed Israelites: and, whatever terrors these men impressed upon their enemies while they lived, their names will strike none now. The Chaldeans are not over-awed by the rod of Moses, or the strength of Sampson: these deliverers can afford no relief or help: 'tis otherwise with us. Our Lord is the author of eternal salvation, Heb. v. 9. And hath obtained an eternal redemption for us, Heb. ix. 12. Those saviours died and lest their enemies behind them: but Jesus ever lives to make intercession for us, Heb. vii. 25. Our Lord arose from the dead, and is gone before us into heaven, and is there concerned on our And this is unspeakably to our comfort and advantage. Old behalf. Jacob in his last words to his sons, tells them what shall befal them in the last days. Of Dan he foretels that he shall be a serpent in the way, an adder in the path, that biteth the horse heels, so that his rider shall fall backward, Gen. xlix. 17. These words seem to refer to Sampson, who delivered his people from the Philistines; but then 'tis worth our observing what follows; where the good man's foul fallies out into another and greater contemplation: I have waited for thy salvation, O Lord, ver. 18. that is, as the Jews f expound it, as if he had said; I do not expect the deliverance of Gidcon and Sampson, which will be but a temporal deliverance; but thy salvation O Lord is that which I expect, for thine is an eternal salvation. These words seem to refer to the salvation of the Messtas, and do very well deserve to be considered farther?: 'Tis agreed that in the foregoing words Jacob speaks of Sampson: He was a Nazarite, and a great deliverer of his people. And besides what he did for his people in their life-time, he destroyed their enemies at his death. In several respects we may suppose him a type of our blessed Saviour: And we may very well suppose him so to be, even as he is considered here as a serpent by the way. For Philo the Jew h hath directed us to understand that expression of a serpent, not with reference to the serpent which beguiled Eve, or voluptuousness: but with respect to the brazen serpent of Moses, a symbol of temperance and fortitude, and (as I shall shew afterwards) a very remarkable type of the Messias. And Jacob looks farther than Sampson; he looks off from that Nazarite, to our Nazaren, from that temporal deliverer to our Jesus, who is the author of eternal salvation. I shall give you the sense of these words in the words of one of the ancients, who brings in Jacob speaking thus; Nunc videns in spiritu comam, &c. i. e. I foreseeing in the spirit Sampson the Nazarite nourishing his hair, and triumphing over his slaughtered enemies, that like a serpent and adder in the way he suffered none to pass through the land of Israel; and if any were so hardy, confiding in the swiftness of an horse, as to adventure like a robber to spoil it, he should not be able to escapeseeing this Nazarite so valiant, and that he dyed for the sake of an harlet, and dying destroyed our enemies. I thought, O God, that he was the Christ thy son: but because he dyed and rose not again, and Israel was afterward carried away captive, I must expect another saviour of the world

F Vid. Targum Hierosol. & Jonath. in locum.

B Phil. Jud. de agricultura.

B Vid. Hieronym. adversus Jovinianum. L. 1.

Hieronym. Quæst. Hebr. in Genes.

and

and of my posterity; that Shilo should come, to whom the gathering of the

people shall be.

AGREEABLE to what hath been said are these words of Zacharias, who said of the Lord God of Israel that he had raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David, Luk. i. 69. By horn of salvation for us, is denoted the kingdom and power of our blessed Saviour: and for the better understanding of this expression, it is to be remembered that dominion and power is expressed by horn among the Hebrew writers. Thus in the prophet Daniel the ten horns are said to be ten kings, chap. vii. 24. Again, I will make the horn of David to bud, Ps. exxxii. 17. Instead of horn the Chaldee paraphrast k hath one of the learned Jews, and a bitter enemy to christianity, confesses that that verse speaks of the Messias that was to come. So that the horn of salvation does intimate to us the greatness of that deliverance which our Lord hath wrought.

BESIDES 'tis said of Simeon, that when he took Jesus into his arms, and blessed God, he said, Lord now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace according to thy word: For mine eyes have seen thy salvation, Luk. ii. 29, 30. which agrees well with the words of Jacob; I have waited for thy salvation.

vation, O Lord.

INDEED Aben Ezra 1 tells us from R. Isaac, that Jacob having likened Dan to an adder by the path, did thereupon fall into a fear, and then (as fearful men are apt to call for help and deliverance) he added, I have waited for thy salvation, O Lord: and another of the Jewish commentators m would have those words to contain the prediction that Sampson's eyes should be put out by the Philistines, and then that they imply that prayer of Sampson at the last. O Lord God, remember me, I pray thee, and strengthen me, I pray thee, only this once, O God, that I may be at once avenged of the Philistines for my two eyes, Judg. xvi. 28. It is enough that I have named these opinions, I shall not need resute them, for besides that their authority is not great, who are the authors of them, they are not backed with any reasons at all. But to return; as those deliverances of Joshua and the other worthies were but temporal, whereas our Lord's was eternal; So,

II. They were but carnal, but our Lord's is spiritual. They delivered their people from thraldom and bondage, the yoke of a tyrant, the tribute of an oppressor, the chains and fetters of some potent prince. But our fesus saves his people from their sins, Matth. i. 21. He was manifested to take away our sins, I Joh. iii. 5. And to destroy the works of the Devil, ver. 8. Or as Zacharias expresses it, we are delivered out of the hands of our enemies, that we might serve God without sear: In holiness and righteousness before him all the days of our life, Luk. i. 74. 75. This is the deliverance that our Lord hath wrought. He sets us free from our sins, and hath redeemed us from the wrath to come. This fesus does for all them that will obey him. He destroyed the Devil's kingdom, stopt his mouth in his oracles, overturned his temples, dispossessed him of his idols; destroyed his worship, and bassled him in all his designs. He cast him out not

k Kimchi in Pfal. exxxii. 17.

1 Aben Ezra in Gen. xlix. 18.

R. Solom. in loc.

of

of the bodies only, but of the fouls and hearts of men, and wrested from him that kingdom which he had so long and so unjustly got the possession of.

THE world was over-run with idolatry and superstition, with violence and oppression, with ignorance and prophaneness; men were proud and covetous, unchast and intemperate, full of envy and malice: but our Lord came, and by his life and doctrine, by his death and divine grace, he sent away that darkness that overspread the world; he knocked off those chains in which men were shackled, and restored mankind to the worship of the true God, and to his image and likeness. Let's hear the excellent words by which the apostle expresseth all this. For we our selves (says he) also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and plea-sures, living in malice and envy, hateful and hating one another. But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward mankind appeared. Not by works of righteousness, which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost: which he shed on us abundantly, through Jesus Christ our Saviour, Tit. iii. 3.----Such was the deliverance which our Jesus wrought; For the grace of God, which bringeth salvation, hath appeared to all men; teaching us, that denying ungodliness, and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world: looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ: who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purifie unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works, Tit. ii. 11.

Moses delivered the Israelites from the Egyptians, he brought them from the bondage of those Insidels, but he did not save them from their insidelity. For we see they could not enter into the promised land, because of their unbelief, Heb. iii. 19. Foshua brought them into Canaan, but lest them on this side heaven. Others delivered them from the men of Midian and the Philistines, but none of them delivered them from the evil men themselves. They were saved from their enemies frequently, but not from their sins.

They fell into their folly and their misery again.

But our blessed Redeemer saves us from our sin. He gives repentance and forgiveness of sins, Act. v. 31. And turns us from our iniquities, Act. iii. 26. This exalts him above Moses and Joshua; this speaks him the great redeemer and shepherd of our souls. The Jews expected a temporal Messiah, one that would restore them their kingdom, and advance them to worldly splendor and greatness: but our Lord came to erect a spiritual kingdom in the hearts and minds of men: he came to vanquish our lusts, and destroy the power of sin in the hearts of men. This was a design worthy of God, and becoming our Lord Jesus; and that which the greatest kings and princes were never able to do. Our Lord hath wrought the greatest deliverance.

OTHER'S have conquered their enemies; our Lord hath done more, he hath reconciled them and made them friends. Others have killed the bodies of men; our Lord hath done more, he has faved their fouls. Others have gotten wealth and worldly greatness; our Lord does more, when he enables his followers to despite these things. Others have saved their followers from dying; our Lord delivers us from the fear of death. He kills our pride, destroys our covetousness, purges away our lust, plants in us the

love of God, and the contempt of the world.

Digitized by Google

But if you say, Where are these conquests of our Lord's to be seen? Shew us the men, that are thus redeemed from their crimes and follies?

I Answer, That there are, and ever were such men in the world since the Gospel appeared; but that their number is small, is not from the Religion they profess, but because it is not entertained. It is because they are false Christians; not because their Religion is not able to make them better. If we would receive our Lord's precepts, and beg his aids, and use his assistances and helps, we should find a mighty change in the minds of men. One of the Ancients tells us, That there were daily experiments in his time, how far the precepts of Religion did prevail upon the minds of men. And I cannot but take notice of his words to this purpose. Da mihi virum qui sit iracundus, &c. Give me a man (says he n) that is given to wrath, to evil speaking, and who is unruly; with a very few words of God, I will render him as tame as a sheep. Give me one that is craving, covetous, tenacious; I will render him liberal and bountiful. Give me one that is fearful of grief and death; he shall soon despise crosses, and stames, and the torments of a tyrant. Give me one that is lustful, adulterous and gluttonous; and you shall soon see him sober, chast and continent. Give me one that is cruel and blood-thirsty; and that fury shall soon be changed into an unfeigned clemency. Give me one that is unjust, foolish, and sinful; and he shall presently become just, and prudent, and inoffensive. This was the effect of Religion in those times, when it was considered and entertained.

III. THOSE deliverances under the law of Moses were more particular, and restrained to the people of the Jews; but our Jesus is the Saviour of mankind. He is the author of eternal salvation to all them that obey him, Heb. v. 9. And he that saves the world is preserable to him that delivered the Israelites only. The time was, when Religion and all the more eminent dignations and favours of God, seemed to be inclosed and confined within the narrow compass of the land and people of the Jews. There had God his temple, and dwelt among them; to them he gave his responses from heaven; there were his prophets, and they had his law for their guide. He had not dealt so with any nation; and for his judgments they had not known them, Ps. cxlvii. 20. In Judah was God known; his name was great in Israel; in Salem was his tabernacle, and his dwelling place in Zion. There brake he the arrows of the bow, the sheild, and the sword, and the battle, Psal. —And, what one nation in the earth was there like that people? 2 Sam. vii. 23. Among them he wrought his wonders; and the Gentiles were so far from being bettered by those wonders, that they grew worse and worse. They were stangers to the commonwealth, and to the mercies of Ifrael. Their land was the glorious land, and the valley of vision, when others fat in darkness. Nay, which is more still, the MESSIAs was promised to them, and to be of their seed. The Apostle in sew, but very comprehensive words, reckons up their prerogatives. To whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service of GOD, and the promises; Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh CHRIST came, who is over all, God blessed for ever, Rom. ix. 4. The deliverances that were wrought by Moses and Joshua, &c. were for the fake of them, and they were but the faviours of the Israelites.

Digitized by Google

n Lastant. Inflitut. 1. 3. c. 26.

BUT OUTLORD is the SAVIOUR of mankind; of the Gentile as well as Few. He is that light, which lighteth every man that comes into the world; that fun of righteoutness, whose light and influence is not confined to any one nation or kindred, but displays it self upon all the nations of the Earth. The partition wall is taken down, and the difference between man and man is taken away; and whoever comes to our Jesus shall in no-wise be cast out. Now all the faithful are the children of Abraham; and God is no respecter of persons; but in every nation he that feareth him and worketh righteousness is accepted with him, Act. x. 34. Upon the birth of Jesus the Angel tells the shepherds: Behold I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people, Luk. ii. 10. And the heavenly host praised God and said, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, and good will towards men, ver. 14. Our Lord came not to fave the Jews only; but all that believe. And 'tis worth our observing after what manner the love of God in sending his Son is expressed; not as confined to the Jews any longer, but as reaching to the face of mankind. God fo loved the world (not the Jewish people only) that he gave his only begotten Son, &c. Joh. iii. 16. After the same manner the Apostle speaks of this love of God, After that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, Tit. iii. 4. Our SAVIOUR is a light to lighten the Gentiles, as well as the glory of the people of Israel, Luk. ii. 32.

Our Lord hath delivered mankind; Moses and Josbua delivered the Israclites only. Sampson died, and by his death destroyed the enemies of the Hebrews; our Lord by his death destroyed the enemies of mankind. The sacrifices of the law, at the most, atoned for the whole congregation of Israel: but Christ gave himself a ransome for all, I Tim. ii. 6. He is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world, I Joh. ii. 2. Our Lord tasted of death for every man, Heb. ii. 9. And would have all men to be saved, and to come to the knowledge of the truth, I Tim. ii. 4. And what the men of Dan said to Micha's Levite, that it was better for him to be a priest to a tribe, than to be a priest to one man, is accommodable to my present purpose: He is the great deliverer, that rescues mankind rather than one people: And such a

one is our JESUS, the SAVIOUR of the world.

IV. By the Religion of Christ Jesus we may be justified, and acquitted from that guilt, which admitted no atonement from the law of Moses. Though in the law of Moses several oblations were prescribed and allowed to explate for sins of ignorance; yet there was no explation allowed for him that sinned presumptuously, but such a sinner was to be cut off from among God's people, Numb. xv. 30, 31. There were many sins of this high nature, that the law was not surnished with an atonement for, as may be seen, Levit. xx. Among these, wilful murther was to be reckoned, as a sin that admitted no sacrifice of atonement. And to this sense are the words of the Psalmist understood; when he prays to be delivered from blood guiltiness: For (says he) thou desirest not sacrifice; else would I give it thee, Psal. li. 16. i. e. Thou hast allowed no sacrifice for such an high offence as mine is of this agrees well with the Text, the ancient Versions, and the Jewish Expositors. One of the Jewish

Commen-

e El hilianne Juriar, Iduna av. LXXII. Si voluisses sacrificium, dedissem utique V. L.

That is, And although God (says he) commanded obligations, together with confession and repentance, the blessed God aid not command obligations, unless it were for him who sinned ignorantly: But he (the Psalmist) was a presumptuous sinner; and for this sin there was no oblation, but only repentance with a broken and contrite heart. But the Gospel of Jesus Christoffers a pardom for all sins upon the sinners faith and repentance. No sinner is excluded from hope, that does not by his impenitence exclude himself. This seems to be the meaning of these words of St. Paul; Be it known unto you, men and brethren, that though this man is preached to you the forgiveness of sins: And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses, Act. xiii. 38, 39.

I COME now to explain what is meant by CHRIST. Now so it is, that the word CHRIST does denote our Saviour's office, Christus non proprium nomen est, sed nuncupatio potestatis, or regni. Says Lastantius a, CHRIST is as much as anointed, it being but the Greek of MESSIAS. Andrew telleth Simon Peter, we have found the MESSIAS, which is being interpreted, the CHRIST, Joh. iv. 41. And the woman of Samaria said: I know that MESSIAS cometh which is called CHRIST, Joh. iv. 25. Thus our LORD is called,

Ps. ii. 2. Dan. ix. 25.

No w for the better understanding of the importance of this word C HRIST, or anomited, we shall do well to restect upon the usage that obtained among the Jewish people, where we shall find frequent mention of the ceremony of Anointing: That which was anointed, was thereby separated to some particular and special use, whether it had relation to things or persons. Thus was the pillar anointed, Gen. xxviii, 18. 22. And the tabernacle and all its utensils; they being by that means set apart to the service of God. But this ceremony of anointing had relation to persons also. Thus the most publick persons and ministers among the Jews, were by this ceremony set apart to their publick offices and dignities: As for example,

KINGS were anointed. Hence it is that a king is expressed in the sacred dialect by the Lord's anointed. Thus were Saul and David anointed by Samuel according to the divine appointment, I Sam, x. 1. xv. 1. xvi. 3. 13. And Zadok anoints Solomon, that there might be no dispute who should succeed David, I King. i. 39. And these kings when they were thus anointed were then God's vice-gerents over the Jewish people, who were under a theocracy: and when the prophets did by anointing them make them kings, they made them typical Christs, as one of the Ancients does express it. And so indeed they were. They did typisie the Messias, who was to be lord and governor of the church, as these kings were of the Jews.

PRIESTS were anointed also. Aaron and his sons were thus consecrated, that they might minister unto God in the priest's office. Exod. xl. 13. 15.

As for Prophets the like cannot be said. We have not that express law, nor the practice upon record which we have for the other. 'Tis true indeed that Elijah is commanded to anoint Elisha to be a prophet in his room, I King. xix. 16. And at the same time he is commanded to anoing Hazael to be king over Syria, and Jehu over Israel. 'Tis probable that no more is meant by that expression than this, that he should constitute

P. R. David Kimchi in Pl. li. 16. In eundem sensum
R. Solom. & Aben Ezra in loc. 

<sup>q</sup> Lastant.

Institut. l. 4. c. 7. 

<sup>1</sup> Heb. 

THE Chald. 

THE Chald. 

Elistant.

Elistant.

Elista to be a Prophet in his room: And because men were set apart to great offices by the ceremony of Anointing; therefore that expression is used there. And that person, who is constituted and appointed by God to some great office or employment, is said to be the Lord's anointed, though he were not set apart with material Oyl to that office; because these publick persons were wont by the holy Oyl to be set apart to their dignities and employments: Thus Cyrus is said to be the Lord's anointed, Isa. xlv. 1. He being appointed by God for the destruction of Babylon, and the return of the Israelites. And all, that we read, which Elisah did, when he came to Elisha to perform what he was commanded, was, that he passed by him, and cast his mantle upon him, I King. xix. 19. Upon which Elisha arose and minister'd to Elisah, ver. 21. For Kings and Priests the precept is plain, and the practice unquestionable.

I SHALL from the Jewish writers give you a more particular account of the right of anointing Kings and Priests, as well as of the reasons of it.

Now the reasons of it are said to be these two.

FIRST, This was to be a sign of the divine election and choice. He that was thus set apart was to be received as chosen of God. I have exalted one chosen out of the people. I have found David my servant; with my holy oyl have I anointed him, Psal. lxxxix. 19, 20. This holy Oyl was a composition of God's prescribing, wherewith certain things and persons were to be set apart, and separated to holy uses; and 'tis expressly said, Whosever compoundeth any like it, or whosever putteth any of it upon a stranger, shall even be cut off from his people, Exod. xxx. 33.

SECONDLY, That he that was thus anointed might thereby be prepared to receive האלהי the divine influx. And thus we read of Saul, that when Samuel had anointed him, and told him that the Spirit of the LORD would come upon him, and that he should be turned into another man; the Spirit of God came upon him accordingly, and he prophesied, I Sam. vi. 10.

We are moreover told from the Jewish writers u, that those that were anointed were anointed on their heads; Kings with the figure of a crown, Priests with the figure of the Hebrew 3 or the Greek x. The fign of a crown denoting the regal dignity; and the Hebrew > being the first letter of | the fignifies a priest) denoting the priesthood. That the high priest was anointed, but not the inferior priests. That a fon succeding his father in the kingdom was not anointed. Indeed Solomon was; but that was because there was a competitor in the case, namely his brother Adonijah. And in that case the Anointing of Solomon decided the difference. \* But the Priest that succeeded his father was always anointed. The highpriesthood being not successive as the kingdom of David was. Y The kings of Ifrael were not anointed with the holy Oyl. Jehu indeed was anointed, but not with the holy Oyl of Moses, but with a certain balsam. <sup>2</sup> That during the fecond temple the high priests were not anointed, the holy Oyl having been hid and lost, and that the sacerdotal garments serve instead thereof. That the Kings of the house of David were to be anointed by a fountain of water, (for which they ground themselves upon 1 Kin. i. 38.) and in the day time, Lev. vi. 20.

Digitized by Google

לפי שמנוי המלוכה והגרולה על ידי משיחה ברוב נאסר למנוי אפ על פי שאוני על ידי ז'.

Vid. S. B. Mel. Michal Jophi in I Reg. xix. & R. D. Kimchi in Ifa. xlv. 1. משיח: וכו" Vid. Maimon. H. Melach. Abravenel. in Exod. xxx. 23. × Buxtorf. Lexic. Rabbin in משוח: "Rabboth fol. 176. 2 Pefikta fol. 10. c. 1. & Maimon. H. Kele Hammikdafh c. 1. Siphra. fol. 17. c. 3.

Thus had the Jews under the law of Moses the shadow of good things to come, but these excellent things which they had in type, we have in substance. The law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. Joh. i. 17. Our Blessed Saviour is both prophet, priest and king. He is the great prophet who hath taught us the will of God. Our great high priest who made atonement for us, and is entered into the holy of holies. He is our king to rule and govern us, and from him we expect the great and unspeakable blessing of eternal life. And as the priests and kings of old were set apart to their offices and dignities by a certain oil prescribed in the law of Moses: so was our Blessed Saviour by a better anointing, (of which that oil was but a shadow) namely, by the Holy Ghost; which did not only design him and set him apart to these great and important offices, but also enable him for the performance of them. Thus the apostle tells us, that God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost, and with power, Ast. x. 38. Now our Saviour was anointed with the Holy Ghost,

FIRST, at his conception. Thus the angel tells the bleffed virgin, the Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the highest shall over-shadow thee, therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall

be called the son of God, Luk. i. 35.

SECONDLY, at his baptism, at the river Jordan, Matth. iii. 13. Mar. i. 9. Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened: and the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven which said, thou art my beloved son, in thee I am well pleased. Luk. iii. 21, 22. Then did the Holy Ghost descend visibly upon Jesus; and as of old (as I said before) anointing was used among the Jews as a sign of God's election and choice of the person anointed, so was it now. And for the greater assurance of it a voice came from heaven, saying, thou art my beloved son, &c. Thus was Jesus declared to be chosen of God by the descent of the Holy Ghost, And to this I may add the words of the propher to the same purpose, behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth: I have put my spirit upon him, &c. Isa. xlii. 1. And St. Luke tells presently upon the baptism of Jesus, that, he bring full of the Holy Ghost, returned from Jordan, and was led by the spirit into the wilderness, Luk. iv. 1. And after he was tempted in the wilderness, he tells us that Jesus returned in the power of the spirit into Galilee, ver. 14. And when he was in the synagogue at Nazareth, he opened the book which was delivered him and found that place where 'twas written, the spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor, &c. And said unto them, this day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears, ver. 21.

Our Blessed Saviour though he were sanctified from the womb, and was anointed by the Holy Ghost, yet when he was baptized in *Jordan*, and about thirty years of age, he was again anointed by the divine same spirit more publickly and openly than before: he was now entering on his great ministry, and about to be tempted by the Devil, and is now filled by the Holy Ghost, and thereby enabled and prepared for that work which he was going about. In a word, he who was at his conception anointed with the Holy Ghost, was also at his Baptism, when he was entering upon his

. Matth. iii. 16, 17.

ministry,

ministry, not only by a voice from heaven proclaimed the beloved son of God, but declared to be so by the descending of the spirit of God like a dove, and lighting upon him. b It is observed of Aaron the first high priest, and type of the Messias, that he was also twice anointed with the holy oil. And for David (who was a most eminent type of the Messias) he is said to be twice anointed also. Once at Bethelehem during the life of Saul by the hands of Samuel, upon which it is said c, and the spirit of the Lord came upon David from that day forward: after this he is said d to have been anointed at Hebron by the men of Judah. c I do grant, and it cannot be denied, that David was but once anointed with the holy oil, and that where it is faid afterward that the men of Judah anointed him, the meaning is only this, that they chose him and openly owned and acknowledged him for their king, as appears by comparing 2 Sam. ii. 4. with chap. iv. 3, 17. It is enough to my present purpose that David who was more privately anointed at Bethlehem, was afterward so publickly owned and acknowledged to be the king that he is said again to have been anointed: for in this he was eminently a type of our Lord Christ, who was from his conception anointed with the Holy Ghost, and when he was, upon his baptism, entering upon his administration, was publickly declared to be the son of God by a voice from heaven, and by the descent of the Holy Ghost.

A MONG the Jewish constitutions this was one, that the kings of the house of David were to be anointed by a fountain of water. This was a tradition from their Elders grounded upon what we read of Solomon, that when he was to be anointed king, Zadok and Nathan, and the rest that attended upon him, brought him unto Gihon, I King. i. 38. This Gihon was a place of waters, as appears, 2 Chron. xxxii. 30. Let this tradition be as old as you will; suppose it came from Moses and was delivered from mount Sinai, as the Jews say their oral law was: so it came to pass that our Jesus, the great king of the house of David, was anointed by the waters of Jordan when the Holy Ghost at his baptism descended upon him.

'T WILL be easie now to understand what Christ imports: for that word denotes the offices of our Blessed Saviour to which he was appointed by God, and enabled to discharge by the Holy Ghost, which was plentifully poured out upon him. And as of old publick persons were set apart to their respective offices and dignities, by being first anointed with a certain oil prescribed for that purpose, so was our Lord sanctified and sitted to teach and govern the church of God; to be the great mediator between God and man, and the redeemer of mankind, by the Holy Ghost which he plentifully received, Joh. iii. 34. And he that confesses that Jesus is the Christ does thereby acknowledge him to be his prophet, priest, and king: and is consequently obliged, by virtue of that profession, to obey his laws, and give himself up to his government, as well as to hope for pardon from his blood. God hath made it very plain that our Jesus is the Messias that was promised. Who is a liar (says St. John) but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ, I Joh. ii. 22. This was that great truth that the Jews opposed vehemently. They agreed that if any man confessed him to be Christ he should be put out of the synagogue.

Digitized by Google

Vid. Exod. xxviii. 41. xxix. 21. Lev. viii. 12. with 30. See also Abravenel on Exod. xxix. 21.

1 Sam. xvi. 13.

2 Sam. ii. 4.

To j χείνουν ώντι Τ χειροτονίδοι τίθηκο. Theodoret. in 2 Reg. Quæft. 8.

W HAT

WHAT hath been said will be of use to the better understanding the words of St. John; Te have an unction from the holy one, and ye know all things, I Joh. ii. 20. He puts Christians in mind of that Affusion of the HOLY GHOST (which he calls the unction from the holy one) which God hath bestowed on them according to CHRIST's promise. This HOLY GHOST did lead them into all truth, and the plentiful effusion of this Spirit did bear a clear testimony, that Jesus was the true Messias, and that the doctrine which he taught came from God. This holy Spirit was the defence, which those Christians had against being seduced. As it follows, These things have I written unto you concerning them that seduce you. But the anointing, which ye have received of him, abideth in you; and ye need not that any man teach you; but as the same anointing teacheth you all things, and is truth, and is no lie; and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him, I Joh. ii. 26, 27.

I SHALL only add, that from CHRIST we are all called Christians, and that blessed name ought to influence our practice. 'Tis a great thing to be a Christian: 'Tis a dignity and honour to the greatest among us, and the best of all our titles. We may well glory in this blessed name, and value it above all our other titles and properties. But then we must remember, what this name requires at our hands: When we name the name of CHRIST we are obliged to depart from all iniquity. Let us consider how well this name becomes us. Are we like our bleffed SAVIOUR? Have we that unction from the holy one? Doth the Spirit of Jesus dwell in us? If that holy Spirit be not in us, we have a name to live and are dead. We may fondly conceit what we please of our selves; but if any man have not the spirit of

CHRIST, he is none of his, Rom. viii. 9.

# 

## CHAP. II.

It is agreed between Jews and Christians, I. That there was a MESSIAS promised; and II. That there was such a person as our JESUS; and III. That there was at that time, when JESUS lived, a general expectation of the MESSIAS. That hence it was, that there appeared so many impostors about that time. An account of some of them from Josephus. and IV. That the MESSIAS was particularly promised in the old Testament. Of the promises of the MES-SIAS, and the gradual revealing of them. A passage in Maimonides, concerning the Afternoon-Prayer misrepresented by a late learned writer. Several particulars relating to the MESSIAS predicted.

HUS having shewed, what is meant by Jesus, and what by Christ; I come next to shew you; that our Jesus whom the Jews crucified, is the Christ of Messias. And before I proceed to consider the several arguments, that do confirm this truth, I shall premise the following particulars. C

FIRST,

FIRST, That there was a MESSIAS promised in the old Testament. This is not only affirmed by the Christians; but granted by the Jews. There is no dispute about this matter.

SECONDLY, That there was such a person as JESUS; that he lived at such a time as we say he did, and died as the Gospels report, is not denied by the Jews. They often mention him in their writings, though with scorn and disdain; they speak of the time and manner of his death, and the names of his Disciples; and they are far from denying the matter of sac.

THIRDLY, That when JESUS did appear in the world, there was a great expectation of the MESSIAS among the Jews. Thus we read of Simeon's waiting for the consolation of Israel, Luk. ii. 25. And this Simeon was no mean person; he was the son of Hillel the great, and a man of great place among the Jews. Again, one Anna a prophetels, a devout and aged widow, who served God with fastings and prayers night and day, and she speak of him to all them that looked for redemption in Jerusalem, ver. 38. The woman of Samaria had heard of this fame, and general expectation of the MESSIAS among the Jews at that time; and that he should be a great prophet. I know, says she, that MESSIAS cometh, which is called CHRIST: when he is come he will tell us all things, Joh. iv. 25. Hence the Jews at that time, being under a general expectation of the MESSIAS, were very prone to take others for him that did then appear. And because John the Baptist was a man of great virtue and fame, and one who was greatly followed by the people, in this very time when the MESSIAS was expected, they sent priests and levites to know who he was, Joh. i. 19. f That is, to know whether or no he were the Messias, as appears from what follows. And he confessed, and denied not, but confessed, I am not the CHRIST, vcr. 20. And there have been those that have thought, that Herod was by some taken for the Messias also, even by them, who upon that score are called the Herodians in the Gospel. Ishall not need to dispute that; so much is ceretain, that the Jews did expect the MESSIAS at that time. And I shall afterwards shew, what ground they had for this their expectation.

IT shall be enough at present to add, That as there was a general expectation of the MESSIAS about that time; so there were a great number of Impostors, that took that occasion to delude the people, and draw followers Gamaliel names two, Theudas, and Judas of Galilee, Act. v. 36, 37. Josephus gives us a farther account of these men. He tells us, g that under the government of Fadus, a certain magician called Theudas persuaded a great number to follow him to the river Jordan; pretending himself to be a prophet, and that he would divide the river, and give them the advantage of passing over it. This the Impostor did to the destruction of himself, and many of his followers. He tells us h afterwards, that under the government of Felix there were certain Magicians and Impostors, that persuaded the people to follow them into the wilderness, promising them to shew them signs and wonders not without the hand of God, whom some believed to their own hurt. He tells us in the same Chapter, that at that time there came a certain man from Egypt to Jerusalem, pretending himself to be a prophet, and advising the people to follow him to mount Olivet, making them a promise, that there they should see the walls of Jerusalem to fall down at his command, and that he would give them by this

E Casaubon, exercit. ad apparat. Baronii annal. n. 5.

F Joseph. Antiq. l. 20. c. 2.

mcans

means a free passage to the city: And this happened also to the destruction of many of his followers.

HE tells us i of another magician in the time of *Festus*, who promised to save his followers, and to deliver them from their evils, if they would follow him into the wilderness. And that thereupon both the deceiver and the deceived were destroyed.

He tells us k of another, whose name was Jonathan, by trade a Weaver,

who pretended to figns and wonders.

THE Jews, who had rejected our bleffed SAVIOUR, the true MESSIAS and SAVIOUR of the world, were very prone to believe false Prophets. And this continued for some time. And indeed there being so great expectation of a SAVIOUR, it is the less to be wondered at, that they, who had rejected the SAVIOUR whom GOD sent, should entertain those that came without his authority. Our SAVIOUR had said, I am come in my father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive, Joh. v. 43. The Jews verified our SAVIOUR'S words: and have been from time to time miserably baffled in their expectations, and imposed upon by cheats and impostors; as I may have a farther occasion to represent afterwards.

INDEED so it is, that in the first beginning of Christianity they had the greater temptation to give credit to false prophets; because as they had rejected the true Prophet, so they continued still in expectation of one that should save them. It is very remarkable, which Josephus in his book of the Jewish Wars, tells us to my present purpose: viz. That that which chiefly excited the Jews to war with the Romans was Xenopos aupisoλ, a prophecy (though of doubtful signification, as he is pleased to call it, yet) contained in the Holy Scripture, Ως την παιερν οπείνον, άπο τη χώρας τις αυτών αρξή το οικεμένης. i. e. That at that time one of their own country should have dominion over the world.

These things are no more, than what our Saviour foretold; and do shew us, what need there was of our Saviour's words. He tells the Jews. There shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders, insomuch that (if it were possible) they shall deserve the very elect, Matth. xxiv. 24. Evil men took hold of that occasion to deceive the people, who being in a great expectation of a Saviour at that time, were the more prone to hearken to those deceivers, that did arise. And the Jews being in expectation of a Saviour, that should crect a temporal kingdom among them, and give them dominion and power, Luk. xvii. 20. Act. i. 6. were by that means very forward to listen to them, that pretended to give them the upper hand of their enemies, and to set them free from the bondage, which they were under at that time.

FOURTHLY, That in the old testament the MESSIAS is so particularly described, that it might be known, by comparing those descriptions with the event, who was the MESSIAS.

I GRANT, that the promises of a Messias, and the descriptions of him were not given out all at once: But these things were dispensed in the several ages of the world, in such measure and after such a manner, as seemed fit to the wisdom of God: And it cannot be denied, that the first discoveries were more general, and less determinate: And as the time drew

i Joseph Antiq. 1. 7. c. 12.

De Bello Judaic. 1. 7. c. 31.

C 2 1 ibid. 1. 7. c. 12.

near,

near, in which the MESSIAS was to be manifested; so these discoveries were more particular, and more plain. God did not reveal these things all at

once, but at fundry times and after divers manners.

The same method, as the Jews tell us m, God did take in revealing his law: Those precepts, which the Jews were obliged to, they say, were not delivered all at once: For they tell us, that thus it was, viz. That Adam received six precepts (that is, six of those which the Jews call the precepts of the sons of Noah) and they were, that against idolatry, against blasphemy, against shedding of blood, against fornication, and rapine, and that concerning judicatories. But then Noah received the seventh, which forbids him sless with the life or blood thereof, Gen. ix. 4. Thus things stood until Abraham's time: But he received, besides what were named before, the precept of circumcision, and practised that of morning-prayer: After him Isaac did set asides tithes, and from him they had their afternoon-prayer n. Jacob added the precept, which sorbids the eating the snew that sbrank, and he appointed the evening-prayer: Amram in Egypt received other precepts, till Moses came, by whom the law was completed.

I Am not much concerned to enquire, how far this account, that the Jews give of the gradual dispensing of their law, is true. I shall shew you, that God took this method in promising the Messias, and giving the Jews notice of his coming; and that however the first promises were more obscure, being more general and indeterminate; yet afterwards God gave the Jews a more particular, and a more clear and express notice of him, that they might, and we also, by a diligent comparing of events with predictions, know him when he came. And to that purpose I shall lay before you,

what Goddid in the several ages of the world. The first promise of the Messiaswas presently upon Adam's transgression: And he is promised as the seed of the woman, that should break the serpent's head, Gen. iii. 15. And this was done just upon man's fall: God took care betimes to give notice of the means of our recovery. This only infinuates, that he should appear in our nature, and overcome our enemy; but it does not tell us of what family or lineage he shall be. But then in the time of Abraham the MESSIAS is promised again, and it will be worth our while to consider with what variety the promise is made. The promise in one place runs thus, In thee shall all the families of the earth be bleffed, Gen. xii. 3. This was the first promise, which was made to Abraham: But then we find this promise renewed afterward, but yet differently expressed, In thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed, Gen. xxii. 18. The reason of which variety seems to be this: That when the first promise of the Messias was made to Abram, Isaac was not born; and therefore it was said, In thee shall all the families of the earth be blessed. But after this Abram's name is changed, and Isaac, the son of the promise is born, and Abraham had in obedience to God offered up this ion; and now God renews to him the promise of the Messias: In thy feed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed. God had just before promised Abraham to multiply his posterity, ver. 17; but then what follows, ver. 18. is to be understood with a particular reference to Isaac, and therewithal

<sup>&</sup>quot;Miamon. H. Melachim. c. 9. Costi. l. 1. sol. 38.

"This Afternoon-prayer is called by the author of Juchasin fol. 8. This main which Maimonides, calls and fignifies the prayer of the ninth bour, or time of offering the continual or daily sacrifice, and there Hornbeck mistakes greatly when he renders it by Precatio antelucana. l. 7. c. 1. pro Conv. Judais. Vid Abravenel in Gen. xxiv. 63. & Pirke R. Elieser. c. 16.

as containing a precise and particular promise of the Messias, Gal. iii. 16. For those words, in thy feed, ver. 18. are not to be understood in the latitude, that the same words, thy seed ver. 17. are to be understood in; but in a particular and restrained sense, as they are only applied to Isaac, and in him to the MESSIAS. And this observation, by the way, may serve for the better understanding those words, Gal. iii. 16. Nor is this all the variety in these several promises of the M Essias. For, Gen. xii. 3. 'tis said they shall be blessed. But, Gen. xxii. 18. 'tis said התברכו they shall bless themfelves. And after the same manner is the promise renewed to Isaac, Gen. xxvi. 4. That is, they shall think themselves blessed in the MESSIAS the source and sountain of blessing. And thus, as the MESSIAS was promised at first, as the seed of the woman, and a conqueror of the serpent; so he was promised to Abraham and to Isaac, as the fountain of blessing: And then if we proceed, we shall find, that Isaac in his blessing to Faceb does not forget to transmit the bleffing of Abraham to him, and to his seed with him, Gen. xxviii. 4. which was confirmed by God, ver. 14. This blessing Jacob does not forget, at such time as he blessed his children; but mentions it in the bleffing of Judah; and withal gives some account of the time of the appearance of the MESSIAS (under the name of Shiloh) and of the obedience that should be yielded to him, Gen. xlix. 10. we have a prediction from the mouth of Balaam, who was fent for indeed to curse the Israelites, yet does he bless them, and predict the great blessing of the Messias: There shall come a star out of Jacob, and a sceptre shall rise out of Israel, and shall smite the corners of Moab, and destroy all the children of Seth, Numb. xxiv. 17. Again, we have still a more particular account that the MESSIAS should be a great Prophet; and that we have from Moses the greatest Prophet. The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a prophet, from the midst of thee, of thy brethern like unto me, Deut, xviii. 15. And it follows, And will put my words in his mouth, and he sball speak unto them all that I shall command him. And it shall come to pass, that who soever will not hearken unto my words, which he shall speak in my name, I will require it of him, ver. 18, 19. After this the MESSIAS is promised under the character of a king, I Sam. ii. 10. And a king of the house of David, 2 Sam. vii. 1 Chron. xvii. Psal. lxxii. and cxxxii. So that now we have some account of the office and of the lineage and family of the MESSIAS. He is promised as a prophet by Moses, as a king to David, and as a priest too in the book of psalms, Psal. cx. 4. His offices, and his tribe and lineage being thus predicted, we shall find afterwards, and especially as the time of his appearance drew near, many particulars predicted, and sometimes very minute ones also relating to his birth, and to his life, to his miracles, and the place of his converse, to his death and sufferings, to his resurrection and ascension, and the great success of his undertaking upon the Gentile world. That he should be born in Bethlehem, the prophet Micah tells us, Mic. v. 2. And of a virgin the prophet Isaiah, Isa. vii. 14. That he should come before the Jewish polity was quite destroyed, Jacob had predicted, Gen. xlix. 10. And that he should come while the second temple stood, Haggai assures us, Hag. ii. 7, 9. And that the time of his appearing was to be about the time, when our SAVIOUR JESUS appeared, we may learn from the prophet Daniel, Dan. ix. 24, 25, 26. And that he should come suddenly into his temple, the prophet Malachi assures us, Mal. iii. 1. We have a prediction

of his forerunner, Isa. xl. 3. Of his coming back from Egypt, Hos. xi. 1. And

of the flaughter of the innocents, Jer. xxxi. 15.

THAT the MESSIAS should converse much in Galilee, is foretold, Isa. ix. 1. What works the MESSIAS should do, is predicted, Isa. xlii. 7. xxxv. 5, 6. That he should be a great prophet, Deut. xviii. 15. That he should be a prince of peace, Isa. ix. 6. A most righteous person, Isa. xi. 5. That he should not cry, nor lift up, nor cause his voice to be heard in the streets, Isa. xlii. 2. That he should be lowly is foretold, Zech. ix. 9.

That the Messias should be despised and rejected by his own people, that he should appear in a low, servile and despicable condition, is also foretold, Isa. lii. 14. liii. 2, 3. And his death is not only foretold; but the manner and minutest circumstances of it also. That he should be crucified, Zech. xii. 10. Psal. xxii. 16. That he should be betrayed by his disciple and familiar acquaintance. Psal. xli. 9. That he should be sold for thirty pieces of silver, Zech. xi. 12. And crucified among thieves, Isa. liii. 12. That on the cross they should give him vinegar to drink, Psal. lxix. 21. That his garments should be parted, and that lots should be cast upon his vesture, Psal. xxii. 18. That he should be derided and scotsed at, even when he was under his sufferings. Psal. xxii. 7, 8. That he should intercede for transgressors, Isa. liii. 12. That he should suffer with a lamb-like meekness, Isa. liii. 7. And that notwithstanding all the malice of his enemies; yet his bones should not be broken, Exod. xii. 46.

THAT the MESSIAS should be buried is also foretold, Pfal. xvi. 10. And honourably interred also, Isa. liii. 9. And that he should rife again, Psal. ii, 7. xvi. 10. And ascend into heaven. Psal. lxviii. 18. And that the

Gentiles should serve and acknowledge him, Isa. xlix. 6.

THESE things are predicted of the MESSIAS in the old Testament; we are now to consider, whether we can find them fulfilled in our Jesus. And if we do, we may very safely conclude, that this Jesus is the Christ.

I Doubt not (with God's affistance) to shew, that these things were fulfilled in Jesus, and also that they were fulfilled by a most stupendous providence of God; So that we must be forced to say, This was the Lord's doing, and it may well be wonderful in our eyes.



CHAP.

#### **\*\*\*\*\***

## CHAP. III.

Of the Birth of JESUS. Of his Lineage and Kindred. Of the place of his birth. The seeming difference in the account of Bethlehem by the prophet Micah and St. Matthew reconciled. Of his being born of a Virgin. A particular explication of I Tim. ii. 15. She shall be saved in child-hearing. The time of his birth agreed with the predictions, and general expectation of some great person. Several testimonies to this purpose. The miserable shifts and evasions of the Jews.

SHALL first of all consider the Birth of Jesus, and see, whether in that particular the predictions of old concerning the Messias were fulfilled in him, or not. And under this head I shall consider the following particulars.

And in that d o FIRST, His Lineage and Kindred, or the family of which he was born. Her Mall he a life The Messias was to be of the house and family of David. Thus he is from early called a root of Jesse, Isa. xi. 10. A righteous branch raised up to Daysh hope. The vid, Jer. xxiii. 5. And David also, Ezek. xxxiv. 23. And no wonder had he cantile then, that he should be said to be of the tribe of Judah, Mic. v. 2. God these triple is had made a solemn and unalterable promise of the Messias unto David, g. 23. had made a folemn and unalterable promise of the MESSI AS unto David, ger 23.5 and that he should be of his seed. I have made a covenant with my cho- paloto the de fen, I have sworn unto David my servant: Thy seed will I establish for come raise life ever, and build up thy throne to all generations, Psal. lxxxix. 3, 4. These leaves are words are too great to have their completion in Solomon, and the succeed-lies with X aking of Yudah who were of Devil Frank I aking the succeed-lies with ing kings of Judah, who were of David's Family and Lineage. And it is the standard of the stan not hard to discern (what a learned man hath observed) that the Psalmist does distinguish between David's seed, and David's sons: By his seed the MESSIAS isto be meant; and what is said of his seed is to be understood of CHRIST, having a precise reference to him; but what is said of his sons, and children, hath a reference to his descendants and his successors; and the Mich 5-2 promises made to them are conditional; that of the MESSIAS, who was to bal How, Iself-be of his family, was absolute. Thus 'tis said, His seed also will I make to have should have for ever, and his throne as the days of heaven, ver. 29. The king-hough than with a dom of the Messias shall never sail, and nothing shall hinder his being said to the world. But then for David's sons, viz. Solomon and his fall a continue other off-spring it follows, If his children for sake my law, and walk not in a 6 h well a my judgments: if they break my satures and been not my command wents when it is they break my satures and been not my command wents when it is they break my satures and been not my command wents when it is they break my satures and been not my command wents when it is they break my satures and been not my command wents when it is they break my satures and been not my command wents when it is they break my satures and been not my command wents when it is they break my satures. my judgments; if they break my statutes and keep not my commandments, when going four then will I visit their transgression with a rod, and their iniquity with to be from or containing stripes, ver. 30, 31, 32. This will God do with the sons of David, to whom his promises, which referred to them, were but conditional; but

<sup>•</sup> The Targum on Isa. xi. 10. Jer. xxiii. 5. and Mic. v. 2. understands those places of the Messas, and of bim doth Kimchi expound Ezek. xxxiv. 23.

then it follows, Nevertheless my loving kindness will I not utterly take from him, nor suffer my faithfulness to fail. My covenant will I not break, nor alter the thing, that is gone out of my lips. Once have sworn by my holiness, that I will not lie unto David. His seed shall endure for ever, and his throne as the sun before me. It shall be established for ever as the moon, and as a faithful withefs in heaven, v. 33,-37. Now for our Jesus it is evident, and not denied by the Jews, that he was of the feed of David. When Gabriel went to the blessed Virgin, it is said that he went to a Virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David, Luk. i. 27. And Zacharias does bless God for raising up an horn of salvation. in the house of his servant David, ver. 69. The Gospel begins, The book of the generation of JESUS CHRIST the son of David, Matth. i. 1. By this name JESUS was frequently called: Thou son of David, have mercy upon us, say the blind men, Matth. ix. 27. And the people said of him, Is not this the son of David? Matth. xii. 23. The multitude cried out, Hosanna to the son of David, Matth. xxi. 9. See also chap. xv. 20. chap. xx. The Jews knew very well, that the MESSIAS was to be the son of David; and the priests and scribes were displeased, when they heard I esus called the son of David, Matth. xxi. 15. When Jesus asked the Pharisees. Whose son CHRIST? is they fay unto him, The son of David, Matth. xxii. 42. And when there arose a question about J E s U s, the Jews said, Hath not the feripture said, that C H R I S T cometh of the seed of David? Joh. vii. 42. And our S A V 10 U R therefore might well be called, The lion of the tribe of Judah: and, the root of David, Rev. v. 5. and the off-spring of David, chap. xxii. 16. And the author of the epistle to the Hebrews, even in that epistle which he writes to the Jews, says, It is evident, that our LORD sprang out of Judah, Heb. vii. 14.

I GRANT, that there is some difficulty in the account, which we have of the genealogy of Jesus, as it is delivered to us by St. Matthew and St. Luke. But they are very unreasonable men, who will upon that score now reject Christianity. For we do not find, that the Jews of old denied our Jesus to be of the family of David, or that they accused the Christians for affirming him to be of the tribe of Judah: and yet it is not to be imagined, that they would have omitted to have charged the first Christians of forgery, had there been any ground for such a charge. And sure I am, that if the Jews could not charge the Christians upon this score, (and that they did not is an argument that they could not do it) they are very unreasonable, who now make the

cobjection.

SECONDLY, I consider the place of his birth. Of the MESSIAS it is fore-told, that he should be born not only of the samily; but in the city or town of David also. Thus the prophet tells us, that Out of Bethlehem he should come forth, that was to be ruler in Israel, Mic. v. 2. Now it is certain, that the ancient Jews understood that prophecy of the MESSIAS, whatever artifices the later Jews have used to evade the force of that divine testimony, of which we have very good evidences to this day. For the Chaldee Paraphrast on the place speaks plain enough in this argument, when he paraphraseth upon those words, Out of thee shall he come forth unto me, that is to be ruler in Israel; thus, Out of thee, before me, shall come MESSIAS (or CHRIST) that he may rule, &c. and to the same purpose doth Jonathan the Targumist speak on Gen. xxxv. 21. where 'tis said that Israel journied and spread his tent beyond the tower of Edar. To which he adds these words,

words, "In: Italia stank that is, The place from whence the king Messia's shall be revealed in the last days. We find Jacob at that time about E-phrath, which is Bethlehem, in the way to which place Rachel died, and was buried there, ver. 19. The Tower of Edar is the Tower of the flock, and thought to be the same which the prophet mentions, Micah. iv. 8. and one of the Ancients pells us, that the tower of Edar is the place of the shep-sherds near unto Bethlehem (where the company of Angels declared the nativity of our Saviour) and that thence it had its name; or, from Jacob's feeding his cattle there, vel, quod verius est, quodam vaticinio futurum jam tune mysteriam monstrabatur. He tells us essewhere expressly, that the tower of Edar was the place, where Jacob sed his slocks, and where the shepherds, that watched by night, at the time of our Saviour's birth, Luk. ii. 8, 14. heard the heavenly host saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will towards men.

HENCE it appears, that the Jews expected their MESSIAS from Bethlehem. And when Herod demanded of the priests and scribes, Where CHRIST was to be born? They said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: For thus it is written by the prophet, And thou Bethlehem, &c. Matth. ii. 5, 6. And at another time we find the Jews said, Hath not the Scripture said, that CHRIST cometh of the feed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was? Joh. vii. 42. And there was our Saviour born; though it was unlikely it should have been so. For he was conceived in Nazareth, there his Mother lived, and there one would have thought she should have been delivered: But God had otherwise decreed, and he by his wise providence brought it to pass. For so it was, that Augustus made a decree for the enrolling or taking the names of his subjects and tributaries; upon which account Joseph and Mary removed from Nazareth, where they lived, unto Bethlehem a town of their own tribe, and there was Mary delivered; there was our SAVIOUR born, Luk. ii. 1, 7. And thus did God make Augustus Casar an instrument to fulfil his decree, when he himfelf knew it not; and to accomplish a prophecy by this means, which he had not heard or.

But this providence of God is still the more remarkable, if we consider farther, what hath been observed concerning the decree of Augustus Casar to this purpose. You are therefore to know, that Augustus had decreed, that 27 years before the birth of Christ there should have been an enrolling of the whole Empire, and proclaimed it in Tarracon a city of Spain, after the Cantabri had been conquered and reduced by him; for he conceived that to be a sit time, when the Roman Empire was at quiet: But sinding afterwards a breaking out of some stirs, he deferred it to this time, when our Saviour was born. Had it been done before, there might have been no need of it now. And then Joseph and Mary had not had the occasion of going up to Bethlehem. But what shall we say? This was the Lord's doing, and it may well be wonderful in our eyes.

BEFORE I consider the stupendous manner of the birth of JESUS, I shall desend St. Matthew's quotation of the prophet Micah against the Jews.

IT is very true, that there is some variety in the text (as they are laid before us by St. Matthew) both from the words, as they are read in the He-

brew

P Hieron. Quaft. in Genes. Id. ad Eustochium Epitaph. Paul.

brew copy in the prophet, as also from the Greek interpreters. But the difference between them seems greater than it is: And I shall account for the difference, before I pass to another matter.

AND to my present purpose it will be needful only to observe these

two particulars.

FIRST, What in the prophet is called Bethlehem Ephratah, St. Matthew

realls Bethlehem in the land of Judah.

But this is of little moment: Ephratah and Bethlehem were but two names of the same place, as appears from Gen. xxxv. 19. Ruth iv. 11. And though Ephratah were an ancient name of Bethlehem before the captivity; yet it is to be considered, that it might not be so well known to Herod, who is upon the inquiry after the place of Christ's birth; and for his certain information he is told, that it was to be in Bethlehem of Judaa. And when instead of Bethlehem Ephratah, as it is in Micah, St. Matthew calls it Bethlehem in the land of Judah, he speaks of the same place more distinctly, than the prophet had formerly mentioned. There was another Bethlehem in the tribe of Zabulon, Josh. xix. 15. In distinction from which this is called Bethlehem Judah, Judg. xvii. 7. xix. 1. And since the enquiry was concerning the place of Christ's birth (who was to be born of the tribe of Judah, Gen. xlix. 10.) it is no wonder that St. Matthew should express it thus.

SECONDLY, The place, which in *Micab* is called *little*, in St. *Matthew* is called *not the least*. And though there appears not so great a difference between rhese two expressions, as we render them; yet as the words lie in the *Hebrew* in the prophet, and especially as they are translated by the *Greek* interpreters compared with the text of St. *Matthew*, there seems to be a contradiction. Tis injuries in the LXXII. and undergoes in St. *Mat-*

thew.

FOR the removing this difficulty I shall not repeat all the various ways, which learned men have taken: I shall only mention two, which bid the fairest.

FIRST, By rendering the words in Micah, which we translate, Though thou be little among the thousands, &c. thus, It is little, that thou shouldest be (i. e. be reckoned) among the thousands, &c. q. d. This is too mean a thing for thee, Bethlehem, from whom shall spring the ruler of Israel. This makes the sense the same with St. Matthew without any violence to the text.

SECONDLY, I rather chuse another way, and I shall deliver it in my author's own words. The plainest way of reconciling them (says he q) seems to be that, which a learned few, who probably never knew what is written in St. Matthew, and would certainly never have strained to say, what should make for justifying the gospel, or advantage of Christians, gives us; which is this, That the word rys signifies little and great, or, of great note and esteem; and in this latter sense it is to be understood in this place. That the word hath both these significations, he proves by instancing in other places, in which, though it frequently signifies little, it is to be rendered great, or chief, or prince. The same is affirmed by others of good authority, and among the chief masters of their language.

To which nothing shall need to be added, but what the same author subjoins presently afterward. With great emphasis (says he) seems that

4 Dr. Pocock on Micah v. 2.

word

word here put, which signifies at once both little and great, or of great renown, to shew that, as some other things, which are little in bulk or quantity; yet in other regards are of more esteem and value above others in sight greater; so it was with Bethlehem, though perhaps otherwise little in number, bigness, or account, among the thousands of Judah, or as St. Matthew saith, among the princes of Judah. Which in sense is all one, alluding to the custom of the Israelites of dividing their tribes into thousands (as among us the sbires are divided into hundreds) over every one of which thousands was a prince or chief.

THUS is the difficulty of reconciling St. Matthew and Micah abundantly removed, by a way, against which the Jews themselves cannot reasonably

object. \*

THIRDLY, I consider the stupendous manner of his birth. For this was also fortold of the MESSIAS, that he should be born of a virgin. This God had promised long before to the house of David. I say, to the house of David, for that is to be very well heeded: Twas to the house of David, not to Ahaz that this promise was made. Indeed Go D, said unto Ahaz, Ask thee a sign of the LORD thy GOD, &c. But this Ahaz refused to do, and said, I will not ask, neither will I tempt the LORD. And then follows the promise, not to Ahaz, but to the house of David. And he said, Hear ye now, O house of David, Is it a small thing for you to weary men? But will ye weary my God also? Therefore the Lord himself will give [ לכם] you a sign, Behold a virgin shall conceive and bear a son, and shall call his name

\* This latter exposition of this Right Reverend Prelate is not only confirmed by the learned Dr. Pocock in his comment on the text; but also more at large in his Note Miscellanee added to his Porta Mosis, in a set discourse on this subject from the 12th to the 29th page; and Dr. Whithy agrees with it also in these words, The Hebrew word TVS, which is rendered little, Mic. V.2 signifies also great, or of great note or esteem. Hence Rabbi Tanchum renders the place thus, Thou shalt be chief, prince or ruler, among the thousands of Judah. So TIVIN the little born. Dan. viii. 9. is rendered by the Septuagint xigas in and by the Assistance of the little born.

that shall rule my people Israel.

To this may also be added another difference, that what the prophet Micah calls thousands, that St. Matthew calls princes. But the these differ in words; yet in sense the same: For thousands are mentioned in allusion to the custom of the Israelites of dividing their tribes into thousands, over every one of which thousands was a prince, or chief, Exod. xviii. 25. 1 Sam. x. 19. So that to say among the thousands or princes is all one. Whithy in loc. But this our Right Reverend Prelate did not insist upon as a third difference, because he had accidentally touch'd upon it in his second.

Immanuel,

Immanuel,

Immanuel, Isa. vii. 11—14. By which words it is very evident, as one of the Ancients r hath observed well, that what is said here, is said to the house of David. Now the virgin Mary, though she was indeed espoused to Joseph; yet before they came together, she was found with child of the HOLY GHOST, Matth. i. 18. And the same Evangelist tells us expressly, All this was done, that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken of the LORD by the prophet, saying, Behold a virgin shall be with child, &c. ver. 22, 23. It was under the character of the seed of the woman that the first promise of the Messias was made, Gen. iii. 15. And this was made good in the birth of Jesus of a virgin; who was in the strictest sense the seed of the woman: For though the virgin Mary was espoused to Joseph; yet before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. Thus as sin entered by a woman, so did salvation also. And God made a woman the instrument of the greatest good, as the first woman was the occasion of the greatest evil. The woman was then first in the transgression, and now she is also made of God an instrument of the greatest blessing to mankind: We are saved by the fruit of a woman's womb, as we were made miserable at first by a woman's rebellion. And thus the Apostle tells us, that the woman shall be saved in child bearing: And there being a difficulty in that expression, I shall offer something upon this occasion towards its explication. The Apostle requires, that the woman should learn in silence with all subjection, I Tim. ii. 11. and adds; But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence, ver. 12. This may seem hard on the woman's side, and therefore the Apostle, to shew, that what he required of the woman was not arbitrarily done, gives the reasons, why he enjoins the woman this silence and subjection; which are two: The first is, that woman by God was made subject to man, and was so even by the very law of her creation, and would have so continued, had mankind continued in innocence. For Adam was first formed, then Eve, ver. 13. The second reason for this injunction of filence and subjection is the woman's transgression: This rendered her condition more mean and worse, than it was by the law of her creation. She is now subjected for her fault, and depressed lower than she was, upon the score of her transgression: God faid to the woman upon her fall, Thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee, Gen. iii. 16. Thus saith the Apostle, And Adam was not deceived; but the woman being deceived was in the transgression. ver. 14. By all which it appears, that the woman's condition since the fall is very bad, and upon some accounts worse than that of the man's. But yet though it be much depressed, tis not deplorable and hopeless: \* It follows, Notwithstanding

<sup>\*</sup> Δηλονότι τὸ τῷ Αχαζ είρημένο τῷ οικο είρηται Δαβίδ. Orig. contra Celf. l. t:

\* Tho' this interpretation is the best which was publickly extant in this Right Reverend Bishop's time, and agrees with the learned Dr. Hammond, and others of the best commentators; yet the reader is desired to consider also this which follows. The late learned Dr. Bushy in his Greek Grammar, printed for the use of Westminster School, page 99. lays down this rule. Denique Personalia fere omnia passiva & passive significantia formam impersonalium inducre possunt, ut φαίνται αρρατεί, γίνραπ) scriptum est, βεστῷ του nat, ἀτράπλι fulgurat; νονι ningit, &c. To these examples he might have added the word σωδισί), in the before cited text, if the antient translations had favoured such an interpretation. According to this rule, the first word might have been translated thus, nevertheless there shall be salvation. And then the sense of the difficult part will be thus, Nevertheless there shall be falvation all mankind, both Jews and Gentiles, male and semale by and through CHRIST JESUS, the only begotten son of GOD, who was conceived by the HOLY GHOST, and born of the Virgin Mary, and so was truly and properly her son. The Preposition διά, which we render in, when it governs a genitive case, usually signifies by or through. Thus it is used Rom. v. 12. wherefore as δί νός by or through one man sin entered into the world, and death δί αμαρτίας by or through sin; even so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned. Thus we were

withstanding she shall be saved in child bearing, if they continue in faith, and charity, and holiness with sobriety, v. 15. She shall be saved in child-bearing; not that the woman's bearing of children were either a means or condition of her being faved; this would be small comfort to those who bear none. But she shall be saved by this SAVIOUR, who was born of a woman, and is the promised seed. Tis dia f renvoyonias, by this son born of the virgin Mary; this promised seed, who is the foundation of our faith and hope. And then what follows, If they continue in faith, and charity, and holiness with sobriety, does but insinuate the condition required on the woman's part. The principal object of faith is the τεκνογονία, or promised seed; this is the means of our salvation, and the foundation of our hope; but faith and charity are required as conditions on our part.

FOURTHLY, I consider the time, in which the MESSIAS was to come according to the promises and predictions of the old Testament. And here I shall consider, what the time predicted was; and then shew you that tis past long since; and, that our Jesus did appear at that time, according

to the general expectation.

I SHALL begin, and shew what the time was, in which the MESSIAS was to come according to the predictions of the old Testament. that purpose commend to your consideration those places of Scripture, which give us an account of that time. And I shall begin with the words of Jacob: The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come, Gen. xlix. 10. That those words are to be understood of the MESSIAS, the ancient writers of the Jews do confess, and the modern Jews know this very well: And several of them

in a miserable condition through our first parents. But if we add the words before cited, we shall find the means of our recovery. Sin came to all di ind, through one, nevertheless there shall be salvation to all, dia trunoyonia, throi the birth of a son.

But secondly, This interpretation of the verb subfired will be evident from the remaining part of the verse. If we take it in the other sense, it will be discult to give a good reason why the two verbs subfired and pinness are in different numbers, when speaking of the same person. She shall be saved, if they continue in faith, and charity, and boliness with sobriety. Whereas it ought to be, She shall be saved if they continues, or, they shall be saved, if they continue. And the figure Enallage in Rhetorick will not excuse such a variation from the rules of Grammar. But if we take the first verb to be a verb impersonal, the sense will be clear and plain, thus. Nevertheless there shall be salvation to mankind through the birth of a son; not if they continue to live as they think hit; but if they continue in faith, and charity, or love, and boliness with sobriety.

will be clear and plain, thus. Nevertheless there shall be salvation to manking through the viril of a son; not if they continue to live as they think ht; but if they continue in faith, and charity, or love, and boliness with sobriety.

And thirdly, This interpretation will be more evident, if we consider the design and scope of the Apossle, from the eighth verse to the end of the chapter. In the eighth verse he tells them the duty of men, and what he would have them to do. I will therefore, that men pray every where, listing up holy hands without wrath and doubting. In the ninth and tenth verses he tells us the duty of women. In like manner also I will, that the women adors themselves in modest apparel, with shanefacedness and sobriety, not with broidered hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array. But (which becometh women professing goddiness) with good works. In the eleventh and twelsth verses, he speaks of the duties of women in reference to men. Let the woman learn in silence with all subscition. But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man; but to be in silence. In the two sollowing verses he gives two reasons for these injunctions. For Adam was sirst formed, then Eve. GOD first made man of the dust of the earth, and he afterward made the woman of the rib of a man. And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression. The serpent beguiled Eve; she did sirt eat of the forbidden fruit, and she afterwards gave of it to Adam, and he did eat; and thus they both sell from the state of innocency in which they were created. These two things place the woman in a state of inferiority to the man; and seem to make her condition much the worsh. But to comfort her under this dejection the apossite mentions a prerogative of the woman much greater than the two former. CHRIST was born of her. He is called the seed of the woman, who was to bruise the serious the subscib were under the law; that we might receive the adoption of sons. So that the sense of the woman state

have also interpreted the place of the MESSIAS. Though there have been some among them, who have used their wits to elude the force of that divine testimony. The meaning of those words of Jacob is, as if he had said, The Jews (who near the time of, and after their return from their captivity of Babylon, received their denomination from Judah) shall not cease to be a people, nor be quite deprived of the use of their laws and religion, until the MESSIAS shall come among them. This is the natural and unforced sense of these words: Now we know, that forty years after the death of Jesus the Jews were overcome by the Romans, and their city and temple were burnt; fince which time they have been dispersed and scattered, and are not this at day, nor have they been for many ages any distinct Polity or Commonwealth. Let them in this confute us, if they can: Let them tell us, where their nation dwells, where it is that they are either a kingdom or a republick, or a body politick: Let them shew us their sceptre, their marks and ensigns of government and authority. We know, that they are a scatter'd people, that their city and land are in the possessions of strangers, and that they live under the laws and government of the several countries, in which they are. The prophet Daniel is more particular and precise in this affair, Dan. ix. and him Gabriel informs of the time of the MESSIAS: For there we shall not need to be beholden to the Jews to grant us, that Gabriel speaks of the MESSIAS; for he calls him MES-SIAS, and MESSIAS the prince. His words to Daniel are these, Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people, and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision, and prophecy, and to anoint the most holy. Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem, unto the MESSIAS the prince, shall be seven weeks: And threescore and two weeks the streets shall be built again, and the wall even in troublous times. And after threescore and two weeks shall MESSIAS be cut off, but not for himself: And the people of the prince shall come, and Shall destroy the city and the sanctuary, and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the wars desolations are determined. And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: And in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate, ver. 24, 25, 26, 27. That the time mentioned by Gabriel hath a particular reference to CHRIST must be granted it being express. And then let men but compute the time, and they will soon find that Gabriel's words give an account of a time that is long since past; and that they are words, that give such a description of time, as must have its expiration about that time, when our Jesus was come in the flesh. Another testimony we have from the prophet Haggai, chap. ii. It is well known, that the second temple came very much short of the glory of the first; and yet there we find a promise, that the glory of that second temple should be greater than that of Solomon's; which could not be otherwise true; than that the MESSIAS (a greater than Solomon) was to come into it, and honour it with his presence. Let us consider the words. I will shake all nations, and the desire of all nations shall come, and I will fill this house with glory, saith the LORD of hosts. The silver is mine, and the gold is mine, saith the LORD of hosts. The glory glory of this latter house shall be greater than of the former, saith the LORD of hosts, and in this place will I give peace, saith the LORD of hosts, ver. 7, 8, 9. This glory must be with reference to the Messias, or upon some other account: Upon other accounts this house was so far from exceeding the glory of the first temple, that the Jews mention several particulars, in which this second temple fell short of the first. And therefore the promised glory must refer to the coming and presence of the Messias. And thus we read in Malachi, chap. iii. — The Lord, whom ye seek shall suddenly come to his temple; even the messinger of the covenant, whom ye delight in, behold he shall come, saith the Lord of hosts, ver. 1. It will therefore appear by what hath been said, that the time is lapsed long ago, in which the Messias was to come. As for Daniel's weeks, they are expired, whatever Epocha we frame for their beginning: And the people of the Jews have been vanquished and dispersed; and their city, and that very temple into which the Messias was to come, hath been committed to the slames above sixteen hundred years ago.

But then our Jesus lived, when the Jews were a Polity, and whilst they lived by their own laws and in their own land. He went into that temple, which the prophet mentions, and did appear among the Jews before their sceptre was departed; and at an age and time, when there was a great expectation of the Messias among the Jews, and of some great per-

son among the Gentile world.

That there was at that time, when Jesus appeared, a great expectation of the Messias among the Jews, I have shewed already: And I shall now observe farther still, that there was even among the Heathens an expectation of some great person, that should appear in that age, in which our Jesus lived. And of the truth of this we have very good testimonies from sundry authors. I shall not insist upon the predictions of the Sybils, which were among the heathen people. Thus much is certain, that there was in that age a great expectation of some extraordinary person. When Augustus (in whose time our Saviour was born) sent to the Oracle to know, who should reign after him, he received an answer to this purpose. That an Hebrew child had commanded him, (whom Augustus consulted) to depart from his seat, and remitted him to his sad doom; and that therefore he should forbear making any farther addresses to him. I will not lay any great stress upon this testamony: There have been those that think, that Virgil t hath some passages, that insinuate the perfections of this person, that was expected in that age, and that his words point at our SAVIOUR, however they were applied by him or others to the son of Pollio: And indeed, there are some parts of his poem, that seem to look that way, viz.

Jam nova progenies cælo demittitur alto. Te duce, si qua manent sceleris vestigia nostri, Irrita perpetuâ solvent formidine terras.

But be all this as it will, we have other testimonies from approved authors among the Heathens of the truth of what I have said. Suetonius tells us ", in the life of Vespasian, of a great expectation of some eminent person from Judea, about that time, that should come into the govern-

Virg. Eclog. 4.

" Sucton. in vita Vespasiani.

ment



ment and administration of affairs. His words are these. Percrebuerat oriente toto vetus & constans opinio, esse in fatis, ut eo tempore Judæa profecti rerum potirentur. This agrees very well with what I mentioned before out of Josephus ", who tells us of a prophecy, that at that time one of their own country should have dominion over the world. And this expectation of the Jews did excite them to war with the Romans, as both Josephus and Suetonius observe. Another Roman Historian x gives us the same account of this great expectation of some extraordinary person, that should about this time arise out of Judaa. Pluribus persuasio inerat, says he, antiquis sacerdotum literis contineri, eo ipso tempore fore, ut valesceret oriens, profectique Judaa rerum potirentur. These testimonies do sufficiently prove what I bring them for, that there was a general expectation of some more than ordinary person to arise from the Jewish people at that time. And upon the whole it seems very plain, that the ground of this expectation was to be fetched from the predictions in the old Testament, concerning the time when the MESSIAS was to be born. These prophecies were so plain, that they raised in the Jews a general expectation of their MESSIA'S at that time; and they did withal lignifie the hope, which they had of his appearance, and hence the fame of that expectation was spread abroad in the Gentile world.

WE see that the birth of our Jesus agrees very well with what was predicted of the Messias: I shall therefore now proceed to some other particulars.

But before I do that, I cannot but take notice, how the Jews shuffle, when they are urged with the Scriptures above mentioned, which predicted

the coming of the MESSIAS.

FROM the words of Jacob Gen. xlix. 10. it is evident, that the MESSIAS was to come, while the Jews were a people, and before they were dispersed. Their ancient doctors expound those words of the MESSIAS with one consent. The time is elapsed, and for fixteen hundred years they have been driven out of their own land, and (many of their laws being annexed to that land) they have been forced to live, where they could not put in practice the laws of Moses. And now they y have found out art and tricks to elude the force of that place, which their ancient writers understood of the MESSIAS; which are so vain and weak, that I will not reckon them up, but refer the reader to one of their late writers on this argument.

It is infinitely plain, that the Messias was to come during the fecond temple, according to Haggai and Malachi. It is certain, that the glory of that latter house was to be greater than that of the former. And there can be no other account given, how this could be; but that it should be from the presence of the Messias, who was to appear in this temple. For otherwise this temple came short of Solomon's, and they who knew Solomon's wept, when they saw the soundation of this, Ezra iii. 3, 12. Nay, the Jewish writers 2 tell us (and fancy that they learn it from the defect of the letter in the text of Haggai, chap. i. ver. 8.) that there were five things in Solomon's temple, which were wanting in this second temple: viz. the Ark, the Urim and Thummim, the Fire from Heaven, the Shechinah, and the Holy Ghost. These things lessen the glory of this se-

Digitized by Google

cond

<sup>&</sup>quot; Joseph. de Bello Judaic, l. 7. c. 12. Cornel, Tacit. Histor, l. 5. Memssieh Ben Israel Conciliator, p. 88. R. Kimchi & R. Solom, in Hag, i. 8. & R. Bechai in legem, f. 59. col. 4.

cond house, which yet (as is foretold) should be greater than that of Solomon's. And what do the Jews say to all this?

They answer, 2 that the second temple stood longer than the first, and so in respect of its duration it was more glorious than the first. For whereas the first temple stood but 410, the second continued 420 years. As if the standing ten years longer were a thing in it self of so great moment, and so great a comfort to those who saw its soundation. Doth God say, that he will shake the heaven and earth, and all nations, and fill this house with glory, and send the desire of all nations thither? And is this all that he means, that this house shall continue ten years longer than that of Solomon's? Supposing the account to be true, that it stood ten years longer than that of Solomon's; yet does not this infer the glory, which is here promised: Is this all that is meant by those words, I will fill this house with glory? The tabernacle of Moses, according to the account of Maimonides b, continued longer than 410 years: And was it therefore more glorious than Solomon's temple?

At other times they tell you, that the second temple was beautisted by Herod, and enriched by other kings of the earth: As if God, who values not silver and gold, did magnishe here the magnisticence of an Idumaan, and the muniscence of some heathen princes; or as if this could afford the Jews any great comfort, who under this second temple met with severe afflictions from the Greeks and Romans.

#### ----Credat Judæus apella.

I Once met with a Jew, who seemed to be a person of considerable rank: Discoursing with him about religion, I pressed him with the words in Haggai, chap. ii. ver. 9. and shewed him the vanity of those evasions, which their writers had found out. I found him as vain as any of them, when he insisted upon this, that the house spoken of in Haggai was meant of a third house yet to be built: For that is meant (says he) by the proposed in the latter house in the prophet: Whereas it is evident, that the words are to be understood of that second house built on their return from the Captivity, as appears from ver. 3. and tis called this latter house, ver. 9. which the Jew concealed.

The time of the coming of the Messias is so punctually set down in Daniel, and so clearly revealed in other Scriptures, that the Jews themselves are in great consusion, when they are put upon this argument of computing the time, when the Messias was to come into the world. And as a clear proof of this, Maimonides d in that book, where he treats of the Messias, lays down this rule (which tends greatly to keep the Jews in their most association unbelief) that No man ought to compute the time of the coming of the Messias; and to this purpose he cites a known saying of their wise men, viz. Let them, who compute times be extinigusbed, or, perish.

\* Kimehi & R. Solom. in Haggai ii. & Lipmanni Nizachon. pag. 141. 

Maimonides Beth Habbechirah. cap. 1. 

Maimonides, H. Melachim. c. 12.

CHAP.

#### \*\*\*\*\*

### CHAP. IV.

That the Messias was to be a Prophet, Deut. xviii. 18. confidered. That our Jesus was a prophet like unto Moses, shewed in sundry particulars. That the Messias was to converse much in Galilee according to the prediction, Isa. ix. 1, 2, 3. That place more particularly considered. That our Jesus did so. That the Messias should come to his temple. That he should be meek and just. And that the Messias, as was predicted, was to do stupendous works.

SHALL now pass on to the life of Jesus; and see, Whether that agrees with what was predicted of the Messias. And under this head

I shall insist upon the following particulars.

FIRST, That the MESSIAS was to be a prophet like unto Moses. To this purpose we read what God said unto Moses. I will raise them up a prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth, and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him, Deut. xviii. 18. This promise is deservedly applied unto Jesus, Act. iii. 22. vii. 37. Maimonides e lays it down as a rule, That the prophet, of whom another prophet hath testissed, is to be presumed a prophet, and needs not to be examined. And then this testimony of Moses, their greatest prophet, must needs be very worthy of regard, fince it can belong to none (as will appear, afterwards) so peculiarly as to our blessed SAVIOUR; who made it evident, that he was that prophet, which was promised in those words: And we find our SAVIOUR appealing to the writings of Moses, when he preached the things concerning himself, Luk. xxiv. 27, 44. And he lets the Jews know, that the writings of Moses will condemn them. Do not think (says he) that I will accuse you to the Father, there is one that accuseth you, even Moses in whom ye trust. For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me, for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words? Joh. v. 45, 46, 47. It is very evident, that the Jews looked for a prophet at that time, Joh. i. 21. And the woman of Samaria intimates no less, Joh. iv. 25. And the Jews confess, that he was of a truth that prophet, that should come into the world, Joh. vi. 14. And this general expectation f of a Prophet at that time must be grounded upon the promise of God. for so it was see the Jessish writers confess. upon the promise of God; for so it was (as the Jewish writers confess) that after the death of Haggai, Zechariah, and Malachi, prophecy ceased: And that it should revive again among them they had no ground to believe, but what they had from the divine promise. And these words Deut. xviii. 18. are a very express promise of it; that when prophecy had ceased so long a time; yet they are assured that God would raise them up a prophet.

Maimonides, fundam. leg. c. 10. sest. 9.

! Juchasin fol. 14.

Now

Now our Saviour was that prophet: And he gave great proofs, that he was a prophet: He taught the will of God, and spake as never man spake, and did mightily exceed the Scribes in his discourses, who were a fort of men, that came the nearest to the prophets, Matth. vii. 29. We find our LORD preaching his fermon on the mount, Matth. v. 6, 7. declaring the acceptable year of the Lord. Luk. iv. 19. He spake to the wonder of his hearers, with great authority and assurance; with a mightty power and strong conviction. And whereas the prophets were wont to say, Thus faith the LORD, Our SAVIOUR expresseth himself thus, I say unto you; not like an ordinary prophet, but like the great shepherd and bishop of our souls, 1 Pet. v. 4. Heb. xiii. 20. 1 Pet. ii. 25. He farther shewed himself a prophet, as he foretold things to come. This he did frequently, and the things came to pass, which declared him to be a true prophet. Thus he foretold the denial of Peter, Matth. xxvi. 75. the treachery of Judas, Joh. vi. 70, 71. his own death and resurrection, Matth. xvi. 21. and after that, the destruction of the temple and the Jewish nation, with the calamities that should go before it, Matth. xxiv. 4. &c. And the falle Christs that should arise, of which there have been considerable numbers from time to time. He tells the Jews, that though they did not receive him, who came in his Father's name; yet, says he, If another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive, Joh. v. 43. The poor Jews have wofully experimented the truth of those words of our SAVIOUR, having been imposed upon by impostors from time to time to their great loss and mischief, as I shall have occasion to shew more at large afterwards. Thus did our Saviour make it appear, that he was a true prophet, because his predictions were answered by the event of things. And Maimonides g himself lays this down, as the test of a true prophet, that what he foretells comes to pass.

But he was not only a prophet, but a prophet like unto Moses also, whose great antitype he was. Moses is greatly magnified by the Jewish writers h, and placed above the other prophets. And it is expressly said, That there arose not a prophet since in Israel like unto Moses, whom the Lord knew face to face, Deut. xxxiv. 10. And therefore it is a vain thing to look for this prophet, that was to be like unto Moses, among the prophets that succeeded Moses, while the spirit of prophecy continued in Israel.

But our bleffed Saviour was like unto Moses in very many particulars. If Moses was to be put to death, as soon as he was born, by the command of Pharaoh; so was our Saviour by the command of Herod. If he was forced to fly his country to save his life; so was Jesus also. If Moses sasted forty days and nights; so did Jesus also. If he was meek; Jesus was meek and lowly in heart. If Moses appeared when the Israelites were under the bondage of Egypt; so did Jesus when they were under the Roman power. If Moses gave his law from a mountain; our Saviour preached his sermon on a mount. If Moses had his seventy elders; Jesus had his seventy disciples. If Moses was rejected and murmured at by his own people; our Saviour came unto his own, and his own received him not. If Moses trampled on Pharaoh's crown, and despised the pleasures of his court; our Saviour refused to be made a king, and despised all the

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>5</sup> Maimonides, fundam. leg. c. 10. sect. 2.

h Maimonides, fundam. leg. c. 7.

glory of this world. As the face of *Moses* did shine; so did the face of Jesus. (compare *Exod.* xxxiv. 35. with *Matth.* xvii. 2.) And as *Pharaoh* designed the death of the *males* among the *Hebrews*, that he might destroy the deliverer of that people; so did *Herod* destroy them about *Bethlehem*. As *Moses* returns into *Egypt* upon the death of those, who sought his life; so does Jesus into his country upon the death of *Herod*. But there are other things, in which our Jesus was like unto *Moses*. viz.

IN his more clear and open converse with the divine Majesty. Thus one of the Jewish writers i tells us, that Moses saw clearly המשל not parabolically and enigmatically. And God tells the Israelites thus. If there be a prophet among you, I the Lord will make my self known to him in a vision, and will speak unto him in a dream—My servant Moses is not so; with him will I speak mouth to mouth, even apparently and not in dark speeches, and the similitude of the Lord shall be behold, Num. xii. 6, 7, 8. Our blessed Saviovr was in this the great anti-type of Moses. No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosome of the Father, he hath declared him, Joh. i. 18.

IN his Mediatorship. Thus Moses tells the Israelites, I stood between the Lord and you at that time to shew you the word of the Lord, Deut. v. 5. And in this he was but the type of our blessed Saviour, who exceeded him greatly, inasmuch as he is the mediator of a better covenant,

which was established upon better promises, Heb. viii. 6.

I MAY add, that *Moses* was a type of our blessed SAVIOUR in the deliverance which he wrought. He delivered his people from *Egypt*; but JESUS saves us from our *sins*. He saved the *Israelites*; JESUS is the SAVIOUR of the *world*. He wrought miracles, but not so many and so great works as those which JESUS did; as I shall shew at large afterwards.

WHAT hath been said is sufficient to convince us, that those words Deut. xviii. 18. belong to the MESSIAS, and were fulfilled in our bleffed SAVIOUR. I know very well, that the Jewish writers expound those words to another sense, and by the prophet there they understand the whole order and succession of prophets after Moses, or else Joshua, or Jeremiah. But there is no ground for such an interpretation of the text. For the words speak plainly of one certain prophet, that God would raise up; and, for Joshua, he was no prophet, nor is he justly reckoned among that order of men. And that the words cannot be meant of Jeremiah, or of any other prophet succeeding Moses, is plain from this, that they contain a promise not only of a prophet, but a prophet like unto Moses; which, according to the Jews concession, neither Jeremiah, nor any of the other prophets were: For Moses was a prophet of an higher form and rank, than any of those that did succeed him till our Saviour's time. And that this prophet, Deut. xviii. 18. is not to be found among any of the prophets of the old Testament, will appear from these words, where it is said, There arose not a prophet since in Israel, like unto Moses, whom the LORD knew face to face, Deut. xxxiv. 10. The succeeding prophets did but repeat, what Moses had taught. His law was their rule, till CHRIST came, who spake what God had commanded him.

SECONDLY, The place where the MESSIAS was to converse, when he came into the world, is also predicted; and we shall find our SAVIOUR

! Vid. Abravenel in legem, fol. 417. col. 3.

did

did converse in that place. Though he was born in Bethlehem; yet he lived in Galilee, as was predicted by the prophet Isaiah. I shall take the liberty to translate those words, as a learned man k hath done, and to begin where he doth also. As the first time he made vile (or debased) the land of Zabulon, and the land of Naphthali; so in the latter time he made it (or shall make it) glorious. (If you ask How? It follows) The way of the sea beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles; The people that walked in the darkness (namely of affliction) have seen a great light, they that dwelt in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined. (If you ask, How comes this? It follows) Unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, and the government shall be upon his shoulder, Isa. ix. 1, 2, 3. For the better understanding of these words, we may remember what the Scripture tells us, of the early affliction and captivity of this people, even in the days of Pekah by Tiglath-Pileser king of Assyria, 2 King. xv. 29. Now as it were in recompence of these early sufferings, they are promised here by the prophet a glorious dignation from the presence, and conversation, and preaching, and mighty works of our bleffed SAVIOUR. As the second temple, which fell short of the first in glory, was to be more glorious than that by the presence of the MESSIAS; so Galilee, though an obscure country, and remote from Jerusalem the principal city of the nation, and a country that had been early and very severely afflicted, should yet be dignified with the presence and works of CHRIST.

WE are next to enquire, Whether this prediction was fulfilled in our blessed Saviour? And to that purpose we read, that the angel Gabriel was sent unto a city of Galilee named Nazareth, to the virgin Mary, who dwelt there, to acquaint her, that she should conceive and bring forth a son, and call his name Jesus, Luk. i. 31. And though Jesus was born at Bethlehem, yet he was conceived in Galilee; and from thence Joseph and Mary went up to Bethlehem upon occasion of the decree of Augustus Cæsar, Luk. ii. 1. And again he lived in Galilee, when he was a young child: For after he was brought up out of Egypt by Joseph, he was afraid to go into Judea, and being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee, and he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, Matth. ii. 22, 23- From thence he came to be baptized by John, Matth. iii. 13. Mark i. 9. And after his temptation and John's imprisonment, we find him in Galilee preaching the Gospel of the kingdom of God, Mark i, 14. Or, as St. Matthew hath it, In the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim, That it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by Isaias the prophet, saying, The land of Zabulon and the land of Nephthalim, by the way of the sea beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles, The people, which sate in darkness, saw great light — Matth. iv. 14, 15, 16, 1 As there he had been brought up; Luk. ii. 39. iv. 16. so there he preached, Luk. iv. 14. Matth. iv. 23. At the sea of Galilee he calls Simon and Andrew; and a little way from thence two other disciples, James and John, Mark i. 16, 19. And thereupon, as he himself is called a Galilean; Matth. xxvi. 69. so are his disciples called Galileans, Act. i. 11. ii. 7. The first miracle, which he wrought, was in Cana of Galilee, Joh. ii. 11. He went indeed to Jerusalem at the feast, Joh. ii. 13. but after that returns to Galilee, Joh. iv. 3, 43. And there he cures the nobleman's son, ver. 46. And

k Mr. Mede en Mar. i. 14, 15. Luseb. Demonstr. 1. 9. c. 8.

this was the second miracle, which he did, when he was come out of Judaa into Galilee, ver. 54. And he promises his disciples, that after his resurrection he will go before them into Galilee, Matth. xxvi. 32. So that though he was at Jerusalem at the seasts, and died there; yet he was conceived in Galilee: There he lived, and preached, there he called his disciples, there he did his miracles, and there he appeared to his disciples after his resurrection.

But it is not fit, that we should dismiss this excellent prophecy, which doth not only foretel the great happiness of Galilee by reason of the presence of the MESSIAS, but seems very particularly to point out those places in Galilee, that should be thus dignified and honoured. The prophet doth not only in general foretel the glory and honour, that should be done to Galilee, by the general name of Galilee of the Gentiles; but he is more particular m in naming the places of Galilee, which should be thus dignified. As particularly the land of Zabulon, which is first named our SAVI-OUR, he having his first abode in Nazareth, which belonged to that tribe. And secondly the land of Naphthali; for our Saviour lived afterwards in Capernaum, a great city in that tribe, where he dwelt after he left Nazareth; that this prophecy might be fulfilled, as St. Matthew tells us, chap. iv. ver. 13, 14. Now this Capernaum was situated upon the coast of the sea of Galilee, or Tiberias, and on the borders of Zabulon: and both this city and Nazareth were beyond fordan: And this agrees exactly, with what the prophet expresses by Zabulon and Naphthali, the way of the sea beyond Jordan: Thus was Capernaum exalted unto heaven, Luk. x. 15. And this prophecy was fulfilled in our blessed Saylour.

THIRDLY, It is foretold of the MESSIAS, Mal. iii. 1. that after the appearance of his forerunner, he shall suddenly come into his temple. the appearance of the MESSIAS in that temple was to be the glory of The desire of all nations shall come, and I will fill this house with glory, Hag. ii. 7, 9. It is very evident, as I have proved before, that the glory of the second house above the first, which is promised by God in this prophet, can be understood of nothing less, than of the glory which that house should receive from the presence of the MESSIAS; who was not only to come during the standing of that temple, but was also to be present in it. I shall therefore at this time only shew, that this was fulfilled in our Jesus. As this was predicted; so was it understood by the Jews: The wise and the devout among them waited for the MESSIAS there. Simeon (the son of Hillel, and the father of Gamaliel) is an instance of this. He came by the spirit into the temple with this expectation, Luk. ii. 27. And Anna the prophetess was another, who departed not from the temple, ver. 36, 37. And as this was foretold and expected; so it was fulfilled in our Jesus. He was presented at the temple forty days after his birth, Luk. ii. 22. And from the infancy of Jesus till about thirty years old, we read nothing of him, only this, that at twelve years of age he was found in the temple discoursing with the doctors, ver. 46. and when he was questioned for it by his parents, who fought him forrowing, He faid unto them, How is it that ye sought me? Wist ye not that I must be in τοῖς το wasebs με (we render it about my Father's business, but it is by the Syriack truly rendered) In my Father's

house?

<sup>&</sup>quot; L'Empereur annotat. in Grammat. Mos. Kimchi. p. 148.

house? q. d. Do ye not consider, that according to the predictions of the prophets, I was to have been in the temple? In the temple we find Jesus driving out the sellers and money-changers, Joh. ii. 14. He taught in the temple, and for that end came again into the temple, Joh. vii. 14. with chap. viii. 2. In the day-time he was teaching in the temple, and in the morning all the people came to hear him in the temple, Luk. xxi. 37, 38. Jesus tells the Jews, that he was daily with them in the temple, Luk. xxii. 53. And when the high priest asked him of his disciples and doctrine, he said, I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews alway resort, and in secret have I said nothing, Joh. xviii. 20.

FOURTHLY, We have in the old Testament several characters of the MESSIAS, that do exactly agree with our Jesus. We find the MESSIAS described of old, as to his temper and the manner of his conversation with men, and we find that our Jesus was such a person. There never appeared in the world any person, to whom those characters did so peculiarly and manifestly belong, as they did to our blessed Saviour. As for example; Whoever remembers the peaceable conversation of our blessed SAVIOUR, his great innocence and inoffensiveness; and the great blessing, which he pronounceth upon them that make peace, Matth. v. 9. will find, that he is, as the prophet calls the MESSIAS, the prince of peace, Isa. ix. 6. The great holiness and righteousness of his life agreed well with the prophet's character of the Messias; Righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins, Isa. xi. 5. He that considers the great calmness of our SAVIOUR's temper, and how he avoided popular fame and breath, will apply that to him, which is said of the MESSIAS. He shall not cry, nor lift up, nor cause his voice to be heard in the streets, Isa. xlii. 2. with Matth. xii. 18. When we remember the great meakness of Jesus, we find it agree with the prophet's character of lowly, which he gave of the Messias, Matth. xi. 29. with Zechar. ix. 9. What was there ever said of the MESSIAS of old, which was not fulfilled in our JESUS? Well might Philip say to Nathanael of JESUS, We have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets did write. Joh. i. 45.

FIFTHLY, It was foretold of the MESSIAS, that he should do many great and wonderful works. The works which he should do are set down; and our Jesus did those very works; and this is another argument, that he is that Christ who was promised. Of the Messias it was foretold, that he should open the blind eyes, Isa. xlii. 7. unstop the ears of the deaf, and untie the tongue of the dumb, Isa. xxxv. 5, 6. That he should preach good things unto the meek n, or which seems to be all one, preach the gospel to the poor, and give liberty to the captives; and restore joy to the mourners, giving the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; and that he should proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord, Isa. 2, 3. Our Jesus did these things, and by doing these works he made it appear, that he was the Christ, the son of God: And we find him often referring the Jews to the works which he did. When the Jews would know of him, whether he were the Christ or not, he tells them, The works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me, Joh. x. 24, 25.

η Ευχγελίσαος πωχοίς LXXII.

Again,

Again, If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not: But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works, ver. 37, 38. Again, Believe me for the very works sake, Joh. xiv. 11. His works proclaimed him to be the Christ the son of God, Joh. iii. 2. vii. 31. When John the Baptist sent some of his disciples to Jesus to know, whether or no he was the Messias, that was to come; we find he returned this answer. Go (says Jesus) and shew John those things, which ye do hear and see; The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached unto them, Matth. xi. 4, 5. He did such works, as none could do without the divine assistance, and those very works also, which the Messias was to do (according to the predictions of him) when he came into the world. But this argument requires a more particular consideration.

# \$\frac{1}{2}\frac{1}\frac{1}{2}\f

## CHAP. V.

The works of Jesus, Matth. xi. 4, 5. considered. Of the miracles which Jesus did. The vanity of the Jews in attempting to disparage them. The opinion of Maimonides, that the Messias would not work miracles, considered; And the Author of Tractatus Theologiæ Politicæ. What a Miracle imports. That the Messias was to work miracles proved against Maimonides. That they are a good argument of the truth of a doctrine. That Jesus did work true miracles. This proved at large.

HE words, which I named before Matth. xi. 4, 5. deserve a farther consideration, as they do very much confirm the truth, which I am now insisting upon. And to that purpose it will be well worth our while to consider the occasion of those words, as well as the design of our Saviour in speaking them at that time.

We find, that John the Baptist (the forerunner of our blessed Saviour) who was himself confined to a prison, sent two of his disciples, when he heard of the works of Christ, to know whether or no he was the Messias, who was to come, or whether they were to expect some other. Art thou he that sould come? Or do we look for another? ver. 5.

It is not to be supposed o, that John the Baptist was ignorant whether

It is not to be supposed o, that John the Baptist was ignorant whether Jesus was the Christ or not; for he knew him before this time, and knew him to be the Messias also. He had seen the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and abiding on him. He saw and bare record, that he was the Son of God, Joh. i. 32, 34. He baptized Jesus in Jordan, Matth. iii. 15. And it is expressly said, Joh. iii. 24. that John was not yet cast into prison. And we find him presently after those words testi-

fying

<sup>.</sup> Hieron. Epist. Algasiæ Quæst. 1.

fying of Christ, ver. 18. John the Baptist knew him well, even before he baptized him, Joh. iii. 14. It could be no new thing to hear of the same of Jesus; he himself having foretold that his same would spread, Joh. iii. 30. He had been questioned who he was, and had confessed that he was not the Christ, but his forerunner, Joh. i. 20, 23. And when he saw Jesus walking, he called him the Lamb of God, Joh. i. 36. From all which it is abundantly evident, that John the Baptist did not send to inform himself, but upon the score, and for the sake of his disciples. His disciples wanted confirmation in that truth, which their master was well assured of. There was among the Jews a fond expectation, that their Messias p would appear like a temporal prince, and deliver the Jews from servitude and slavery; they expected to be great men, and no longer in bondage to any foreign power. That their Messias should fight their battles, and vanquish their enemies round about them. This was the expectation of the Jews then, and the later Jews 9 have been of the same belief.

Now was John the Baptist, the forerunner of Christ, in prison, and would shortly be beheaded there. His disciples might hereupon be tempted to doubt, whether Jesus was the Christ or not; for they that expected a temporal prince, would hardly believe, that he would suffer his chief minister and forerunner to be, not only detained in prison, but cut off by the hands of violence. Hence John the Baptist sends his disciples, when he himself was in prison, ver. 2. He sends them, when they most needed to be confirmed in the faith; for the imprisonment and following death of their master would be apt to make them question, whether Jesus were the Messias, or they not still to look for another.

It is likewise to be considered, that John the Baptist lays hold of the sittest opportunity of sending his disciples for their greatest satisfaction: His being in prison implies, that they needed a confirmation in the faith; but then the tidings of the Works, which Christ did, seems to be the occasion of sending the disciples at that time, when they were like to receive the utmost satisfaction, which could be desired.

And no less seems to be implied in the second verse of this chapter: Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples.

And as for the message he sent them on, it was of the greatest moment: Art thou he which should come? Or do we look for another? ver. 3. i. e. Art thou the Messaas that was promised to come among us? Or must we expect him to come still? It is very usual to express the Messaas by O ip where, he that was to come. For he was promised long before under this expression of one, that should in due time come among them. The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, until Shiloh come, Gen. xlix. 10. Again, Be strong, fear not, behold; your God will come, Isa. xxxv. 4. Again, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord, Matth. xxi. 9. Joh. xii. 13. Heb. x. 37. And agreeably hercunto the time of the Messaas is called the kingdom, and the world to come, Mark xi. 10. Heb. ii. 5. vi. 5. Christ was the great hope and expectation of Israel. They promised themselves very justly glorious things from his manifestation. The woman of Samaria could say, I know that Messaas cometh,

P A&. i. 6.

4 Maimonides H. Melach. c. 11.

which

which is called CHRIST; when he is come, he will tell us all things,

Joh. iv. 25.

Let us now consider the answer, which Jesus returned unto this question of John the Baptist's disciples: He refers them to his works for satisfaction. It was upon the occasion of the works which Jesus did, that John the Baptist sent his disciples, ver. 2. and when they come, we find that Jesus refers them to the works, which he did. Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things, which ye do hear and see: The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached unto them, ver. 4, 5.

John the Baptist had born witness of Christ before; he does not

JOHN the Baptist had born witness of CHRIST before; he does not send them back to their Master, but refers them to his works. Te sent unto John (says our Saviour to the Jews) and he bare witness unto the truth, Joh. v. 33. but then our Saviour adds, ver. 36. But I have greater witness than that of John; for the works, which the Father hath given me to sinish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the

Father hath sent me.

HIS works then were a good proof, that he was, what he professed him-scale to be, the Christ, the son of God. Nicodemus could not but confess, that no man could do the miracles which he did, except God were with him, Joh. iii. 2. And many of the Jews could not but say, When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these, which this man hath done? Joh. vii. 31. The works which he did, speak who he was; for such they were as did plainly proclaim a divine power.

But besides; the works which our Saviour did, and to which herefers the disciples of John, were those very works, which the Messias was to do according to the prediction of the prophet: And these works here mentioned are those very works: When our Saviour tells them that the blind receive their sight, the lame walk; it is no more but what the prophet had foretold should come to pass in the days of the Messias, Isa. xxxv. 3, 6.

It may indeed be asked, Why our Saviour should use these words, And the poor have the gospel preached unto them? For why should this be reckoned as a miracle? Or where was this foretold of the Messias? But the answer is very easy to this. And

FIRST, This was foretold of the MESSIAS, that he should preach the gospel to the poor: For preaching good tidings to the meek, Isa. lxi. 1. is the same thing with preaching the gospel to the poor. And the same words are used by the Septuagint in the prophet, which are used by the Evangelist here.

SECONDLY, That though preaching the gospel to the poor be not a miracle (nor is it reckoned so here) yet it is a particular that is very remarkable, and very pertinent to our Saviour's purpose. We must know, that poverty was very much contemned by the Jews: Poor men were esteemed evil also. And they have a saying among them, that The spirit of God does not rest upon a poor man. Hence the poor and common people were slighted, and reckoned as children of the earth: Their prophets of old were generally sent to kings, their scribes and doctors taught the rich: They expected a princely Messias that would lord it over poor men. But our Saviour puts them in mind here, that it was foretold,

that the Messias should preach to the meek or poor. And that when he did so (as we know he did to poor sishermen and publicans) they ought to consider, that he did that, which was predicted of the Christ. For that those words Isa. lxi. 1. belong to the Messias, our Srviour elsewhere gives the Jews to understand, Luk. iv. 18, 21. Nor do we find, that they had any contest with him about that matter: No; they were so far from it, that we are told, they All bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words, which proceeded out of his mouth, ver. 22.

Nor could any thing have been said more seasonably to the disciples of John the Baptist than this, (after our Lord had referred them to the works which he did) that he preached the gospel to the poor; because this would set them right as to the Messias, whom they were to receive. For they may not now look for a temporal prince to conquer and captivate their powerful enemies, but a meek, and lowly, and merciful person, that would converse with, and instruct the poor and the needy. So that those words, and the poor have the gospel preached, &c. tend to instruct them aright concerning the Messias, whom they were to expect, and the nature of his kingdom: For had he been such a temporal prince, as the Jews were ready to expect, he would rather have employed his arms against the powerful enemies of his people, than to take upon himself the care of preaching the gospel, and that not to the wealthy and honourable, but to the poor also.

BUT not to insist any longer upon this matter; I shall only consider that our Saviour refers the disciples of John the Baptist to the works which he did, as a proof, that he was the Christ, that was to come into the world. So then the works, which Jesus did, are a good proof that he was the Christ; and do very much confirm the doctrine which he taught. This was the great end for which they were done, and for which they are recorded also. These are written, that ye might believe, that Jesus is the Christ, the son of God, and that believing ye might have life through his name, Joh. xx. 31.

By the works of Jesus must be meant the miracles which he wrought, and to which he appeals upon all occasions, as well as in these words of St. *Matthew*. These miracles are a good argument of the truth of what Jesus professed, and of what he taught. And I shall make this appear to those who are unprejudiced, and the sincere enquirers after truth.

This is a matter of great moment, and that which tends very much to beget faith in us, and to dispose us to the receiving the truth. These miracles, that were wrought, do not only speak the truth of our Saviour's doctrine, but the great moment of it also: And so they do tend toward not only the begetting in us a belief, but a great veneration also of these divine truths. And he that goes about to deny, or to disparage our Saviour's miracles, does at the same time endeavour to overthrow a main ground of the Christian Religion, and one great motive of its credibility.

I SHALL the rather enlarge upon this argument, both because of its great weight and usefulness, and also because there have not been wanting in all ages those, who have denied or disparaged the miracles which Jesus did; and by so doing have hindered, what in them lay, the propagation of the Christian Faith.

IN our SAVIOUR's time we find those that endeavoured to overthrow the credit of his miracles. When Jesus had restored one, that was possessed with a devil, and who was blind and dumb, insomuch that all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the son of David? There wanted not then among the Pharisees, who durst affirm that he cast out devils by Beelzebub the prince of devils. Our SAVIOUR does indeed sufficiently refute this suggestion, and shew the inconsistency thereof; and does lay before us the greatness of the sin of these men, who imputed a work of the HOLY GHOST to the prince of devils: And assures us, that Whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, nor in the world to come. These evil men were not able to deny the matter of fact, it was confessed that the blind saw, and the dumb spake: But then they were guilty of speaking against the HOLY GHOST when they imputed this work of his to the power of the devil.

THE Jews in after-times could not deny, that Jesus had done great works among their forefathers; but then these wretched men run into fables, and make lies their refuge, and give such an account of the whole matter, as carries its confutation along with it. The account which they

give is this,

THAT in the time of Helena the queen, Jesus of Nazareth came to Jerusalem, and that in the temple he found a stone (on which the ark of God. was wont to rest) whereon was written the Tetragrammaton, or, more peculiar name of God. That who soever should get that name into his possession, and be skilled in it, would be able to do what he pleased. That their wise-men, fearing lest any of the Israclites should get that name, and destroy the world, made two dogs of brass, and placed them at the door of the sanctuary: That whenever any had gone in and learnt that name, these dogs were wont at their coming out to bark so terribly, that they forgat the name, and the letters which they had newly learnt. But (say they) Jesus of Nazareth went in, and did not only learn the letters of this name, but wrote them in a parchment, and hid it as he came out in an incision, which he had made in his flesh. And though through the barking of the dogs he had forgot the name, yet he learnt it afterwards from his parchment. By virtue of this name (say they) Jesus restored the lame, healed the leprous, raised the dead, walked himself upon the sea. By this account it appears, that the Jews did not deny the matter of fact; but that Jesus did the works is confessed on all hands; and so much we may gain from this fabulous narration: There is nothing else in it worthy the notice of a wise-

But still there is another opinion to be found among the Jews of after-times, and it was this; That the MESSIAS when he came was not to work miracles, and that therefore the working miracles was not to be any mark and character of the true MESSIAS. Nor is it strange, that when the Jews were not able to deny the matter of fact, they should betake themselves to these fond opinions. Maimonides tells us u that we must not think, that the MESSIAS shall work signs and miracles, that he shall innovate in the things of this world, or raise the dead: But that the law of Moses should endure for ever, and that the MESSIAS shall meditate in that law, and compel the Ifraelites to observe it; and that he shall manage

Matth. xii. 22. f ibid. 32. Pug. Fidei par. 2. cap. 8. sect. 6. Mai monides, H. Melac. & Milch. C. 11. the

the LORD's battels, and overcome the people that are round about him. The truth of this doctrine of his shall be considered in its due place. I only produce this to shew, how unwilling the Jews are to allow of this argument, which we draw from the works that Jesus did, and how unable

they are in the mean time to deny the matter of fact.

BESIDES these fond and evil opinions, there is still another advanced by a late author \*, and directly levelled against the force of our Saviour's garment; and 'tis this: That nothing happens in nature that is repugnant to its universal laws, nor any thing which doth not agree with them, or follow from them: He hath also the confidence to affirm, That the name of a miracle can only be understood with respect to mens opinions, and that it signifies nothing more than a work, the natural cause of which we are not able to explain, exemplo alterius rei solitæ; or at least, he is not able to explain it, that writes or reports the miracle. And that therefore a miracle is a mere absurdity. And that those things, which the scriptures truly report to have happened, fell out according to the laws of nature; and if any thing else evidently repugnant to the laws of nature be reported, or which cannot follow from them, that it is to be believed, that these things were added to the scripture by sacrilegious men.

This wicked principle is sufficiently resuted by our Saviour's words, who makes the works, which he did, an argument of the truth of what he said. And sure if he did no work, but what other men did or might do, and what agreed with the laws of nature, his works would have been a very mean proof of his coming from God. He that believes God to be, cannot think him confined by the laws of nature: However these laws conclude the creature, they do not bind the hands of the great creator of the universe. No man can believe what the above-named author affirms, unless he be an atheist, or an apostate. He must be a man forsaken by his reason, that discourses at this rate, or given over for his wickedness to believe a lie. What do such abhorred principles aim at, but at the subversion of Christianity? And if they were guilty of the unpardonable sin against the Holy Ghost, who affirmed our Saviour's miracles to have been wrought by the power of the devil, what shall we think of them, who

dare affirm that he wrought none at all?

HAVING premised these things I shall now proceed to shew, that our SAVIOUR'S miracles were a good proof of his doctrine, and that he was the MESSIAS, who was to come into the world. And for my better proceeding,

FIRST, I shall shew, what I mean by miracles.

SECONDLY, I shall prove, that the MESSIAS was to do miracles.

THIRDLY, That they are a good argument of the truth of a doctrine. FOURTHLY, That our SAVIOUR'S were true and unexceptionable miracles.

FIFTHLY, I shall consider what may objected, against what I shall offer upon this weighty argument.

I SHALL shew what I mean by miracles: For there are cheats and impossures, and every thing is not a miracle, that passeth for such. We may

x Tractat. Theolog. Politic. c. 6.

be imposed upon by our ignorance and credulity, and by the craft of others. There are many things, which are admired, and are very strange and infrequent, but they are not miracles: Our admiration many times speaks only our own ignorance: And many things there are, which are but the effect, of natural causes; and yet we have been apt to think them the effect of a supernatural one. It does by no means hence follow, that a miracle is a mere absurdity, and that there can be no such thing. We are obliged to take care, that we be not imposed upon, and well to consider, what is required to a miracle, and to convince us of it. For unless we know it so to be, it cannot be expected, that it should ever convince us. And in this case not to appear is the same thing as not to be at all. To this purpose it is necessary to a miracle

1. That it be a work above the power of nature, and above the reach of any creature whatsoever. It must be supernatural, or else it cannot be strictly a miracle. This power must come from God, he being able only to alter the course of nature who is the great author of it. But then whether this effect be brought to pass by the immediate power of God (without the intervening of any natural cause) or by making use of some instrument, 'tis one and the same thing. It is an omnipotent arm, that brings the effect to pass: And a miracle is a work, that none but God can.do. y This is the essence of a miracle, and it cannot be truly called one unless it be such a work, as is above the force of nature, and the combined power of all second causes. And upon this account we may presume, that these works are called dwapens in the new Testament, and our SAVIOUR

faid to be declared the Son of God with power, in durand.

2. That the effect be visible and discernable. Without this they can be of no effect to us at all. And where miracles are brought as a proof of something else, there is great need they should be very evident and apparent. Our Saviour's words to John's disciples imply no less. They came to know, whether he were the CHRIST or not: † Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again these things, which ye do hear and see; The blind, &c. Our Saviour dealt sincerely with them, and appeals to their senses in the case. Shew John those things, which ye do hear and see, A miracle, which is brought to prove a doctrine or doubtful question, had need to be more clear than the question is, which it is brought to prove. And therefore when it is considered as a proof of something else, it is necessary, that it should be it self very evident and plain. that cannot be judged a good Medium to prove the question by, which is not more evident than the question it self. Our SAVIOUR's works are brought by him as a proof of the truth of his doctrine: Miracles would in this case signific nothing, if they were not very evident: The Jews have a proverb to this purpose , they say of a man that brings an insufficient proof, that His surety wants a surety. He that is surety for another, had need to be of good credit himself.

HENCE it is, that these miraculous works in the new Testament are so frequently called on pueia, i. e. signs. And those things, which are signs of something, had need be more plain and discernable than the things, which they signific and represent, and which they are brought to prove. Thus are these works frequently called in the new Testament #: And in the old

Matth. xi. 20, 21. Luk. iv. 36. 17. ix. 1. Matth. vii. 22. Luk. x. 13. Rom. i. 4. † Matth. xi. 4, 5. | Buxtorf. Lexicon. Rabbin. 279 ‡ Joh. ii. 11, 23, iii. 2. xx. 30. Testament

Testament they are expressed by the words of the same import; and though z those words of themselves do not imply a miracle; yet they are to be considered according to the subject matter: And when they are applied to this purpose, they do imply, that the miracle must be very evident and clear. For the effect can carry no conviction with it, if it be not discernable. They would have had no reason to believe our Saviour upon the account of his works, had they not been visible in their effects. He may be presumed to be raised from the dead, who by the actions of a living man is able to convince the standers by. Tis a vain thing to pretend, that a miracle is wrought, when no man is able to discern the change of things. Jesus turned water into wine. <sup>2</sup> This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory, and his disciples believed on him. But had the water retained the taste and colour of water, and not of wine, he had neither manifested his glory, nor would his disciples have been moved upon this account to have believed on him: But the change was so discernable, that the governor of the feast b perceived it by its taste. Indeed the church of Rome pretends in the doctrine of transubstantiation, that the bread and wine in the sacrament are substantially changed after confecration: and yet no man living can differn any fuch change at all; <sup>c</sup> Durandus tells us, that there are in that change no less than eleven miracles, of which no express reason can be given. I do not think it worth my while to reckon them up after him. Sure I am, we have no reason to believe any such thing. And 'tis a vain and foolish thing to vaunt of so many miracles, when there is no appearance of any one: And 'tis also a very unreasonable thing, that the church of Rome should oblige us to believe a miracle, which we are not able to discern.

A MIRACLE, which convinceth us of the truth of a doctrine, must be the object of sense; it must be seen or felt, or discernable some such way: And 'tis a vain thing to call upon us to believe that, which is the motive and ground, upon which we believe something else. I shall as soon believe a dead man raised to life, who lies in his grave, without either breath or motion, as much as the earth in which he lies; or that a blind man is perfectly cured, who yet hath recovered no sight at all; as to believe that to be slesh and blood, which all my senses tell me are bread and wine. The miracles, which Christ did, were wrought that men might believe (not the miracles, for them they saw, but) that he was the Christ the Son of God. He requires men to believe him and his doctrine, for the sake of his works.

But the church of Rome would have us believe not only a doctrine, which is not revealed; but a miracle also (not to say more than one) which is not discernable by any of our senses. We must believe a miracle, though we do not see it, and be condemned for Hereticks, if we believe it not. Such a faith so catholick and large an one does the church of Rome require. A faith which, I am sure, we shall never attain unto, till that time come (which God of his mercy prevent) that we are given up to believe a lie. In the mean while we have just reason to believe the doctrine salse, when we find the miracle a mere pretence. And twill be time enough to believe this doctrine of transubstantiation, when we are able to discern a substantial change.

II. I

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> Such among the Hebrews are MR D3 & MB13 of which fee Abravenel on the Pentat. fol. 138. col. 4. • Joh. ii. 11. • ibid. 9. • Durand. Rational. Divin. Offic. 1. 4. c. 21.

II. I SHALL prove, that the MESSIAS was to work miracles, when he came into the world. And this I am obliged to do, because our SAVIOUR appeals to his works, as a good proof, that he was the CHRIST the Son of God.

INDEED Maimonides, as I intimated before, denies that the MESSIAS was to work miracles: But this is not the sense of the Jewish nation, but an opinion that the Jews sly to for refuge. For when they are not able to deny the matter of sact, they are forced to say, that the MESSIAS was not to do any miracles at all. That Jesus lived, and that he did wonderful works, they are not able to deny; but then the obstinate Jew, that cannot deny the works of Jesus, yet will affirm, that the doing of such works was not a sign or character of the MESSIAS, in whose time we are not to look for miracles. I shall consider the truth of this pretence. And

1. Tis very certain, that this is not the sense of all the Jewish nation: d Abravenel mentions a saying out of the Vaikra Rabba, viz. That all feasts should cease, besides the feast of Purim, and the day of Expiation. The meaning of which he tells us is this; that whereas the other seasts were ordained in memory of the deliverance out of Egypt, therefore the Israelites should not in the time of the Messias apply themselves to the remembrance of the prodigies and miracles, which God wrought for them, when he delivered them from thence; because they should then see eximious miracles in the days of the Messias, in comparison whereof the others were not worth the remembering.

IFIND the same e author in another place speaking to the same purpose, "ID: The Pfalmist (says he) complains that the Israelites in the time of their captivity lost three glorious gifts, which they had before. Viz. Prophecy, Miracles, and the Knowledge of God; For so it is written, whe see not our signs, there is no more any prophet, neither is there any that knoweth how long. Therefore (says he) the prophet makes a promise of restoring these three benefits to the people in those words: I will pour out my spirit upon all sless, &c. So that the return of miracles was justly expected according to him upon the appearance of the Messias: For that he understood the prophecy of the times of the Messias: For that he understood the prophecy of the times of the Messias: evident from his following words; and that it belongs to that time, and was in great measure suffilled, will be granted by him, who considers these words, But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel, And it shall come to pass in the last days, (saith God) I will pour out of my spirit upon all sless: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams. Act. ii. 16, 17.

But as the same g author in another place is very express to my present purpose. There he lays down the several characters and conditions of the Messias, no less than ten in number. I am not concerned now to reckon them up; The power of working miracles is one; and that was to be attended with the spirit of prophecy again revived, to which purpose he quotes the before mentioned words of the prophet foel, which words are also applied by the Apostle, to the times of the Messias.

2. WE find it particularly prophesied of the MESSIAS, that he should work miracles, and those very miracles, which JESUS did. Then the eyes

of

d Abravenel Cap. Fidei. c, 13. e Abravenel in Joel il. 28, Psal. lxxiv. 9. Abravenel in Isa. xii.

of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped; then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb shall sing, Isa. xxxv. 5, 6. h Again, The spirit of the LORD is upon me, because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek: which is the same thing with preaching the gospel to the poor, as I observed before. And therefore our SAVIOUR did return a most apposite answer to the disciples of John the Baptist, when he bid them shew their master the

things, which they saw and heard.

3. AGREEABLE hereunto we find among the people in our Saviour's time a general expectation, that the MESSIAS, when he came, would work miracles; and they were forward to demand a fign of our bleffed SAVIOUR. Their law was this way confirmed, and Moses their great lawgiver wrought many miracles, and they therefore demanded the same figns of our LORD as his credentials. i The Jews require a sign, says the Apostle: and we find certain of the Scribes and Pharisees saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. And JEsus tells the Jews, Except ye see signs and wonders ye will not believe. And though they did not believe, when they had seen signs; yet they were forward to demand them: And that there was an expectation among the Jews of that time, that the MES-SIAS, when he came, would work wonders, is evident from those words of the people. k When CHRIST cometh (say they) will be do more mi-

racles than thefe, which this man hath done?

JOHN the Baptist was the forerunner of CHRIST; he was born a little before our SAVIOUR; and he appearing at that time, when the MES-SIAS was expected, and being very much famed for his virtue, and followed by the people, they were prone to take him for the MESSIAS; and Herod himself seared him, as one that might easily draw away the people, as Josephus 1 tells us. The people upon his appearance among them were in great expectation and suspense, and m All men mused in their hearts of John, whether he was the CHRIST or not. He was not only born about the time, in which the MESSIAS was expected; but the passages relating to his birth were very strange and surprizing, and much discoursed of among the Jews, who knew his father and mother, and had heard of what the n Angel had foretold, and what happened to his father Zechariah: Besides, he was a person of great sanctity, and great same among the people; nor had there been a greater person born among women at that time: No wonder o then, that the Jews should send priests and levites from Jerusalem to John the Baptist to know who he was, and whether he were the Christ or not. But then it is confessed of p John the Baptist, that he did no miracle. It was so ordered by the divine providence, that John the Baptist should want this character of the true Messias, viz. the working of miracles. But I shall proceed to shew,

III. THAT miracles are a good argument of the truth of a doctrine. And that therefore our Saviour did with great reason refer John the Baptist's disciples to the works, which they saw.

THIS I think my self obliged the rather to insist upon, the thing it self

h Isai. lxi. 1. Matth. xi. 5. i 1 Cor. i. 22. Matth. xii. 38. Joh. iv. 48. Matth. xvi. 12. Luk. xi. 16. k Joh. vii. 31. ! Antiqu. lib. 18. c. 7. Luk. iii. 15. Luk. ii. 13. Luk. xi. 16. . Joh. i. 15, 20. k Joh. vii. 31.

Joh. x. 41.

being of great moment, and it being opposed by the enemies of Christia-

nity.

MAIMONIDES q affirms, that the Israelites did not believe Moses because of his miracles, which he did. And he hath added, that he that believes upon the score of miracles, will be liable to suspect inchantment, or some other fraud. And moreover he adds, that all the miracles, which Moses did in the wilderness, he did them upon the account of some necessity, which moved him, and not to gain belief to his prophecy. Thus (says he) it was necessary in order to the drowning of the Egyptians, that the sea should be divided and let loose upon them. We wanted food (says he) and he sent manna: They were thirsty, and he opened a rock: The congregation of Corah denied him, and therefore the earth swallowed them up.

At this rate does that subtile enemy of Christianity discourse: And 'tis very easie to observe, what he drives at in all this. I shall not trouble my self to shew, that other Jews have taught a doctrine contrary to what Maimonides teaches. It were no hard matter to shew this; but 'tis of little moment to do that towards my present purpose. I shall do that which

is more material in shewing, that this doctrine is in it self false.

WHEN GOD was about to send Moses to the Israelites in Egypt, we find Moses objected and said, They will not believe me: Hereupon God bids him cast his rod upon the ground, and the rod was turned into a serpent. And this was done (as God said to Moses) that they might believe, that the Lord God of their fathers, &c. hath appeared unto him. After this the hand of Moses was turned leprous, and restored again; upon which Moses is told, that if the Israelites would not believe him upon the first, that they should believe the voice of the latter sign. Moses tells Pharaoh, that at his request the plague of frogs should be removed, That thou mayst know (says he) that there is none like unto the Lord our God.

So far it is evident, that Moses wrought signs to procure belief.

But let us follow Moses out of Egypt into the wilderness, and see, whether it be true, which Maimonides affirms, that those miracles were not wrought to gain belief to his prophecy. I shall content my self with one of the miracles, which Maimonides himself mentions, as a work, that Mofes did to serve a present necessity, and not to gain credit to his prophecy. And that is, the miracle, which was wrought upon the rebellion of Corah, and his company. Now it is very evident from the text, that that miracle was wrought to affert the prophecy of Moses, as well as the right of Aaron; as will appear from the words of Moses to Corah and his company : To morrow (says he) the LORD will shew who are his, and who is holy; and will cause him to come near unto him, even him whom he hath chosen, will he cause to come near unto him. Again, when those evil men were about to be swallowed up we find Moses saying: Y Hereby ye shall know, that the LORD hath sent me to do all these works: for I have not done them of own mind. If these men dye the common death of all men: or if they be visited after the visitation of all men, then the LORD hath not sent me. But if the LORD make a new thing, and the earth open her mouth, and swallow them up, with all that appertain unto them; and they go down quick into the pit, then ye shall understand, that these men have provoked

<sup>q</sup> Eundam. Leg. c. 8. Exod. iv. 1. f ver. 5. ver. 8. Exod. viii. 10. Numb. xvi. 5. f ver. 28, 29, 30. the

the LORD. Hence it is evident, that the miracle confirmed the mission of Moses, and so had a direct tendency to gain credit and belief unto his prophecy, and that a miracle is a good confirmation of a doctrine.

No wonder then, that we find our Saviour frequently appealing to his miracles, as the evidences of his commission: <sup>2</sup> I have (says he) greater witness than that of John; for the work which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. Again, we read elsewhere to the same purpose: <sup>2</sup> Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly: And thereupon it solows presently. <sup>b</sup> Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: The works that I do in my Father's name bear witness of me. Again, <sup>c</sup> Believe me, that I am in the Father and the Father in me; or elsebelieve me for the very works sake. And in another place our Saviour says, <sup>d</sup> If I had not done among them the works, which none other man did, they had not had sin. Again, <sup>e</sup> If I do not the works of my father, believe me not: but if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know and believe that the Father is in me, and I in him.

BESIDES, we find that men were greatly convinced by the miracles, which Jesus wrought, when he had miraculously fed five thousand men with five loaves and two fishes as it is said, f Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that I esus did, said, This is of a truth that prophet, that should come into the world. And when he had turned water into wine, 'tis said, that his disciples believed on him. And when he was at Jerusalem at the Passover, in the feast-day, Many believed in his name, when they faw the miracles which he did. The works of Jesus were very convictive, and great was the evidence, that they were attended with. When our Saviour raised the widows son of Naim, & There came a great fear on all, and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us; and that God hath visited his people. To this purpose Nicodemus tells our Lord: h Rabbi (says he) we know that thou art a teacher come from God: And then follows that, which gives him the ground of this persuasion of his; For no man can do those miracles, which thou doest, except God be with him. And the blind man, who was restored to sight, speaks to the same purpose. i Since the world began (says he) it was not heard, that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing: whence it appears, that the people were greatly convinced by the works, which they saw Jesus do.

INDEED our SAVIOUR appeared in a mean and poor condition in the world: he was reproached and traduced, and accused by evil men. But then the k works which he did (which were the works of the spirit) did clear and justifie our SAVIOUR. And in this sense I understand the Apostle's words, where he tells us, that God was manifested in the sless, and adds, that he was justified in the spirit. Or, \* justified and cleared from false accusations

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> Joh. v. 36. <sup>a</sup> Joh. x. 24. <sup>b</sup> Joh. x. 25. <sup>c</sup> Joh. xiv. 11. <sup>d</sup> Joh. i. 15, 24. <sup>e</sup> Joh. x. 37, 38. <sup>f</sup> Joh. vi. 14. ii. 11, 23. <sup>f</sup> Luk. vii. 16. <sup>h</sup> Joh. iii. 2. <sup>l</sup> Joh. ix. 32, 33. <sup>l</sup> Tim. iii. 16.

<sup>\*</sup> For the better understanding the full sense of these words. I Tim. iii. 16. GOD was justified in the spirit; it will be necessary to give the opinion of several of our hest divines upon them. As this reverend Prelate in this place speaks of his being justified or approved to be the true MESSIAS by the miracles, which he wrought; so in another place he bath these words Ast. x. 38. GOD anointed JESUS of Nazareth with the HOLY GHOST and with power. Now our SAVIOUR was anointed with

with the HOLT GHOST. First, At his conception. Thus the angel tells the blessed Virgin, The HOLY GHOST shall come upon thee, and the power of the highest shall overshadow thee; therefore also that boly thing, which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of GOD. Secondly, At his haptism at the river Jordan, Matth. iii. 15. Mat. i. 9. Now when all the people were haptized, it came to pass, that JESUS also being haptized and praying the heaven was opened, and the HOLY GHOST descended in a hadily shape like a dove upon him. And a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased. And to this I may add the words of the prophet to the same purpose. Behold my servant, whom I uphold, I will put my spirit upon him. Isai. xlii. 1. And St. Luke tells us presently upon the haptism of JESUS, That he being full of the HOLY GHOST, returned from Jordan, and was led by the spirit into the wilderness, Luke. iv. 1. And after he was tempted in the wilderness, he tells us, That JESUS returned in the power of the spirit into Galilee. ver. 14. And when he was in the synagogue at Nazareth, He opened the book, and found the place, where it was written, The spirit of the LORD is upon me, And he said unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears, ver. 21. See more at large pag. 11.

mend was led by the purit time two moments, and found the place, where it was written, The pipit of the fungaogue at Nagareth, He spend the book, and found the place, where it was written, The pipit of the LORD is upon me, And be faid unt them, This day it this frightene fulfilled in your cart, yer. 21. See more at large pag. 11.

Whithy in locum, He was juffifed by the fairit. As doing those miracles on earth, by which he justified his mission against all the acculations of the Yews by the fairit of GOD. Matth. xii. 28. being delared to be the 80 on 600D with power by the spirit of bottoms from. is 3.4. by sending that spirit after his ascension into heaven. All. ii. 32. which he had promited to his disciples upon earth, and by which the world was convinced web heaveness of bis rightening. Ioh. xvi. 10.

Tillesson on Matth. xii. 31, 32. By speaking against the HOLT GHOST is meant their blasshems of his person, but we wrought his miracles, which tho' tidd at last reflect upon our SAVIOUR, person; yet it was an immediate reflexion upon the HOLY GHOST which which were proper blasshemies and reproaches of his person, but not of the HOLY GHOST by way of distinction, or opposition against the other calumnies, which they used against or SAVIOUR, which were proper blasshemies and reproaches of his person, but not of the HOLY GHOST.

Burkit in locum. Justined in or by the Spirit, That is the Spirit was CHRIST's withes, that he was no impostor, or deceiver, but the promited and expected MESSIAS working all his miracles by the power of the Spirit, and thereby declaring himself, to be the Son of GOD with power by the Spirit of holines, and by fending his Spirits after his assection into heaven, down upon his diciples here on earth. Thus the Spirit justified CHRIST truly and really to be what he professed himself to be, and leaded his dorline to the world.

Hammond in lease. The Spirit descended on him at his baptism, and gave testimony of him. Matth. Authory Burges of Justifiers and professed himself to be come of GOD upo

So that the full meaning of this expression seems to be this, CHRIST JESUS was justified and vindicated in all his pretensions; he was declared to be no impostor or deceiver, but the promised and expected MESSIAS, the Son of GOD, and the redeemer of fallen man. First, Before both GOD and man, by his being conceived by the HOLY GHOST, and so born without sin. Luk. i. 35. Secondly, Before the devils, when he wasled by the spirit into the wilderness, and overcame all their temptation. Matthiv. 1. &c. Mark i. 12, 13. Luk. iv. 1. &c. Thirdy, Before all the world, by the descent of the HOLY GHOST upon

upon him at his baptism. Matth. iii. 16. by preaching the gospel to the poor. Isai. lxi. 1. Lak. iv. 18, 21. by the miracles, which he wrought. Fob. iii. 2. Job. v. 36. Matth. xii. 28. by his rising again from the dead. Rom. i. 3, 4. by inspiring his apostles and enabling them and others to preach the gospel of CHRIST. Ast. ii. 1, 2, 3, 4, 33. Ast. xviii. 25, 28. sending the HOLY GHOST upon others. Ast. x. 44, 45. Ast. xiii. 52. Ast. xix. 2, 6. and enabling them to transmit the Christian Religion in writing to suture ages. 2 Pet. i. 19, 20, 21. And lastly to private Christians, by applying the promises of CHRIST, and the comforts of the gospel to their souls. Joh. xiv. 16, 17, 26. Joh xv. 26. Joh. xvi. 13, 14. 1 Cor. xii. 3. by giving to them such gifts and qualifications, as are necessary for their station. 1 Cor. xii. 4, to 14. by assuring them of their adoption. Rom. viii. 16. and salvation. Rom. viii. 16, 17. Gal. iv. 4, 5, 6, 7. and enabling them to call upon GOD with greater servency. Rom. viii. 15. Gal. iv. 4, 5, 6.

tions 1 by the spirit: For so those words may be rendered, which we render in the spirit. It was we know ον ωνεύμαλι by the spirit of God that TESUS cast out devils. His miraculous works did proceed from the spirit of God. And he was justified by that Spirit, when he wrought miracles. This is no new interpretation. We find it in one of the ancient m Fathers: He was justified by the Spirit, i. e. By the divine Spirit he wrought mira-But if I cast out devils by the spirit of God (says he.) It was therefore demonstrated, and plain by miracles, that he was true God, and the Son of God. Thus the centurion by the cross, when he saw the earthquake and the darkness, said, This of a truth is the Son of GOD. The holy Spirit did acquit our blessed SAVIOUR from the aspersions, which were cast upon him. And it may very well be said to be an a Advocate to our SAVIOUR as well as a Comforter with relation to his disciples. The Spirit did plead the cause of our LORD, and by the mighty works of this divine Spirit men were convinced, that Jesus was no impostor, but that he was what he professed himself to be, the CHRIST the Son of God.

A MIRACLE hath always been a good proof of a doctrine, and ever acknowledged to be very convincing. When Elijah had restored to life the widow's son, she concludes him a true prophet. O By this I know (says she) that thou art a man of God, and that the word of the Lord in thy mouth is truth. A true miracle is an attestation from heaven: We cannot think, that God will set his seal to a lye, or to a truth of little moment and concern.

AND as miracles are a good proof of the truth of a doctrine, so our SA2 VIOUR had great reason to refer the disciples of John the Baptist to his miraculous works, especially when it is considered, that the law of Moses was confirmed by miracles; and it is very reasonable to believe, that the ordinances of Moses should be removed after the same manner, that they were established and confirmed: And therefore that Jesus should do greater miracles than Moses ever did.

BESIDES, our SAVIOUR designed the destruction of the devil's kingdom in the world. P For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. And upon that account it was needful, that he should do miracles. The devil had gotten a great and ancient possession over mankind; he had got into the hearts and bodies of men, and dwelt in the temples of the heathen world. And whoever confiders the largeness of his dominon, and the power and malice of his instruments, will easily grant, that there was need of a mighty power to disposses him. Now our Saviour and his followers made use of no carnal weapons,

they

Les signifies by, Matth. xvii. 21. xxiii. 16. Luk. iv. 1. Heb. i. 1. Matth. xii. 28. Theodoret. in 1 Tim. iii, 16. Joh. xvii. 8. 1 King. xvii. 24. 1 Joh. iii. 8.

they armed no legions, raised no fighting men by sea or land: And yet it is not to be believed, that the devil could be driven out of his ancient possession and strong holds without a greater power, than what he was possessed of, and that must be a divine power. The power of the devil was great at our Saviour's appearance. He dwelt in the heathen temples, answered in their oracles; an idolatrous worship obtained in the world; many were there who were possessed by him. Our Saviour stopped his mouth in the oracles, overthrew his kingdom, destroyed the idolatry and superstition, which had overspread the world, and threw the devil out of the bodies, and (which was a greater work) out of the hearts of men. The Gospel fet forward with great disadvantages: The preachers of it had not riches, or power, or great birth, or strong alliances, or worldly wisdom to recommend them: On the other hand they were poor men and despised: But yet they were endued with power from above of working miracles, and dispossessing the devil where ever they came. 4 Εί σημείων χωρίς ἔπεισαν, μείζον τὸ Θαυμα φαίνείαι. Had all this been done without the working of miracles, this would have been the greatest miracle of all. It was necessary, that

this power should be employed against the devil's kingdom.

THE Jews indeed seem to be blamed by our SAVIOUR for seeking after signs; But certain it is, that they were not blameable (nor blamed by our SAVIOUR) for demanding figns and wonders: This demand was not unreasonable in it self, nor blameable in them: In this they were to be blamed, that they did not require them with a mind prepared to receive the truth, and were not content with such miracles, as our SAVIOUR wrought. I Maimonides tells us, that there were three precepts, which did oblige the Israelites, when they came into the land of promise, viz. to set over them a king, to destroy the Amalekites, and to build a sanctuary or temple. And yet when the Israelites demanded a king, we find God displeased with them. But then it was not because they desired to set a king over them, but because they desired it amis, and not לקיים המצורה in order to obey the law, but because they were weary of Samuel a good governor. And so in the case before us: The Jews require a sign, and it is not to be supposed, that our SAVIOUR was upon that account displeased with them. For their law being confirmed by signs and miracles, it was very reasonable for them to require signs, before they consented to relinquish it. But that was not their fault, that they required a sign. But they came to our Saviour tempting, rather than as sincere learners, and nothing will serve their turn but a sign from heaven, The Jews ask our SAVIOUR, what they should do that they might work the works of GoD. Our SAVIOUR answered and said unto them. " This is the work of GOD, that ye believe on him, whom he hath fent. Twas their great duty to believe that Jesus was the Christ the Son of God: The Jews do not stop here, but proceed and demand of him a sign: What sign shewest thou then (said they) that we may see, and believe thee? What dost thou work? This was not unreasonable all this while; their fault was, that they would chuse what kind of miracles our SAVIOUR should work, and they must be signs from heaven, and no less seems to be intimated in the following words. Our fathers did eat manna in the desart: As it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat. They must have miracles of this

Gerysoft. Tom. 3. p. 276. Matth. xvi. 4. H. Melach. c. 1. Matth. xvi. 1. Mark viii. 11. Joh. iv. 28, 29, 30, 31.

fort.

fort; they are for just such signs, as *Moses* wrought. There was thunder and lightening, and a thick cloud at the giving the law upon mount *Sinai*. They had *manna* from heaven in the wilderness: They must have such signs, as they pitch upon themselves, and thus they tempt God by indulging their curiosity. Our Saviour wrought many signs and wonders, and did mightily out do *Moses* (as shall be shewed afterward) and all their prophets: And therefore our Saviour did enough to confirm his doctrine and left the Jews without excuse.

MIRACLES are then a good testimony, provided we are sure that they are miracles strictly so called. For it hath often happened, that the world hath been cheated with lying wonders. Magicians and impostors have imposed upon men: And it is a matter of some difficulty to discern the difference between a true miracle and a false one, between that which is indeed the finger of God, and that which is the fraud and artifice of the devil. If Moses turn a rod into a serpent, so do the sorcerers also; and it might perhaps have puzzled the wisest stander-by to discern the difference between them. It will be very hard many times ex parte rei to judge, what miracles are true, and what are falfly so called; but though there be a difficulty in judging ex parte rei, yet it is possible to discern true miracles from lying wonders. Else our Saviour's miracles had been in vain, and could not have been brought as a proof, that he was the CHRIST the Son of God. We may in this weighty matter be preserved from mistake, if we consider it with that due application, which becomes us. I shall therefore now prove.

IV. THAT our SAVIOUR'S were true and unexceptionable miracles. My meaning is, that they were a good proof of his doctrine, and that he was, what he professed himself to be, the Christ, the Son of God. And for the farther proof of this I shall offer the following particulars to be considered, not only separately, but in conjunction with one another.

I. THE author of these miracles was JESUS, a person of a most innocent and useful life. Had he been a profligate person, or had he been ever detected of an untruth, the miracles, which he did, would not have been enough to gain him credit. He was far removed from oftentation and vain glory, and a great example of meekness and humility, of purity and peaceableness, of an ardent love to God and contempt of the world. Nothing but impudent malice could accuse our LORD. He did good to all, and did not hurt the poorest and vilest man in the world. He did not come to destroy, but to save the lives of men. He gained no wealth by his works, who had not where to lay his head. He desired no applause; for he charges those, that saw his works, that they should tell no man. He affected no dominion, and did not make his power of doing these works a step to worldly greatness: Indeed he bids John the Baptist's disciples shew John the things, which they saw and heard; but this was an effect of his charity to them or to their master, and not because he affected popular fame. He was so innocent a person, that the very judge, who delivered him to death, did pronounce him innocent, and he that betrayed him was overtaken with that horror, that he went and hanged himself: He was judged a righteous person by strangers, and his encmies were forced to make use of false and incoherent witnesses, of loud clamours, and the specious pretence of Cafar's friendship, to procure his death. He

spent his time in doing good, and was the greatest example, that ever appeared in the world, of the most spotless purity, the profoundest humility, and the most inflamed and universal charity. The miracles of such a person have a mighty force: For if an holy and good life do very much commend a doctrine, surely such a life as our Saviour's was, accompanied with the mighty works, which he did, is of great moment to assure us of the

truth of what he taught.

2. I Consider next the doctrine which the works, that Jesus did, do confirm: This doctrine was like Jesus himself, holy, just and good: It is the wisest and the best religion in the world, and that which tends to make men good and happy: It does not consist in a number of ceremonies and rituals, a few small and trifling opinions; it is not a doctrine, which promotes a secular and worldly interest, that indulges men in their lusts, and only robs them of their wealth: It is a doctrine, that is holy and innocent, and teaches us to love God with our whole heart, and our neighbour as our selves. It permits us not to do any evil, and requires us to do all the good we can: It is far from allowing us to do an injury, that it will not suffer us to revenge it: It teaches us to be humble and modest, chast and temperate, very frequent and very fervent in our prayers to God, fincere in all our promises and professions, and very bountiful in our mercy, which we shew to the poor and miserable: It is a religion, that requires the service of the heart, that lays before us the best precepts, and propounds the most incomparable rewards. It abstracts us from the world, and puts us upon pursuance of life and immortality. It does not only forbid adultery, murther and theft, but every impure thought, every angry word, every covetous desire: It comports with our wisest faculties, quiets our minds, perfects our natures, kills our lusts, and joys our hearts. It bids us do as we would be done by, obey our superiors, be gentle to our servants, kind to the poor, and just to all men. It allows us not to think any evil, and does strictly require, that we speak evil of no man. It forbids not only all swearing, but all dissimulation, and every idle word. It commends to us patience, contentedness, resignation to the will of God, and a thirst after heaven and heavenly things. It is a religion, that is able to make us very wise, and very happy; rendering us at once at peace with God, and with one another, and filling our souls with a peace, that passeth all understanding. It is the best security, and the greatest blessing to kingdoms and commonwealths, and all societies of men. It disowns every thing, that is unjust and untrue, that is sneaking and unbecoming, that is low and mean. It designs to conform us to the likeness of God: And whoever looks into its laws, may soon discern, that it is a blessed institution, and not a system of crast and worldly policy to keep the world in awe. It is full of weighty principles, of divine and heavenly precepts, and of the most endearing and pathetick motives to obedience. It hath nothing trifling in it; but is fraught with a wisdom that is divine, and is placed above the contempt and scorn of men. It commends it self to the consciences of all, that are ingenuous and inquisitive: And no man will speak evil of it, but a fool that understands it not, or the debauched sinner, who is condemned by its precepts, and justly liable to its severest penalties.

WHEN I speak thus of the Christian Religion, I speak of it, as it is in it self, and to them who give up themselves to the obedience of it: Christianity, I know, is deprayed and greatly corrupted by the church of Rome;

and there are but few of those who understand their religion better than to have only a form of godliness, whilst they continue enemies to the power of it.

3. I CONSIDER in the next place the great design of the miracles, which Jesus did. We shall find, that they tended to the destruction of the devil's kingdom. It was most maliciously and foolishly said by the Pharisees, x that our LORD cast out devils by the prince of devils. is sufficiently refuted by our SAVIOUR. Y Every kingdom (says he) divided against it self is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against it self shall not stand: And if satan cast out satan, he is divided against himself. How shall then his kingdom stand? And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? Therefore they shall be your judges. The miracles, which CHRIST did, destroyed the devil's kingdom, and therefore could not be done by his assistance and power: They were a torment to the devil: and when satan was cast our, it must be granted, that it was done by a power superior to that of satan Our LORD cast the devil out of the bodies of men, and did by himself. thus confirming his religion destroy the kingdom of satan in the world. He is forced out of his ancient possessions, and no longer suffered to delude the filly world, as he had done before in his oracles, and by his idolatrous worship and superstition. Our Saviour turn'd him out of his temples, and threw him out of the bodies and hearts of men.

4. I COME in the next place to consider with all possible care and application the works themselves, which Jesus did, with the circumstances and adjuncts, which attended them; and I persuade my self, that the more we consider them, the more we shall believe that they were divine, and consequently a good proof, that Jesus was the Christ the Son of God.

[17.] THEY a were most stupendous works: He raised the dead, and one that had been dead four days, and was interred. He b cured the most inveterate and chronical diseases, and such as were beyond the help of art. A woman that laboured twelve years of an issue of blood, that had wasted her estate upon physicians without success, was cured with the touch of his garment. He cures another, that had a spirit of insirmity eighteen years; that was obwed together, and could in no wife lift up her self: He heals another with a word of his mouth, who had an infirmity eight and thirty years: And restores one to his fight, who was born blind: He cures the leper, and Peter's wife's mother, that was sick of a fever, and two blind men, with a touch. He cures the paralytick, and dispossesseth the demoniacks with a word of his mouth: He multiplies a few loaves and fishes to the relief of five thousand, and the fragments are many, when the first store was small. He cures the withered hand, and with a word of his mouth dries up the barren figtree. The devils obey his word: he treads on the waters as on a pavement, and checks and controlls the uncertain winds and the raging sea. He restores to health, and raises to life with a word of his mouth, or a touch of his garment. The dead hear his voice, and he does these mighty works without delay and without labour, and not like Elisba, 2 King. iv. 33.

[2.] His works were various and of feveral kinds: He might have been prefumed to have had some particular skill or gift, if he had only cured one

<sup>\*</sup> Matth. xii. 24. 7 ibid. xii. 25. 2 Mar. v. 7. Matth. xii. 29. 4 Joh. xi. 6 Mar. v. 25. Luk. xiii. 13. Joh. v. Joh. ix. Matth. viii. 3, 15. ix. 25. viii. 6, 13, 16. xiv. xii. 13. xxi. 19.

disease: But here's no room left now for suspicion: For c he healed all sorts of diseases; restored the blind, cleansed the lepers, governed the sea and winds, and makes the grave give back its dead. All this could not be imputed to any particular gift or skill: It d was never heard, that any man (let him be ever so great an oculist) opened the eyes of one, that was born blind. It must be granted, that here was the hand of GoD.

[3.] These were works of mercy and kindness also, which speaks them to be from God. The e Heathen could say, A deo est mortali juvare mortalem: To do good speaks a divine principle and likeness. The Jews had no cause to suspect, that our SAVIOUR was affisted by the devil the enemy of mankind: He might have confirmed his doctrine by terrible miracles, he chuses to do it by great acts of mercy and relief. He might haveshaken the pillars of the earth, cast a veil upon the luminaries above, and confirmed his doctrine by thunder and lightening, by tempest and thick darkness, and other terrible effects of his power and displeasure: But our Lord delighted in mercy, and his miracles were so many acts of mercy and relief. He confirms his words, and relieves the afflicted at the same time, and makes joy and gladness where-ever he comes. He cleanseth the lepers, restores the blind and lame, and raises the dead, while the poor have the goipel preached unto them. What great joy must this make, where-ever he comes, to them who were fed, and restored, and dispossessed? How much joy must this needs bring to the persons relieved, and to all their friends and relations? He exerts his power to relieve, not to grieve or afflict mankind.

HIS miracles were so many proofs of his mercy, as well as of his power. It was an argument of power to disposses a demoniack, but to the possessed it was a great act of compassion. Twas a great power, that multiplied the loaves and fishes, but it was bounty too to do it for the hungry multitude. There is required an infinite power to raise a dead man, but 'twas f a great act of compassion also to raise the only son of the widom of Naim. His turning water into wine was an act of mercy and relief: We may suppose, that it was a poor wedding, where the provision was spent, while the guests remain, and in such cases men are generally ashamed, that they are not able to entertain their friends. He manifested his glory when he did it, and his kindness also. It is a God-like thing to be great and good, and to use power, as our LORD did his, to the rescue and relief of the poor and of the miserable. Our LORD went about doing good: 'Tis the devil, the great enemy of mankind, who goes about seeking whom he may devour. Our LORD's very miracles were acts of great mercy and relief.

It is true, 8 that our LORD cursed the figtree, and destroyed the herd of swine: But then it is to be considered, that the figtree was barren (to say nothing of the enigmatical meaning of that passage) and the swine, which were drowned, were unclean by the law of Moses: Besides in both he confirmed his doctrine, and gave great assurance of his power. And it appeared in the case of the swine, that the devils had no power to hurt those creatures without his leave.

[4.] OUR LORD'S miracles were done publickly, h and not in a corner. Our LORD did not shun the light: When the paralytick was cured, the multitude were witnesses of the cure. And when the blind and dumb were

c Matth. iv. 23, 24. ix 35. d Joh. ix. 32. c Plim. f Luk. vii. 11. R Vid. Dr. H. More Mystery of Godliness. Book 4. chap. 8. h Matth ix. 8. -xii. 22, 23. Luk. v. 11, 12. Joh. v. Luk. iv. 33. Joh. xi. 45.

healed, all the people were amazed. When the widow's fon of Naim was restored to life, there was much people with Jesus: When the man was cured, that had been 38 years under his affliction, 'twas done in the city of Jerusalem, and at a festival when all the tribes were there. The demoniack was dispossessed in a synagogue, and when Lazarus was raised, many of the Jews were by.

OUR LORD used no arts to deceive the people: He does his works in an open and clear light. And when it so happened, that he did them more privately, he forbids the divulging of what he had done, that there might be no shadow of any artifice or secret contrivance. For our LORD did all things with a great mapping or freedom; and though he desired not the praise of his works, yet he did them at least so openly, that there could be no suspicion of fraud and imposture.

This was an argument of our Lord's fincerity. He wrought miracles, that men might believe, and therefore he wrought these, which did most of all tend to beget this belief in them. For miracles are for the sake of unbelievers, and therefore had need to be wrought, openly among them.

Thus Moses wrought his miracles among the unbelieving Egyptians: The prophet goes to Bethel, and shews his sign in the sight of Jeroboam: Elijah works a miracle in the sight of the priests of Baal, and our LORD does his before the multitude.

THE church of Rome talks much of miracles wrought within the verge of her own communion: She maintains doctrines which need confirmation; And if she work miracles, she should send some of her children hither to work them among us, that we might be convinced, or lest without a plea. They of her own communion, who believe her doctrines, do not need her miracles: If there be any need of them at all, it is among us, who cannot believe her tenets, till we see them better confirmed, than yet they are. It is to be suspected, that they want that power, which they are not able to make appear. For it is but reasonable, they should be done, where there is need of them.

[5.] OUR LORD's works were perfect and complete; it appeared by the effects, that the work was completely done. When the i paralytick was restored, it did appear to be a perfect k cure by his taking his bed and walking. It is said, that I the dumb spake, who was restored by our LORD. When he restored the damosel m to life, she arose and walked; And of the widow's son of Naim it is said, that he that was dead sate up, and began to speak. And of " Lazarus it is said, that he came forth with his grave cloaths about him. When he o cured the man that was born blind, he came feeking from the pool of Siloam. And when P he turned the water into wine, the effect was discerned by the company. Of the a demoniack that was disposses it is said, that he was found sitting at the feet of Jesus cloathed and in his right mind. And the poor man, that lay helpless at the pool of Bethesda, takes up his bed and walks. When Jesus fed the multitude, he did not delude them with shadows and phantastick food, and with the bare accidents of bread and fish, but they did all eat and were filled. The effect was very discernable, they were not imposed upon by spectrums, and collusions, and pious frauds.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> Matth. ix. 2, <sup>1</sup> Matth. ix. 32. <sup>1</sup> Mar. v. 42. <sup>1</sup> Luk. vii. 15. <sup>1</sup> Joh. xi. 44. <sup>2</sup> Joh. ix. 7. <sup>3</sup> Joh. ii. <sup>4</sup> Luk. viii. 35. <sup>1</sup> Joh. v. <sup>4</sup> Matth. xiv. 20.

## A:A:AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA:A:A:A

## CHAP. VI.

The miracles which Jesus did, compared with those which were really wrought by the hands of Moses; with the pretended stories of the church of Rome; and with those recorded of Apollonius Tyanxus and some other heathens: Of the sufficient assurance, which we have, that Jesus did those works, which are reported of him.

BEFORE I proceed to consider, what may be objected against the above mentioned particulars; I shall, for the farther confirmation thereof, shew, that the works which Jesus did, were greater works, than ever were done by any other person whatsoever. And to that purpose I shall compare our Saviour's miracles with those true and divine miracles, which Moses wrought; with the pretended miracles of the church of Rome, and those which are storied in the writings of the heathens, and more especially such as are told of Apollonius Tyaneus.

I. I SHALL consider the miracles, which were wrought by the hands of Moses. There arose not a prophet since in Israel like unto Moses, whom the LORD knew face to face. In all the signs and the wonders, which the LORD sent him to do in the land of Egypt, to Pharaoh and to all his servants, and to all his land, and in all that mighty hand, and in all that great terror, which Moses shewed in the sight of Israel. Upon the account of the miracles which Moses did, he was mightily famed among the heathens, as he was more especially among his own countrymen the Jews. The Jews magnisse Moses above the rest of their prophets; and one of their late writers sums up the miracles of Moses, and those of the other prophets from the beginning to the destruction of their sirst temple; and assimpting the miracles wrought by Moses, or upon his account, exceed the number of those, which were wrought by all the prophets together. For whereas all the prophets for the space of above three thousand years wrought but 74 miracles, the miracles of Moses alone were 76. I shall not examine his account (let it be as it will) but I shall shew, that his works are not to be compared with those, which our Jesus did.

I SHALL especially consider the miracles, which were wrought in Egypt; particularly those miracles, which were then done in order to the bringing

out the Israelites from the bondage, in which they were.

AND I must needs confess, that they were mighty works, and such as did plainly speak a supernatural and a divine power. And I ought not by any means to disparage those mighty works. I shall, before I proceed any farther, shew you, that those miracles were such, as did indeed give sufficient credit to the mission of Moses, and abundantly consirm the truth of

Deut. xxxiv. 10, 11, 12. # Menasseh B. Israel conciliat.

his words. And that will appear, if we consider seriously these there things. FIRST, The plagues themselves, which were miraculously inslicted. These were such works, as were above the power of any creature. The works themselves declare a divine power. It is true they were not all alike, and the Magicians did the same works, which \* Moses did, for a while. They turned their rods into serpents, and water into blood, and brought frogs upon the land of Egypt, as well as Moses: These Magicians went as far as they could. And it amounts to no more than this, that they were able to inflict some evils upon their country, but not able to remove them. For though it be said that the magicians brought the frogs upon the land of Egypt; yet it is also said that when y Pharaoh would have them taken away, he applied himself to Moses and Aaron; which he would never have done, if the magicians could have done it for him: nay, more than this, these magicians were out-done by Moses after this. They attempted to imitate him, but could not; they were not able to bring forth lice, as Moses did: 2 Then the magicians said unto Pharaoh, This is the finger of God. They were forced to confess a divine power.

SECONDLY, The difference between the Egyptians and the Israelites during these plagues. This was indeed very miraculous, and an evident proof not only of the divine power, but also of God's more special care of the Israelites his people, whom he sent Moses to bring out of Egypt. And we have very remarkable instances to this purpose, viz. 2 that of the swarms of slies, which insested the Egyptians, but were not in the dwellings of the Israelites; that of the murrain, which fell upon the cattel of Egypt, and not upon those of Israel; and that of the darkness upon the Egyptians, when the children of Israel had light in their dwellings: Again, that of the death of the first-born of the Egyptians, when the first-born of Israel escaped. This difference was made, that b it might be known, that God was the Lord in the midst of the earth. These things could not be supposed casually to happen; but were a great proof of God's providence and care, as

well as of his being and his power.

THIRDLY, I consider, after what manner these plagues were removed. For the very removal as well as the infliction speaks a divine hand in all this. We do not find the magicians able to remove, however they were suffered to instict a plague. But Moses does not only remove the plague, but (which is well worthy our observation) does it at the time appointed. Thus in the case of the frogs, he leaves it to Pharaoh to set the precise time, when the frogs shall be removed; and removes them accordingly, that c thou mayst know (says Moses unto him) that there is none like unto the Lord our God. The same may be observed of the d swarm of slies, and of the thunder and hall.

These things put together do speak the hand of God in the mighty works, which were wrought by Moses, and were sufficient proofs, that Moses was sent by God, and were enough to convince at once both the E-gyptians as well as the sons of Israel. But whatever these works of Moses were, yet they came far short of the works which Jesus did.

I SHALL not need to say, that the works of Jesus were more in number than those of Moses; when it is apparent, that in that respect they

MCI**G** 

<sup>\*</sup> Exod. vii. 12, 22. viii. 7. Fexod. viii. 7, 8. ibid. viii. 19. Eoxd. viii. 22, 23. ix. 4, 6. x. 23. xi. 7. b ibid. viii. 23. Exod. viii. 9. 10, 29. d ibid. ix. 29. c Joh. xx. 30. with chap. xxi. 25.

were more than those of Moses and all the other prophets, beside. For besides the many works, which we read that Jesus did in a little time, we are assured that he did very many more, which are not written. I shall there-

fore infift only upon the following particulars.

I. I CONSIDER the works themselves, which Jesus did; and we shall soon find, that they do very much transcend those of Moses. f If I had not done among them the works, which none other man did (says Jesus) they had not had sin. The works which our LORD did, were very stu-pendous and convincing. Some of the works which Moses did, the Magicians did also; and for the rest they came short of the works of Jesus: Indeed by the hands of Moses the dust is turned into lice, and Egypt is plagued with flies and murrain, darkness, frogs, and hail; with the death of their cattel, and of their first-born. But Jesus did greater works than these. He cures the blind, heals the most inveterate diseases, and raises the dead to life. It is a greater instance of power to fave than to destroy, to cure the sick than to make them so; and to raise one man to life speaks a greater power than to slay thousands. And he that cured a man, that was born blind, does more by far, than he who turned a rod into a serpent, or water into blood. Every little thing deprives us of life and health; to save and to restore speaks the greatest power. Nay g J Esus (or Joshua) the son of Nun, an eminent type of our LORD, does a greater work, when he stopped the sun in his course, than any of those which Moses did in

2. I Consider the power of working. Moses was but an instrument, and could not work miracles at all times: Jesus was indeed the author of those, which he wrought: God tells Moses, h I will stretch out my hand, and smite Egypt with all my wonders, which I will do in the midst thereof. And again, See that thou do all those wonders, which I have put in thine hand. And we find Moses directed by God, when the miracle should be wrought; and when Moses had wrought it, and brought a plague upon the Egyptians, he is not able to remove the same plague without crying unto God. So that the miracles are altogether God's, not

the work of Moses.

Jesus i was the author of the mighty works which he did, and he did them whenever he pleased: He did them by a word of his mouth, or a touch of his garment; when he was present, and when he was at a distance: Nothing withstands his power, or resists his will: What things soever he [the Father] doth, these also doth the Son. More yet, our Saviour conferred this power upon others: Upon the seventy, and upon his twelve Apostles; and, after his ascension into heaven, his followers retained a power

of doing miracles in the name of Jesus Christ.

3. THE works of Jesus were better than the works of Moses. They were arguments not only of greater power, but of greater goodness. The works of Moses in Egypt were at first but so many plagues; but our Lord's miracles were actions of rescue, works of mercy and relief. 'Tis a more blessed and God-like thing to fave than to destroy. Moses his works speak dread and terror. And all along we see the face of great severity. He comes into Egypt with a rod, and (as if that had not imported sufficient terror) he turns that rod into a ferpent; and instead of turning the water

f Joh. xv. 24. <sup>8</sup> Joh. x. 12. <sup>h</sup> Exod. h Exod. iii. 10. iv. 21. vii. 9; 19. viii. 16. viii. 12, into

into wine, he turns it into blood. He sends most uncomfortable creatures such as frogs, and lice, and flies amongst them. He inflicts murrain upon the cattel, and boils and blains upon the people. After this he sends hail with fire and thunder; and smote man and beast, as well as every herb, and brake every tree. After this the whole earth is covered with devouring locusts, and with thick darkness; and the first-born are killed, and the Egyptians drowned in the midst of the sea. When the law was given in the wilderness, you find mention of thunder and lightening, and a thick cloud, and the voice of a trumpet exceeding loud. The k mount was on a smoke, the LORD descended in fire, the smoke whereof was like the smoke of a furnace, and the whole mount quaked greatly. These things were very terrible, and so were other works, which we read of afterward; which spoke indeed the presence and power of GoD, but then they spoke his anger too. The sons of Aaron were destroyed by fire, Miriam is struck with leprose, the earth swallowed up Korah and his company, and the fiery serpents plague the people.

On the other hand our LORD saves, but he doth not destroy: Instead of killing or inslicting plagues and diseases upon men; he feeds the hungry, cures the sick, cleanseth the lepers, restores the blind and lame, dispossesseth

the demoniacks, and raises the dead.

4. Our Saviour confirmed his doctrine by raising himself from the dead. Moses died, as well as the other prophets; and though the Jews tell us (upon a trifling ground) that he did die by the kiss of God's mouth, and not after the ordinary manner of men; yet they cannot deny that he died; and 'tis not affirmed by any that he rose from the dead. He died on this I side the land of promise, and was buried over against Beth Peor; but the Jews are so far from affirming that he rose again, that they knew not where his sepulchre or place of burial was: So that there was no room lest for their fraud: None could take away his body, and pretend, that he was risen from the dead. Our blessed Saviour did rise from the dead, notwithstanding all the art used to prevent it, as well as the spreading of it. He had many witnesses of his resurrection, some whereof sealed the truth with their blood.

II. I SHALL consider the pretended miracles of the church of Rome; not that I think them worthy to be compared with those of our blessed SAVIOUR: But that church hath boasted of miracles, and we have large accounts of the wonders, which have been wrought within the verge of her own communion. And not to inlarge too far, I shall consine my self to those three marks, or xprexipia, which a learned writer, discoursing of this argument, hath pitched upon.

I. WHEREAS the miracles, which JESUS wrought, were grave and ferious works, fubstantial, and such as proclaimed the power and goodness and the wisdom of the author of them; there is nothing more ridiculous and trissing, than many of those which are reported to be done in the church of Rome. Such are the many stories, which are told of our SAVIOUR and the Virgin Mary: They tell us, that she frequently comes from heaven, offers her self in marriage, and brings knacks along with her, and bestows them upon her friends and familiars: They tell us also of our SA-

VIOUR,

k Exod. xix. 1 Deut. xxxiv. 8.

VIOUR, that he appears in his mother's arms as a little child, that sometimes he goes from her, and that he was once almost lost in the snow. They tell us, that m the virgin Mary's house in Nazareth upon discontent temoved from thence, and travail'd from place to place, for the space of about two thousand miles, till it sat down at Loretto. They tell us, that when one of their preachers, who was blind preached, though there were no auditors to hear him; yet the stones, that were about him, cryed out Amen at his concluding: I am ashamed to report the ridiculous stories, which they tell; of men, who carried their heads in their hands, after they had been beheaded, for several miles together; of others, who spake after they were dead; of sheep and asses running to hear St. Francis preach, and of fwine falling dead under his curse: Of St. Dominick, who hung in the air like a bird, and at his devotions forcing the devil to hold a light, and burn his fingers at that service: Of Christina, who contracted her self at prayer into a round form like that of an hedghog, and who could climb the highest trees like a squirrel, and swim in rivers like a fish: Of Catharine of Sienna, who desired a new heart, and thereupon CHRIST came to her, opened her breast, took out her heart, goes away with it and brings another, and tells her, that it was his own: I will not entertain you with the stories of the sweating, and speaking, and motion of their images; of the great feats, which have been done by the relicks of faints and holy water, and fuch like things: Such pranks as these are reported, which look more like the feats of demons, of hob-goblings and fairies, than the finger of God. The works of Jesus spake the great wisdom, power and goodness of GoD; they were works of great mercy and relief. But these stories are romances and false representations, or, which is worse, they look like the works of an evil spirit, who is abroad ready to deceive them, who obey not the These things can serve no good and wise purpose, and that is not all, for they serve a very evil one. These false stories are a temptation to men to question the true: Men will be too ready to suspect the miracles of CHRIST, when they find themselves imposed upon by those, who profess themselves his followers.

2. The miracles, which Christ did, were to confirm the truth of the Christian doctrine: But these pretended miracles are brought to confirm a a doctrine, which Christ and his Apostles never taught. They taught all the necessary doctrines of faith and obedience, and confirmed them in such a manner, that though an angel from heaven should now preach any other gospel, we ought not to receive it, Gal. i. 8, 9. Indeed were the works of the church of Rome like our Saviour's works, and their doctrine the same with his, these works would be of great use to convince unbelievers; but not at all requisite, where the doctrine was believed before. As for the doctrine of the church of Rome, either it is the same with that of the holy scriptures, or it is not. If it be the same, there is no need of miracles (especially among them who believe the holy scriptures) to confirm that, which hath been sufficiently confirmed already: But if it be not the same, we are not to regard miracles in that case. Nay if an apostle or an angel from heaven should preach another gospel, let him be accursed.

BUT we shall find, that the pretended miracles in the church of Rome are alledged for the confirmation of the novel doctrines of that church, not of

the

Durand. Rational. Divin. Offic.

the Christian doctrine taught by Christ and his Apostles. We are told, that Christ spake intelligibly several times out of the water to a Spanish Franciscan: Again, that upon the altar he turned himself from the form of a consecrated water, into that of a little child; and then from that of a child, to that of a wafer: Again, that a woman's bees not thriving, she stole a consecrated wafer, and put it into one of her hives: The devout bees in honour to that, fall to work, and with their honey-combs make a little church, with windows, with roof and door, with belfry and altar, upon which they laid the host, and did sly about it continually, praising the Lord: All this is for the confirmation of the doctrine of Transubstantiation, a doctrine which Christ never taught, and which contradicts our sense and our reason at the same time. And the stories, which they tell, of the sweating and motion of their images, serve only to advance the worshipping of images: In a word, their works are tristing and vain, and their doctrine is impious and salse, and, to say the least of it, not revealed by God.

3. The miracles which Christ did, were feasonable, and necessary at that time to confirm his doctrine; whether we consider the obstinacy of the fews, or the idolatry of the Gentiles. Upon both accounts it was needful, that the Christian doctrine should be confirmed with miracles, and so it was: But the popish miracles are out of time; there is no need of them to confirm the Christian doctrine, where it is already planted. Miracles are for the sake of unbelievers, and as the world grew Christian, they ceased; nor is it to be imagined, that God will work them without any cause at all.

In the old Testament we shall find, that the greatest number of miracles were wrought by Moses their law-giver in Egypt and in the wilderness, before and upon the giving the law; No man wrought so many miracles, nay, not all the succeeding prophets together, as he wrought. the law confirmed: And when this was done, you rarely read of miracles wrought afterward; when the Jews had received and continued in the profession of the law of Moses. The greatest number, that were wrought afterward was, when there was the greatest reason for them; and that was, after Jeroboam had revolted from the worship of God, and set up his calves in Dan and Bethel, and no less than ten tribes revolted with him. Then indeed there were some number of miracles wrought to convince them of their sin, and reduce them from their schism: Then was the altar at Bethel cleft in pieces; Jeroboam's hand withered, and restored as miraculously upon the prayer of the man of God. And these miracles were wrought in Bethel, among the schismaticks, which were to be convinced and reduced. Then Elijah shut up the heavens; is miraculously fed by the ravens; multiplies the meal, and raises to life the widow's son; he calls for fire from heaven, and fasts forty days; and destroys the captains and their fifties by the fire, which he called for. He divides Jordan with his garment, and is miraculously taken up into heaven: And Elisba, during this time, did many wonderful works also: He divides the river, heals the water, encreases the widow's oyl; foretells that the Shunamite should have a child, and raised it from the dead. He removes the death that was in the pot, miraculously feeds the people, and heals Naaman of his leprosie; He causeth iron to swim, strikes Gehazi with a leprosie, and the enemics of Israel with blindness; and his dry bones, after all these things, which

which he did in his life, restored one that was dead to life again. Thus in a little time many miracles were wrought, more than had been wrought before and after for some hundreds of years. So that the greatest number of miracles were wrought upon the giving the law, and upon the greatest defection from it, and only designed to confirm the truth and convince gainfavers.

But what means the church of Rome to boast of miracles? If they be wrought in her own communion, they serve no purpose: There's no need of a miracle, where men believe without it. Their miracles are done at a great distance from us, who are to be convinced; and such they are, which

we cannot see at all, or else we may easily see through them.

ONE thing we are sure of, viz. that their doctrine is false, and then we shall have no cause to be drawn aside with lying miracles: The Israelites had warning in this cause, and so have we Christians also, not to believe against our rule any pretence whatsoever. Deut. xiii. 1. Gal. i. 8, 9. And we are forewarned of false people, who should pretend to miracles, Matth. xxiv. 24. 2 Thessal. ii. 9. Rev. xiii. 13.

III. I SHALL proceed to consider the miracles, which are storied of the heathens.

I WILL not descend to all the stories, that may be found upon record to this purpose; because, besides that we want sufficient evidence of the truth of those matters of fact; so they are not worthy of consideration, being things of trisling regard; and such as import no advantage to mankind. Such is that, which "Celsus mentions of Abaris, who could sly into the air, and keep pace with an arrow in that slight. And that of the speaking of an image in Valerius Maximus. The p cutting a whet-stone in two with a razor by Attius Navius. The sweating of an image of Apollo at Cuma, and of that of Victory at Capua; and that of the shields which were gnawed by the mice; the extraordinary swelling of the Lacus Albanus: That of the serpent, which followed Esculapius, when he sailed to Rome, and of the Vestal Virgin, which took up water out of Tyber, and kept it in a seve. These things are trisling and mean, and they who report them, do it not with sufficient assurance, but upon traditions and common same, and not upon their certain and personal knowledge.

As for what is storied of Vespasian and Adrian's curing the blind, I shall not need to say any more than this, That if those reports be true, they are far short of what our Saviour did; nor do we read of any, who laid down their lives in testimony thereof. And as I do not deny, that there have been providential miracles out of the Church of God; so it is not to be wondered at, that the devil should exert his utmost power to keep men in error, and, as much as may be, endeavour to imitate God himself.

AND more particularly for the right understanding of what is storied of

Vespasian and of Adrian, I shall desire it may be considered.

THAT q what is reported of Vespasian to this purpose, cannot fairly be denied, it being affirmed by very good authors. And therefore I admit, that he did such miraculous cures, as are told of him. But then it is to be considered, that he was not only an excellent prince, but that very person,

origen contra Cell. 1. 3. Valerius Maxim. 1. 1. c. 8. Augustin. de civitat. Dei, 1. 10. c. 16. Tacit. Histor. 1. 4. Sueton. Vespasian.

who was to execute God's displeasure against the Jews, for rejecting and crucifying Jesus. And no wonder that God should honour him with an extraordinary power, whom he employed in so great a work: especially if it be considered, that upon his coming to the empire at first (as Suetonius tells us) he wanted majesty and authority, which was supplied by this means. Nor is there any thing in this, that does at all derogate from the works of Jesus. But then what is storied of Adrian to the same purpose, we have not the same cause to believe; and the very Historian, which reports it, gives us at the same time ground to believe, that what is related was but fraud and collusion: And who ever will be at the pains to consider, what account Elius Spartianus gives of that matter, will see great cause to suspect, that upon the whole matter there was an artisce and trick used.

THE greatest pretender, which I know of, is Apollonius Tyanaus, who is famed for a great worker of miracles, and hath been set up against our SAVIOUR, as one that might at least vie with him: But without sufficient ground or reason, as will appear from the following particulars.

- of that credit by many degrees, as that which gives the account of the works of Jesus: As for this account of Jesus, we have it from men who lived in his time, and were eye-witnesses of the things which they affirm. But the account, which we have of Apollonius, is this: Damis was his familiar, he wrote his travels, and his words and predictions: A familiar of Damis acquaints Julia with it: Julia commands Philostratus to transcribe the commentaries of Damis, who had not written them dexterously; Philostratus out of these commentaries, and a book of one Maximus, which he happened to light upon, writes his books of the life of Apollonius, as he himself informs us.
- 2. THAT all that is said to this purpose, does not amount to a miracle. It is said, that he cured a youth of a Dropsie; But is he therefore to be compared with our SAVIOUR, who cured all diseases, and raised the dead? Or must that be thought a miracle, which a wise physician may do? He is said to have done it by precepts of temperance. But as that is a moral instrument, so 'tis a natural one too. And the practice of that, would go farther towards the preventing and curing more diseases, than ever Apollonius could pretend unto.
- 3. That in some of the pranks, which he played, he was guilty of manifest impiety: He is said to have cured a man bitten by a mad dog, by making the dog lick the man; but then he is said to have cured the dog also, by praying to the river Cydnus (an act of idolatry) and slinging the dog into the stream. He is said to have freed the city of Ephesus from a plague, but to have done it by perswading the Ephesians to stone a beggar, and then the Ephesians are said to have erected an image to Hercules Apotropæus in the place, where the beggar was stoned; so that the Ephesians were not brought off from the worship of salse gods by the works of Apollonius.
- 4. Besides it is evident from other passages, that Apollonius was an evil man; a great dictator and intermeddler with political affairs, a proud and

f Elius Spartianus, Adrian.

Philoftrat. de vit. Apollonii. 1. 1.

haughty

haughty man: One that vaunted of his great knowledge, and yet was ignorant; he pretended to understand all languages, and to know the thoughts of men, and "yet he could not discourse with king *Phraotes* without an

interpreter.

HAVING thus far discoursed of the miracles, which JESUS did, and shewed you, how good a proof they are, that he was the CHRIST. I shall proceed to consider, what may be objected against what hath been hitherto said: And though there are several things, that might fall under consideration upon this head; yet I know but one thing of any great moment, viz.

Obj. Some man may enquire, What sufficient assurance we can have, that Jesus did those works, which are reported of him? For though the works reported (all things considered) be an unexceptionable proof of the truth of the Christian doctrine; yet it may still be objected, that we cannot be fully assured, that Jesus lived and did those things, which we read of in the Evangelists.

In answer to this, I desire the following particulars may be considered.

I. That it is sufficient, that this be proved by such ways and means, as the thing is capable of: No man can reasonably require a strict demonstration, where the matter of the question will not bear it. If we have such a complication of moral arguments, as will satisfie a wise and inquisitive man, it is enough. And there are many things, which we believe, without any manner of doubt or wavering; to the belief of which we are gained by this method. We believe those things to be unquestionably true, which yet we have not such weighty grounds to believe. And it is an argument, that we are very perverse, if we except against those arguments here, which we admit every where else.

2. That the matters of fact are confessed by strangers to, and enemics of the Christian Religion. That there was such a person as Jesus, and that he did mighty works; that he was followed by such men, whose names we find in the Gospels, the Jews themselves confess. They deny not, that he did wonderful works, but they impute them to the devil, and by doing so they tacitly confess, that he undoubtedly did them. When Hierocles compares Apollonius with Jesus, he doth not question, whether there was such a man or not. The matter of sact was not denied by Jew or Gentile: The first Christians were not charged with having forged

the history of the Gospel.

OF all men in the world, the Jews have no reason to question the truth of the matter of sact reported in the Gospels: And therefore \* Origen doth deservedly reprove Celsus, when he seigns a Jew objecting against the credibility of the Gospel history: And he tells us, what he himself, in a disputation which he had with some of the wise men of the Jews, said to them upon this occasion; his words are these. Tell me, since there were two persons, who lived in the world, of whom were storied incredible things, and such as are above buman nature, viz. Moses your law-giver, who wrote of himself; and Jesus our teacher, who wrote nothing of himself; but is testified of by his disciples in the Gospels: What reason is there, that Moses should be esteemed worthy of belief, whom the Egyptians re-

Euseb. contra Hierocl. l. 7. id. l. 2. Torigen contra. Cels. l. 1,

proached

proached for a magician; and that JESUS should not be believed, because ye

accuse him?

3. That we have no reason at all to suspect those books, which give us the history of these things. If we be allowed to suspect an ancient history, yet we ought not to do it without just cause. Either because the author is not known, or is of no credit; or because it appears that the writing hath been corrupted, or we have some collateral evidence, which moves us to withhold our assent. Nothing of this can be said in the present case: These books are not anonymous, and all men are agreed, that they were written by those men, whose names they bear. These men are not to be suspected, for they wrote of things which they saw, and of those times in which they lived. It could not be their interest to put a cheat upon the world, but against all their interest in this and the other world too. There is a perfect harmony and agreement among them: and all the marks and tokens of sincerity that we can desire.

It cannot be denied indeed, but that in the writings of these men there is some variety, and that they seem not to speak consistently with one ano-

ther in some of their relations.

But then they all agree in the main story; and, generally speaking, it is not hard to account for the seeming opposition in their relations: And it is to be supposed, that our ignorance of the history, and the phraseology, and usages of those times and countries is the true reason, why they seem to thwart with one another, when really they do not. Besides, it is an argument, that these men did not combine and lay their heads together to put a trick upon the world. For if they had (which they could have no cause to do) it would have been no hard matter to have avoided not only contradiction (which they have done) but the very appearance of such a thing.

These writers give great proofs of their fincerity: They give none at all of their oftentation and vain-glory. Eusebius y hath well observed, that St. Matthew discovers the baseness of his employment, before he followed Christ. He alone tells us, that he was a Publican: And St. Mark (who wrote his Gospel by the direction, and with the knowledge of St. Peter) speaks sparingly of those things, which tended to St. Peter's

praise, tho' he very much enlargeth in relating of his faults.

- 4. That the Gospel hath been so generally received, is an argument of the truth of it: A lie hath no feet, and cannot stand long without being discovered. Facile res in suam naturam recidunt, ubi veritas non subest. There were a great many eyes upon the Christian Religion, when it advanced in the world, and it did not want subtile and inquisitive enemics. The fraud would have been detected, if there had been any: It was entertained by men of wit and learning, and such as made diligent enquiry after truth.
- 5. It did not spread by force and blood, as the Turkish Religion hath done; not by craft and worldly policy, not by human arts and religious cheats; but by suffering and by tears, by hardships and by severities. Men were willing to shed their blood in testimony of it; and part with all, that was dear to slesh and blood. All our ancient books tell us, that

Fusch. demonstrat, 1. 3. sest. 5.

this was the duty and practice of Christians; tho' men do not use to be forward to lose their lives, and all the comforts of life to confirm a lie: And we must think those men void of all sense, that would die to confirm a forgery and lie, when their death would serve to confirm a Religion, which severely forbids all lying and diffimulation, And though some men may have died in a false belief, or a belief of some principles which are not really (though to them they seem to be) true; yet it is not credible, that a great number of men should be content to die in confirmation of a matter of sact, which they knew to be salse, or did not know to be true. When Arrius Antoninus persecuted the Christians in Asia, they came about his tribunal, and offered themselves to death; which made him cry out Dealoi, 2 O wretched men, can ye not find precipices or halters to take away your lives? Tis a great argument of the truth of these things, that men were forward to confirm them with their blood.

z Tertullian. ad Scapul.



CHAP.

## 

## CHAP.

That the MESSIAS, according to the predictions of him, was to suffer. This proved against the Jews. Of the vanity of their twofold MEs-SIAS, the son of Joseph, and the son of David. The reason why the Jews make use of this pretence. That Jesus did suffer. That be suffered those things, which the MESSIAS was to suffer, Luk. xxiv. 26, 49. and Act. iii. 18. considered. That Zech. ix. 9. must be understood of the MESSIAS, is proved against the Jews at large. Of the kind of Christ's death. Crucifixion was none of the Jewish capital punishments. Of the Brazen serpent, Numb. xxi. John iii. 14. considered. The Jewish writers acknowledge, that the brazen serpent was symbolical, and spiritually to be understood. Of the time when JESUS suffered, that it did exactly agree with the type of the sufferings of the MESs I A s: A large digression concerning this matter. Exod. xii. 6. considered: Castalio justly censured for his ill rendering that place. Of the two evenings among the Jews. The ground we have for it in the Scriptures. The testimony of R. Solomon. Of the practice of the Jewish nation, as to the time of offering their evening sacrifice, and the passover: This shewed from their best authors. An objection from Deut. xvi. 6. answered. Jesus died at that time, when the Paschal lamb was to be slain. Of the place, and many other particulars relating to the sufferings of JESUS. Of the great causes and reasons of the sufferings of JESUS. Of the Burial of JESUS.

SHALL now proceed to the consideration of the sufferings of Jesus,

and from thence prove, that our Jesus is the Christ.

THAT JESUS did suffer, the Jews do confess, and they make no scruple to grant it. And he is upon that score reproached by them, and upon the same account his disciples and followers have been scorned by the world, who professed a faith in a crucified SAVIOUR, and expected to be faved by him, who did not so much as save himself from the most painful and ignominious death.

WHEN I speak of the suffering of Jesus, I mean his sufferings in the largest sense, and not only his Death: However I shall principally consider his death here, and from that especially shall prove him to be the CHRIST. And for the better speaking to this whole matter I shall proceed in this

method.

FIRST,

FIRST, I shall show, that the Messias, who was promised, was to

SECONDLY, That Jesus did suffer.

THIRDLY, That from the sufferings of our Jesus it does appear, that he is the CHRIST.

FOURTHLY, I shall enquire after the causes or reasons of the sufferings of Christ.

LASTLY, I shall direct you to some practical application.

I. I SHALL shew, that the MESSIAS promised of old was to suffer. And this especially against the Jews, who do not deny that Jesus suffered, but do deny him to be the Messias the son of David, because he suffered. This is the scandal of the cross, at which the Jews stumble and fall. Here they are offended, and at a stand. Now that the MESSIAS was to suffer, and that Jesus ought not to be rejected upon that account, will appear, if we consider the following particulars.

FIRST, I must premise, that it is a very unreasonable thing, that Jesus should be reproached or rejected upon the score of his sufferings. The Jews have no cause for this reason to scorn him, as they commonly do: For his sufferings do not speak him an evil person, or one unfit to deliver and fave his followers from the greatest evils, viz. from the power and

evil effects of our fins.

IGRANT indeed, that he was mean and very poor: And what then? Was not the Jewish law-giver Moses so also? Was he not exposed to the waters, forced to fly his country, and tend upon a flock in a foreign kingdom? Was not Jacob, the father of the Jewish tribes, a poor Syrian ready to perish? Or had he any thing more than his staff, when he went to Padan Aram? Was not David, from whom the Messias was to descend, a keeper of his father's sheep?

IF JESUS suffered, and was put to death, What then? Have not these things been the lot and portion of the most righteous men in the world? Was not righteous Abel killed, when wicked Cain lived and built a city? Is it any blot upon the memory of David, that he was persecuted? Of Zechariah, that he was stoned? Or of Isaiah, that he was sawn in sunder? Are the holy men and prophets of old to be rejected, because they suffered reproaches, or were put to death? Why should Jesus then be re-

jected for this reason? This does not speak him an evil man.

THE Jews very well know, what the Pfalmist says of the sufferings of God's own people. 2 O God, the heathen are come into thine inheritance, thy holy temple have they defiled, they have laid Jerusalem on heaps: The dead bodies of thy servants have they given to meat unto the fowls of the heaven; the flesh of thy saints unto the beasts of the earth: Their blood have they shed like water round about Jerusalem, and there was none to bury them: We are become a reproach to our neighbours, a scorn and derision to them that are round about us.

THESE were indeed severe sufferings, and upon whom did they light? The text informs us, that they fell upon God's inheritance, upon his servants, and saints: And what ever reproach this was to the heathen, who inflicted these sufferings, it is none at all to the sufferers themselves.

! Psal, lxxix. 1, 2, 3, 4.

In a word, very excellent men among the Jews, and the best among the heathens were poor, and suffered the greatest evils, and no wise man ever thought the worse of these sufferers; and it is therefore very unjust to reject Jesus merely upon that account. I add,

SECONDLY, That it was foretold by God himself, that the MESSIAS should suffer. I shall not give in all the particulars, which make for this

purpose.

THAT of Isaiah, chap liii. is most clear and remarkable to my present purpose. In that chapter the sufferings of the Messias are graphically described: And there never was any people or person, to whom all those particulars recited in that chapter could belong, but to our bleffed SAVIOUR, who is the Messias there foretold. The Jews (I mean the more ancient among them) understood that place of the MESSIAS; and whereas among the later Jews we shall find some interpret them to another sense, (whether of the people of Israel, Josiah, or some other person) yet it is manifest, and b hath been made so, that the words must be understood of the Messias; and were never fulfilled by any people or any other person whatsoever. To whom else can those words belong, but to the Messias? And in whom were they ever fulfilled, but in our Jesus only, where it is said: He is despised and rejected of men, a man of sorrows, and acquainted with griefs? For never was there a sorrow like that of our J Esus: Where shall we find a person to whom the following words can belong? He hath born our griefs, and carried our sorrows: He was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities, the chastisement of our peace was upon him, and by his stripes we are healed. All we, like sheep, have gone astray, we have turned every one to his own way, and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. And as these sufferings could be the sufferings of none, but of the Messias only; sothe patient bearing them must belong to him too, and was remarkably accomplished in our Jesus: He was oppressed, and he was afflitted; yet he opened not his mouth: He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a speep before her sbearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. I shall afterward have occasion also to shew, how remarkably the following words also were. fulfilled in our Jesus, as they were foretold of the Messias; where 'tis said, that he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death.

In the first promise of the Messias, it was intimated that he should suffer, it being predicted that c the serpent's seed should bruise the heel of the seed of the woman.

I MIGHT to this purpose shew at large from the old Testament, that the MESSIAS was to suffer; Those persons, who were the most eminent types of him, were very great sufferers: And though all the sacrifices were slain, yet those sacrifices, which did typishe his death most eminently, were most intirely consumed by the fire; and as their blood was carried into the holy place, so their bodies were burnt without the camp, as our SAVIOUR himself suffered without the gate. If we look into the Psalms and Prophets, we shall find frequent predictions of the sufferings of CHRIST.

THIRDLY, This is so plain a truth, and so undeniable even by the Jews themselves, that d the later of them have devised a suffering MESSIAS,

Digitized by Google

the

b L'Empereur refutat. Abravenel Comment. in Isa. liii. g Gen. iii. 15. d Abkath
Rochelim. l. 1.

the son of Joseph of the tribe of Ephraim: And now they speak of a twofold Messias, one, the son of Joseph, to suffer death, and (if need be) another, the son of David, to save and to deliver them.

THIS indeed is a vain conceit, 'tis groundless, and 'tis novel: It hath no foundation in the Holy Scriptures, nor c in their most ancient and genuine writers. 'Tis destitute of all reason and all fair pretence: And we may, by the same pretence, as well set up a great many as two: But as vain a conceit as 'tis, it will serve our turn against the Jews: For they betake themselves to this refuge, because they cannot deny, that the MEss I As was to suffer. And though it serve to no other purpose; yet it serves to this, that we have gained the point we contend for, against them, viz. that the Messias was to suffer, and that therefore our Jesus ought not to be rejected upon that account.

II. THAT our JESUS did suffer: This is confessed on all hands: The Jews deny it not, but mention him frequently with scorn upon this ac-

I SHOULD be very vain, if I should enlarge much under this head: He must be very ignorant, who hath not heard of the sufferings of Jesus. His whole life, as well as his latter end, was almost a perpetual suffering. He was born in a stable, and he died upon a cross. He suffered from his first entrance into the world to his going out. The meanness of his birth did not protect him from being persecuted by Herod; He was after this a man of forrows and acquainted with grief, and there hath been no forrow like unto his forrow. He fasted and was tempted, he was acquainted with hunger and with thirst, with great poverty and contempt; He met with false friends, and implacable enemies; He was always doing good, and receiving evil.

And after all at the close of his life he was a most eminent sufferer: If there be any suffering in great pains and agonies, in being scoffed and derided, in being buffeted and scourged, in a bloody sweat, or a bitter cup, in a crown of thorns, in the spear and in the nails; then he suffered. If to be forsaken and betrayed, to be unpitied in trouble and to be denied, to be flouted and scoffed at, be any thing of a suffering; then he suffered. If to die be to suffer, and to die upon a cross among malefactors, if the blood of the cross, if the shame and curse of it, or if the pain and scandal

of it speak any sufferings, then our Lord did indeed suffer.

III. FROM the sufferings of our Jesus, it doth appear, that he is the CHRIST.

I Do not mean, that the bare sufferings of Jesus are an argument, that he is the CHRIST: For sufferings are not a sufficient argument alone. And though the MESSIAS was to suffer; yet so might, and so did impostors also. But as the Messias was to suffer, so it was predicted what he should suffer; and we shall find, that our Jesus did suffer those very things, which the MESSIAS was to suffer: So that all things duly considered, we shall find this (especially in conjunction with what hath been and is to be said) a very good proof, that Jesus is the Christ.

AND



e That the Messias was to suffer, Trypho does acknowledge. Musnter a Tesser ett al yenque uneboruer, Parier ett. Trypho in Just. Mart.

And of his words to the Apostles afterward: Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, Luk. xxiv. 26, 46. St. Peter tells the Jews, that those things, which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so suffilled, Act. iii. 18. Our Saviour himself said, thus it must be, Matth. xxvi. 54, 56. To the same purpose we find the disciples saying: For of a truth against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel were gathered together; For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy council determined before to be done. Act. iv. 27, 28.

WE shall find afterward, that Jesus did suffer all that, which the Christ was to suffer. And some of these sufferings were such, as were not likely to have been the portion of Jesus: But so it was, though Herod and Pontius Pilate, though the Jews and Gentiles had an hand in the sufferings of Jesus; yet they did at the same time (though they designed it not) sulfil some prophecies of old, and this was so eminently done, that we have from hence a very great proof, that Jesus is the

CHRIST.

I SHALL not look over all the sufferings of Jesus from the time of his birth, to the moment of his death; I shall begin no sooner than the last week of his life; and shall more especially consider those particulars,

which attended upon his death.

We have a remarkable prophecy in the prophet Zechariah, and the words are these: Rejoyce greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: Behold thy king cometh unto thee: He is just, and having salvation, lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass. That this place is a prophecy of the Messias no Christian can doubt, and the Jew ought not to deny. f. R. Solomon confesses frankly not to deny. f. e. It is impossible to interpret it but of king Messiah: And as it is very agreeable to the words to expound them of the Messias, so g it well agrees with the sense of the ancient Jews too.

For it was the sense of the Jews, that this place was meant of the Messias, and we find among the writings, which we have of theirs, plain intimations of it. There is h a fabulous relation, that the as which Abraham saddled Gen. xxii. was created on the evening of the sabbath, and that Moses rode upon the same as, when he came into Egypt; and farther the son of David shall ride upon the same, they say: hence it is said, Rejoyce greatly, O daughter of Zion, &c. From this sabulous relation it is evident, that this place was understood of the Messias. To the same purpose the words are understood by i another ancient writer, who represents it as the sense of their Rabbins.

It was upon the tenth day of the first month when our SAVIOUR rode upon an ass into Jerusalem, and fulfilled this Scripture, and in the passover-

R. Solom. in Zech. ix. 9.

R. Solom. in Zech. ix. 9.

R. Solomon are translated by Raymundus in bis Pugio fidei, page 656. into words, which contradift the sense of them: viz. Non potest hose exponi de Rege Messia; when he affirms that they ought not to be expounded of any other person. And that the Jews do understand these words of the Messiah, is proved at large by Bochart. de S. S. Animalibus. lib. ii. c. 17.

Pirke R. Eliezer. cap. 31.

Bereshith Rabb. in Gen. xix. 11.

week in which he suffered. Our Saviour was now ready to be sacrificed for us, and as the paschal lamb in Egypt was taken up on the tenth day, so did our Lord our paschal lamb on that very day, present himself in that city, where the same week he was sentenced to death.

For the rest of the words of the prophecy, they do very well agree to our Jesus, as it is certain they were meant of the Messias. Thy king cometh unto thee, he is just and having salvation, lowly: Never were there any persons, to whom these words could so duly belong, as our blessed Saviour.

He was a king indeed, and denies it not before *Pontius Pilate*, though he professed, that his kingdom was not of this world. The Messias was promised of old as such a person, and it was foretold, in the prophet *Daniel*, that he should erect an everlasting kingdom. Indeed the *Jews* expected a temporal prince, they being themselves a carnal people: Our Lord did not appear like an earthly prince, but as one born from heaven, and one who would erect an heavenly and spiritual kingdom in the world. A king he was in the best and the highest sense: And when he was crucissed, the main of his accusation written on his cross was, that he was king of the Jews.

THAT our blessed SAVIOUR was just, malice it self cannot deny; He was for giving both God and Cesar their due. He paid tribute, when it was demanded; and would not excuse himself from the publick payment, to which he was not yet strictly obliged. He took care of the Levitical priest-hood also: And when he had cleansed the leper, he takes order that the priest should not lose the profit, which in such a case he was wont to receive. He wronged no man; and though he was poor, yet he took care to give every man his due, and to referve something for the poor also. His righteousness was so exemplary, that the Jews, who thirsted after his blood, knew not how to effect his death: They had procured false witnesses indeed, but their testimony was so incoherent, and so lewd, that the Jews themselves were forced to use another device, (since that, frequently made use of against his followers) viz. to represent him as an enemy to Cæsar; And now Pilate, to approve himself to the Roman power, delivers up JESUS to be crucified. But still he pronounced him innocent, who gave him up to so base a death: He washes his hands, and declares himself openly in behalf of Jesus.

What follows doth eminently belong to our Jesus, as it was spoken of the Messias; Having salvation. The very name Jesus, by which he was commonly known and called, speaks salvation. And it was given him by the direction of an angel, because k he was to save his people from their sins. And as he came to save what was lost; so we shall find, that he sulfilled that design, and answered that blessed name, by which he was called: He saved some from hunger and thirst, some from diseases and possessions, some from sickness, and others from death, and all that believe on him from hell, and the wrath which is to come.

As to that which follows in the prophet, that he was to be lowly, agrees exactly to our Jesus: For whether by lowly be meant poor, as that Hebrew word used in the prophet signifies; or, meek, as it is there rendered by the LXXII interpreters (whose rendering St. Matthew also follows) it is cer-

. Matth. i. 21.

tain,

tain, that our Jesus was both poor and meek in a very eminent degree: So poor, that he had not what the foxes did not want, where to lay his head. And as for his meekness and lowliness of mind, he was the most eminent and unparallelled example, that ever was in the world.

I SHALL now proceed to the consideration of the death of Jesus, and

those particulars, which do more immediately relate thereunto.

AND not to insist upon every particular, which makes to my present

purpose, I shall take notice,

FIRST, Of the kind of his death, which was the death of the cross. It was a death, that Jesus, one would have thought, should not have died: For besides, that it was the vilest and most ignominious death, a death of flaves and the most profligate villains: Besides this, it was not like to be the portion of Jesus. (I.) Because 1 it was not a Jewish, but a Roman punishment. The Jewish four capital punishments were stoning, burning, strangling, and killing with the sword. (II.) Because if this had been one of the Jewish punishments; yet it could not by the Jewish law have been the lot of Jesus: For whereas the high priest pronounced him guilty of blasphemy, and they who were by him judged him thereupon worthy of death; we know that m stoning was the death appointed in that case, not only by the after constitution of the Jews, but also by the law of Moses.

But it was foretold, that the Messias should suffer this kind of death:

And Go D's decrees and counsels shall come to pass.

THE Jews had a figure of this in the wilderness: Our Jesus put them in mind of it in these words. As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the son of man be lifted up, Joh. iii. 14. The story is very well known: The people for their sin were bitten with fiery serpents, and many of them died. They beg of Moses in this distress, that he would intercede for them, that the fiery serpents might be removed: Moses prayed to God in their behalf, and by God's direction he makes a ferpent of brass, and puts it on a pole, and they which were bitten, looked upon this brazen serpent, and were healed, Numb. xxi. 5. &c. This serpent, that was lifted up in the wilderness, was a type of the death of CHRIST, and of the kind of his death; and the effects of the brazen serpent, upon them who looked on it, did typifie the virtue received by true believers from the death of CHRIST. To this purpose this of the brazen serpent is applied by our SAVIOUR; and by n the ancient Christian writers, it is frequently mentioned as a type of the cross and passion of our blessed SAVIOUR. And that it is rightly applied by Jesus and his followers, I shall shew against the Fews.

CERTAIN it is, that the Jews do allow, that this brazen serpent was a figure of something else, and that it had a spiritual sense and meaning. And when Justin Martyr in his dialogue with Typho the Jew, infifted upon this as a type of the death of CHRIST, and appealed to the company what reason (excluding that) could be given of this matter; one of them confessed, that he was in the right, and that he himself had enquired for a reason from the Jewish masters, but could meet with none. The author of the book of Wisdom calls it p ouplodor owners, a symbol (or sign)

<sup>1</sup> Sanhedr. cap. 7. m Levit. xxiv. 16. n Dominicam crucem intentabat, Tertullian. adv. Judæos. Τύπω ταυρῶ. Juftin. Mart. pro Christian. Apol. II. Moses made that serpent. να προτυπώση τὸ σωτίριον πάθ. Theodor. in IV. Reg. Quæst. 49. vid. Buxtors. hist. Serpent. Enei. c. 5. Just. Martyr dialog. cum Tryph. P Wild. xvi. 6, 7.

of salvation. For he that turned himself towards it (says he) was not faved by the thing, that he saw; but by thee that art the SAVIOUR of all. It was an extraordinary and supernatural thing, that the likeness of a screent should cure the venomous bite of a living one. The Jewish writers 4 confess it to be miraculous, and that there was in it a miracle within a miracle. Philo the Jew (as I intimated before in the fourth page of this discourse) doth in several places mention the difference between the serpent of Eve and the serpent of Moses, or this brazen serpent of which I am now speaking: He makes one directly opposite to the other; and that which deceived Eve to be a symbol of voluptuousness, and in token thereof doomed to go upon his belly, Gen. iii. 14. But this of Moses to be a fymbol of fortitude and temperance. That was the destroyer of mankind, this the Saviour of the Israelites. Πᾶς ο ίδων αυτον ζήσειαι. Πανυ άληθως έαν ηδό νές δηχθείς ήδονη, τω τ Ευας όρει, ιχύση καλιδείν ψυχικώς το σωρροσύνης κάλλο τ Μωϋσέως όφιν, και Αξά τέτε τ Θεόν, ζήσε Ο μόνον ίδετω, και κατανοησάτω. i. e. Every one that sees it (the brazen serpent) sball live. Very true: For if the mind bitten with Eve's serpent, which is voluptuousness, can spiritually discern the beauty of temperance: i. c. The serpent of Moscs, and through it, GOD himself, he shall live: Only let him see and consider. This serpent then of Moses was a symbol or sign of something better than it self.

AND in its first institution it was intended for a sign or symbol of some suture good: This is very probable from the very words of the text; Moses is commanded to make a siery serpent, and set it upon a pole (so we render it) or set it for a sign, as the words may be rendered from the Hebrew text. The vulgar Latin hath it pro signo i. e. for a sign. And to the same sense it is rendered by the Syriac, the Chaldee, and the Greek interpreters: And this rendering is sollowed by Philo the Jew, and by Justin the Martyr in his dialogue with Trypho. And this sense is no way inconsistent with the sense, which our interpreters give.

But the crucifixion of the Messias was likewise foretold by Zechary.

They shall look upon me, whom they have pierced. St. John who was an eye-witness of the crucifixion of Jesus, doth t not only assure us that he was really crucified; but also puts us in mind that this prophecy was verified. The Psalmist had foretold no less, "They pierced my hands and my feet: This was fulfilled in our Jesus, who a disdained not after his resurrection to confirm a doubting disciple, who would not believe, unless he saw the print of the nails.

4 Abravenel & R. Bechai in Num. xxi. r Philo. Jud. de Agricultura, & Leg. Allegor. L 3. Zech. xii. 10. Joh. xix. 37. Philo. Jud. de Agricultura, & Leg. Allegor. L 3. SECONDLY,

SECONDLY, The time of his death. And that agrees with the type of it, I mean the paschal lamb: For Christis our passover, who is sacrificed for us, I Cor. v. 7. And to this purpose, it will be well worth our while to enquire after the precise time of slaying the paschal lamb, that great and eminent type of our Saviour's death, and to consider, how well it agrees with the time thereof: Now 'tis expressly commanded, that the paschal lamb should be killed in the evening, Exod. xii. 6. And we are to enquire what that expression does import.

Our marginal reading will be of use in this enquiry, which instead of, in the evening, renders it, between the two evenings, and that not without the warrant of the Hebrew text: There is great variety in the several versions of these words among the ancient and modern translators: I do not intend to represent that variety in this place. Some of them are very reconcilcable to the sense of the original, others agree very exactly with it, and indeed I have not met with any more wide among the moderns than that of Castalio, who very ill renders it, sub crepusculum i. e. about the twilight; as if the paschal lamb was not to be slain, till it began to be dark, which is so fond a conceit, that I shall not need do any more than name it. Junius and Tremellius keep strictly to the original text, and render it inter duas vesperas, between the two evenings. It is my business to inquire, what is meant by this expression, between the two evenings.

And by the way, I cannot but take notice of the interpretation of Aben Ezra upon this place, who gives us this account of the two evenings. The first he would have to be the time, when the sun sets, the second, when the remaining light after sun-set leaves the earth; between these two, he supposes the space of an hour and three quarters or thereabouts: This interpretation agrees well with Castalio's sub crepusculum, but 'tis an interpretation that is extravagant; for besides that, it does not allow of a clear light for the remaining service after the killing the paschal lamb, nor yet give time enough for the whole service of the solemnity; besides this I say, the author of this interpretation seems to quit it, and betake himself to another in his following words. For he, being pressed by an objection against this interpretation, which he attempts not to answer, consesses that there was a tradition among them, which obliges them to kill the paschal lamb, after the sun did evidently decline from its meridian.

We are therefore still to seek what is meant by this expression, between the two evenings, in which time the Israelites were obliged to kill the paschal lamb, and then to see, whether this precise circumstance of time was also sulfilled in the death of our Saviour.

Now for the better understanding of this expression, we must know, that as the fewish day consisted of twelve hours; so all their forenoon was accounted morning, and from thence all y the afternoon was accounted evening: And then their evening was divided into two, viz. the former and the latter evening: The former evening was vespera declinationis, and was to be reckoned from their sixth hour, or our twelve at noon, to sun-set; for from that time the sun declined from its  $Az\mu n$  or height. Their latter evening was vespera occasus, their sun-setting; so that the intermedial time between the sun's declension and setting is that time, which is between

7 Joh. xi. 9.

the

the two evenings. Let us then consider what warrant we have for this. And

FIRST, The holy Scripture seems to give us ground to believe, that the latter part of the Jewish day was divided into these two evenings. To this purpose we read, that the unclean person was to be removed out of the camp, and it is added, But it shall be when evening cometh on (that is, in the former evening, as the following words assure us) he shall wash himself with water. And when the sun is down (there is the latter evening) he shall come into the camp, Deut. xxiii. 11. Of the former evening are those words spoken, where 'tis said of the Levite and his wife, that they tarried until afternoon (or till the day declined, as 'tis in the Hebrew) and they did eat both of them. And then 'tis added by the Levite's father-inlaw, Behold now the day draweth towards evening, and, the day groweth to an end, Judg. xix. 8, 9. Of the same evening the following words seem to be understood: And it came to pass in an evening-tide, that David arose from off his bed, &c. 2. Sam. xi. 2. What we render, in an eveningtide, the vulgar renders post meridiem, i. e. afternoon: Nor doth it seem to be translated amiss. For it was the custom in those eastern countries to take rest after dinner: Of this we have an instance in the place, where it is said, that Rechab and Baanah went, and came about the heat of the day, to the house of Isbbosbeth, who lay on a bed at noon, 2 Sam. iv. 5. Of the latter evening we have mention, Jos. x. 26, 27. Mark i. 32. And it is very observable to my present purpose, that what St. Luke tells us, was done when the day began to z wear away, that is, in the declension of the sun, or in the afternoon, Luk. ix. 12. St. Matthew tells us, that this was done when it was evening, Mat. xiv. 15. that is, in the former evening; for that is evident not only from the words of St. Luke, but from what follows in St. Matthew after those words: For after CHRIST had fed five thousand, and the fragments taken up, and the multitude sent away (all which took up some considerable time) it is said that CHRIST went a part into a mountain, and then again the text says, when the evening was come, he was there alone, ver. 23. which must be the latter evening; for it cannot be that, which is mentioned, ver. 15.

SECONDLY, I add, to what I have said before, the testimony of R. Solomon on the place, who gives us this interpretation of these words, between the two evenings, viz. "Ici: Ici www i. e. From six hours and upwards is called between the two evenings, because the sun declines then towards its going down, &c. so that according to him there are two evenings, that of the declination of the sun, and the latter evening, which we call night. And he affirms, the intermedial time between these two to be

what is meant here by between the two evenings.

THIRDLY, With what hath been said let us compare the practice of the Jewish nation, which will shew how the nation understood these words. We find, that is was commanded, that the continual burnt offering was to be offered also between the two evenings, Numb. xxviii. 4. This was the precise time of the daily evening sacrifice. And what the Jewish practice was we may best learn from their writings. In the Mishna we read a their practice. "In the many that is, the daily evening sacrifice was killed at the eighth hour and an half (and that answers to our half an hour

# Κλύευ. Pefach. c. 5. m. 1.

after

after two of the clock) and it was offered up at the ninth hour and an half; that is, at half an hour after three; In the evening of the passover it was killed at half an hour after the seventh hour, and offered up at half an hour after the eighth—And if the eve of the passover fell upon the eve of the sabbath, it was slain half an hour after the sixth hour (that is, half an hour past our twelve a clock) and offered up half an hour after the seventh hour, (that is, at our half an hour past one) and the passover after it. Hence then we may perceive, that though the Jews were commanded to offer their daily evening sacrifice between the two evenings, they did ordinarily offer it up about the ninth hour (or half an hour after three of the clock) which was also the time of prayer; Att. iii. 1. or that time of prayer, which among the Jews b is called תפלת מנחדה, and was an attendant upon the daily evening sacrifice; so that the Jewish practice gives us to understand, what is the meaning of this expression between the two evenings, viz. that space of time, which is between the sun's declension (which is the beginning of the former evening) and sun-set, which is the latter evening. What they were required to do between the two evenings, that they did about the ninth hour of the day, which was the intermedial space between the two evenings. And whereas the continual or daily evening facrifice, and paschal lamb also were to be slain and offered up between the two evenings, we find the daily sacrifice was first to be offered up, and therefore began sooner, but then that service at the earliest did not begin till past noon, and then the passover succeeded into that time, which was in the strictest and exactest sense between the two evenings. Vid. Maimon. Hal. Tamid. & Musaph. cap. 1.

To what hath been said I shall add the testimony c of Josephus, who must needs be supposed very well to understand the usages of his own people: He tells us, speaking of Pompey's laying siege to the temple, that it did not hinder the priests from their service at the same time, which, says he, was performed at that time at the altar twice a day: Περί τε, και περί εννάτην ωραν, i. e. in the morning, and about the ninth hour. And elsewhere speaking of the scalled the passover, he d adds, καθ' ην Αυθεσι μέν δενάτης ωρας μέχρι ενδεκάτης, i. e. at which time they slay their sacrifices

from the ninth to the eleventh hour.

AGAINST what hath been said it may be objected from Dent. xvi. 6. That the paschal lamb was to be slain at sun-set. The words are these—There thou shalt sacrifice the passover at even, at the going down of the sun, at the season that thou camest forth out of Egypt. By which words it seems to be implied, that the going down of the sun was the set time, when the passover was to be slain. In answer to which, I desire these particulars may be considered.

I. THAT from those words it may be as well concluded, that the passover was to be sacrificed at the season of their coming forth out of Egypt, it being said, There thou shalt sacrifice the passover at even, at the going down of the sun, at the season that thou camest forth out of Egypt. Now, if by the season, in which they came out of Egypt, we understand the precise time, when they came thence, we shall find that it was neither in the evening, nor at sun-set, but very far removed from it: 'Tis expressly

Vid. Maimon. H. Tephill. c. 3. sest. 2. 5 Joseph. Antique l. 14. c. 8. 4 Id. de Bello Judaico. l. 7. c. 17.

faid that God brought them out of Egypt by night, ver. 1. And this is farther confirmed from what we read, Exod. xii. 29, 30, 31.

- 2. That therefore the Jewish writers do understand those expressions of the even, the going down of the sun, and the season of their coming out of Egypt, not of one and the same time, but of several times; and that too with a several respect to the services of the paschal solemnity. This appears from the Targum of Jonathan who paraphraseth on those words, sat even, &c.] thus. And in the evening at the going down of the sun thou shalt eat it until midnight, the time of the beginning of your redemption from Egypt. But R. Solomon upon those words speaks more explicitly and plainly still: At even, &c. in: The time of serificing or have three several times placed before us. [1.] The time of sacrificing or killing the paschal lamb, at even, i. e. after the sixth hour of the day and afterward. [2.] The time of eating it, and that is when the sun-sets. [3.] The time of burning the remainder, and that is the season in which they came out of Egypt. And to the same sense R. Bechai interprets these words.
- 3. That though these three several times be laid before us, viz. the even, sun-set, and the season in which they came out of Egypt; yet is there no need to understand any of them as belonging to the sacrificing the passover, but the even only. Thou shalt sacrifice the passover at even, i. e. post declinationem solis, as Lyra interperets it well. For though it follow, at the going down of the sun, &c. it doth not therefore hence follow, that those words relate to the same matter. For the proof of this I shall need go no farther than to the second verse of this chapter; where it is said, Thou shalt therefore sacrifice the passover unto the Lord thy God, of the slock and the herd. Where 'tis evident, that the flock relates to the passover only, according to the law, Exod. xii. 3, 5. and that the herd must belong to some other matter. And therefore the Jews understand it of the Chagigah, or the other offerings, which were offered up during the passover.

So that by this time it will not be hard to understand, what is meant by between the two evenings, which was also the time of the daily evening sacrifice, Num. xxviii. 4. This was wont to be offered up about our three in the afternoon, or their ninth hour, which was also a stated time of prayer. Ast. iii. 1. It is evident, that the time between the sirst declining of the sun to its setting is that time, which is between the two evenings; and then our three a clock, or their ninth hour, when the day consists of twelve hours, is the exact middle between the two evenings. Let us now see, how well the time of Christ's death agrees with this.

And that it seems to do very exactly. For besides that he was crucified at the passover, he seems also to have died about that moment of time, when they were wont to slay the paschal lamb, which, as I have shewed, was about their ninth hour. They began to crucise him at the third hour of the day Mark xv. 25. at the sixth hour there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour ver. 33. At the ninth hour he cries out, My God, my God, oc. ver. 34. and presently upon that we read, that he gave up the ghost ver. 37. And that all this happened before the latter evening (and so consequently between the two evenings) appears

e Vid. Targ. Jonath. in locum. R. Solom. & R. Bechai in Deut. xvi. 6.

from

from ver. 42, 43. where we read, that when even was come, Joseph begs the body of Jesus: So that Christ our passover, the great antitype of of the paschal lamb, dies between the two evenings; And as in other particulars our Lord did fully answer, what was typisted of him in that sacrifice; so he doth also in the time of his death, which was about the ninth hour, and was the precise time of slaying the paschal lamb.

THIRDLY, The place of our SAVIOUR'S death. This was also prefigured of old, and fulfilled in the death of Jesus. We know, that the facrifices were not to be offered up any where, but first within the camp, and afterwards at Jerusalem, the place which God had chosen to place his name there. Our Lord, who was to suffer, and to be slain a sacrifice for our sins, did suffer in that place.

In that city he was accused, condemned and abused, and afterwards he suffered death without the gate, as some of the sin-offerings under the law of Moses were burnt without the camp. The city of Jerusalem answered to the camp in the wilderness, and what was done without the camp at first, was when Jerusalem was chosen, to be done without the gates of the city, Heb. xiii. 11.

FOURTHLY, Let us consider still more particularly the manner and circumstances of the death of Jesus, and we shall find, that what was of old predicted and prefigured, was sulfilled in our Jesus. As for example,

That he was betrayed by his own disciple, the evangelists report: And this the psalmist had foretold long before in these werds. Mine own familiar friend, in whom I trusted, which did eat of my bread, hath list up his heel against me. And what St. John reports is very remarkable to this purpose; when our Saviour had told his disciples, that they were not all clean, intimating that one of them should betray him; he tells us what was added, I speak not of you all, I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be sulfilled, He that eateth bread with me, hath list up his heel against me. Now (says our Saviour) I tell you before it come, that when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am he, ver. 18, 19. His meaning is, that they should be confirmed in their belief of him, when they should compare the treachery of Judas, which was predicted by the psalmist, and foretold by himself. Joh. xviii. 2. with Psalm xli. 9. Joh. xiii. 10, 11.

THAT he was betrayed for thirty pieces of filver we read in the gospel, and the same was foretold by the prophet Zechariah, and not only that, but also the use that this money was put to, viz. the buying the potters field, Matth. xxvi. 15. xxvii. 7, 8, 9, with Zech. xi. 12, 13.

THAT he was crucified between two thieves, the evangelists report; and the prophet long before had foretold, that he should be numbered with the transgressors. And our SAVIOUR a little before his death tells his disciples of it in these words. For I say unto you, that this that is written must yet be accomplished in me: And he was reckoned among the transgressors. For the things concerning me have an end, Matth. xxvii. 38. with Isai. liii. 12.

WHEN he was upon the cross there was given him vinegar to drink; and no less was foretold by the psalmist, In my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink. And our Saviour's thirst at that time was to verifie that prediction. Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, and that

Luk, xxii 17.

the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst, Upon which they gave him vinegar to drink. This is the more remarkable still, because it was contrary to the constant custom and courteste of the nation, to give him that was condemned to die vinegar to drink: For whereas such a sharp liquor is apt to awaken to a sense of pain, the Jews were wont to give such persons a h stupisying or narcotick potion to russe and disorder their minds, that they might not attend unto their pain, viz. frankincense in a cup of winc. For this they ground themselves on the words of Solomon. Give strong drink to him that is ready to perish, and wine to those that be of a heavy heart. Let him drink and forget his poverty, and remember his misery no more. This was the constant practice of the Jews, and there is a tradition among them, that the ladies of the city of Jerusalem were at this charge of their own good will, towards the poor sufferers. But for all this practice, what God foretold was suffilled. Matth. xxvii. 48, with Psalm lxix. 21. Joh. xix. 28, 29. Prov. xxxi. 6, 7.

THE soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, part his garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part; but when they came to his coat, which it seems was woven and without a seam, because they could not part it, they said among themselves, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it whose it shall be. And tho' this seemed to be a very casual and contingent thing; yet was this not without the particular providence of God, in order to sulfil the prophecy of the Psalmist, They part my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture. Psalm xviii. 22. with

Joh. xix. 23, 24.

The Psalmist predicted of the Messias in these words. All they that see me laugh me to scorn, they shoot out the lip, they shake the head, saying: He trusted on the Lord, that he would deliver him: let him deliver him, seeing he delighted in him. Let us hear now, what the Evangelist tells us as to the verifying of this prophecy: He tells us, that when Jesus was crucified, they that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads, and saying, Thou that destroyes the temple and buildest it in three days, save thy self; if thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross: There were others that said, He saved others, himself he cannot save: If he be the king of Israel let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him. He trusted in God, let him deliver him now, if he will have him. Psalm xxii. 7, 8. with Matth. xxvii. 39.

THE Psalmist reports the very words, which the CHRIST should speak upon the cross. My God, my God, why hast thou for saken me? And we sind, that Jesus about the ninth hour cryed out, Eli, Eli, lama sabacthani? i. c. My God, my God, why hast thou for saken me? And if the prophet Isaiah tells us, when he reports, that when he poured out his soul unto death, he did also make intercession for the transgressors; I am sure that St. Luke tells us, that Jesus, when he was upon the cross, interceded for his greatest enemies, praying for them and saying, Father forgive them, for they know not what they do. Psal. xxii. 1. with Matth. xxvii. 46. Isai. liii. 12. with Luk. xxiii. 34.

THE same prophet describes the patient sufferings of the MESSIAS in these words, He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth; he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her

[bearers

Maimon, H. Sanhedr, c. 13.

so eminently fulfilled, as it was by Jesus. He endured his pain and contempt with a most unparallelled patience: He was betrayed by a false disciple, and with a fraudulent kiss: Another swears he doth not know him; the rest leave him in his extremity: He is stricken by the hand of a rude officer, oppressed in the place of judgment, and condemned to die without sufficient evidence; he is spit upon, buffeted, hooted at and reviled. They carry him from Caiaphas to Pontius Pilate, before whom he answers with silence and an unheard of patience: From Pilate he is conveyed to Hered, and is silent before him also; thence he is returned to Pilate; neither the one nor the other could find any fault with him. His enemies thirst for his blood. are loud and clamorous; our Lord who suffers, holds his peace. Isai. liii. 7. Matth. xxvii. 14. Luk. xxiii. 9, 11, 14.

THOUGH the sufferings of the MESSIAS were particularly predicted, as hath been faid, and they were very severe; yet we are assured, that a bone of him should not be broken. This was intimated in the law of the paschal lamb (a very remarkable type of the death of Christ) by which it was provided, that not a bone of the lamb should be broken. This is faid to have been so i appointed for the honour of the holy oblation; and was of perpetual obligation, and not peculiar to the passover of Egypt. Now this was actually fulfilled in the body of Jesus, though it was very unlikely, that it should have happened so. For besides that our SAVIour's enemies were barbarously cruel towards him, they had a custom among them to break the legs of the crucified, and were at this time especially careful about it, because of their approaching sabbath; and had actually broken the bones of the two malefactors, which hung by him; and were come to the body of Jesus for the same end: But finding him dead, they pierced his side, but brake not his bones; not without a very remarkable providence of GoD. And this was done, that the scripture might be fulfilled, A bone of him sball not be broken. Exod. xii. 46. Joh. xix. 36.

IF what hath been said be considered duly, we shall have great cause from the sufferings of Jesus to believe him to be the Christ.

IV. I COME now to enquire into the cause or reasons of the sufferings of CHRIST.

FOR it cannot be supposed, that CHRIST, who was a most innocent person, should suffer a most painful and ignominious death, without some weighty cause and great ends. And what those are, you may learn from the following particulars.

1. He suffered in our stead, and to procure our pardon and acceptance, and salvation. We do believe, that he suffered for us men and our for salvation; and maintain against the followers of Socinas, that his death was a piacular sacrifice, and that his sufferings were a vicarious punishment upon the account, and for the expiation of our sins: Or, that he died to make satisfaction for our sins.

For the proving of this, let us consult the holy scriptures, and we shall find, that they do abundantly teach us this truth.

Abravenel in Exod. xii.

IT is granted on all hands, that the prophet Isaiah chap. liii. speaks of the sufferings of the MESSIAS. And he gives us such an account of them, as speaks them to be undergone not only for our sakes, but in our stead also. Thus he is said to bear our griefs, and carry our sorrows, ver. 4. And if those words do not import this sense; yet those which follow, do very much confirm us in this belief: He was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement of our peacewas upon him, and with his stripes we are healed. ver. 5. These words do plainly import, that the fault was ours, and that for that fault the MESSIAS suffered. It was our transgression and our iniquity, but the wounds and bruises due to them fell upon him. The chastisement and stripes were his, the peace and healing, thereby procured, belong to us. In a word, though we finned, and were liable to suffer upon that account; yet he suffered for us: If this be not plain enough let us proceed: All we like sheep have gone aftray: we have turned every one to his own way, and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. ver. 6 The plain and natural sense of which words is this, that whereas we had finned, and had made our selves obnoxious to punishment, yet God did not punish us as we deserved, but the MESSIAS in our room and stead. To the same purpose we read afterward: He was cut off out of the land of the living, for the transgression of my people was he stricken. ver. 8. And after those words we read, that his soul should be made an offering for sin. ver. 10. It is certain, that a fin or a trespals offering under the law of Moses was expiatory and piacular, and the beast was offered instead of the offender; and God did accept the blood of the sacrifice, in the room of the life of the person who had finned.

LET us now consider, what we read the in new Testament to the same purpose. Our blessed Saviour in his solemn prayer, a little before his passion, hath these words: For their sakes (speaking of his disciples) I santisse my self, that they also might be santissed through the truth. That is, Christ did offer up himself as a vietim or sacrifice for them, as the Greek word is observed to signific: And that sacrifice also is to be looked upon, as a piacular and expiatory one. And to that purpose it is well observed, that the prayer Joh. xvii. 1, 2, &c. by which Christ consecrated himself unto his death, is like unto that, which the Jewish high priest used, when he consecrated or offered up the victims upon the day of expiation before the altar. Joh. xvii. 19.

AGREEABLY to what hath been said, St. Paul speaking of CHRIST tells us, that God hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin. Of which words I can give no other sense but this, viz. that though CHRIST was innocent himself; yet God thought sit to give him up to death, as a piacular sacrifice for our sins. And to the same purpose St. Peter tells us, that CHRIST bare our sins in his own body on the tree. 2 Cor. v. 22. 1 Pet. ii. 24.

THE divine author of the epistle to the Hebrews tells us, that CHRIST did by himself purge our sins: And that he was once offered to bear the sins of many. And that he offered one sacrifice for sins. Heb. i. 3. ix. 28. i. 10, 12.

AND we find, that the expiation of our fins is imputed to the death of Christ in the Holy Scriptures. We have an altar, whereof they have no right to eat, which serve the tabernacle. For the bodies of those beafts, whose

whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burnt without the camp. Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctifie the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate. By sanctifying the people nothing less can be meant, than the expiation of their sins: And as this was done under the law of Moses by an expiatory sacrifice; so was it done by the blood of Jesus, (the anti-type of those sacrifices, which he speaks of in that place) who suffered without the gate. St. John tells us, that the blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth us from all sin. Heb. xiii. 10, 11, 12. 1 Joh. i. 7.

And this is farther confirmed to us from this, that our Saviour's blood is said to be a price paid for us, by which we are bought and redeemed. For this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called may receive the promise of an eternal inheritance. To which I shall add those words of the apostle to the Ephesians, where speaking of Christ he saith, In whom we have redemption through his blood: And to the Colossians, In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins. Heb. ix. 15. Eph. i. 7. Col. i. 14.

To what hath been said, very much may be added to the same purpose, viz. that our Lord himself hath said, that he came to give his life a ranfom for many. Matth. xx. 28. That of St. Paul to the same purpose
I Tim. ii. 6. And those words of our Lord, This is my blood of the new
testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. Matth. xxvi. 28.
Again these words of the apostle: Christ hath redeemed us from the curse
of the law; being made a curse for us. Gal. iii. 13. Christ is elsewhere
said to be the propitiation for our sins. 1 Joh. iv. 10.

I SHALL not need to add any more testimonies to those already named: For though there are many others; yet these are sufficient: And indeed they do so plainly acquaint us with the end of Christ's death, that he must use great art that can strain them to another sense.

As for what the Socinians object against this doctrine, viz. that it renders God's kindness less (which yet is greatly magnified in the Scripture) in giving his son: This objection, I say, can be of no force at all.

For though God thought fit for the honour of his justice, that sin should not altogether go unpunished, and gave his Son to make our peace and redeem us from misery with his precious blood; yet is this no diminution to the free grace and mercy of God. Twas the infinite mercy of God, which moved him to find out this way, in which we can claim nothing. 'Twas intirely the mercy of God, that provided us this remedy. Our pardon is free to us, whatever it cost our Lord to procure it. We have great cause to adore the love of God, and the unparallelled charity of our blessed Saviour. Our free pardon and Christ's redemption; the infinite mercy of God, and the satisfaction of his justice are not things that are inconsistent. The apostles words teach us this truth, with which I shall conclude this particular. Being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption which is in JESUS CHRIST: Whom GOD hath set forth to be a propitiation, through faith in his blood; to declare his righteoufness for the remission of sins that are past through the forbearance of God. To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness, that he might be just, and the justifier of him, that believeth in Jesus. Rom. iii. 24, 25, 26.

AND

AND thus I have considered the death of CHRIST as a sacrifice for sin, and consequently as a great instance of his inestimable love, who was content to die that we might live. And therefore when we are exhorted to love one another, we are pressed to it from this consideration. Walk in love, as CHRIST also hath loved us, and hath given himself for an offering, and a sucrifice to God for a sweet-smelling savour, Eph. v. 2.

2. The death of Christ is to be considered as the death of a testator: for so is he also represented to us. He himself calls his blood, The blood of the new Testament, or the new Testament in his blood. I very well know, that the Greek word, which we render testament doth signific covenant; but yet it doth not always so in the new Testament. For sometimes it signifies the last will or testament of a testator. And when it doth so, it doth not exclude the notion of a covenant neither, but rather imply it. For the right, which we to have the inheritance, is one part of the covenant, but then the declaration of that right is peculiarly and properly the part of a testament; which signifies the last will of a man, by which he disposeth of

his goods. Matth. xxvi. 28. Mark xiv. 24. Luk. xxii. 20.

Our blessed Saviour is said to be the heir of all things. And we are elsewhere told, that the Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand. And we are farther informed, upon what account it is that the Father loveth the Son (and consequently hath given all things into his hands) in these words of our Saviour, Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life. From whence it is evident, that upon the account of the voluntary death of Christ this full power and authority is given to Christ, as the great mediator between God and man: Christ was in the form of God, and thought it not robbery to be equal with God; But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men, And being found in sasion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Heb. i. 2. Joh. iii. 35, x. 17. Phil. ii. 6.

Thus low did the Son of God stoop for our salvation, from being equal with God to the likeness of men, and from the form of God to that of a servant; from life to death, from glory to state and contempt: If you would know the effects of all this, the next words will inform us: Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name, which is above every name; That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth: And that every tongue should confess, that Jesus Christ is Lord to the glory of God the Father.

OUR blessed Saviour, a little before his death, bequeaths a kingdom to his followers as a testator in these words, k And I appoint unto you a

kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me. Luk. xxii. 29.

But then by his death he procured our right to this glorious inheritance. For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator. For a testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all, whilst the testator liveth. 'Tis the death of the testator that makes way to the heir: He hath no claim till the testator die. But upon his death his title is unquestionable, and it is not in any man's power,

k Distidiquei.

to alter what is thus settled and confirmed. Though it be but a man's testament; yet if it be confirmed, no man disamilleth or addet thereto. Heb. ix.

16, 17. Gal. iii. 15.

OUR LORD suffered the most shameful and painful death: He did this voluntarily, and not by constraint. He died not intestate, nor yet like other testators; who when they have made their testaments, do avoid death with all their care and skill, and are not willing to part with their lives for the benefit of their heirs or successors. Twas otherwise with our Saviour; I lay down my life (says he) No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of my self: I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. Joh. x. 17, 18.

Now after Christ had suffered death, and risen from the dead, he tells his followers of the plenitude of his power and authority. All power is given unto me (says he) in heaven and in earth. And a while after his own ascension into heaven, he sends the Holy Ghost, which is the ear-

nest of our inheritance. Matth. xxviii. 18. Eph. i. 14.

3. The death of Christ is to be considered, as the death of a martyr or a witness. Our blessed Saviour had professed himself to be the light of the world, the Messias whom the scriptures had foretold, that he came from heaven, and that he was the Christ the son of the Blessed. It is of great moment, that these truths should be sufficiently consirmed to us: Upon these things depends the whole religion, that he taught. If these things be sufficiently proved, we can make no doubt of the truth of any part of the dostrine, which Jesus taught. Joh. viii. 12. v. 39. vi. 40. Mark. xiv. 61, 62.

Now it will appear, that the death of Christ doth mightily confirm these truths, and that Jesus gave up himself to death for the same end and purpose. When Pilate asked Jesus, whether he was a king or not; Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king (that is, Jesus answered in the affirmative) To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. With respect to the undaunted courage of Jesus before Pilate St. Paul saith, that before Pontius Pilate he witnessed a good confession. Joh. xviii. 37. I Tim. vi. 13.

Twas upon this account, that Jesus was put to death: He was accused indeed of something else, that was charged upon him. But the testimony was weak and incoherent; that with which he was born down was, that he professed himself to be Christ a king: Or as it is in St. John, Because he made himself the Son of God. Our Saviour was silent, when the false witnesses accused him. But when the high priest asked him, if he was the Christ the Son of the Blessed; and he answered I am, &c. We find thereupon the high priest renting his cloaths and saying, What need we any farther witnesses? To have heard the blasphemy, What think ye? And they all condemned him to be worthy of death. Luk. xxiii. 2. Joh. xix 7. Mark xiv. 61.

OUR SAVIOUR died for his adhering to this great truth; and that he did fo, must be acknowledged a great confirmation of it, and of the religion which he planted. Life is too sweet a thing to be tristed away for nothing: Much less will a man in his wits die in confirmation of a lie: Had Jesus been disposed, he might have kept out of the way of his enemies, or have saved himself by denying the truth: He had now a great temptation before him, either to renounce what he had professed, or by some trick or mean art or other to M

escape the danger. But he is far from taking any such course to deliver him! self, but instead thereof confirms the truth with his own blood. He was fo far from dislowning himself to be the Son of God, that he continues in that profession to the last breath. And when he hung upon the cross, he twice calls God his father, when he prayed for his enemies and gave up the Ghost. This did mightily confirm his doctrine, and was one great end of his sufferings. Luk. xxiii. 34. 46.

HENCE it is, that the blood (or the sufferings of Christ, especially his death) is reckoned among those, who bear witness in earth. And JESUS CHRIST is called the faithful witness. And we are then said to be partakers of CHRIST, when we hold the beginning of our confidence stedsaft unto the end. I Joh. v. s. Rev. i. 5.

THE blood of CHRIST did not only wash away our sins, but did also clear the innocency of our bleffed SAVIOUR. And it was attended with so many rare circumstances, and fulfilled so many prophecies, and was born with such an admirable patience, that it did convince men of the innonence of Jesus, and consequently of the truth of his doctrine. The veil of the temple was rent, the earth did quake, the rocks clave in funder, the graves were opened, and the fun drew in its light, insomuch that the centurion, that beheld thefe things, could not forbear to fay, Truly this was the Son of God. Matth. xxvii. 54.

AND no wonder after all this, that those who renounced Christianity, are said to count the blood of the covenant (i. e. the blood by which the new covenant was ratified and confirmed) wherewith he was sanctified (that is, CHRIST was consecrated or sanctified. See Joh. xvii. 19.) an unholy thing i. e. the blood not of an innocent person, but of a criminal.

Heb. x. 29.

HAVING considered the death of CHRIST, as the death of a victim or

facrifice, of a testator, and of a martyr or witness;

4. I SHALL now consider it as a patern, and great example to us. And thus the scriptures represent it. He suffered for us, leaving us an example, that we should follow his steps. Our SAVIOUR gave us an example that we should follow his steps. I Pet. ii. 20. Our SAVIOUR gave us a most excellent example in his whole life: But then at his death, he gave us also a very eminent example of the following virtues and graces.

I. OF patience and meckness under all his sufferings and reproaches. And his example was without a parallel. Never was there so great a mirrour of these graces. He did no sin, neither was there guile found in his mouth. Who when he was reviled, reviled not again: when he suffered he threatned not, but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously. In this Jesus was so conspicuous, that when we are exhorted to patience, we are directed to look upon him, the author and finisher of our faith. And it will be a very useful meditation for us under all our sufferings, and all the reproaches which we meet withal. He was guilty of no sin, but yet was numbered among transgressors. He had but few followers, and by one of them he is betrayed, denyed by another, and in his greatest extremity forsaken by all the rest. He is pronounced innocent, and yet sentenced to death by the same breath, absolved and condemned by one and the same judge. He is forced to bear his own cross, reviled and buffeted, derided and scoffed at by an inhuman multitude, whom he came to fave, and whom he had obliged by the greatest benefactions. He was innocent, and deserved not this usage; omnipotent, and able to revenge it: But instead of that he doth not so much as threaten those, whom he could easily have destroyed; He bears all with unparallelled meekness and patience, and made it appear, that these virtues were as invincible, as his cause was just. He is silent under the greatest clamours of his enemies; his persecutors have less patience, than he that suffers. And when the whole creation trembles, when the sun withdraws its light, and the rocks rend in pieces, and the graves give up their dead, and the veil of the temple is torn in pieces, then is Jesus quiet and still: This example doth most powerfully reprove our peevishness and discontent, our anger and our heat under the obloquy, and other sufferings, which we endure, and generally have deserved. I Pet. ii. 22, 23. Heb. xii. 1. 2.

II. Or forgiveness of enemies. They were our Lord's enemies, to whom he was the greatest friend. And of all enemies 'tis the hardest to forgive them. He that did eat of his bread, hath lift up his heel against him. His own disciple betrays him, and his own people thirst after his blood, and his wounds, he receives from those, whom he came to seek and save. A robber is preferred before him, and he is numbered with transgressors. He had fed their hungry, healed their sick, dispossessed their demoniacks, restored sight to their blind, given strength to their infirm, and life to their dead: Many good turns he had done them, and yet they treat him rudely and barbarously, they cry to have him crucified, and insult over him in his sufferings. What doth our Lord do all this while? Doth he call for fire from heaven to devour his enemies? Doth he menace them with an approaching destruction? Doth he exclaim against their proceedings? No: he opens not his mouth, unless it be to pray for these his enemies. Father forgive them, &c. And can we remember these things, and bear a grudge against our brother? Can it now be hard for us to forgive our enemies, when CHRIST with his last breath prayed for his? CHRIST forgave, and he died for our forgiveness: And is it now a possible thing for us not to forgive, even then when we commemorate the death of CHRIST? Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking be put away from you, with all malice. And be ye kind one to another, tender hearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you. Luk. xxiii. 34. Eph.iv. 31, 32.

III. Of the profoundest humility and condescension: The world never beheld a pattern of this grace, which could compare with this of our blessed Saviour's. He stooped from heaven to earth, when he was born. From the immensity and happiness, the power and infinity of a God, to the limits of a womb, the miseries of a man, the proportions and infirmities of a child, the weaknesses of a mortal, and the humble circumstances of a poor and mean condition. If we look upon Jesus in the manger, we shall see a glorious example of humility. But if we turn our eyes upon him as he hung upon the cross, we shall see an example great enough to extinguish out of our minds every proud thought for ever. Here we may see him, who was found in the fashion of a man, humbling himself lower still, as he was obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Phil. ii. 8.

METHINKS

METHINKS after this we should never be in danger of a proud thought of our selves: We cannot sure after this example think any office too mean for us, in which we may do any good office to one another. Here is enough to extinguish for ever all our ambition and pride, and contempt of our poor brother. Nothing that we can do, can be called a great condescension after his humiliation of the Son of God.

IV. OF resignation to the will of God. This our Lord was the most conspicuous mirror and example of. He was a man (sin only excepted) like one of us; sensible of hunger and thirst, of pain and sorrow, and these things pained his slesh, as they do ours. His soul was sorrowful and very heavy: His sweat was like drops of blood; great was his agony, and his sorrow beyond expression. He saw before his eyes a most painful and a most shameful death. He is about to drink a most bitter cup. These things were grievous to his human nature, and therefore he prays, that (if it were possible) this cup might pass from him; but after all he submits himself to the will of God: Not as I will, but as thou wilt. And how instructive is this to us! We sinners may be assumed to murmur, when our Lord resigned himself. Well may we submit under our little and deserved evils, when he that was without fault, resigned himself up to God. Matth. xxvi. 39.

V. OF the greatest charity to mankind. Greater love than this hath no man, than that he lay down his life for his friend. This is the highest slight of friendship, and we have but a very sew examples in our books of such a degree of charity. Some sew (I grant) have done this, none have gone beyond it, besides our Lord Jesus. For he died for his enemies and for the ungodly: This example should constrain us to do good to all, even to evil men, and to our greatest enemies. Rom. v. 6.

VI. OF the greatest fortitude and the truest courage. He bore witness to the truth with his blood, and was stedsast in the profession of it to his last breath. The most sharp and shameful death, the most barbarous usage and treatment could not prevail upon him to deny the truth, or to fall into an impotent passion, and revenge himself. He doth in cold blood chuse rather to die the worst kind of death, than to quit the profession of the truth, or to destroy his enemies. This is indeed an argument of true greatness of mind.

We are much mistaken in our conceits about valour or fortitude. To forgive an enemy, and to chuse to die rather than to do an evil thing speaks a generous and a great mind, and is a certain proof of courage and true fortitude. But he is a man of a weak mind, who will do an evil thing to save his life; and revenge himself upon him, that affronts him or doth him wrong. Revenge speaks a defect of wit and courage. They are the meanest creatures, who are prevish and waspish, and prone to bite him that toucheth them. Leniter qui seviunt, sapiunt magis. Anger resteth it in the bosom of fools: Non est magnus animus, quem incurvat injuria. They are but little and feeble folk, that are russed by every injury or calumny. The more impotent and weak any creature is, the more easily it is provoked, and nothing is a more certain sign of a narrow and mean soul than revenge.

----Quippe

Semper & infirmi est animi, exiguique voluptas Ultio; continuò sic collige, quòd vindictà Nemo magès gaudet quam fæmina. &c.

WELL, so it was, our SAVIOUR shewed great courage and resolution, and hath given us therein a great example of Christian fortitude and resolution.

V. I SHALL now make some application, of what hath been said.

I. What hath been said may serve to recommend to us a suffering condition, which Christ hath sanctified by his own sufferings. When we suffer, we are like the author and finisher of our faith. It becomes us not to be dismayed with our sufferings, who profess a faith in a crucified redeemer. For by sufferings our religion was planted, and by sufferings it grew up and prevailed in the world.

This was the way, in which Jesus went before us into his glory; And if we suffer with him, we shall likewise be glorified together. It is no little comfort to us to think, that our Lord hath led us the same way, and that he did overcome the world after this manner, which is indeed

the noblest conquest of it.

II. WE may hence be exhorted to a frequent meditation of the death and sufferings of JESUS CHRIST: From what hath been said it appears plainly, that we are nearly concerned in these things: For CHRIST did not suffer upon his own account, but upon ours, and we are very much concerned in the benefits of his death.

- [1.] As we expect our pardon upon the account of his merit and satisfaction. He was a sacrifice, which made an atonement and expiation for our crimes, as he died for our fins.
- [2.] As we hope for an eternal inheritance upon the account of the death of Christ, who hath made a way for us by his death, and by death entered himself before into an eternal inheritance.
- [3.] As we are confirmed in the truth of his holy religion by the testimony of his blood, with which this new covenant between God and man was ratified and confirmed.
- [4.] As we are constrained by the glorious example, which he gave us in his sufferings, to patience, and charity, and self-resignation, &c. of which he hath given us the most powerful example.

III. WE may hence be exhorted to a frequent, and diligent partaking of the facrament of the Lord's supper, which is appointed as a standing memorial of the death of our Lord Jesus Christ. We ought not only to embrace, but welcome all these opportunities, as those which lead us to the contemplation of Christ's death, upon which our hopes do depend.

It is an unspeakable privilege, that we are admitted to this favour: And had we the due sense, which we ought to have upon our minds, of the love of God in giving us his Son, and the love of our Lord in giving up himself to death for us, and the unspeakable benefits,

which thence accrue to us; we should need no words of persuasion, no law or secular interest to invite us to the doing of that, which is so plainly our duty, and so much our interest to do.

OUR spiritual hunger and thirst are the only safe and lasting principles, as well as the acceptable ones, from whence we ought to be moved.

IF our souls be once possessed with an ardent love of God and our blessed Saviour, we shall not make excuses, and shall be so far from that, that it will not be an easie thing to stay away; and nothing less than a violent detention will keep us back.

AND thus I have from the sufferings of Jesus made it appear, that he is the CHRIST.

BEFORE I proceed to speak to the resurrection of Jesus, I shall say something of his burial. Of the Messias it was foretold, that he should not only die but be buried, and not only be buried but honourably interred also. And what was foretold of him, was suffilled in our Jesus, though it was very unlikely to have came to pass.

That the Messias should be buried, is foretold by the psalmist. Thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, (or, in the grave) neither wilt thou suffer thy holy one to see corruption. We have no dispute with the Jews about the burial of Jesus; for they who grant that he died, will not deny that he was buried; it being the custom of the Jews to allow burial to all men, even to the greatest malesactors whatsoever. Psal. xvi. 10. with Act. ii. 31.

BUT it was likewise foretold, that the MESSIAS (though he was to suffer an ignominious death) should be honourably buried. This was foretold of the MESSIAS, and was eminently suffilled in our JESUS,

Of the Messias it is said, that he was cut off out of the land of the living. And then it follows. And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death, because he had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth. That is, His enemies designed him the burial of a malefactor (and he who dies among such, is likely to be buried with them also) but the Messias having done no violence, would be rescued by the providence of God, and honourably buried: Isai. 1111. 9.

We have another eminent prophecy of the Messias, which cannot be denied to belong to him by the Jews themselves, where among other things it is forctold, that his rest shall be glorious; which words may well be allowed to predict the honourable burial of the Messias; Abravenel, upon the liii. of Isaiah brings these words; as a proof that what is said Isa. liii. 9. he made his grave with the wicked, cannot belong to the Messias; because it is said, that his rest shall be glorious: In which he grants two things; First, That the xi. chapter of Isaiah is to be understood of the Messias, and we find him accordingly expound it of him: Secondly, That these words, his rest shall be glorious may well be expounded of the honourable burial of the Messias. For else what cause had he to say that these words are opposite to those, if they do not belong to the same matter? Isa. xi. 10. Abravenel, on Isa. liii. 9.

AND as this Jew hath justified those Christians, who understand this place of the burial of the MESSIAS; so it is very certain, that the place hath been understood to belong to this matter by the ancient writers of the church.

THE

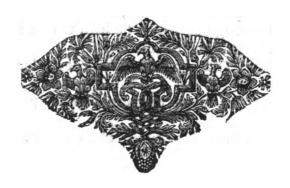
The vulgar Latin renders these words, his rest shall be glorious, thus, Erit sepulchrum ejus gloriosum. And we find the Greek interpreters elsewhere render the word rest to this sense, as signifying burial. Thus, he shall enter into peace, they shall rest in their beds, (which words Justin Martyr understands of the Messias) is by the Greek rendered Eveloning Tugin auti, i. c. His burial shall be in peace.

AND this place we find was understood of the honourable burial of the

MESSIAS by the ancients.

I SHALL now thew, that these things were fulfilled in our JESUS, Though he was crucified under the Roman power; yet was he buried contrary to the custom of the Romans, who left those that were crucified to the injuries of the air, and voracity of the fowls: Again, though Jesus died between two theires, and died as a malefactor, and though his enemies designed nothing more but an ignoble grave with the wicked; yet it was brought to pass by the providence of God, that his dead body was buried with the rich, and that great honour was shewed him in his burial. The body of Jusus was begged by a rich man named Joseph, 'twas wrapped in clean linnen, and laid in his own new tomb. Nicodemus a ruler of the Jews, and a master of Israel, brings a mixture of myrrb and aloes: The good womans precious ointment was poured out for the burial of JESUS: And when the fabbath was past, several women brought spices, that they might anoint him: In a word, great care was taken about his burial by the rich, by the honourable, and the devout. It was done with care and with cost, and by persons of the greatest rank and quality. Not to say, that in after times the place, where his body had lain, was visited frequently, and greatly adorned: But I shall not need to insist any farther upon this, but shall proceed to consider the resurrection of the Messias. Matth. xxvii. 57. Joh. v. 1, 10. with ibid. xix. 39. Matth. xxvi. 12. Mark xvi. 1.

Just. Mart. pro Christian. Apol. 11. Erit in pace Sepultura ejus. Cypr. adv. Judzos. 1. 2. vid. Hieron Epist. ad Marcell.



CHAP.

## CHAP. VIII.

Of the refurrection of JESUS. That we have sufficient evidence, that JESUS did rise from the dead. That we have the most unexceptionable buman testimony. Why the same number of men are called the eleven and the twelve elsewhere, when they were but ten? Job. xxi. 14. explained. This confirmed by the testimony of an angel and by divine testimony. That Jesus removed all cause of doubting the truth of his resurrection: That there were a select number of men chosen to be witnesses of the resurrection of Jesus. That these witnesses, as also the evangelists are worthy of belief. That it was foretold, that the Messias should rise from the dead. The words (Pfal. ii. 5.) This day have I begotten thee, are justly applyed to this matter: This proved against the Jews at large. That JEsus rose from the dead is an undeniable proof, that he is the MESSIAS; and of the greatest importance to us. Of the time when JESUS rose from the dead. Why on the third day? And how he could he said to rise on the third day, who was but one whole day in the sepulchre; and how this agrees with Matth. xii. 40. where Jesus said, He should be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth? The third day, on which JESUS rose, considered as the first day of the week

F the sufferings and death of Jesus will afford us any arguments to prove him to be the Messias; the resurrection of Jesus from the dead, and his exaltation to God's right hand will much more afford us pregnant and unexeceptionable proofs, that he was the Christ the Son of God; and that his religion, which he hath taught us, came from God. And for the better speaking to this matter,

FIRST, I shall shew, That we have sufficient evidence, that Jesus did rise from the dead.

SECONDLY, That this is an unexceptionable proof, that he is the CHRIST.

THIRDLY, I shall consider the time, when JESUS rose from the dead, viz. The third day.

FIRST, I shall shew, that we have sufficient evidence, that JESUS did rise from the dead. By sufficient evidence I mean such, as is enough to satisfie any honest and inquisitive mind; as much, not to say much more, as we have for any matter of sact, which we were not the eye witnesses of. As much, and more, than we have for other things, of the truth of which we neither do, nor can reasonably make any manner of doubt; as much

Digitized by Google

as we can reasonably desire or expect. And what that is we may learn from

the following particulars.

1. We have the most unexceptionable human testimony, which can be desired, that Jesus did rise from the dead: For we have it from them, who saw him, and conversed with him, to whom he shewed himself alive after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days. From them, who did eat and drink with him, after he rose from the dead. That there was such a person as Jesus, and that he died, the Jews themselves do not deny. And that Jesus did rise again, we have the greatest assurance from those who saw him: Ast. i. 3. x. 41.

FIRST, He appeared to Mary Magdalen, and to other women: And this appearance to Mary Magdalen was his first appearance. Mark xvi. 9. Joh.

xx. 14. Matth. xxviii. 9.

SECONDLY, He appeared to two of his dissiples going to Emmaus. And they were Peter, and Cleophas. That Cleophas was the same with Alpheus, (as may be collected from Joh. xix. 25. compared with Matth. xxvii. 56. and Mark xv. 40. and this appearance seems to be that, which the apostle mentions, when he saith, that he was seen of Cephas. Luk. xxiv. 13, 18, 34. I Cor. xv. 5.

THIRDLY, He appeared to the eleven, so indeed they are called; though it is certain, that there were but ten of them present at that time. For Thomas was absent: And yet St. Paul saith, he was seen of the twelve. And Thomas is called one of the twelve, when yet the whole number was at that time but eleven. Luk. xxiv. 33, 36. Joh. xx. 19. Mark. xvi. 14. Joh. xx. 24. I Cor. xv. 5.

THERE is no cause, that any man should upon this account scoff at the Scriptures, or call in question their divine authority. Had the writers of these books been evil and crafty men, or had they combined together to put a cheat upon the world, they might easily have avoided such occasions of offence. And it is to me no little argument of the truth of what they affirm, that they all agree in the main, and differ at the same time in some circumstances of delivering it down to us.

The difficulty before us is very small. They are called the twelve, because that was the sull number of the apostles of Christ before the desection and death of Judas; as well as after the election of Matthias: And nothing is more common, than to call a society of men by that number, of which they consist, and by which they are generally called; even when the intire number is not made up. But then they are by the evangelists called eleven, that being the full number when Judas was gone off. And Thomas may well be said to be one of the twelve, with respect to the full number which was at first.

The fews of all men have no reason upon this account to disparage the evangelists, because they do in this matter speak after the manner of those writings, which the fews allow to be divine. The sons of faceb tell foseph (when they supposed him to be dead) that they were twelve brethren, when they acknowledge that one was dead: The youngest this day is with our Father, and one is not. And though they were eleven (as they verily believed) yet they call themselves the twelve brethren, as they were at first. And when the twelve sons of faceb are reckoned up, it is said, These are the sons of faceb, which were born to him in Padan-Aram. And yet it is evident, that eleven only of the twelve were born there. This may seem too great a digression, and therefore I shall return, and shall under this head only add, that all these appearances

Digitized by Google

appearances of our Lord happened upon the same day, in which he role from

the dead Gen. xlii. 13. xxxv. 26. Joh. xx. 24.

FOURTHLY, He appeared to the disciples, when Thomas was with them, and this was (as it is very probable) the week after his resurrection, and upon the first day of the week. Those words in St. John, after eight days will very

well bear this sense. Joh. xx. 26.

FIFTHLY, He appears again to seven of his disciples at the sea of Tyberias. The occasion of their being there seems to be this. It is well known that our SAVIOUR had told his disciples, that after his resurrection he would go before them into Galilee. After CHRIST was risen, the angel bad the women go, and tell his disciples and Peter, that they should see him in Galilee, as he had said unto them: Accordingly the disciples go down thither to meet their LORD; while they were there, and waited for the appearance of Jesus, Peter and six more go a fishing, and then Jesus appeared to them, of which we have a more particular account, Joh. xxi. With respect to this appearance St. John says, This is now the third time, that Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead. And so, indeed, it was the third time of his appearing to the greater number of his disciples, though he had appeared before to Mary Magdalen at first, and to two of his disciples Peter and Cleophas at another time. So that though I reckon this the fifth appearance of CHRIST; yet it is still but the third time, in which he shewed himself to the greater number of his disciples. Joh. xxi. 1. Matth. xxviii. 16. Matth. xxvi. 32. Mark xvi. 7. Joh. xxi. 14.

SIXTHLY, Our SAVIOUR appeared again to the eleven disciples at a mountain in Galilee. This Galilee was the country in which he had lived, where he was well known, where he had done many miracles, and whence he had chosen several, if not most of his disciples. This was a more solemn appearing of our LORD: It was by appointment, and it was foretold before his death, and his followers are reminded of it after his resurrection; and it is very probable, that at this time, he appeared to five hundred at once, which will still speak this appearance the more conspicuous and remarkable. Matth.

xxviii. 16. 17. 1 Cor. xv. 6.

SEVENTHLY, He appeared to James, and to all the apostles: We have an account of his appearing to all the apostles upon his ascending up to heaven.

1 Cor. xv. 7. Act. i. 1.

HERE are a great number of very unexceptionable witnesses. They were those who knew him before, those who saw him and conversed with him: They saw him often, and a great number they were that did so: It is not only reported by a sew terrified women, or a melancholick follower or two; but by all his apostles, who had conversed with him for a considerable time, and many others, who knew him well, bear witness to this truth.

2. We have also the testimony of an angel, who said unto the women that sought the body of Jesus, He is not here, for he is risen: Nor is it one angel only but two, as appears from the other evangelists. These angels, who are not sent upon mean and inconsiderable employments, attend upon, and publish the resurrection of Jesus, and do also secure the empty sepulchre from the Jews, that they are not able to place another body in the room of that of Jesus, which was risen. Matth. xxviii. 6. Luk. xxiv. 2. with Joh. xx. 12.

3. We have a divine testimony, and that a most irrestragable one; a testimony greater than that of men and angels. Our Lord had promised the holy spirit, who should be with respect to his disciples a comforter, and with respect

spect to our LORD himself an advocate to plead his cause, and defend his innocence: Now this promise is fulfilled, and this Holy Ghost did bear witness to the resurrection of Jesus. After Jesus was risen, he breathed on his disciples and said, Receive ye the HOLY GHOST; and after his ascension at the day of Pentecost we find the Holy Ghost more plentifully bestowed on his disciples. And from thence the apostle argues against those, who derided them, as those who were full of new wine, that God had raised up JESUS, who being exalted had shed forth this, which they now saw and heard; and afterwards concludes, Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made the same I Esus, whom ye have crucified, both LORD and CHRIST. The effusion of the HOLY GHOST was a witness of the refurrection of Jesus: And this testimony of the Holy Ghost was a divine one; it was from heaven. St. Peter tells the Jews, that God had raised up | Esus, and exalted him at his right hand; And (says he) we are witnesses of these things, and so is also the Holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him. Joh. xiv. 16. xvi. 7, 8, 9, 10, 11. xx. 22. Act. ii. 4, 36. v. 32.

4. Jesus did after his resurrection take away all cause of doubt concerning the truth thereof. He gave sufficient proof, that the very same body, which was fastened to the cross, died there, and was buried, was raised again The disciples were at first affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit: But our Saviour puts them out of all doubt; Behold (says he) my hands and my feet, Handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not sless and bones, as ye see me have. He shews his hands and his seet: And whereas at his first appearing to his disciples, Thomas was absent, and did not believe, that he was risen from the dead, and said moreover, Except I shall see in his bands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe; our Lord convinced this doubting disciple, and gives him the utmost evidence and assurance of the truth of his refurrection. Reach hither thy finger (lays Jesus to Thomas) and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side; and be not faithless but believing; upon which Thomas was convinced and forced to cry out, My LORD and my GOD! Our LORD gave his followers infallible proofs of his resurrection in the space of forty days. He cat and drank with them, exposed his body to their view and touch, Behold (says he) my hands and my feet, that it is Imy self: And when after this they believed not for joy, and wondered, he took a broiled fish and a hony comb, and did eat before them. Greater assurance they were not capable of: Luk. xxiv. 37, 39, 40, 41, 42. Joh. xx. 25, 27, 28. Act. i. 3. x. 41. Luk. xxiv. 39, 40.

by those, who were the witnesses of it. So it was (and it was highly fit it should be so) that there should be a felect number of men, who were to be the witnesses of the resurrection of Jesus; these were men, whom God had appointed, and set apart for this purpose, and such, who upon the account of their knowledge of Jesus, and their readiness to part with all for the sake of the truth, were sitted and disposed for this purpose. Thus St. Peter tells us. Him God raised up the third day, and shewed him openly, Not to all the people, but to witnesses, chosen before of God, even unto us, who did eat and drink with him, after he arose from the dead. The apostles were now the witnesses of the resurrection of Jesus; this they preach and testisie upon all occasions, and this is their character and their office; Att. x. 41. i. 22. iii. 15. iv. 2, 33. v. 30, 32. x. 30, 31. xiii. 31. xvii. 18.

N 2

Now

Now these witnesses did abundantly confirm the truth of this doctrine, which they preached every where both by signs and wonders, which GoD wrought by their hands; and by an exemplary and holy life. And at last by laying down their lives in confirmation of their doctrine. Upon which account they were witnesses beyond all exception. For we cannot believe, that men would part with their lives in confirmation of a lie; or that GoD would assist them to do miracles, for so vile and base an end and purpose; and they must be very profligate wretches, who would affirm a matter of fact, of which they had not good affurance.

THE resurrection of Jesus was a truth of the greatest moment and consequence whatsoever; upon the truth of this our hope, and all our religion doth depend. It was fit, that this truth should be sufficiently attested by persons of undoubted credit. The death of CHRIST was publick, the whole multitude were witnesses of his crucifixion. But they were not vouchsafed the honour of being the witnesses of his resurrection; the truth of his resurrection was too valuable to be shewn in such a manner to an unconstant and malicious rabble: And therefore God, who raised up Jesus, and shewed him openly (or gave him to be made manifest, as the Greek hath it) did not shew him to all the people; but to certain select and chosen witnesses: Those men, who conversed with him before his death, and after his resurrection; who had known his life, and heard his sermons, and been taught by him before, that he must die and rise again; those men, who had power to confirm this truth with miracles, and were prepared to confirm it with their blood, and did persist in it to their last breath, were witnesses of the fact beyond all manner of exception.

I SAY, beyond all exception; for there can be no reasonable exception brought against them: And if we will give our selves the leisure to consider the thing before us with due application, we shall find no cause to except. For if there was any such cause, it must be because of the thing it self, or mat-

ter of fact which is attested, or the persons who do report it.

As for the thing it self, viz. that God raised up Jesus, there lies no shadow of reasonable exception against it. For that a man should be raised from the dead, implies no contradiction either moral or natural. He that believes, that God made the world, cannot think it impossible for him to raise a dead man to life again: m It is not incredible that he should raise a dead man to life, who made all things out of nothing. Nor doth it impeach any of the divine persections to affirm, that God raised Jesus to life. No man can reasonably upon this account think meanly of the divine being. Upon the whole, there is nothing in the thing reported repugnant to right reason, nothing unbecoming the divine purity and perfections, and nothing incredible to them that are wife and good.

As for the persons who report this, if there lie any exception against them,

it must be upon the score of their weakness, or wilfulness.

IT may perhaps be pretended, that they were weak men and imposed upon: That they took up this belief, that JESUS rose from the dead upon light and insufficient grounds; and though they did not contrive to deceive others; yet they themselves were easily deceived.

But this cannot be pretended with any reason at all: For they did not report, that Jesus was raised to life upon hear-say or common same; they did

Multo minus est, restituere quod suerit, quam sacere, quod non suit. Hieron. ad Pammachium. Qui potui sormare novum, reparabo peremptum. Prudent. in Resur.

not



not receive it as a tradition taken upon trust from others: But they were eye-wirnesses of it themselves. They were men that knew Jesus, before he died, that conversed with him forty days, after he rose from the dead, that had sometimes doubted of the truth of his resurrection themselves, and had received the utmost satisfaction, that it was that Jesus who died, that was risen from the dead; and when they were assured of it, they taught this doctrine boldly; and they taught no more, than what they knew to be true; what they had seen and handled that they taught. Nor did this depend upon the testimony of women or children, or any incompetent witnesses; or upon a bare and single testimony: But a number of men, the most competent witnesses imaginable, did upon all occasions affirm, that Jesus was risen from the dead. There were no less than twelve principal witnesses of his resurrection, besides the many others who saw Jesus, after he was risen. Ast. i. 21, 22.

NOR can we think, that these witnesses did wilfully go about to lie, and put a cheat upon other men: We cannot think them such vile persons, or

that they could have prevailed this way.

For besides that they taught other men to spake the truth, and that they are not accused otherwise as slagitious persons, to what purpose should they affirm, that Jesus was risen from the dead, if it were false? Could they get any thing by such a lie? Was it a step to any honour or preferment to say, that Jesus was raised to life again? Was this doctrine pleasing to the Jews? Would it procure them any favour from the gentile world? Nay, Is it not evident, that for affirming this the Jews who put Jesus to death, were enraged against them? For they arraigned the justice of their nation, and incensed their countrymen to the highest degree whatsoever. The gentiles scoffed at them and derided them, and their scoffs were the least evils, which they suffered upon this account; for they continued in this their testimony under torments, and even unto death.

CAN any man imagine, that this was a contrivance and plot of crafty men? Or that they combined to put a cheat upon mankind? To what end should they do this? It is not likely, that they could engage a considerable number in such a combination. It would be hard to find a great many men so weary of their lives, as to be content to throw them away in confirmation of a lie. Besides, the fraud would have been quickly discover'd: For these men did not forbear to tell, when and where this happened, which they were the witnesses of.

DID ever any men of credit prove these witnesses incompetent? Did they ever deprehend them in a lie, or speaking inconsistently? Did it appear at any time, that they were caught in a false story, or that any one of them were forced to recant and retract, what he had said?

How came this belief to spread so quickly in the world, if it had not been true? Could it have any thing else to recommend it to the belief of mankind? That it quickly gained an universal belief in the world is undeniable; But how could this be? God attested to this truth by enabling these witnesses to work miracles in confirmation of it. That so it was no man can doubt, that gives any credit to the testimony of others. Had it not been so, the spreading of this belief without a miracle, would have been the greatest miracle of all.

It is plain, that we have no reason to doubt of the resurrection of Jesus: There is no history, no matter of fact, which yet we believe firmly, that we have that cause to believe, as we have this, that Jesus was raised from the dead; and therefore if we do not believe, that Jesus rose from the dead, it

Digitized by Google

is not from want of evidence, and sufficient motives of credibility; but from

a faulty principle, and a culpable neglect of seeking after the truth.

6. That the evangelists, who report the matter of fact concerning the resurrection of Jesus, are worthy of all credit. For their names are annexed to their writings; they set down the time and place, where those things happened, which they write of; they name the persons concerned in these things; they write of things, which happened in their own time, and which they knew to be true. They all agree in the main story, and their different relating of some smaller circumstances doth but consirm their credit as to the main relation. What can we desire in any writings, which is wanting here? What have we to object against these writers? Can we suppose, that they did conspire to put a cheat upon mankind? But what reason have we for this suspicion? Surely none, but much to the contrary.

For they do not write like men, who had combined together to cheat the world. They own their names, they relate something with some seeming difference, they mention the time and place where those things happened, which they write; they name many persons, and of several nations and ranks that were concerned, they stick not to mention their own meanness and their own faults and infirmities, and the shame and death of their great

LORD and master.

Nor could these or the other witnesses of the resurrection be induced by any worldly temptation to tell a lie. Either they did believe the religion, which they professed, or they did not. If they did believe it, they durst not tell a lie, it being directly forbid in that religion, which they believed to be true. If they did not believe it themselves; what could persuade them to obtrude the belief of it upon other men? They were so far from gaining by this course, that they exposed themselves to the malice and rage of men, to the loss of all things, and to the severest death. Can we believe, that they should be so fond of what they knew to be a lie, that they would lose all which they had in confirmation of it? Men are not commonly so fond of truth, as to confirm it with their blood: Can we imagine that men should persist in a lie to the loss of all things? But n of this matter I have discoursed before, and shall not need to pursue it now.

7. That the refurrection of the Messias was foretold in the old Testament, as well as typisted; and therefore the evangelists are not to be rejected by the Jews for reporting this matter. The first preachers of the Christian saith did consirm this truth from the holy writings, which the Jews owned: They proved from them, that this was foretold, and they do it beyond all exception, because they argue from those principles, which

the Jews allowed.

To this purpose belong those words Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee. That that psalm did relate to the Messias, we are able to prove from the Jewish doctors, who do acknowledge it: And therefore when it was alledged to this purpose, they cannot say, that it was an allegation out of a place, which did not belong to the Messias. The apostle applies those words to this sense; He assures us, that God hath sulfilled his promise, in that he hath raised up Jesus again, as it is also written in the second psalm, Thou art my son, &c. It being confessed by the Jews themselves, that the psalm, out of which these words are cited, is to be understood

At the close of chap. VI.

Digitized by Google

of the MESSIAS. I need not go about to justifie and make good, that it belongs to the matter, for which it is alledged. Pfal. ii. 5. Acts. xiii. 33.

I SHALL only consider, how fitly these words are applied to the resurrection of the MESSIAS. For, Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee, seem rather to relate to the birth than to the resurrection of the MES-

SIAS. But for the clearing of this matter it is to be considered.

That it is no unusual thing to call the earth our mother, as well as our parent from whom we are born. The earth, out of which we are taken, and to which we return, is our mother, as well as our parent, from whom we spring; and our grave, to which we return, is our womb, as well as that of our mother's. When of Julius Casar dreamed, that he had offered violence to his mother, there were those who did interpret it, Arbitrium orbis terrarum portendi, i. e. that he should conquer the earth, qua omnium parens haberetur i. e. which is the common mother of us all: And when Tiberius died, the people out of hatred prayed Terram Matrem the common mother the earth, to give him no reception but among the wicked.

Philoq the Jew tells us, that the earth seems to be a mother, and that thence it was, that among the ancients it was called Δημήτης, by a word that at once signifies the earth and mother, and that according to Plato 'Ou yñ γυναῖκα, ἀκα γυνὰ γῆν μεμίμη), i. e. The earth doth not so much imitate a woman, as a woman the earth. He tells us farther, that nature hath given her

breasts, viz. the chanels of rivers and fountains.

AFTER this manner do the writers of the old Testament speak, with whom the grave, which receives the dead, is called the womb; and therefore a resurrection from thence may well be called walvy foresta or a new birth. Naked came I out of my mother's womb (says fob) and naked shall I return thither. What we render thither, the Chaldee paraphrast expresseth by Scripture speaks of the mother's womb, it speaks after such a manner, as refers to the earth, the walkstop or mother of us all. When the Psalmist speaks of his being formed in the womb, he expresses the womb by the lowest parts of the earth, which the Chaldee paraphrast on the place interprets of the womb of his mother. And the virgin's womb seems to be meant by the xatatee μέρη την γης, i. e. the lowermost part of the earth: And to my present purpose, into the innermost parts of the belly, in Solomon, is by the Targum rendered in profundum sepulchri, i. e. into the depth of the grave. And we find among the fewish writers, that the mother's womb is called a sepulchre. He that is born, and dies, and is buried, doth but pass from one tomb to another.

And he that rises out of the womb of the earth, or his grave, may be said to be born anew; and therefore it may well be said of our Saviour, when he rose from the dead, that he was then begotten: And when the apostle applies those words, This day have I begotten thee, to our Saviour's resurrection, he doth but speak the language of the Hebrew writers; and the Jews, who own that this Psalm belongs to the Messias, have no reason to complain, that those words of it should be applied to his resurrection. Job. i. 21. Psal. cxxxix. 15. Eph. iv. 9. Prov. xviii. 18.

AND this manner of speaking is very agreeable to the type of our SAVI-OUR'S resurrection: I mean the prophet Jonas, who was three days and three

nights

o Sueton, Jul. Cæfar. P Id. Tiberius.
r Vid. Paulum Fagium in Gen. xxxvii. 35. 

G Phil. Jud. de mundi. opificio.
Choloth. c. 7. m. 4.

mights in the whale's belly, to which the heart of the earth, in which Jesus was, and from which he rose, answers. Matth. xii. 40. Jonas is not only said to have been in the belly (or bowels as it is in the Hebrew) of the sish Jonah. i. 17. But when he prayed unto the Lord his God there, and God heard him, he is said to have heard him out of the belly of hell, or (as the marginal reading hath it, and the Hebrew word signifies) out of the belly of the grave. Jon. ii. 2. And when he acknowledges his deliverance, he doth it in these words, Tet hast thou brought up my life from corruption, O Lord

my God. Jon. ii. 6. compare Psal. xvi. 10. Act. ii. 31.

JESUS came from the virgin's womb and the womb of the earth. The first birth was natalis imperatoris, the second natalis imperii. The prince was born, when the virgin brought him forth at Bethlehem; but his resurrection was the birth day of his kingdom, and of his entrance upon his everlasting priesthood: Upon both accounts he is justly called the Son of God; as he was conceived by the Holy Ghost in the virgin's womb, and as he was raised by the Holy Ghost from the grave. And there t is a great cognation between the womb, and the grave: The womb of the virgin, which had received none but the holy Jesus, and the sepulchre, which Joseph had provided, wherein never man before was laid. The virgin and the sepulchre were both undefiled: And however a several Joseph was related to each; yet they had not made any use of either. Our LORD was miraculously born of the virgin, and as miraculously raised from the dead. Without the help of a man he was born at first, and was raised from the grave without human assistance, and in defiance of all the endeavours used to prevent it. He received life upon the first conception; and a new life, when he rose from the dead. They were both effected by the HOLY GHOST and published by angels, Heb. v. 5. Luk. i. 35. with Rom. i. 4. viii. 11.

But we have another prediction of the resurrection of the Messias, which cannot belong to the person of David at all; viz. Thou wilt not leave my soul in hell: Neither wilt thou suffer thine holy one to see corruption. This must belong to the person of the Messias, for David died and was buried, and his sless consumed; and it is therefore an unexceptionable proof of that truth, which it is brought to consirm. Psal. xvi. 10. Act. ii. 29.

We have another prophecy, that assures us, that the Messias after his resurrection shall die no more, viz. The promise of the sure mercies of God, which we find the apostle applying to this matter, and inferring from it, that Christ who rose from the dead, was no more to return to corruption. Is. lv. 3. Act. xiii. 34.

IF what hath been said be duly considered, we shall find, that God hath

given us sufficient assurance, that Jesus did rise from the dead.

FOR what greater assurance can we desire of this matter of fact, unless we think our SAVIOUR should have died in every age, and country, and risen again to satisfie our unreasonable insidelity?

WHAT is there, that the Jews can object against this doctrine thus confirmed? Will they undertake to prove a negative against so many positive proofs and witnesses? What possible ways are there left them of doing this?

They

Augustin. de Tempore. Serm. 133. Virgo erat adhuc terra, nondum opere compressa, nondum sementi subasta. Tertull. de carne Christi.

They cannot deny the possibility of the thing, who believe a resurrection to come, or that God made the world: Or will they say, as once they did, who watched his sepulchre, and were hired to say it, that his disciples came by

night, and stole him away while they slept.

Is it probable, that this should gain any belief among men? What temptation could they have to do this? Or is it likely, that they, who for sear for sook him when he was living, should adventure upon the guard to retrieve his dead body, which was honourably interred? If these soldiers knew this to be true, why did they not hinder it? If they knew it not, how could they testify it? What could hinder them, who had power, that they did not prevent it? Or what reason have we to believe those, as competent witnesses, who confess, that they were a-sleep, when it was done?

Thus having shewed, that we have sufficient evidence, that Jesus did

rise from the dead, I shall now proceed to shew,

II. THAT this is an unexceptionable proof, that he is the CHRIST, and

consequently of the truth of the Christian Religion.

I NEED not enlarge upon this head. For it is very evident and plain, and the Jews themselves cannot deny it. And for that reason, they who deny not that he lived and died, do what they can to stifle the belief of the resurrection. This they do, because they are sensible, that his resurrection from the dead is a proof beyond exception, that he is the MESSIAS. They endeavoured, what they could, to hinder his resurrection, and when they could

not do that, they laboured to hinder the belief of it.

AND that which makes the resurrection of Jesus so unexceptionable a proof, that he is the CHRIST is this, that JESUS did in his life time, not only profess himself to be the Christ the Son of God; but also foretold the manner of his own death, and that he should not only rise again, but rise again the third day, and doth refer the unbelieving Jews to his resurrection, as to the great sign and proof of his being sent from God. When the scribes and pharisees asked Jesus for a sign, He answered and said unto them; An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign, and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet fonas. For as fonas was three days and three nights in the whales belly; so shall the son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. Our LORD had done many miraculous works among the Jews, and still they require a sign, or a more plain and clear proof, that he came from God. Our SAVIOUR refers them to his resurrection, as that which would be most unexceptionable, and sufficient to remove any, but a perverse and incurable unbelief. And this he calls the sign of the prophet Jonas: That prophet was sent to call the Ninevites to repentance, and was successful in his undertaking; and his miraculous escape from the belly of the whale was a competent proof, that he was fent by God, and very fit to gain him credit with the Ninevites; And very probable it is, that the fame of what had befallen the prophet, had came to the men of Nineveh, and that it made way for the reception of the doctrine, which he preached. The resurrection of Jesus was a greater lign, and that which made way for the entertainment of his doctrine in the world; For it did confirm the truth of all which he said beyond exception, and was given them as a fign for this purpose. Matth. xvi. 21. Joh. ii. 19. jii. 14. xii. 32, 33. *Matth*. xii. 39, 40.

THERE

0

THERE have been those, who have been raised from the dead besides Jesus: And many besides him have professed themselves to be the Christ also. But none in the world but Jesus professed himself to be Christ, and consirmed it by his resurrection. Maimonides u tells us of one, who deceived the poor Jews under a pretence, that he was at least the fore-runner of the Messias; who having boasted vainly, that he would rise again after his death, in token that he came from God, was indeed beheaded by a certain Arabian king, but returned not to life again. He was not able to give the proof, that Jesus did, who rose from the dead. And though there have been others, who have been raised from the dead; yet none of them ever professed to be the Christ, the Son of the living God, as our

Tesus did.

THIS being a truth, upon which the evidence of the whole Christian Religion depends, no wonder, that the belief of this article should be accounted for a faith in the whole religion. That is the word of faith (says St. Paul) which we preach, That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the LORD Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart, that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For he that believes, that Jesus rose from the dead, doth believe the other articles of religion, which are all confirmed by this. He that believes, that JESUS is risen, doth at the same time believe him to be the CHRIST, and consequently that his precepts are divine, that his promises are certain, and his power and authority uncontroulable. This is indeed the faith peculiar to Christians: The Jews and the Heathens believed some other points relating to religion; That Jesus rose, that he is the CHRIST, the Son of God, this is the great article of the Christian faith: Hence it is, that so much is imputed to this faith, and to the confession of this truth in the new Testament. Whosoever shall confess that IESUS is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God. And afterwards, Whosoever believeth that I ESUS is the CHRIST, is born of GOD. Whoever believed this, believed all the Christian Religion: And he that (when those words were written) did believe and profess this truth, when 'twas greatly dangerous so to do; as he gave proof of a sincere faith, so he might be truly said to dwell in God, and to be born of God. Rom. x. 9. 1 Joh. iv. 15. 1 Joh. v. 1.

HAD not CHRIST been a man, he could not have died; and had he not been CHRIST the Son of God, he could not have risen from the dead. Had Jesus been a deceiver, he must have lain in the grave till the general resurrection: Nothing less than a divine power could raise him to life again: It was the godhead, which raised the human nature; and when CHRIST raised himself, as he foretold he would, he then gave an unquestionable

proof of his divinity. Joh. ii. 19, 21.

It is an easie thing to destroy life; but to restore it again speaks an almighty power: It is nothing short of omnipotence, which can bring so

great a thing to pass.

The key of the grave is one of those, which God keeps in his own hand. The apostle in very emphatical words expressed the power, by which Jesus was raised from the dead; for speaking of the exceeding greatness of God's power to us-ward, who believe, he adds, according to the working of this mighty power, which he wrought in Christ, when he raised

15.

" Maimon. Epist. ad Judzos Marsilienses.

him

bim from the dead. The words are very great (as a learned man hath well observed) on the one hand there is ὑπερεάλλον μέγεθ. Α δυνάμεως, and on the other there is ἐνέργεια τα κεάτες Α ἰχύ. Here's δύναμις and ἰχύς, two words to express power, and that the power of God; and as if these were too little, μέγεθ. is added to the one, and κεάτ. to the other; and still, as if these were too short, there is, τὸ ὑπερεάλλον μέγεθ. and the ἐνέργεια τεράτες, and to this is added το ἐνέργεια, all this mighty power is actuated and exerted also. And who can now believe, that God would have shewn such a power in raising up Jesus from the dead, if he had not been the Christ?

III Bur I proceed to consider the time, when Jesus rose from the dead, viz. the third day.

The death and refurrection of Jesus were necessary toward our redemption, and the belief of both these is necessary to our salvation: It is therefore sit, that we should be well assured of the truth of them both, and to that purpose, that there should be some distance between the one and the other. For as he could not have revived, if he had not first died; so it was sit, that we should be well assured of the first, before we could be obliged to believe the second. If Christhad revived, as soon as he had been taken down from the cross, it might have been questioned, whether or no he was really dead: But for the better speaking to this matter.

FIRST, Ishall inquire into the reasons, why there was this distance of time between the death and resurrection of JESUS.

SECONDLY, That J ESUS did rise the third day after his death.

THIRDLY, I shall consider the third day, as it was the first day of the week.

- I. I SHALL inquire into the reasons of this distance of time between the death and resurrection of Jesus. And we may take them in the following particulars.
- 1. It was very fit, that there should be some competent distance between the death, and resurrection of Jesus; that men might be assured that he died, without which they could not be obliged to believe him risen from the dead.
- 2. It was not fit, that the body of Jesus should lie so long as to be corrupted. It was enough that he was so long a time dead, as might give assurance, that when he did appear, he was really risen from the dead. Had he lain any longer in the grave, he had continued so long there, as would have brought corruption and putresaction upon his body. Martha tells Jesus concerning Lazarus, By this time he stinketh; and for a proof of it she adds, For he hath been dead four days: This long stay in the grave would have made too great a change in the body of Jesus. Besides, there was a prophecy of the Messias to this purpose, that, though he should die and be buried; yet his body should not lie so long in the grave as to putrise. Thus St. Peter applies that prediction, Thou shalt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt thou suffer thine holy one to see corruption, to the resurrection of Christ. Joh. xi. 39. Alt. ii. 27, 31.
- 3. That this precise time of the resurrection of Jesus is according to the Scriptures, or writings of the old Testament. 1 Cor. xv. 4.

AMONG

0 2.

Among those persons, who in the old Testament were types of the Mes-SIAS, Isaac was an eminent one: He was born against the laws of nature, the fon of the promise, called the only son, and the beloved son, and the heir: He was given up by his father to death, and he bore the wood which was to bear him, and in these things he was a remarkable type of CHRIST. And the Bereshith Rabboth x expresseth his carrying the wood by his carrying his cross upon his shoulder. The same author upon these words, on the third day, &c. reckons up a great many places of Scripture, which mention the third day, and many particulars for which the third day was remarkable, viz. the giving of the law, &c. and then tells us it was remarkable for the resurrection of the dead, and cites to that purpose the very words of the prophet, which we Christians alledge to the matter in hand. After two days he will revive us, in the third day will he raise us up, and we shall live in his sight. The same author in the same place mentions the third day as remarkable upon the score of Jonas, who was three days and three nights in the belly of the whale; than which nothing could have been said more appositely to our present purpose, that being an express type of the Messias, as hath been noted before. And tis enough in this matter, that we can shew the express prophecy of Hosea, and the eminent type of the prophet Jonas. Gen. xxii. 4. Hosea vi. 2. Matth. xii. 38, 39.

II. I SHALL now shew, that JESUS did rise the third day after his death: Where I shall clear this relation from the cavils of the Jews.

I T is certain, that there could be but one whole day and two nights between the death of Jesus and his refurrection; and yet Jesus had foretold, that the son of man should be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth: Again he said, After three days I will rise again, and, Destroy this temple, and after three days I will raise it up. And elsewhere Jesus is said to have risen again the third day. Matth. xii. 40. xxvii. 63. Joh. ii. 19. I Cor. xv. 4.

The day on which he died is to be reckoned for one Noxθήμεων or natural day, and that on which he rose for another. And thus the Hebrew writers commonly reckon in other cases. The Hebrew child was to be circumcised the eighth day, but then the day of it's birth and of it's circumcision were both counted. And the pentecost was the fifthtieth day from the day of the wave-offering, but then both the one and the other are reckoned in this account: This is but the phrase of the old Testament. We have a remarkable instance to this purpose. It came to pass in the fourth year of king Hezekiah (which was the seventh year of Hosbea son of Ela, king of Israel) that Shalmane ser king of Assyria came up against Samaria, and besieged it. And at the end of three years they took it, even in the sixth year of Hezekiah (that is the ninth year of Hosheaking of Israel) Samaria was taken. It is evident from hence, that that is said to be done at the end of three years, which from it's beginning could be but two whole years distant. Again, the priests in their courses were to minister one week as is well known. And yet Josephus tell us, that y they were obliged to minister δτὶ ἡμέρας οπτω ἀπὸ σαββάτε, δτὰ σάββατον, i. e. eight days from one sabbath to another. This will justifie us, when we say, that the appearance of CHRIST, mentioned Joh. xx. 26. happened on the first day of the week, or on that day sevennight after his first appearance, on the day of his resur-

Bereshith Rabb. in Gen. xxii.

? Antiqu. l. 7. c. 11.

rection ;

rection; though it be thus expressed, after eight days, &c. And this will help us with ease to reconcile St. Luke with St. Matthew, and St. Mark, when he says that happened about eight days after, which the other express by after six days. For supposing six days complete, St. Luke might well say about eight days after. Luk. i. 59. ii. 21. I King. xviii. 9, 10. Joh. xx. 26. Matth. xvii. 1. Mark. ix. 2. with Luk. ix. 27.

III I SHALL consider this third day on which Jesus rose, as the first day of the week; which z was a day very famous among the Jewish writers upon twelve accounts, which I do not think my self obliged to reckon up

in this place.

It is plain, that Jesus rose upon the first day of the week. The day of his death is called the preparation, because then the Jews provided what was needful against the approaching sabbath: When the even was come (because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath) says St. Mark. St. Luke says, that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on. It was a preparation to a remarkable sabbath, which fell within the solemn festivity of the passover. The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath day (for that sabbath was an high day) befought Pilate, &c. Matth. xxvii. 62. Joh. xix. 42. with Exod. xvi. 5. Mark xv. 42. Luk. xxiii. 54. Joh. xix. 31, 42.

THAT CHRIST rose on the first day of the week, is a particular, which all the four evangelists do relate, and therefore the more carefully to be heeded by us. *Matth.* xxviii. 1. *Mark.* xvi. 2. *Luk.* xxiv. 1. *Joh.* 

THE Israelites were obliged, when they reaped their harvest, to bring a sheaf of their first fruits unto the priest: This sheaf was to be waved on the morrow after the sabbath: This sheaf hallowed all the rest, and God's acceptance of this gave the fews a title to the rest. As that was waved the morrow after the sabbath; so was our Lord at that time raised to life, as the first fruits of them that slept. His resurrection infers ours, and is the great reason, why we instead of the sabbath day, which was buried with our Lord, keep holy the sirst day of the week in memory of his resurrection: Levit. xxiii. 10, 11, 12.

\* Abravenel in Legem, fol. 282. col. 2. ad finem.



CHAP.

## 

## CHAP. IX.

Of the ascension of Jesus into heaven. That the Messias was to ascend thither. This proved from Psalm Ixviii. 18. which is justly applied to this matter by St. Paul, Eph. iv. 8. cx. 1. considered. The Jews grant that psalm to belong to the MESSIAS. An eminent type of CHRIST's ascension. That JESUS did ascend into beaven. There were eye-witnesses of it. Of the distance of forty days between his resurrection and ascension. That CHRIST is not a metaphorical priest, shewed against the followers of Socinus. That this ascension into beaven was typified by the bigh priest's entering into the boly of bolies. That the author of the epistle to the Hebrews doth (chap. ix. 24. and elsewhere) infer this from the avowed principles of the Jewish writers. the high priest was an eminent type of the divine hose is acknowledged by Philo. Three remarkable places of that author to this purpose. That the sanctuary was a representation of the universe, and the holy of holies of the highest heavens proved at large from the modern Jewish writers, and from the more ancient. Of the veil of the temple, which rent when our SAVIOUR suffered: Matth. xxvii. 5 1. What veil that was, and what was imported by the renting of it. Of the effects which followed upon the exaltation of JESUS. Of the miraculous gift of the HOLY GHOST on the day of Pentecost. That that gift was an argument, that Jesus was a true prophet, and that he had that power, which he had professed to be given to him. Of the success of the religion of Jesus in the world. Success barely considered is no good argument of a good cause, and truth of a religion; yet the success of the Christian doctrine is a good argument of it's truth; if it be considered what the author and first preachers of this doctrine were, and what is the nature of the doctrine it self, and after what manner it did prevail.

AVING proved, that Jesus rose from the dead, and shewed that his resurrection is a great proof, that he is also the Christ; I shall now proceed to the consideration of the ascension of Jesus into heaven, and his being concerned there on our behalf, and the mighty effects following from thence, as a farther proof that Jesus is the Christ.

And in order hereunto I shall proceed in the following method.

FIRST

FIRST, I shall shew, That the MESSIAS was to ascend into heaven, and to be concerned there in behalf of his people.

SECONDLY, That our Jesus did ascend into heaven, and is there con-

cerned on the behalf of his people.

THIRDLY, That the divine author of the epistle to the *Hebrews* doth (chap. ix. 24. and elsewhere) infer this truth from the avowed principles of the Jewish writers.

FOURTHLY, I shall make it appear from the effects following upon the exaltation of Jesus in heaven, that he did ascend thither, and was there concerned on our behalf, and that therefore our Jesus is the Christ.

L I SHALL shew, that the MESSIAS was to ascend into heaven, and to

be concerned there in behalf of his people.

This was foretold in the old Testament: Thou hast ascended on high: thou hast led captivity captive: thou hast received gifts for men: Psal. lxviii. 18. These words are not only applied by 2 St. Paul to this purpose, but with great reason they are so applied. The b occasion of that Pfalm was the removal of the ark, which of a long time had been separated from the tabernacle of the congregation, which Moses had made for it. And as this ark was an eminent type of the MESSIAS; so the place, assigned both by Moses and afterward by Solomon for the reception thereof, was a type of heaven, as shall be shewed afterwards. And therefore it shall not need to seem strange to any man, that those words, which were at first used with reference to the ark, should be applied to the ascension of the Messias. And this may be the more reasonably presumed to be implied in those words of the Psalmist, if we compare them with the words of c another Psalm relating to this matter; where we find the ark, the symbol of God's special prefence, called the king of glory, and it's reception into the place prepared for it, represented in such words, as do serve to express the reception of a glorious king into his palace and throne. d Lift up your heads, Oyegates, even lift them up, ye everlasting doors, and the king of glory shall come in. Who is this king of glory? The LORD of hosts, he is the king of glory.

BESIDES what hath been said to justifie the apostle's application of those words to the ascension of the MESSIAS into heaven, I may add farther, that the words themselves cannot so properly be applied to any person as to the MESSIAS, when he did ascend up into heaven: For what we render con bigh, is observed in the Pfalmist's phrase to signifie heaven, and to be applied unto God. And the following words, Thou hast led captivity captive, &c. do very sitly agree with the conquest, which Christ obtained over death, and over the devil, whom he triumphantly led captive, when he went up into heaven; and he did (as those who triumphed were wont to do) upon this ascension of his into heaven bestow great gifts upon mankind; the bestowing of which was an argument, that when he was exalted into heaven himself, he did not forget his sollowers, but did by the gifts, which he bestowed, make it appear, that he was concerned there in behalf of his neonly

pcopie.

ANOTHER prophecy to this purpose we find in Micah. I The breaker is come up before them: They have broken up, and have passed through the

gate,

Eph. iv. 8. b Pfal. lxviii. 1. 1 Chron. xiii. 5. c Pfal. xxiv. d Vid. The Dean of Peterburgh's argument to Pfal. xxiv. c Pfal. vii. 8. xciii. 4. lxxi. 19. f Mic. ii. 13.

gate, and are gone out by it, and their king shall pass before them, and the LORD on the head of them. I will by no means enter into a particular explication of this place, nor shall I need to prove, that it belongs to this matter, for which it is produced, because the Jews themselves grant, that these words are to be understood of the Messias, and the latter Jews

confess, that this was the opinion of their ancient writers.

I SHALL name but one more, but that is a very eminent and conspicuous one. h The Lord said unto my Lord, sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool. Now these words do so belong to the Messias, that they cannot be applied to any other person. And whereas several predictions, which concern the Messias, had also a reference first to some other eminent person, who was a type of him: The words of this Psalm throughout do immediately belong to him, and cannot in any tolerable sense be applied to Abraham, or David, Ezekiah, or Zorobabel, or any other person whatsoever. And though the i Jews have exercised their wits in perverting the sense of this Psalm, and applying it to some other person; yet as they have been very unhappy in it, so several of them have been forced to consess, that these words are to be understood of the Messias.

AND without all doubt the ancient Jews did with one consent interpret this Psalm of the Messias, who is said not only to sit at God's right hand, but also to be a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedeck; which words cannot be with truth affirmed of any other person whatsover. And Jesus did apply these words to the Messias, and so far stopped the mouths of the *Pharifees*, that they were not able to reply. k What think ye (says Jesus to them) of Christ? Whose son is he? They say unto them, The son of David. He saith unto them, How then doth David in Spirit call him LORD, Saying, The LORD said unto my LORD, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine ememies thy footstool? If David then call him LORD, how is he his fon? This put them to silence, which it would not have done, if these words had not been confessed to belong to the MESSIAS: Had it not been the sense of the whole nation, that the Psalm belongs to him, they could soon have answered our Saviour in this place: And as this place was made use of by Jesus; so it was by his followers also to the same purpose, and to the same persons (viz. the fews) also. St. Peter 1 tells them, that David is not ascended into the heavens; but he faith himself, The LORD said unto my LORD, Sit thou on my right hand, &c. To the same purpose are these words justly applied by St. Paul, m in his epistle to the Corinthans; and the author of the epistle to the Hebrews mentions this, as a peculiar belonging to the MESSIAS, and not to the angels those excellent ministers of God. To which of the angels said he at any time, Sit thou on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool? Heb. i. 13. v. 6. x. 12, 13.

Now this sitting on the right hand of God doth denote the exaltation of the Messias, and not only that, but his great power and authority, and his being concerned, as kings and priests are for their people, whom they govern, or for whom they intercede. I King. ii. 19. Matth. xxvi. 64. Heb. i. 3. viii. 1. Rom. viii. 34.

E See Raimund. Pug. fidei. par. 3. dift. 3 c. 18. and Dr. Pocock on Micah ii. 13. h Pfal. ex. 1. P. Galatin. de arcan. cathol. veritatis. 1. 8. c. 24. k Matth. xxii, 42, 43, 44, 45. h Ast. ii, 34. m 1 Cor. xv. 25.

As for the typical representations of this great truth, I doubt not but I might find many. However I shall take notice but of one; but that is a most eminent and illustrious one, and that which the divine author of the epistle to the Hebrews takes a more particular notice of, viz. The going nof the high priest into the holy of holies on the day of expiation, to make an atonement with blood, which was shed without, for the sins of the people. This was an exact type of our Saviour's entering into heaven, and his being concerned there on our behalf. OCHRIST being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building: Neither by the blood of bulls and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us. But of this I shall have occasion to speak at large afterward.

II. I SHALL shew, that our JESUS did ascend into heaven, and that he is there concerned in behalf of his people.

IN speaking to which I shall not enlarge at present, because afterward I shall have occasion farther to confirm this truth from arguments, in their

own nature, the most powerful and unexceptionable.

By heaven is meant the highest heaven: And it is very reasonable to suppose so, because the holy of holies, into which the high priest only entered, was the type and shadow of the heaven, into which the Messias was to enter. And as the most holy place in the sanctuary was (of all others whatsoever, whether in the sanctuary or essewhere) the most separate and holy place; so it is but reasonable to suppose, that when Christascended into heaven, he did not take up in any of the lower parts of heaven, but was exalted to the highest of them all. The sanctuary was divided into three parts: The courts, the holy place, and the most holy; each of these are frequently called the sanctuary or the temple, though the third of these was the most holy place.

AND so the air, and the place of planets and stars are called heaven; and yet there is a third or higher heaven, into which St. Paul was caught

up, and into which our LORD entered.

OUR SAVIOUR is said to be received up into glory, i. c. into the highest heavens, the anti-type of that holy place, where God did more especially manisest himself, and where the ark stood, the symbol of his presence, and which was called the glory. Jesus is essewhere said to have passed through the heavens, and to be made higher than the heavens, and to have ascended up far above all heavens, and to be entered into that within the veil. And as he humbled himself greatly; so God highly exalted him, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named: I Tim. iii. 16. I Sam. iv. 22. with Rom. ix. 4. Heb. iv. 14. ix. 5. vii. 26. Eph. iv. 10. Heb. vi. 19. Phil. ii. 9. Eph. i. 20, 21.

THAT P JESUS did ascend into heaven is plainly taught, and there were eye-witnesses of it: His disciples stood by, when he went up into heaven: They did not do so when he rose from the dead. Not that his resurrection did not need attestation, as much as his ascension into heaven. His followers had need be assured of the truth of that, and indeed they had the utmost

" Lev. xvi. 2. • Heb. ix. 11, 12. P Luk. xxiv. 51. Act. i. 9, 10.

assurance,

assurance, and did upon all occasions bear witness to it, and were particularly the witnesses of his resurrection. But in order to their being so, it was not needful, that they should be the eye-witnesses thereof; as they were, and indeed ought to be (before they could be competent witnesses of it) of his ascension into heaven. It was enough to make them competent witnesses of his resurrection, that they saw him that was risen, they needed not to see him rise. For it being certain (and granted so to be, even by the Jews themselves) that he died; it was not needful, that they should see him rise from the dead; it was enough if they saw him, who died, alive again. But then he ascended in the view of his disciples, and 'twas in this case needful, that there should be eye-witnesses; and so it was, that nothing might be wanting to the strengthning of our faith.

AND as we are by eye-witnesses assured of the ascension of JESUS into heaven; so those witnesses were unexceptionable. For besides that they knew his person, and had of a long time conversed with him; so they had done it a competent time after his resurrection from the dead: a To them he shewed bimself alive after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, &c. This was a sufficient time to give them abundant proof, that it was the same body, which was nailed on the cross, and was buried,

that was risen from the dead.

AND this distance of r forty days, which was between his resurrection and ascension to heaven, is the very same space of time, which did intervene between his birth of the virgin, and his being presented (according to the law of Moses) in the temple. Our Saviour was twice born, and twice presented: He was born of the virgin, and raised our of the grave: And he was twice presented, first at the temple at ferusalem, and afterwards at the temple above, or heaven. And forty days after each birth he was presented: After the first in the temple below, after the second in heaven, or the temple above, the anti-type of that which was made with hands.

Just so many days did he continue upon earth after his resurrection, as Jonas, who was a type of him, allowed the Ninevites to repent in. So exactly did he answer the type. The Jews had the sign of the prophet Jonas forty days, though they repented not as the Ninevites did. Again, they were allowed a year for a day likewise from Christ's resurrection to the destruction of Jerusalem. Such was the lenity of God; so great his forbearance. Their forefathers wandered forty years in the wilderness for their rebellion; God allowed the Jews the same time for repentance. But this will be thought too great a digression.

And as Jesus is entered within the veil; so he is for us entered also, as our high priest and patron with God. And as his ascension was not figurative, and metaphorical but real; so is his priesthood. He is now concerned for us there; He ever lives to make intercession for those, who come unto God by him. Again, Who is he that condemnath? It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us, Again, If any man sin we have an advocate with the father, Jesus Christ the righteous. Again, He appears in the presence of God for us. Heb. vii. 25. Rom. viii. 35. 1 Joh. ii. 1,

9 Ast. i. 3. e Ast. xiii. 31. Luk. ii. 21, 22. with Levit. xii. 2, 4.

Hcb.

Heb. ix. 24. After this manner is that care and concern expressed, which

Jesus hath for his followers.

SHALL he after all this be called a metaphorical priest only? Shall he, that i is the minister of the true tabernacle, be himself but improperly a priest? Shall Aaron the type be truly a priest? And shall the anti-type be one improperly so called? Can any thing be said by the followers of Socinus upon weaker grounds than this? There needed to have been no change of the law, if the t change of the priesthood had only been into that which is figurative. CHRIST might have been a metaphorical priest upon earth, and very confishently with the order of Aaron. What need had this high priest (as well as those of the order of Aaron) to have something to offer, if he had been u only Tanquam Pontifex, as it were an high priest? Such an one never can want an offering? Spiritual sacrifices are always at hand to every good man. Shall the high priest of this order of Melchisedeck not deserve this name, which was justly due to the sons of Aaron? Or shall the anti-type be less real, than the type is?

IT is evident, that Jesus is a priest of the highest order, and nothing is wanting to speak him so in the most perfect sense. For he wants not power with God, nor compassion for his people; and he not only lives for ever, but he is also a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedeck: And the high priest in the holy of holies on the day of expiation, was but a type of our high priest, and his concern in heaven for us. And this leads me in

the next place:

III. To shew, that the divine author of the epistle to the Hebrews doth (chap. ix. 24. and elsewhere) infer this truth from the avowed principles

of the Jewish writers.

FOR we find, that he spends much time in discoursing of the priesthood of CHRIST, and of his concern for his people now he is in heaven, and infers this from what the high priest among the Jews did in the holy of holies; and it will appear, that this discourse of his is so far from being inconsequent and impertinent, that it is founded upon principles allowed by those Jews, to whom he directs that epiftle, and especially upon these

FIRST, That the high priest under the law of Moses was a type of the MESSIAS.

SECONDLY, That the holy of holies was a type of the highest heavens, into which CHRIST entered, \* he being said to have entered into that within the veil.

FIRST, That the high priest under the law of Moses was a type of the MESSIAS. And that he was so, and most eminently so, no Christian can deny; and it would be no hard task to prove it at large, and to shew a great many correspondences between the type and the anti-type: But to do that is no part of my present business: All that I am to do at present is, to shew that the Jews have no reason to quarrel with the way of arguing, which the divine author of the epistle to the Hebrews makes use of; because the high priest was among them esteemed a type of the MESSIAS. To this purpose I shall not trouble my self in searching after the opinions of the latter Jews touching this matter: I shall content my self with the

f Heb. viii. 2. t Heb. vii. 11, 12. viii. 4. viii. 3. " Crellii Praphras. in Heb. ix. 14. \* Heb. vi. 19. testimony

testimony of one of their ancient writers, who for his antiquity, for his fingular wir and learning, and for his being unsuspected of any bad design and interest in the question, which we are now speaking of, is more valuable than some scores of their later authors; and that is Philo the Jew: And I find in that author three considerable testimonies to my present purpose. This y author discoursing of the cities of refuge under the law of Moses, inquires the reason why the man-slayer was not to be released till the death of the high priest; and thereupon he doth expressly affirm, That the high priest was not a man, but the divine word free from all sin both voluntary and involuntary. The meaning of which can be no more, nor less, than this, that he was in this the type of the divine  $\lambda \delta_2$  by whom alone we obtain our redemption, which he hath wrought for us by his death: The same author z elsewhere speaking of those words, Lev. iv. 3. If the priest, that is anointed, do sin according to the sin of the people, tells us, that the latter part of those words do insinuate "Οτι ὁ ωρος ἀλήθειαν ἀρχιερευς, τὸ μα ψοδωνυμος, αμέτοχ @ αμαρτημάτων ες, i. c. That he who is truly the high priest, and not falsely so called, is free from sins. And he adds, that if he do chance to slip; that it happens to him upon the peoples account, and not upon his own. And in another 2 place, speaking of the vestments of the high priest, he adds, That it was necessary, that he who was a priest to the father of the world (and bore the horse on his breast, of which he speaks just before) should make use of his most perfect son, as an advocate to procure pardon of sins, and a plentiful supply of good things.

SECONDLY, That the holy of holies was a type of the highest heavens, into which Christ entered; he being said to have entered into that with-

in the veil.

I SHALL consider, what the author of the epistle to the Hebrews says of this matter, and afterwards shew, how agreeably he discourses of it to

the Hebrews, and their sense thereof.

b CHRIST is not entered (saith he) into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven it self, now to appear in the presence of God for us. By the holy places made with hands (rendered by the vulgar in that place Manufacta sancta) is meant the holy of holies, or the holiest of all, as it is ver. 3. And if we compare ver. 8. and ver. 12. with what we read, Levis. xvi. 2, 16, 20. We shall find the holy of holies is sometimes expressed by one word, viz. the holy, or holies, which we render here by the holy places, and might perhaps as well have This holy place is said to be made with been rendered by holses only. hands; and indeed the whole sanctuary was made by the hands of men, and the name of the workmen are upon record, and it is called by Philo Tree χειεοποίητον, the fanctuary made with hands. And is by the author of the epistle to the Hebrews called a d worldly sanctuary, and that in respect to the true tabernacle, which the LORD pitched and not man. These holy places are also said to be the figures of the true, that is, of heaven it self, as it follows in the next words.

AND we shall find in this epistle to the *Hebrews* many things to this purpose, by which we may learn, that the legal services and sanctuary were shadows of good things to come, and particularly, that the most holy place

Digitized by Google

<sup>7</sup> Phil. Jud. de profugis. Phil. Jud. de victimis. Phil. Jud. de vita Moss. L. 3.

6 Heb. ix. 24. Phil. Jud. de vita Moss. L. 3.

in the sanctuary was a type of the highest heavens. e But unto the second (i. e. the most holy place, which was within the veil, and beyond the first sanctuary, through which the high priest entered in his passage to it) went the high priest alone once every year, The Holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing; Which was a sigure for the time present. Again, I The law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices, which they offer year by year continually, make the comers thereunto perfect. Again, he calls those things the patterns of things in the heavens. Conformably hereunto he tells us, that Jesus is entered within the veil; that is, into heaven, represented by the most holy place; The type or sign being frequently put for the anti-type. He essewhere speaks h of a liberty gained for us to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, i. e. to enter into heaven.

It is to be considered, that this epistle was written to the *Hebrews*, and doth very much refer to the customs and usages of that people, and is not throughly to be understood without some knowledge of those matters. When the author of it affirms, that the sanctuary was a symbolical representation of something else, and that the holy of holies was a figure of heaven, into which Christ our high priest is entered, he speaks the sense of the *Hebrew* nation: And that so it is, I shall prove, not only from the

later Jewish writers, but from the most ancient of them all.

i ABRAVENEL tells us out of the Bereshith Rabba, that the shittim wood in the tabernacle answered to the Seraphim above; and that as there are stars above, so there were stars in the tabernacle: And the same author adds, that he that searcheth will find, that all that was made in the tabernacle, was after the similitude of natural things. The tabernacle (says he) whose length was thirty cubits, was divided into three parts: The two sirst exterior parts were allowed for the priests to enter into; and these do significe the sea and the dry land, which k men have the liberty to converse upon. But (says he) the third part or holy of holies signifies the heavens, which the foot of man doth not enter into, for the heavens are the Lor o's.

ANOTHER of their late authors tells us, I that the tabernacle was a fpecimen or representation of the creation of the universe; And that the three parts of the sanctuary answer to the three worlds. The world of angels represented by the holy of holies; the heavenly orbs, by that part where the shew-bread and candlestick were; and the lower world, by the court: And that open court seems a very sit representation of this lower world, as containing in it earth and air without a covering, and fire and water also in the laver or sea, and upon the altar which stood in the court, which are the elements of this lower world.

The same author tells us, that m in the building of the sanctuary there were correspondences to the building of the world. And he cites a Midrash to this purpose, wherein they are said to answer each other, viz. With reference to the creation it is said, he stretcheth out the beavens like a curtain. Ma. xl. 22. and with reference to the tabernacle, it was commanded that they should make curtains, Exod. xxvi. With respect to the creation

Digitized by Google

e Heb. ix. 7, 8, 9. f Heb. x. 1. 6 Heb. ix. 23. vi. 20. h Heb. x. 19

Abravenel in legem. fol. 190. c. 4. see Abravenel in his preface to Joshua

" העור ברויה ברויה העור ברויה ברויה ברויה העור ברויה העור ברויה ב

it is said, Let the waters be gathered together, Gen. i. 9. and with reference to the tabernacle was commanded the making a laver (or sea) of brass, Exod. xxxviii. 8. When the world was created it was said, Let there be lights, Gen. i. 14. and when the tabernacle was to be built it is said, Thou shalt make a candlestick of pure gold, Exod. xxv. 31. In the creation of the world there is mention of fowl, that was to sty, Gen. i. 20. and in the tabernacle were cherubims, that stretched forth their wings on high, Exod. xxv. 20. In the story of the creation it is written, God created man, Gen. i. 27. In that of the tabernacle it is said, Take thou unto thee Aaron thy brother, Exod. xxviii. 1. In the creation of the world it is said, The heavens and the earth were sinished, Gen. ii. 1. In reference to the tabernacle it is said, Thus was all the work of the tabernacle of the tent of the congregation sinished, Exod. xxxix. 32. Several other correspondences he mentions which I omit. He adds, that the tabernacle below was a sigure of the tabernacle above. No wonder then that a "Christian writer should call the tabernacle the image of the creation, when the Jews themselves affirm the same.

PHILO the Jew o tells us, that it was needful, that they which built the fanctuary should make use of the same materials, which go to the making up of the universe: He discourses at large of the symbolical representation of the universe in the several parts of the tabernacle; and tells us very expressly, that the advant from some (or the holy of holies) were supposed noticed in e. They were spiritually or typically to be understood.

Josephus the Jew p lived in the apostles times, and was a priest and a learned man in the Jewish affairs: He gives us a particular account of the structure of the tabernacle; and adds, that if any man consider the structure of the tabernacle, the vestments of the priests, and the utensils which they used in their legal service, he will conclude that their law-giver was a divine person: For all these things (saith he) were eis ἀπομίμασουν τω διατύπωουν τω δλων. i. e. They were resemblances of the universe. He adds, that for two parts of the tabernacle, they were lest common to all the priests, and these (saith he) represent the earth and the sea, which are was in the said to God Ala το καὶ τ ἐρανον ἀνεπίδα οι τὸ ἀνθρώπους, because men may not enter into that holy place, where God dwells. Where he makes the holy of holies a figure of heaven it self, as the divine author of the epistle to the Hebrews doth.

To what hath been said I shall add the words of Solomon, as he is brought in speaking, in q the book of Wisdom of the temple, which he built, in these words; Thou hast commanded me to build a temple (says he) upon thy holy mount, and an altar in the city wherein thou dwellest, a resemblance of the holy tabernacle which thou hast prepared from the beginning.

To what hath been said, I shall add this, That as the holy of holies was by the Jews allowed to be a type of heaven; so it was the fittest representation of that holy place, where God dwells, into which no unclean thing shall enter. Maimonides tells us, that though the whole land of Israel was more holy than other lands; yet there are ten degrees of

holines,

n Tig xilisus, the sixona. Theodor. in Exod. Quart. 60. vid. Quart. 72.

1. 3. p Joseph. Antiqu. 1. 3. c. 8. q Wild. ix, 8. rRev. xxi. 27.

5 Maimon. Beth Habbechir. c. 7.

holiness, one above another, in that holy land. [1.] Walled cities were more holy than the rest of the land; and hence lepers were shut out of them, and dead bodies were buried without their gates. [2.] Jerusalem was more holy than other cities; within the walls of which were eaten holy things, and the second tithes. [3.] The mountain of the Lord's house was more holy than the city; from which were excluded those who were unclean by issues or sluxes, upon child-bearing or on account of menstruous impurities. [4.] The t inclosure or intermural space about the court was holier still; which would admit of no gentile, nor of any that were defiled by the dead. [5.] The court of women was holier than that; for it excluded " him who was defiled with fuch an uncleanness only, as required his washing, and the setting of the sun. [6.] The court of Israel was holier still; for that admitted not of a man that wanted expiation. [7.] The court of the priests was holier still; for that did not ordinarily admit any Israelite unless upon necessary service. [8.] The space between the porch and the altar admitted of no blemished person of the priests, nor any of them bare-headed, or with garments rent. [9.] The x temple still was more holy; for no man might enter into it with unwashen hands and feet. [10.] The holy of holies was more holy still; for no man was permitted to enter in thither, but the high priest once a year on the day of expiation.

FROM what hath been said it appears, that the holy of holies (in the sense of the learned among the Jews) was a type of the highest heavens, into which CHRIST is entered: And this being so great a truth, and so univerfally acknowledged, that the fanctuary below was a fign or type of that which is above, it is not strange that it should be put for it. It being very usual to put the sign for the thing signified and represented. Thus, fays the psalmist, The LORD is in his boly temple, i. c. he is in heaven, as it follows, The Lord's throne is in heaven. Again, - He heard my voice out of his holy temple, i. c. out of heaven. And conformably hereunto Jesus is said to have a entered within the weil, and we are said to have a liberty of entering into the holiest, by which heaven is meant, the

type being put for the anti-type.

I SHALL take this occasion to give some account of a passage in St. Matthew, relating to my present argument: He tells us, that upon the death of Jesus the b veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom. This is a particular, that requires a distinct consideration: This rupture of the veil not being the effect of the earth-quake mentioned in the next words; for then it would rather have been rent from the bottom to the top; it not being reasonable to suppose that a rent from the top to the bottom should be the consequent and effect of an earth-quake or renting of the rocks. And for that reason I suppose it mentioned here before the mention of the earth-quake and renting the rocks, as that which was not the effect of them, and was of a separate consideration from

IT will be worth our while to enquire, what veil it was that was rent, and what the renting of it did import, and by that time I have done this, it will appear that this passage hath a relation to the argument, which I am now upon.

חיל י שכול יום " y vid. Kimchi in Pfal. xi. 4. דוכל × 2 Pfal <sup>2</sup> Heb. vi. 29, ix. 23. Aviii. 6. b Matth. xxvii. 56

MAIMONIDES

MAIMONIDES c tells us, that in the first temple there was a wall between the holy and the most holy place, of the thickness of a cubit: And that when they built the second temple, there arose a doubt among the builders, whether the space that this wall took up, was to be allowed out of the holy or most holy place: and that for that reason they left a space between the one and the other of the extent of a cubit, and built no wall, but instead of that they made two veils, one towards the holy of holies, and the other towards the holy place, leaving a space between them of the thickness of a cubit, where the wall was supposed to stand in the temple of Solomon. Of this partition between the holy and holy of holies the words of the evangelist are to be understood.

There were indeed two veils in the sanctuary: One at the entering into the holy place: Exod. xxvi. 37. Another which divided the holy from the most holy place. Exod. xxvi. 35. Which is called the second veil, Heb. ix. 3. And that the words of the evangelist are to be understood of this second veil, is evident from the words themselves: For he uses the word το καταπότασμα, which is the very word, that the LXXII make use of, Exod. xxvi. 35. Where that veil is mentioned, they having another word for the other veil, ver. 37. Besides, this being the principal veil, the Greek word with the article prefixed, where the subject matter will bear it, will determine the sense to this veil. But besides all this, Philo the Jew, d when he mentions both these veils, calls that which divided the most holy from the holy place καταπέτασμα, whereas he calls the other κόλυμμα, or a covering.

It will not be hard to understand what this imported. The veil was rent asunder, and the most holy place is thereby laid open, which was shut up before, and none had access to it but the high priest once a year. Jesus hath opened the kingdom of heaven to all believers, he hath brought life and immortality to light, and made manifest the way into the holiest of all, into which we have a liberty to enter by his blood, by a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us through the veil, that is to

fay, his flesh.

IV. I SHALL make it appear from the effects following upon the exaltation of Jesus into heaven, that he did indeed ascend thither, and was there concerned on our behalf, and that therefore our Jesus is the Christ. I shall mention two, which were great proofs of our Saviour's ascension into heaven, and of his power there, and his being concerned on the behalf of his church.

The first is the miraculous descent of the Holy Ghost at the day of Pentecost. Act. ii. Our Saviour had promised to his sorrowful disciples a comforter, who should abide with them for ever. This he did before his death, and the better to support them under the sorrow, which his death would occasion. Joh. xiv. 16, 18. xv. 26. and chap, xvi. 7. He repeated this promise after his resurrection. Luk. xxiv. 49. And before his ascension he commands them, that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the father, which (saith he) ye have heard of me. Act. i. 4. This promise he made good. Act. ii. to the great amazement of the multitude, which were come together from several nations to Jerusalem at the seast of Pentecost. The Holy Ghost, which was then miraculously be-

d Phil. Jud. de vita Moss 1. 3.

stowed

Maimon. Beth Habbechirah. cap. 4. Heb. x. 20.

Rowed upon the disciples of Jesus, was his advocate, and pleaded his cause: Our Saviour had forefold, f that he would bear withers of him. And this the Holy Ghost did.

(1.) As he testified, that JESUS was a true prophet, when he promised this heavenly gift to his disciples, and did thereby bear testimony to his veracity, and make it appear, that he was not an impostor or cheat. They were now convinced abundantly, that JESUS had made his word good. Joh. xvi. 7, 10. And now there was no suspicion lest of his being a false pro-

phet or deceiver.

(2.) Of the power and authority which Jesus had. He told his followers, that all power was given him in heaven and earth, Matth. xxviii. 18. This he told them after his refurrection, and a little before his ascension into heaven: He gave at the day of Pentecost an undeniable proof of it. Jesus had said before his death to the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, that asked him, if he was the Christ, Hereaster shall ye see the son of man string on the right hand of the power of God, Luk. xxii. 69. The meaning of which words is plainly this, that they should be convinced e'er long of his great power, which he had in heaven upon his exaltation to that place, and at the day of Pentecost he gave a great demonstration thereof. And St. Peter concludes from it, that he is the Christ. This Jesus saith he) hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses. Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear. And presently afterward he concludes, as he very justly might, Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ. Act. ii. 32, 33, 36.

Act. ii. 32, 33, 36.

SECONDLY, Another great effect following the exaltation of Jesus was the success of his religion in the world, which was a farther argument of the power of Jesus in heaven, and of his being concerned for his church, and an evident proof, that this Jesus is the Christ. But for

the better speaking to this I shall shew,

FIRST, That according to the prophecies of old all nations were to serve the MESSIAS.

SECONDLY, That these prophecies have been in great measure suffilled in our Jesus, whose religion did greatly spread over the world.

THIRDLY, That this success of the religion of Jesus is an unexceptionable proof, that Jesus is the Christ.

I. ACCORDING to the prophecies of old, all nations were to serve the MESSIAS, and consequently that the partition-wall between the few and Gentile should be thrown down. Thus in those words of facob (which the ancient fews understand of the MESSIAS) it is said, that unto him shall the gathering of the people be, Gen. xlix. 10. That is, the nations or gentiles should obey and serve him. No less is promised than this; I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the utmost parts of the earth for thy possession, Psal. ii. 8. The prophet Isaiah sortells also, that it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the LORD's bouse shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted

f Joh. xv. 26.

above

above the hills, and all nations shall flow unto it, Isa. ii. 2. And again is In that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people: to it shall the gentiles seek, Isa. xi. 10. And again the same prophet rells us. The Lord will have mercy on Jacob, and will yet chuse Israel, and set them in their own land: And the strangers shall be joined with them, and they shall cleave to the house of Jacob, Isa. xiv. 1. And farther we read: It is a light thing, that thou shouldest be my servant to raise up the tribes of Jacob, and to restore the preserved of Israel: I will also give thee for a light to the gentiles, that thou mayst be my salvation unto the end of the earth, chap. xlix. 6. To which we may add I/a. liv. as also what he tells us afterwards, The gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising—The abundance of the sea shall be converted to thee, the forces of the gentiles shall come unto thee, chap. Ix. 3, 5. We shall hear, what the prophet Hosea also tells us. I will have mercy upon her, that had not obtained mercy; and I will say to them, which were not my people, Thou art my people, Hos. ii. 23. No less perhaps is meant than this in that vision of Zechariah, where Jerusalem is not permitted to come under a measuring line, because she should be inhabited as towns without walls for the multitude of men and cattle therein, Zech. ii. 4. However, sure I am, that the same prophet speaks plainly in these words: Many people and strong nations shall come to seek the LORD of hosts in Jerusalem, and to pray before the Lord, chap, viii. 22. And as plainly still afterwards in these words. Rejoyce greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem; Behold thy king cometh unto thee; he is just and having salvation, lowly and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass: And I will cut off the chariot from Ephraim, and the horse from Jerusalem, and the battle bow shall be cut off; and he shall speak peace unto the heathen: And his dominion shall be from sea even to sea, and from the river even to the ends of the earth, chap. ix. 4, 10. To which I shall add the words of the prophet Malachi. From the rifing of the sun unto the going down of the same my name shall be great among the gentiles, and in every place incense shall be offered unto my name and a pure offering: for my name shall be great among the heathen, saith the LORD of hosts, Mal. i. 11. By which we may see, that the gentiles according to these prophecies were to submit to the MESSIAS, and to be taken into the commonwealth of Israel; which because it could not be, unless they forsook their idolatry, we find the prophets foretel also, that they should put away their idols. Thus the prophet assures us. And the idols he shall utterly abolish: In that day a man shall cast his idols of silver, and his idols of gold, which they have made each one for himself to worship, to the moles, and to the bats, Isa. ii. 18, 20. And another prophet tells us. It shall come to pass in that day, saith the LORD of hosts, that I will cut off the names of the idols out of the land, and they shall be no more remembered, Zech. xiii. 2: These are as plain words as can be: So that it must be in the days of the MESSIAS, that the gentiles should no longer be strangers and aliens from the covenant of grace. This difference between Jew and Gentile is now to be removed. Go p will not only be known in Judah, but among all the families of the earth.

We find Philo the Jew 8 (speaking of God's governing the universe)

s Philo Jud. de Agricultura.

discourling

discoursing to the same purpose. He tells us, that God rules his creatures according to right and law, as a shepherd and a king, Πεοςποάμδω το δρθον αὐτε λόγον πεωθόρονον ύὸν, ος τ ἐπιμέλειαν τ ἱτεῶς ταύτης ἀγέλης, οἰά τι μεγάλει βασιλέως ὕπαεχ. διαδίξε. Καὶ γδ ἄρηταί πε Ἰθε ἐγώ εἰμι ἀποςελῶν ἄγ νελόν με, &c. i. c. Setting over them his right Word, his first begotten Son, who as the substitute or vice-gerent of him the great king, shall take upon him the care of this holy flock. For it is somewhere said, Behold I will send my angel, &c. Exod. xxiii. 20.

II. THAT these prophecies were in a great measure sulfilled in our Jesus. I say in a great measure. For I cannot but hope, that there are still many prophecies relating to the kingdom of the MESSIAS in this world, in a great measure to be fulfilled. Now if these prophecies are already in a great meafure fulfilled, then is this JESUS the CHRIST. That they were in a great measure fulfilled is very evident: For though JESUs himself lived and died in Jewry; yet did not his doctrine stay there. There he lived indeed, but yet in Galilee of the gentiles, not far off from the poor gentiles, whom he came to save also. He tells the Jews no less: I, saith he, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me, Joh. xii. 32. That is, After his death his doctrine should greatly prevail upon the world, so that all men should come after him. And thus we find, that after his death and refurrection he gives his disciples commission to go and teach all nations, Matth. xxviii. 19. or as it is in St. Mark, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature, Mark xvi. 15. And to that purpose they have the gift of tongues bestowed on them, that so they might be able to teach all nations, as their LORD had commanded them, Ast. ii. Now we shall soon find the gospel preached to the gentiles; we read of the Ethiopian treasurer, and Cornelius the centurion baptized into the Christian faith. But what shall I need speak of them? We find St. Paul is made a preacher to the gentiles, who tells us of the fruit of his preaching also, viz. the obedience of the gentiles, Rom. xv. 18. In so much that he is able to say, that the gospel was preached to every creature which is under heaven, Col. i. 23. And his success is so great, that the idolatrous gentiles turned from idols to serve the living and true God, I Thes. i. 9. Tertullian h tells us in his time, even in those early days of Christianty, how far it had prevailed. Externi sumus, & vestra omnia implevimus, urbes, insulas, castella, muni-cipia, conciliabula, castra ipsa, tribus, decurias, palatium, senatum, forum. Sola vobis relinquimus templa. Cui bello non idonei, non prompti fuissemus, etiam impares copiis, qui tam libenter trucidamur? Si non apud istam disciplinam magis occidi liceret, quam occidere. Nay, the mouths of the oracles are now stopped, which made so great a wonder in the gentile world. The head of the serpent, that so long had deceived the nations, is now broken by the seed of the woman: In a word, those cities and provinces, that lately were full of idols and superstition, receive the doctrine of Jesus, and with it the worship of the only true God. Nay, 'tis not long before we have Christian kings also in the world: So that the religion of Jesus spreads it self over the world, and rides triumphantly and in great conquest, like the rider of the white-horse in the Apocalypse, that went forth conquering and to conquer: But I proceed to shew,

III. THAT

b Tertull. Apolog. c. 37-

III. THAT this success of the religion of Jesus is an unexceptionable

proof, that Jesus is the Christ.

Not that I would be thought to make success the measure of truth: or affirm, that the most prosperous cause is always the best. For then the religion of *Mahomet* would bid fair for the truth, and the greatest outrages and rebellions would become innocent and good. Success is no certain sign of a good cause, and therefore not of the truth of a religion, unless it be such a success, as all things considered must only be imputed to the force of truth, and a miraculous providence that makes it prosperous.

I SHALL shew then, that the success of the gospel was such, as doth necessarily infer that Jesus is the Christ; and that the religion, which he preached and planted in the world, did come from God: Where, as we go along, it will be easie for us to understand, that Mahometanism can have no share in this argument. Now it will appear, that Jesus is the Christ, and also that the gospel, which he and his disciples preached, comes from heaven; in a word, that the Christian religion is not only true, but the only true religion, if we do but well consider its success and progress in the world. Now this will appear,

1. If we consider the first author, and first preachers of this religion:

2. THE doctrine it self: and,

3. THE manner of its spreading in the world.

1. As for the first author or teacher of this doctrine, it was Jesus the son of a poor virgin, and the reputed son of a carpenter. One would have thought him very unlikely to have done any great things. He was one, that was born in a stable at Bethlehem, brought up in the obscure country of Galilee, set at nought by his countrey-men, and after many sufferings and calamities, condemned to a cross, and hanged among thieves and malefactors, where he gave up the ghost after a short and painful life. He came into the world with no grandeur, he made no noise in it, and he left it by a death most ignominious and disgraceful. And yet did his doctrine spread, and his religion prevailed against all oppositions, and threw down all superstitions and false religions what soever. This could not have been, if Jesus had not been the CHRIST. I will make use of the words of one of the ancient writers of the church upon this occasion. i Tis γαις τω ωποίε βασιλίων, &c. i.e. What king (says he) was ever of so great power, as to fill the ears and the tongues of all the inhabitants of the earth? What king ever made laws so pious and sober as could prevail upon the inhabitants of the whole earth from one end of it to the other? Who ever was able to void the barbarous and cruel customs of the heathen by merciful and gentle laws? Who ever met with so long and great an opposition, and had force enough, not only not to be extinct, but to thrive and flourish under this oppression? Who ever sent about the world a people obscure and scarcely heard of before? Who ever bestowed on his soldiers such a spiritual armour, that they gave proof to their enemies of minds hardy and strong as the adamant? What king ever shewed such puissance and force after his death? Who ever erected such trophies over his enemies? Who ever filled all places, countries and cities of the Greeks and Barbarians, with stately palaces and consecrated templace? consecrated temples? And for his disciples, the first preachers of the gospel; Who were they? No princes of an ancient blood, but obscure fishermen. No

sele&

i Euseb. Histor. Eccles. lib. 10. c. 4.

select orators from Rome or Athens; but poor illiterate Galileans. No great captains or commanders, but men of great simplicity and peaceableness. They were men very unlikely to do any great things, having no reputation for depth of wisdom, or any thing of power or worldly greatness. Such were the first planters of the gospel; And who would look for any great success from so small a beginning? Who would have believed, that such men as these had been big enough to have grapled with the wisdom of the Greeks, the power of the Romans, the malice of their country-men the Jews, and with the rudeness and hardiness of all the heathen world? A man might as well have believed, that a few shepherds might have driven Hannibal from the gates of Rome. Or that a few pealants had been able to force Xernes with his great multitude out of Greece; or that a single and unarmed man could be able to put to flight the stoutest regiment or legion of soldiers. A man might as easily have believed, that a few children had been able to take the strongest garrison; as that these men should have been able to have stood up, and prevailed against the deviland all his accomplices; against all the policies, and powers, and all the wit and malice of a wicked world; and so far to prevail too with the preaching of a CHRIST crucified, as to persuade the world to forfake their worship of the false gods, whom their fathers had wor-Certainly they that could do this, shipped, and to own a crucified Saviour. as we know they did, had an almighty power to their assistance. None but GOD could have brought it to pass, as is evident to any man, who doth but rightly consider and weigh it. It must be an infinite power, that by such weak means could effect such great things.

2. As for the doctrine it self, if we duly consider it, we shall find it ve-

ry unlikely to prevail upon the world. Whether we consider,

(1.) THE Credenda or matters of faith, which it did contain, and must needs scem very uncouth and strange, if not very unreasonable to the world: As that the world was made, and made of nothing, when ex nihilo nil fit, was a maxim in the heathen philosophy. That there is but one God, when in the heathen world there were thought to be many gods and many lords. That though there was but one God; yet there were three persons, and these three were one. This must needs be a strange doctrine at Rome or Athens. That they must believe Jesus and the Resurrection was so strange a thing to the Athenian philosophers, that they encountered St. Paul, and some called him babbler, and others were so ignorant of what was meant by the resurrection, that they took it for a God: He seemeth, say they, to be a setter forth of strange gods, because he preached unto them & Inouv & \* avasaow, Jesus and the resurrection. And they affirmed, that he brought certain strange things to their ears Act. xvii. 18, 20. He preached CHRIST crucified, who was unto the Jews a stumbling block, and to the Greeks foolishness, 1 Cor. i. 23. They are taught to place their hopes in a crucified LORD, and to own him as their only Saviour and Redeemer, whom they had never seen or heard of before, and whom none of their philosophers had spoken of. They must believe the resurrection of the dead, which they had not heard of before. And that there is no name under heaven, by which they can be faved, but by the name of Jesus: And this they did, which they could never have been persuaded to have done, had not these things been from God, to whose miraculous providence this success must be ascribed. But then if we consider,

(2.) THE

(2.) THE Agenda, or precepts of the gospel; they were such as were very unlikely to have obtained in the world, had not these things been from GOD: For what is it that the gospel teaches them? To deny all ungodliness and worldly lusts, and to walk righteously and soberly in this present world. It forbids not only the doing injuries, but the revenging of them. It forbids not only evil actions, but an evil thought and intention of the heart. It doth not only forbid adultery, but also a wanton glance; and is so far from allowing murther, that it most severely forbids hatred and rash anger. It not only forbids perjuries, but requires of us, that we should not swear at all. It ties our hands, locks up our eyes, chains our thoughts, and restrains all the irregular desires, and warmer propositions of slesh and blood. It will not allow the wifest philosopher to make any oftentation of his parts or learning: Nor the greatest captain or general to boast of his valour; but teaches them both to be very humble and very peaceable. It teaches us to undervalue all the grandeur of the world, all its riches and honours and pleasures, and commands us rather to forgo them all with life it self, than to deny the faith of Jesus. It requires men to love God with all their heart, and their neighbour as themselves. give their enemies, to pray for their persecutors, and to do good to those that do evil unto us. It forbids us to give blow for blow, or railing for railing. It commands us to give alms to the poor, and give to every one that asketh, though he be friend or enemy, good or bad, thankful or ungrateful; and when we have so done, it commands us to make no boasts nor brags, but to expect a recompence only from him that sees in secret. It lays a great restraint upon our tongues, which it obliges us most severely to keep in order: It will not allow us to speak evil of our brother, to call him fool or Raka. It forbids us to judge another man, as we would escape a severe judgment our selves. It forbids us to be busie-bodies, or to intermeddle in other mens matters. And is so far from allowing the tongue in lying or swearing, that it may not be suffered in an idle word, or an unbecoming jest. It tells us, we must be blameless and harmless, and then, if it be possible, and as much as lieth in us, we must live peaceably with all men. Unto all this we may add, that it will not allow any other religion: The heathen world must abandon their idols, if they receive the gospel of Christ. They must forsake that idolatry, under which their fathers prospered long, and they were brought up in: Diana of the Ephesians must be no longer adored, and all her priests and filversmiths must be laid aside. All idols must be removed where CHR I ST comes, and all the ancient ceremonies and solemnities with which they were worshipped, must for ever be disused. That which was but now worshipped, and had been so of old time, must be cast to the moles and to the bats: But who shall perswade and obtain this? None can do it without the help of that God, who made heaven and earth. For here is all the power, and malice, and cunning of men and devils to be encountered with. The devil had gotten an old and long possession, the heathen world is strong and mighty, cunning and prejudicate; of a vast extent and a mighty force: Who shall perswade the Greeks to leave off their robberies and to live righteously? Or the warlike Romans to put up their swords and revenge no injuries? Who shall obtain of the world to throw away their idols, and receive a crucified CHRIST? Who can ever hope, that those nations, that grew to their greatness by blood and violence, should ever learn the way of peace and destroy no more? Will they that boasted in doing injuries be taught to bear them? Or will they who were wont to kill without remorfe, be afraid of being angry without a cause

zeause? Will they that were adulterers become afraid of an unchast thought dr glance? Will the wife and conceited orators become fools, that they may be wise? Who can expect, that they that had as many gods as territories and provinces, should be perfuaded to have but one? Or that those men, that were included in their lusts by the example of their gods, or the permission of their laws, should ever accept of a religion, that is so severe, that it requires them all to be rooted out? Certainly this will be too great a work for a few Galileans to bring to pals: They might as soon hope to remove mountains, and shake all the pillars of the earth; and yet was this brought to pass by the foolishness of preaching; the fierce warrior becomes tame; the persecutor becomes a preacher; the nations that served many idols, now only acknowledge the one true God, and Jesus Christ, whom he hath sent. Now this could never have been done, had not God almighty done it; nor would he ever have done it, had not Jesus been the Christ. But it will be the more strange still, that this doctrine should prevail, if we do but duly consider,

3. THE Premia, the rewards, or the promises of the gospel to those, that should receive it and obey it. We shall find them such, as were very unlikely to prevail with a wicked and unbelieving world. It promises them no prosperity in this world, nor yet any sensual delights in that which is to come, as the religion of Mahomet doth: And yet these were the things, which the heathen world most admired, who always lived by sense and not by faith: It promises them no kingdoms or consulships, no victories or triumphs, no wealth or honours, nor yet the pleasures of wine or women: In a word, it is so far from offering to them these things, that it teaches them, and obliges them also, to despife them all, to undervalue them, to be dead to all these allurements, and to mortifie and root out of their souls all those irregular desires, which transport them after any of these things. The gospel promises good things indeed; but they are spiritual, and consequently very unlike to obtain upon carnal men: They are good things, but they are unseen; and so not likely to prevail upon those, that live by fense: They are good indeed, but yet they are removed and at a distance: And who could expect, that the world should deny themselves all their present enjoyments, for the hope of these spiritual and unseen reversions? Who shall persuade the rich to abandon their wealth for the hopes of the kingdom of heaven? Or who can prevail with the voluptuous to renounce their sensual pleasures for the hope of those joys, that are at Goo's right hand? What rhetorickshall persuade the ambitious man to prefer a future glory, before the honours which he derives from his prince, or acquires by his valour? We find this a very hard matter now, when these men profess the gospel; but how much harder must it needs be then, when the gospel was a stranger to the world, when it had scarcely any friends, and very many and great opposers? What is there offered in the gospel, that could tempt an unbelieving world? Had it offered riches, there might well have been a crowd of covetous worldlings ready to embrace Had it offered sensual pleasures, it would have been welcome to the whole herd of epicures: Could it have secured its professors any worldly honours, nothing should have been more acceptable to all that were ambitious: Here are none of those things to be had; but it tells us of things to come, and we must have faith to believe them, as well as patience to wait for them. Now then certainly this religion, which offered no other rewards, could never have prevailed upon the world, as we know it did,

had it not been from God, and had not Jesus, whom we preach, been the CHRIST. But it will be the more unlikely still, that the gospel should

prevail, if we consider,

4. THE Pericula, the dangers, afflictions and many miseries, which the embracing the gospel would expose them to, that should entertain it. This rifes higher, and makes the success of the gospel more improbable We saw before, that it promises no worldly happiness; but now we shall find, that it exposes its professors to many miseries and afflictions, and tells them sad stories of disgrace and contempt, bonds and imprisonment, and perhaps death it self. It foretells, that they which do live godly shall suffer persecution, and that we must through many tribulations enter into the kingdom of heaven: What I named last brought no temptation to draw the world to this profession, but this, one would think, should bring discouragement enough to affright them from it. Instead of promising ease and pleasures, it rather brings with it great afflictions and tribulations. Jesus tells his disciples, what they must expect. The time cometh, that who soever killeth you, will think, that he doth God service, Joh. xvi. 2. Here is little encouragement then for the world to receive the gospel, which is like to bring them into such hazards and dangers. We have a proverb among us, that men will not make any haste to that market, where they are like to meet with nothing but blows. A man would easily believe, that men would not be very forward to relinquish their prosperous religion, and entertain an afflicted and a persecuted gospel; to seave the gainful worship of the great Diana, and to embrace a profession, that is every where spoken against; to forsake the image that fell down from Jupiter, and to worship | Esus, that was hanged on a cross. A man might (one would think) as soon persuade an army to leave their direct and smoother way to their enemies, and to march through dangerous woods, and precipices, and quick-fands and lakes. Or as foon obtain of a great tyrant, that he should destroy himself, as to persuade the unbelieving world to venture all their pleasures, wealth and honours, and also their blood in the protession of that gospel, that did not so much as promise them any recompence in the same kind. Yet we know that this was done, the religion of lesus was gladly embraced upon these terms. The rich were willing to become poor, to part with their possessions here for the hope of a future glory: the honourable were glad to be laid low, and stript of all their properties for the sake of Jesus. Banishment or chains, prisons or death are very welcome for the gospel's sake. No wheels or racks, no rods or axes, no bolts or chains, hunger or thirst, fire or sword shall be able to make them offer to an idol, or deny their LORD. Nay, they were so resolute, that they wearied their perfecutors by their patience and constancy; they could not find out torments exquisite and great enough for them: They were not daunted at the cruelties of Nero or Domitian, or any of the following Roman emperors. Nor were they only the great preachers of the gospel, that were thus resolute and hardy, but also the laity, women and children, those of the weaker sex and more tender years. Neither was this religion impaired or weakned by these heavy burthens; but it grew and prospered greatly. This blood of martyrs proves a fruitful feed; and very strangely fructifies and brings forth children unto Go D. Even so much did it prosper, that though it had been persecuted under Nero and Domitian; yet in the days of Trajan (those very early days of the gospel) the Christians were so numerous, that Pliny k one of his governors over a cer-

\* Plin. Epist. 1. 10. ep. 97.

tain

vith them, and that propter periclitantium numerum, because of the multitude of those that were in danger: And he adds, Multi enim omnis atatis, omnis ordinis, utriusque sexus, etiam vocantur in periculum & vocabuntur. That is, There were great numbers of them, of every age, and many of all ranks and qualities, and also of both sexes, that durst profess themselves Christians. So strangely did the gospel thrive, notwithstanding the cruelties that were inslicted upon the professors of it: And we are also told, that afterwards, in the days of Dioclesian, when in the space of thirty days no less than seventeen thousand Christians were slain, besides those that were condemned to metals and quarries, that yet then under that most cruel persecution the Christians rather increased than diminished: Now this would never have been, had not Jesus been the Christianse, by his over-ruling hand brought it to pass in despight of the utmost opposition.

But from the doctrine it self let us proceed now,

3. To the manner of it's spreading and propagation; and we shall find, that it was also very unlikely to have prevailed, had it not been from God, and had not Jesusbeen the Christ. Nay, Do Isay unlikely? I may truly say, it had been utterly impossible, that it should have got that ground which it did, had it not been from God, and had not that God, who made the world, given it

his bleffing. Let us then well weigh these following particulars.

1. THAT the gospel was not propagated in the world by humane eloquence, or excellency of speech. The first preachers of it were men of great plainness and simplicity, bred up not in the schools of the learned, not in wisdom of the world, not in any of the famous academies, or under the teachings of the wife philosophers; but they were illiterate Galileans, they were men of mean trades and occupations, men that had not been used to speak in senates and audiences of princes; men not used to defend causes, not brought up in the cunning of advocates and proctors, and mercenary pleaders. Such men might have been thought to have done much by the strength of their parts, and the quickness of their wit, and might have been judged sufficient to have made a weak cause desensible: They had none of the advantages of dignissed persons, which might commend them to princes and great states: so that they being poor and obscure, their wisdom was likely to be the less regarded, it being a most certain truth, that the poor man's wisdom is despised: Upon these disadvantages did the first preachers of the gospel set forth into a cunning, wicked, and potent world. Indeed it is true, that St. Paul was a man of learning, bred up at the feet of Gamaliel, and so doubtless well versed in the learning of the Jews, and very fit to deal with them: But then he was made the doctor of the Gentiles: And we hear what he tells his Corinthians: I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified. my speech, and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom. 1 Cor. ii. 2, 4. He was a man much hated by the Jews, and likely to do no great matters among the Romans, whose prisoner he was, when he came to Rome. He was a man of learning, but of no authority; a man of understanding, but yet of mean presence, and contemptible speech: 2 Cor. x. 5, 10. So that the progress of the gospel may not be ascribed to any great eloquence, or rhetorick, any skill or artifice of men, but only to the power of God: I Cor. ii. 5. For by the foolishness of preaching God taught the world wis-dom, by weak things he overturned the strong, and by things which are not, he overcame things that are. He that did destroy the walls of Jericho at the at the noise of a shout, and overcome the Canaanites by the hands of a woman, and discomstited the Midianites great army with trumpets, and the breaking of pirchers, and killed the great Goliah with a stripling and his sling, it was he and he alone, that enabled the first preachers of the gospel, and gave that success to very weak, and very unlikely means. This he did and none but he could do, and therefore this is a sufficient proof, that the gospel comes from God,

and that that JESUS, whom we preach, is the very CHRIST.

2. Non yet was the gospel propagated by force of arms, as the religion of Mahomet hath been, which has made its way in the world by the power of the fword. But Christianity was not thus planted; it denounced no war to those that refused it, it gave out no menaces to that purpose: This it neither did, nor would, nor could it do. The senate of Rome shall not need to fear the Galileans sword; Jesus sent abroad no fighting men; there is no horse prepared for this battel, no spears or bows: These are the servants of the prince of peace, who are so far from war, that they come to require the nations to learn war no more, and to beat their swords into plough-shares, and their spears into pruning-hooks. The gospel had no potent princes or states that favoured it, that stood up for its defence and maintenance; there were none of these powers, that took upon them the title of defenders of the faith. Nay, they were so far from protecting it, that they were its avowed enemies, and drew their swords against it. So that the first preachers came naked and unarmed into a furious, potent, and idolatrous world, preaching the gospel of peace, and the severe religion of a crucified Jesus. The armour, which they had, was spiritual, and an armour of light, an armour which the victorious Romans had neither used, nor yet feared. They were girt about with truth, which was all their military girdle: They put on the breastplate of righteousness, the shield of faith, and the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the spirit, which is the word of God; and had their feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace: Eph. vi. This was the armour of the first preachers of the gospel: And who could expect that they should therewith overcome mighty kingdoms and provinces? And yet with these preparations did they succeed and conquer the greatest nations, and brought them into the obedience of the gospel: Let us hear what the apostle says to this purpose: We do not war (says he) after the flesh (for the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God, to the pulling down of strong holds) casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of CHRIST: 2 Cor. x. 3, 4, 5. This is evident then, that they did not force the gospel upon the world; they did not convey it by the sword, or battel-bow; they neither did, nor could do this: and yet for all this it succeeded, it conquered, and it triumph'd also over all the power, the policy, and the stratagems of the devil and all his instruments. And it got that ground without blows and force, which it could never have gotten with it. To what then must this victory be imputed? Not to the sword and spear; but to the energy and force of truth, and to the mighty blessing and miraculous providence of GoD. It was GoD that brought this to pass, which men could never have done: And this is a sufficient evidence, that this religion comes from GoD: Had it been a lye, it could never have had that success by these unlikely means: Had it been from the devil, or the world, sure it would have made use of the instruments and stratagems of war, to have made room for it in the world. But that which is from GoD,

needs none of these assistances and helps. And this doubtless is a very good argument of the truth of the Christian religion, that it did not make its way by the power of the sword, nor was it preserved by any such method. The religion of Mahomet indeed spread far, but it was by the help of such weapons as those. It owes much, if not most of its success, to the instruments of war, and the diffensions and backslidings of Christians, under God's permission. Nay, What was it else that did uphold idolatry, but the instruments of war and and slaughter? False religions are forced to use this force and violence, which the truth which comes from God, and hath his bleffing, doth not need. The pure and undefiled, and primitive doctrine of the gospel did not use, nor yet need these aids. Indeed the apostatized church of Rome, which hath falsely called herself the catholick church, since she left the true faith of the gospel, hath betaken herself to these carnal weapons. And 'tis easie to know the cause of it also: For when she wanted the evidence of truth, she then was forced to run to the power of the sword. By this sword she cut asunder those knots, which she was not able to untie: And whom she could not confute, she would condemn to the fire and faggot. The secular power must be called in, to uphold her grandeur and authority. St. Peter's keys are not sufficient unless she unsheath his sword: She is now bolstered up by the powers of this world, and when she wants aid from the sword of the spirit, she will derive it from the sword of princes. Her proceedings shall need to be no objection against what I have said. Who though she call herself the catholick church, is very far from deserving that name, and hath rather shewed herself by these her actions to be the synagogue of Satan than the church of Christ: She hath declared her cause to be bad, which could not be maintained and upheld without the assistance of secular force. The first planters of the gospel used none of these weapons. We read of none, whom they burned for hereticks, no common-wealths interdicted for hindering their worldly greatness, and no navies or armies raised against those, that would not acknowledge them as their superiors. These have been the pitiful arts of that unclean church of Rome; which is an argument, that however she vainly boasts her self to be catholick; yet she doth not shew her self in these things at all to be christian. For the church of CHRIST never got its growth by these secular weapons.

3. IT was propagated by sufferings, by patient enduring of tribulations: Prayers and tears were the only weapons of the primitive, and undefiled church of CHRIST. The blood of martyrs was that fruitful seed, that did so strangely increase and multiply: Which is an argument, that JESUS was the CHRIST, and this religion came from God: Had it been otherwise, it had not been possible, but that those first persecutions had quite rooted it out of the world. Had it not been of God, it must needs have so fallen out. We see in the greatest rebellions how soon they are stopped, when the chief heads and leaders are taken and punished. This puts an end to any insurrection or confederacy: And so would it have done by Christianity also, had it not been from heaven, and been accompanied with truth and righteousness. So that fire and sword cannot vanquish it, prisons and chains, and death it self cannot stop its course: It must needs be, a good cause that bears up against all the malice, the menaces, and the punishments, that a wicked world could devise or inflict. Besides, that persons of all forts and degrees should seal this doctrine with their blood: young as well as old, rich as well as poor, people as well as their teachers, women as well

R 2

as men, those that were remote and far distant from one another. Nemo gratis malus. It cannot be imagined, that so many persons of all sorts, and so remote from one another, should conspire and consent together to bear witness to a lye: That they should venture their lives, and all that which the world calls good, upon an untruth. Certainly no man can be so fond, as to believe this: This martyrdom of Christians, and the growth of Chrifianity under it, is a good proof that JESUS is the CHRIST, and that the religion of Jesus came from God. For certainly had it not been from God, it could never have born up from so small a beginning against so mighty an opposition: And therefore it was a wise speech of Gameliel to the men of Israel, who were so forward to persecute the first preachers of the gospel, I say unto you, says he, refrain from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsel or this work be of men it will come to nought. But if it be of God ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found to fight against God: Act. v. 38, 39. And this he well persuades from the destruction of Theudas and his accomplices, and also of Judas the Galilean, and those that obeyed him. To which may also well be added this, that whoever fince hath pretended himself to be the Messias, or his forcrunner, hath been so far from persuading it, that he hath indeed come to nought, and miserably cheated and abused his credulous followers. Thus we know, that about two and fifty years after the destruction of the 1 Jewish temple by the Romans, there did arise a certain man, that pretended himself to be the Messias, and was called בר כוכב the son of a star (alluding its like to the prophecy, Num. xxiv. 17.) but this man was destroyed by Adrianus with many thousands of the Jew's besides: So that now the Jews are not ashamed to call him בר כוב or the son of a lye. Maimonides m tells us of another, who deceived the poor Jews, under a pretence that he was the forerunner of the Messias, who having boasted vainly that he should rise again after his death, in token that he came from God, was beheaded by a certain Arabian king, and so perish'd and left the Jews that gave him credit in great calamity and distress.

It is a very easie thing, n to give an account of the cheats and impostors, who have risen in the several ages of the world, under a pretence of being the MESSIAS, or his forerunner; by whom the Jews have been miserably imposed upon, and deluded from time to time. This is reported, not only by the Christian writers, but by the Jewish also. The Jews have often been frustrated in their expectations, and the cheat hath quickly been discovered. And they have for many generations expected their MESSIAS in vain. There hath appeared no man under pretence of the MESSIAS or his forerunner, but he hath soon come to nought. And no wonder; for a lye, though it may prevail for a while, will not obtain long. The heat of persecution will fetch off its paint and false colours. alone that can endure a trial. Facile res in suam naturam recidunt, ubi veritas non subest. A lye may for a little while out-face the truth, and prevail upon the easie and credulous part of mankind, especially where it meets with no severe and potent opposition. But when once the authors of a forgery are discovered, when they are brought to punishment who contrived the cheat, and were the abettors of it, then it falls to the ground, and spreads no farther. It hath not power enough to stand up against so great a violence. But Christianity prevailed in spight of all the malice, force and combined endeavours of the devil and all his instruments to root it out.

Buxtorf. Lexicon. Rabbinic. in 213. m Maimonides Epiffol. ad Judæos Massilienses. n Euseb-Eccl. Hist. 1. 4. c. 6. Hieron. Catal. Scrip. Eccl. in Agrippa. Origen. contra Cels. p. 44. Vorstii observat. ad R. David Gantz. p. 292. Juchasin. fol. 38. Zemah David. p. 150.

# 

## CHAP. X.

What was predicted of the Messias, was fulfilled in our Jesus. This appeared in the birth of Jesus, in his office and character, in his works, in his fufferings and refurrection, and the spreading of his doctrine. The adoreable providence of God in bringing events to pass. This is shewed in very many particulars. And this is a farther proof, that Jesus is the Christ.

F what hath been said before be duly considered, we shall upon sufficient evidence conclude, that our JESUS is the CHRIST, and that the Christian religion came from God. Not that I have said all, which might have been said, in so weighty an argument; but that which hath before been in-

sisted upon, is sufficient to convince a lover of truth.

THAT there was a MESSIAS promised, and described in the old Testament is not contested between the Christians and the Jews; nor do the Jews deny, that Jesus lived, and that he suffered by the hands of their foresathers, as we say he did. We believe the writings of the old Testament, which the Jews themselves acknowledge to be divine. And neither they nor any man living have any just cause to call in question the authority of the books of the new Testament, which gives us an account of the birth and life; of the miracles and doctrine; of the death and resurrection; of the ascension, and intercession of Jesus. Here's nothing reported in these books in it self incredible; nothing that is light and trisling; nothing unbecoming of God; nothing against good manners; but we have the same reasons to believe the truth of these things, which we have for any other history, which we do believe without doubting: The same we have and much more. Allowing then but the truth of the matter of sact, which we have no shadow of reason to call in question, it will abundantly appear from what hath been said, that Jesus is the Christian.

FOR there was not a word that fell to the ground, which was predicted of the Messias, but it was fulfilled in our Jesus: There was nothing

so minute or small, but it was accomplished and fulfilled.

LET us to this purpose recollect those particulars mentioned before, and

consider their exact accomplishment in our Jesus.

I WILL begin with his birth. We find, that the first promise, which was made of the Messias, was under the character of the seed of the woman, Gen. iii. 15. And this woman was to be a virgin also according to a prediction afterwards, Isa. vii. This was sulfilled in our Jesus, who was made of a woman, Gal. iv. 4. and born of a virgin. Mat. i. 18, 22, 23. As for the lineage and kindred of the Messias that is also predicted, viz. that he should be of the tribe of Judah, of the family of Jesse, and the house of David, Micah v. 2. Gen. xlix. 10. Isa. xi. 10. Jer. xxii. 5. This was also sulfilled in

our Jesus, Luk. i, 27.69. Mat. i. 1. The place, where the Messias was to be born, was Bethlehem; and this was fulfilled in our Jesus, Micah v. 2. with Mat. ii. 5, 6. Again, Jesus was born at that time, when the Messias was to be born according to the predictions of the old

Testament. Gen. xlix. 10. Dan. ix. Hag. ii. Mal. iii.

If the Messias was to be a prophet, and like unto Moses; so was Jesus also; Deut. xviii. 18. Joh. vi. 14. If he was to live in Galilee; so did Jesus. Isa. ix. 1, 2, 3. Mat. ii. 22, 23. with chap. iv. 14. If the Messias be described as peaceable, as righteous, as lowly, all this agrees to our Jesus also, Isa. ix. 6. xi. 5. Zech. ix. 9. with Mat. xi. 29. and chap. xii. 18. If the Messias was to appear in the second temple; so did Jesus. Hag. ii. 7, 9. with Joh. xviii. 20.

THE very works, which the MESSIAS was to do, Jesus did, Isa. xxxv. 5, 6. with Mat. xi. 4, 5. And they were such works, as none could

do without the assistance of God himself.

If the Messias was to suffer; so did Jesus: He died after the same manner, and at the same time, and in the same place, and under the same circumstances, which were predicted of old concerning the the Messias. The very Person which betrayed him, the price for which he was sold, the company that suffered with him, the usage which he was to receive in his last minutes, these things were foretold of the Messias, and accomplished in our Jesus. The very parting of his garments, the scoffs of the multitude, his behaviour and his last words, the exempting his bones from being broken, these things were predicted, and presigured of old, and all sussiled in Jesus; and so was his honourable burial and interment, as I have shewed before at large in the seventh chapter of this discourse.

If the Messias was to rife from the dead; so did Jesus. He rose again the third day, as he himself had foretold, and as had been predicted of the Messias: Of the truth of the matter of fact we have the utmost evidence. After this he went up into heaven, and sent thence the miraculous gift of the Holy Ghost, and his religion was preached to every creature.

AND as it was universally preach'd, so it spread universally also; and that it did so, is an argument that it came from God. From a small and unlikely beginning it came to a very great increase. It prospered under afflictions and the severest persecutions. It put to slight the devil and his kingdom, who made head against it with sword and buckler, without striking a stroke. It prevailed upon warlike nations without the instruments of war. It triumphed over the wise without any worldly eloquence. It vanquished the strong holds of the devil by instruments, that were very weak and inconsiderable. It advanced by prayers and tears, by patience under sufferings, by meekness and gentleness. Thus it conquered and grew big in spight of all the power, the malice and cunning of the devil and all his instruments: No fire could consume it, no enemies sword could destroy it, no proscriptions could banish it out of the world. It was too strong for the powerful tyrant, it feared neither his rod nor his axes; nay, it despised his greatest torments, and most studied cruelties.

It is farther to be considered, that as all, which was predicted of the MESSIAS, was (as hath been shewn) sulfilled in our Jesus; so these accomplishments came to pass by a most stupendous and adoreable providence of GoD; in such a way and such a manner, through so many unlikelihoods

and feeming contingencies, as speaks a miraculous and over-ruling providence of God. Here's nothing of the wisdom and crast of men, nothing of their power and co-operation to be acknowledged: The stone which the builders rejected, the same became the head-stone of the corner: And from thence we may very justly inser, that this was the Lord's doing: And if we attend to it with due application of mind, it will be wonderful in our eyes. This consideration must needs strike every pious and devout soul with a profound sense of the unspeakable wisdom, as well as goodness of God, in contriving our salvation by such ways, which men could never have devised, and in making good and accomplishing what he had promised and foretold, by ways and means to human wisdom very unlikely, and very disproportionate. I shall look back upon what I have said concerning the completing the predictions in our Jesus, and shew the wonderful providence of God in bringing events to pass.

CHRIST was to be born at Bethlehem, and so it must be: God had fore-told it, the Jews expected it, and the chief priests and scribes, when they were consulted by Herod, where he was to be born, tell him the same Mat. ii. 4, 5. It was very unlikely, that Jesus should have been born there, for he was conceived at Nazareth, there his mother lived when she was great with child, at a great distance from Bethlehem, but she removes to Bethlehem in her own tribe upon an occasion of a decree of Augustus Casar Luk. ii. &c. who therein though unwittingly was an occasion of sulfilling

a divine prophecy.

AGAIN, the MESSIAS was promised under the character of the feed of the woman, that expression doth not exclude the woman's relation to a man, but will admit the woman to be espoused and betrothed. It was afterwards predicted, that he should be born of a virgin: It was not likely indeed that this should be verified in Jesus. For besides that what was foretold was against the course of nature, (viz. that a virgin should conceive and bring forth a son) so it was very probable, that she that was espoused to a man (and in the sense of the law his wise) would not continue a virgin. But God had foretold this, and he will make his word good: And Jesus was born of the blessed virgin, even after she was espoused unto Joseph. She continued a virgin though she was bethrothed, and so far had upon her the obligation of a wife. Thus at once was Jesus the seed of a woman (as that word implies her betrothed to a man) and the son of a virgin also. This was a most surprising thing to the blessed virgin her self: She said unto the angel, who told her what should come to pass, How shall this be? Luk. i. 34. I shall add to this head the words of a very excellent person, which he spake upon this occasion. I am fully persuaded (says he) that if either Jew or Atheist would but search the scriptures with hearts as void of prejudice, and minds as free from other thoughts and cares, as most men bring to famous plays or comedies: This contemplation would enforce the one to acknowledge, that the prophecies in old time came not by the will of man: The other, that Jesus the son of Mary was he, of whom Moses and all the prophets spake.

CHRIST was to be born of the tribe of Judah, and of the house and family of David: And to that purpose that tribe and that family must not only continue, but continue so distinct, that it might be known who belonged to the one and the other. It is not a common thing, that any family and kindred continues so many hundred years: And indeed it was

not likely that they should have continued, and continued distinct and separate, considering the great changes that passed upon, and threatned them either with utter ruin or consusion, They were in great danger of one and the other in the days of Ahaz, and in the captivity of Babylon: And in after times the house of David lay neglected for many years; but so it was, they are not quite destroyed till this son of David is born: The birth of Jesus makes good, what Godhad promised of old time. And as the divine author of the epistle to the Hebrews affirms, it was near the time when Jesus lived, and he came to the Jews themselves, who had the opportunity of knowing the truth in this matter, so that it was evident to them that our Lord prang out of Judah, Heb. vii. 14. And Jesus was known to be, and commonly owned to be the son of David, Mat. i. I. What Godhad promised of old, he (and he was only able to do it) in due time made it good.

The Messias was to be born before the destruction of the second temple, and while the Jews were a distinct people and polity: He was to add glory to the latter house; and to appear, before the Jews were quite scattered abroad. This was foretold of the Messias, Gen. xlix. 10. Hag. ii. Mal. iii. The Jews, before Jesus was born, were in great measure in the hands of the Romans, and Herod of an Idumean extraction had for some time lorded it over them; but then he is born whilst the Jews continue a distinct people, live by their own laws, and in their own land; and goes into that temple, which according to the foregoing prophecies he was to enter into, and render glorious by his presence and conversation. The great deliverer comes at his appointed time, viz. at the declension of the Jewish polity, and before the expiration of the times predicted of old. And though the Jewish affairs were very low, and their polity near to an end; yet is Jesus born before their final destruction which was then very near.

For the counsel of God shall stand.

It was not very likely, that he who was born at Bethlehem, beyond the intention of his mother and reputed father, should thence go into Egypt, and at his return go into Galilee and live there: But both the one and the other were predicted of the Messias, and how unlikely soever they were to come to pass, they were fulfilled in our Jesus. He was carried into Egypt upon occasion of the cruelty of Herod, and at his return thence into Galilee; upon occasion of Archelaus his reign in Judea, and the warning, which Joseph received from God in a dream, Hosea xi. 1. with Mat. ii.

Who would have expected a prophet then in Israel, where prophecy had ceased ever since the days of Zechariah and Malachi, and there was now no such kind of men known among the Jews? Or that this great prophet, who was born in Judea, and near the great city of Jerusalem, should live in the remote and obscure country of Galilee? Who would have expected, that he should live in a country, from whence there was hardly ever known any prophet to proceed, and where he was likely to continue with little notice, regard, or observation? Who would have expected, that he that lived in so obscure a country, should do so great and stupendous works, to the wonder and associations those that saw them? And that such an illustrious person should proceed from so obscure a country? Joh. vii. 41.

IF we go on to consider the death of Jesus, we shall find all things agree to predictions of old, and came to pass in such a manner, as speaks a miraculous providence of God. That he who was born should die, hath nothing

nothing of wonder in it. But it is very strange, that he should deliver him to death, who at the same time pronounced him innocent. That he should die upon a cross, whom the people were so forward to have stoned! That he should be crucified, who (if he had been guilty) should by the law of the country have been foned! That he, who had so many enemies, should yet be betrayed by one of his own disciples! That he who had the bag, and had all therefore that Jesus had, should betray him for so vile a price s thirty pieces of filver! That the mony, for which he was fold, this price of blood, should be employed in a work of mercy, to buy a field to bury strangers in! That he should drink vinegar on the cross instead of a narcatick potion of myrrh-wine, contrary to the constant custom and usage of the country where he suffered! That the soldiers should cast lots for his coat, contrary, to their constant custom, when they had parted his garments, and did so by them, who were crucified with him! That he should die among thieves and malefactors, who spent his time in doing good! That he who lived so a sefully should be scoffed and taunted at, when he hung upon the cross; and that the multitude, who were wont to pity the dying criminal, should put off all humanity, and in a fet form of words deride him in his greatest misery! That JESUS should hold his peace, who suffered wrongfully, when his enemies were impatient and clamorous, and the whole creation groaned, and was disordered! That when it was the custom to break the bones of the crucified, and 'twas practifed at that time upon them, who suffered with Jesus, and they who were concerned, came with an intention to break his also; that yet a bone of bim should not be broken! That he who was crucified (which was a Roman punishment, and none of the Jewish capital ones) should be buried also contrary to the practice of the Romans, who did not bury those, who died upon a cross! That he who died among malefactors, should not be left exposed with them also! That he who died so ignominious a death, should have an honourable burial! That persons of the highest rank and character should agree together in his honourable interment! These things are so strange and so surprizing, so much beyond what any history besides doth afford us, that if we believe but the matter of fact (which we have all the reason in the world to believe) we cannot but find great cause to adore the wife God, who accomplished in Jesus, whatever was foretold of the

If we now proceed to the consideration of the resurrection of Jesus, we must be forced to acknowledge the over-ruling hand of God. That he who died, rose from the dead, was an argument beyond exception of a divine power: Man could contribute nothing toward so stupendous a work. Nay, there was all done, that could be done by men, both to hinder his resurrection (which Jesus had foretold) and to hinder the spreading of it and the belief theros in the world. His enemies were prepared to do all which they could, and they did it; by making his sepulchre sure, by sealing the stone, and by setting a watch, Mat. xxvii. 69. This they did to prevent the resurrection of Jesus. But all this would not do. They who had power to put Jesus to death, have no power to hinder his resurrection. When this succeeded not, the next course, which they had to take, was to hinder the belief of the resurrection of Jesus. Though they could not hinder him from rising again; yet they apply themselves vigorously to stifle the

ت الله الديار

<sup>·</sup> Casaubon Exercitation. p. 464. edit. Francf. 1615.

truth: This was their next care. To this purpose they give large mony to the foldiers, that they might give out, that his disciples came, and stole him away by night, Mat. xxviii. 13. But they labour in vain; Jesus was risen; there were so many witnesses of this truth, that there is no stiffing of it.

And though it was opposed by power, and craft, and the combined force and malice of few and Gentile; it prevailed against all by patience, and meekness, and the divine blessing, which did attend it: These things duly considered do abundantly prove, that Jesus is the Christ, the son

of the living Gon.

ولا رسود کا

Who would not (says an excellent person) acknowledge the divinity of this person, and the excellency of this institution, that should see infants to wearn the hands of hangmen for the testimony of Jesus? And wise men preach this doctrine for no other visible reward, but shame and death, poverty and banishment? And hangmen converted by the blood of martyrs springing upon their faces, which their impious hands and cords have strained through their sless? Who would not have confessed the honour of Jesus, when he should see miracles done at the tombs of martyrs, and devils tremble at the mention of the name of Jesus? And the world running to the honour of the poor Nazarene, and kings and queens kissing the feet of the poor servants of Jesus? Could a Jewish fisherman and a publican effect all this for the son of a poor maiden of Judea? Can we suppose all the world, or so great a part of mankind can consent by chance, or suffer such changes for nothing? Or for any thing less than this? The son of the poor maiden was the son of God, and the sisherman spake by a divine spirit, and they catched the world with holiness and miracles, with wisdom and power bigger than the strength of all the Roman Legions.

In a word, the things foretold of the Messias, and fulfilled in Jesus were to many, and to ftrangely fulfilled, so much without any human assistance, and so contrary to all expectation, and all the endeavours used to hinder the foretold event; that he, who considers these things with care, must be-

lieve that JESUS is the CHRIST, and that his religion is true.



CHAP.

#### ෯**෯෯෯෯෯෯෯෯෯෯෯෯෯෯෯෯෯෯**෯෯෯

## CHAP. XI.

The Christian religion is more excellent than that given by Moses, and consequently the best in the world. The Pagan religion not worthy of regard. The wiser heathens guilty of great inconsistencies and evil principles. The Stoicks upon sundry accounts very blameable. The law given by Moses came from Go D. In what sense it was a perfect law. It was not unalterable. A general distribution of the precepts of that law. The defects of it. I. As a rule, of life: Many of its precepts not good in their own nature; They obliged the Jews only, and were annexed to their land alone, or some part of it: Many of them were political. II. The reward annexed to the obedience of that law was but temporal. III. It was not attended with the promise of divine assistance. IV. Nor. was there that hope of pardon, which was afterward given in the The sacrifices allowed for that purpose were very desective: This is shewed at large. For some sins no sacrifice was allowed; Sacrifices were not pleasing to Go D of their own nature; The expiation did not depend upon the value of the oblation; He that brought an expiatory facrifice was not allowed to eat any part of it; The repetition of the sacrifices another argument of their weakness; In some cases the sacrifice was but one of those things required in order to pardon; The legal sacrifices were not designed to continue for That the defects of the law of Moles are supplied in the Christian religion: Of the excellent precepts of the Christian religion; Of the promise of eternal life therein clearly revealed, and of the great moment of it; Of the divine assistance attending this religion; Of the assurance of pardon from the Christian religion, and the sure foundation, which it lays for the quieting the consciences of men. The usefulness of the foregoing discourse: A more particular inquiry into the great ends or causes, for which the law of Moses was given. The conclusion of this discourse.

HAT JESUS is the CHRIST, and consequently that the religion, which JESUS and his followers taught, came from heaven, hath been in a great measure demonstrated already; for the farther proof of this truth I shall consider the religion it self, which JESUS and his followers taught, and prove, that it is a more excellent and perfect religion,

than that which was delivered to the Jews by the hands of Moses, and con-

fequently incomparably the best religion in the world.

I SAY the best in the world: for so it must be, if it once appear, that it is more perfect, than that which was taught the Jews by Moses. For though the religion of Moses was desective when compared with that of

Jesus; yet it was true however; and came from God.

But as for the pagan religion, how ancient soever it was; yet it was false and impious, not revealed by God, nor worthy of him, inconstant and various, trissing and silly. It carried men away from God to the creature. It taught men to worship not only the host of heaven, but stocks and stones and dumb idols; the very creatures which they did eat, the evils which they feared, and the very devils themselves, whom they did not love. It prescribed impure rites and ceremonies, and put men upon cruelties to their own slesh, and to their own children. It was so gross and so silly, that the wiser sort of heathers, though they complied with the usages of the vulgar; yet they derided those sopperies, and were therefore esteemed atheists by the common people.

IT must be granted, that among the heathens there were a number of men, who had a better sense of things, and have taught many good lessons of morality: But these men discoursed uncertainly, and as rovers for want of a revelation; And when they said any thing of a future state, they were wavering and doubtful. And the Stoicks themselves, who were a most considerable sect among the wisest of their philosophers, did trisle at a great rate, and allowed of some things manifestly evil, as well as notoriously false. I will not here take the pains to examine the inconsistency of their principles, and to shew how differently they acted, from what they taught: That is done by P Plut arch: I cannot but take notice, that they maintained some principles, that were immoral and impious, and such as could not come from GoD. They q gave men liberty to murder themselves, and to go out of this world without the leave of him, who sent them into it: And this evil and impious docrine was the common and received and avowed principle of the sect, Exerce te, ut mortem excipias, &, si ita res suadebit, accersas. Interest nihil, an illa ad nos veniat, an ad illam nos; says Seneca. It is true, that 'Seneca elsewhere explains himself, and seems to allow this liberty only in an useless old age, or in extreme necessity: But as that liberty is upon no account to be allowed; so it is manifest, that he speaks inconsistently with himself: For elsewhere she doth not only allow a wise man to kill himself, Si multa occurrunt molesta, & tranquillitatem turbantia. i. e. If many troubles arise, which disturb him; But also, when he suspects, that troubles will come upon him. For he goes on thus, Nec hoc tantum in necessitate ultimâ facit, sed cum primum illi cæperit suspecta esse fortuna, diligenter circumspicit, numquid illo die desinendum est. Nibil existimat sua referre, faciat sinem an accipiat. So that upon the whole matter a man might lawfully kill himself, when ever he thought it convenient. This is a most wretched and detestable principle, a manifest invasion of God's peculiar, and practifing upon his prerogative. Besides that, it is a mean thing to allow a liberty of doing so great an evil to rid our selves of some present trouble, or some thing which we fear. For by the same reason a man may be allowed to kill another man, who stands in his way,

and obstructs his ease and quiet. And indeed by the same reason he may do evil, that good may come of it, and chuse to offend rather than to suffer. Thus vain were those men, who were destitute of a divine revelation, and sollowed their own solish imaginations; who under the profession of a great degree of wisdom allowed the greatest immorality. From the books of Moses the unlawfulness of self-murther sufficiently appears. When God commands not to kill, he forbids self-murther as well as killing another man. For if bearing salse witness against our selves be a sin against the ninth commandment, which forbids our doing it against our neighbour, the killing our selves must need be a sin against the sixth, as the stilling of another; for in the image of God man's blood is forbidden, Gen. ix. 6. it is forbidden for a reason, which reaches to self murther, as well as the killing of another; For in the image of God made he man. Wam shomicida nefarius est, qui hominis extinctor est: Eidem sceleri obstrictus est, qui se necat, quia hominum necat.

ANOTHER principle full of impiety, which the Stoicks maintained, was this, that a man's happiness was from himself, and that he need not seek it of God, or be beholden to him for it. So that in this matter they taught men to live without dependance upon God. \* Unum bonum est, quod beat a wit a causa, & sirmamentum est, sibi sidere. i. e. There is one good thing, which is the cause and basis of an happy life, and that is that a man trust to himself. And afterwards he puts men not upon prayers to God, but upon making themselves happy; and derides those, who expect their happiness from above, and seek it by prayer: Thus vain and haughty were these men, who pretended to wisdom: Whereas in truth nothing speaks truer wisdom, than for a creature to live in a constant sense of his necessary dependance upon his Creator.

Their y condemning all passions was also a foolish and an evil principle, and very destructive of the great ends of life. They destroyed the man in order to make him wise. And pretended that to be a fruit of wisdom, which is the greatest folly, and the way to happiness, which is indeed the most certain obstruction to it: For we can go as well without legs, as without our passions: 'Tis by them, that we pursue what is good, and fly from evil. They are the wings of the soul, and without them we are unactive creatures. 'Tis great wisdom to govern them, but to desire to be rid of them is folly, and an impeachment of the wisdom of our Creator. They are the objects of virtue, and minister to it. They are good servants, and whilst they are retained as such, they are of great use to us, but they are indeed bad massers. We may not pity the miserable, as Seneca tells us, but he allows us to help him: But if we have no compassion, our relief will be very slow and slender.

This may seem too great a digression: And indeed it is not, what I mainly designed to speak to. I did not intend to compare our religion with that of heathens: It is not worth our while to do it. But by what I have said of the best of the heathens, we may see how vain and foolish their principles were. I shall compare the religion of Jesus with that, which God himself delivered to the Jews by Moses. And shall shew the desects of the one; and the supplies, which are made in the other.

votis opus est? Fac teipsum selicem. Ibid. Quam stultum est optare, cum possis a te impetrare: non sunt ad cœlum elevandæ manus Epist. 41. 7 Seneca Epist. 116. 2 Seneca de Clementia, 1, 2, cap. 5.

IT must be granted, that the law, which was given by Moses, came from heaven; and that it was a very great bleffing to the Jews, to whom it was given. It was one of these crowns (which the Jewish masters mention) with which they were adorned; It made their condition much better than that of their neighbours, The words of Moses to the Jews imply no less. What nation is there so great, that hath statutes and judgments so righteous, as all this law, which I set before you this day? The giving the law to the Jews was a special dignation and favour. He sheweth his word unto Jacob, his statutes and his judgments unto Israel: He hath not dealt so with any nation, and as for his judgments they have not known them. This was a great treasure, which the Jews had, when the neighbouring countries were not admitted to the favour of a divine revelation. The study of this law is frequently pressed upon them: And the devout Plalmist doth upon all occasions express the great esteem which he had for it. It was fweeter to him than hony, more valuable than gold and silver; 'twas the joy of his heart, the desire of his soul, the delight of his eyes, and the great comfort of his life. Jesus himself shewed all due reward to the law of Moses. He professed, that he did not come to destroy the law and the prophets, he puts the people upon searching the scriptures; he was circumcised according to the law; he wore such a garment, as the law of Moses prescribed; he obferved the feasts, which the law appointed; and when he had healed the leper, he fends him to the priest to do according to the law of Moses: The Jews had no cause to quarrel with our Lord in this matter. St. Paul, who was the apossle of the gentiles, yet allows, that the giving of the law to the Jews was a singular privilege and advantage. He reckons it their great benefit, that unto them were committed the oracles of God, and that to them pertained the covenants, and the giving of the law. Deut. iv. 8. Psal exivii. 19, 20. Psal. xix. 10. Ps. xl. 8. Ps. exix. 70, 72, 92, 97, 136. Mat. v. 17. Joh. v. 39. Luk. ii. 21. Mat. x. 20 Luk. ii. 41. Joh. ii. 13, 23. and ch. vii. 2. Mat. viii. 4. Rom. iii. 1, 2. Rom. ix. 4.

AND as the law of Moses came from God; so it must also be granted, that it was (as it is called by the Pfalmist) a perfect law. That is, it was well fitted for that people to whom, and for that time in which, and for those ends for which it was given. It taught them their duty to God, their neighbour, and themselves; and laid before them such precepts, as concerned them as men, as members of a body politick, and of a church. It was so full and so complete, that it wanted nothing for the end, for which it was designed. It was expressly provided, that they to whom it was given, should neither add to it, nor diminish from it. Te shall not add unto the word, which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the LORD your GOD, which I commanded you. It was indeed full of rites and ceremonies, but it required nothing immoral, and did not allow of the least shadow of idolatry: Its precepts were just, they were consistent, they were plainly revealed, and sufficiently confirmed. Indeed many rites and ceremonies were prescribed: But as they were of GoD's own appointment; so they were ordained for wise ends also, viz. to keep the people from idolatry, to which they were prone, and from the foppish and superstitious usages of their neighbours; for a proof of their obedience to Go D, and for the fore-shadowing of some better things to come: they were many of them very instructive, and were so many sacraments or symbols of very weighty things. Pfal. xix. 7. Deut. iv. 2.

NOTWITHSTANDING

Notwithstanding what hath been faid, it doth not follow that the law of Moses was never to be altered: The Jews might not add or diminish, but God himself was not bound by that law. It stood upon diyine authority, and was revealed by God, but it doth not thence follow, that the same authority, which set it up, could not take it away; Godno where tells us, that this is his last revelation, and that he intended it should be taken as such. Neither is God obliged to reveal his mind all at once. He may make what laws he pleaseth, and add to them when he will. Nay God himself doth expressly declare, that he would make a new covenant 1 And it is added, Not according to the covenant, that I made with their fathers, in the day that I took them by the hand, to bring them out of the land of Egypt, Jer. xxxi. 31, 32. It reflects no dishonour upon God to say, that he reverses some constitutions of his own, that he alters or adds to his own laws. All the laws, which proceed from him, are not of the same importance and moment: The Jews themselves will own this, and the thing is very evident and plain. This appears from the great er or less punishments assigned to the transgressors of these laws. There were some sins so great, as admitted no sacrifice to expiate them. There were others, which were easily atoned for. We do not call the wisdom of God in question, nor disparage his law, when we shew how far short it comes of the gospel. For all this while we do but compare one divine revelation with another. God made the heaven and the earth, and all that which he made, was good: It is no reflection upon his wisdom, or goodness, or veracity to fay, that God will make a new heaven and a new earth. For GOD who promised to make a new covenant, promised to make a new hear ven and earth also. Isa lxvi. 22.

THESE things I thought fit to premise, that I might proceed in this weight ty argument with the greater caution: I shall now consider the law of Moses more particularly in order to the proving this, that the gospel of Christ doth excel it.

The whole body of the law of Moses comprize th those precepts given by him, which were either moral, ecclesiastical, or civil. The moral law concerned them as men, and was given at mount Sinai in ten distinct precepts or commandments. These are called the word or wards of God, and the words, and the words of the covenant; (word in scripture phrase signifying an intire sentence, or precept) Psal. cxlvii. 19. Exod. xx. 1. Deut. iv. 13. x. 4. Exod. xxxiv. 28. Gal. v. 14. Mark. vii. 13. with Matth. xv. 6. The other laws, which Moses gave, are expressed by statutes and judgments, Psal. cxlvii. 19. as the moral are by word, or words in the same place.

As for statutes the <sup>2</sup> Jewish writers tell us, that they are to be understood of those precepts, the reason whereof is not revealed, or at least is not obvious and plain: Such were the laws concerning divers kinds, concerning the scape goat, and the red beiser and the like: And to these belong the ceremonial and ritual precepts, which concerned the Hebrews as they were a church.

JUDGMENTS are such precepts, as are more agreeable to reason and such as might (at least in some measure) be found out by it. Such are those,

which

a Bechai in Legem. fol. 185. Abravenel, fol. 177.

which relate to adultery and theft, &c. These have relation to a polity or civil society: As for example, the several specialities contained under the general prohibition of theft (where Abravenel reckons up no less than ten) are called judgments; and so are those precepts called, which we find in Exed. xxi. &c. and that whole section of the law is called ששטח, or judgments, containing several judicial laws, or laws which respected the Hebrews as they were a commonwealth, or civil society.

THESE statutes and judgments contain the laws of their church and state: And Judaism, as considered in contradistinction to Christianity, consisted in the solemn profession of, and obedience to these laws, which God had

given to the Jewish nation.

I SHALL now proceed to what I mainly intended to speak to, viz. to

FIRST, The defects of that law, which was given by Moses.

SECONDLY, That these desects are made up and supplied by the gospel of Jesus Christ.

THIRDLY, The use and application of this doctrine.

I. THE defects of that law, which was given by Moses. For it will appear, that it is defective if compared with the gospel. The divine author of the epistle to the Hebrews argues very strongly to this purpose. For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second. For finding fault with them he saith, Behold the days come, saith the LORD, &c. This he infers from the very words in the prophet, where God declares himself in this matter; and it is very evident, that the words of the prophet are by this divine author truly applied to the times of the MESSIAS, whose miraculous birth is predicted in the very same chapter in those words, A woman shall compass a man: For b it is evident, that those words do refer to the stupendous manner of the birth of the MESSIAS; I shall therefore proceed to shew the defects of the law of Moses, as compared with the gospel, and that in the following particulars, Heb. viii. 7, 8. with Jer, xxxi. 31. and with ver. 22.

I. In its precepts and commands, as it was a rule of life. These precepts are not such as perfect human nature, and make men better who obey them; but, obedience to them was necessary, only because it was commanded. They were not such things as tend immediately to make men better in their tempers and inclinations. They were good, because they were commanded; they were not therefore commmanded because they were antecedently good. We doubt not, but that God commanded them for wise ends during the minority of his church; but as they were not to endure for ever (of which I may have occasion elsewhere to speak more largely) so are they far from

being of equal moment and value with the laws of Jesus.

THESE c laws of Moses were given to the Jews, and not intended to oblige all mankind. The Jews themselves frankly confess this. And several of them were of that nature, that they could not be supposed to concern any of the rest of the world. Such were all those laws, which were founded upon fomething, which had happened to that people, and of which the observances required were but memorials or testimonies: Thus the passover, being appointed in remembrance of their deliverance out of Egypt, was a peculiar law to that people, who were delivered thence. The other nations were

<sup>&</sup>gt; Vide Dr. Pocock Not. Miscell. in Portam Moss. pag 348. c Cosri. par. 1.

not under the same obligation; nor do we find, that the Jews went about to impose their law upon the neighbouring countries. The world had continued considerably above two thousand years before the law of Moses, and there were in the world very considerable examples of piety in that time: When the law was given, it was given to the Jews; but they admitted of proselytes to live among them, who did not undertake an obedience to the laws of Moses. The things themselves, which Moses requires, are not things in which all men are concerned: Indeed generally speaking they are of that nature, that they cannot belong to any, but to them only to whom they were revealed. All men are bound to be just, and to speak the truth, to worship God, and to be chaste, and the like: But for wearing fringes on garments, or frontlets between the eyes, for eating or forbearing fuch or fuch meats and drinks, &c. no man could be obliged to these laws, but those persons who had received them from heaven. For the Jews do confess, that the reason of their laws is not always to be found out, and consequently the laws themselves cannot be supposed to oblige mankind. Forthough the will of God be reason enough for our obedience; yet it is so only to them, to whom it is made known. And therefore those laws of Moses, which were not founded in any other reason than the will of GoD, could never be designed to oblige all the world. Cicero d affirms it to be the opinion of the wifest men, that a law is something eternal, wisely governing the whole world by its affirmative and negative precepts, and that the prime and ultimate law, Mentem esse omnia ratione aut cogentis aut vetantis dei. i. e. is the divine mind governing all things with reason. We do not question the wisdom of God, who by Moses gave laws to the Jews, we only say, that they were not intended for the whole world, which would have been concerned in them, if they had been agreeable to the necessities, and the best improved reason of all mankind, and had been written in the hearts of all men.

AND as these laws were only given to the Jews; so many of these laws did not oblige them in any place besides their own land, to which they were annexed, which they would have done, if they had been laws good antecedently, and such as had been founded upon the eternal reason of things. The Jews do allow, that so it was; and do frequently in their writings distinguish between those laws, which obliged them within the land, and those, which obliged them without the land of Israel. And there are a very great number of precepts, which were annexed to that very land, in which they lived, and to which they were not obliged any longer, than they kept the possession of that land. So that what was their duty, whilst they lived together in Canaan, ceased so to be, when they were dispossessed of it, and were scattered abroad into other countries. I shall not go about to number up the precepts, which were annexed to that land: I should too much enlarge, if I should give in the full number of them: I shall however name some. The Jews acknowledge, that the sheaf, that was first reaped, must be of the growth of Canaan, and so mustalso the first-fruits be, which are elsewhere mentioned in their law, and the loaves of shew bread must be made of the corn of that country. The laws which concerned tithes, the sabbatical year, their year of jubilee, their festival rites, their cities of refuge, their expiation of an uncertain murther, and very many others did only oblige them in their own land.

AND there were many other laws, which were restrained to the place, which God should chuse, and to the fanctuary; and those precepts were

T

determined

determined to that very place. If the same thing were done elsewhere, it was an abomination. The difference of place made a great difference in the same action. That would pass for an act of obedience in one place, which in another would be an act of rebellion. The very many laws concerning facrifices, and the rites of offering them up, did all belong to the fanctuary: The precepts concerning the stew-bread, the offering incense, the dressing the candles, the vestments of the priests, the Sota or woman suspected of adultery, and very many others were peculiarly annexed to the sanctuary or temple: And when that was destroyed and out of the Jews possession, they were discharged from all those precepts. And then for the city of Jerusalem, after God had made choice of that place, there were a very great number of the precepts of Moses, which were to be performed there, and obliged them no where else. Thither they were to go three times a year to appear before God, and to worship him at the solemn times appointed: They might not keep their festivals in another place: There they must eat their peace-offerings, their first-fruits and (the greater part at least of) their second tithes, and there they must keep their passover, Deut. xvi. 2. so that upon the whole matter, these laws (and they are not a few in number) cannot be kept any longer, than they kept in the possession of their land. And God by his providence hath rendered these precepts unpracticable. Besides, as the laws about sacrifices were annexed to a certain place; so the offering them up belonged only to one family, viz. the sons of Aaron: No man else might sprinkle the blood, nor might any of that family do it, who had a blemist, which rendered him uncapable; and it might be that he would be rendered so by some natural and not culpable infirmity. So that the Jews are not now able to practife a great part of the law of Moses. Their c temple is destroyed, and their facrifices fall with it: Their city is taken from them, and they are now discharged from their festival appearances: They are not obliged to pay tithe of that land, which they do not posses, nor to build cities of refuge, where they have no inheritance. It will be hard to find the genuine priests and Levites after so long a dispersion: And if the priesthood be changed, there must of necessity be a change also of the law: Heb. vii. 12. There can be no sacrifice without a priest, without a temple, or an altar.

MANY were the laws, which were political, and concerned them as they were a community or body politick, which could last no longer than they continued in that condition. When the frame of their government was dissolved (as it was, when they were dispersed into several countries) those laws were rendered unpracticable; and consequently were never intended to continue for ever. All f those laws concerning setting a king over them, and about capital punishments in criminal cases; concerning the dividing their land, and preserving their land-marks; about destroying the idolatrous cities, and their making of war; those concerning servants, and buying and selling, and damages, and succession unto the estates of the deceased, &c. are not now to be practised by the Jews, who live in strange countries, and must not pretend to any jurisdiction or liberty inconsistent with the laws of those countries, in which they live.

Or such a sort were many, I may say, most of the laws of Moses: They were very minute things, which were prescribed, and the observation of so

many

Euleb. Demonstr. 1. 1. c. 6, 7. Corigen, contra Celsum. 1. 7.

many things was very difficult and uneasie to the Jews, as well as very costly, when they were in their own land; but now are impossible to be observed. They were never easie under the yoke; but now by the providence of God they are released from bearing of it. It is true, there was no evil thing required by their law; but yet for their hardness of heart and stubbornness some things were suffered and permitted, which were at least imperfections and defects: Such were polygamy, and divorces, and the liberty of exacting a strict reparation for all the wrong or damage which was re-

2. I CONSIDER the reward, which was added to the law of Moses to encourage the obedience of the Jews. It will appear, that the reward was proportionate to the precepts: They were temporary and topical, they were minute and imperfect; and the reward annexed was of the same nature and kind; it was temporal and of this lower world. Such as long life, victory over enemies, plenty and prosperity: Things very fit to work upon carnal minds, and to invite a people of a worldly temper to obey those precepts,

which Moses laid before the Jews.

There is no express promise of eternal life to be found in the law of Mofes: This is no where inserted into the patt or covenant, which God made with that people. I grant, that the holy men under the law of Moses (and before that law was given also) had the expectation of a future state of bliss. But this was not expressly promised in that law, nor as a reward of their obedience to it. There were a sect of the Jews, called the Sadduces, who allowed that the law of Moses was from heaven, and yet denied a future state: This they would scarcely have done, had eternal life been expressly promised in that law. I do not question, but that the hope of eternal life was to be found among the more pious and devout Jews: I grant, that it was infinuated under temporal promises, and especially under that of a land flowing with milk and honey: But then the earthly Canaan lay so fair and open to their prospect (as an excellent person expresses it well) as easily intercepted the view of the heavenly; and their faith must remove, at least overlook, that mountain, before it could come to any sight of the horizon, and extended sky. If any of the Jews had any fight of heaven, it was such a fight as Moses had of the land of Canaan; he saw it at a distance from the top of Pisgah, but did not see it as Josbua the son of Nun saw it, who went over Jordan, and took possession of it, according to the express promise, which he had before received to that purpose.

Now then it cannot be supposed, that there should be many men of eminent virtue under that religion, the precepts whereof were temporary, and the promises but temporal. And they, who were arrived to an high pitch of sanctity under that dispensation, attained to that degree from an higher principle, than the letter of the law of Moses would have raised them to. It must be granted, that the hope of riches and plenty hath a mighty force and influence upon men; but it is only upon carnal worldlings that it hath this influence; and the love of this world is generally so far from advancing piety, that it obstructs it, and is the root of all evil. The Jew obeyed the law of Moses for the sake of worldly prosperity; and when he had obtained it, it would be a temptation and a snare to him: The very reward of obedience was a temptation to rebel. And though plenty and prosperity are promised often in the law of Moses as a reward; yet they are often mentioned as a snare too: The Jews are often cautioned against sinning against God, when

Ta

when they are bleffed with worldly prosperity. Such promises might have some influence in inclining men to obey the letter of the law; but they did not move men powerfully to obey the inward and spiritual meaning of it.

3. Another great defect in the law of Moses was, that it did not furnish the Jews, to whom it was given, with power and ability to obey. It did rigorously command obedience; but it did not help men to perform it. They had not that power assured to them from God's promise, by which they might be enabled to obey the moral precepts, which they had received. The plentiful effusion of the HOLY GHOST was a blessing reserved for the times of the MESSIAS, or the latter days, and is therefore promised as a suture blessing by the prophets themselves. The law was written, which Moses gave; it was not kept from the Jews: But the writing it upon their hearts was promised as a part of the new covenant, which God would make with them. The letter of the law was that, which the Jews regarded, they did not give obedience to the inward and spiritual meaning of it. The law of Moses made nothing perfect, it did not reform as well as teach: They who were exercised in the precepts of Moses, were not renewed by them: The law was weak and ineffectual, and it did not give life and power to obey. Hence it is, that it is called flesh in the new Testament, to intimate the weakness of that law. It was a shadow of good things to come, and consequently was not attended with the power, which accompanied those better things, when they were exhibited. If a. xxxv. 7. with chap. xliv. 3. foel ii. 28. with Act. ii. 17. fer. xxxi. 33. with Heb. viii. 10. Heb. vii. 11, 18, 19. Gal. iii. 21. Rom. vii. 8. chap. viii. 3. Gal. iv. 9. Heb. x. 1.

4. The law of Moses was desective, when compared with the gospel, in that it gave not the assurance of pardon, nor laid that foundation for the easing and quieting the consciences of men, which the gospel of Christ is attended with. The law of Moses was a yoke, which the Jews were never able to bear. They were subjected to the curse of that law, who consirmed not all the words of it to do them. It consisted of very many precepts, and shey were very nice and operose, such as required great attention and heed, cost and great labour, very uneasy to be observed, and yet the neglect of any of them exposed the neglectors to the curse of that law. Hence it is, that the law is called by the apostle the ministration of death and of condemnation. And that state, in which the Jews were under the law of Moses, is represented not only as a state of minority, but as a state of bondage and slavery also, Att. xv. 10. Deut. xxvii. 26. with Gal. iii. 10. 2 Cor. iii. 7, 9. Gal. iv. 3, 24.

And indeed it must needs be such a condition, that the Jews were under; and it will be evident that such it was, when it is considered, that they were greatly straitned between the great difficulty in keeping, and the great danger of breaking those laws. They must be uneasse in their own minds, who are perpetually in danger of offending and of being punished. There was no way lest for them for perfect ease and quiet to their consciences, if the law was considered as a covenant of works. There was not that pro vision made then for such a peace of mind, which was made afterward in the time of the Messias. It is true, that there were sacrifices allowed, and prescribed in that law for the atonement and expiation of the offender; but there are many things to be considered, which do speak the desectiveness of sacrifices under the law, and show the necessity of some better provision:

And to that purpose I desire, that the following particulars may be duly considered.

FIRST, That for some sins there was no expiatory sacrifice allowed in the law of Moses, and consequently the offender was lest without hope of pardon, notwithstanding the provision made under the law by sacrifices for the obtaining of it. In many cases the sinner was to bear his own iniquity, and could hope for no pardon from any sacrifice whatsoever. And there are very many sins of this sort: Such were wilful murther, and blasphemy, and many other sins of which we may see Lev. xx. And indeed all those sins which were committed with an high hand were of this sort: And whatever hope there might be for the sinner, who was surprized, and sinned ignorantly; yet if he it did presumptuously, and was guilty of those sins which admitted no atonement, he was lest without hope from the law of Moses, and was to die the death. And if the supream magistrate did not condemn him, God declared, that he would set his face against him, and cut him off. But of this I have before discoursed: Psal. li. 16. Levit. xxiv. 17. and ver. 13. Numb. xxxv. 31, 32. Levit. xx. 5.

SECONDLY, That where facrifices were not only allowed but prescribed by God himself; yet they were not things of their own nature pleasing unto God: And God did declare this frequently to the Jews, and declared it after such a manner, as might well beat them off from relying upon the sacrifices, which they brought to procure their pardon and atonement. I might heap up scriptures to this purpose; but I shall content my self with these that follow. I will not reprove thee for thy sacrifices, or thy burnt offerings to have been continually before me: I will take no bullock out of thine house, nor be-goat out of thy folds. Again, I desired mercy and not sacrifice. And, I spake not unto your fathers nor commanded them, in the day that I brought them out of the land of Egypt concerning burnt-offerings or sacrifices: But this thing commanded I them, saying, Obey my voice, &c. Again, To what purpose is the multitude of your sacrifices unto me? saith the LORD: I am full of the burnt-offerings of rams, and the fat of fed beasts; And I delight not in the blood of bullocks or of lambs, or of he-goats: Bring no more vain oblations tions, &c. Again, He that killeth an ox, as if he slew a man: He that sacrificeth a lamb, as if he cut off a dog's neck: He that offereth an oblation, as if he offered swines blood: He that burneth incense, as if he blessed an idol, Psal. l. 8, 9. Hos. vi. 6. Jer. vii. 22, 23. Isa. i. 11, 13. lxvi. 3.

God did indeed not only allow, but in certain cases command sacrifices. But God required obedience to his covenant antecedently to sacrifices. This was his first intention, and not sacrifice; for that he required only consequently, and as a remedy when the sin was committed. Sacrifice, like repentance, was but tabula post naufragium: It was the way of reconciling sinners, when they had offended. Sacrifices were enjoyned after the law, which was the rule of life, was given: And not only the moral law was given, before sacrifices were commanded; but the political law was delivered, before the particular laws about the kinds and rites of sacrifice were given out. God would have them obey, and rather not need than bring a facrifice. For a sacrifice was but a substitute upon the failure of obedience, it was the sinners refuge. Hath the Lord as great delight in burnt-offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the Lord? Behold to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams. And Solomon adviseth us to be

z pag. 10.

more

more ready to hear (i. e. to obey,) than to give the facrifice of fools. I Sam. xv. 22. Eccl. v. 1.

And this is no more than what the Jews themselves are forced to confecs. Maimonides hacknowledgeth, that God put a great difference between that part of his worship, which consisted in oblations, and that which consisted in prayer and supplication: That oblations and sacrifices were but the second intention of God; and that prayers and suplications were agreeable to his first. He adds to my present purpose. That though oblations and sacrifices were offered up to the honour of God; yet the Jews had not the liberty in that matter, which the ancients enjoyed. For the Jews might not offer them up in any place, or at any time. They might not build a temple where they pleased, nor offer what they list, nor by the hands of any men indifferently, but they were determined to a certain place, and to certain persons, who were of the samily of the priests; which are diminutions of that kind of divine worship: whereas prayer and supplication were allowed in every place, and by every person. Now this is an argument, that is facrifices were not of their own nature things acceptable and pleasing to God; for if they had been so, they would not have been required of the Jews with such restraint, as we find them attended with. Twas obedience that God required, and sacrifices in the second place, and not for their own sakes: This the Jews themselves will allow.

God did not accept an expiatory facrifice for the sake of the oblation: It was then only welcome, when it was a testimony of the repentance and the devotion of the offerer. There was no sacrifice, that was in its own nature good; and separately considered accepted with Gop. If the sacrifice was piacular, then it was the contrition of the offerer, which gave it a sweet savour: If it was eucharistical, it was accepted only as it was a pledge or token of the grateful resentment of God's mercies in him that brought it, or an argument of homage in him who presented it. Sacrifice was a federal oblation; it was never welcome alone: It was at best but πυερ'ς τερφή, i. c. The element of the fire. The sacrifice of the wicked is an abomination to the LORD. And the unrighteous man, who kills an ox, is as if he slew a man. God looks at the offerer. Cain who hated his brother, was unwelcome to to God's altar; and our Saviour would have the uncharitable man reconciled to his brother, before he offer his gift. The contrite and thankful, the penitent and humble, will not be rejected. Holy dispositions and tempers are always pleasing.

### Hec cedo ut admoveam templis, & farre litabo.

IF an and an evil unjust man offer (says Philo) his victims go for nothing, and his sacrifices are profane; his vows are infamous and very destructive: These do not destroy sin, but rather bring it to remembrance. But if the offerer be holy and righteous, the sacrifice remains, when the sless is consumed; yea though there be no oblation offered up: For nothing is more truly a sacrifice, than the piety of a soul, who is a lover of God.

THIRDLY, That where facrifices were offered by God's command, and according to his direction in all respects, and where an expiation or atonement was effected and obtained; yet in that case the expiation did not proceed from the worth and value of the oblation. And things were so

<sup>-</sup> h More Nevokim. p. 111. c. 32. i Vid. Bechai in Legem, fol. 135. col. 2. & 137. col. 4. Abravenel præfat. in Levit. c. 4. M. Ben Israel & eoncillat. p. 181. k Οὐ λύσι ἀμακετημάταν ἀλλ ὑπόμινησιν ἰργάζοθαι. Phil. Jud. de Vita Moss, l. 3.

ordained, that the Jews might be sensible, that the sacrifices did not of their own force, or upon the score of their value procure the offerers pardon. And to that purpose I shall annex an observation of Maimonides. He tells us that, By how much a fin was the greater by so much the oblation was of the less value: And he gives several instances to this purpose, where under the law of Moses the greater crimes were expiated with the cheaper sacrifice. Nor is this the single opinion of Maimonides only, Abravenel m assents unto it. If this be so, there cannot be a more evident proof than this, for the purpose for which I make use of it, viz. to prove, that the sacrifices did not procure the offerers pardon upon the score of their intrinsick value. For if they had,

the greater offences would have required the most costly sacrifices.

IT is also otherwise very evident, that the sacrifices and purifications under the law did not reconcile the offerer, and the unclean upon the score of their own vertue, and intrinsick worth; no more than the brazen serpent cured the Israelites by its own inherent vertue: The scape-goat, that did bear upon him all the iniquities of the congregation, did not remove the sins of the people by any inherent vertue or sanctity: Nay, it was so far from it, that the man, who let him go, was defiled by him, and might not, till he had washed his cloaths, and bathed his slesh in water, come into the camp. Levit. xvi. 26. The water of purification was of a very extensive use for the purifying those, who were legally unclean: The ashes of a red heiser was of principle moment as an ingredient in that water; but those ashes did not purific from any vertue of their own: The priest who ministred in that preparation, was obliged to bathe his flesh, and wash his cloaths, and so washe who burnt the heifer: And whereas a man, who was legally clean, was to gather up those ashes, which were the principal ingredient in the water of purification; yet that very man, who was clean before he gathered the ashes, was by gathering of them rendered unclean, and likewise obliged to wash his cloaths. Numb. xix. 7, 8, 9, 10. However, as these ashes served to purifie the people, who were unclean; so it appears that they did it not upon the score of their inherent vertue, because they defiled him that was clean Well then might the author of the epistle to the Hebrews say, It is not possible, that the blood of bulls and goats should take away sins, Heb. x. 4. There was no proportion between the guilt and the facrifice.

FOURTHLY, The offerer, who brought an expiatory facrifice, was not allowed to partake of the offering, which he brought; and consequently had the less hope from that oblation, which he offered up. It was the custom of the Jews as well as of the ancient heathens to feast upon their sacrifices: and when they did so, it was a token of reconciliation: Eating and drinking together was a federal right, and a token of friendship, as n I have elsewhere shewed: And as it was esteemed so among men; so it was between God and the Israelites: Where the Israelites were admitted to partake of the sacrifices, it was allowed them as a sign of their being reconciled, and as a token of God's favour and good will to them. But this was never allowed them, when they brought piacular or expiatory facrifices; in that case they did never partake of the altar. For the burnt offering, which was a facrifice expiatory, was entirely consumed: Neither priest nor people did partake of it. The skin was the priest's, but all the slesh was entirely consumed. As for the fin and trespass-offerings the pricets generally speaking (but not always)

<sup>1</sup> More Nevoch. p. 3. c. 46. , m Abravenel in Legem. fol. 251. col. 3. n Discourse of the Lord's Supper, chap. 1. WCIC

were allowed a stare; but the people who brought these offerings, were, not allowed to partake of them: In peace-offerings, which were eucharifical. (and took in vows and free-will-offerings) where the offerer did not come tomake atonement for his fin, a part was offered upon the altar, a part was allowed to the prieft, and a part was also allowed to the people, who brought the facrifice. This was a pledge or token of the favour of God, when they were admitted to partake of the altar. But when the people were not allowed this liberty (as they were never allowed it when they brought expiatory facrifices) when the eating of blood was universally forbidden, and the eating the flesh of piacular facrifices was not allowed to the people; they could have but faint. hopes of pardon and Go D's favour, from these victims which they brought. This denoted the imperfection of those facrifices, and that they could not be confided in or relied upon: They were consumed, when they were offered; there was no part left to nourish the offerer, and to give him any just hope, that Go D. was appealed, and his justice satisfied, and that he was received to his favour again. If he had been admitted to partake of the altar, he might have looked on himself as God's guest and friend, one that eat of his meat, and consequently in his favour. But it was quite otherwise. The sinner brought his offering to the altar, imparted to it his guilt, it died in his room or stead, and this is all that he had to do with it. It did not come back to him from the altar. no part of the flesh was lest for him, as a token that Go D was satisfied with the rest, and he had no nourishment out of what was thus offered: The sinner imparted death to the beast which he sacrificed; but that did not impart life or nourishment to him back again.

FIFTHLY, Another argument of the weakness of those legal sacrifices may be drawn from the repetition of them. They are weak remedies, which must be frequently renewed: It is an argument, that they had not power to remove fins, and to rid the offerer for the future from the like miscarriages. They did neither secure the offerer against the power, or against the guilt of his sins for the time to come. And this argument is used by the author of the epistle to the Hebrews, and it is a most unexceptionable one. The law (says he) can never with those sacrifices, which they offered year by year continually, make the comers thereunto perfect. For then would they not have ceased to be offered; because that the worshippers once purged should have bad no more conscience of For in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. Heb. x. 1, 2, 3. The return of the sacrifices, which were constantly offered at their stated times, was an argument, that the disease was not cured, which they were brought to remove. If the remedy had been powerful, it would at once have removed the cause; But as an argument that it was weak, it was frequently repeated. Thus it was under the law of Moses; Every priest standeth daily ministring, and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away fins. Heb. x. 11.

SIXTHLY, Those sacrifices under the law, as they were carnal in themselves, so they were in their effects also. Those gifts and sacrifices could not make him, that did the service, perfect, as pertuining to the conscience. Heb. ix. 9. They did not mend the mind of the man, they did not reform his inward temper and inclination: The Mosaical observances were but carnal ordinances; and the blood of bulls and goats, and the ashes of an heiser sprinkling the unclean, they did indeed sanctify, but it was only to the purifying of the flesh. ver. 10, 13. These things did remove the carnal and legal uncleannels; but they did not cleanse the heart of him, that was spiritually desided.

Those oblations and purifications did remove some legal pollutions and impediments: As for example; He who was under a legal impurity, was excluded from the camp or city, and from the company of his brethren; he might not be admitted to the mountain of the Lord's house, who was under the legal uncleanness of issues or flux: He that was desiled by the dead, might not come into the Chel, or inclosure about the courts of the sanctuary: There were other legal uncleannesses, which debarred men of the liberty of going into the court of women and that of Israel: But all these restraints were taken off by the sacrifices and purifications allowed and prescribed in the law of Moses. And this is that sanctifying to the purifying of the sless, which the author of the epistle to the Hebrews mentions. But alas, these things did not purify or quiet the conscience of the sinner. They neither made him better for the survey, nor did they remove the borrors of his conscience upon the account of his greater crimes and immoralities.

H E might come into the congregation, who was before excluded, and he might be admitted to the fanctuary, who by the law was before denied that liberty; but still the man was the same, when these legal impediments were taken out of the way. He was not renewed in his mind, he was not eased in his conscience, nor secured any more by this course against future evils, either here or hereafter.

SEVENTHLY, It is evident, that where facrifice was allowed toward the obcining pardon, yet sometimes the pardon was not obtained by the sacrifice; for the piacular facrifice was but one of the conditions, upon which the pardon of the offerer did depend: So that supposing the facrifice offered up exactly according to the law; yet the finner was not thereupon remitted. In case of trespass and wrong there was required by the law of Moses confession of the sin, and restitution also of the principal, and sometime the addition of a fifth part as well as a facrifice. Numb. v. 7. As in some cases no facrifice was admitted; so at other times where it was allowed, yet it did not restore him to favour, some other things being also required necessary to his pardon as well as that. The Jews othernselves tell us, That the day of expiation did not procure the pardon of those sins, which men committed against their brethren, till they had given satisfaction to their brethren, whom they had injured. If they had injured them in words, they were bound to appeale them, and to be reconciled; if they had done it in their goods, they were bound to make restitution.

EIGHTHLY, It was a very hard thing for the Jew to know, whether he was pardoned or not: And notwithstanding the provision made by sacrifices; yet that provision could not ease the sinner's mind. We will suppose the greatest care used to obtain pardon by an expiatory sacrifice; yet the offerer would be left uneasse in his own mind. In such a multitude of precepts, and of that nature also, which the Mosaical were, it was almost impossible for a man to know, whether he had transgressed or not, and consequently whether he was obliged to bring his sin or trespass-offering. Hence it was, that the Jews appointed a trespass-offering, which they call with the consequence of a doubtful trespass-offering, which they thought themselves obliged to bring, when it was a doubtful case, whether they had transgressed or not:

LASTLY,

o Joma cap. 8.

LASTLY, It is very certain, that these sacrifices of the law of Moses were not to continue for ever. The Jews were given to understand so much, and God taught them this more ways than one. He annexed them to a certain place, and to a certain family, who were to offer them up; and when that place was no longer in the possession of the Jews, they were discharged from all their obligation to offer sacrifices at once. And besides that, many of them were but types and shadows of things to come, and were therefore in due time to cease. God did expressly foretel this to the Jews, and the Jewish writers themselves are forced to confess no less. Of the Messias the prophet Daniel foretels, that he should cause the facrifice and oblation to cease, Dan. ix. 27. That is, all the offerings made by fire whatsoever. The author of the epistle to the Hebrews tells us the same of burnt-offerings and sacrifices for sin. Heb. x. 6. That is, such sa-crifices which were expiatory. And there is a saying to this purpose among the Jewish p writers, that every Corban or sacrifice should cease; but that the sacrifice of praise should never cease. And this saying of the Jews relates to the days of the MESSIAS. The sacrifices allowed in the law of Moses were of very little moment in their own nature: They were never designed to continue longer than the city, the temple and altar stood, to which they were annexed. The aexpiatory facrifices were shadows of an invaluable oblation, and the others were euchariftical, which as to the main continue still. We now offer up our spiritual sacrifices, our prayers and out alms, and our whole felves to the great creator and governor of heaven and earth, the God and Father of Jesus Christ. The holy flame upon the altar, during the law of Moses, was (says Philo the Jew) will bear & wagesday, a symbol of thanksgiving; Those things were types or symbols (he tells us) of spiritual things, and that the grateful mind of a wife man is God's altar.

Thus I have given some account of the desects of the Jewish religion, as it was delivered to them by Moses, and as it stands compared with the religion, which our Jesus taught. I shall now proceed to shew,

II. THAT these desects are made up and supplied by the gospel of Jesus Christ, and that the Christian Religion is thereupon very far preserable to that of the Jews.

AND to the making this evident I shall

1. Consider the precepts of the Christian Religion, and look upon them as a rule of life, and we shall find them the most accurate rule, that ever was made known to the world. There is not any religion whatsoever parallel to the Christian.

THE precepts of this religion are agreeable to the reason of mankind, they tend to perfect humane nature, and render it like the divine: They approve themselves to the consciences of all wise and considering men; and those very men, who do not obey them, cannot but approve of them, and have an inward veneration for those who conscientiously observe them.

As to that duty, which we owe to God, we are taught to perform it in a manner becoming his divine majesty, and his adorable perfections. We are directed to believe him, to fear him above all, to love him with our whole heart, to trust in him, and depend upon him in all our straits and

P Midrash Tillim in Psal. Ivi. 12. vid. Abravenel de cap. fidei cum Vorstio c. 13. 4 vid. Seder Tephilloth fol. 6. c. 3. Venetiis Anno. 1566. 7 Phil. Jud. de Vistim. offerent.

needs,

needs, to fubmit quietly to his government, and to do his will: To worship him with pure hearts, to pray to him with great fervour and constancy;

to give him hearty thanks, and to do what we do for his glory.

And these duties are founded upon the greatest reason. For if we believe his veracity, we are obliged to give credit to his revelation, though we be not able to comprehend what he doth reveal. He that is almighty, ought to be feared above all, and he, who is only good and most beneficial to us, ought to be loved with our whole heart. Upon whom shall we trust and relie, but upon him who is able and willing to help them that trust in him? Is it not sit, that we should submit to him, who is infinitely wise, and who governs all things in heaven and earth? And whose will should we do but his, who is without iniquity, and who is just and right? If he is a spirit, it is sit, that we should worship him in spirit and in truth. And since we know that he hears, it is very reasonable, that we should at all times, and with great ardor pray unto him. And since we receive all good things from him, it is but just, that we should praise him as the author of all, and that we should glorise him as the ultimate end of all.

As for the duties, which we owe to one another, the Christian Religion gives the most incomparable rules. It requires a patient submission to our superiors and governors, even then when we suffer wrong. It teaches us the most exact justice, and the greatest humanity, and mercy to one another. It obligeth us to pray for our greatest enemies, and to forgive them, who do us the greatest wrong. It allows us to do no wrong to another, and to return none which is done to us. It is so far from allowing us to kill those, who are of another religion, that it permits us not to hate them. There is no friendship so inviolable and sacred, no justice so impartial, no charity so unseigned, extended and fervent, no gentleness so exemplary, as that which obtains among the genuine followers of Jesus. They who are such, live at perfect peace with one another; they think no evil, and are far from doing it: They love one another with a pure heart fer-

vently.

As to our selves, our holy religion recommends to us the profoundest humility, the greatest meekness under calumnies, patience under sufferings, and contentedness in every condition: It teaches the most unbroken fortitude, the most unspotted chastity, and the most unsbaken constancy; it teachest us strict temperance in eating and drinking, great moderation in the use of bodily exercises, painful diligence in our several callings, and a singular modesty and gravity; it put us upon the greatest simplicity, and candor, the greatest contempt of worldly

things, and the greatest hunger and thirst after spiritual.

This holy religion commends to our care and to our thoughts whatfoever things are true, honest (or venerable) just and pure, lovely and of
good report, that have any thing of vertue, and any just title to praise.
Phil. iv. 8. There is nothing commanded, that is mean and low, and unbecoming the greatest rank of men, the highest birth, or the most refined
wits. Here's nothing required of us, that is unreasonable and unaccountable.
We must be very humble, but here's room too for the greatest fortitude and
courage: We must be modest, but may not be sneaking and cowardly, and
afraid to appear for the truth. We must be grave, but need not be morose, just but not inclement, long-suffering but not stupid, and courteous but free
from foolish affectation: Here we are taught true greatness of mind but not
insolence, poverty of spirit without dejectedness, and a contempt of the world
U 2

without haughtiness; fortitude is commended but not audacity, constancy but not contumacy, and diligence but not anxious carefulness. This religion teaches us to prefer the publick good before our private, to prefer what is just to what we judge commodious, and to abridge our selves of our own li-

berties for the good of others.

What I Celsus objected of old against the Christians, that they shunned the dedication of altars, of statues and of temples, did but import, that their religion was spiritual, and so indeed it is, and 'tis a great persection which belongs to it. It is not charged and burthened with ceremonies, and ordinances, and rudiments of the world, as the law of Moses was. But what was enignatically and symbolically taught in the law of Moses, is plainly delivered in the Christian Religion: We are taught to offer up fervent prayers instead of incense, to pare away all superfluity of naughtiness instead of circumcising the fore-skin; we have our sacrifices of praise instead of the bloody sacrifices, and are taught to offer up to God our souls and bodies instead of the holocausts prescribed in that law: We are required to pay a reasonable service instead of that bodily one, which God required of

the Jews by Moses.

Those things, which our religion requires, are good in themselves, and the practice of them makes us better, and are therefore of general and universal good to mankind, and the whole race of mankind is concerned in them. They are not municipal or topical laws, which oblige only in one place or country; but they oblige every where, in all times, and all perfons whatsoever. The Christian " (says Origen) looks upon every place as a part of the universe, and upon the universe as the temple of God, and therefore prays in every place. We are all united by the religion of Jesus into one body, and are all concerned in his holy laws; The difference between the Jew and Gentile is quite taken away, and we are all one in CHRIST JESUS. This difference was once very great. The Jews were tied to certain ordinances and observations, which rendered them very different from the Gentile world, and they thought they could not converse with them by their religion, and did despise them greatly: Hence it was, that there was a great enmity between the one and the other; and thus things flood till Jesus came, and till he fuffered: But by x cancelling those distinguishing laws and ordinances, which he did by his cross, he abolished the enmity, and made peace: He did thereby reconcile both to God having flain the enmity, 1 Cor. xii. 13. Gal. iii. 28. Ephes. iii. 6.

THERE were some things allowed in the law of Moses upon the account of the hardness of the Jews hearts, and for the time of the Mosaical dispensation, which are now by the better law of Jesus superseded, such were polygamy and divorces: And many other things were required during that minority of the church, which we are in no wise obliged to: Our religion is full of the most weighty principles, and commends to us those things, which are of the greatest and highest importance whatsoever. I proceed to consider

2. The reward annexed to our obedience of these holy precepts, and that is eternal life. The fews were engaged to obey their law by promise of temporal rewards: Those rewards were very suitable to that carnal people, and very proportionate to those radiments of the world. Thus

r Vid. Orig. constr. Cellum, I. 8. r Col. ii. 20. u Origen contra Cellum, A. 7. Eph. ii. 14, 15.

we do with children, when they go to school, to learn their first elements. We allure them with knacks and toys, that we may engage them to lay the foundation of more manly wisdom.

——pueris dant crustula blandi Doctores, elementa velint ut discere prima.

God did thus by the Israelites. He invited them to obey those ordidances by the promise of victory, plenty, and long life: He designed all this while greater things, and though he did not clearly promise; yet he did intend to bestow the blessing of eternal life to his sincere and faithful servants. But the clear promise of eternal life was a blessing, which God reserved for the times of the gospel. The good men under the law obtained indeed a good report by faith: And by the great things which they did and suffered, they gave proof, that their faith was fincere, and accompanied with an hope that extended beyond this present state: But still the express promise of eternal life was reserved for the days of the Messias: And this is the clear meaning of the words of the author of the epistle to the Hebrews. Where y speaking of the holy men of old time, he adds. And these all having obtained a good report by faith, received not the promise. God having provided some better thing for us. This is the great perfection of the Christian institution, that it gives the clear promise, and sure hopes of eternal life. And 'tis mentioned as doing fo, when it is compared with the Mosaical institution. For the law made nothing perfect, i. e. it did not perfect those very men who lived under it, and submitted to it. For it not giving a full pardon for offences, and not affording express assurance of eternal life, it was not powerful enough to perfect those, who were under it. But then follows what the gospel doth. But the bringing in of a better hope did, by the which we draw nigh unto GoD. Where we find the gospel called the bringing in of a better hope, and that must be the hope of eternal life; for the hope of temporal good things was brought in by the law of Moses.

A GREEABLY hereunto it is also said of Jesus, that he was made a furety of a better testament. Heb. vii. 22. And a mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises. Heb. viii. 6. And it is essewhere said of Jesus, that he hath abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel. 2 Tim. ii. 10. And the 2 author of the epistic to the Hebrews speaks to the same purpose essewhere. He tests us, that there were two parts of the same stuary, which he calls two tabernacles; and that the priests went always si. c. constantly swice every day) into the first tabernacle accomplishing the service of God. viz. to offer incense, and to take care of the lamps: But into the serond went the high priest alone once every year not without blood, which he offered for himself and the errors of the people. Thus the high priest, at the day of expiation only, was admitted into the holy of holies: The meaning of this is expressed in the following words. The Holy Grost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all

y Heb. xi. 39, 40. 2 Heb. vii. 19. 2 Heb. ix. 6, 7, 8.

was

## A DEMONSTRATION

was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing. The meaning of which words is plainly this; that be the holy Spirit by this appointment in the Mosaical institution did intimate, that the way to heaven was not laid open during that dispensation; And this will evidently appear, from what hath been said before to this purpose. St. Peter besselfeth the God and father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy, hath begotten us again unto a lively hope (or an hope of life, as it is in another Greek copy, and that of eternal life also, as appears from the following words) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead. To an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you.

HERE we have an encouragement incomparably great, and such as will sufficiently move us to obedience. The hope of eternal life is enough to engage us to obey the precepts of JESUs, and to reconcile us to all the labour and difficulty, which may at any time attend upon our obedience. Eternal life imports more than we can express or comprehend: something more excellent than what our eye hath seen, our ear hath heard, or our shallow mind is able to conceive. Crowns and scepters, feasts and triumphs, worldly success and prosperity are but little and faint resemblances of the eternal, unspeakable, and inconceivable happiness. This is clearly revealed, the promise is often repeated, the thing promised is expressed by words of the highest import, and in such a manner as speaks the thing it self too big to be expressed, and too glorious to be comprehended by men, who dwell in the body. It is a reward stupendously great, and therefore very powerful; it is spiritual, and therefore engageth us to be so too; it is conditional, and therefore is fitted to secure our duty. The faint hope of riches, of honour, of temporal good things hath a mighty force: The hope of heaven, where it is well-grounded, believed, and considered with due application, will be of greater force to render us patient and diligent, and fervent in our obedience. I proceed to consider

III. The help and power to obey this religion, which the religion of Jesus is attended with. The laws of our Saviour have the promise of divine assistance annexed to them. The essusion of the Holy Ghost was a blessing reserved for the days of the Messias; Our Saviour promised this divine aid, and made good his word, as hath been shewn before: The d prophets of old did foretel, what our Jesus made good: And when Jesus did promise the holy Spirit to his followers, he did promise him as a comforter, who should abide with them for ever. Indeed the miraculous gifts of the Holy Ghost were not designed to continue in the church any longer, than the reason and the necessity of them continued. When the Christian doctrine was planted and universally received, then miracles ceased. But the holy spirit continues still in the church of Christ, and doth renew and purise the hearts of the sincere believers. We have the utmost assurance, that e we shall receive this holy spirit, who shelps our infirmities, and is greater in us;

Joh. xiv. e 2 Pet. i. 3, 4. d Joel ii. 28. Ifa. xxxv. 7. xliv. 3. Joh. xiv. e Luk. xi. 13. f Rom. viii. 26. 8 1 Joh. iv. 4.

than he who is in the world. The f gospel is the ministration of the fpirit, and of such a spirit as doth not kill (as the letter of the law did) but giveth life: "I is by g faith, and not by the law that we have the promise, and the assistance of the spirit. The gospel h is a state of liberty, of ingenuity and freedom: We are by this spirit freed from the greatest slavery and bondage; from the dominion of our lusts, and the dread and horrors of our conscience. We are enabled to obey, and endued with power to do, what our religion doth command. Hence it is, that the gospel, as it is i considered in opposition to the law, is called grace, or the grace of God in the new Testament; because it is accompanied with power or grace enabling us to yield obedience to the precepts of Jesus Christ. And our obligation to conquer our fins under the gospel is now inferred from our having embraced it. (ball not have dominion over you: For ye are not under the law, but under grace. i. e. Sin shall no longer over power you now; for ye are not under the law (which did indeed rigorously require obedience, but did not help you to obey) but ye are under grace, that is, ye are now admitted to a covenant of grace, where you have not only assurance of pardon upon your fincere repentance; but are encouraged also by the promise of eternal life, and offered assistance to enable you to obey.

On the other hand the law was weak, and had not; this promise of the Spirit annexed unto it. And upon the account of its weakness it is very frequently called 1 flesh in the new Testament, as the gospel is called the ministration of the Spirit upon the account of that power enabling us to obey, with which it is attended. And the legal ordinances are called weak and m beggarly elements, or rudiments. And indeed the law of Moses might be justly called weak, as compared with the doctrine of the gospel; for the law was not able to effect, what the gospel hath done; it " gave not life, it did not furnish men with power to yield an inward and spiritual obedience: Sin was forbid indeed by the law, but not kept under and restrained. It directed mens obedience, but it did not powerfully affift them. It was a yoke, but not an easie one, or like that which Jesus puts upon us, but such as the Jews knew neither how to o bear or to break. And hence it is, that they who were under the law are represented as in a state of slavery and servility. Whereas the law of Moses was weak, and they to whom it was given did transgress it, and were obnoxious to a curse, God P doth promise to the Jews to enter into a new and better covenant with them; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts, and will be their God, and they shall be my people.

I.SHALL in the next place take into consideration

IV. THE assurance of pardon of sin, which the gospel gives, and consequently the soundation, which it lays for the quieting our consciences, far beyond what was done by the law of Moses. I have be-

f 2 Cor. iii. 6, 8. 8 Gal. ii. 3, 5, 14. h Gal. iv. 6. Rom. viii. 3. 1 Rom. v. 21. Gal. v. 4. Tit. ii. 11. k Rom. vi. 14. l Rom. viii. 3. Gal. iv. 9. m Phil. iii. 3. with Rom. viii. 3. Gal. iii. 3. Heb. vii. 16. n Gal. iii. 21. Rom. vii. 5, 8. Act. xv. 10. Gal. iv. 3, 24. p Jer. xxxi. 33. fore

fore shewed the desectiveness of that provision by sacrifices, which was made in the law of Moses: I shall shew, that this is supplied in the covenant of grace made by Christ. And this was foretold very particularly as a special and peculiar grace belonging to this new covenant, as it is distinguished from that between God and Israel by the mediation of Moses, which God had promised to make. God promises not only to write the law upon their hearts, and consequently to work in them the saving knowledge of himself, but more especially assures them q of their pardon and remission. For I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.

THERE is nothing bears so hard upon a man, as his guilt. And in many things we offend all. We are all guilty more or less, and consequently obnoxious to the horrors of our conscience, and the wrath of God. This is the great torment of life, and there is no trouble like it. A guilty mind bears harder upon us than any outward trouble. And then he that hath sinned is anxious and suspicious, he is not easily assured of his pardon: he that broke the law of Moses was liable to the curse of it. And though sacrifices were allowed, yet I have shewed the desects of that pro-

vision.

But the gospel gives us the utmost assurance of our pardon, upon terms that are gentle and reasonable, and by no means to be refused. Whatever our fins have been, yet upon our repentance and fincere obedience for the future, we are fure of God's favour, and of his being reconciled to us: He befeecheth us now to be reconciled to him upon these gentle and casic terms: This is the tenor of this new covenant or covenant of grace, of which Jesus is the mediater: He hath procured this for us, he hath purchased this by his merits, sealed it by his own precious blood, assured it to us by his resurection, and powerful intercession; he consirmed it by stupendous miracles, proclaimed it to all the world by his messengers, and given us the signs and evidences of it by his hely sacraments, and solemn instations. There is nothing wanting to insure this our pardon unto us: Here's no shadow left for our doubt or anxious scars; but we have all the possible r assurance, which we can desire. While we were yet sinners CHRIST died for us: Much more then being now justified by his blood we shall be saved from wrath through him. For if when we were enemies we were reconciled to God by the death of his son: much more being reconciled we shall be saved by his life. These last words contain an argument invincible, and altogether unanswerable, and such as affords the strongest consolation: If Gop looked after us when we were his avowed enemies, if even then he gave up his most dear Son to death, and at so great an expence restored us to favour, surely he will now not abandon us to destruction. He that was so kind to his enemies, will not now forsake his friends. So great and dear a love will not be extinguished. It was a great price (and an instance of the greatest love) by which we were reconciled, when we were enemies; 'twas by the death of the son of God. We had little reason to expect this favour and this expence. But now we may be saved without his giving up his Son again to death and need not therefore doubt, but that we shall be savedby his life. The Jew

under

<sup>9</sup> Jer. xxxi4 344 FRom. v. 8, 9, 10.

under the law of Moses had great cause to sear, for when he transgressed (and that he did when-ever he continued not obedient to all the words of that law) he put himself under the rigour and curse of the law. But God hath now made a better covenant with us, and given us the greatest hopes of pardon upon our repentance, and sincere (though it be not sin-less) obedience to the laws of Christ.

HERE is pardon to be had for all manner of sin. There were many sins under the law of Moses, as hath been observed, for which no remission was to be had from any sacrifice allowed by that law. He that was guilty was liable either to death, or to excision. We are better provided for by this covenant of grace. All manner of sin and blasphemy (says Christ) shall be forgiven unto men. Blasphemy, as hath been observed before, was one of those sins, for which there was no expiation allowed under the law of Moses. But even for this sin there is pardon in this covenant of grace. For our Saviour's words do not speak of the event of things, but of the provision which is now made: Blasphemy shall be forgiven, i. e. there is pardon to be had for it.

And he who was himself a blasphemer tells us, that he obtained mercy: nor doth he only tell us that, but also that he therefore obtained mercy for a pattern to them, who should hereafter believe. Our Saviour goes on, who soever speaketh a word against the son of man it shall be forgiven him. There were those, who spake against Christ. The person of Jesus was contemned and reproached for the meanness of his birth, the poverty of his condition, or freedom of his conversation, and afterwards for the ignominy of his death: But this sin did not ex-

clude the possibility of repentance, and the hope of pardon.

HERE's pardon for every fin; the gospel invites and receives the vilest sinners; but shelters them not, if they continue to wallow in their mire. We may learn, what sins have been forgiven from the words of the apostle. Such were some of you; but ye are washed, &c. They had been fornicators, idolaters, adulterers, effeminate, abusers of themselves with mankind, thieves, covetous, drunkards, revilers, extortioners. Such the Christian doctrine found them, but it did not leave them such: They were cleansed of these impurities; They were washed, sanstified and justified in the name of the LORD JESUS, and by the spirit of our GOD. It was a wretched plight, in which the gospel found men, when it first advanced in the world: They were 2 foolist, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful and hating one another: Good God, what a wretched condition was this! How was thy creature, made after thy own image, deformed! What a darkness and disorder hath spread it self upon the intellectual world! Men retained the same shape and figure, that they had from the beginning; They were of an erect or upright stature; They were not overgrown indeed with horns, and hoofs, and claws; but otherwise they were at best but 2 brutes in human shape: Their manners were crooked, their minds were bowed down to the ground, and they were salvage and ravenous as wolves and bears. But were these creatures out of the reach

of this mercy tendered in the covenant of grace? By no means. These men were saved by the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Ghost. Our Lord came to call sinners to repentance; And the greatest sinners were pardoned; Those who had worshipped idols, who had been possessed by devils, and who had persecuted the church of Christ. In a word, by our Jesus, all that believe are justified from all things, from which we could not be justified by the law of Moses.

IT is true indeed, that \* our SAVIOUR hath said, that " Whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him. And it is the only sin which is excepted. But those words of our Saviour, if rightly understood, are no objection of weight against what hathbeen said before, viz. that the gospel affords a pardon for all manner of sin. For this supposes, that men assent to the truth of the Christian doctrine end embrace it. Now that sin against the Holy Ghost, of which our Saviour speaks, is of such a nature as supposeth the person guilty of it to be one, who not only doth not affent to the truth of the Christian doctrine, but resists the evidence and confirmation of it, which was effected by the Holy Ghost, and doth calumniate and blaspheme the divine author of that evidence. Those Pharisees, who imputed what our Saviour did to the prince of the devils, did not believe the doctrine of CHRIST. Nor can any man, who affents to the truth of the Christian doctrine, be guilty of that sin against the HOLY GHOST, of which our SAVIOUR speaks. The HOLY GHOST in that place is not considered as the third person of the Trinity, and the author of holiness in us, (in which respect every act of profaneness might in some sense be called a sin against the Holy Ghost) but is considered there as a witness to the truth of the Christian doctrine. And upon that account that blasphemy is said to be unpardonable. He that was guilty of that sin, was one who rejected the Christian doctrine. It is no disparagement to the most effectual medicine in the world, that it doth not cure that diseased person, who resuseth to apply it. The gospel affords a pardon for every sin; but there is no hope for him who rejects it.

It was a charge of old against the Christian religion, that it invited and gave hope of pardon to the most profligate sinners. Celsus dong ago objected it against our most holy religion. He says, that in other mysteries the profane were dismissed, and none was called in, but he who had pure hands, who was wise in speech, free from vice, &c. But (says he) among the Christians are called in Osic diagraphole, &c. Whoever is a sinner, a fool, or childish, or miserable; such (says he) doth the kingdom of God receive. But, as Origen answers well, these vile men are not presently admitted to the participation of the mysteries of this religion, but to the cure which it works upon them. It gives them pardon upon

their amendment.

THE Jews from their sacrifices had hopes of pardon; but they were but faint hopes, if compared with what we have under the gospel of CHRIST. God hath given us the utmost assurance. For, 1. He hath given up his beloved son to death. CHRIST our passover is sacrificed

<sup>\*</sup> See Archbishop Tillotson's most excellent sermen on this subjett.

• Matth. xii. 32.

• Origen contra Celsum. 1. 3.

• 1 Cor. v. 7.

for

He was that flamb of God, who takes away the fin of the Here's a sacrifice without <sup>8</sup> spot, of an infinite price and value, a sacrifice of a h sweet-smelling savour. A sacrifice which God provided and accepts. Our SAVIOUR hath washed us from our sins in his own We are by the gospel brought to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel. The blood, which Jesus shed, doth not only speak better things than the blood of the legal sacrifices ordained by the hands of Moses, but also better than the sacrifice, which Abel offered up. For though Abel was a righteous person, though he offered a 1 more excellent sacrifice than his brother, and God did declare his acceptance of his sacrifice by a visible token from heaven; Though Abel offered his facrifice by faith, and be justly celebrated among the worthics and the faithful; Though God bore witness to his righteousness, and though he being so long since dead yet speaketh; yet for all this the blood, which he offered, is not to be compared with the blood of JESUS. And could any thing have been said more to the advancing the value of the blood of CHRIST, and its efficacy to procure our pardon, than that it speaks better things m than that of Abel? This sacrifice needs not to be repeated, as the legal facrifices were. This facrifice purges the conscience, the legal ones did but sanctify to the purifying of the flesh. This sacrifice is of value sufficient to procure pardon for the whole race of mankind, and is not confined in its virtue or effects to any certain people, as the legal sacrifices were. 2. The resurrection of Jesus from the dead gives farther assurance of our pardon. When our Lord gave himself up to death as our surety, he undertook our ransom, but when he arole again, he affured our discharge. He was delivered for our offences, that is a foundation of some hope; But then he was raised again for our justification. If death had detained our Lord, his death would not have afforded us any hope; Our hope was raised with our SAVIOUR. 3. Our SAVIOUR'S entering into heaven, and intercession there on our behalf doth still give us farther assurance of our pardon and forgiveness. If any man sin we have an advocate with the father, Jesus Christ the righteous. And he is the propitiation for our fins, and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world. A-. gain, P Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a prince and a SAVIOUR, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins. The Jews expected pardon of their sins on their great day of expiation, when the high priest went into the most holy place with a blood which he offered for himself, and the errors of the people. Their high priest had sins of his own to be expiated, and the blood, which he offered, was the blood of a beast, and upon both accounts the peoples hope was the more languid. But blessed be God, we are better provided for, and our hope is more firmly built. We have an high priest the most perfect, and spotless: Such an high priest became us, who is hely, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens;

Who

f Joh. i. 29.

8 1 Pet. i. 19.

h Eph. v. 2.

i Rev. i. 5.

k Heb. xii. 24.

l Heb. xi. 4. with Gen. iv. 4.

m Heb. ix. 12, 13, 14, 25, 26.

Heb. x. 2. ix. 13, 14.

2 Cor. v. 15.

Heb. ii. 9.

Joh. iii. 17.

n Rom. iv. 25.

P Aft. v. 31.

q Heb. ix. 7.

t Heb. vii. 26, 27, 28.

Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the peoples: For this he did once when he offered up himself. For the law maketh men high priests, which have infirmity: but the word of the oath, which was since the law, maketh the Son, who is consecrated for evermore. Here is nothing wanting toward the quieting our consciences, and the securing our pardon. Jesus is our high priest, our patron and advocate with God. There s are but three things required to render a priest the most excellent, and perfect in the highest degree, and they are all to be found in our Jesus. First, That he have sufficient power with God to render him propitious to those, for whom he undertakes. Secondly, That he have so much good will for those, whose advocate he is, as to incline him to use his power for their advantage. Thirdly, That he always live and continue in that authority and power, and with that good will. Our Jesus hath sufficient power with God: He hath all 'power in heaven and earth, and a uname above every name, and he hath great good will for those, for whom he undertakes. He hath been acquainted with the infirmities of humane nature, an high priest that is touched with the feeling of our infirmities, having been tempted like as we are. He is at once a \* merciful as well as faithful high priest; And, besides this, He 'ever lives to make intercession. He continueth ever, and hath a priest-bood that is unchangeable, or which passeth not from one to another. So that the death, the resurrection, and intercession of Jesus (as our high priest) lay a sure foundation for the quiet of our conscience. These three are put together by St. Paul to my present purpose. Who is he that condemneth? (says he) It is CHRIST that died, year ather that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us. 4. The holy spirit, which Jesus did not only promise, but bestow upon his followers, is still a farther pledge of our pardon and forgiveness, and indeed of our future glory and happiness. For so the holy Spirit is said a to be the earnest of our inheritance. The Greek word, which we truly render earnest, signifies a part of price or wages, which is given in hand to secure the receiver of the whole sum. And such is the holy Spirit to us: He gives us full assurance, that we shall be admitted to the whole inheritance. The 'Spirit it self beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of GoD; and if children then heirs, beirs of God and joint heirs with CHRIST: We are elsewhere said to be, by the holy Spirit of God, sealed to the day of redemption: And that expression is of the same import with the former. We seal and mark things that are of the greatest value, and which are to be preserved and kept safe as a peculiar. And this was the reason, why those who were designed to be preserved are said to be d sealed and marked, for by this they were set aside to be preserved from the common destruction. We do by receiving the Spirit receive a great assurance of our pardon and future glory. The apostle's argument is very strong, If e the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead, dwell in you, he that raised

Digitized by Google

f D. Outram. de sacrificiis, p. 290.

\* Heb. iv. 15. with v. 2. ii. 17.

\* Heb. vii. 24, 25. 2 Rom. viii. 34.

2 Cor. i. 22. v. 5. Eph. iv. 30.

6 Rev. vii. 3. Ezek. ix. 4.

\* Matth. xxviii. 18.

2 Rom. viii. 18.

2 Rom. viii. 34.

6 Rom. viii. 16, 17.

C Eph. iv. 30.

6 Rom. viii. 11.

Spirit that dwelleth inyou. We are now rendered secure of our future inheritance and glory, how mean soever our present condition be. Our f SAVIOUR hath given us the earnest of the spirit and taken from us the earnest of our sless, and carried it into heaven, as a token that his followers shall be translated thither. So says one of the ancient fathers of the church. 5. The sacraments, which Jesus hath instituted, and annexed to this covenant of grace, do give us farther evidence and affurance of our pardon and forgiveness. By baptism we are received into the church of CHRIST, where pardon is to be had, and into a state of pardon and forgiveness. John the baptist is said to baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins, Mark i. 4. And Ananias said, Arife and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, Act. xxii. 16. Baptism was a pledge of salvation; and they who received it, were marked out not for destruction but for deliverence and safety. And thus it was understood of old to be a pledge of safety: When John the Baptist saw the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Matth. iii. 7. Repent and be baptized (says & St. Peter to the Jews) every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins. And presently after that he added, Save your selves from this untoward generation. The same apostle elsewhere, speaking of the ark of Noah, wherein they were faved who entered into it, adds, The h like figure whereunto even baptism doth also now save us, &c. And the sacrament of the Lord's supper is also a pledge of God's favour, and our reconciliation: We are admitted to feast upon the great sacrifice, which was offered upon the cross. This was not allowed in sacrifices under the law, which were expiatory, to the people. We partake of the body and blood of Christ; of that body which was offered upon the cross, and of that blood of the new testament, which was shed for many for the remission of sins. Matth. xxvi. 26. 6. Our LORD JESUS sent forth his messengers into the world to declare pardon to the penitent. He took care that i repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations. They were entrusted with the power of the keys, to bind and loose, to let into the kingdom of God, and to exclude from it.

It is easie to shew, that the Christian religion doth upon other accounts, besides what have been named, excel the law of Moses: It had a better mediator, and was better confirmed: It was more successful, and farther spread, and affords both more, and more conspicuous examples than are to be found under that law; It is attended with greater motives to obedience, as well as greater motives of credibility. The fews are pressed to obey God, because he brought them out of Egypt. The motive had great force, but 'twas peculiar to that people. We are constrained by the love of God in Christ Jesus. We are moved by the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge. His death and passion, the comforts of the Holy Ghost, the unspeakable love of

GoD,

f Quemadmodum nobis arrhabonem spiritus reliquit, ita & a nobis arrhabonem carnis accepit, & vexit in cælum pignus totius summæ, &c. Tertullian. de resurr. carnis.

5 Act. ii. 38, 40.

h 1 Pet. iii. 21.

i Luk. xxiv. 46.

#### A DEMONSTRATION 162

God, and hope of pardon, and of eternal life; these are our motives to obedience. These are great enough to thaw and unlock the most obdurate heart, and to work upon the most benummed minds. I proceed to consider

III. THE usefulness of the foregoing discourse. And that is very great, where it is duly weighed and confidered. It would be of great use to the Jew, would he but consider it and lay it to heart. And it is of very great use to the Christian, to awaken him to the greatest regard to his holy religion, and to a very hearty embracing of it. I shall at present only consider this one advantage, which it will afford us, viz. that it gives us a fair occasion of inquiring into the great ends

and causes, for which the law of Moses was given.

I WILL not here undertake to insist upon all the causes of the law of Moses: Much less will I go about to inquire into the reason of the particular precepts of that law. I make no doubt, but that God gave the Jews that law to keep them from idolatry, and to that purpose to preserve that people separate from the neighbour nations. Many of the rites appointed (I doubt not) were therefore prescribed, because they ran counter to those rites, which did obtain among idolaters then in being. I will only consider the ends of this law, as far as my prefent argument is concerned. And that I shall do in the following par-

1. The law was given to restrain the Jews, and keep them from a loose and licentious course of sinning. The promise of the Messias was made to Abraham, above four hundred years before the giving of the law: But though the MESSIAS was then promised; yet God did not think fit to send him presently: In the mean time the Jews, the children of Abraham, whom God had chosen for his church, were to be restrained from living as they list. They were very prone to wickedness, and needed a restraint in the mean time: Therefore was the law given, and given with great solemnity and terror; It denounced many evils against transgressors, and left them liable to a curse, the more effectually to oblige them to obedience. It was not given as GoD's last revelation, nor to give life and to justifie them. k Wherefore then ferveth the law? It was added because of transgressions. God did not think it fit, that they should be left unrestrained: The law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient.

2. THE law was given, as that which contained types and shadows of good things to come, and was therefore given, that they might have among them a pledge of those spiritual good things to be bestowed in the days of the MESSIAS. The great promise, which God made to Abraham, was the promise of the MESSIAS; this promise was renewed afterward, when Isaac was born; and it was repeated by Jacob to his sons before his death. The MESSIAS was the desire and expectation of the more wise and devout Israelites. They received a law in the mean time full of types, and shadows of what they were to expect in the latter days, or the days of the Messias. Hence it is, that the gospel,

d Gal. iii. 19. 1 1 Tim. i. 9 with Gal. v. 22.

as it is distinguished from this law, is called truth; not as truth is opposed to falsehood, but as it is opposed to types and shadows, and as it speaks the substance of that, which was but symbolically represented before. Thus it is said, that the law was given by Moses, and that grace and truth come by Jesus Christ. And the gospel is called the word of truth. Our Saviour tells us, that he is the way and the truth; and tells the woman of Samaria, that the ptrue worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth; They that obey the gospel, are said to walk in the truth, and obey the truth; And heaven is called the true tabernacle. The law had a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things. The priests under the law are said to serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things. That law was a pledge of a better, and the things therein commanded were but a shadow of things to come. Moses was saithful as a servant for a testimony of those things, which were to be spoken, viz. by Jesus and his sollowers: For so the Syriack hath it, for those things which were be to spoken by him.

3. To dispose men for the reception of the gospel of Christ. It was well fitted for this end: And that this was the end of it, is very evident from the words of the apostle. "The scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe. But before faith came, we were under the law, shut up unto the faith, which should afterwards be revealed; Wherefore the law was our school-master to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. Whoever duly considers what hath been said above of the nature of many of the Mosaical precepts (which were of their own nature things very minute) of their symbolicalness and reference to better things to come, of the malediction to which the transgressors of the law were subject, and the desectiveness of the legal sacrifices, and the slender hope of pardon, which that law afforded, will easily understand, that the law was a school-master to bring men to Christ. The law shewed men their disease, but did not cure and heal them, and only referred them to some better provision, which our Lord hath made for us in the gospel.

WHAT hath been said doth sufficiently prove, that the Christian Religion doth very much surpass that of the Jews; And also that our JESUS is that very CHRIST, who was promised from the beginning, and was the hope and expectation of the faithful in the old Testament.

m Joh. i. 17. n Eph. i. 13. o Joh. xiv. 6. p Joh. iv. 23. 9 Heb. viii. 2 Heb. x. 1. viii. 5. Coloss. ii. 17. c Heb. iii. 5. u Gal. iii. 22, 23, 24.

The End of the First Part.

•

.

A

# DEMONSTRATION

OF THE

### MESSIAS.

In which the Truth of the

### CHRISTIAN RELIGION

Is defended, especially against

# The J. E W S.

### PART II.

By the Right Reverend Father in God, R I C H A R D, Lord Bishop of Bath and Wells.

IGNATIUS ad PHILADELPHEN.

Το δε Έυαγγίλιον ἀπάςτισμά έζην ἀφθαςσίας Πάνπα όμε καλά έζην, ἐἀν ἐν ἀγάπη πισεύντε.



#### THE

## PREFACE.

HE following papers were in a great part written many years ago. They were design'd for the press; and I had in my presace to the first part intimated such an intention. Many things since fell out, which hindered me; which I will not trouble the reader with.

Perhaps some may expect an account, why I publish them at all, rather than an apology for my not doing it sooner. I will deal clearly in that matter. Some years are past, since I was engaged in the theological Lecture of the hondurable Robert Boyle Esq. What I delivered on that occasion is intire-

ble Robert Boyle Esq;. What I delivered on that occasion is intirely contained in the first three chapters of the following discourse. I was very much sollicited to print those lectures; but I was not willing to do it, they being but a part of what I designed for this volume: Nor did I care so far to impose on the reader, as to reprint in another edition, what he had bought seperately before. Hereupon, being pressed by some, who ought not to be denied, I did at last consent to publish those lectures with some other papers, which lay by me; and thereupon did put the following papers together.

As for the work it self, I hope it will be the more favourably received upon the account of its design. It is a desence of our common Christianity. It meddles not with any of the angry and contending factions among our selves; It calls for no fire from heaven, nor for the sword of the secular power against those who divide from us. It advanceth no propositions, that can create any jealouse in princes, or beget any misunderstanding between the clergy and layety: It meddles not with the little opinions which divide the church, and which are the darlings of the several demagnetic in princes.

magoques among us. It erects no new schemes in divinity; nor doth it quarrel with any, that can deserve the name of Christians. We have long enough drawn down our swords against each other, and have been gladiators in this fighting theology. It is high time now that we turn our force against the commen enemy of all revealed Religion. This is

the utmost of my design.

This was also the design of the bonourable Founder of the Lecture abovementioned; and to this purpose I heard him discourse most pathetically, one of the last times, when I had the honour to wait upon him. He declared, that he thought, we were concerned now to defend our common religion: And accordingly he took care, that his Lecture should be employed that way, and not upon the disputes agitated between the several divided parties professing Christianity. I have often reslected upon that discourse of that very excellent person; and it gave me encouragement to pursue those studies, which tend to that excellent end.

I do think it high time so to do, and do more and more think so; since atheism and contempt of all revealed religion have so much prevailed of late years. We have lived to see Moses derided, his history ridiculed and exposed; and the writings of the new Testament made the matter of drollery and prosane contempt. We have those among us, who are forward to carp at and find slaws in the sacred volumes; and that industriously make it their business to run down the inspiration, and overthrow the credit of these

Holy Oracles.

I have to do with the Jews in the following papers, who impugn Christianity, and object against the writers of the new Testament. Some among us use the same objections; and the answers given to them will be of as great force against the Deists, and profane scoffers among

our selves, as against the Jews.

I have taken all possible care to inform my self, what it is that the Jews have to object against Christianity. To that purpose I have read over their several printed Nizachons, and R. Isaac's book, which he calls Chizuck Emunah, which are books filled with objections against Christianity, and treat of that matter, ex professo. I have also considered a Portuguese manuscript, which I often quote, in the following papers, under the character of MS. Lusit. Some account whereof I ought to give the reader. It is as sollows. I own, that I received it from my learned and worthy friend the late Dr. Cudworth. The doctor had the curiosity to wifit Menasseh Ben Israel, when he was in England; and being desirous to know of that Rabbi, what the Jews had to object against Christianity, he delivered him the aforesaid MS, as that which contained the Jews objections against the new Testament.

He did not indeed own it to be of his own composing (the Testament. Jews are too cautious and reserv'd in that matter) but I have some reason to believe it to be bis; and more to think it to be esteemed as a master-piece at that time among the Jews. Be that as it will, I think it will do no hurt to a Christian, that well understands the Christian religion. I do not know of any thing of moment in it, which is not considered in the following papers; if any such thing there be, I shall think my self obliged to consider it elsewhere. I have also considered the papers of that subtle Jew, with whom Mr. Limborch was concerned, which are printed with Mr. Limborch's answer. I have upon occasion consulted Abravenel's commentary upon the latter prophets (as the Jews call them) in which that Jew attempts to overthrow the Christian belief. I heartily wish some Christian would consider that commentary throughout, as C. L' Empereur hath done on Isaiah LIII. Whatever else that Rabbi was, I can affirm this, that in his disputes against the Christians be did not proceed fairly.

I did formerly draw up the substance of the Jews objections against the Christian religion all together into one body, and intended it for the first chapter of the following discourse: But upon second thoughts and advice of friends I did afterwards divide them; and so ordered it, that the objections and answers might lie together. It was thought, that some might read the objections, and never look after the answer, that lay remote. 'Tis great infincerity to do so. And tho' they may do so still, if they will; yet they cannot do it so compendiously, as they might other-

wife have done.

I have in the following controversy with the Jews dealt with all sincerity and uprightness. I have represented their objections with all advantage on their side; and have been so far from concealing the force of their objections, that I have rather given them greater poygnancy, than the objectors had done. I have used no artifice in my answers, and laid bold of no pretents that would not bear. I think a Christian ought in these matters to be scrupulously just, and to use all imaginable simpli-Our boly religion needs no arts or shifts. It is built upon sure grounds; and needs not fear the strongest reasoning and the greatest wiss, that make head against it.

As for my answers to the Jewish objections, the reader will think it is his part to judge of them. I have found it hardest to satisfie my self; and that bath always been shy first care. I am not (I hope) so vain, as to over value what I have done. I hope it may however be of some use to the younger students in Theology. I do not pretendate write for the learned. I do not suppose, that I have said all, that the argument will bear

Digitized by Google

bear; or what some others might have said, that have both more learning, and greater advantages and belps, than ever  $\, I \, could \, pretend \, to. \, \, I \, am \,$ aware, what some may object, against what I have offered upon Mark xi. 13, 14. But that did not lie before me in the Jews objection, and I was not obliged to run out of my way so far. It is enough, that that matter be debated, when it shall be laid before me. Act. vii. 16. is a difficult place, and I could have been glad to have had better light: But yet I think the difficulty much abated, if it be not quite removed, by what I hope, that the Jew doth not think, I have offered upon that occasion. that a book is to be rejected, because there are some difficulties in it, or feeming inconfistencies; for then he must reject their law and their prophets, unless they are able to account for all the difficult places to be found in them. As for the Genealogy, I do freely own, that it is a perplexed argument. But yet I cannot forbear to say, that the Jews have no cause to triumph (as they are known to do) upon this account. The main question in that whole debate is, Whether JESUS was of the family of David, or not? That he was so, was owned by the Jews in our SA-VIOUR's time, who had the best opportunity of being informed in that matter. Nor are the later Jews able to offer any proof against it. They now quarrel with the Evangelists, and perplex the Christians with objections against them, as not proving it. Whereas that might be a clear proof, when it was first written, which may not be so to us at this distance. As for the Diashuala, or Tessara-decads, they are clearly adjusted in the following discourse; and I think the Reges Omissi are fully accounted for; as also the second Cainan, and many other things, and enough offered to stop their mouths, and to quiet the mind of any honest and inquisitive Christian. I have not failed to represent their objections fairly; and have given them their fall force. And as to my answers, I have used no manner of artifice or trick, nor affirmed any thing without sufficient ground.

On the other hand, I heartily wish, that I had no cause to complain of the unfair dealing of the Jews in their disputes against Christians.

This they are too often guilt of.

The reproachful language, which they bestow upon JESUS, and his Followers, and upon his Gospel, are by no means to be excused. Their sictions and their blasphemies in their Toldoth and other books are intolerable.

They represent Jesus as a magician; and speak of him and the gospel in terms importing the greatest contempt and scorn. This doth not

Mizach. vet. P. 34.

commend



commend their cause: It rather gives a suspicion, that they use railing for want of argument. Their fore-farthers did so. Instead of answering Jesus, they threw stones at him. If Josephus the Jew he not mistaken, this practice is directly against the law of Moses. He tells us, that one of his laws was this, that no man should blaspheme the Gods, which other cities received. I am sure, that nothing can execuse this practice; and that the Jews are never to be tolerated in

any Christian kingdom or country, with such a liberty as this.

Again, they relate things as written in the gospels, and by the Christian writers, which were no where written or owned by them. One of their authors relates a story of Jesus, that he bid a man climb a tree, and that upon it, he declared he could not help him. He relates, how Jesus wept for the death of his mother; and the conference, which he had with Peter and another man; and the search, which Augustus made for him on his birth; with several other things, which the gospels no where mention. This is foul practice; and where men take a liberty of saying what they please, they may disparage the best religion in the world, and hinder their admirers from receiving it.

I will not digress so far, as to shew (which I might easily do) that the Jews, instead of considering the merits of the cause, by little arts and poor arguments, endeavour to prejudice their people against Christianity and

Christians.

This I will affirm, that to perplex Christians, they do infift upon arguments, which have no force at all; and 'twill be hard to conceive, but they themselves must know it. Abravenel upon Isaiah vii. 14. hath advanced a notion about a natural and an instituted name, and which he magisterially dictates; which upon examination appears to be void of all He hath boldly asserted another opinion to perplex manner of truth. Christians, in his commentary upon Haggai, concerning the importance of that expression of the former and latter house, and to support his cause, which upon examination appears to be false, and so notoriously so, that it will be hard to conceive, that he could be ignorant of it, at that time when he wrote those words. These things I have considered in their proper places. As for the Portuguese MS. (which yet must be allowed to be a master-piece) many of the objections contained in it are such, that they are not worthy of any regard or notice. The reader will find, how very weakly the Jews argue from the following places, which are particularly considered in the ensuing discourse. Matth. i. 25. chap. v. 34, and 43. Mark ii. 26. Luk. xxiii. 34. Joh. ii. 20. Gal. iii. 16.

I find,

I find, that I shall be obliged to reserve some of my papers, that are prepared for the press, for a Third part. This Second part would otherwise swell beyond its due proportion.

I cannot promise any thing more. But if GoD should give me time and strength, what I farther design toward the compleating this work,

shall be under (at least) the following Heads or Lemmata.

A discourse concerning the perpetuity of the law of Moses.

Another concerning the predictions of peace in the days of the MESSIAS.

Another to prove, that the promises of the Messias were not conditional.

Another concerning the true notion of the last days, as used in this argument.

A particular discourse upon Gen. xlix. 10.

Another upon Haggai ii. 6, &c.

An historical account of the false Christs, that have arisen in several ages of the Christian church.

• These above-named are ready for the press. But I design also to add to them as follows.

A discourse shewing, That the doctrine of the Trinity, as it is delivered in the new Testament, is no sufficient bar to the fews embracing Christianity.

An inquiry into the grounds of that belief, that the fewish na-

tion shall be converted.

And what we are to do towards their conversion.

This must be divided into two parts, shewing.

First, What Christian kingdoms and states may do to this purpose. Secondly, What other Christians are bound to do; especially men of learning, and more especially the clergy, who set themselves about so good a work.

I have nothing farther, but to request the reader to pray to almighty God, that what is here offered may have due success.

A DEMON-

A

## DEMONSTRATION

OF THE

## MESSIAS.

PART II.

#### 

### CHAP. I.

The Christian doctrine wants not sufficient Of the Jewish infidelity. motives of credibility. The Jews bave as much reason to own JESUS as a prophet sent by God, as to believe the divine mission of Moses. The miracles, which Jesus did, were as great an evidence, that God fent bim; as those, which Moses wrought, were of his mission. Deut. xiii. 1, 2, 3. considered. An answer to an objection. What Moses predicted, and came to pass afterwards: This was not so clear an evidence of his divine mission, as the fulfilling of the predictions of JESUS was of his being sent by GoD. This matter considered at large. Of tradition: That the Christian tradition is as unexceptionable, as that which is pleaded in behalf of the Jews. Of the books or writings of Moses. They are worthy of belief. The Jews have the same, and greater reason to receive the sour gospels, which they have for receiving the writings of Moses. Some corollaries from the An objection answered. The principal causes of preceding discourse. the Jews infidelity from themselves. Their love of the world, malice and pride. Rom. ix. 4. explained. Some other causes. Over-valuing of rites, implicit faith, and an opinion of their oral law. may be said, that God bardened the Jews. That matter explained, with some texts of scripture relating thereunto; particularly Joh. xii. 39, 40. Exod. vii. 13. Of the Jews want of means of Jalvation. The stumbling-blocks, which Christians have laid before the Jews. The Christians evil lives, and weak arguments. The corrupt doctrines and practices of the Church of Rome. The sects and quarrels of Christians. Some other particulars to be considered. The conclusion.



T is one of the most amazing things in the whole world, that the nation of the Jews should obstinately continue in their unbelief to this day. Their forefathers had great advantages of knowing the truth of things; and our Jesus gave sufficient proofs, that he was the Messias: The Jews in succeeding times have been often bassled in their expectation of a Messias, and have outlived the times, that by their prophets and other wise men

have been assigned for his coming into the world: and yet after all they continue to reject our Jesus, and live in an expectation of a Messias still to come. Twill be worth our while to make a strict inquiry into the causes and occasions of their infidelity; in which inquiry we may receive a great advan-

tage, if we be not wanting to our selves.

But before I proceed to that, I shall shew, that they do not want sufficient means of conviction, and that the Christian doctrine doth not want sufficient motives of credibility. Not that I intend in this place to enlarge upon that argument; this would be too great a digression here, and I have elsewhere said something of this matter. All that I design here, is to convince the Jew, that he hath as much reason to own Jesus for a true prophet, as he hath to believe the same of Moses: and to make it evident, that by the same arguments, by which he or any other man is convinced, that Moses was a true prophet; by the same and greater he may be convinced, that Jesus is the Christ: Moreover, that the sour Evangelists, which report the works and doctrine of Jesus, are altogether as credible, not to say much more so, as the five books of Moses. If this be made good against the Jew in this place, I gain my design, viz. to shew, that the reason of the Jews insidelity is not to be setched from any want of credibility in the Christian doctrine.

AND here I demand of the Jew, Why he believes Moses to be a true prophet, and embraceth the Jewish religion? That he was born of Jewish parents, and bred up in that Religion, is not sufficient to justifie him in persevering therein. For then the Turk and Pagan will be also in as good terms as he, or any other; and had it been his chance to have been born of Christian parents, that alone would have justified him in his continuing in that profession. But this is so lewd a principle, that the Jew will not own it. Tis not safe for any man to venture his soul upon such hazards. For though it be an happiness to be born of parents professing a true religion, and this gives us a great advantage; yet we ought to have more to say for our religion: And we have our reason given us to little purpose, if it doth

not serve us to examine the grounds of our belief.

I DEMAND then of the Jew, Why he believes Moses to be a true prophet? In answer unto which the Jew may well be supposed to reply, that he believes this, (1.) Because many miracles were wrought to confirm their fathers in this belief. (2.) Because what he predicted did come to pass. (3.) That they have an unexceptionable tradition of the matters of sact. (4.) Because the writings of Moses, (which contain the Religion, that he taught and God confirmed) are worthy of belief.

FIRST, Because many miracles were wrought to confirm them in this belief. The reason is strong and good; because it is incredible that God

should

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>a</sup> Demonstration of the Messias, Part I. Ch. VI.

should confirm by so great a number of miracles any doctrine, which is false. And therefore Moses was justly received for a true prophet; because he did those works, which no man, but he that was assisted and sent by God, could do. But if for this reason Moses was received for a true prophet; for the same, Jesus ought to be acknowledged to be the Messias. He professed himself to be the CHRIST, and did confirm his doctrine by miracles, which did much surpass any that ever were wrought by Moses. I have b elsewhere compared the miracles of Jesus with those of Moses: JESUS did more than Moses, and was the author of mightier works than Moses was the instrument of. They argued a greater power, and a greater goodness. Those which Jesus did, were generally so many rescues and reliefs, not plagues; as many of those were, which Moses wrought. This power of working miracles was inherent in Jesus, and was imparted by him to his followers. And whatever the Jews plead in behalf of Moses, that he had power over all the elements; 'tis certain that the power of JESUS was not restrained and limited; his works were various, and the effects of his power reached the whole creation. The devils felt it; it laid restraint upon the sea and the winds; it wrought upon the fish and the loaves, upon the swine and the water, upon the fig-tree, and upon the grave. He healed every disease, he raised several from the dead, and raised himself on the third day.

BESIDE the many miracles which Jesus did, there were many more wrought upon his account, or by his power. I will not infift upon the wonders of his birth; tho' he was born of a virgin, and his birth predicted by an angel, notified by a new created star, declared by the eastern wise men, published by an heavenly host, and foretold several hundreds of years before. When he was baptized, the heaven was opened, and the Holy GHOST descended in a visible form, and a voice proclaimed him to be the Son of God. After this, he c received from the Father honour and glory in his stupendous transfiguration on the mount. At his death great were the miracles that testified of him: The sun was darkned for several hours together; the vail of the temple was rent without any natural cause; the earth trembled; the rocks rent; the graves gave up their dead bodies, and they after the resurrection of Jesus went into Jerusalem, and appeared unto many. After all, he rose from the dead, gave proof of his resurrection, ascended after a miraculous manner into heaven, and sent the Holy Ghost upon his followers on the day of Pentecost, and enabled them to confirm by miracles the doctrine, which he had taught.

AND these miracles were not done in a corner. They were publick, and notorious, and permanent in their effects. The doers of them were watched and observed, and were never convinced of fraud or artifice. And whereas in the monkish miracles in after times there was a strict eye upon those, who should dare to call them in question, 'twas quite otherwise in the first times of Christianity; when that religion was suspected, and the professor of it hated by Jews and others. Then were men not only permitted to detect the fraud (had there been any) but had all encouragement so to do.

Object. Bur the Jew may possibly object, against what hath been said in behalf of the Christian doctrine, that we ought not to receive him for

**Z** 2

a tru¢

Demonstration of the Messias, Part. J. Ch. VI. Matth. xvii. 2 Pet. i. 17.

a true prophet, that preacheth down the law of Moses, which was confirmed by unquestionable miracles, tho' he be able to work miracles in confirmation of his new doctrine; because 'tis possible a false prophet may, for the trial of our faith and constancy, be permitted to work true miracles. For thus d' 'tis written. If there arise among you a prophet, or a dreamer of dreams, and giveth thee a sign or a wonder: And the sign or the wonder come to pass, whereof he spake unto thee, saying, Let us go after other Gods (which thou hast not known) and let us serve them: Thou shalt not hearken, &c. To this I answer,

1. That our Jesus did not preach down the law of Moses, which God had confirmed by miracles. He was so far from it, that he observed that law himself; and tells us, that e he did not come to destroy the law or the prophets, but to fulfil. And therefore the objection hath no force at all, because it supposeth that for a truth, which is notoriously false.

2. Nor can the text allegded be applied to our Jesus with any shadow of truth. Because the prophet there mentioned is supposed to invite men to idolatry, and to say, Let us go after other gods ver. 2. and to turn men away from the God, who brought them out of Egypt, ver. 5. This Jesus never attempted to do: He was so far from it, that he put men upon the worship of this God. And when he was tempted by the devil to fall down and worship him, he rejects the temptation with indignation, saying, For it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve, where our Saviour refers to Deut. vi. 13. and adds a word to the text: For whereas in the Hebrew text tis, Him shalt thou serve; our Saviour (very agreeably to the context, and version of the LXXII, and to prevent all cavil and subterfuge, and all pretext for giving any religious worship to a creature, on pretence of directing it ultimately to God) renders it thus. Him only shalt thou serve.

3. THAT tho' I should grant (which I do not think my self obliged to do from the text alledged) that such a prophet might be assisted to work some miracles, in confirmation of his false doctrine, and that even when he would draw men from God to idolatry; yet doth not this come up fully to the matter in hand. For besides, that the Christian doctrine doth not invite men to any idolatry, it doth not follow from hence, that God will ever allist any false prophet so far, when he invites men to idolatry, as that he shall be able to work more miracles to confirm his false doctrine, than Moses ever wrought in confirmation of the truth. Be it so, that God may permit, for his peoples trial, a false prophet to work a sign or two in confirmation of idolatry; is it therefore credible, that he will continue to assist such a false prophet to work greater miracles, than ever were wrought by that propher, whom he sent? Either miracles are a divine testimony, or they are not. If they are not, there is no reason, why they should prevail upon the Jews to receive Moses: But if they are, 'tis certain that the greater and more they are, the stronger is the testimony; and if Jesus did more than Moses, we have more reason to receive him for a true prophet, than the Jews have to acknowledge Moses for such an one.

4. Tho' we do not question, but that the law of Moses was from God; yet (as I have proved elsewhere) it was never designed to oblige all mankind, nor to endure and continue for ever. We are misrepresented, when we

are said to oppose the divine law. This is a charge, which can never be made good against Jesus or his followers. The law of Moses was partly moral; all of which kind is taken into the Christian religion, and obligeth for ever. Another part was ritual and typical; and that was of no use, when the type was completed, and the ritual unpracticable. Another was political, which fell of it self, when the Jewish polity fell. Those precepts, which were annexed to the land of Canaan and the temple, ceased upon the destruction of that temple and the Jews being disposses of that land. These laws were not pulled down, but they fell of themselves.

IRETURN therefore to the Jews; And we will take g their own words to this purpose. We know (say they) that God spake to Moses: As for this fellow (viz. Jesus) we know not, from whence he is. This is the language of them to this day. But I would fain learn, Why they should reject Jesus, who believe Moses? What excuse will they have, who believe one sent from God, upon less grounds than those, which they have to entertain him, whom they yet reject? Either they have good ground to believe Moses, or not. If not; Why do they believe Moses? If they have; yet they have the same and greater still for believing Jesus. I solemnly declare, that I do not see, how they can excuse themselves upon their own principles: Either they are guilty of too great credulity in believing Moses,

or of too great infidelity in not believing Jesus.

WHEN GOD was sending Moses to Egypt to demand the Israelites, he h said, They will not believe me, nor hearken unto my voice. For they will say, The LORD bath not appeared unto thee. Upon this he was commanded to cast his rod on the ground, and it became a serpent; and to take it by the tail, and it became a rod; and all this was done, that they might believe, that God had appeared unto him. After this, he is required to put his hand into his bosom, and he pulled it out leprous; and upon putting it in again, it turn'd as his other flesh; that if they hearkened not to the voice of the first sign, they might believe that of the latter. If none of these would do, he was impowered towards gaining belief to turn water into blood. From whence I collect two things, (1.) That the power of working miracles, tended to gain, a belief, that God sent him. (2.) That the greater number of miracles, which he should do, would have the greater force to this purpose. And if this be true, then the miracles, that Jesus did, are a good evidence of his mission from God: And that he wrought more than Moses did, gives us still a greater ground to receive him, than Moses gave the men of Israel.

SECONDLY, Another reason why, the Jews believe Moses, is, because what he predicted did come to pass: And no man is able without an extraordinary divine help to fortel truly future contingencies, which depend upon the free will of rational creatures. This Moses did, and therefore is to be received as a true propher. A late i Jew urgeth this argument; and gives an instance from the words of Moses, where he predicts the dispersion of the Jewish nation for their sins: and particularly their oppression by a nation from a-far, whose language they did not understand. To this he adds the prophecy of Daniel, who predicted the destruction of the Jewish temple after seventy weeks, or 490 years, and the ceasing of sacrifice in the middle of the last week. This Daniel was an exact observer of the

g Joh. ix. 29. h Exod. iv. 1, 10. i Deut. xxviii. 49. Jud. Anon. in Phil. a Limborch. Amic. Collat. Script. II.

Digitized by Google

law of Moses, and received him for a true prophet; and the event of things confirmed his prophecy, and consequently that of Moses was likewise confirmed. I will at present admit of this Jew's reasoning, and grant, that this is a good proof, that Moses was sent by God, because he foretold suturities. But certain it is, that we have according to this rate of arguing not only the same; but much stronger evidence, that Jesus was sent by God: And if for this reason the Jews were bound to believe Moses, they were for the same reason and much greater obliged to believe Jesus. Did Moses predict future contingencies? And did the event confirm his predictions? So did Jesus also, and not any the least thing failed, which he foretold. And there were many things, which I sus foretold. He foretold his own death; the time when, the instruments by whom it should happen to him; the place where, and the kind and manner of his death. That he should be betrayed by one disciple, denied by another, and that they should all be offended at him. He foretels also his own resurrection, and the very time within which it would happen: He foretels the wonderful effusion of the Holy Ghost on the day of Pentecost, the sorrows that his followers would meet with, and the success of his holy religion in the world. He foretels the death of St. Peter, and that St. John should survive him. He foretels the destruction of Jerusalem forty years before it happen'd; and most graphically describes it, and the coming of false prophets.

AND since the Jew thinks sit to mention Daniel, as a disciple of Moses, I may also add, that the disciples of Jesus did foretel futurities, which are fince come to pass. Thus St. Paul doth not only foretcl the coming of false teachers, but the doth most graphically set forth the very doctrines, which these men should teach, viz. the dostrine of dæmons, and prohibiting marriage and meats. This we know the church of Rome hath done. And elsewhere he i foretels the apostacy from the primitive Christianity, and the revelation of the man of sin, and son of perdition; whose coming is after the working of satan, with all power, and signs, and lying wonders. And these things have come to pass: and we do expect farther the verification, of m what he foretels of the destruction of that wicked one; whom the LORD shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming. And the Apocalypse contains many predictions, a great number of which are already fulfilled, and the rest are approaching; and we doubt not, but they will in the due time, that is there prefixed and set down, be fulfilled also. That some of them are already fulfilled, is an argument à posteriori of the truth of the prophecy; and must be so admitted by the Jew, who owns Moses to have been a true prophet before that prediction of the captivity of the Jewish nation by the Romans, which he supposeth him in that place to predict, came to pass.

But before I leave this matter, I will compare what the few says in behalf of Moses, with what hath been said in behalf of Jesus; and shew,

how very short the one comes of the other.

As for Moses, it is said, that he predicted the captivity of Israel for their sins, and dispersion into all countries by the Romans; and that this was fulfilled afterwards. I will take it for granted at present, that so it is, and that Moses in that place foretels this captivity and dispersion for their wickedness. I say, I will take it for granted; for I do not own it as cer-

\* 1 Tim. iv. 1 2 Thest. ii, 3, 9. m ver. 8.

tain,

tain. Is this such a clear demonstration, that Moses was a true prophet? Yes, will the Jew say, because the event, which happened about 1500 years afterward, confirmed this prediction.

It is not my business to speak in diminution of Moses, or to question his divine mission; but only to shew, that the Jew hath the same reason

to believe Jesus sent from God, and greater reason also.

AND this will abundantly appear in the present case. For whatever force there is in this argument for the confirming the prophecy of Moses, it is very certain, that it could not operate till about 1500 years after the prediction, viz. till the time of the destruction of the second temple. In our Saviour's time this could not have been pleaded; and yet then was Moses justly received as a true prophet. So that Moses was a true prophet and owned for such an one, before this could be said for him. And therefore the few ought to lay no great stress upon it, because it is not needful to the gaining belief to the prophet Moses, since he was received, and

that justly also, without it. AGAIN, Moses would have been a true prophet, if the Jews had not been captivated and dispersed by the Romans. Be it so, that he predicts that calamity for their sins: Yet I would know, if such a prediction do necessarily infer the event. Their obedience, or timely repentance through God's mercy might have revoked the sentence; and yet Moses would not therefore have been a false prophet. Certain it is, that predictions of future calamities do not infer the certainty of the event. These denunciations are often but conditional, and not absolute predictions. They declare what men may expect, and that justly also, if God doth not mercifully interpose. Tet forty days (says " Jonah) and Nineveh shall be overthrown: And yet was this overthrow prevented, and Jonah still reckoned among the true prophets. Set thy house in order: For thou shalt die and not live; says. Isaiah to king Hezekiah. And yet we know, that the king recovered, and we justly believe Isaiah to be a true prophet. R. Maimonides p tells us, That when a prophet denounceth woes, ver. 9. if he say, Such a man shall die, such a year shall be a famine or war, and his words do not come to pass, he must not therefore be esteemed as a false prophet. For God is merciful, and perhaps repentance may intervene. God hath q set up a standing rule to this purpose: At what instant I shall speak, concerning a nation and concerning a people, to pluck up, and to pull down, and to destroy it: If that nation, against whom I have pronounced, turn from their evil, I will repent of the evil, that I thought to do unto them. So that all predictions of evils to come do not declare God's internal and unalterable purpose: The agreeable event is not necessary to make good the prophet's mission.

Upon the whole then, Moses predicts the captivity and dispersion of the Jews, in case they provoked God by persisting in their sins: He mentions not the Romans: And he, who had tryal of the perverseness of the Jews, might without the highest degree of prophecy foretel their sufferings. Make the most of it, if this be admitted, as a good proof that Moses was sent by God, we have greater proofs from the predictions of Jesus that

God sent him. For

n Jonah iii. 4.
9 Jer. xviii. 7, 8.

• Ifa. xxxviii. 1.

P H. Jesud. Hattor. c. 10.

I. JESUS

- I. Jesus foretels many things; and if this one prediction of Moses with the event that fulfilled it speak Moses to be a prophet sent by God, why should not Jesus be admitted as such, who foretold many things, which afterward came to pass?
- II. JESUS predicts such things as were presently to take effect, and at farthest in that very age when he foretold them. The men that were then alive, could be witnesses, both of the prediction, and of the event, by which the prediction was made good. Such were the predictions of Peter's denial, the treachery of Judas, of his own death and resurrection, of the effusion of the Holy Ghost, and destruction of Jerusalem, &c. whereas that of Moses was not made good till about 1500 years afterward; and consequently, before that time there was not any proof of the truth of his prophecy.
- III. JESUS predicted such things, which if they had not taken effect, they would have proved him to be a false prophet; and if they did, they must needs prove him a true one. Whereas what Moses predicted, if it had never come to pass, would not have proved him a false prophet, as I have shewed before: And when it did come to pass, it could not bear any proportion to that evidence, which was gained to the mission of Jesus by the sulfilling of his predictions, When Jesus foretold, that he should be put to death, and rise again; that he would after that meet his disciples in Galilee, and after his ascension send the Holy Ghost; had not these things come to pass, he might justly have been reputed a false prophet: but then the coming to pass of these things did abundantly prove him to be a true one.
- IV. The things, which Jesus foretold, and afterward came to pass, were of that nature, that they proclaimed him to be sent by God: For they were things above the reach of a created understanding to foresee. They could not be foretold from the series of natural causes. They were things of another nature, and such as none could foresee and foretel without a divine assistance, and consequently a divine mission. That he should forestel his own death hath nothing of wonder in it; but to foretel the circumstances of it, its kind and manner, bath. To foretel the denial of Peter, and the time within which, and the several times that he should do it, is very strange. But then to foretel his own resurrection, and the precise time when it should happen, and the other things concerning the gift of the Holy Ghost, and the destruction of Jerusalem, are most undeniable proofs (considering these predictions were made good) that God sent him. And if the Jews had cause to believe Moses, because what he foretold came to pass, we have much more cause to believe Jesus.

Tho' much more hath been produced in behalf of Jesus, than what can be said for *Moses*; yet I think it is sit, before I dismiss this weighty subject, to be more particular still; and then it will farther appear, that if the sulfilling of the predictions of *Moses* prove him to be a true prophet, the punctual completion of the many predictions of Jesus will be a more ample proof of the divine mission of our Saviour.

FIRST,

First, Let us consider, what Jesus predicted concerning the destruction of the Jewish temple; an event which was to happen about forty years after his death. There shall not be left (says Jesus speaking of the temple) one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down; Mark xiii. 2. This was exactly sulfilled in the time of Titus, who commanded the city and temple to be intirely ruined: And this was put in execution to that degree, that, as Josephus' tells us, there was not lest so much as any marks of an inhabited city. Eleazar' in his speech to the Jews doth affirm, that the city was taken away from the very foundation, and that the temple was dug up. Maimonides tells us also, that after this upon the destruction of Bitter, the temple was ploughed up by Turnus Rusus. Our Saviour's words were exactly sulfilled, as appears by the testimenty of the Jews themselves.

This prediction and the fulfilling of it are the more to be considered; because it was very unlikely, that what was predicted should ever come to pass. For u certain it is, that Titus the Roman Casar, who vanquished the Jews, did endeavour to preserve the Temple. Titus tells the Jews, that he would preserve the Temple even against their wills. Nay more than that, he is did preserve it for some time, even to the damage of his soldiers. He commanded his soldiers not to burn it, and to quench the fire. And Josephus it tells us expressly, that the temple was burnt and was justly with burning the temple themselves.

SECON DLY, What JESUS predicts concerning the destruction of Jerufalem; That it should be laid even to the ground, Luke. xix. 44. and trodden down of the gentiles, xxi. 24. This was so exactly fulfilled, that Josephus 2 tells us, That analysis the second it is a second in the city, did so level the whole compass of it, that there were no marks left, that could assure those that came to that place afterwards, that it bad been inhabited. That it was trodden down of the gentiles, all the world knows.

THIRDLY, I consider what JESUS predicted as to the signs, which were to go before this lamentable destruction. And here are several particulars, v. g.

(1.) MANY shall come in my name, saying, Iam Christ, and shall deceive many. This Jesus foretels, Mat. xxiv. 5. The meaning is, that many should arise, and delude the people with the hopes of delivering them from their miseries; which was that which the Jews hoped for from their Messias; as appears from those words, Luke xxiv. 31. Of this sort was b Theudas (I do not mean him mention'd in the Asts of the apostles) in the time when Fadus was procurator of Judea. This impostor persuaded the multitude to follow him to the river Jordan; and pretended that he would divide the waters, and afford them an easie passage; and by these means he deceived many, says fosephus, and lost his own head also. Such were those mentioned by Josephus under the character of that it is a salling, i.e. impostors and deceivers, that d under the pretence of religion drew the people into the wilderness, and promised them there signs of their deliverance, and were deceived to their own destruction, in the

Taanith. c. 5. u Joseph. de bello Judaico, l. 7. c. 10. × Ibid. c. 22. y Ibid. c. 26. 2 Ibid. c. 34. a Joseph. de bello Judaico, l. 7. c. 1. b Joseph. Antiquit. l. 20. c. 2. e Joseph. de bello Judaico, l. 7. c. 1. b Joseph. Antiquit. l. 20. c. 2. d Ilaggiuan Senasus.

time when Felix was governour. Such an one was the Egyptian false prophet, who deceived no less than 30000 of the people, a great part of whom the Romans destroyed. Several others are mentioned by fosephus in the same place, who pretended to deliver the people from their servitude. He tells us afterwards, that the fewish affairs grew worse, and that the country was full of robbers, and of such men, it is taken in in each of deceived the people. Many such there were, as fosephus tells us in another place. I need not mention Simon Magus who boasted himself to be the power of God; nor Dostheus, mentioned by Origen, who pretended to be the Messias.

Dostheus, mentioned by borigen, who pretended to be the Messias.

(2.) Jesus adds, Te shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; Mat. xxiv. 6, 7. Josephus tells us, that there was not only in Judea sedition and a civil war, but in Italy also: He relates the wars upon the account of Galba, Otho, and Vitellius, some time before the stal destruction of the Jewish

nation.

(3.) OUR SAVIOUR adds, There shall be famines and pestilences, and earthquakes, Mat. xxiv. 7. And so there were some time before the sinal

destruction of the Jews.

The famine was so great, that 'Josephus tells us, it destroyed all modesty.' Women would snatch the meat out of the mouths of their husbands, children out of their parents, and mothers out of the mouths of their infants; and that none spared their dearest friends in this matter. They would beat the aged, who desended their bread; tear the women, that concealed it, and pull it out of their mouths; they 'had no pity for infancy or old age; but put men upon the rack, and to exquisite torments, to discover their food. So great was the famine, that a measure of corn was sold for a talent: Their straits were so great, that they could not come at grass, and raked among excrements for nourishment, and eat the old dung of bullocks; and that became their food, which they would not at other times have endured the sight of. Those "who died of the samine, were not to be numbered. They did eat, what the vilest beasts would resule. They cat their girdles, their shooes, and the leather of their armour. Nay more still, a mother killed and eat her own child.

As for the pestilence, it is not strange it should accompany such a fairnine as this. And fosephus mentions this as accompanying the famine.

As for the earthquake, fosephus of tells us of that terrible night, when the Idumeans would needs enter into the city, that there was an horrible tempest, violent winds and rains, frequent lightnings, terrible thunders, in mushuan sometimes of the quaking earth, infomuch that it was certain, (says fosephus) that the state or frame of the world was disturbed.

(4.) OUR SAVIOUR foretels also fearful sights and great signs from heaven, Luke xxi. II. And this was fulfilled exactly; and we have unexceptionable testimonies to this purpose. Fosephus p tells us, that a star in the likeness of a sword stood over the city, and a comet for a year together: That at the feast of unleavened bread, even at the ninth hour of the night, there shined so great a light about the altar and the temple, for half an hour, that it appeared to be bright day. That a bullock, that

e Ibid.

f Joseph. Antiq. l. 20. c. 6.

h Contra Celsum, l. 1.

i De bello Judaico, l. 5. c. 33.

Lib. 6. c. ult.

m Lib. 7. c. 20, & c. 21.

l. 7. c. 25.

a Lib. 4. c. 17.

P Lib. 7. c. 31.

s De bello Judaico, l. 7. c. 30.

Lib. 4. c. 17.

P Lib. 7. c. 31.

Digitized by Google

was to have been sacrificed, brought forth a lamb; That the brazen gate of the temple, which was so heavy, that it required twenty men to shut it, and was strongly bolted also, opened of its own accord. Chariots and an armed host were seen in the air. The priests in the temple perceived a shaking and a noise; and after that heard a voice, saying, Let us depart bence. The q Roman historian consirms what Josephus relates upon this occasion. Evenerant prodigia, que neque hostiis, neque votis piare fas hater and strong it is a large to the same set and strong it is a large to the same set and strong it is a large to the same set and same set and strong it is a large to the same set and sam

bet gens, superstitioni obnoxia, religionibus adversa.

(5.) Our saviour adds, that the abomination of defolation (spoken of by Daniel) should stand in the holy place. And, in a parallel place, he speaks of Jerusalem's being compassed with armies, as a sign of its approaching destruction. This was suffilled: The city was encompassed in a little time, and this was a sign, and a cause also of its approaching destruction; for by this means (says Josephus) drawing was considered in a little time, and this was cut off. The encompassing the city was a mighty work, and as such it is related by Josephus; but Jesus had foretold it, and it did come to pass. The city was begirt in a little time with a wall built round about it, to keep in the miserable Jews; who were consumed with a samine, and killed by one another. When this wall was building, it was high time to take that advice, which our Saviour gives, Luk. xxi. 21.

Mark xiii. 14, 15, 16. Matth. xxiv. 16.

THE \* abomination of desolation, in St. Matthew, refers to the same matter. That expression refers to Dan. ix. 27. and whatever a very learned

\* This exposition of this learned prelate is agreeable to the opinion of very many eminent men, and Dr. Whitby in his annotations takes notice of no other. Accordingly they understand these words of the astual investing of Jerusalem under Cestius Gallus; and some think, that they relate to the last destructive slege by Titus. This they are led to by what St. Luke Sith concerning this very matter. Luke xxi. 20. When ye shall see Jerusalem compelled about with semies, then know that the desolution spinuous thereof is nigh. This they are looked upon as a parallel text with the other; and therefore Desolution being the word used in both places, and this encompelling the city by the Roman armies being truly shanyus an abomination in more senses than one, many learned men have interpreted the one by the other. But against this interpretation it may be objected by a Jew. That the Jerusalem is often called the boly city, as Matth. iv. 5; and xxvii. 53. yet it is never in scripture, nor in any Rabbinical author called the boly place, and after that the temple was called by the same name both in the old Testament, as I king. viii. 8, 10. 1 Chron. vi. 49. and xxiii. 32. 2 Chron. vi. 11. And also in the sam, as Adi. vi. 13. and xxii. 28. Heb. ix. 12, 24, 25. Secondly, Supposing the words in rison and the same as a single that the city of Ferusalem; yet the preposition is signifies to stand in it, and not round about it, as the Roman army did. When this army flood are mixed round about the city, the desolution therefor was nigh; but when it stood is rivery in the city of Ferusalem is other concile it with St. Mark chap xiii. 14. who saith, that this abomination flood, where it ought not. And our bleffed Saviour had spoken before of this city. Luk. xii. 43, 44. The days shall not leave in thee one slowe upon thee, that this enemies shall cast a trents about thee, and compass the round, and keep the in one every shall. And shall say the even with the ground, and thy children within the; and they shall come upon thee, that thi

translated thus. And in the midst of the week be shall cause the facrifices and the oblation to cease; and for the overspreading of abominations be shall make it destate. I rather take the Grammatical contexture of both these sentences to be alike, and shall venture to translate them accordingly in this manner. And when the balf of the week shall come, he the prince of the people that shall come, or Titus Vespasan the emperor and general of the Roman army, verse 26. Shall cause the facrifices and the oblation to cease: And when abominations shall be upon the wing or battlements of the temple, be, this prince, shall make it desolute, even until the consummation, and until that which is determined, shall be poured upon the desolute. Here the reader must observe, that which is determined to that set of pollution, which spring from bodies alive, or dead that were unclean, as may be plainly proved from Lev. vii. 21. Lev. xi. 10, 11, 12, 13, 20, 25, 43. If xi. 1xvi. 3, 17. Fer. xvi. 18. Exck. viii. 10. and Zach ix. 7. in which that word is used. The more common word nayri signifies an abominable or a detestable thing of a moral as well as of a legal nature, and more frequently the former, and even when it relates to legal pollution, it is not often used with any particular for of them. And accordingly, it is remarkable, that in Exck. v. 11., and vii. 20. and xi. 13, 21, where both sorts of abominations are hinted at, the two Hebrew words and in the legal abominations by blood and dead carkasses. In your passes of this body place, as Daniel speaks, the curious reader may not only observe a technical word used inflead of a common one; but also the place where these abominations were to frank. In your passes of this body place, as Daniel speaks, the curious reader may not only observe a technical word used inflead of a common one; but also the place where these abominations were to frank. In your passes of this body place, as Daniel speaks, the curious reader may not only observe a technical word used inflead of a commo

Fosebus, who is without controversy a very good witness in this case, informs us, that the divisions, the tumults, and the mutual slaughters of the Jews, that were got together at that time in Jerusalem, were the immediate motives, that induced Titus to come up and besiege the town. Of the party then in the town some were for accommodating matters with the enemy so vastly superior to them in power, and from whom nothing less than utter ruin was to be expected at last; others again were as eagerly against it. Of those, who were against making any manner of terms, the chief and most mischievous were a crew of robbers, who for their appearing concerned for the honour of God, which they could not bear to see profituted to a gentile power, were called gealots. This gang of men had seized upon the boly place and fortified it. They had store of engines, which had been lest in the country by Cestius Gallus the Syrian governour, when he besieged the city about three years before. With these they shot from the Roof, or Pinnacles or Battlements, or rather from the wings of the temple upon the town, whilst those without (for the temple was then shut up) shot likewise at them, by which means great numbers were kill'd on both sides; and the temple became thereby polluted, and even an abomination by the blood of the standary, according to the Fewish notions of the word, was become desolate. So that this, which is fully warranted by Josephus, is the literal explication of this remarkable sign.

What may justify this interpretation of this very remarkable prophecy is, that we find it used in the

What may justify this interpretation of this very remarkable prophecy is, that we find it used in the first book of Maccabees, for Antiocbus Epiphanes his profanation of the altar, when he offered idolatrous factifices upon it, on purpose to prosane it. They set up the abomination of desolation upon the altar, and built idol altars throughout the cities of Judea, who supply the very same expression Dan. it. 31. and xii. 11. to Antiocbus; since herein they have the concurrence of many Christian commentators. However it is plain, that what we read, Dan. ix. 26, 27. could not then be sulfilled. That desolation under Antiocbus was not final, since Judas Maccabeus purified and dedicated the temple again within a few years afterwards. Whereas after this destruction when Titus had once made an end, and that which was determined, was poured upon the desolate, the temple was never built again, nor have the Jews restored the temple service in that which was once the boly place, (or, as they call it, in the chosen bouse) unto this very day. And besides, the text of Daniel directs us to this individual sign, and not to what had formerly been done by Antiochus. For there it is, in view, as the Greek Translators render the Hebrew [1] upon the roof, or temple, which was the very place, where this abomination stood. This abomination therefore, or desolation, was something discernable by the disciples, and previous to the last ruin. The Christians were then directed to read, that they might understand, that is, to attend diligently to that sign, lest by neglecting it, they should be overwhelmed in the common destruction, and be thereby irrecoverably lost. And tho' every desiration of cities and countries carries a desolation along with it; yet since it appears by that history of the Maccabees, 1 Mac. i. 39, that they had formerly called a profanation of the sandarary a desolation, the Christians of this time, who were not unacquainted with that story, might without any difficulty, know how to apply this abomination of desolatio

Here therefore we have a particular fign foretold by Daniel, and emphatically applied by our Lord, which never happened before, or in any fiege except this, and which can never happen again. Wars,

famines, and divisions, among unsuccessful and desperate men, and investing of cities by hossile troops, tho' they were all actually sulfilled in that dismal time; yet were not peculiar to that time more than to others of like sort in their own nature. But to have the sont hard silled with armed men, who were often killed in the boly place, and who by being brought into the courts of the temple actually defiled it with the carkasses and blood of the sain, which were both of them to the highest degree abominable by the Mosaical law, was the distinguishing mark of this calamity. This our blessed Lord commanded his disciples particularly to mind. Let bim that readeth understand. One of thoss disciples then present, at least, if not more outlived these events. Then saith our Lord, when these things happen, lasten your slight, be gone, leave both the city and the country, for nothing but the extreamest misery will be the portion of them that shay behind. If you are upon the tops of your houses, un not in to take what you can carry away; but as in cases of sudden and impetitous fires, save your selves as well and as saft as you can. St. Luke indeed saith nothing of this sign, but only mentions the encompassing of the city by the Roman legions. But that had happened a little before, and then these two subsequent signs strengthen one another. The siege of Farusalem by Cessius Gallus was plainly foretold by St. Luke, without any possible ambiguity in the words, as to the siege itself, tho' without naming the General who,should carry it on. The city was then compassed by Roman armies, which it had never before been since Pompeys time. This was the first signal given to the faithful to fly. The second signal sollowed soon after; for the gealots, being freed from the apprehensions of any dreadful consequences of that siege, and not search, which were the self-situation when the special subsets of the search should be subset of second signal sollowed son after; should be subset of second sing nother, were possible to the se gave an opportunity for the rest to escape, who were not so ready at first to understand the signs, which had been given them.

man hath said, cannot relate to the time of Antiochus Epiphanes. tain it is, that Daniel's weeks must be weeks of days or years; the Hebrews knew no other weeks than these. If they were weeks of days, they would come short of the time of Antiochus; if weeks of years, they will reach Daniel foretold the destruction of the Jewish nation by far beyond him. the Romans. Josephus " the Jew owns no less; and Jacchiades interprets this place of Daniel, of the destruction of the Jews by Titus. The abomination x here refers to the militaria signa, which accompanied the Roman army; and with them the Roman army encompassing the city make up the abomination of desolation spoken of by Daniel. The military signs are fitly expressed by abomination, as that word fitly signifies idolatry. For these signs were worshipped among the Romans, and not only carried about, as ensigns usually are. What in Josephus is y called squalar meet ground the eagle, is presently afterward expressed by '1500', i. c. holy things. The Romans carried with them the images of their emperors, and paid a religious worship to them. Titus did afterwards bring their military signs into, the ruins of the temple, and set them over against the eastern gate of the temple; "Sworin Te autrois aurion, i. e. they sacrificed to them there; as Josephus? relates. These images were placed with the army, which begirt Jerusalem, which was called the holy city, Matth. iv. 5. and chap. xxvii. 53. that was not only more holy than the holy land; but than any other city, as I have elsewhere shewed. The city is meant by the

× "A παν είδωλον είνθησην παρά τοις Indulois βθέλυγμα εκαλείτο.
γ De bello Judaico, l. 3. c. 8. 2 De bello Judaico, u Antiq. l. 10. cap. ult. Chrysoft. contr. Jud. Serm. 2. I. 7. c. 32. \* Part I. p. 114.

Digitized by Google

holy place, where this abomination stood, which is expressed by St. Mark,

as standing where it ought not, chap. xiii. 14.

(6.) OUR SAVIOUR forctels great distress, and wrath upon the Jews, Luk. xxi. 23. Great tribulation, such as hath not been since the beginning of the world, Matth. xxiv. 21. And whoever will read over the books of Josephus of the Jewish war, will find this prediction abundantly sulfilled. That historian b tells us in short, that never any city (speaking of Jerusalem) suffered such things. And c elsewhere, that it fell west transfer; and he frankly owns, that this calamity did very justly fall upon the Jews also. He says, d it was his opinion, that had not the Romans come against these criminals, they would either have been swallowed up by an earthquake, or perished by a deluge, or have been consumed by fire like Sodom; the Jews being more impious than any of those unhappy people, that thus had suffered.

(7.) Our Saviour goes on, They stall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captives into all nations, Luk. xxi. 24, Josephus e tells us, that the whole number of captives during the war was 97000; and the whole number of those who were extinct were 110000. He doth upon occasion in several places, give us a particular account of the number of the slain and the captivated. The reader, that will take the pains, may consult him as to the following numbers. There were killed after Vespasian came into Judea, at Japha at once 1200, afterwards 15000, besides captives taken 2130; (Josephus de B. J. l. 3. c. 21.) of the Samaritans at Gerizim 11600; (ib. c. 22.) At Jotapata killed 40000, and 1200 captivated; (c. 23.) In another place 6500, (c. 35.) At Gamala killed by the Romans 4000, besides 5000 who killed themselves, (l. 3. c. 7.) Killed elsewhere 6000 (c. 9.) At Jerusalem killed upon the coming of the Idumeans 8500 (l. 4. c. 17.) killed more by the Idumeans 12000 (c. 19.) At Engedi 700 (c. 24.) Killed 15000 and 2200 taken captives (c. 25.) Killed more 1000 (c. 28.) 2000 in the camp of Titus were opened by the gold-sinders (c. 36.) besides those mentioned l. 7. c. 46. It is easie to pursue this matter; but what hath been said is sufficient to verify the words of our blessed Saviour.

(8.) OUR SAVIOUR foretels, That the gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world, for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come; Matth. xxiv. 14. that is, It should, before the final Destruction of the Jews, be spread over the Roman empire at least. Now for the truth of this particular, the reader may consider, what St. Paul says to this purpose, Rom. i. 8. xv. 19. Col. i. 6. and consult Euseb. l. 2. c. 3. and

Origen against Celsus, l. 8.

It is very easie to enlarge upon this argument; but there is no need of saying more in this place. I shall afterward speak something more upon this occasion, under a particular head; which in this place would be too great a digression. I will conclude what hath been said last of Christ's predictions concerning the destruction of the Jews, with the words of one of the ancients, who treating of this very matter, thus ends his discourse: Zuymeiras it. &c. i. e. If any man compare the words of our Saviour, with the words of Josephus concerning the Jewish war, how can be forbear to admire the divine and supernatural foreknowledge and prediction of our Saviour?

b De bello Judaico, 1. 6. c. 27. c Jos. Prolog. ad 1. 1. B. J. d De bello Judaico, 1. 6. c. 37. e J. de B. Jud. 1. 7. c. 45. f Euseb. Hift. 1, 3. c. 6.

THIRDLY,

THIRDLY, Another reason why the Jew believes Moses, is from a certain tradition of matter of fact, upon which he thinks he may safely rely. To this purpose the above-named Jew argues; That God so clearly revealed himself to the Jews, that they could not doubt of his existence. That by the same means, by which God rendered his own existence indubitable, he rendered the truth of the prophecy of Moses so also. Hence the Jews were g obliged to believe in God, and to believe his servant Moses. Jews, who were contemporaries with Moses, taught their children his law, as they were obliged to do; and they their children to this day. Supposing the truth of the matter of fact at first, the tradition is unexceptionable. Tis not to be supposed, that the fathers in any number should conspire to deceive their children. Such a tradition in one nation from father to son is easie, and worthy of belief. Where the tradition is from one nation to another, men are liable to be imposed upon, as the Romans were by the crafty and lying Greeks. Thus doth this Jew argue, nor do I intend in this matter to contend with him; fince I am sufficiently convinced of the truth of the prophecy of Moses. Nor do I intend to enlarge in this place upon tradition, because under the next head there will be a fair occasion of speaking farther of it. In the mean time I shall shew, that if what the Jew same above, be of any force to gain belief, that Moses was a prophet fent by God, as much may be said (not to say more) to prove the divine mission of Jesus also.

WHAT the Jew hath said of Moses above, and to confirm his divine mission, may be said in confirmation of the divine mission of Jesus. For God did not only render his own existence indubitable, in the time of JESUS, but by the same means he did also confirm the divine mission of JESUS: And we are obliged to believe in God, and in JESUS, and to instruct our children in his holy religion. And we may say also, that supposing the truth of the matter of fact at first, our tradition is unexceptionable: If the fathers may not be supposed to deceive their children among the Jews, why should Christian parents be suspected? But then the argument from tradition is stronger on our side. For whereas 'tis easie for parents to deceive their children, who are credulous; men are generally shy of foreigners, who attempt to introduce a new religion, which is so far from gratifying their sensualities, and allowing them in their former superstitions, that it comes to remove and cross them. Again, our tradition is confirmed much by the testimony of unconcerned heathens, who lived about those times; whereas we have nothing of this kind extant near the times of Moses. If tradition be a good argument for Moses, who lived above 3000 years fince, why should it not be rather better for Jesus, who lived 1500 years after the times of Moses?

FOURTHLY, The few believes Moses, because the writings of Moses, which give account of matters of sact, and such matters of sact as speak his divine mission, are both extant and worthy of all belief. For, supposing the authority of those books, the divine mission of Moses is unquestionable; so if it doth appear, that those writings ought to be received and credited, there can be no reason to doubt of the divine mission of Moses. Far be it from me to disparage the books commonly called the sive books of Moses; I make no doubt of their authority, and think them

<sup>5</sup> Exod. xiv. 31.

very worthy of belief. But this I dare undertake to prove, that there is as much reason (not to say more) why we should receive the four gospels, as we can have to receive the sive books of Moses. The truth of the matters of sact reported in the sour gospels is altogether as credible, as what is reported in the books of Moses. And whatever reason a few can give, why he believes those books, I will give him the very same (not to say greater)

why he ought to believe the gospels.

I DEMAND then of the Jew, Why he believes the books of Moses? He will say, that he hath great cause so to do; both because they are generally owned by wise and considering men, not only Jews, but men of another religion; and chiefly, because they have received them by an uninterrupted and unquestionable tradition from their fathers; and to this present time they are by this means come to their hands from them, who lived in the times of Moses and saw his works. Besides, we have no just cause to reject them, or to suspect those books, or believe them corrupted and depraved.

I DEMAND then, Why he doth reject the four gospels? To say that these books are not so generally received, whereas the books of Moses are owned by Christians as well as Jews, is nothing to the purpose; for the question returns, For what cause they are not owned by the Jews? 'Tis but a poor argument, which the 'Jew makes use of, to shew that the books of Moses are more credible than the four gospels, because Mahometans, and Jews, and Christians own the books of Moses, but the gospels are not owned by the two former. For, besides that the truth is not always owned by the greatest multitude; 'tis certain, that the Jews received the books of Moses before the Christians and Mahometans could own them; and would do so still, tho' they should reject them. And therefore that argument might have been spared, for it concludes nothing to the purpose: For whatever other reason the Jew can give for believing Moses, 'tis certain, that this cannot be sufficient.

Why then doth not the few receive the four gospels, when he doth receive the five books of Moses? I shall make it appear, that there is as much reason, I may say more, why he should receive the four gospels, as the five books of Moses. And the truth of this will manifestly appear, if

we will with due application consider the following particulars.

1. The persons who wrote these gospels, and under whose names they do appear. We have no cause to suspect these writings; for not only the names of the writers are known, and are such as cannot be justly suspected; but they wrote of things, which happened in their own time, and whereof they might have certain knowledge, and so far they must be allowed to be competent witnesses. Two of the sour, viz. St. Matthew and St. John were apostles and companions of Jesus, and were eye-witnesses of those things which they deliver in writing: The other two, St. Mark, and St. Luke were samiliars and companions of the apostles, and therefore worthy of belief. If we reject these writers, it must be for one of these two causes; either because they were deceived themselves, or designed to deceive us. The first of these cannot be pretended with any shadow of likelihood: for tho an honest man may be deceived in matters of theory and speculation; yet in matters of fact, that are so very sensible (as the things are which these men seeport) it is not possible, that a man in his wits should be imposed upon.

AND

Apud Ph. a Limbor. p. 143.

And that they designed to deceive us, cannot reasonably be supposed. There was no temptation, that might move them to it; so far was it from that, that they ran the greatest hazard in the world, in persisting in the relation which they give us, from the Jews their countrymen, as well as from the Gentiles. In their relation of matters of fact there is to be seen great simplicity and plainness: And tho' there be great argeement between them in the main history; yet is it delivered with some variety of circumstances, which argue, that there was no compact among them to deceive the They appear not like men of address, reserve and artifice; or as men, that designed glory to themselves. They relate their own meanness, their own faults and misapprehensions; they conceal not their own timidity and former ignorance, ambition and incredulity. They tell us what they heard, and what they faw; and name times, and places, and persons; when they might have been refuted, if they had falfified: And their testimony was received and believed, and is to this day, by many nations and the most inquisitive men, tho' against their worldly interest and advantage. The writings of Moses are worthy of credit, and yet 'tis certain, that he wrote of things before his own time above 2400 Years: And for all that, we ought to receive his relations; but then we have the same and greater cause to believe those men, who reported what they saw and heard. Moses alone wrote his history of things, and we believe him; but then we have greater reason to believe the account, which we have of Jesus, and which We believe is given by four men of as unsuspected credit, as Moses was. those to be the books of Moses, which go under his name: And yet there are witty men in the world, who from those writings have attempted to demonstrate, that Moses could not be the author of that whole collection, as it lies now together: And what is related in one of these books of the death of Moses, will hardly be thought to have been written by him. I am far from intending to muster up these objections: The Jew after all believes Moses the writer of these books notwithstanding these pretences; nor do I for that matter contend with him. But this I say, he hath the same (not to lay greater) reason to believe the writers of the four gospels; there being in those writings nothing to be found, that can give us the least suspicion, that they were not written by those men, whose names they bear.

2. The books themselves are next to be considered. The books of Moses are venerable for their antiquity, they contain matters of great weight, and are worthy of belief: But then the four gospels, tho' they were not written so soon as the books of Moses, contain truths, that are older than he. And for the subject matter of them, they are so far from coming short, that they do excel them. 'Tis certain, that in the books of Moses there is no express mention or promise of eternal life: But this life and immortality is brought to light through the gospel. The statutes and judgments of that covenant were topical, and peculiar to the people and church of the Jews; but the laws contained in the gospels are such as concern the whole rece of mankind. Agreeably hereunto those books were written in the Hebrew tongue, a language peculiar to the Jews, and not much understood in the world: The gospels were written (three of them at least at the beginning) in the Greek tongue, which at that time was a language understood, not only at Rome, but in Asia and Egypt and the Roman empire. Moreover these books of the gospels frequently mention Moses and his law, to which they appeal upon all occasions. They contain nothing, which casts any con-

tempt upon Moses or his law: So far are they from that, that they quote his books, and mention him with all due regard: They report, how Jesus obeyed that law, and conformed, not only to the moral part of it, but to its institutions also. They are not to be rejected by the Jews therefore as opposite to the law of Moses. As for the matter of polygamy and divorce, 'tis certain, that what Jesus is said there to have taught us, is not against any precept of Moses; And therefore he hath but reduced the business of matrimony to its primitive institution: And what Moses had taught before of those things, were allowances and permissions, not positive precepts. As for the history in the books of Moses, 'tisallowed to be very considerable. He gives us an account of the creation of the universe, of the destruction of the world by the slood, and the re-peopling of it; of the calling of Abraham, of the forming a church, of Jacob's and his families going into Egypt, of their posterity going thence, and of the giving of the law, &c. But then the history of Jesus, of his miraculous birth, of his miracles and doctrine, his death and refurrection, and promise of the Holy Ghost, &c. doth not come short of what Moses relates. As for the precepts, there is no comparison between those in the books of Moses, and those in the gospels. A great part of the former are ritual and judicial; they were good because commanded, but not antecedently so. As for those in the gospels, they are commanded, be cause they are good. As for the moral part of the law of Moses, 'tistaken into the gospel; which requires a greater pitch and degree of sanctity, than was required by the letter of the law of Moses: Whatever Moses commanded of this kind, as to the love, and fear, and worship of GoD, the gospels do not only require the same, but do it also from greater motives and considerations, than are to be found in that law. And as for our kindness to our neighbour, and all acts of beneficence, the gospel far exceeds the law of Moses. For our Christian doctrine, taught in these gospels, hath extended the notion of neighbour to that of every other man, to whom we are able to shew any kindness. Forgiveness of enemies, and abstaining from all revenge, and praying for our persecutors, are the precepts of the gospels; and are from great considerations commended to us from thence; which cannot be found in that law; not to fay any thing of the contempt of the world, an heavenly conversation, inward purity of heart, and the profoundest humility, which are commended in the gospels. After all, the promise of the Spirit to help, and of heaven to reward us, do mightily enhance these writings. Besides the provision of pardon to every penitent sinner; whereas many fins under the law of Moses admitted of no atonement or expia-And lastly, this new covenant, and these holy laws were ratified and confirmed by the blood of the mediator of it, viz. the blood of Jesus; whereas that of Moses was not confirmed by his blood.

3. The tradition, or way and means by which these books were conveyed to us. Let the Jews pretend to as much as they please, they cannot have greater certainty, that these are the books of Moses, than we have, that we have the four gospels. I grant that these books of Moses were carefully preserved among the Jewish nation. They were extant in our Saviour's time, nor doth he any where tax them for having altered them. Their care in writing correct copies for the use of their synagogues I do not call in question; and do very well know, that the Hebrew doctors have given many rules for the exact writing out the books of their law. But then we have as great assume, that we have the writings of the evangelists, as they have, that they have the books of Moses.

WHEREAS the Jews alone had the keeping of the books of Moses, we know the gospels were soon in the hands of many nations and people,

and were also translated into several languages. Here were more keepers of these books; and being in more hands, they could not be so easily lost or corrupted. Notwithstanding the pretended care of the Jews; yet in the days of Josiah the knowledge of the law of Moses seems well night oft, and the copy of it, that was found at that time, was looked on as a great rarity. They had at that time been keepers of these books for near a thousand years: And yet it seems, that the copies were not very common. The Jew cannot charge the Christians with any such negligence; these gospels have always from the early days of Christianity been extant, and in many hands.

Nor hath there been a possibility of corrupting these books, and we have the greatest security, that they are not depraved, that we can desire. Tis hardly conceivable, that those books should be corrupted, that are made publick, and in the hands of many nations and people. We will not suppose this of the books of Moses, of which the Jews alone were the keepers; much less can it be supposed of these books of the gospel. Moreover, it so happened, that there sprang up heresies in the early times of Christianity. As great an evil as this was, we receive this advantage by it, that whereas both the orthodox and here ticks appealed to the Scriptures, and had in the mean time a jealous eye upon each other, it was not possible, that the text could be corrupted on either side!

As for the various lections, the Jew hath no cause from them to question these four gospels. For besides that the Keri and Cethib of the books of Moses are not thought of moment to be objected against them, the law of Moses was delivered without points, and consequently was many times liable to various senses; and yet we doubt not of the authority of those books. And as for the various sections themselves, whatever the number of them be, as they are an argument, that these books were very frequently transcribed and copied out, and could northerefore easily be lost; so it is certain, that they are such things, as do not affect the main relation, or render any article of the Christian belief doubtful, or liable to any just ground of suspicion.

If the books of *Moses* are come down to our hands without corruption, we have no cause to question the four gospels: If the tradition for them be unquestionable, we ought not to question that, by which our gospels are conveyed. For besides that the gospels were written 1500 years after the books of *Moses*, and those books of *Moses* have been kept by the *Jewish* nation alone, whereas ours have been in the hands of many nations; besides all this, I say, there can be no time assigned, when the gospels were wanting in the *Christian* church, or when a copy of them was a rarity. Upon the whole, if we have cause to receive the five books of *Moses*, we have the same (not to say greater) to receive the four gospels.

FROM what hath been said before, I might draw several useful corollaries. I shall name some:

FIRST, The great grounds which we have for the belief of the Christian doctrine: They are the very same and greater than those, which the Jews had for receiving the law of Moses. Our holy religion doth not want sufficient motives of credibility.

SECONDLY, That whatever cause may be assigned of the Jewish infidelity, 'tis not for want of credibility in the Christian doctrine.

THIRDLY, That the infidelity of the Jews to this day is not merely from such an ignorance, which is invincible and innocent; but from a worse cause, and such as will leave them without excuse.

i 2 Chron. xxxiv.

AND

AND yet I must add, that the case of the present Jews is very different from that of their fathers, who lived in our SAVIOUR's time, and saw his works. They had an opportunity of knowing the truth, beyond what many of the present Jews have had. Jesus lived among them, he preached and did wonderful works towards their conviction: k If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin, (says Jesus of those Jews) but now they have no cloak for their sin. They were destitute of all excuse, and their infidelity could not be ascribed to simple ignorance. As for the Jews of the present age, tho' they cannot be excused from fault; yet I reckon them less sinners than their forefathers; because they have not the means of better information, which their fathers had. They are by their parents early instru-Eted in the Jewish religion, prejudiced from their infancy against Christianity, offended with the scandalous lives of Christians, and can hardly get loose from the hold, which was laid upon them from their first education. I hope, that God will be merciful to them, and make great abatements for their circumstances. Most certain it is however, that these Jews (or many of them) might come to the knowledge of the truth; and therefore invincible ignorance cannot be their excuse. It is very plain, from what hath been said, that a simple ignorance was not the cause, why they rejected Jesus and his religion. I am not willing to censure severely a whole nation, nor apt to believe men guilty of any malice; but the case before us is beyond all dis-

Obj. IKNOW, what may be objected in behalf of the Jews, that their sin in rejecting of Jesus and his doctrine, and putting him to death, was mere ignorance. Father forgive them (says Jesus) for they know not what they do. I wot that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your rulers; says St. Peter. Because they know him not, they condemned him; says St. Paul. And elsewhere, Had they known, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. From all which it seems to be plain, that the Jewish insidelity is

to be imputed to mere ignorance: To which I answer,

Answ. I. THAT it must be granted, that the Jews, who crucified JESUS,

did not believe him to be the MESSIAS, and were so far ignorant.

II. This was not a simple and mere ignorance, but a culpable and vincible one. Twas their fault, and cannot therefore be their excuse. Jesus supposeth their ignorance their fault, when he prays, Father, forgive them. They did not know, nor would they understand. They resuled to be converted, and shut their eyes.

HAVING shewed that the Christian religion doth not want sufficient mozitives of credibility, and that the Jew hath as much reason to believe, that Jesus was sent by God, as he hath to believe the divine mission of Moses; I shall now proceed to inquire into the causes and occasions of the Jewish insidelity. For it doth appear, that this is not to be imputed to our religion, nor yet to be attributed to mere invincible ignorance; and we are therefore obliged to search farther in our inquiry into this matter. And for my more orderly proceeding in this matter, I shall

I. Shew, what were the more principal causes from themselves, upon which they were moved to reject Jesus, and the Christian religion at their first appearance. And they were these that follow:

FIRST, A carnal and worldly temper: They had been allured, under the oeconomy of Moses, with promises of temporal good things, such as long life, victory over their enemies, plenty, &c. Indeed they received withal several promises of a MESSIAS; but then they hoped from him fuch good things, as this world afforded. But Jesus made no shew of any worldly pomp, and made no offer of any such rewards. On the other hand, he cast a great contempt upon this lower world, and despised and overlooked it. He came not into the world like a temporal prince. He was born of a poor virgin in Jewry, and in a small village, where he was lodged in a manger: He was forced in his infancy into Egypt, and upon his return was brought up in the obscure country of Galilee. There he dwelt under the p character of a carpenter's son; and probably in the employment of such a mean artificer. He after this refused the honour of being a king; contented himself with a mean condition, and the retinue of poor fishermen. They who owned him to be the MESSIAS, were disappointed: They q expected dignities and preferments from him, and that he would erect a temporal | kingdom: And others rejected him upon this account, viz. because he entertained them not with temporal and worldly advancements. Covetouineis, and an inordinate love of the things of the lower world, was one great cause why the Jews rejected Jesus. The † Pharisees, who were covetous, heard him and derided him. Covetousness 'disposeth men to reject Christianity; or it renders its principles inessectual. For Jesus designed by his religion to abstract men from the love of this world, and to erect a spiritual kingdom. On the the other hand, the Jews were fond of this world and placed their hopes upon it: Hence it was that they rejected Jesus, and dispised him, and his spiritual doctrine, and

SECONDLY, Malice and pertinacy; There was a certain obstinacy, which obtained among the Jews in our SAVIOUR's time. They were not disposed to receive information and to be convinced. They were so far from defiring to know the truth, that they refused the means of coming at it. This is a severe charge against them; but 'tis certainly a very true one. We have in the new Testament proofs of it beyond exception: And where-ever this is the case, there is no remedy left. And this was the case of the Jews in the time of Jesus: I wish I could say, that the nation to this day were not in great measure guilty of it. Our SAVIOUR wrought many miracles to convince them of his divine mission: To the works which he wrought, he refers them, as to sure evidences, that he was sent by God. These were the testimonies beyond all exception: But how do the Jews behave themselves, when they are thus pressed? Surely not like honest men, that were desirous to know the truth. Either they question the matter of fact, or they impute the work to the power of the devil, or else quarrel, that it was done on the sabbath-day. Of the first we have an instance in the man, I that was born blind and received his fight: Of the second, in him, that was blind and dumb, and possessed, whom Jesus restored. Of the third, in him, that was restored from an infirmity that had afflicted him 38 Years. When the fact was undeniable, then they cavil about his authority, or they deny it to be a work of the HOLY GHOST, or quarrel with JESUS, because the work was done on the sabbath; in all which cases our LORD

P Ta textione ieya oigiálen autes v load J. Martyr. Dialog. cum Tryph. q Mat. xxiii. 20. || Act. i. 16. † Luke xvi. 14. \* Mat. viii. 34. c, xiii. 23. Act. xvi. 19. Mat xiii. 55. f Joh. ix. † Mat. xii. u Joh. v. fays

fays enough to silence them, but all in vain. They that cannot answerhim, endeavour to take away his life; and when they want arguments, they betake themselves to stones to cast at him, and lay wait to entangle and ensure him. When he 'had raised Lazarus from the dead, the fact was so evident, and the work so great, that many believed on him: But the chief priest and pharisees gather'd a council, and said, What do we? For this man doth many miracles: If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him. Here the sact was allowed: but this was so far from convincing these men; that when they own the sact, they contrive that it may not gain belief to Jesus. Nay their malice is so great, that 'they consult to put Lazarus to death: not for any evil that he had done, but, Because that by reason of him many of the Jews

went away, and believed on JESUS.

THIS malice of the Jews appeared farther upon the sufferings and death of JESUS: Here they shewed themselves not only destitute of honesty, but of common humanity besides. A talse disciple is hired with a sum of money to betray him into their hands. He is before the high priest rudely smitten, tho convicted of no crime. The Jews suborned false witnesses against him, which yet were incoherent with one another; those who at last bore witness, did not agreetogether. See their spite and malice: JESUS had formerly 2 said, upon the Jews requiring a figu, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will build it up. How maliciously were these words improved! They that passed by, when Jesus hung upon the cross, tauntingly a faid, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thy self. What Jesus had said, related to the temple of his body. So it was, Jesus said only Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. The witnesses add to it, when they depose that he said, I am able to (or, I will) destroy the temple of GoD, and build it in three days. The multitude carry it farther, Thou that destroyest the temple, &c. Here's malice in perfection and in the highest degree. Here's no attempt upon the temple, no overt-act prov'd against him; there was no likelihood, that he should attempt it, nor did they think him able to destroy it. The building it up was no crime, supposing it destroyed. But this was as incredible as the other, and the whole information spake great spite and malice. The behaviour of the Jews toward ] Esus in his last sufferings was inhumanly barbarous.

AGAIN, the Jews shewed great malice not only in endeavouring, what they could, to hinder the resurrection of Jesus, but when they could not do that, in hindring the spreading and belief of it. They gave mony to the soldiers to say, His disciples came by night, and stole him away, while we slept. In which tis hard to say, whether the obstinate malice or folly was the greater: If they were assep, how could they tell that his disciples were there? And if

they were not, why did they suffer them to take him away?

Upon the miraculous effusion of the Holy Ghost their malice appeared again: There were those that b mocked, saying, These men are full of new wine. After this they persecuted those who preached the resurrection, and took counsel to slay them. They raged against these witnesses and cast stones at them; they poposed them and blashemed: and St. Stephen tells them, Te do always resist the Holy Ghost; as your fathers did, so do ye. Upon the whole matter, they maliciously and obstinately resisted all the means of

<sup>\*</sup> Joh. xi. 45. y Joh. xii. 10. 2 Joh. ii. 19. 4 Matth. xxvii. 40. 5 Act. ii. 13. 6 Ibid. iv. 3. 6 Ibid. vi. 19. 6 F Ibid. xviii. 6. 5 Ibid. vii. 51. 6 Conviction.

conviction. For there wanted not sufficient means to bring them to the knowledge of the truth, as appears, from what hath been said above: But there is

no help for them, that shut their eyes against the light.

THIRDLY, Another cause of their infidelity was their pride and haughtiness. For pride and a vain conceit of our selves is a great obstruction to a faith in Christ How can ye believe (says Jesush to the Jews) which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? They are the humble, whom God will teach. Profound humility is a great disposition for receiving the truth. As it is itself an indication of wisdom; so its also a great preparation for greater measures of knowledge, especially of spiritual and heavenly truths. The faith of a Christian cannot consist with pride and vain-glory. The brethren or kindred of Jesus put him upon shewing himself in publick, that his disciples might see his works: For (say they) there is no man that doth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou do these things, shew thy self to the world. At this rate do these men talk: But that which follows next, will give us to understand, what these men were: They were the brethren, but not the disciples of Jesus: Tis added, For neither did his brethren believe on him.

THE Jews were God's peculiar people, and the favourites of heaven. Paul reckons up & several of their privileges: To whom (says he) pertaineth the adoption, i. e. They were God's children, when others were aliens: And the glory: They had the m ark of the testament, a great symbol of God's favour, and presence among them: There God resided between the cherubims, that were over that mercy-seat, which covered this ark. Hence 'tis called his " resting-place, and the ark of his strength. And this presence of God was the glory of that people; and indeed is that very thing, which renders a people great and considerable. It follows, And the covenants: The o covenants made with Abraham first, and in the time of Moses, with all Israel: As also circumcision, and sacrifice, the signs and sacraments of that covenant: The Mofaical covenant, and the Evangelical and new covenant: For this latter was not only promised to the Jews, but they had the first offer of entering into it. And a the giving of the law. Not the legislative power; but the privilege of receiving the law of GoD; which was peculiar to the Israelites, and that which did not only distinguish them from others, but also exalted them. above the rest of mankind. And the service of God, i. c. religion, or the right way of worshipping God, and such as God thought fit to prescribe himself. And the promises: These were encouragements to their obedience. Such were the promises of temporal good things, as well as those of the MESSIAS. Whose are the fathers, i. e. The patriarchs, and holy men of old, who were great examples of piety and virtue, to excite them to obedience. To them also CHRIST was promised, and of them he came according to the flesh.

These were great advantages and privileges, and ought to have rendered them very pious and grateful, humble and compassionate towards those, who wanted these things. But instead of this, they were proud and insolent, and contemners of the rest of mankind. And hence it was, that they rejected the Christian doctrine. They sought not the honour, that cometh of God only, but received honour one of another: And how, then, could they believe? as

JESUS

h Joh. v. 44.

Matth. xv. 26.

Gen. xvii.

Joh. vii. 3, 4, 5.

Exod. iv. 21.

Heb. ix. 5.

Exod. iv. 22.

Jer. xxxi. 9, 20.

A 2 Chron. 6. 41.

Pal lxxviii. 61.

Pal lxxviii. 61.

Pal cxlvii. 19, 20.

Rom. iii. 2.

JESUS asked the Jews. So great was their pride and haughtiness upon the score of their privileges, that they were not capable of the wise instructions, with which our LORD would have gained them to the truth: Twas this which rendered them unteachable, and impenetrable: And when the conviction was so great, that they could not but give some credit to our LORD, yet because of the Pharisees they did not confess him, less they should be put out of the synagogue: For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God, They were swell'd with pride and haughtiness; and this rendered the doctrine of Christ ineffectual. They were descended from Abraham; marked for God's peculiar by circumcision; savoured with the law, and temple; separated from other nations by their institutions and rites; and these things less them proud, and their pride obstructed their receiving the doctrine of Jesus; who designed to bring his followers to the truest wisdom and greatest happiness, by rendering them meek and humble, and therewithal disposed to find our the truth.

THESE were indeed the principal causes, and flowing from themselves, upon which the Jews rejected Jesus and his holy doctrine. And we see, that they were their lusts and crimes: 'Twas not their reason, but their vices that made head against Jesus and his religion. I shall,

II. SHEW some other causes from themselves, which were less principal, which disposed the Jews to reject JESUS and his holy religion. And those were some dangerous errors and mistakes about religion, and matters relating thereunto. Their lusts indeed and vices, the naughtiness of their wills and their corrupt affections, might incline them to those errors, and be the occasion of their falling into them; and so far they were criminal and culpable. But considering these errors separately and apart, they were causes less principal and of less malignity than those above-named. Under this head I reckon the following particulars.

FIRST, An over-valuing of rites, and institutions; with too great a neglect of moral virtues. This is a most dangerous error; and the Jews were greatly over taken with it. The Jews were under the pædagogy of ordinances. God thought fit (and no doubt for very wife reasons) to lay this yoke upon them, during the occonomy of Moses. Their law was given with great pomp; and very many were the rites and institutions, to which they stood obliged: Such were circumcision, and sacrifices of several sorts, purifications, and many other ceremonies. These things they were obliged to, because God required them at their hands: But they were too apt to rest here, and to neglect the moral duties, which were of far greater weight. And upon this account the prophets of God reproved them very frequently; and to shew them the wide difference between moral duties, and mere institutions, they say many things to depretiate the latter and recommend the former. When our SAVIOUR came into the world, he taught a religion, that was simple and plain, free from ceremonies and outward dress and amusements. He \* taught us to worship God in spirit and in truth, and did not annex the worship to one certain place: He did not clog it with a multitude of rites; nor require any sacrifice but what was spiritual and reasonable. He did not require that observation of certain times, and distinction of certain meats, and other usages, which had obtained before and under the law of Moses. Hence it was, that the Jews quarrelled with JESUS, and rejected his doctrine. If he did a good

f Joh. xii. 42, 43.

\* Matth. iii. 9. Joh. viii. 39. Rom. ii. 17.

\* Joh. iv.

\* Work

work and a most miraculous one, then they excepted against him that? he did it on the sabbath-day. If the work was never so good or innocent; yet they had this objection against it. At another time they quarrel with him because his followers washed not their hands; tho' they in the mean neglected their duty to their natural parents, and avoided not those things, which do indeed defile the man. They laid great stress upon little things, and 2 passed over the weightier things of God's lew: They were contenders for circumcision and the lesser laws of Moses, and neglected the circumcision of the heart. Hence, it was, that they impugned the Christian religion: And this spirit continues to this day. Thus 'Trypho objects against the Christians, not only that they observed not the feafts and their sabbath; but also that they had not circumci-Justin Martyr gives a clear answer to this matter of circumcision in these words; El & fr araynaia, &c. If, says he, circumcision was necessary, God would never have formed Adam uncircumcised, nor would be have had respect to the sacrifice of uncircumcised Abel: It would not have been said of uncircumcised Enoch, that he pleased God, and was not, because God took him. Uncircumcised Lot was saved from Sodom by God and his angels. Noah, who was the head of the race of mankind, went uncircumcifed, as well as his children, into the ark. Uncircumcifed Melchiledeck was priest of the high God; to whom Abraham, who first received circumcision, paid tythe, and from whem he was bleffed; and according to whose order David foretels, that God would raise up a priest for ever. I will not repeat what that father adds concerning the sabbath, and distinction of meats. Certain it is, that the laying too great a firess upon mere institutions is a dangerous error; and hence it was, that the Jews rejected Christianity.

SECONDLY, An opinion that they were obliged to give a blind and implicit belief to their superiours, without using their judgment of discretion, and exa-Where-ever this lewd opinion obtains, the mining the merits of the cause. way of coming at the truth is obstructed; and this is the misery of it, that if a man chances to be missed by his superiours, there will be no hope, that he should ever return to the truth. He that thinks himself obliged to believe as his superiours believe, whenever he is misguided, he is past all hope of ever returning into the right way again. The Jews were mightily devoted to their wisemen, and their Sanhedrin; and (it must be confessed) there d was great care taken that the determination of the judges in matters of controversie, and cases of difficulty, should not be despised. But this provision did not suppose those judges infallible; and he that thinks himself obliged to obey the sentence of a court, is not therefore obliged to believe it to be just. Besides, the question here is of matters of faith: Every man is here to account for himself. Jesus tells us, that If the blind lead the blind, they shall both fall into the ditch. The Jews on the other hand 'erroneously thought themselves bound to believe with their elders; and one great reason why they rejected I as u s and his doctrine, was, because they did so. Do the rulers know indeed that this is the very CHRIST? say the Jews of JESUS. When the officers that were sent to take him, could not but say, Never man spake like this man, the Pharisees replied, Are ye also deceived? Have any of the rulers or the Pharisees believed on him? This was not the question, Whether they believed, or not? The true state of the question was, Whether or no he was worthy of belief? Jesus refers them to Moses,

y Joh. v. 16. Luk, vi. 2. Matth. xii. 2. 2 Matth. xv. 1, 20. Act. xv. 1. xxi. 21. 9 J. Martyr. Dialog. cum Tryph. Judgo. 9 Joh. vii. 26. v. 48.

a Matth. xxiii. d Deut, xvii. 8,

and to his works. The foolish Jews reject him, because the elders had done for And this is the case of the Jews to this day: They obstinately adhere to the sentence of their foresathers; and resuse to accept of Jesus as their Messina, because they owned him not. I have read of a Spanish Jew, who being by a Christian, and a divine of our church, urged with the danger of obstinate persisting in his Judaism after means of conviction, replied, That he desired to be in no better condition, nor to be thought wiser, than the wise men of his nation: And that if he was damned, so would Maimonides, and Rashi, &c. be, So addicted are these men to their wise men, that they will rather hazard their salvation, than lay aside their prejudice, and examine (as they ought) the merits of the cause. They are so far from receding from the sentence of their soresathers themselves, that they express the greatest detestation of those who tarn Christians: They have a saying among them, that they must Beware

of proselytes to the tenth generation.

THIRDLY, Too great an opinion of their traditional or oral law (as they call it) instead of adhering to that which was written, as they ought to have done. The Jews pretend to a law delivered by God to Moses, and by him to the Jews his cotemporaries, and by them to succeeding ages from one generation to another, which was not written, but delivered by word of mouth: This they call their oral law; and make it a necessary exposition of the written law, and have an equal effect for it. It is pretended by the Hebrew doctors, that the written law, without the oral, is obscure, and an imperfect rule: And that Moses did receive from God, and deliver to the people, this oral, as well as the written law. Maimonides (as if he had lived in the times of Moses, and had undertaken to write an history of what passed) takes upon him to acquaint us, how this law was delivered. He tells us with great confidence, that when God delivered a precept to Moses, he afterward added always the exposition and meaning of it. That Moses, after this went into his tent, and Aaron alone followed him; to whom Moses delivered the precept, which he had received, together with its exposition, or the oral law: That hereupon, Aaron kept on the right hand of Moses; and that Eleazar and Ithamar came next into the tent: To whom Moses communicated what he before had imparted to Aaron; upon which one of them betook himself to the lest hand of Moses, and the other to the right hand of Aaron: That after this the LXX Elders came in; and Moses taught them, as he had taught Aaron and his sons. After them came in the multitude, and all that fought the LORD; who received the like instruction from his mouth. Upon the whole matter then, says he, Aaron received this from Moses four times, his sons thrice, the elders twice, and the multitude once. He afterwards tells us, how this knowledge was conveyed by Aaron, and his sons, &c. But all this is destitute of proof, and probability also: We have not sufficient ground to admit the matter of fact; and no reason to believe this bold and confident Jew. I know very well, that 5 others of the Hebrew doctors have pleaded for the necessity of an oral or traditional law, as well as a written one. But all this is vain, and no more than what the church of Rome doth; which pleads, that there must be an infallible judge of controversies, because she fansies, that unless this be granted, there would be a great defect, and that God had not made sufficient provision for his church. As for what ha late Jewish writer hath advanced in this argument;

# Maimon. Przefat, in Expos. Miss. s Cosei, p. 111. 8. 35. Men. Ben Israel. Concikat, in Exod. q. 59. h V. Tertium Scriptum Judzi apud Limborch. Num. vi. as it speaks the modesty of the man, so it deserves to be considered: He affirms indeed the necessity of an oral law in laws that are merely positive, where the manner of executing the law is not determined by the written law; but he declares, that by the oral law he understands no more than the mode of exercising outward worship: And that 'tis necessary, that such a law should be admitted in many cases, as he contends; e.g. in the law, which requires circumcision, fringes on the garments, that requires fasting on the day of expiation; and which forbids the offering facrifices, that have blemishes, and ordinary works on the sabbath day. Here the written law being general and in terms at large, 'tis necessary that an oral or traditional law be admitted, which may reach to particular cases and emergencies, and determine the manner, how these precepts were to be executed. The manner of circumcifing is not defined, nor the number, fashion, materials, or colour of the fringes: What are to be reputed blemishes, which hinder the beast from being a fit sacrifice, is not expressed: nor yet the particular works forbidden on the sabbath, &c.

All that can be truly inferred from this is, that where the written law had not determin'd any circumstance, the constitution of the elders ought to be submitted to by the people; provided those constitutions did not any way clash with what was written, or make it void. It doth not hence follow, that the constitutions were as much divine as the written law; or that these things were delivered by Godto Moses, and by Moses to the

people, which is the question between the Jew and Christian.

That these constitutions of the elders are a divine law, can never be proved: But certain it is, that this opinion is a great obstruction to the belief of the Christian doctrine: And where-ever such a proposition is advanced and defended, men are not to be brought to the truth. We have great experience of this in the Roman church; who under pretence of catholick tradition hath brought into the church the most unreasonable doctrines and practices: Such are that of transubstantiation and the sacrifice of the mass. Under this pretence of tradition they have corrupted and depraved the Christian doctrine. Tis very strange, that there should not be found in the written word any express mention of the oral and traditional law, which the Jews and salse Christians so frequently apply themselves to for the desence of their superstitious sopperies. And when the written law was almost lost in the days of Josiah, 'tis very strange that such a vast number of oral traditions should be preserved intire.

of oral traditions should be preserved intire.

Our Saviour upon all occasions, appeals to what is written; and lets the Jews know, how i vain they were in urging traditions, and in the mean time making void the law of God, which was written. It They taught for dostrines the commandments of men: Nor was this a new charge upon them; their prophet Isaiah had I said of them, in God's name, Their fear towards me is taught by the precepts of men. No wonder that they were not convinced by the written word of God, who had set up another rule which God never made. Such men will think themselves obliged to believe, as their church believes; and when its come to that, no wonder that he who believes with the church, should err with it too.

THESE were the causes of the Jewish infidelity: The Christian doctrine did not want sufficient motives of credibility; but the Jews shut their eyes,

and hardened their hearts, and would not receive the truth. Upon this, III. God abandoned them, and their hearts were hardened; and this was a judicial hardness for their former wickedness: For whatever the Scripture may seem to impute to God in this matter, we are sure of this, that God is the author of no man's sin, nor can he be said to harden any man or people, in any sense that is derogatory to his holiness and justice. This infidelity of the Jews was foreseen, and foretold; and it was owing to their own wickedness; which was so great, so general, and so provoking, that God thought fit to abandon them, and reject them from being his people, and leave them under that hardness of heart, which they had brought upon themselves by their own repeated provocations. In them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand: and seeing ye shall see and shall not perceive: For this people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Their wickedness was from themselves, and their hardness from that; and God thought fit to leave them under that obduracy, which they had brought upon themselves. Their disease was of their own procuring; God offered to heal them, and they would not be healed. Their death is owing to themselves; and God can in no other sense be said to harden them, than as he leaves them to that hardness and blindness, which by their fins they had brought upon themselves; nor any farther to have any hand in their destruction, than a righteous judge hath in the death of a criminal; who doth indeed pronounce sentence of death, but his crime was the true canse which brought it upon him. Indeed this matter is expressed with some variety in the holy Scripture: And the text of the holy Writ, or the version of the text, may occasion some misunderstanding in the unwary reader, in this of Goo's hardening wicked Thus in a parallel place of St. John, we find this matter expressed s Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again, He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their hearts, that they should not see with their eyes, &c. Here the unwary reader will be apt from these words to attribute the Jewish infidelity to God; whereas it was owing to their own wickedness. We read indeed, He hath blinded their eyes, &c. and by he, we are prone understand God: But we have not cause so to do. For as this is not imputed to God in the prophet Isaiah, nor in the quotation, as it lies in St. Matthew, nor o in the Syriack version of this place, so it ought not to be imputed to him from the place it self: For it imports no more than this, that their eyes were blinded, &c. It is common among the sacred writers, that an active verb, that hath no person going before it, is to be understood as a passive or impersonal; and the careful observing of this manner of speech will remove many difficulties, that might otherwise disturb us. We have plenty of examples to this purpose, both in the new Testament and in the old. P Make to your selves friends of the mammon of unrighteouness: That when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations: i. e. That ye may be received, &c. Again a This night do they require thy foul, (so the Greek imports, and so tis in the the marginal reading,) i. e. Thy soul shall be required. Again, "Unto whom-

m Isa. vi. 9. Mat. xiii. 14, 15. a Joh. xii. 39, 40. ° V. Vers. Syr. in John xii. 40. b Luke xvi. 9. 4 Ibid. xii. 20. s Ibid. xii. 48.

soever much is given, of him much shall be required: and to whom men bave committed much, (i. e. to whom much is committed; of him they will ask the more; i. e. the more shall be asked. Again 'tis said of the salt, that hath lost its savour, the Bander want. We render it, men cast it out; that is, it shall be cast out: Thus St. Mathew says of it, that it is good for nothing, of all Brushivas Eso but to be cast out. And in the old Testament this manner of speaking also obtains. He shall call his name, so 'tis in the Hebrew; but we give the true sense, when we render it, his name shall be called. Again, " The anger of the LORD was kindled against Israel, and he moved David against them. God did not move David, 'tis expressly said in x a parallel place that Satan provoked David to number Israel: And what we render by He moved David, imports no more but this, that David was moved; and had our interpreters so rendered those words, they had given us the true fense and meaning; and would have done no more, than what they have justifiably done in rendering Isa. ix. 6. of which I took notice before. Once more, y we read Exod. vii. 13. He hardened Pharaoh's heart, that he hearkened not unto them. And some perhaps understand it of God: But by no means is the place so be understood. There is no mention of Godjust before: And the words import no more but this, that Pharaoh's heart was hardened; so the Vulgar and Chaldee have it; and we find the same Hebrew words so rendered, v. 22. not only by the Greek and Latin, but by the English version also: Nor is there any person mentioned in one place or in the other. In the \* next chapter 'tis said expressly, Pharaoh hardened his heart at this time also: Which words manifestly impute his foregoing hardness to himself. And 2 what is said Joh. xii. 40. He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their hearts, is by no means to be meant of GoD, as is evident from what hath been said; it imports only the event, and that their eyes were blinded, &c. b And this farther appears from this very place, as it is cited in the Acts, The heart of this people is waxed gross, &c. and their eyes have they closed, &c.

AND where God is said to send blindness upon, or harden any; yet certain it is, that he insuses them in the dark, and to their lusts; and only for

their great wickedness and obstinacy.

This may seem too great a digression: But I seared, that when I mentioned the judicial hardening of the Jews, among the causes and occasions of their insidelity, which the Scripture mentions, and in some sense attributes to God, men might mistake, in thinking the Scriptures do charge this upon God, when they do it not; or that God is in this the author of the sin or misery of any of his creatures. Fearing this, I say, I thought it needful to enlarge on this matter. But I proceed to add,

IV. That since they have ceased to be God's people, they have been also deprived for their sins of the helps and means of bringing them to the knowledge of the truth. The conversation, which Christians have with them, is upon the account of trade and merchandise: There hath not been that care used for their conversion, which there ought to have been. The first preachers of the Christian doctrine did labour to bring them to the truth: They had the power of working miracles, they led most exemplary lives, they preached very frequently upon the argument contested between them and the Christians: But afterwards the Jews were lest destitute of Luke xiv. 35. with Mat. v. 13.

Luke xiv. 35. with Mat. v. 13.

Exod. viii. 32.

John xii. 40.

Ast. xxviii 17.

Digitized by Google

that care, and those advantages of better information, which once they had. Nor was this all, For,

V. THE after Christians laid many stumbling-blocks in their way. e. g. 1. THE wicked lives of Christians: This hath tended very much to the hardening of the Jew. A man would not easily be tempted to a religion, which doth not make him better, who doth profess it: For Religion is good for nothing, if it doth not amend mens temper and manners. The first Christians were the best men, that the world ever saw; and had the succeeding ages of Christians trod in their steps, I can hardly believe, that there would have beenleft an unbelieving Jew in the Christian part of the world. But so it is, the Christian church is like the image in Daniel: The first and upper parts of it were gold and filver; if you come lower you will find iron and clay. The church of CHRIST at the first was pure and lovely: It did in after times degenerate, and that in so great a measure, that was a wise man to chuse his religion by the lives of them who profess it, perhaps Christianity would be the last religion he would choose. Trypho the Jew had every little to say in his time upon this head: And 'tis worth our while to observe, how weak his charge is, when he toucheth upon the lives of Christians. His words are these, Erifo, i. e. This (says he) we much wonder at, that you who profess godliness, and seem to be better than others, are yet no better than others, and differ not in your lives from the heathens. Here's something that looks like a charge; but if you consider the following words of the few, you will find nothing in it. He goes on speaking to the Christians; For that (says he) ye keep no feasts, nor sabbaths, nor retain circumcision, and place your hopes in a crucified man: And yet ye hope to receive good from God, when ye observe not his laws. Have you not read, that the soul that is not circumcised shall be be cut off from among his people? The case is plain, that he doth not here charge the Christians with vices and immoralities; their fault was, that they were not Jews: They were otherwise good men. But the later Jews do not stop here: They charge the Christians too truly with their vices, and their disobedience to the laws of Jesus their master; which Trypho owned to be great and admirable. They reckon up their deviations from their rule, and are hardened by our evil lives, and tempted to reject Jesus, because his followers are very often the worst of men. The Jews live amongst debauched Christians, and are hardened by them. I have read of an Italian Jew that said, That if he was a Christian, the vices and doctrines of Italy would strongly tempt him to disown that name. And of a Spanish Jew that pretended to be turned Christian; who thereupon bragged, that he had now lighted upon a religion, in which he could at once enjoy his beads and his whore. Thus do we help to keep the Jews in their unbelief. I add,

2. That not only by our evil lives, but 'many times by our weak arguments against the Jews, we tempt them to continue in their unbelies. It must be granted, that some of the ancient, and many of the modern Christians have desended their own doctrines, and disputed against the Jews with such weak and insufficient arguments, that they have thereby only hardened the Jews, and given a blow to their own cause. Many Scriptures have been misapplied; and the Jews been assaulted by noise and cla-

e J. Mart. Dialog. d R. Isac. Chizuk. l. 1. c. 49, 50. l. 2 c. 37. e R. Isac. l 1. c. 9, 10. Nizachon. Vet. p. 27, 28, 32, 55, 61, 62, 74, 117, 136, 142.

mour, by idle legends, and strained interpretations, rather than by all the rational ways of conviction. And very often force hath been used instead of reasoning; and instead of allowing them to be men of wit and sense, (as in truth they are) and treating them humanely, we have used them barbarously,; and with great inhumanity persecuted them, whom we ought to have convinced. This the fews are very sensible of; and do make great and just complaints of it in their writings: And this hath been another great occasion of their continuing in their unbelief.

3. MANY doctrines and undue practices continue in the Christian church, which are a feandal and rock of offence to the Jews. For they are so very unreasonable and absurd, and so directly contrary to their law, that whereever these prevail, there can be no hopes of bringing the Jews over to the Christian faith. I do profess, that if I had no other idea of Christianity, than what some of the Jews have, who live in Popish countries; and no other than what Abravenel and others had of it, who died a little before the reformation, I cannot see, what could ever induce me to become a Christian: But especially I should be far from it, had I been from my youth brought up in the law of Moses. The church of Rome hath very much to answer for in this matter. A great part of the latter Jews objections against the Chrifian religion are levelled against that idea, which they conceived of it from the avowed doctrines and practices of the church of Rome. For they looked upon that church as the standard of Christianity; and seem to have no other notion of it than what they receive thence. Hence it is that f their books are so full of objections against the Christian religion: They object against the worship of images, and the sacrament of the altar; and so they justly may: For the first of these is directly against the letter of their law, and the other none of the institutions of Jesus. They dispute warmly against the doctrine of transubstantiation. This doctrine they are certain cannot be true: And if they cannot be certain of that, they can never be certain of any thing; and therefore not of their own religion, nor of the truth of ours: And then the worship and adoration of the host, which is annexed to it, is idolatry, by the confession of those who require it, if the doctrine on which it is built should chance to be false. They argue against the praying to faints, the doctrine of purgatory, crossing our selves when it thunders, christening of bells, the necessity of the collibacy of priests, and the vowed single life of manks and nuns; the receiving the Apocryphal books into the canon of Scripture. But all this is nothing to the purpose: These are indeed the doctrines and practices of the Roman church, but not of CHRIST and the primitive Christians; and therefore we are not bound to defend them, nor are we at all concerned in these objections of the Fews. And when & Abravenel discourses against the Pope and his followers, as if they were the very same with all Christians; and when he interprets those places in Daniel (which Christians understood of Anti Christ) of the Pope and his church, 'tis manifest that as to the former, he is under a great mistake; and for the latter, we have no dispute with him. He knew no other Chriflianity indeed in his time, than what he found in that church; and was harrassed and driven from place to place, and had conceived a great displeasure against that church: But we are obliged no farther to defend her,

Digitized by Google

f Fortalitium fidei, p. 141. Jos. Albo. Ikkarim. Par. iii. c. 25. Niz. vet. p. 252. Lipman. Niz. p. 11. Niz. vet. p. 128. R. Isaac. p. 383. Lipman. p. 16, & 25. Niz. vet. p. 23, 41, 43, 196. R. Isaac. p. 345.

8 Abravenel Comment. in Dan. fol. 75. p. 2.

than she keeps keeps to the doctrine and practice of CHRIST, and the first Christians.

In the mean time the Jews are much to be pitied, who receive so much scandal from the Romanists, and are kept in their unbelief by the corrupt doctrines and practices of that apostatized church. Those of that communion will have a sad account to give, as well for having corrupted Christianity, the best religion in the world; as also for keeping the Jews from embracing it, and receiving the unspeakable benefits and advantages of it. They may please themselves in giving the Jews some protection in their countries, and encouraging their conversion, and bringing them to hear sermons; but cannot expect to see them become sincere converts, whilst their wicked doctrines and idolatrous practices obtain amongst them.

4. ANOTHER great stumbling-block, which we Christians have laid in their way, is the contentions and wars among us, and the several seas,

factions, and schisms, that have divided the Christian church.

As for our wars and quarrels, it must be owned, 'tis a great reproach upon us; but still not to be imputed to our holy religion; and that matter, as it is objected against the Christian religion, shall be considered elsewhere.

As for our fetts and schisms, it must be consest that the charge is too true. But as this is not to be charged upon our religion, which tends to unite us; so it is certain, that there was a time (and I hope will be) when all Christians were of one heart and soul. This is a plain argument, that our religion divides us not: No, 'tis our departure from it, that hath done it. Besides, the few has no cause to object this against our religion, when during the standing of their temple they had their setts also; and when they were free from idolatry, they were not from settaries: And to this day they have their Karraites, as well as their Misnical and traditional Jews. And the Jew that said, That if he would turn Christian, he could not tell of what sett he should be, said no more against our religion, than any Christian might have said against theirs.

BEFORE I put an end to this discourse, I cannot but represent unto the reader some other things, which are great obstacles to the Jews at this time, and render the hope of their conversion very faint and small. There is nothing that I can see, as things are at present, that can give us any hope: I mean, we have no prospect of it from any thing within our view, or outward appearance. Far be it from me to limit the all-mighty, or call in question any part of the divine revelation relating to this matter. I hope (and heartily pray for it) that there will come a time, when they will be added to the church; and when all impediments, which now hinder, will be taken out of the way. But this will be Go D's doing, and will be wonderful in our eyes. In the mean time, they seem to be very far from that blessed condition, and we can see no hopes of such a change. For,

FIRST, I fear, that there is not that done by Christian rulers, and people, that ought to be done towards their conversion. I will not so far digress here, as to shew, what is sit to be done to so good an end: I may (if God continue my life) consider that matter apart. Christians do indeed receive the Jews into their countries, They use them to many purposes relating to trade and traffick, to intelligence and correspondencies: But they have not (too often it hath been so) been treated with that humanity and tenderness, as becomes the Christian doctrine. Instead of that, they have sometimes

been severely persecuted and afflicted, and very often flouted and scoffed at; contemned as men of no wit, and not worthy of our notice or regard. have wanted that compassion, which we ought to have for their souls, and have not treated them with due tenderness and regard: And this hath but hardened them in their obstinacy, and prejudiced them against our holy religion. Besides this, the study of the Hebrew language hath (I know not by what means) been too much laid aside, and we have by this neglect been less able to convince the Jews. 'Tis certain, that this fludy hath not only been neglected, but ridiculed also: Whereas nothing could be of greater use to us than a great skill, not only of the Biblical Hebrew, but the Rabbinical and Talmudical also, to enable us to convince the Jews. By such a skill we might be enabled to use their own weapons against them; and to dispute against them from the avowed principles of their ancient wise men, for whom they are very prone to express a profound regard. The Jews are well pleased with our neglect of these studies: And those of them that are now in England, have been observed of late years, when a learned Christian hath died, and his books have been exposed to sale, to buy the whole collection of Jewish books, that have been left, and consequently hinder the Christians from making use of these weapons against them. I knew a very choice collection or two of late thus unhappily disposed of.

SECONDLY, 'Tis very certain, that he fews are very careful in the education of their children. They teach them very early to read their law, and bring them up from their infancy, with wonderful diligence, in the knowledge of their own law, and in prejudices against the Christian doctrine. They are taught betimes to detest Christians and Christianity; and they permit not their children so much as to play with the children of Christians, for fear of receiving any pollution or infection from them. So that from their milk they are arm'd against the Christian doctrine. They have several books to this purpose, which contain filthy reslections upon Jesus and his doctrine; and among others, one in verse (which is easily got by heart) to furnish their learners with answers to the common objections made against them by Christians. Of how great moment this is to secure them in their

obstinacy and incredulity, I need not represent to the reader.

THIRDLY, There is still this farther account to be given of the Jewish obstinacy and resusing the profession of Christianity; and its this. The Jews do not only call by the opprobrious name of apostates; but are wont to follow with the most direful and dreadful execrations imaginable, them who forsake Judaism, and embrace Christianity. They teach, that such an apostate as this, shall have no part in the world to come; That, his sin shall never be forgiven to eternal ages. They spit at him, They call his children bastards, and his wife polluted and defiled; They resuse to eat and drink with him; They anathematize, They curse him three times a day morning and evening, And in this curse, they pray that he may be cut off from hope; They esteem him as an epicuraan and an heretick; They contemn him and his family, And decline all affinities with them, be they never so wealthy; They insidiously lay wait for him; Him that kills him, they indemnisse, and affirm, that he needs not repentance, but is to be esteemed, as if he had brought an oblation. When he dies, they say of him, The name of the wicked shall rot.

Digitized by Google

h Buxtorf. Synag. Judaic. c. 3. L. Moden. Cerem. & Conft. Jud. p. 3. c. 10. Lipmanni Carmen apud Wagensel. Tela Ignea Satan.

If in his life-time any evil's befal him, they say, Thus let the enemies of the LORD perist; They rejoyce in his fall; and make his goods common. They follow him with many reproaches; When they mention him, they say, Let his name and memory be blotted out, and let this apostate be our atonement; Woe be to him and to his soul; woe be to his father and mother, that brought him up and conceived him; woe be to his master, who taught him the law, &c. This account we have from 1 a Jewish writer, who lived near 300 years ago, and wrote a book call'd a book of faith, in which he undertakes to shew the causes, for which the Jews, though they are convinced of the truth, yet dare not profess the Christian saith. No man can doubt, but this conduct of the Jews doth tend very much to the keeping their people from becoming Christians. I had an account from a Jew himself, who told me, he was resolved to turn Christian: But with this man, after I had encouraged him to perfift in that good resolution, when he was gone from me, the Jewish synagogue used such methods, that he came no more, but continues among them as before. I received an account from another, a young woman of a considerable fortune, that she was convinced of the truth of the Christian religion, and was in great affliction on that account, because she knew not how to profess Christianity, her father and uncle being alive, who would never allow it. She was unspeakably tormented on this occasion; I made means to speak with her father, I offered him to come to his house to discourse with his daughter before him, and before their Chacham, or preacher, or what other Jews he pleased. His answer was, He could not submit to it: Moreover he added, That if he admitted me to come to his house upon such an occasion, he should incur the displeasure of the synagogue; which he was not willing to do. He assured me also, that his daughter had no inclination to turn Christian, and that what I was inform'd of as to that matter, was by no means to be credited. I could proceed no farther. I am sufficiently assured that I was not mis-inform'd; and upon inquiry afterwards I was affured, that he threatned his daughter, that he would take away her life, if she durst for the future shew her inclinations to turn Christian.

LASTLY, The infincerity and wicked practices of those, who from being Jews have turned Christians, hath been a great obstacle and impediment to the conversion of the Jews. I will not enlarge upon this head, as I might: I take no pleasure in laying open the miscarriages of these wretches. The stories to this purpose are too well known. The sear of torments, the hope of preferment and gains, have prevailed with too many to profess the Christian religion, who are still Jews in their hearts, and give too great proofs of it when they come to die; and if they do not, yet their lives have been so profligate, that we cannot believe, that they have any sense of religion at all. I have seen too much of this my self, in that acquaintance which I have had with them; and many things upon this head might be collected from books. This hath proved of very fatal consequence; for as it hath hardened the Jews, so it hath discouraged Christians from endeavouring to make proselytes. It is not many years since, that I was informed, that there was a certain learned Jew, who was desirous to become a Christian: But then he that informed me, added, That at present this Jew wanted some pounds to redeem him out of prison. I replied, that he should

i Tractat. impres. Ison, A. D. 1542. per Paul. Fagium,

be redeemed thence, and the mony be deposited, which he desired. I sent a very learned man to the prison to give me an account of the man: He found him, and inquir'd of him upon what motives he was inclined to turn Christian, he having declared his desire to change his religion; but soon found that it was a matter, that he had never considered, and was not able to make any kind of reply unto: It was all artisice, to get mony and relief. I will not be so uncharitable, as to think, that they are all hypocrites and bad men; God forbid, I should entertain such a thought; but I have too much cause to sear that, that too many of them are.

To conclude, We shall better now discern what our duty is, in order to the converting of the Jews, and how great a work and task it is. This should not discourage us from attempting it; but put us upon greater diligence, and proper methods. Something we may all do, viz. To pray earnestly to God for them, that he would remove the veil that is upon their hearts, and bring them to the knowledge of the truth.



Dd2

CHAP

## \*\*\*

## CHAP. II.

The Jews objections against the credibility of the four gospels. Their objections reducible to four heads The two first considered in this Chapter, viz. I. That the history of the gospel is inconfishent with it self, or with the netoriety of the matter of fact. This they attempt to prove; from the genealogy of St. Matthew, compared with that of St. Luke; from the relation of JESUS bis cursing the fig-tree; from the prayer of JESUS; Luke xxiii. 34. from the various relating of the resurrection of JESUS; and from those words, John ii. 20. Forty and fix years was this temple in building. This must be understood of Herod's temple; whereas Herod reigned but thirty seven years, and finished his temple-building in eight years, as Ben Gorion affirms. The matter of the genealogy to be considered a-part: A particular answer to the other objections under this first bead. II. The Jews pretend, that the History of the sour Gospels is inconsistent with the law of Moses. This they attempt to prove from Mat. v. 34. compared with Deut. vi. 13. That what Moses commands in one place, JESUs forbids in the other; again JESUs calls the loving one another a new commandment and his commandment, John xiii. 34. and chap. xv. ver. 12. whereas in truth, it was a precept of Moses. Besides, polygamy and divorces, which were allowed by Moses, are forbidden by JESUS. A particular reply to these several objections.

AVING before had occasion to shew, that the writers of the sour gospels deserve belief as much as Moses, who wrote the Pentateuch: Or which comes to the same thing, that the four Gospels are as worthy of belief as the sive books of Moses; it follows from thence unavoidably, that the Jew, who believes the writings of Moses, hath as great reason (I need not say greater) to believe these writings also. But because 'tis otherwise in matter of sact, I shall make a more particular search after the reasons of it. The Jew must pretend some reasons for this; and they must be setched from the sour gospels themselves. And indeed they do produce in their writings their objections against these books; which I shall more particularly consider. I think the main of them are reducible to these following general heads.

I. THAT the *bistory* of the four gospels is inconsistent with it self, or with the notoriety of matter of fact. And here they give several instances:

stances: That of the genealogies of St. Mathew and St. Luke; which they pretend are neither of them to the purpose, and that they agree not with one another. The history Mark xi. 13, 14. of Jesus's cursing the fig-tree, is another objection under this head. 'Tis very strange, that Jesus should then expect figs, or curse the fig-tree for not having them, when 'tis said, That it was not the time of figs. Again, Jesus prays for his crucifiers; Father forgive them, &c. This prayer (says the Jew) was heard, or not heard: If not heard, how can this consist with what Jesus says elsewhere Joh. xi. 41. and chap. xvi. ver. 23, 24. and with the Christians belief of the efficacy of Christ's intercession? If heard, how come Christians to impute the calamities of the Jews to their crucifying of Jesus? Again, they object, that the history of Christ's resurrection is so delivered by the four evangelists, as renders the whole relation justly liable to suspicion. Once more: 'Tis pretended that those words, John xi. 20. Forty and six years was this temple in building, is utterly inconsistent with the matter of sact. This must be understood of Herod's temple; now he reigned but thirty seven years, and he sinished the building his temple in eight years, as Ben Gorion doth assume

II. THAT the history of the four Gospels is inconsistent with the law of Moses. This is also an objection of great force; for we think, that we ought to receive Moses for a true prophet; and if Jesus require any thing opposite to his law, this will have its weight and deserve consideration. Under this head 'tis said, That whereas Moses commands to swear by the name of God, Deut. vi. 13. Jesus says to his followers, Swear not at all,' Matth. v. 34. Jesus calls the loving one another a new commandment, Joh. xiii. 34. and elsewhere, his commandment, Joh. xv. 12. whereas in truth, 'twas a precept of Moses. Not to say, that polygamy and divorces, which' were allowed by Moses, are forbidden by Jesus.

III. OTHER things are alledged out of the gospels, as inconsistent with the common belief of Christians. Thus Matth. i. 25, is urged as inconsistent with the belief of the perpetual virginity of the blessed virgin. Again, Matth. xix. 17. xx. 23. Mark vi. 5. xiii. 32. are alledged as inconsistent with the belief, that the Christians profess of the divinity of Christ. And lastly, those words, Matth. xii. 40. are urged as inconsistent with the account, which Christians give of the time between the death, and the resurrection of Jesus from the dead.

IV. THE four evangelists are charged with missquoting and missapplying the testimonies, which they produce out of the ald Testament, ver. 9. That they quote what is no where to be found, Matth. ii. 23. v. 43. Joh. vii. 38. xix. 28, 36. Or that they quote false, and with missake, Mark ii. 26. Matth. xxiii. 35. xxvii. 9. Or else that they quote places nothing to the purpose, Matth. ii. 15, 17, 18.

I. I BEGIN with the first pretence, viz. that the history of the four gospels is inconsistent with it self, or with the notoriety of matter of fact.

(1.) And here I should begin with the genealogies of St. Matthew and St. Luke: But that matter I will set aside here; and afterward consider it apart.

apart. The history of Jesus his cursing the fig-tree is therefore to be next considered.

(2.) MARK Xi. 13, 14. It is a said of Jesus, That seeing a fig-tree at far off having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon. And when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not yet. And I ESUS answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. This is one of the objections of the Jews against the new Testament. Here b the Jew urgeth, that if Jesus had been a divine person, he would never have expected fruit, where he could not but know, there was none: Nor is it reasonable to believe (nor for the honour of Jesus to have it reported of him) that he should curse a figtree without cause. He should rather have rendered the barren fig-tree fruitful. It is hard to conceive, why he should expect figs, or curse the tree for having none; when it is expressly said, That the time of sigs was not yet. To expect figs out of season, and to curse the fig-tree for not bearing them at that time, is very surprising. The few who thus objects tells us, That he once met with a Christian, and urged him with this difficulty; who found it so great, that he was forced to forsake the literal sense, and fly for refuge to a mystical one. To this I answer,

1. THAT JESUS expected fruit, where he found none, is no proof that he was not a divine person. It is said of God, that he looked (or expected) that his vineyard should bring forth grapes, and it brought forth wild-grapes, Isa. v. 2. Tis enough, in this present case, that Jesus had just

cause (as will appear afterward that he had) to expect fruit.

2. That Jesus cursed the fig-tree without cause, the Jews ought not to affirm; much less object it against him, 'Twas however without fruit,' and therefore unprofitable at present; and 'twas (as is thought from, Matth. xxi. 19.) in the high-way, and so had no proprietor. The other miracles of Jesus were generally so many rescues, and acts of kindness: Those of Moses were often so many plagues and inflictions. They are very prone to find fault, who can accuse Jesus for cursing a barren sig-tree. The Jewish doctors have a saying Fructus liberat arborem. The wood which they burnt on the altar was such as bore no fruit. They are very squeamish, who find fault with Jesus for such an action as this.

3. Those words, For the time of figs was not yet, may be so explained, as to make the place very plain, and remove the force of this objection of the Jews. By the time of figs may well be understood the time of gathering them; when they were fully ripe, and must be gathered, or would fall from the tree. And then those words, For the time of figs was not yet, refer not to those words immediately foregoing, but to those before, where tis said, that Jesus seeing a fig-tree, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon; and he might reasonably expect fruit as well as leaves, because the fig-time, that is, the time when figs were wont to be gathered, was not yet come.

HERE'S nothing forced in this interpretation, nothing but what the words will well bear, and what is very agreeable to the import of them. Kaue's alone is the time of gathering figs. Thus is well to the ime of fruit (Mat. xxi. 34.) fignifies the time of gathering fruit. This, in St. Mark, is called the time, (Mark xii. 2.)

AND in the parable of the vineyard 'tis said of him that planted the vineyard, & wife, and at the season (i. e. the time of gathering in the grapes, as

appears

Mark xi. 13, 14. b M. S. L. N. 78. R. Isaac. l. 2. c. 30.

appears by the context) he fent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard, Luke xx. 10. 'Tis said, that when the spies were sent into Canaan, That the time was the time of the first ripe grapes, (Num. xiii. 20.) i.e. The time when they were sit to be gathered, as appears from the context. (compare ver. 20. with ver. 23.) Nor is any thing more frequent in common speech: That is the time or season of a thing, when 'tis gathered, and taken in. That is called the hop-time, and hemp-time, &c. when these things are gathered: And so the time of sigs, or sig-time may well denote the time of gathering them in.

THERE is no reason, why any man should object against connecting these words, for the time of sigs was not yet, with those which tell us, That JESUS came expecting sigs, and not with those immediately preceding them. For besides the examples to this purpose in the old Testament, St. Mark himself doth elsewhere give an example of like nature. Speaking of those who came to the sepulchre of JESUS, he says, They said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone? It follows, And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away: And after this 'tis added, For it was very great (Mark xvi. 3, 4.) Where it is manifest that those words, For it was very great, are not to be connected to those which go immediately before them, but to those in the third verse.

In the old testament we may find several places, where certain words are not connected to those immediately preceding, but to others at a greater distance, e. g. Tis said that Lot beheld all the plain of Jordan, that it was well watered every where, before the Lord destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah, e. as the garden of the Lord, like the land of Egypt, as thou comest unto Sometiment of God. xiii. 10. Those words, As thou comest unto Zobar, cannot be connected unto the land of Egypt, mentioned just before, but to the plain of Jordan, to which it did belong. Again, Josbua wrote these words in the book of the law of God, and took a great stone, and set it up there, under an oak, that was in the sanctuary of the Lord, Josh, xxiv. 26. Those words, in the sanctuary, refer to the book of the law, which was there; and not to the oak, which was not in the sanctuary.

4. As for what the Jew tells of the Christian, I am little concerned in it. He needed not to forsake the literal sense: And yet I would not contend with him, that should affirm, that there is some mystery in this matter.

If the Christian, which the Jew speaks of, did affirm, that there was a mystical sense of this passage, he said no more than what the Greek and Latin sathers, and the later Christian writers have also affirmed. This passage is by them applyed, to the Jewish synagogue and Pharisaical traditions, and the unprositableness of their legal observances: And it is easie to produce many testimonies to this purpose. Jesus was ready to suffer; and he might think sit by this miracle to consirm his followers against that time of tryal. And moreover, its probable that the cursing the sig-tree was Enigmatical, and that it signified the approaching malediction and rejection of the Jewish nation. We find in St. Matthew, after this matter is related, what our Saviour adds, Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof, Matth. xxi. 43. which will receive farther consirmation from our Saviour's words elsewhere; and they are these: A certain man had a sig-tree planted in his vineyard, and he came and sought fruit thereon, and sound none: Hereupon, he commanded that it should be cut down, and no longer

cumber the ground, (Luk. xiii. 6, 7.) God grant, that the Jews may lay this matter to heart!

5. There is one thing more, that I shall add: The Jew says, That the Christian, against whom he objected this difficulty, was forced to forsake the literal sense and fly for refuge, to a mystical one. The credit of this passage depends upon the veracity of this Jew: But let us take it for granted, that the Christian did recur to a mystical sense; yet doth it not thence follow, that he forsook the literal: And this will appear from principles owned among the Jews. Abravanel c teacheth quite another doctrine: He thinks the literal and mystical sense very consistent with each other. The history of the creation is expounded mystically by the Jews; but yet the facts, as related by Moses, are not therefore called in question. We Chriflians do not disallow a mystical sense in this matter; but still we do not, and I am fure, that we ought not to destroy the literal. And allowing a mystery in this account given by the evangelists of the fig tree, which was cursed; yet this doth not destroy the literal sense. No Christian can deny the faith and truth of the relation. We very well know, that the structure of the tabernacle and vestments of Aaron are by Josephus, by Philo, by R. Bechai (to name no more) expounded by way of Midrash, in a mystical sense: Doth it thence follow, that these (or any other Jews that do the same) do deny the literal sense? They are far from it; and we should be very unjust, if we should charge so soul a crime upon them. The Chrifian, with whom this Jew argued, might perhaps be puzzled: But tis certain, he could not by his principles deny the truth of the Relation: And his telling the Jews, that there was a mystery in that matter; doth not so much as imply, that he denied the fact. If a mystical sense destroys the literal, the law of Moses will be destroyed by the Jews themselves: The Jews are great admirers of the letter of their law; but yet allow it to be full of type and Mystery. R. Bechai d tells us, more than once, that the whole law is all of it nothing but i. e. types, or infinuations of some other thing: Abravanel e tells us, Tis fit, that we should expound the section of the creation according to the letter; but then he is for the mystical sense also, which he makes the spirit or better part of the law. A word fitly spoken is like apples of gold in pictures of silver; This is expounded by Maimonides to my present purpose. The letter of scripture is the pictures in silver, the curious net work, that encompasses fomething that is more precious; which is here compared to the apples of gold, which are contained and enclosed, and something obscured also, by these pictures of silver. \*

(3.) AGAIN,

c Abravanel in Legem, fol. 25. col. 3, 4. fol. 166. c. 3. Cubi supra Prov. xxv. 11. d R. Beachai in Legem. fol. 162. c. 3. & f Maimonides Præsat in More Nevochim.

<sup>\*</sup> To this I shall only add the exposition of the Reverend Dr. Whitby on the text, who takes notice of this comment in the following words. There is another ingenious exposition of a reverend and learned Bishop, that & saies, with is the time of gathering in of sigs, of which signification of the word saies, he gives two or three instances, and then it seems unreasonable for our Saviour Roe expect some sigs upon this tree, they not being yet gathered in, and to curse it for having none upon it, when none had been taken from it; and could I find it proved, that any, even the Biccaroth or first ripe sigs, mentioned Fer. xxxiv. 2. and Hos. ix. 1c. were fit to be gathered in at the passover, I should acquiesce in this interpretation. (For Christis supposed to have come to Jerusalem in triumph ver. 1. on the 9th day of the month Nisan, which was then the first day of the week, and answers to our Palm Sunday, and in this year bappened to be on March 29. But the words cited from Cant. is 13. and Mat. xxiv. 32. seem to prove, that the sig-tree only began to put forth her leaves, and her green sigs, at the entrance of the summer: Wherefore let it be noted, that St. Mark doth not by these words, for the time of sigs was not yet, design to give a reason, why our Lord found no sigs

(3.) AGAIN, Jesus prays for his crucifiers, Luke xxiii. 34. Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do. These are the words of JESUS, and admitting them so to be, the g few pretends, that this text would alone subvert the whole Christian religion. And thus he argues; We Christians commonly say, that the Jews suffer great miseries for putting our Jesus to death. If this be true (says the Jew) God did not hear the prayer of Jesus, nor did his intercession avail on their behalf. If Chrifians grant, that I esus was heard, they ought not to impute the calamities, which have befallen them, to their crucifying of Jesus. To say that TESUS was not heard, when he thus prayed to God, is not only in it self very hard for any Christian to affirm, but very inconsistent with the do-Arine of the new Testament. For Jesus himself elsewhere said, Father, I thank thee, that thou hearest me; and I knew that thou hearest me always Joh. xi. 41, 42. And Christians do expect great benefits from the intercession of Jesus; and are taught so to do by Jesus himself. Verily, verily, I say unto you (says JESUS) what soever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you. Again, At that day ye shall ask in my name; and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you, chap. xvi.

IN answer whereunto I desire the following particulars may be confidered.

1. That we do grant, that God heard this prayer of Jesus; and yet for all that the Jews are justly charged to this day for crucifying and rejecting Jesus, and may for that sin be justly said to suffer. Could the Jew have made it appear, that Jesus in that prayer had not been heard, he had said something to the purpose. However, we do not object against the divine mission of Moses, tho' the people were punished, for whom he passionately begged pardon: Exod. xxxii. 32, 33, 35. Numb. xiv. 19, 23. And yet it 'tis certain, that God heard Moses. But here's no proof at all, that Jesus was not heard for those men, for whom he prayed; we know very well, that many of the Jews were after this received into Christ's church, and were pardoned: Nor have we any cause to think, that any of them, for whom Jesus prays, were forgotten.

figs upon this tree, but why he only went to this one tree, which had leaves on it, and so was of that kind of figs, which saith Theophrastus, Hist. Plant. 1. 4. c. 2. was ded φύλλου, or as Pliny. saith 1. 13. c. 8. semper comantibus soliis, a sig-tree that had always leaves; and why he expected to find fruit on that, which upon the other ordinary fig-trees abounding there, he could not expect, the time of ordinary sigs being not yet: For this kind of sig-tree being ever green with leaves, had saith Theophrastus sum it is given, if there respects the stuit of the year past and present, say the Jewish dectors. Accordingly Julian the Apostate, epist. 24. speaking of the fruit of Damastus, saith, Some of them were of a short duration, when it was seger, and it bangs on with the fruit of the following year. And thus was this sig-tree carries its fruit above of the Jewish nation, to whom alone Christs are came in person, and frem whom alone he could then expect fruit; whence they are in another parable represented by a sig-tree, from which the Husbandman three years expected fruit, but sound none Luke xist. 7. and therefore is there ordered to be cut down, and here they are emblematically cursed for their barreness. The kingdom of Go o being shortly to be taken from them, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. Mat. xi. 43. Origin. Edit. Huct. To. 1 p. 446. Saith, This sig-tree was surface in hair of the representing the scople of the Jews. Saying in layer is well in the surface of the Jews. Saying in layer is surfaced to the surrange of the Jews. Saying in layer is surfaced to the surrange, and therefore heard a curse surrange is elived. Say it was a living sig tree, and therefore heard a curse surrange is always. This was a living sig tree, and therefore heard a curse surrange is always in a surface of the Surrange of the s

Digitized by Google

2. It is to be considered for whom Jesus prays, viz. for those who had an hand in his last sufferings, and were ignorantly in the fact; those who knew not what they did. The present Jews approve of their fathers practice, and continue to reject Jesus: And whereas some of their fathers sinned thro' ignorance, it doth not therefore follow, that the present Jews do so also: Nor is it reasonable to suppose, that the prayer of Jesus, which prevailed for those who sinned ignorantly, should also prevail for their stubborn posterity; for whom he cannot be presumed to pray in this place at all. These Jews, that did despite to Jesus were ignorant that he was the CHRIST. They saw him condemned, and rejected by their wife men; and had not all the means to convince them, which the after-Tews had. They reviled him on the cross; and whilst he was numbered, with transgressors: Those who followed them rejected him after the greatest means of conviction, which followed after his crucifixion. Such were his resurrection, and the most ample proofs of it; his visible ascension into heaven; his stupendous sending the HOLL GHOST at the day of Pentecost; the mighty miracles wrought by his followers; the spreading the Christian doctrine by the divine bleffing upon it; the full revelation of this doctrine; the examplary lives of Christians, their martyrdoms, and conquest over the world by sufferings. After all this, and after they have been often deluded by impostors, the present Jews approve of the crucifixion of Jesus, and reject his holy religion; and therefore are greater sinners than their fathers, and justly suffer for their sin.

3. Tho' Jesus doth intercede for his followers, and God hears him a yet have they no help from hence, who reject him and his holy doctrine, after all the means that God hath given them to convince them of the truth i And the places alledged are therefore nothing to the purpose, for which

they are produced.

4. To what hath been said, I add, that if the matter be duly examined, it doth not appear, that Jesus did pray for the nation of the Jews, when he said, Father, forgive them; but for the soldiers, who executed the sentence of Pilate, and did him very great injuries. If this be true, this alone is a sufficient answer. Let us see, what ground we have to affirm this from the holy Evangelists. Tis certain, that after Pilate's sentence, the soldiers took Jesus to execute this sentence, Matth. xxvii. 27. They stripped him, put on him scarlet, crown'd him with thorns, spit on him, and mocked him, &c. gave him vinegar and gall, and at last crucified him, ver. 28, 29, 30, 31, 34, 35. This appears farther from St. Mark, chap. xv. from ver. 16. to ver. 25. where also the foldiers are expressly said to have crucified him. If we compare Luk. xxiii. 33, 34. it will appear, that Jesus prayed for these poor ignorant soldiers, who were the blind executioners of Pilate's sentence. For that the soldiers did execute the sentence, and crucific our SAVIQUR, is farther evident still from Joh. xix. 23. If this be true (as it is evident that it is) the Jews objection is of no force at all; So far is it from subverting the whole Christian religion, as the Jew vainly pretends. I may add, that this prayer in behalf of the foldiers was also heard; and we have a very remarkable account of this matter, how they were brought to a right faith. Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching JESUS, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly, this was the son of God, Matth. Xxvii. 54. Here we see the centurion and his soldiers (for they were

the foldiers that watched Jesus, as is evident from ver. 36.) brought to a right faith. They said, Truly, this was the Son of God. St. John tells us, Whosever shall confess, that Jesus is the Son of God, God welleth in him and he in God, I Joh. iv. 15. This is a fundamental article, Matth. 2vi. 16, 18. and not revealed by flesh and blood, ver. 17.

(4.) A GAIN they object, that the history of CHRIST's resurrection is so delivered by the four Evangelists, as renders the whole relation justly liable to

suspicion.

I Must add, to what hath been said, something concerning the history of Christ's resurrection from the dead, as that matter is reported, with some variety indeed, by the several Evangelists; because I find a certain sewish writer object it against the credit of the Evangelists, who relate that matter. Two things I find be objected to this purpose: First, The different relation of the time, when the women came to the sepulchre. St. Matthew, hath it, as it began to dawn; St. Mark, at the rising of the sun; St. Luke, very early in the morning; St. John, mearly when it was yet dark. This is thought of force to weaken their testimony. Secondly, He objects, that be whereas St. Matthew and St. Mark mention one man (or angel) St. Luke and St. John mention two. In answer whereunto I shall distinctly consider these objections; and in answer to the first I offer the following particulars to be considered.

I. I WILL not take any advantage of any various readings; much less call in question any part of St. Mark's relation, as if it had not been written by him: There is no need of using any such shift or art; I see no such difficulty in the matter: And I will take the relation, as it lies before us in

our present copies.

2. It hath been said by some, that the women went to the sepulchre twice; and if this be admitted (and it cannot be disproved) this will remove the whole difficulty: For then that variety as to the time, which is sound in the Evangelists, can offend no reader; because some Evangelists speak of the first, and the other of their second coming; and this would at the same time remove the other difficulty concerning the one angel and the two. But I shall not lay any stress upon this; buttake it for granted, that the sour Evan-

gelists speak of one and the same thing.

3. What difficulty there is in this matter, is owing to the reader and not to the text of the Evangelists: The common reader confounds those things, which are sufficiently distinguished by the Evangelists. For as to this relation concerning these women, there are three things, which are mentioned, that are to be distinguished into three several times; the not heeding of which hath been the true cause, why men have so much blundered in this matter. The three things that are said of them are these, viz. Their having of spices, their setting forth from the city, and their coming to the sepulchre: And each of these had its distinct time allotted to it.

FIRST, The buying of spices. And this was done sometime before their setting forth from the city, and coming to the sepulchre. This they had done (St. Mark tells us expressly) when the sabbath was past. 'Tis enough, that these women were furnished with their spices at the end and close of the

sabbath; and this is that, which St. Mark is very express in.

h M. S. Lusit, n. 192, 193.

i Matth. xxviii. 1.

k Mark. xvi. 2.

l Luk. xxiv. 1.

k Mark. xvi. 2.

l Luk. xxiv. 1.

k Mark. xvi. 2.

l Luk. xxiv. 4.

Joh. xx. 12.

E c 2

SECONDLY,

SECONDLY, The time of their setting forth from the city: St. Matthew relates this to have been done, in the end of the sabbath; if application. I know that this expression hath created some difficulty, and the rendering of the vulgar Latin hath increased it: But there is no such thing in the words, as they lie in St. Matthew. The word 342 signifies late; and also it signifies after. Thus 142 virus in Plutarch hath been observed to signifie, as much as after these things. And it is very plain, that it signifies thus in this place. At the end of the sabbath is as much as after the sabbath. And this will farther appear by comparing this place with the parallel place in St. Mark; there St. Mark relating the time when the women had furnished themselves with spices (which they did before they set forth from the city) tells us, It was when the sabbath was past; cùm transisset sabbatum, V. L. St. Matthew goes on to describe the time more precisely, as it began to dawn towards the first day of the week; i. c. upon break of day; and that day which as approaching was the first day of the week. Indeed St. John says, it was early, when it was yet dark. This doth not contradict St. Matthew, but agrees perfectly with him; for it may well be said to be yet dark, when it doth but begin to dawn. These women were up or stirring betimes; but all this was but in order to their going to the sepulchre: There must be some time allowed from their first rising to their arrival at the sepulchre. They may be supposed to tarry some little time for one another, to spend some in preparing of things, and some more in their journey. That they rose early in order to their going to the sepulchre, we are assured by the Evangelists. Nor will it be hard to assign the cause of their rising early: Their sabbath was newly over: The body of Jesus was indeed laid in a new sepulchre of Joseph's; there it was laid at present, because of the Jews preparation day, and because the sepulchre was nigh at hand. The women were secure, that during the sabbath the body of Jesus would not be stirred; but lest it should now be laid elsewhere, they get up early, and that in order to betake themselves to the sepulchre with their spices.

Third ly, The time of their arrival at the sepulchre. It was very convenient, that it should be a clear light when they came thither, that they might be able to distinguish one thing from another; and not be liable to imposture and a cheat, as people are in the dark: And it was so, that when they came thither, they had a clear light, as became them to have, who were to be witnesses of the resurrection of Jesus. St. Mark o tells us expressly, That they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun. The vulgar renders it, Orto jam sole, i. e. The sun being up. But the Greek doth not import so much: For its in the Greek arrestaurne to have. The participle is an Aorist, and consequently doth not denote the very precise time, but is more indefinite: And therefore if the sun were rising, or newly risen, it would be agreeable enough to the import of the Greek word; which admits

(as all Grammarians know) of some latitude.

As for the other part of the objection, that two of the Evangelists mention two angels, and the other one, let the Jew make the most of it, it will not lessen the credit of the relation: And I will give it all the force, which I can. St. Matthew mentions but one angel, chap. xxviii. 2, 5. St. Mark calls him a young man, chap. xvi. 5. St. Luke says, two men, chap. xxiv. 4. St. John hath it, two angels, chap. xx. 12. So that none of them

Mark xvi. 2.

use the same expression in this relation. That all this doth not in the least degree lessen the credit of the Evangelists, will appear, it we duly

consider the following particulars.

I. THAT they should be called angels by one, and men by another, hath no difficulty in it; because as they were angels and messengers from God; so they appeared in a human shape; and one Evangelist calls them what they really were, the other what they appeared to be. And both one and the other are justified by the old Testament. We read of three men, Gen. xviii. 2. No man doubts, but these were angels; and the Jerusalem Targum, and that of Jonathan upon the place understand it so; the latter of which, upon ver. 16. tells us expressly, that they were angels like unto men, or in human shape. Two of these are expressly called angels, Gen. xix. 2, 15. And yet the very same in the same chapter are called men, ver. 8, 10, 12. This doth abundantly justifie the Evangelists: For why may not one call them angels, whom the others calls men, when Moses in the same narration, calls the same persons both angels and men? Again, the person that appeared to Gideon is called an angel, Judg. vi. 11, 12, 20, 21. but yet he appeared as a man, ver 22. And he that appeared to Manoah's wife is called an angel, Judg. xiii. 3, 9, 13, 15. And so he really was; but then he appeared in the shape of a man, and is called a man, ver. 6, 8, 10, 11.

2. That one Evangelist should mention one, and another two, hath nothing strange in it; so far it is from a contradiction. One Evangelist doth not affirm, that there was but one; this indeed would have classed with him who affirms, that there were two. St. Matthew and St. Mark make mention of one; and they thought it enough to their purpose. 'Twas not needful, that each Evangelist should relate every particular; 'tis enough that they speak not inconsistently. There were three angels, who appeared to Abraham; and yet he speaks to them as one, Gen. xviii. 3, 4. Two appeared to Lot; and yet he speaks to them as one, Gen. xix. 18, 19. compare ver. 21. And why should it seem strange, that when there were two at our Lor d's resurrection, two of the Evangelists should only make mention of one?

3. The reason why these two Evangelists mention only one, seems to be this, because but one angel spake tho' in the name of both. Nor is it any objection of force, which may be fetched from St. Luke against this, that he says, they faid, chap. xxiv. 5. For such an Enallage of number is very frequent with the facred writers; and besides it seems to be used in this very case, Gen. xviii. 9. we read, They said unto him, Where is And yet it is probable, and very highly so, that but one of them said it. The LXXII interpreters render it by &m, he said. And the context justifies their version: For when Abraham had answered, That Sarah was in the tent, it follows, and he said, i. e. and one of them said, as it is in the Targum of Jonathan upon the place; which agrees well with what the same author says upon ver. 2. that one of three (which appeared to Abraham) was imployed to bring the tidings, that Sarah should bring forth a son. And then, they said in St. Luke, doth not necessary imply any more than this, that ane of them said. This needs not to seem strange to a Jew at all; when Maimonides p affirms it to be the language of the Misna; where when there is mention of the wise men, no more is sometimes

P Præfat, in Seder Zeraim.

meant

## A DEMONSTRATION PARTIL

by it, than one only of that number. Besides this, we do very well know, that the plural number is used in the Hebrew text of the old Testament, when yet there is but one person referred to by that expression. I shall give some instances of this, which are beyond all exception. Gen. xlvi. 7. we have mention of the daughters of Jacob; when yet it is certain, that he had but one, viz. Dinah; and she alone must be meant in that place: Compare ver. 15. Again ver. 23. Hushim alone is called the sons of Dan. Compare this place with Numb. xxvi. 42. To which may be added the words of Sarah, Gen. xxi. 7. Who would have said unto Abraham, that Sarah should have given children suck? For I have born him a son in his old age. This way of speaking may seem to us very odd and uncouth; but yet 'tis a way of speaking used among the Hebrew writers; and therefore ought not to be objected by a Jew against an Evangelist.

To what hath been said, I may add, That the Jew, who makes these objections, cannot possibly make any advantage of them against our common Christianity, among those who will give themselves the leisure to consider the matter with due application. Such objections as these are too trisling to weaken our belief of Christianity, and to make proselytes

for Judaism. For,

46

FIRST, There are far greater difficulties in the old Testament, in those relations of matters of fact, which are reported in the books thereof; and yet both we and the Jews receive those books, and own their authority,

and think we have good cause so to do.

SECONDLY, As the Evangelists agree perfectly in the main of their relation; so this variety, by which they express themselves, serves rather to strengthen than to weaken our faith. This is an argument, that these men did not by any secret compact agree to put off a lye and a cheat upon the world. If they had done this, they might have avoided this variety of relation; that as which would have rendered their whole relation suspected.

THIRDLY. That the above named objections are so slight and trisling, that R. Isaac, who runs over the whole new Testament, book by book, with a design to raise objections against it, and raiseth a great many against several parts of the four Evangelists; yet when he comes to those chapters, where they relate the resurrection of Jesus, he makes none of these objections against the relation; which is an argument, that he did not think, that there was any inconsistency in the relation it self. For he would not have passed by any thing of moment in this matter, which he thought would have lessened the credit of that account, which is given of the resurrection of Jesus; this being of all others that article of Christian belief, which the Jews disbelieve and oppose; and which is the foundation of the Christian saith.

As to any other difficulty, which some men may find in the Evangelists relation of the resurrection of JESUS, I am not obliged to take notice of it in this place: Tho' I do not know of any of moment; and am very certain, that there is none, that can give any trouble to a wise and good man.

(5.) ONCE more, 'Tis q pretended that those words, Joh. ii. 20. Forty and fix years was this temple in building, is utterly inconsistent with the matter of fact. Here the Jew accuseth the Evangelists for reporting such an answer of the Jews, as he supposeth they could not give. For the temple (says he)

e. R. Isac L 2, c. 43.

that

that, which Herod built, was standing in the time of Jesus: Now Herod reigned but thirty seven years in all; and the temple which he built, was finish ed in eight years, as Joseph Ben Gerion testifies; and therefore it could not be forty six years in building. I answer,

1. That tho' the Jew brings this as an objection against the gospel; yet in truth there is hardly any thing in it. For neither Jesus nor the Evangelists affirm any thing here as to the forty six years; St. John tells, what the Jews said indeed to our Saviour; this is all: And if the Jews speak any thing that is not true, I know not why the reporter of matter of sact should lose any credit by it. And I cannot but like the answer of Nicol. de Lyra: His words are these, Quadraginta & sex annis edificatum est templum; hoc non est multium curandum: quoniam non est verbum Christi nec evangelista, nist tantium referendo: sed est verbum Judeorum deridendo Christum: ut dictum est, contra quem multa falsa dixerunt, ut refert evangelista. Tis a very unreasonable thing to question the relators. credit, because he reports other men to have affirmed what they ought not: And if the Jew urge, that 'tis not credible the Jews should ever say these words, because they are so gross an untruth, and so very palpable, I answer,

2. THAT the Jew, who makes this objection, doth not give us any sufficient ground to believe the words themselves to contain any such gross untruth. I will not call in question, what he says of the reign of Herod, nor of the eight years in which his building was finished: I'll admit Joseph Ben Gorion for a good witness in this matter; and let the Jew make the Thus much is certain, that the Jews own but two temples most of this. to have been built at this time, when these words were spoken: That of Solomon, and a second built after their return from the captivity of Babylon. Whatever Herod built, 'tis most certain 'twas not owned to be a third temple, as f a learned Christian hath proved at large. Of this fecond temple the Jews must be understood here: And tho' I am not obliged to defend these Jews, by proving that the second temple, from the first beginning of its foundation to its finishing, took up the space of forty and six years; yet 'tis evident, that if it did not take up all that space, and that what the Jews say be an error, yet 'tis not a palpable one; much less is it an error, that ought to be imputed to the Evangelist. The Jew ought to have proved it an error first, and then to be imputed to the Evangelist; neither of which doth he attempt to do.

3. Whatever Herod built, had (when these words were spoken) been begun forty six years before: And as it was then a great and glorious building, and had stood near forty years, so it was not likely, that Jesus should be able to destroy and rebuild it in three days; which is that which the Jews, mistaking our Lord's meaning, affirm here. For I do grant, that the Jews in this place spake of the temple, which Herod began to build. This work he began in the eighteenth year of his reign, as Josephus wells us expressly. And though he did very much in this his undertaking, and advanced the work to a great measure; yet it doth appear from the same Josephus in another place, that the temple was a building not only till these words were spoken, but even to the days of Nero: And though Herod spent eight years in his great work; yet there were buildings after this

. . . . . .

Digitized by Google

r N de Lyra in Joh. ii. 20. f C L' Empereur przfac. in Middoth. t V. P. Amelote, Not. Joh. ii. 20. V. Petr. Possini Spicilegium ad Marcum, p. 4351 ... I Joseph. Antiqu. L 15. c. 14. x Ibid. lib. 20. c. 3.

upon the holy ground, and workmen employed in great numbers many years after. Herod died y thirty seven years after he was declared king by the Romans. From his beginning to build to his death were nineteen years. From his death to the thirtieth year of Jesus, when he entered on his publick ministry, were twenty seven years: In all, forty six years. Here is an exact agreement as to the time: And this account is enough to justifie the Jews in this place; much more the Evangelists; and sure it ought to satisfie those Jews, who make this objection against the Evangelist

also.

Nor is this testimony of <sup>2</sup> Josephus invalidated, by what the same author says of this matter in another place. He says indeed elsewhere, That Herod did this work in the sisteenth year of his reign; where he seems to speak inconsistently with himself, and to give an account that will not agree with these words in the Evangelist. But it is evident, that his testimony is so far from being invalidated hereby, that it is rather corroborated. For Josephus<sup>2</sup> explains himself in another place, where he tells us, That Herod reigned from the time, that he overcame Antigonus thirty sour years, but from the time that he was declared king by the Romans thirty seven years: According to which account, the sitteenth of his reign from the death of Antigonus is the same with the eighteenth, from the declaring him to be king by the Romans. I am very much consirmed in this account of this matter, by what I have since met with to the same purpose, in a very learned writer. viz. Rob. Pontanus. See his Book, De Sabbaticorum annorum periodis, cap. xviii.

I ADD, That the word instruction in St. John, doth nor imply, that the whole building was finished and compleated, when those words were spoken; for that it was not, appears from what hath before been related from fosephus: And we find that very word used in Exra: There Tatnai and his companions in their letter to Darius speak of the laying the foundation of the house of God, and add, Since that time until now insolution, is in inside. (So the LXXII.) bath it been in building, and jet it is not finished, Exta

v. 16.

II. THAT the *bistory* of the four Gospels is inconsistent with the law of Moses: This is also an objection of great force: For we think, that we ought to receive Moses for a true prophet; and if Jesus requires any thing opposite to his law, this will have its weight, and deserve consideration.

(1.) Under this head 'tis said, That whereas Moses commands to swear by the name of God, Deut. vi. 13. Jesus says to his followers, Swear not at all. Mat. v. 34. But I say unto you swear not at all, &c. Here the fews charge Jesus with salse doctrine; and that whereas he pretended, that he did not come to destroy the law; yet he destroys a moral precept. For swearing was such an one; and is one of the affirmative precepts of this kind under the law of Moses, and placed among the moral precepts also. Thus 'tis written, Thou shalt fear the Lond thy God, and serve him, and shalt swear by his name, (Deut. vi. 13.) In answer to this,

1. It is to be considered, what Jesus teacheth in this matter. He doth not absolutely forbid all swearing; this is manifest from his own words. He forbids indeed those forms, which the Jews had taken up of swearing by the creature; and he forbids the needless and common use of swearing;

v Id. de Bell. Jud. l. 1. c. 21.

De Bell. Judaic. l. 1. c. 15.

\* Ib. c. 21.

neither

neither by heaven &c. But let your communication be yea, yea; &c. The Jews were wont to swear by the creature; and too readily to absolve themselves from the obligation of those oaths. And we have evidence of this sufficient, not only from the new Testament, but from the Jews, and Heathers also:

Ecce negas, jurásque mibi per templa tonantis. Non credo; jura, verpe, per Anchialum.

That Jesus doth not forbid all swearing, is very plain from this, that 4 St. Paul, one of his most eminent followers, doth even in his epistles make use of an oath, in certain cases of great moment. If all swearing had been unlawful, he who professed himself a disciple of Jesus, and an instructor of others in his religion, would not have left upon record such testimonies against himself. But Jesus never intended to forbid all swearing; and is so far from drawing men off from swearing by the name of God, as the Jews were obliged by the law of Moses, that he forbids the swearing by any creature what soever: And when Jesus forbids the swearing by any creature, he is so far from destroying any precept of Moses (however the Jews may charge him) that he teacheth the very same doctrine, which the Jews do. This appears from what Maimonides delivers upon this subject; he says, We are to swear by his name, and adds, 'Tis unlawful to swear by any other thing, together with his name. And he who ful to swear by any other thing, together with his name. And he who joins, when he swears, any other thing with the name of God, is to be extirpated out of the world: Because there is no name fit to partake of the glory of swearing thereby, but that of the blessed God, And fasterwards he says, He that swears by the heaven, or earth, &c. tho in his intention he mean the creator of these things, yet it is no oath.

2. What is the sense of the Blaw of Moses; Thou shalt swear by his name. The meaning of which can be no more than this, that when they did swear, they should do it only by the name of GoD. We find part of that verse, where that precept is quoted by Jesus, Mat. iv. 10. where we find, serve him in Deuteronomy, expressed by Jesus by, Him only shalt thou serve: In which Jesus adds nothing to the meaning of the text; and the LXXII interpreters give us the same account of of the place. 'Tis plain from the context, that JESUS gives us the true sense. And so 'tis in those words: Thou shalt swear by his name, i. e. Thou shalt swear by his name only, and not by the name of any other God, or creature what soever. And this sense of these words is confirmed by a parallel place: Joshua gives the same precept to the Israelites, which Moses doth here; but he doth it in such terms, as abundantly do confirm this interpretation. His words are these; (speaking of the conquered nations, and forbidding them to come among them, he adds) Neither make mention of the name of their gods, nor cause to swear by them, neither serve them, nor bow your selves unto them: But cleave unto the Lord your God, &c. Josh. xxiii. 7, 8. And if this be the sense, as tis clear it is, then our SAVIOUR'S words are so far from destroying this precept, that they tend directly to establish and confirm it. For our SAVIOUR doth prohibit the

e Mat. xxiii. 16. James v. 12. d 2 Cor. i. 23. Rom. ix. 1. 2 Cor. xi. 31. Phil. i. 8. 1 Theffal. ii. 52, 10. e H. Shevoth. c. xi. a f Ibid. c. xii. s Deut. vi. 13. F f

fwearing by any creature whatsoever: Our Saviour teacheth no other doctrine in this matter than what agrees with Moses and the wifer Jews.

MAIMONIDES h reckons indeed this precept, Thou shalt swear by his name, among the affirmative precepts: But then he observes, that swearing is also sometimes forbidden in the law, and that prohibition is to be placed among the negative precepts. 'Tis commanded, says he, when 'tis necessary to confirm a truth; and 'tis forbidden, and we are warned against it, when 'tis not necessary. He goes on, and tells us, That it is not lawful to swear by any of the creatures: And though indeed afterward he mentions the fewish practice of swearing by a creature, and defends it; yet he doth it by pretending, that God, or his name is referred to in such oaths; as he that swears by Moses, swears by his Lord, or by him that sent him.

Philo the Jew i declares against common swearing, as that which brings men to perjury: He affirms, that its best, and most profitable, and agreeable to reasonable nature, not to swear at all; and to take care, that our word may have the force of an oath. But if a man be put upon taking an oath, he would still have him in that case to be marine of spans, i. e. very slow and dilatory, that he may if possible avoid it. Maimonides says expressly, That it is very good for a man not to swear at all. To which I may add the words of the son of Syrach, Accustom not thy mouth to swearing; neither use thy self to the naming of the holy one. Ecclus. xxiii. 9. Hence it appears, that I esus cannot be charged with any fault as to this doctrine of his concerning swearing.

To which I may add, that though Maimonides reckons the aforesaid words among the affirmative precepts; yet R. Abraham in his animadversions upon him declares against it: And says expressly, That thou shalt swear by his name, is not of the number of affirmative precepts, but that the words teach us only not to swear (when we have occasion to do it) by another God.

Moreover R. Bechai, a celebrated commentator among the Jews, in 1 his commentary upon Deut. vi. 13. upon those words, and shalt swear by his name. 'על דרך: וכו' i. e. according to the literal sense (says he) the meanis this: When thou shalt swear, to confirm or do any thing, which thou thou hast a mind to confirm or to do, thou shalt not swear by the name of other Gods, but by the name of the most blessed (or true God) only. And this (tays he) is what is meant by, Thou shalt swear by his name; but this is not (lays he) an affirmative precept obliging us to fwear. He adds the interpretation of the Rabbins, who limit this liberty of swearing to the conditions mentioned in the text, where 'tis said, Thou shalt fear the LORD thy God and serve him; and shalt swear by his name, i. c. If thou have the other qualities, as the fear of sin, and being a servant of the creator, then thou mayst swear by his name; because this fear of God will make the cautious in swearing. Rabbi Solomon m on the place speaks to the same purpole ש בך: וכן, i. e. If (says he) thou hast all these dispositions, i.e. if thou fearest his name, and servest him, then thou shall swear by his name; for in that thou fearest his name, thou wilt be cautious of thine oath: But otherwise do not swear. Thou shalt swear by his name, Aben Ezra a expounds it thus, 'הא בשכם: וכו', i. c. not by the name of other gods, in confirming a matter, or making a covenant, &c.

h Sepher. Hammitsvorh.

Lib. de Decalog. h H. Shevuth. c. 12. h Bechai, fol. 211.

col. 1. m Rashi in locum. h Ab. Ezra in locum.

(2.) AGAIN,

(2) AGAIN, JESUS° calls the loving one another, a new commandment? and elsewhere, his commandment, Joh. xv. 12. whereas in truth 'twas a precept of Moses: Not to say that polygamy and divorces, which were allowed by Moses, are forbid by Jesus, foh. xiii. 34. A new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. Here also p the Jew pretends, that what Jesus teacheth is not true, because he says, this command of loving one another is a new commandment; whereas it is as old as Moses, in whose law 'tis expressly required. Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self; I am the LORD, Lev. xix. 18. And this is owned in St. Matthew xix. 19. and chap. xxiii. 39. To which may be added, That St. John, who very much presseth this love to one another, expressly says That 'tis no new commandment, but that which we had from the beginning, 1 John ii. 7. with chap. iii. 11. and 2 John v. 6. In order to a full answer to this pretence,

I offer the following particulars.

1. That the Jews were very narrow in their notion of neighbour. For by neighbour they meant no more but a Jew; or proselyte at farthest: And the precept in Moses, Lev. xix. 18. seems to be limited to the children of their people; as a hath been observed before. As this did not extend far; so their charity did not exceed these bounds. They were to help their enemies als finking under his burden; but here the Jewish masters raised a case, viz. What they were obliged to do in case the beast belonged to an beathen, and the burden to an Israelite; or the beast was the Israelite's, and the burden the heathen's. The Jews had very little regard to the lives or properties of aliens; as may be seen in their writings and constitutions. Their notion of neighbour was very narrow and scanty, as appears by the lawyers question to Esus, Who is my neighbour? Luke x. 29. As the, notion of neighbour is extended by the religion of Jesus, so far this precept may be called a new commandment. The wall of partition is now broken down, and the difference betweeen men is removed. Every man, to whom we can do a good office or kindness, is our neighbour. He that loveth another, hath fulfilled the law, says St. Paul, Rom. xiii. 8. is now the sense of # mander, which we read ver. 9. and which the Jewish law mentions, Lev. xix. 18. We are to do good to all men and to love our enemies, and them who hate and persecute us. And thus it is a new commandment, as it takes in new objects, which the Jewish law did not extend to.

2. THAT the measure and degree as well as the motive to the love of one another is new also. The measure of their love to their neighbours under the law was, that they loved them as themselves; our Lord's measure is higher, Tis As I have loved you: As therefore the precept extends to more objects; so it requires a greater degree, than what the letter of the law of Moses intended. On both accounts it may be called a new commandment; as it is protensum latius, & provectum sublimius, as one hath well expressed it. Our Saviour's love to us is without parallel: Greater love hath no man than this, that a man may lay down his life for his friends, John xv. 12. There are but few instances of such a love: Tis the highest flight of love. But God commendeth his love towards us, in that while we

o John xiii. 34. P R. Isaac. l. 2. c. 54. 9 On Mat. v. 43. r V. Hotting. Jur. Hebr. Leg. H. 85. Maimonides H. Deoth. c. 6. 6 3. Bava Kama, c. 4. M. 3. Cun Comment. Rambam Sanedrin, c. 9. M. 3. Bechai in Legem, fol. 78.

F f 2

Digitized by Google

were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Rom. v. 8. He laid down his life for us; and therefore we ought to do it for our enemies. I John iii. 16, 23. From this example we are put upon loving one another, Eph. v. 2. 1 Thes. iv. 9.

3. As to St. John; it was not a new commandment at that time when he wrote. As the precept of love was old; so they had been taught the degree of it, from the beginning of Christianity; for to no more than that the expression amounts in several places of that Epistle. See chap. ii. 24. This

is the message, that ye heard from the beginning, that ye should love one another, I John iii. II. i. e. by our Saviour, and from your first embracing Christianity.

(3.) What may be said as to polygamy and arbitrary divorces, ought not not to be produced on this occasion: For the they were permitted by Moses; yet they were not commanded by him. Divorces, as practised under the Massic occasion: der the Mosaic oeconomy, were permitted only, Mat. xix. 18. but not required. It was indeed commanded, that he that put away his wife should give her a writing of divorcement; but he was not obliged by any law to put her away. And as for polygamy the same may be said: 'twas not commanded, however it was suffered. And our SAVIOUR refers us to the first institution of marriage on this occasion. Our SAVIOUR reverses no precept of Moses; he requires of his followers, that they should consider the primitive institution; and that they should not use that liberty, which was only permitted to the Jews for the hardness of their hearts.



CHAR

## CHAP. III.

The Jews do farther object against the gospels, III. As containing some things, which are inconsistent with the common belief of Christians. We believe the perpetual virginity of the virgin Mary; but this is said to be inconsistent with Matth. i. 25. where it is said of Joseph, That he knew her not, till she had brought forth her first born We believe, that our JESUS was God as well as man: But it is urged, that this is inconsistent with Matth. xix. 17. Why callest thou me good? &c. with chap. xx. 23. To fit on my right hand and on my left is not mine to give; &c. And with Mark vi. 5. He could there do no mighty work. As also with chap. xiii. and ver. 32. But of that day and that hour knoweth no man; no not the angels which are in heaven, neither the son, but the father. It is farther objected, that the common belief of Christians, that JESUS suffered on Friday in the evening, and rose very early on the first day of the week, is utterly inconsistent with the words, Matth. xii. 40. As Jonas was three days and three nights in the whales belly; so shall the son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. A particular answer to these several objections. IV. The sour Evangelists are charged with misquoting and misapplying the testimonies, which they produce out of the old Testament: And the charge is very high, First, It is pretended, that they quote places, which are no where to be found: and the following places are produced to this purpose, Matth. ii. 23. He dwelt in a city called Nazareth; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene. Matth. v. 43. It hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. Fob. vii. 38. He that believeth on me, as the Scripture faith, Out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. Fob. xix 28. That the Scripture might be fulfilled, which faith, I thirst; and ver. 36. that the Scripture might be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken. Here it is urged, that there are no such places to be found in the old Testament. Secondly, 'Tis pretended, that at other times they are guilty of false quotations, and mistakes at least. Thus is Abiathar put for Abimelech, Mark ii. 26. Barachias for - Jehoihada,

Jehoiadah, Matth. xxiii. 25. Jeremiah for Zechariah, Matth. xxvii. 9. Thirdly, It is farther alledged, that at other times they misapply the places, which they quote: To this purpose, Matth. ii. 15. is produced, Out of Egypt have I called my son: And ver. 17, 18. Then was fulfilled, &c. In Rama was there a voice heard, &c. which places in the old Testament belong to another matter. A particular answer to these several objections; in which the evangelists are desended.

O M E things are alledged out of the Gospels as inconsistent with the common belief of Christians. First, Matth. i. 25. And knew her not, till she had brought forth her first born son; and he called his name Jesus. There are several things, which the Jews object against the Christians upon occasion of these words: Not only that his name was called Jesus, when just before it is said, They shall call his name Emmanuel, ver. 23. which is reckoned as a repugnancy in the very same writer; but they affirm, That this Scripture with some others compared with it destroys the belief of the present and ancient Christians; who did and do believe, that the mother of Jesus was not only before his birth, but ever after a virgin. And supposing this belief of theirs grounded upon the writings of the new Testament, we find it repugnant to this and some other parts of it: Jesus is called the first born of his mother; and that supposeth, that she brought forth some other: And when Joseph is said not to have known her, till she had brought forth her first born, that seems to intimate, that he knew her afterward. Besides, we read of the brethren of Jesus, Matth. xii. 46. And they are named, James and Jases, Simon and Judas, ver. 55. If Christians (will the Jews 1ay) do build their belief of the perpetual virginity of the mother of Jesus, on the writings of the new Testament, what greater proof can there be, than what hath been produced, of the inconsistency of these writings with themselves? I answer,

As for what is said, That Joseph knew her not, till she had brought forth, &c. whatever Helvidius or others have argued from it, certain it is that the words do not so much as imply, that he knew her afterwards: And the best way to judge of this matter is, to consider the Idioms or particular way of speaking used by the sacred writers, of the old, as well as new Testament; and than we shall find, that this until she had brought forth, is no argument at all against the perpetual virginity of the mother of our Saviour. God makes a promise to Jacob saying, I will not leave thee, until I have done that which I have spoken to thee of; Gen. xxviii. 15. No man ought to conclude from hence, that he would leave him afterwards. Thus of the sepulchre of Moses it is said, No man knoweth of his sepulchre unto this day. Deut. xxxiv. 6. Doth it thence sollow, that from that day forward it was known? Of Michal the daughter of Saul we read, That she had no child unto the day of her death: 2 Sam. vi. 23. And no man is so silly, as to think she had any afterwards. To the same puspose other places may be produced, v.g. Samuelcame no more to see Saul, until the day of his death 1 Sam. xv. 35. Till I die, I will not remove my in-

tegrity

R. Isac. lib. 2. c. 17. MS. Lust. n. 7. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14.

tegrity from me. Job. xxvii. 5. And, Surely this iniquity shall not be purged from you, till you die, Isa. xxii. 14.) And in this Evangelist. Till he send forth judgment unto victory: And lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Matth. xii. 20. xxviii. 20. Tis plain, that the design of the Evangelist is to shew, that Jesus was born of a virgin; and that Joseph, though Mary was espoused to him, was not any more than the reputed father of Jesus; who was conceived by the Holy Ghost, and born of the virgin Mary, who was both a mother and a virgin at once. \*

THAT JESUS is called the first born, is no argument against the perpetual virginity of the blessed virgin: Not tho' we should allow him to be called ber first born; which yet there is no need we should allow from the Greek text of this place. But yet grant him to be called her first born; it doth not thence follow, that she did bring forth others afterwards; all that it necessarily imports is this, that she did bear none before him. And that is all that is meant by the first born in this argument: And whoever understands the language of the Hebrews, and their law about this matter of the first born, will easily understand, that there is no force at all in this pretence. For besides, that the Hebrew word, which we render first born, hath nothing in it that gives any colour for this pretext (it being a simple word, and not a compound, as those are by which it is rendered into the Greek, and Latin, and English tongues) the law concerning the first born given by Moses doth quite overthrow all ground for that plea, which some men would make from this expression. The true notion of first born among the ancient Hebrews is this: Whatever first opened the womb, whether another birth did follow it or not, was the first born in the sense of the law of Moses. Thus the Lord commanded Moses saying, Santtifie unto me all the first born; and what is meant is made plain by the following words, What soever openeth the womb, among the children of Israel, both of man and heast, Exod. xiii. 2. Again, vcr. 13. Thou shalt set apart unto the Lord all that openeth the matrix. The Levites are said to be given, instead of such as open every womb, Numb. viii. 16. So that the first born is what opens the womb. The case was plain: The first born was the Lon'o's; and was therefore to be redeemed, where it was not given in kind; and the price with which it was redeemed belonged to the prich; and c the time was set for the redemption of it also. Now in case that only could have been called the first born, which had been followed by an after birth, the Jew might have evaded the force of this law, and delayed the bringing the first born or price thereof to the priest, under pretence of staying and expecting another birth; that what first opened the womb, might with greater propriety have been called the first born. Whereas in truth there was no such liberty for evasion left in the law of Moses: For d the first born of mankind was due at a month old; and the Jews are warned not to delay the payment of those dues. Thou shalt not delay to offer the first of thy ripe fruits and of thy liquors. The first born of thy sons shalt thou give unto me. Likewise shalt thou do with thine oxen and with thy speep: Seven days it shall be with his dam; on the eighth day thou shalt give et me. Exod. xxii. 29, 30.) This is the true notion of the first born in the law of Moses. All that openeth the matrix is mine, and every firsting among the cattle, whether ox or sheep. Exod, xxxiv. 19. And we find

St. Luke

<sup>\*</sup> See Bishop Pearson on the Creed.

V. R. D. Kimchi, in 702. c Numb. xviii, 15, 16. d Numb. iii, 15.

St. Luke gives an account of the bringing of Jesus to Jerusalem, That he might be presented to the Lord, in conformity to this law of the Jews. As it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb

shall be called holy to the LORD, Luk. ii. 23.

Nor is it any considerable objection against the perpetual virginity of the virgin Mary, that we read of the brethren and sisters of Jesus: Matth. xii. 46. xiii. 55, 56. However the Jews make use of this as an argument against the Christians belief; it will appear upon due examination, that the Jews have no reason to make this exception. For certain it is, that in the style of the sacred writers, those are called brethren to one another who are a-kin; though they were not strictly brethren. Thus uncle and nephew are said to be brethren; and so are also brothers and sisters children, and those who are of the same family, though removed at some distance from one another, Gen. xii. 5. with xiii. 8. xxix. 12, with ver. 15. Levit. x. 4.

It is true indeed, That the mother of Jesus is named, and his brethren are said to be James and Joses; who being named with Mary, might be supposed to be the sons of Mary the mother of Jesus; but yet it is evident, that Mary the mother of James and Joses was not Mary the mother of Jesus, but the other Mary, as she is sometime called the sister of our Lord's mother, and the wise of Cleophas. There stood by the cross of Jesus (saith St. John) his mother, and his mothers sister, Mary the wife of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalen. Joh. xix. 25. Matth. xxvii. 56. Mark. xv. 40. Among the women St. Matthew reckons Mary Magdalen, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of James and Joses are also mention'd by St. Mark; and coming to the sepulchre are expressly mentioned, Mary Magdalen and the other Mary: By the other Mary must therefore be meant Mary the wife of Cleophas the mother of James and Joses; who is not only mentioned by St. Mark, and St. Luke, but by this Evangelist a little before. And therefore James and Joses were not the sons of Mary the mother of Jesus. \*

As for that pretence from ver. 23. that our Lord's name was to have been Emmanuel, as it is very trifling; so it hath been considered else-

where; and therefore thither I shall refer the reader.

[II.] AGAIN, Matth. xix. 17. is alledged as inconfishent with that belief, which the Christians profess to have, of the divinity of CHRIST.

(1.) And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? There is none good but one, That is God. These words of Jesus are spoken to him who said, Good master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life? Jesus replys, Why callest thou me good? &c. From this answer of Jesus, they stake occasion to impugn his divinity; for Jesus seems to reprove the man, who called him good master, and to infinuate, at least, that himself was not God, to whom the title of good did solely belong. I answer,

I. It by no means appears, that Jesus reproves him for calling him good: The reading, which we follow, will not justifie any such inference. But then there is another reading that is very ancient, and wants not considerable countenance from the vulgar, the Greek copy, and the ancient fathers of the church, that takes away all pretence for such an inference. Why callest

thon

<sup>\*</sup> See Bishop Pearson on the Creed.
e Part I. p. . . . f R. Isaac I. 2. c. 19. MS. Lusit. n. 25.

thou me good? Quid me interrogas de bono? So the vulgar Latin. According to this version the words do not reslect upon the young man's compellation, Good master; but upon that part of his question, What good things shall I do? This version is followed by St. Austin: And (was it needful) much might be said in favour of this reading. A late h learned writer, who hath considered the various readings and several copies of the new Testament, doth assure us, that this version of the vulgar is confirmed by a Greek copy of Mr. Colbert's, by that of Cambridge, by that of the Vatican, and by two of R. Stephanus. And he that would see more to this purpose, may consult i a very learned writer of our own; who hath taken vast pains in comparing the several copies of the new testament.

2. ALLOWING our present reading, 'twill not serve the purpose of the Jew or Socinian: For as Jesus doth not exclude himself from being good, so he doth not from being God: The place may as reasonably be produced in defence of his divinity, as 'tis to impugn it. For if he be owned to be good, as he is by the young man, he may (if none be good but God alone) be rather concluded to be God also. Thus much is certain, that our LORD doth not deny himself to be God in this place. Nor doth he do it, when he had the fairest occasion of doing it, had it not justly belonged to him; and that Jesus had, when after his refurrection Thomas said unto him, My Lord and my God, Joh. xx. 28. Our SAVI our directs the young man, who enquired after happiness and the way to it, to God the author of every good thing, and the only source of it; he alone is originally, immutably, and indefectably good, and can only make us happy. \*

h Simon. Hist. Crit. D. Text. de N. Test. p. 409. 1 Dr. Mills in Loc. B De Tfinit, L 1.

\* To this may be added, that this same person is called by St. Luke, a ruler, and most probably be was a ruler of the synagogue. These wen ought to be well skilled in the Mosaical law and the prophets, and our Saviour takes this opportunity to convince him of his ignorance in the most sundamental article of faith, even the belief of his divinity. The Jews never believed the Messilas to be God, much less such they ever believe this of Jesus, whom they doubted at least, that he was not the Messilas. For this they endeavour'd to stone him as for biasphemy, because he being a man made himself God. So that they could have no notion of any one, who was God and man in one person. From hone our Saviour Restaute the Parises, Matth. XXII. 45. If David call Christ Lord, how is he his son? And no man was able to answer him a word. Otherwise they might cashy hove answered. That Christ Bs Inc. so that they could being suilty of statery, bypocrify, or biasphemy, call him good, since there was none good, save one, which is neglect of his railes fine this appellation is an owning of his godhead, therefore be proceed to give him a full and satisfallory answer. So that our Saviour denied not his divinity before the ruler; but only upbraid him, because he was ignorant of it. Dr. Whithy expounds it thus, Christ may be supposed to speak to this person in this manner. Thou givest me a title, which is never given to your most renowned Rabbins and which agrees to God alone. Dost thou therefore think, that there is any thing in me more than human, or that the Father dwelleth in me? This thou oughtest to believe, if hou occavies, that this title truly doth belong to me, seeing there is none good save one, that is God. To constim this interpretation let it be considered, that Christ in preaching to the fews asserted two things of himself, First, That he was a prophet sent from God, even that prophet, that should come into the world. Secondly, That he had given them a clear evidence of his commission from his Father by the works done by th

Gg

(2.) AGAIN,

- (2.) AGAIN, Matth. xx. 23. But to sit on my right hand and on my left is not mine to give; but it shall be given to them, for whom it is prepared of my Father. These words of Jesus are an answer to the request of the mother of Zebedee's children in behalf of her sons, that they might sit on his right and lest hand in his kingdom. And 'tis urged by the Jewish writers, as an argument that Jesus was not one with his Father, and could therefore have no claim to any divinity, when by his own confession it was not in his power to grant this request. And no wonder, that the Jew should make this objection, when I find a late Socinian so very silly as to produce this text to impugn the divinity of Jesus. It is certain (says he) That the Lord Christ could not himself, without the previous ordination of the Father, confer the prime dignities of heaven, or of the church. And as a proof of this he produceth these words above recited. To which I answer,
- 1. That it is certain, that Christ had power to confer the prime dignities and offices or functions. What St. Paul attributes to the Father as to this matter, he attributes the same to the Son. God hath (says he) fet some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, &c. 1 Cor. xii. 28. And speaking of Christ, elsewhere, he tells us, That he gave gifts unto men, and that he gave some apostles, and some prophets, and some evangelists, and some pastors, &c. Eph. iv. 8, 11.

2. Nor doth Jesus in this place deny his power (nor consequently his divinity) in distributing offices or dignities; tho he doth affirm, that this honour shall be given to none, but such as the Father designs it for: In which he refers the glory of the whole dispensation to the Father, and at the same time declares his own concurrence with the Father. But this is done in such terms, as give no just occasion to question his power to give, or his divinity.

To sit on my right hand, &c. is not mine to give 3 &AX' &114 histogram, &c. i.c. Except to them for whom it is prepared, &c. where he doth not deny his power to give, but only declares, who they are, who shall receive this honour; not every ambitious pretender, but those who shall be thought fit; and for whom consequently this honour is designed by the Father. That this is all, that these words import, is plain to any man that understands, and will consider the original. It is not mine to give, unless to them for whom it is prepared, &c. The dank in the text is the same in signification with is us, or in all. What in St. Matthew chap. xvii. 8. is expressed by is mi, in St. Mark chap. ix. 8. in a parallel place expressed by ind. And what is expressed by it is Gal. ii. 16. is expressed by in Rom. iv. 13. Eim is sometime put for and Matth. xii. 4. Mark ii. 26. Luk. vi. 4. And on the other side and is put for it ui 2 Cor. ii. 5. All that our SAVI-OUR says then is, That he can give only to them for whom 'tis prepared; and to conclude a want of power from hence, or that he was no divine person is very unreasonable; unless we will suppose it a desect of power, not to use it arbitrarily.

THE Syriac version bears the same sense; and the vulgar hath it, Non est meum dare vobis, sed quibus paratum est: 'Tis not my part to give it to you, but to them, &c. It speaks no defect of power, to bestow honours and rewards well; it rather speaks the perfect agreement of the Son with the Father: He denies the request, which 'twas not sit for him to grant.

(3.) AGAIN,

k R. Isaac. 1. 2. c. 20. MS. Lus. n. 73. 1 Brief Hist. of the Unitarians, p. 10.

(3.) AGAIN, Mark vi. 5. And be could there do no mighty work. This is faid of Jesus: Therefore fays " the few, Jesus had not power; which is thought a fit argument therefore, wherewith to impugn his divinity. This is so very weak, that it hardly deserves an answer: However 'tis fit, that I

should reply to it. And,

1. It is evident from the very text, that here is no defect of power in Jesus so much as is infinuated. That more mighty works were not done, is imputed not to want of power in Jesus, but to the unbelief of the place, where Jesus was. He could there do no mighty work: The reason assigned is, Because of their unbelief, Matth. xiii. 58. And therefore by could not, cannot be meant, that Jesus had not power; but that he thought it not sit, and therefore would not work miracles, where there was no hope of the saith of them, for whose sake they were to be wrought. The phrase imports no more in other places: Jesus could not do what is not sit to be done. This could not, only implys that it was not sit. We might give many instances to this purpose, out of the old and new Testament, Gen. xxxvii. 4. xix. 22. Act. iv. 20. Joh. vii. 7. 2 Cor. xiii. 8. Rev. ii. 2, Matth. ix. 15. Luk. xvi. 2. where 'tis said, a thing cannot be done, when all that is meant is, that 'tis not sit it should.

2. If we look into a parallel place, we shall find it expressed in such terms, as leaves no room for this objection at all. And he did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief. Matth. xiii. 58. He could not in St. Mark, is explained by he did not in St. Matthew. And the Arabic version of St. Mark renders what we translate he could not, by he did not. And this is agreeable to the Hebrew way of speaking, who say, That cannot be, which shall not, or ought not to be. Thus we read Deut. xii. 17. 'i. e. Thou canst not eat within thy gates the tithe, i. e. Thou mayest not, as we turn it. And thus is that Hebrew word very often to be understood. Thou canst not sacrifice; so 'tis in the Hebrew: Deut. xvi. 5. we render it well, Thou mayst not. Thus the word signifies also, Deut. xvi. 15. xxii. 3. 1 Sam. xvii. 33. Jost. ix. 19. 'Tis said of God himself, That he could no longer bear, Jer. xliv. 22. Not that there was any want of power in God, but the meaning is, That he was so highly provoked, that it was not fit, that he should bear any We commonly say, Id solum possumus, quod jure possumus. And the Greek in St. Mark doth import no defect of power. And thus 'tis used " in Josephus; he tells that Syllaus the Arabian being in love with Salome, Herod's sister, he was offered marriage upon condition, that he would turn Jew; but that he refused the condition, and that because in D Mranir, i. e. it was not fit, that he should do it.

(4.) AGAIN, Mark xiii. 32. But of that day, and that hour knoweth no man; no not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. This text is brought by of the Jews among their other objections against the new Testament, and made use of to impugn the divinity of Jesus. For if he knew not suturities, how could he be said to be God? Hence they would infinuate the inconsistence of the faith of Christians. Now to shew that there is not any such inconsistence, I offer the following particulars in an-

fwer to this objection.

I. THAT we Christians do believe, not only that CHRIST was GOD; but also that he was perfect man, of a reasonable soul, and human sless substituting.

m MS. Lusit, n. 83, l. 2. c. 30, 31.

n Antiquit. 1, 16. c. 11.

• MS. Lufit. n. 122. R. Isaac\*

WB

Digitized by Google

We do believe, that his body was like one of ours: A real, not a phantastick and imaginary one. A body made up of stesh and blood as ours is; tender and obnoxious to pain, as that of any other mans; which was nourished by food, supported by rest, wearied by labour, sensible of hunger, pain, and refreshments, as ours are. He appeared at his birth, as any other infant doth; and did eat and drink and grow in stature. And in his last sufferings (his enemies being judges) he gave sufficient proof of the reality of human stesh and after his resurrection, he shewed the print of the nails, and convinced his followers, that it was his real body, and not a phantasm,

that appeared to them.

WE do also believe, that he had an human foul, of the same nature and kind with one of ours; tho' it was free from fin, and all original stain and corruption. And no wonder then, that we read of him, That he increased, not only in stature, and in favour with God and man, but in wisdom also. Luke ii. 52. Now wisdom is a spiritual endowment, and belongs to the mind or soul. He could not be said to increase in wisdom as he was God, without a contradiction; nor could this be said of him with respect to his body, forthat is not the subject of wisdom; but with regard to the human foul of CHRIST, the other part of our human nature. This human foul of CHRIST was the subject of his finite understanding, and of his will, as that is distinguished from the will of his Father, and that of his own divine nature. This appears from the words of Jesus, Not my will, but thine be done. Luke. xxii. 42. And as this human foul of CHRIST was the subject of his finite understanding, and directed will; so was it also of passions and affections of the same kind with those of other men. We find, that JESUS, upon occasion was angry; moved with pity and compassion; that he expressed joy and grief, love and hatred, desire and fear. All this while there was nothing of the simer, but all of the man, in CHRIST. This being agreed,

2. It must be granted, that as p man he did not know beyond the capacities of an human and finite understanding; and not what he knew as God. He could not be supposed to know in this respect things not knowable by man, any otherwise than as the divine nature and wisdom

thought fit to communicate and impart such knowledge to him.

3. That therefore Christ may be said, with respect to his human nature and finite understanding, not to know the precise time, the day and hour of some suture events. Again, with respect to his human nature, which consisted both of body and soul, he may well be said to increase in wisdom and stature. But all this while it includes or singular. The man, the human nature, encreaseth, which suffered and died also.

4. "T is farther to be considered how the Evangelists report this matter, they do it in such terms as are very observable. Of that day and hour knoweth no man; it follows, neither the Son. \* He doth not say the Son of God, nor the NyG, or, Word; but the Son only: And when his increase in wisdom and stature is mentioned by St. Luke, 'tis not said that the Word, or Son of God increased; that would have sounded somewhat harsh: But that Jesus increased in wisdom and stature; the child Jesus of whom he spake before. Jesus was the name by which he went, and by which he was commonly known among men; that it might appear to be and somewhat harsh, an increase relating altogether to the human nature.

P V. Photii Epist. 228. • That is, No man knoweth it, no not in particular the Son him-felf, the most eminent of all men, knoweth it, as he is man.

I DO

I DO not know all this while, where there is any inconsistency in the faith of Christians; when we believe, that Jesus was in all things made like unto us, and in some respect a little lower than the angels, Heb. ii. 7, 17. I see no force in the above-named objection; but this I cannot but add, That the Jews in bringing such objections, as have been named, to impugn the divinity of Jesus, are chargeable with great inconsistency. One great pretence, why they reject Christianity is, because we believe the divinity of Jesus; and yet at the same time they pretend to prove this belief to be contrary to the Christian doctrine. If it be contrary, why do they reject Christianity upon the account of this belief? If it be not, why do they take all this pains to prove that it is? God of his infinite mercy open their cycs!

[III.] AND Lastly, Those words Mat. xii. 40. are q urged, as inconsistent with the account, which Christians give of the time between the death and resurrection of Jesus from the dead, Mat. xii. 40. For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whales belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. Here the Jew pretends, that these words of Jesus were not verified in him: For he died on the evening of the Friday, and role very early on the first day of the week; which doth not make (says the Jew) two whole days and nights; and yet Jesus foretels, That he should continue in the grave, or heart of the earth, three

days and three nights.

I HAVE ' elsewhere considered this matter already, and shall need say the less of it in this place: Yet because the Jews object it frequently, and some Christians also think it a considerable difficulty, I shall in this place more particularly consider this matter; and make it appear, that the Jew ought not to make this objection, and that he is inexcusable when he doth it: For it must argue in him a great ignorance of things, or something worse. For whatever is objected on this account by another, or whatever difficulty it may be to any other man; 'tis very certain, that a wife and honest Jew cannot think this objection of any weight at all: That he ought not to do; though it receive farther frength from the words of Jesus. And that it may want none, I shall add his words, where he says, That after three days he shall rise again. Mark viii. 31. Which words may seem to import, that he would not rise till three days were fully compleated. In answer whereunto consider.

I. THAT 'tis a received maxim among the Jews, that any part of a precise time is to be reckoned for the whole: And therefore any part of the natural day is to be accounted for the whole Nux biguess. Among them one day of the month passed for the whole month, and one month of the year for the whole year. A very famous author among them lays this down as a rule in this matter. מקצת חדש ככולו ומקצת השנה ככולה i. c. Part of the month is as the whole, and part of the year is as the whole. If this be so, as it is admitted by the Jews themselves, then might Jesus be truly said to be three natural days (expressed after the manner of the Jews, who are wont to express the whole by its several parts, a whole triduum by three days and three nights) in the heart of the earth, if he was there any part of these three

2 9 V. Nizach, vet. p. 236. MS. Lus. n. 191. 2 Part I. p. 104. f Sedor Olam, c. iv. p. 1. This ought not by the Jews to be objected against Jesus, because 'tis but the very same liberty, which their facred writers use. Abijam is said to have reigned three years, i King. xv. 3. yet 'tis said, when the beginning of his reign is mentioned, That it was in the eighteenth year of king Jeroboam, ver. 1. And yet his son Asa, who succeeded him upon his death, is said to have reigned in the twentieth year of king Jeroboam. ver. 9. It is enough, that Abijam reigned any time above two years. Again, Elah is said to begin to reign in the twenty sixth year of Asa, i King. xvi. 8. and to have reigned two years; and after this Zimri is said to have killed him in the twenty seventh year of king Asa, ver. 10.

2. THAT the Jews allow in matters of this nature of a reckoning that was inclusive: I mean such an account of days and years, as took in both the time from whence they began that account, and the time on which it did determine. Of this I have given, elsewhere, several instances and proofs. The Jubilee is expressly called the fiftieth year, Levit. xxv. 10, 11. and yet 'tis certain, That 'tis but the forty ninth from the end of the foregoing Jubilee. The same may be said of the Pentecost or feast of weeks. Josephus ' agreeably hereunto reckons eight days from one sabbath to another, as hath been elsewhere obierved. And tho' the feast of unleavened bread, as is well known, lasted but seven days, yet when he reports that institution, he u doth it thus, Fognir d'puer to fuiege ours, # 7 d'Zuper republie. And yet the same author in another book expressly tells us, That the feast of unleavened bread was seven days: And the sabbath day with respect to the sabbath day immediately preceding is the eighth day. And therefore fustin Martyr, speaking \* of the first day of the week, on which Jesu's rose, says of it, in which, i. e. Tis called the eighth, and remains the first as 'Tis the eighth day with respect to the preceding first day. Joh.' XX. 26. St. Barnabas y in his epistle says "Apolly 7 sinteger by Son sic direction, de & 2 Inere dien, i. c. We rejoyce (as on a festival) on the eighth day, in which JESU

rose from the dead. 3. THAT therefore the facred writers will justifie our Jesus, when he foretels, that he should rise again after three days. It will appear, that JESUS uleth the same manner of speaking, which the sacred writers of the old Testament made use of. If those expressions may be desended, then may also the words of Jesus; if the words of Jesus cannot, neither can those writers. The Jew must confess, either that there is no weight and force in this objection, or if it have any force, it bears as hard upon their own facred writers, as upon our Jesus. After three days Jesus saith he will rise again: But this expression doth not infer, that the three days shall be fully expired and compleated before he rise again. Moses requires the reading of the law מקץ שנים at the end of every seven years. Deut. xxxi. 10. Post septem annos, says the vulgar: Mention (LXXII.) after (or, after the end of) seven years. This was to be done, not after the excitation of the sighth: But piration of the seventh year; then it should be done in the eighth: But (as the Jews confess, and the text teacheth us) in the feventh year. This will farther appear from the words of the prophet Jeremiah, where he puts the Jews in mind of the law of Moses. At the end of seven years let ye go every man his brother, an Hebrew which hath been sold unto thee. Jer. i. e. after the end of feven years; for fo much the

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> Antiqu. l. 7. c. 12. 

Antiqu. l. 2. c. 15. l. 3. c. 1c. 

Dialog. eum Tryphon. 

Wesds

words in the Hebrew do signisse. And by the vulgar they are rendered, cum completi fuerint septem anni. And yet it is most certain, that seven years fervice was not required; and that by this expression no more is meant than in the seventh year. This appears from the following words in feremiah, when he hath served thee six years; and also from the words of the law, to which the propher there refers the Jews. By comparing those words with these of the prophet, we shall find that what in the prophet is expressed by, At (or after) the end of seven years, is in the law to which he refers expressed by in the seventh year. Exod. xxi. 2. with Deut. xv. 12. What is expressed in one place z by at (or, after) the end of three years, Deut. xiv. 28. is expressed in a parallel place by the third year. chap. xxvi. 12. And the former place implies no more than the latter. Again, At the end (or, after the end, as the Hebrew and 2 ancient versions may be rendered) of three years 2 King. xviii. 10. Where 'tis impossible that the expiration of the three years should be meant, as appears by the context. \* This is so far from being the sense of that place, that what is said to have happened at, or after the end of three years, could not happen at the close, but probably came to pass at the very beginning of those three years. Besides what hath been said, our SAVIOUR'S words Mark viii. 31. where he says, that he should rise again after three days, are sufficiently explained by the same Evangelist, by the third day chap. ix. 31. and by another Evangelist Matth. xvi. 21. and by Jesus in a third. In three days I will raise it up. Joh. xi. 19. Moreover, the very enemies of Jesus seem to understand no more, by what he had said, That he would rise after three days, than that he would rise the third day. They tell Pilate what he said, viz. After three days I will rise again: They go on, saying, Command therefore, that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away. Matth. xxvii. 63, 64. If by after three days, had been meant, after the full expiration of three days, their advice had been short, when they put Pilate upon making the sepulchre sure to the third day only. Tho' what hath been said may suffice as to the Jews, and ought to satisfie them abundantly; yet for the sake of others I shall add,

4. THAT the way of speaking, which JESUS made use of, when he said he would rise after three days, need not seem uncouth or strange, because other good authors have used the same liberty, without any reprehension, or any just cause of it. I shall produce an instance or two. Livy b tells us, That a peace was made with the Carthaginians, when Q. Lutatius and A. Manlius were consuls: That three and twenty years after this, when P, Cornelius and T. Sempronius were consuls, a war began: Whereas it is evident, that three and twenty years could not expire and be compleated fully, between the consulship of Q. Lutatius, and P. Cornelius; nor can the three and twenty years be made up, but by taking in the years of each consulship. But any small part of a year goes for the whole. 'Tis a thing agreed, that Hannibal came into Italy in the consulship of P. Cornelius

Scipio

<sup>2</sup> Mere reis \$11. LXXII. \* Post annos tres. V. L. 'And teaus teun' etw LXXII.

<sup>\*</sup> Thus circumcision was to be performed on him, who was eight days old, Gen. xvii. 12. And this was always performed on the same day sevennight; so that there were but six whole days between. And he, who was born on the latter end of the first day, might be circumcised at any time on the beginning of the eighth. There are more proofs of this nature, which this Reverend Prelate bath collected, Part I. pag. 104 and 105, to which the reader may have recourse for surther satisfaction.

b Lib. 30. c. 44.

Scipio and T. Sempronius Longus: 'Tis also certain, that he left Italy in the consulship of Cn. Servilius Cæpio, and C. Servilius Nepos: This, as Livy c tells us truly, was in the sixteenth year of this Punick war; and so it was the current year in which Hannibal left Italy. But the the year was not expired, when he went away; yet Livy d tells us of his going, Post sextum decimum annum: Where what came to pass in the sixteenth year current, is by that grave historian expressed by after the sixteenth year.

To what hath been said much might be added, v. g. The Nundinæ, among the ancient Romans, were appointed for the country people, that they might every ninth day leave their country business, come to the city, and The ninth day is implied in the word nundinæ: And yet it hath been observed from e great authors (whatever Rutilius affirms) that the people were not obliged to stay in the country any more than feven intire days; and after the full expiration of them were to come to the city. The Olympiad was every fourth year: And yet 'tis observed, that the poet says, quinquennis Olympias acta est. We call that ague a quartan, which yet returns after two days intermission: And that, among f the Romans, was called the third after the Calends, between which and the Calends one only intire day did intervene. If it be still urged, that our SAVIOUR says, That he would rise after three days and three nights, it may be added to what hath been said before, that even among the Romans, this would have imported no more than, upon the third day. Among s them these words, after the tenth of the Kalends, and, before the tenth of the Kalends, signisie no more than the very tenth of the Kalends. One imports after that day was begun; the other, before it was ended.

IV. THE four Evangelists are charged with misquoting and misapplying the testimonies, which they produce out of the old Testament, v. g. That they quote what is no where to be found: Or that they quote falsly, and with mistake: Or else that they quote places nothing to the purpose.

[I.] Matthew ii. 23. And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene. These words will need some explication; for there is scarcely any place in the Gospels, which is attended with so great difficulty, as this is. The Jews here infult and triumph, accusing the Evangelist of quoting the prophets, for what they never said. It must be confessed, that the difficulties are very great: For besides that the Christians are not able to produce any prophet, who affirms, That the MESSIAs should be called a Nazarene; so it is strange, that his bare dwelling at this city of Nazareth (which is not so much as mentioned in the old Testament) should be sufficient ground for calling him a Nazarene, whatever is meant by it. I shall, before I go any farther, account for this difficulty; and make no doubt, but I shall make it appear, That the Jew hath not so great cause to insult, as he may think that he hath. For the better removing this difficulty, I shall premise some particulars, for the clearer understanding the sense of the words, as they lie before us.

Lib. 30. c. 1. d Ibid. c. 28. e Vid. Selden de jure Natural. l. 3. c. 15. S. Abricii Vita Ciceronia. b R. Isaac, l. 2. c. 6.

TAHT.

words, as he doth in other cases, where he quotes the words of a prophet; and sometimes he names the prophet whom he cites. This is well observed by one of the ancient fathers of the church, I mean St. Hierom in his comment on the place; That if the Evangelist would have laid before us any sixed example out of the Scriptures, he would not have said, It was said by the prophets, but rather, It was said by the prophet: But now, when he useth the word prophets, in the plural number, he makes it plain, That he doth not take the words from the Scripture, but the sense. This observation is of great use to my present purpose: And therefore, if the sense of what the Evangelist assirms here, be found in the old Testament, it is enough to justifie him against the Jews and all others: For they ought not to accuse him of a fault, in quoting the old Testament to his purpose, if it do contain the sense, tho not the very words, which are found in the Evangelist.

2. That expection, He shall be called a Nazarene, imports no more than this, that he shall be one. And this goes a great way towards the lessening the difficulty, which this place is attended with. Now it is very evident, That among the sacred writers, to be called, and to be, is one and the same thing. The Hebrews express word and thing by one and the same word; and nothing is more common with them than to express themselves after this manner. The name of God, among the Hebrew writers, is all one with God himself; and the names are all one with the Persons, in the phrase and manner of speech used among them. My house shall be called an house of prayer. Is lvi. 7. Mark xi. 17. i.e. Is shall be an house of prayer, &c. His name shall be called wonderful, counsellor, the mighty God, &c. Is ix. 6. i.e. He shall be all this. And so here, He shall be called, that is, he shall be: So that if the Messias was to be a Nazarene, and Jesus was so, what was either predicted, or typised of the Messias may be said to be then sulfilled, when it received an accomplishment in our Jesus.

3. The Evangelist only says, That it was spoken by the prophets; he doth not say, that it was written by them. Our SAVIOUR quotes the place of Isaiah as written; Is it not written? Mark xi. 17. and thus it is frequently expressed, when places are quoted in the new Testament out of the old. But this place is not so quoted: This answer alone is sufficient to stop the mouths of the perverse Jews; and I do not see what the later Jews could object against it. For let us but suppose, that there was among the ancient prophets a belief that the Messias should be a Nazarene, and that this were delivered down by tradition, I do not see why the Evangelist might not truly say, That this was spoken by the prophets tho' there was

no mention made of any fuch thing in any of their writings.

We may very well admit, that some things in the new Testament are mentioned, as said or done of old, which are not mentioned any where in the old Testament, but were received by tradition. I will give one example of the truth of what I say: The apostle says, As Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth, 2 Tim. iii. 8. We do not find any mention of these men in the history of Moses, or in any part of the old Testament; and yet the Jews have not the sace to deny, that there were such men as these, who did withstand Moses; and we find them both named expressly in the Targum, or Chaldee paraphrase of Jonathan, upon Exod. vii. 11. It would be no hard task to give some other instances

Digitized by Google

convincing to the Jews. And if this was all I could say towards the vindication of the Evangelist, this would be sufficient to silence the Jews.

But having premised these things toward the abating the difficulty of this text, I shall now proceed to the farther clearing of it. If it appears that the Messias was to be Nazarene (whatever the sense of the word be) and that Jesus was such a one, and so acknowledged to be, the Jew will have no cause to find fault with the Evangelist for these words; tho it should be granted (which may be safely done) that his dwelling at Nazareth was not the main design of those predictions of the Messias, but only an occasion, upon which these predictions were more generally owned to belong to him. He was to be really all that, which the word Nazerene imports; and his dwelling at Nazareth gave an occasion of the more publick notice and acknowledgment, that he was so. I proceed to shew, that the Messias was to be a Nazarene, in whatever sense that word is to be understood. I grant, that there is some variety among the learned, about the various senses of the word; but in this diversity we shall find, that as they agree to the Messias, so they were suffilled in our Jesus.

FIRST, Supposing this word, which is here rendered Nazarene, to come from the Hebrew word Netzer, which signifies a branch, we shall find the MESSIAS so called by the prophet; And there shall come a rod out of the stem of Jesse and [Netzer] a branch shall grow out his roots. Isa. xi. I. That this place is to be understood of the MESSIAS, the Jews themselves do not deny. Abravenel (a bitter enemy to Christianity) expounds it of him; and so doth the Chaldee paraphrast upon the place, who expounds those words, A branch shall grow out of his roots, by these; Christ shall be anointed from among his childrens children. The MESSIAS is elsewhere called (tho' by a different word in the Hebrew text of that place) a righteous branch Jer. 23. 5. Where again instead of branch the Chaldee paraphrast hath the word MESSIAH, or CHRIST; and so he renders the same word again in another place of the same prophet. Now when JESUS went to dwell in Nazareth, he gave occasion for his being a new called the branch; the very name of that place carrying a very near cognation to Netzer, by which we

find the MESSIA'S called in the prophet.

SECONDLY, Supposing the word translated Nazarene, to proceed from the Hebrew word Nazir, which signifies a Nazarite, and in its original signification, a separate person, this sense agrees very well, both with what is said of the Messias, and what was verified in our Jesus. If by a separate person we mean such an one as Joseph was, who is said to k be separate from his brethren, and was by them despised, rejected, and betrayed, this agrees well with what was foretold of the Messias, in the sifty third of Isaiah and elsewhere; and as eminently suffilled in our Jesus. Nay more than that, his very going to dwell at Nazareth was one occasion of his being contemned and despised. That was a mean place, and remote from the chief city, and from the temple; and had no same or reputation among the Jews. When Philip told Nathanael, that they had sound Jesus of Nazareth, that person of whom Moses in the law and the prophets did write; Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Joh. i. 46. That city was placed in a very obscure

i Jer. xxxiii. 15. k Gen. xlix 26. L Deut. xxxiii, 16.

country

country of Galilee; a country that had not been observed to have produced any great persons for wisdom and divine inspirations. Search and look (say the Jews) for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet: Joh. vii. 52. And yet, as I have elsewhere shewed, The Messias was, according to the prediction of the prophet Isaiah, to dwell in that country, tho he was to be born at Bethlehem, Isa. ix. 1.

OR if by a feparate person be meant one, that was separate from the faults and follies, the vanities and the crimes of the rest of mankind; as this was predicted of the Messias, so it was fulfilled in our Jesus. It is very well known, that the Messias, according to the predictions of the prophets, was to be a very holy person, the Lord's anointed, and consequently separated from all common persons and things. I should be endless, if I should go about to reckon up the predictions in the old Testament to this purpose. It cannot be denied, that the most holy and separate persons in the old Testament were types of the Messias: Such was the High Priest; such was m David, by whose name the Messias is sometimes called; such were the Nazarites under the law of Moses; and such was Joseph, who was separate from his brethren. Among the Nazarites, none were more famous than Sampson and Samuel (who were perpetual Nazarites, as the Jews well observe) and among all them that were separate from their brethren, Joseph was the most considerable: And these were all so like our JESUS, that to him who duly considers things, they will appear to be very eminent types of him. I cannot forbear to shew the admirable congruity between these separate persons and our Jesus; the due consideration whereof may serve, if not to convince the Jew, yet to strengthen the Christian.

JOSEPH was a Nazarene, or as the word may denote, a separate person. And tho' he was not under a Nazarite's vow; yet as he was separate from his brethren, he is called Nazir, a Nazarite, in the more general and lax signification of the word. And there is a very singular correspondence between him and Jesus. Joseph was the beloved son of his father; and so is Jesus too. But as he was hated by his brethren; so Jesus came unto his own, and his own received him not. If the sun, moon and stars did in a figure obeisance to Joseph, they did it to I sus without a trope. Come, let us kill him, was the language of the brethren both of Joseph and of Jesus: They were both sold for pieces of money; both became servants. The bloody coat of foseph answers to the blood of Jesus. They were both forced down into Egypt; both were numbred with transgressors. Joseph is imprisoned with Pharaoh's butler and baker; one of them is saved, the other destroyed: Jesus suffers with two thieves; and one of them is faved also. Joseph sold corn, and saves his people; so doth Jesus, the multiplier of loaves, and the bread of life. If Joseph exhort his brethren to peace, so did Jesus. If they bowed the knee to Joseph, every knee must bow to Jesus. If Joseph was highly exalted upon his sufferings, so was Jesus. They were both men of forrow, both fruitful branches, both highly lifted up from a low and forrowful condition.

SAMPSON was a Nazarite, (in the strictest sense) and a perpetual one; and a type of the Messias too, as the Jews intimate in two of their Targums, upon Gen. xlix. 18. A very sit type he was of Jesus Christ.

<u>.</u>;;

Hh2

en de la companya de la co

<sup>=</sup> Jer. xxx. 9. Ezek. xxxiv. 23.

He was so in his very birth: He was the son of a barren woman; Jesus of a virgin. The tidings of the birth of Sampson was brought to his mother by an angel; as was that of the birth of Jesus. He shall be a Nazarite says the angel of Sampson: and of Jesus 'tis said, That he dwelt in Nazareth, that it might be sulfilled which was said by the prophets, He shall be salled a Nazarene. Of Sampson the angel foretels, that he should deliver Israel; and the angel tells of Jesus, that he should save his people. An angel was sent to satisfie both Manoah and foseph. If the Spirit of God be said to move Sampson; that Spirit descended upon Jesus, and led him into the wilderness. If Sampson marries a Philistine woman, Jesus espoused the Gentiles. Sampson killed the lion, destroyed the Philistines, removed the gates of the city; and at his death gave the greatest blow to his enemies: But it is Jesus Christ, that overcame the devil, and the world, that got the conquest of death and hell, that destroyed the devil by his death, and that raised himself from death to life, broke and scattered the bands of death, and by his resurrection triumphed over all his enemies.

SAMUEL was also a *Nazarite*, the son of a barren woman, an only son. He was a priest and a prophet, and a great judge in *Israel*; one who went about discharging his great office; and upon these accounts a fit type

of Jesus Christ.

I SHALL add, That as JESUS and his followers were from the beginning called Galileans, because they lived in Galilee; so there is nothing to this day more common among the Jewish writers, than to call JESUS by the title of the Notzri (i. e. Nazarene) and his followers Notzerim, i.e. Nazarenes. So that as the MESSIAS was to be a Nazarene (in the sense, in which I have considered the word, and indeed in every sense that the word is capable of) so he was to dwell in Galilee; and not without the divine providence went to Nazareth; by means whereof the title of Nazarene was fixed upon him, who was upon other accounts really one.

Nor is there any thing more common than this, that a man should be called not only from the place of his birth, but from the place where he resideth and converseth. I shall not need to seek for examples to this purpose from prosane authors: I will give examples of it from the sacred writ, as that is interpreted by the sewish writers themselves. Thus Ithra the sather of Amasa is called an Israelite, 2 Sam. xvii. 25. The same man is called an Ishmaelite 1 Chron. ii. 17. David Kimchi n gives us this account, viz. that tho' he really were an Israelite, yet because he dwelt among the Ishmaelites, he was called an Ishmaelite. He adds, That his sather had written, that when he lived among the Ishmaelites, they called him an Israelite; but when he returned thence to the land of Israel, he was there called an Ishmaelite. Again, Hiram's sather is said to be aman of Tyre, 1 King. vii. 14. Because, says Kimchi, he sojourned there; as Obed Edom, who was a Levite, is yet called the Gittite, because he sojourned in Gath.

(2.) AGAIN, Matthew v. 43. Te have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. Here the Jew q gives St. Matthew the lie, and consequently Jesus. The former part of these words is indeed to be found Levit. xix. 18. but the latter part is no where

n R. D. Kimchi in 1 Sam. xvii. 25. o Rash. in 1 Chron. ii. 17. A Kimchi in 1 King. vii. 14. q R. Isaac. l. 2. c. 11.

to be met with in the old Testament. It was so far from being a precept of the law of Moses, that the Jews should hate their enemies, That by their law they were obliged to do them kindnesses. If thou meet thine enemies ox or his ass going astray, thou shalt surely bring it back to him again. If thou seest the ass of him that hateth thee lying under his burthen, and wouldst forbear to help him, thou shalt surely help with him. Exod. xxiii. 4, 5. How then can Jesus be justified, for charging those words upon the law of Moses, which are not to be found there, and so far from that, that the law of Moses expressly teacheth the contrary?

In answer to this, which seems at first sight a considerable difficulty, I shall not lay hold of any advantage that might look like a subterfuge. I will not therefore say, That Jesus doth not quote the law of Moses, for all that is here said. That he doth not say, Tis written in your law; nor doth he use the stile, which he makes use of before, It hath been said by them of old time. All that Jesus says here is, Te have heard, that it hath been said. But I pass this by; and let the Jew make the most of the objection, and suppose Jesus to cite the law of Moses; yet hath this objection no force in it at all against the authority of the gospels. And this

will appear, if we duly consider the following particulars.

I. THAT the sense of those words, Hate thine enemy, is found in the law of Moses: And if so, this is sufficient: For if the substance of the thing be there, 'tis no matter, whether the formal words be there or no. The prophet Ezekiel tells us, what God said to the Ifraelites, when he undertook to deliver them out of Egypt. Ezek. xx. 7. Cast ye away every man the abominations of his eyes, and defile not your selves with the idols of Egypt; I am the LORD your GOD. 'Tis expressly said, That GOD said thus unto them: Let any Jew shew me, where this is said in so many words. If it be enough, that the substance of this is said, 'twill be sufficient to justifie Jesus to shew, that the substance of what he says was said in the law of Moses. And that so it is, is evident beyond all manner of exception. 'Tis well known, what law the Jews were under as to the seven nations. They were forbidden to make any covenant with them, or by marriage to contract any affinity. Exod. xxxiv. 12, 16. They were required to smite and utterly destroy them, and expressly forbidden to shew them mercy. Deut. vii. 2, 3. And as for the Amalekites, they were obliged to blot out their remembrance from under heaven, and expressly charged to remember and not to forget it, Deut. xxv. 17, 19. with Exod. xvii. And it is hence very evident, that Jesus said with great truth, that it had been said, Hate thine enemy.

2. As for the pretence of the Jew, that they were by their law obliged to shew kindnesses to their enemy, it will be found to be of no force, if that law be duly examined; because the enemy mentioned in the law extends no farther than to one of their own nation or religion; to an Israelite or Proselyte at farthest. As to foreigners and aliens they were at liberty by the letter of their law. This will evidently appear, if we compare Exod. xxiii. 4. with Deut. xxii. 1, 2, 3. He that is called an enemy in the one place, in the parallel place is called a brother three times together; and from the context its plain, that it could not be understood of foreigners; the Jew could not be obliged to bring the strayed ox or sheep to the deciling place of a foreigner. This will be put out of doubt, if we remember, what is said elsewhere, Thou shalt not avenge, nor bear any grudge against the children

of thy people; and it follows, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self; Levit. xix. 18. where neighbour is restrained to the nation of the Jews, or religion at farthest: Of which I may have occasion afterward to speak somewhat farther. The kindness, which that law required, was directed and determined; and did not belong to foreigners. The seventh year was a year of release; the Jew might not then exact his debt of his neighbour or brother; of a foreigner he might exact it. Deut. xv. 2, 3. They might not lend upon usury to a brother, but were left at liberty as to a stranger. By a brother they meant an Israelite only, of ar esds, fi suisoun fi, says Philo i, Deut. Exod. xxi. 16. These are the words of the law. Onkelos the Chaldee paraphrast fadds something to the text: He that stealeth a man of the children of Israel, says he. Nor doth he deserve any blame upon this account; for we find it so explained in Deuteronomy: Thus 'tis expressed there, If a man be found stealing any of his brethren of the children of Israel, &c. that thief shall die. Deut. xxiv. 7. Indeed the oppression of an hired servant is forbidden; but then this regards only that servant, that is an Israelite or a Proselyte, as appears from the text. Deut. xxiv. 14.

3. THE practice of the Jews confirms us in the sense of their law. They are observed to have been remarkably and notoriously given to enmity against those, who are not of their nation or religion: And whereas there are offices due to all mankind, they refused these common civilities to foreigners. The heathens observed their moroseness and stiffness in this matter;

Non monstrare vias eadem nisi sacra colenti; Quasitum ad fontem solos deducere verpos.

THEY would not shew the way to a foreigner; nor shew him the commonest civility, which is due to humane nature. The heathen historians takes notice of their enmity and hatred towards all strangers whatever: Et quia apud ipsos sides obstinata, misericordia in promptu; sed adversus omnes alios hostile odium.

AND if these things be considered, our LORD cannot be charged with any shadow of reason for these words of his, which are perfectly agreeable both to the law and practice of the Jews.

(3.) AGAIN, John vii. 38. He hath believeth on me, as the Scripture bath said, Out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. Tho' in our margin we find a reference to Deut. xviii. 15. yet the Scripture doth neither there, nor any where else affirm, That rivers of water shall flow out of the belly of him, who believes in Jesus; which yet is that which Jesus affirms in this place. But I answer,

I. THAT those words, As the scripture hath said, need not refer to what follows, but to the words immediately going before them: q. d. He that believes on me, as the Scripture requires and directs him, &c. Theophylatt u gives this account of the place; He that believeth on me as the scripture hath said, in which, i. e. here must be put a stop (says he) and then read on, Out of his belly, &c. And he doth accordingly interpret those words, As the scripture hath said. He tells us, That there were those, who work by Christ's miracles induced to believe, but that a

r Lib. de Charitate. f Vid. Onkel. & Targum Jonath, in Exod. xxi. 16. racit. Hift. 1. 5. Theophylast. in locum. right

sight faith is from the Scriptures. He that believeth as the Scripture hath faid: That is, kalle mention of Soo, the creator, the Lord of all, the Saviour of me, that I am the son of God, the creator, the Lord of all, the Saviour of the world. For some (says he) seemed to believe, not as the Scripture saith sor hath directed but as they followed their herefies, or heretical fancies. He believes aright in Jesus, who believes him to be the Christ, the son of the living God; he who believes in him, as he is truly represented to us in the sacred writings, which do testifie of him. And to this sense the moords are turned in a late French translation (printed at Bourdeaux, 1686.) He that believeth on me, Suivant ce que dit l'Ecriture, i. c. following what the scripture saith. And if this be so, then all the force of the objection is removed, and the marginal citation justified: And I need not give any other answer than this, which is enough to stop the mouth of the Jew.

2. SUPPOSING \* those words to refer to the following; yet is there no cause, why JESUS should be charged with quoting Scripture, which is no where to be found, because our SAVIOUR doth speak of the great assistance of the Holy Spirit: ver. 39. And that is not only well compared to water; but promised in the days of the MESSIAS under that idea. And the solemn drawing of water at the feast of tabernacles, when these were spoken, is allowed to have been a sign at least (by R. Levi an

ancient Jew) of the HOLY GHOST, which they should receive.

(4.) Again John xix. 28. And after this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, faid, I thirst. If the Jew pretends that the Scripture no where foretels, that the Messias should say, I thirst, yet this objection hath no weight at all, because the words of the Evangelists do not import such a thing. Tis enough, that this thirst at that time gave an occasion to the suffilling a prediction, which we find Psalm lxix. 21. In my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink. And so they did by Jesus, as appears by what follows in this Evangelist. And therefore the Jew doth nothing, unless he proves that the words in the Psalmist can have no reference to the Messias; and when he attempts to do this, he may justly expect another answer: In the mean time this will by any

indifferent person be judged to be sufficient,

1 1 1 1

(5.) ONCE more, John xix. 36. For these things were done, that the Scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken. Here the Jew may pretend, that there is no such prediction as this in the old Testament: But there is no need here to be at any stand for an answer. For to say nothing of the Paschal lamb, where there was a provision made in the law, That a bone of it shall not be broken. Exod. xii. 46. Thus it was provided in the type: But not to insist upon this, the Scripture is express, the psalmist, speaking of God's special providence over the righteous, adds, He keepeth all his bones, not one of them is broken. Psal. xxxiv. 20. And to this Scripture the Evangelist seems to refer; nor do I see, what imputation can lie against the Evangelist for applying those words to Jesus, in whom they received so very remarkable and singular a completion. Nor is there any necessity, that I should maintain, that the Psalm is to be understood of the Messias; 'tis enough, that what God promiseth there to the righteous in general, was particularly suffilled in Jesus. For the Scrip-

= 1fa. xliv. 3. Exek. xxxvi. 25, 26, 27. with Joh. iii. 5. iv. 10, 14. in Talm. Hierofol.

ture

ture may be said to be then fulfilled, not only when a type is made good in the antitype, and a prediction in the event; but when a general promise is made good to a particular person; as 'tis in the case before us.

[II.] The four Evangelists, are charged that they quote fally, and with mistake. Mark ii. 26. In the days of Abiathar the high priest: Here the Evangelist is accused for affirming David to have done that in the days of Abiathar, which appears to have been done in the days of Abimelech. I Sam. xxi. 1. whose son Abiathar was, as appears, I Sam. xxii. 20. And this the Jew imputes to the Evangelist St. Mark as an error; and (the very fally) he chargeth St. Matthew and St. Luke with the same: But he hath no

reason to triumph upon this account. For,

r. It is certain, that Abiathar both lived at that time, and knew very well, not only what David had done, but what followed upon it. He was the son of the high priest, an eminent priest himself, and his father's Vicarius, as is highly probable; and 'tis certain, that he succeeded him in the high priesthood also. That might truly be said to be done in the days of Abiathar the high priest, which was done in the days of Abiathar, tho' it was done somewhat before he arrived to the dignity of the high priesthood; as that may be said to have happened in the days of such, or such a king or emperor, which came to pass, before they were declared either emperor

or king.

2 There is an opinion among 2 learned men, that this Abiathar the fon of Ahimeleth was called also Ahimeleth, and once Ahimeleth, 1 Chron. xviii. 16. As also that 2 his father was called both Ahiathar and also Ahimeleth. If this opinion be well grounded, all the difficulty is removed. And there is good ground to believe it true: For Zadock and Ahimeleth are said to be priests (and that Ahimeleth is called the son of Ahiathar) in David's reign, and after the death of Saul. 2 Sam. viii. 17. compare 1 Chron. xviii. 16. and whoever will take the pains to compare these places, and consider the time to which they refer, will not see cause to reject this opinion. It is confirmed by Victor Antiochemus 4 upon Mark ii. 26. And is not therefore to be rejected as a novel or vain opinion. But be it as it will, I need not rely upon this answer: And therefore I proceed:

3. The Greek text is here to be considered: What we render in the days of Abiathar the high priest, is in 'Abiabas 'Appelus, i. e. about or before Abiathar's being high priest. That particle is observed to signific sometimes not the present time, but that time which soon after succeeds it. Thus Josiah is said to have begotten Jechonias and his brethren 'Ai the unmusias, &c. i. c. near upon, or towards the time of the transportation to Babylon. Mat. i. 11. For certain it is that Jechonias was not begotten under the Babylonish captivity, but some time before it. And the Latin, sub, by which the vulgar renders this Greek particle, hath also the same signification.

4. We are to judge of the writers of the new Testament by the manner of speech, which they commonly use: And certain it is, That by the Greek word, which we render high priest, they do not only mean him, that was strictly so called among the Jews, who was but one at one time, but the more eminent men of that order. Thus we have two high priests mentioned

7 R. Isaac. l. 2. c. 28.

2 V. R. D. Kimchi in 2 Sam. vili. 17.

3 Selden d

4 V. Caten. Gr. Patrum in St. Marc. P. Possin.

Luke

Lyke iii. 2. And elsewhere have frequent mention of the high priests. It is affirmed by Antiochenus, as Mr. Selden cobserves, that they are called bigb or chief priests, who were the Vicarii of those, who were strictly so called; as also those who were exauctorati, and those also who were nearest in blood to them, and the heads of these several sacerdotal courses: I Chron. xxiv. 5. These were more eminent in their order; and might well be called chief priests. It is farther to be observed, That some of the priests are to be considered in a double capacity; either with respect to the sacerdotal function, or as persons purely ecclesiastical (in which sense I have shewed, who were accounted chief under him, who was the high priest;) or else they may be considered as vested with civil power, as they were members, and Iometimes principal members of the council, or Sanhedrin; and then the priests that chanced to be the נשיא the prince, or אב בית דין the father of the great council, might well be called 'Agxiete's chief prics's not with respect to their ecclesiastical function, but with respect to their civil dignity and jurisdiction.

The book of d Siphra, an ancient book among the Jews, doth in part confirm what is said above; for there it is expressly said, That the high priest's son may be said to be an high priest: And that the high priest's son, who is deputed by his father in his stead, הרו ברון גרול אכור i. e. is said to be an high priest; and consequently Abiatbar might well be called high

priest, in the time of his father, who was an high priest.

MAIMONIDES reckons the several orders and degrees of priests, between him that was strictly the high priest, and the lower or ordinary priest, whom the Jews commonly called the DITA. He tells us their precedence and their dignity: Among which he reckons the Sagan, who stood at the high priests right hand, and was in dignity, as the second man of the kingdom is to the king. And he adds, That when the high priest died, his son was to succeed in that dignity, and was preferable to any other; and that he stood next to the dignity, who was next to the inheritance. What hath been said is enough to justifie the Evangelist.

(2.) AGAIN, Matth. xxv. 32. From the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias the son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar. Here, says the few, is a manifest error, because that Zacharias, who was thus slain, was the son of Jehojach; as appears from 2 Chron. xxiv. 20, 21. And he pretends this to be not only an error;

but such an one as can admit of no salvo. But I answer,

I. That the Jew hath no reason to lay any stress upon this objection; not only because many such pretences might be brought against the writers of the old Testament, which yet are not of any force to destroy their authority; but besides, that for any thing which they can tell to the contrary, the same man might be called by two names, that of Jehojadah and Barachiah: Nothing was more common among the Jews than this. Can any man question the authority of the Psalmist, because he calls the same man Abimelech, whom another sacred writer calls Achish? Psal. xxxiv. Tit. with I Sam. xxi. 11. Shall we call in question the book of Chronicles, because the person is called Ner, who in Samuel is called Abiel? I Sam. ix. 1. with I Chron. viii. 32, or because he is called Ammiel in one, who in the other is called Eliam? 2 Sam. xi. 3. with 1 Chron. iii. 5. Doth

e V. Selden de Success. Pontif. l. 1. c. 12. d Siphra fol. 17. col. 2. é H. Kele Hamickdash. c. 4. f R. Isac. l. 2. c. 22.

Digitized by Google

not

not one of these books call that son of David Chileab, whom the other calls Daniel? 2 Sam. iii. 3. with 1 Chron. iii. 1. The same woman Bashemath and in the same book, is said to be in one place the daughter of Elon; Gen. xxvi. 34. and in another place she is called the daughter of Ishmael: Chap. xxxvi. 3. And yet we do not call in question the authority of that book. [V. Selden de Success. Pontis. l. 1. c. 5.] And is it not very easie to heap up many such examples? Why must that be an objection against the Evangelist, which is allowed to have no force against any writer of the old Testament? Tis certain, that there is not a greater distance between febojadah and Barachias, than between Chileab and Daniel, and between Reuel, Jethro, and Hobab; which yet are allowed by the Jewish writers, to be the names of the same person. I may add, that Barachias and Jehojadah, if we consider the signification of the words, import the same thing; for praise God is but the English of the one and of the other; and both import the very same thing as heliakim and Jehojakim do, which were the names of the same person. 2 Chron. xxxvi. 4. If the Jew urgeth, that it appears not, that Jehojadah was called Barachias; I answer, That its enough, that the contrary doth not appear; for that should have appeared, before they could have just ground to charge the Evangelist with an error.

To what hath been said I shall also add, That the gospel of St. Matthew was at first written in Hebrew; and St. Hierom doth i tell us expressly, That in that Hebrew copy, which the Nazarenes used, it is Jojada, where we now read Barachias. We have no reason to doubt of one or the other. The Jew hath then a very small reason to object this matter against the Evangelist. For this objection can have no force against the orginal, and very small against the Greek version; because the Hebrew word, as hath been observed above, signifies the very same thing, which Jehojadah doth.

2. The Jew is not certain, but the Evangelist might refer to some other Zacharias, who was the son of Barachias that was slain about that time; and the story thereof might then be well known, tho the history of it be not transmitted to us. And indeed this is not improbable at all, but very likely. For when our Saviour began as high as Abel, it is strange, that he should go no lower than Zachariah the son of Jehojadah: It might be expected he should, since he began so high, and charges the then Jews with killing him; That its likely, he meant some person of that name, who was slain at the end and expiration of the Jewish polity. But that Zacharias, mentioned in the book of Chronicles, was slain above eight hundred years, before I es us spake these words.

3. There is another Zacharias mentioned by I Josephus, who was flain by the Jews: Him he calls with Basicas. He was accused, as guilty of treachery, and too great a favourer of the Romans; and tho' he was absolved by the suffrages of the Sanhedrin; yet he was slain by the Jewish zealots, by the suffrages of the Sanhedrin; yet he was slain by the Jewish zealots, by the suffrage, in the middle of the temple. This answers to Abel slain from the beginning, He was the son of Baruch also, and slain in the temple. And then the words of Jesus are proleptical, and are a prophecy of what was shortly to be done; and only expressed, as such predictions frequently are in the old prophets, as if the thing had already come to pass. The

<sup>8</sup> V. Menass. B. Israel Conciliat, in Exod. qu. 1. h Joseph Antiqu. l. 2. c. 12, i St. Hiefom in Matth. xxiii. l. V. P. Sim. Hist. Critic. D. N. T. c. 7. De bello. Judaic. 1, 4. c. 18.

time past is frequently used for the future, both in the old prophets and writers of the new Testament. And if the words of Jesus refer to this person, they are so far from being an objection against the gospel, that they much confirm it.

(3.) AGAIN, Matth. xxvii. 9. Then was fulfilled, that which was spoken by Feremiah the prophet. Here St. Matthew may be accused for citing feremiah, as we see he doth, when he ought to have cited Zechariah, to

whom the citation of right belongs. But I answer,

1. THAT it is not evident, that St. Matthew did cite Jeremiah. 'Tis true, that we find this name in the generality of Greek copies at present: but this is no argument, that it was there from the beginning: On the other hand, 'tis certain that the Syriac and Persic version have no name, but barely mention the prophet. And to him that hence makes a doubt of the fidelity of the Evangelist, St. Austin a says as follows; Primò, noverit non omnes codices evangeliorum habere, quòd per Hieremiam dictum sit, sed tantummodo per prophetam : Possemus ergo dicere, his potius codicibus esse credendum qui Hieremiz nomen non habent. Some copies had not Jeremiah, but only the prophet. The ordinary gloss n affirms the same, Quidam codices non habent per Hieremiam, sed tantum per prophetam. I add, That R. Isaac, who objects against the Evangelists, every thing that he can lay hold of, and doth quote this place of St. Matthew, and pretends to shew that the place in Zechariah is not to the purpose; yet is so far from reprehending him for putting Jeremiah for Zechariah; that when he quotes the words of St. Matthew, he tells us only, או נתקיים מי הנביא i. c. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by the prophet.' Thus doth he represent St. Matthew speaking here. And tho' I thought fit to mention this place here, as that which the Jews might cavil at; yet in those exceptions which I have seen, that the Jews commonly make against the Evan-lists, I do not remember that I have found this, That St. Matthew puts Jeremiah for Zechariah; which is to me a good argument that they do not think, there is any weight in this matter.

2. Supposing St. Matthew to have quoted Jeremiah; yet is it not a just imputation upon his credit. For not to say, that for what appears, Jeremiah might be the writer even of some of those chapters (and the eleventh particularly, where this passage is,) which are now in the prophet Zechariah, and go under his name; not to insist upon this in this place, (of which I shall speak afterward.) for what we know, Jeremiah might have written what is here quoted from him, tho it be not now in that, which we have of his in the canon of Scripture. And that these words were written in some Apocryphal book of Jeremiah seems credible from what S. Hierom P assirms. He tells us, That he read the very words here quoted, in an Hebrew volume, communicated to him by a Jew of the Nazarene sect; being an apocryphal work of Jeremiah. Nor is it any disparagement to cite an apocryphal book: That book, which is apocryphal, is not therefore unworthy of credit. The Apostle mentions Jannes and Jambres, tho they were no where mentioned in the canon of Scripture; which yet are in a Jewish book that is of less credit. The divine author of the epistle to the Hebrews seems to refer to the story of the Maccabees; St. Jude mentions

Digitized by Google

m Augustin. de Consens. Evangelist. 1. 3.

n Gloss. ordinar. in Matth. xxvii. 9.

R. Isac, 1. 2. c. 27.

P Hierom. in Matth. xxvii. 9.

the prophecy of *Enoch*; and the *holy writers* mention \* the fayings of *Aratus* and *Epimenides*, who were heathen writers. Those books, which were not received into the canon, might yet be worthy of belief: And where the *book* is not in the canon; yet the *truth*, which it contains, may be canonical.

3. THAT Jeremiah wrote the ix, x, xi, xii, xiii, and xiv. chapters in Zechariah, is a very probable opinion. This is certain, That such things are contained in those chapters, as agree well with the time of Jeremiah, but by no means with that of Zechariah, e. g. That the pride of Asserbable be brought down, and the sceptre of Egypt depart, is foretold, Zech. x. 11. It is well known, that this was past in Zechariah's time: And tho Jeremiah might, Zachariah could not predict this. What is said of the cities of the Philistines, Zechar. ix. 5. agrees very well with what we read, Jer. xxv. 20. but what is said of Gaza, Zech. ix. 5. cannot be said by Zechariah, but agrees very well with the time of Jeremiah. For its most certain, that Gaza was smitten in the end of Jeremiah's time; and therefore not remaining in Zechariah's as is supposed in that place. Jer. xlvii. 1. The same may be said of Askelon, which is supposed in being, Zech. ix. 5. and was really so in the time Jeremiah; but was cut off in the close of Jeremiah's time, and long before the days of Zechariah, Jer. xlvii. 5. compared with Zephaniah ii. 4. I add what is said, Zech. xiv. 5. Te shall slee, like as ye sled from before the earthquake, in the days of Uzziah king of Judah; these words report a matter which its possible, that some might remember to have heard their sathers report in Jeremiah's time, and as such its mentioned in that place; but its not credible, that it should be remembered in the time of Zechariah.

[III.] LASTLY, The four Evangelists are charged with quoting places nothing to the purpose. Matt. ii. 15. That it might be fulfilled, which was spoken of the LORD by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called

my son:

These words will require a farther consideration; for they are attended with some difficulty. For besides, that it is not said by what prophet these words are spoken, and we are therefore lest at some uncertainty; it's hard to conceive, how these words, which were meant of Israel, can be said to be suffilled in Jesus; and that what was said of Israel of old, should, upon what happened to Jesus, be said to be suffilled; and this should be said to come to pass, That, that might be suffilled, which was suffilled long before. The fews do much insult over us on this occasion, and accuse the Evangelist of misapplying the holy Scripture. I shall endeavour to remove the difficulty, and then proceed.

FIRST, I grant, that it is not said, by what prophet this is said; nor is it very material that it should: For there is hardly any prophet, but he says the substance of what is here affirmed; mentioning frequently the bringing the children of Israel out of Egypt. Nor do the prophets of Israel only mention this; but Balaam also, who was not of that race, speaks of it very expressly. God brought them out of Egypt, says he; and presently afterwards he speaks

<sup>\*</sup> St. Paul quotes Aratus. All. xvii. 28. Epimenides, Tit. i. 12. and takes a verse out of Euripides. 1 Cor. xv. 33.

<sup>4</sup> This apply to texts in Zech. ix. to chap. xiv. R. Isaac. l. 2. c. 4. MS. Lusit. n. 186.

Matthew; God brough him forth out of Egypt. It hath been thought, that the Evangelist hath respect to the words of Balaam here; but there is no need we should go back so far: We have the words in the prophet Hosea: When Israel was a child, then I loved him; and called my son out of Egypt. Hos. xi. 1. Here are the very express words of that prophet; and the Evangelist reports them, as they lie there in the Hebrew text, not as they are there turned by the Greek interpreters. So that we have not only the substance of what is here said frequently in the former prophets, but the very words also in this prophet. Upon this account the Jews have no cause to quarrel.

SECONDLY, I am to shew, how these words, which were spoken of Israel, can be applied unto Jesus: And this is indeed the greater difficulty. It is very evident, that the words of Balaam referred to the people of Israel; and so do the words of Hosea likewise. As to the main point, it matters not to what place in the old Testament St. Matthew doth refer. It is granted, that the words are spoken of the children of Israel; however applied by the Evangelist unto Jesus. For the removing this difficulty,

I offer the following particulars to be considered,

1. It is granted by the Jewish writers, that the old Testament is full of mystery, and infinuations of somewhat farther than what the letter of the text, or sirst intention of the institution, or thing mentioned, doth amount unto. There is nothing more common than for the Jewish writers, in their commentaries upon the Scriptures, to expound the mystical sense of their law, and of their rights and usages. They grant, that there was much of type and mystery in their religion; and it is full of a farther sense than the literal: Hence it is, that we have such great store of Midrashim, or commentaries, which give account of the mystical sense of the text. The Jews very wisely suppose, that their law had a farther meaning, than what results from the bare letter. They take great liberty to expound their law accordingly; and if the Christian writers do affirm, that the old Testament was sull of shadows, they say nothing, but what agrees with the sense of the Jews themselves.

2. THERE being many types as well asprophecies of the Messias, those passages of the old Testament may truly be said to be suffilled in the Messias, which were compleated in him as in the antitype, tho they were such things, as were before done in the type. There are some things said in the old Testament of the Messias so immediately, that they belong to him intirely and to none else: There are other things, that have a literal sense first; and then a spiritual meaning and reference to the Messias. It is easie to give instances of both these. That Scripture is suffilled in Christ, which did refer to him, as well as that, which only belonged to him and to no other. The law it self was a shadow of things to come; and there were during the legal dispensation, a great number of types of Christ, and of what he was to be, to do, and to suffer; and these things were then suffilled, when those things did happen to him, which were thus typised and fore-shadowed. For whatever happened before in the type, received a new completion in the antitype. And then the Scripture may truly be said to be suffilled, when the spiritual and mystical meaning of it

<sup>1</sup> Numb. xxiii. 22. with chap. xxiv. 8, V. P. Simon. Hist. Crit. du Text. Du. N. T. p. 241.

was obtained. For as a prophetical prediction is then fulfilled, when what was foretold is come to pass; so a type is then fulfilled, when that is done in the anti-type which was done in the type before. That there were many types of the Messias in the old Testament (as well as predictions) cannot reasonably be denied. For the law being full of symbols and shadows (which the Jews deny not) it cannot be supposed void of those, which had a reference to CHRIST; who was the end of that law, and the great blessing predicted and hoped for by all the faithful; and then were those Scriptures fulfilled in CHRIST, which did relate those types of him, whatever completion they might have before. The brazen serpent in the wilderness was, by the Jews confession, a symbol of salvation; and had a farther meaning, than what the letter of that relation amounts unto. This is by our Saviour applied to himself; and cannot reasonably be denied to belong to the MESSIAS. Thus the law, which forbad the breaking the bones of the paschal lamb, was a type of what happened to CHRIST on the cross; and that lamb was a type of CHRIST, who was offered up for our salvation. And the Jews have no cause to quarrel with Jesus or his followers, for making these applications, unless they could demonstrate (which they can never do) that those things had no reference to that matter, to which they are applied.

3. ISRAEL, of whom these words were spoken by the prophet, was a type of CHRIST, to whom these words are applied by the Evangelist; and therefore this Scripture may truly be said to be now fulfilled, which yet in the letter was verified long before in Israel. Egypt was a refuge to Israel and to Christ; both went thither, and both returned thence. A famine sent Israel thither; and the sword of Herod was the occasion of CHRIST'S being carried to the same place. CHRIST was the Son of God, and the first born; and so was Israel too (tho' in a lower sense, he being but the type of CHRIST) as it is said, Thus saith the LORD, Israel is my son, even my first born. Exod. iv. 22. CHR IST called God his Father ; and God stiles himself Israel's. I am a father to Israel, and Ephraim is my first born, Jer. xxxi. 9. 'Twas by means of Joseph that Israel went into Egypt; it was another Joseph that carried CHRIST thither. The MES-SIAS was God's anointed; and so was Israel also. Christ was driven from his own country to a strange land; and 'tis said of Israel, That they went from one nation to another, and from one kingdom to another people. They were both preserved in Egypt, from the cruelties of a Pharaob and an Herod. God suffered no man to do them wrong, he reproved kings for their sakes: Saying, Touch not mine anointed, and do my prophets no harm. Pfal. cv. 13, 14, 15. Here was a discriminating providence to be seen in the preservation of Israel and of CHRIST. Israel is kept alive, when the first born of the Egyptians are flain; and CHRIST is preserved in the same place, whilest the babes about Bethlehem die by the sword. Israel lest Egypt upon the death of the one; CHRIST soon after the death of the other. God calls both his sons out of Egypt; Israel the type, and Christ the anti-type: And the deliverance out of Egypt was a shadow of that which was to be wrought by CHRIST. It is no wonder, that the afflictions in Egypt should be called, by the divine author of the epistle to the Hebrews, the afflictions of CHRIST: Heb. xi. 26. for they befel him in the type, and be suffered in Israel; as he was offered up in Isaac, and slain in the sacrifices, which were types of his death. He is called the lamb of God flain from

from the beginning of the world. He died not only in the latter time of the fewish state (which is called the end of the world) but he was slain in the beginning of it, in the paschal lamb, and those other sacrifices, which were

types and shadows of him.

JUSTIN Martyr, in his dialogue with Trypho the Jew, tells him, that GOD calls CHRIST (by way of parable, or similitude,) Jacob and Israel. And to that purpose he quotes that place in Isaiah; Behold my servant whom I uphold, mine elect in whom my foul delighteth. Isa. xlii. 1. But he quotes that passage according to the reading of the Greek interpreters, who put in Jacob and Israel to the text, which is unquestionably to be meant of the MESSIAS. Let this avail what it will: It will fure have some force with those, who have a great veneration for the translation of the Seventy: Yet it must, however be confessed, that the Evangelist, when the cites that place, doth not follow the Greek interpreters, but the Hebrew text; and therefore I shall not lay a greater stress upon this argument, than it will bear. It is manifest however that Israel was a type of Christ; and as the type or sign is often put for the anti-type or thing signified; so it is here; Israel is put for CHRIST, whose type he was. And this appears from another place in Isaiah; Thou art my servant, O Israel, in whom I will be glorified. Isa. xlix. 3. That by Israel in that place is not meant either Jacob, or the people which came from him, but the MESSIAS, will be very evident to any man, who will diligently confult the context, and compare what is said afterwards, ver. 4, 5, 6, 7, 8.

IF these things be duly considered and laid together, we shall have no cause to find fault with the Evangelist, for applying that to CHRIST, which

did at first belong to Israel, who was a type of him.

(2.) AGAIN, Matth. ii. 17, 18. Then was fulfilled, that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet saying, In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children; and would not be comforted, because they are not. Here the Jews object against the Evaugelist, for misapplying the place of Jeremiah; and I think my self obliged to represent the force of their objection, and to answer it. THE Jew x pretends, that the place in Jeremiah belongs to another matter; and cannot be applied without a manifest wresting of the place to the slaying of the children of Bethlehem in Judah. For why should Rachel be said to weep for her children here, when the children of Bethlehem were not hers, but Leab's? Besides, the prophet doth not speak of Rachel's weeping for the dead (to which his words be applied here) but for those who were led captive: which is evident from the following words in the prophet, where a promise is made of their return. Thus saith the LORD, Refrain thy voice from weeping, and thine eyes from tears. For thy work shall be rewarded, saith the Lord, and they shall come again from the land of the enemy; And there is hope in thine end, saith the LORD, that thy children shall come again to their own border. Jer. xxxi. 16, 17. The words in the y prophet refer to the captivity of the ten tribes; who are called Ephraim, because Jerobeam their first king upon their first separation from Judah, was of that tribe. Agreeably hereunto, it follows in the prophet, I have furely heard Ephraim bemoaning himself, Jer. xxxi. 18. This is the substance of what I find objected among the writings of the later Jews.

<sup>\*</sup> Matth. xii. 18. \* Jer. xxxi. 4. \* R. Maac. 1. 1. c. 28. 7 Jer. vii. 15. For.

FOR an answer to this difficulty (for it must be allowed that it is so) I shall offer the following particulars to your consideration.

- 1. I Do readily grant, that the words in Jeremiah do belong to another matter: Nor will I contend with the Jew about it; nor yet do I deny that they refer to the captivity; and not the death of those, who are lamented. But it doth not hence follow, that the Evangelist is guilty of fraud, and perverting the Scriptures, when he applies these words to the lamentation, which was made upon the account of the innocents, that were slain at Bethlehem.
- 2. RACHEL may with congruity enough be brought in weeping upon this occasion for her children, by way of a prosoppais, nothing being more common than for writers to bring in a person speaking, who is not really any individual person concerned in that matter. Thus is Ephraim brought in bemoaning himself, in that very chapter to which the Evangelist doth refer. This is a figure very common to all authors, to bring in a person speaking; and there is no man in his wits, who quarrels with them for it. Rachel is here brought in weeping, and not Leah; nor hath the Jew any reason to except against the Evangelist on this account. Rachel was known to be fond of having children, (Give me children, says she, or else I die,) and is therefore sitly enough brought in here in the room of the tender mothers, who wept for the death of their children. And as for that reason she was fitly made use of by the prophet; so she is by the Evangelist also, as a person sit to represent the concern of the kindest and most compassionate mothers. This may satisfie any indifferent person in this matter. But besides this I may add, that the tribe of Judah and that of Benjamin bordered on each other; and one is sometimes taken in as a part of the other. If Bethlehem was in Judah, Ramah was in Benjamin the next tribe thereunto; and not only so, but not far from Bethler hem. The flaughter of the innocents was not restrained to the town of Bethles hem, but extended to all the coasts and confines thereof: And then the voice might well be heard in Ramah; and Rachel (from whom the tribe of Benjamin sprang) might be truly said to weep for her children in the closest and strictest sense.

The town of Bethlehem? was the very place, where Rachel was buried: The Bethlehemites were descended from her husband and from her own sister: She might as truly be said to be the mother of those Bethlehemites, as Leah was called the mother of Joseph. The Jews have no reason to quarrel with the Evangelist, when he speaks after the manner of their law. Let it be, that Jeremiah speaks of captives, and the Evangelist applies the words to them that were slain. All that the text saith, both in the prophet and the Evangelist; both in the Hebrew and the version of the Seventy, is this, that they are not. This is the ground of their weeping; hence the tears of Rachel. This expression is general, and is competible to them that were captives, and to them that are dead. The one are not in their own land; the other not in the land of the living. They are not; there lies the cause of the lamentation: The meaning is not, that they are annihilated, and turned out of all being, whatever other sense the words do admit. But they are not what, or where they were before.

3. It is very reasonable, that we grant a second sense to many places and passages in the old Testament, and when they happen to arrive to the verifying of that sense, they then may be said to be accomplished and sulfilled. I have before discoursed of this, when I considered, Matt. ii. 15. No man can deny the

# Josh, xviii. 11. 

# Gen. xxxv. 19. 

# Gen. xxxvii. 10.

words

## PART II. of the MESSIAS.

words of the prophet to belong at first to another matter: They were then literally fulfilled: but yet notwithstanding they may again be farther fulfilled, and receive their final accomplishment. The reason of things is one and the same; nor is there any thing more steady than that is: And yet where the first reason of an institution, or of the names of persons hath continued, there have risen up afterwards some new reasons (which appeared not before) of the Tame institutions or names. The c sabbath day was from the beginning appointed as a standing memorial of the creation; this reason was given of it at mount Sinai; and yet afterwards it was required as a memorial of the deliverance out of Egypt. The eating of d blood was forbidden at first because the blood was the life of the creature; it was afterwards forbidden because it made atonement. Beersbeba had its name from the oath that was there taken; and 8 from the feven ewe-lambs also: Sheba signifying both an oath, and feven. Esau was called Edom, i. e. red: So he was at his birth; but he was called so asterwards from the red pottage. If these things were so, it need not seem strange at all, that many things said and done in the old Testament, should receive a new completion and accomplishment in the new. This may well be allowed upon account of the likeness of things in the old and new Testament; and the subordination and reference which the one have to the other.

4. We have still one great reason, besides what hath been insisted on, to believe those words in Jeremiah to be rightly applied by the Evange-list; because they are found in that very chapter, where the prophet, more than once, prophesies of the Messias. And that he doth so, is very evident: For he predicts the miraculous birth of the Messias presently after, The Lord hath created a new thing in the earth, a woman shall compass a man. Jer. xxxi. 22. And soon after that he mentions ver. 31. the new covenant, which God would enter into. This manifestly belongs to the days of the Messias; and is therefore applied to that purpose by the divine author of the epistle to the Hebrews, Heb. viii. 8.

LASTLY, It is to be considered, that a Scripture may be said to be sulfilled several ways: v. g. properly, in the letter; as when that which was sorteled comes to pass? or again when what was sulfilled in the type, is sulfilled again in the anti-type. Or else a Scripture may be said to be sulfilled more improperly; v. g. by way of accommodation: As when a like event happens to any place or people, to that which sell out some time before. The sorrow and the mourning, which now fell upon the coasts of Bethlehem and Ramah, was very bitter and grievous; and like that which is reported to have befallen those places by Jeremiah upon another occasion: And then those words are made use of by way of allusion to express this sorrow by. The Evangelist doth not say, That it might be fulfilled; but then was sulfilled; q. d. Such another scene of sorrow appeared then upon the murther of the innocents, as that was, which Jeremiah mentions upon another sad occasion. This is a way of speaking used in the new Testament. What the prophet Isaiah says of the hypocrites of his time, Isaiah xxix. 13. is applied by Issus to those who were like them. Ie hypocrites, well did Isaias prophesie of you saying, this people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me. These men were hypocrites like those in the prophet's

Gen. ii. 3. Exod. xx. 11. Deut. v. 15.

Gen. xxi. 32, 31.

Chap. xxvi. 39.

K k

Gen. ix. 4.

Levit. xvii. 11, 12,

Matt. xv. 7, 8.

time;

time; and therefore the words of the prophet are accommodable to them, though they were spoken of other men. Again, the words of the same prophet, which were spoken to those of his own time, are said to be fulfilled in those, who lived in our SAVIOUR'S, and are accommodated to them. In them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaias, says our SAVIOUR, Matt. xiii. 14. with Isa. vi. 9. St. Paul applies the same words to the Jews of his time; and at the same time allows them to have been spoken to their fathers: Acts xxviii. 25. It is easie to give more instances to this purpose. Compare Matt. xiii. 34, 35, with Psal. lxxviii. 2. Matt. xxi. 13. with Jer. vii. 11. And this is a liberty to be allowed to, and that is taken by all writers. St. Matthew was an Hebrew; and wrote (as 'tis commonly believed) in the Hebrew tongue, and for the use of the Hebrews, and in their stile and manner of writing. He must be a stranger to the Hebrew writers, that doth not know, that nothing is more common among them, than such accommodations of the text upon all occasions. They abound in such applications: I may say their Midrashim do very much exceed in them. The Jews of all men in the world have no cause to object against our Evangelist on this account. And this which I have said in the last place, I take to be alone a full answer to the objection of the Jews.



CHAP

## 

## CHAP. IV.

The Jew pretends, that the proceeding against Ananias and Sapphira, Acts v. was unjust. An answer to his objection. An objection against the truth of what is related, Acts vii. 4. An answer to \*. The like against ver. 14. answered. and ver. 16. defended against many objections. A defence of St. Stephen for what be quotes ver. 42, 43.----Of the time of Saul's reign, Acts 13, 21. defended. The Jew's objection against Acts xvi. 3. answered. The Jew's objection against St. Paul for perverting the place which he quotes out of the old Testament, I Cor. xv. 54. A defence of St. Paul. The Jew pretends to prove that St. Paul wanted skill and true judgment, from Gal. iii. 16. A defence of St. Paul. The Jew pretends that St. Paul preverts the words of the Psalmist, which he cites Eph. iv. and that be doth it to scrue a turn: An answer to the Jew's objection. An objection against the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, for misapplying words quoted from the second Psalm, Heb. ii. 5. An answer to that objection. The same author is charged to speak inconsistently of himself; Because be doth, chap. i. exalt JESUS above the angels; and yet chap. ii. 7. be owns bim to be a little lower than the angels. An answer to that objection. A quotation from Jeremiah, Heb. viii. 8. It is pretended, that the place in Jeremiah is nothing to the purpose. The divine author of that epistle is desended, The Jew pretends, that the same author bath corrupted a place, which he quotes from the book of Psalms, Heb. x. 5. A defence of that divine author against the Jew's charge. St. James is produced by the Jew, as teaching justification by works, Fam. ii. 24. which is a doctrine directly contrary to what St. Paul. teasbeth. An answer to this pretence; where it is proved that St. Paul and St. James do not contradict each other. A severe charge against St. John, the writer of the Apocalypse, upon occasion of his words, Rev. vii. 5, 6, 7, 8. 11e charges bim with forgetfulness in not mentioning the tribe of Dan; and of gross ignorance. A full answer to that charge, and a sust defence of that sacred writer.

Kk 2

HAVING

## 84 A DEMONSTRATION PART II.

AVING produced some of the more plausible and common objections of the Jews against the four gospels, and such as are of the greatest weight, I shall now proceed to consider those, which they bring against the other parts of the new Testament. And as I have in the preceeding chapter given their objections the greatest force; so I shall do in those that follow. And as I have not thought my self obliged to take notice of those Exceptions, which are trifling and of very little moment; so I shall pass them by in the following chapter, for no other reason, but because they are so weak as not to deserve any answer. But as for the Method, I shall not fail to consider them in this following chapter, in that order in which they lie before us in the books of the new Testament; following herein the method in which R. Isaac hath laid them before us. And if in the preceeding or following chapter, the reader shall find any objection of weight and moment pretermitted, I desire, that he would not conclude too fuddenly, that it is through negligence or defign: For he will will find those things considered in some other place, that was proper for that matter: It being not my design in these two chapters to take in those objections, which did not occur in some other place.

I. Acts v. 1. But a certain man named Ananias, &c. The Jew 2 objects here the unjustice of the proceeding against Ananias and Sapphira. He that gives alms, is at liberty to give what he thinks sit; nor is it sit, that a man should give all away. If this law of selling their possessions was well made, why did it not continue? And if it was not well made, why did Ananias and Sapphira suffer? In answer whereunto I consider,

1. What was the fin of Ananias: And that may eafily be learned from the words. He had fold his possession, and set apart the price of it, and devoted it to the use of the church: He had given it to God, and afterwards goes about to convert part of it to a private use: He kept back part of the price, ver. 2. So indeed we render it: But the Greek word in which the Latin b renders by fraudavit) is observed to signishe purloining, slealing, or fraudulently taking what is not our own. The word is used by the LXXII c in the story of Achan; and in the Greek of the book of Maccabees, in the daccount of the sacrilege of Menelaus. The word signifies theft, or taking away what is not our own; and where what is so taken away is devoted to GoD, it signifies sacrilege: And this was the case Ananias might have kept his possession if he pleased. Whiles it remained was it not thine own? saith St. Peter, ver. 4. He was not by any law obliged to sell his possession, nor to give all his estate to the poor. He was obliged to make good his vow; and when he had devoted his estate to God, he might not alienate it. This was the fin of Ananias. This is expressed by, lying to the HOLY GHOST, and lying to GOD, ver. 3, 4. It was a trespass against God, a breach of faith, and an invasion upon God's part and portion. 'Tis no matter, whether Ananias had devoted his estate in a set and solemn form of words: This is not of the essence of a vow: For a vow being nothing else but a promise made to God, there needs not any set form of words to make it binding. This Maimonides e lays down as a rule that

In vows, and voluntary offerings, it is not needful to utter any thing with the lips. 'Tis certain, that Ananias had a full purpose to devote his pos
MS. L n. 122

Tit ii. 10.

Jos. vii. 1.

d 2 Maccab. iv. 32.

Maimon, Hal Mazshe Corban, c. 14.

session

fession; and make a shew of bringing the full price. 'Tis the breach of his vow that was his sin.

- 2. As this was his fin; so 'twas an heinous one, and such as deserved death: 'Twas a robbing of God, and a wilful facrilege; for which the law of Moses allowed no Atonement. In case of a trespass of this kind through ignorance, there was room for forgiveness: But in that case restitution was required, and the addition of a fifth part, and a trespass offering also. Lev. v. 15, 16. He that wilfully finned in this kind was left to be cut off by the hand of heaven, as we see here Ananias was, Deut. xxiii. 21. for God cut him off; 'tis not to be charged upon any particular law of JESUS, or sentence of the apostles. For the sin of Ananias was willful, and destitute of all excuse. He was indeed at liberty before he had devoted his possessions; but by no means afterward: St. Peter lets him know, that there was no excuse lest for him. Had the estate been none of his, his dedicating it had been a nullity from the first. Had he had but a right to part of it, he could have been answerable for no more than he had a right to sell. Again, had he sold it, and not received the price, he might have been excused: But it was quite otherwise. Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? i. e. Before it was fold, wast thou not the right owner, and full proprietor of it? And after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? i. e. After it was sold, didst thou not receive the full price of it into thy possession? Or, hadst thou not the mony which it was sold for? This must be the sense of those words: And this shews abundantly the inexcusableness of the man.
- 3. Nor ought the Jew upon this account to object against the Christians the severity of the institution; especially if it be considered, that its the first offence of this kind, which ought not to pass without an exemplary punishment. Twas thought needful upon the first planting of Christianity to punish so great a crime: Nor hath the Jew reason to think it too great severity, when he considers what was instituted on Nadab and Abihu; and upon him that gathered sticks on the Sabbath day: Not to insist upon other examples of sinners in this kind, who were most severely punished under the occonomy of Moses: Such were Achan and the sons of Eli: That I may say nothing of those, who were remarkably punished for their irreverence and profaneness.

II. Again, Acts vii. 4. --- And from thence, when his father was dead, he removed him into this land, wherein ye now dwell. Here the Jew objects against the truth of what is here affirmed. He undertakes to prove, that Terah lived 60 years after this removal of Abraham; and thus he proceeds, Terah at the age of 70 years begat Abraham, Gen. xi. 26. Abraham when he was 75 years old left Charran, and removed into Canaan. Gen. xii. 5. Then was Terah 145 years old. Terah lived in all 205 years. Gen. xi. 32. and therefore lived after Abraham's removal into Canaan 60 years. And yet Stephen pretends, that he removed not till after his father's death: This is the substance of the Jew's objection.

In answer whereunto, I examine what truth there is in what the Jew affirms, concerning the age of Terah, when he begat Abram. Upon this the rest is built: If the Jew be mistaken here, the force of the objection is quite gone. He considently affirms, that Abram was begotten when Terah was 70 years old. For this he grounds himself upon these words: And

Terah

f R. Isaac, l. 2. c. 61.

Terah lived 70 years and begat Abram, Nahor, and Haran. Gen. xi. 26. Had Abram alone been mentioned, his argument had been good: But now the most that can be inferred from this place is, that Terah began to be-

get children when he was 70 years old.

Abram indeed is first named; but not therefore to be supposed the first-born. We may not conclude, that Shem was the first-born of Noah, because he is named before Ham and Japhet. Gen. v. 32. The worthiest and not the eldest is sometime first named in Holy Writ. Of which it were very easie to give a great number of examples. (See Gen. xlviii. 20. Exod. vii. 7. 1 Chron. i. 28. and ch. ii. ver. 2.) Several of the Jews believe it to be so in this place. Unless Abram appeared to be the eldest son, the place alledged will be no proof, that he was begotten when Terah was seventy years old.

But instead of any such proof we have sufficient evidence, that Abram was not the eldest son of Terah. Haran did not only die long before Abram, Gen. xi. 28. but Abraham married his daughter ver. 29. and she was but ten years younger than he, Gen. xvii. 17. And if from the order of the words Gen. xi. 26. Abram must be concluded to be the eldest son, Haran must be the youngest. And if so, Haran's daughter Sarah must be begotten by him, when about the age of seven years; and if Milcha was the eldest of Haran's daughter, she must be begotten before he was of that age.

THAT by Iscah, Sarah is meant Gen. xi. 29. is evident from the text;

and as much is acknowledged by the Jewish and Christian writers.

We do therefore agree with a h learned Jew, that Terah began to beget when seventy years old. That after 60 years he begat Abram; according to which account, when Terah was two hundred and sive years old, Abram was seventy sive: And this is agreeable with the words of St. Stephen.

III. AGAIN, Acts vii. 14. Then sent Joseph and called his father Jacob to him and all his kindred, threescore and sisteen souls. Here the Jews pretend again, that Stephen was mistaken, tho it be said of him that he was full of the HOLY GHOST; for this which he affirms here (say they) agrees not with the account, which we have in the old Testament. Gen. xlvi. For the number that went with Jacob into Egypt amounts not to any more than seventy, tho Joseph and his sons be added to the rest. Besides, they are elsewhere called seventy. Deut. x. And therefore Stephen mistook when he reckoned seventy sive. I answer,

THAT this matter will be best understood by reslecting first upon the account which Moses gives, and then upon the design and words of Stephen;

for the places are not such exact parallels as the Jews fansy.

1. Let us consider what Moses says, and the design of his account. "Tis plain, that Moses designs to give an account of Jacob's whole family, or Jacob and his seed, or as 'tis expressed, such as came out of his loyns. Gen. xlvi. 6, 7, 8, 26. And to this end, that the reader might, by comparing this small number with the great number, which came out of Egypt aster two hundred and sisteen years stay there, and oppression, admire the good providence of God over that people, Moses plainly tells us, That he doth

5 V. M. B. Israel. Conciliat. in Gen. quæst. 1. 35. h M. B. Israel ubi supra. Lust. n. 189. R. Isac, 1. 2. c. 63.

not

not reckon facob's sons wives in this account, ver. 26: but himself and such as proceeded from him; and therefore to make up his sum, he reckons some, that were born in Egypt, as Joseph's sons, &c. because all these belonged to the samily and off-spring of facob, and the purpose of Moses. Pur all together, and reckon facob in, and the number ariseth no

higher than feventy, ver. 27.

2. LET us next consider the design and words of Stephen: He undertakes to tell, not the number of those, who came out of Jacob's loins, much less to compare this number with the number that came out of Egypt (both which Moses lays before his reader) but the number of them whom Joseph called into Egypt; Then sent Joseph and called his father to him, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen souls. So that Stephen speaks of another matter from what Moses mentions; and cannot be supposed therefore to agree with him in the same number. Whereas Moses tells us, how many Jacob and his off-spring or seed amounted to, omitting his sons wives; Stephen tells us how many they were, that Joseph called into Egypt. Some in the list of Moses must be lest out of the number of Stephen. Be it then, that Moses reckons seventy, several of them must be lest out of Stephen's number, as being inconsistent with his design. Joseph and his two sons could not be said to be called into Egypt, who were there already; nor Hezon and Hamul, who were not yet born. Besides this, Jacob is considered here apart, and the seventy five are called besides him. All these belonged to the purpose and number of Moses; but could not to that of Stephen. Be it so then, that the number of Moses amounts to just feventy, and that fix of that number are to be removed from that of Stephen; there will remain fixty four, which Stephen could reckon in his number. To which if we add the eleven wives of the sons of Jacob, we fhall find the whole amount to seventy five.

3. We shall be confirmed in this account, if we look into Genesis, and consider who they were, that were by Joseph called into Egypt. And we shall quickly find, that he did not only call Jacob's seed, or those that proceeded out of his loins, but his whole kindred also, not only the wise, but as 'tis expressed by Stephen, wif I winding. He called Jacob and all that be had, His houshold. Gen. xlv. 10, 11. And Joseph received a particular command from Pharaoh to take waggons, not only for the little ones, but for the wives also, ver. 19. And the sons of Jacob are expressly said to have carried in the waggons, not only their little ones, but their wives, Gen. xlvi. 5. Josephus I reports Joseph's words to his brethren thus, 'Auri's runn is survived it time, is not filled.' Auri's runn is survived it in the waggons, and children, and where he requires them to take their father, their wives, and children, and

all their kindred, and to bring them to him.

4. The wives of Jacob's sons, tho' they were not of his loins, and so not reckoned by Moses among them that were, yet they were of his onfirm, and were among them, whom Joseph called to him with his father into Egypt; and consequently must be taken in to make up the number of St. Stephen, tho' they belonged not to them, who are reckoned up by Moses, Gen. xivi. For they who are there reckoned, are Jacob's off spring, and are by Josephus m called, his in protect and in the during. But the suppose extendeth farther, viz. to his affinity, or his sons wives. Thus the word is used: The father's brother's wife is by the LXXII expressed by suppose Lev. xviii.

<sup>\*</sup> V. Phil. Judæus wegi aweinlas 1 Antiqu. I. 2. c. 3. . . . Antiqu. l. 2. c. 4.

14. thap. xx. 20. And it is said in the story of Jericho, that before the description of that city, they brought out Rahab, her father, and mother, and brethren (that is her yive) and it follows if two prives aris, i. c. her kindred, Jos. vi. 23. And in this sense the word is frequently used in fosephus. In the story of David he tells us, That when Saul offered him his daughter in marriage, David was pleased in thinking him sincere at two prives, in that affinity which he offered. He tells elsewhere that Alexander sent to Ptolomy desiring his daughter in marriage, as not being unworthy, ariskat way irred of contracting that affinity. And Demetrius is said to be to Ptolomy, such to the tells affinis, or kinsman by the marriage of Cleopatra. So that the min survives may well extend to the daughters-in-law of Jacob, or the wives of his sons.

IV. AGAIN, Acts vii. ver. 16. And were carried over into Sychem, and laid in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a sum of mony, of the sons of Emmor the father of Sychem. That Jacob went into Egypt, and he died, and the fathers, Stephen tells in the foregoing words: And of this we have no dispute. But what he affirms in these following words, the o Jews except against. And one of them finds a great many exceptions; and is so confident, as to charge Stephen with six errors or mistakes at once. I shall lay these exceptions fairly before the reader, as I find them in this Jewish writer. (1.) Jacob was not buried in Sychem, as Stephen infinuates, but in the cave of Machpelah. Gen. 1. 13. (2.) Nor were the fathers (Joseph excepted, Josh. xxiv. 32.) buried in Sychem, but in Egypt. (3.) Abraham did not buy Sychem, but Machpelah, Gen. xxiii. 17. (4.) That Abraham bought it not of the ions of Emmor, but of Ephron, Gen. xxiii. 16. (5.) Part of the field of Sychem Jacob bought, not Abraham, Gen. xxxiii. 18, 19. (6.) That in the Greek text, Emmor is said to be the son of Sychem; whereas in truth he was his father. Gen. xxxiii. 19. This is the most, that what he objects amounts unto. And indeed there is a considerable difficulty in the place: But I shall shew that difficulty to be less, than it appears at first fight; and to be no sufficient ground for rejecting the book, where it is found, or any part of it.

I will not keep the method, which the Jew useth in proposing his objections, but shall take care to give an answer to the whole in the following

particulars.

Emmor to be the father of Sychem; and so our English interpreters have it. I grant, that in the Greek, 'tis 'Emplo; \( \frac{\pi}{\pi} \) \text{English} interpreters have it. I grant, that in the Greek, 'tis 'Emplo; \( \frac{\pi}{\pi} \) \text{English} These words by the Vulgar are rendered Hemor filis Sychem. But the the Vulgar, generally speaking is a good version, yet we are not bound to defend it every where: And the words will bear that rendering; yet the subject matter will not. Hence the Jew might take his occasion of excepting against Stephen; but the words of Stephen do not give this occasion. The words are Elliptical; and therefore the supply is to be made by the version: But in the Greek, the expression is such as doth by no means oblige us to receive the version of the Vulgar; for they will bear very well the versions, which our English give. And thus Maeia Taxisco, is truly translated Mary the mother of James. Luk. xxiv. 10. And this version is justified by St. Mark, chap. xv. 40. so that this objection ought to be struck out of the list.

n Antiqu, l. 6. c. 11. & c. 13. l. 13. c. 7. & c. 8. MS. Lusit. n. 190. R. Isac, l. 2. c. 63.
2. Where B-

2. Where As in his fecond exception the Jew affirms, That the fathers (Joseph only excepted, Joseph excepted, Joseph excepted, Joseph exception be never so pertinent or strong; yet it can have no force till it be made good. The Jew is so far from proving what he says, that he doth not attempt it. More still; 'tis impossible, that he should prove that the sathers were buried in Egypt; tho' if he could, we are little concerned in that matter: Because they might for all that be afterward carried into Canaan; and that is it, which St. Stephen affirms. And therefore the Jew ought to prove, that the sathers were buried in Egypt; and which is most to the purpose, that they were not at length carried into Canaan. Instead of this, he only considertly affirms the former.

WE have on the other hand good reason to believe, That the other fathers were carried into Canaan to be buried, as well as Joseph. For no reason can be assigned, why Joseph should desire to be buried there, that was peculiar, and might not as well move the rest of his brethren. That Joseph p predicted the Israelites going out of Egypt, and took ar oath of them concerning his bones, we read: And hence it was very fit, that we should be informed, that the Ifraelites did perform what he so solemnly required; and so we are in the book of Josbua. But the same be not faid of the other fathers; yet we have good reason to believe (had St. Stephen said nothing of it) that they also were buried in the land of Ca-Josephus 9 a very learned Jew, expressly affirms this. He tells us, That Joseph's brethren died; and adds, Kal reme fit no minera, i. e. Their children and off-spring, after this, took their bodies and buried them in Hebron. And in ranother place, where he tells us, that Simon took the city of Hebron, he gives an account of that place: He tells that it was the place where Abraham abode, when he left Mesopotamia; that thence his children went into Egypt હૈંજ છે તમે μπημών μίχει 👫 જાઈ છે જાઈ 📆 જામાં જામ કર્મા જામ કર્મા જામ કર્મા જામ કર્મા જામ છે. છે. i. e. whose sepulchres are now to be seen in this city, &c. They did not stay till the Israelites went out of Egypt, as it was in the case of the bones of Joseph; as we may learn from the same author in the following words. We have another testimony, as old as St. Hierom, of one who saw the sepulchres of the twelve partriarchs, having diverted from Sychem. Had the Jew been just, he ought not to have put his second exception into his list.

3. As for his 'first exception, viz. that Jacob was not buried in Sychem, but in the cave of Machpelah, I grant it to be true; but 'tis nothing to the purpose: Here's nothing in the words of St. Stephen that contradicts it. If the fathers were carried over, which Josephus the Jew says they were, St. Stephen's words cannot, as to that matter, be excepted against. And I appeal to any indifferent man that heeds them.

4. That Abraham did not buy Sychem but Machpelah, is the third of the Jews exceptions. I will not contend with them about this matter, but grant it so to be: I do not see the force of this exception. St. Stephen doth not say that Abraham bought Sychem; but that he bought a sepulchre; and so the Scripture tells us, that he did, Gen. xxiii.

5. What is affirmed by the Jew in the fourth and fifth of his exceptions is also granted to be true, viz. that Abraham bought the sepulchre P Gen. 1. 25. Exod. xiii. 19. Heb. xi. 22. with Josh. xxv. 32.

Bello Judaico, 1. 5. c. 31.

Gen. 1. 13.

Digitized by Google

not

not of the sons of Emmor, but of Ephron. Gen. xxiii. 16. And that Jacob

bought part of the field of Sychem, Gen. xxxiii. 18, 19.

6. ST. Stephen tells us, how they were buried, of whom he speaks; some of them in Sychem with Joseph, others in the sield of Ephron with Jacob: Which reconciles what is above related differently from Josephus and St. Hierom. And allowing the words of St. Stephen to be Elliptical, I shall give the following paraphrase of them, Jacob and our fathers, who died in Egypt, were carried thence unto Sychem: And thus they were disposed of: Jacob and some of our fathers in that sepulchre which Abraham bought for a sum of mony: Others of them were buried with Joseph, in that which was bought by Jacob of the sons of Emmor, the father of Sychem. This is a sair account of the words, without either altering or straining of them: Nor will the Jew have any cause to complain. Here is supposed an Ellipsis of the Copula: And after the word mony; (of which we have an example, Ps. exxxiii. 3.) and of sepulchre, which was mentioned just above: And that is no great matter. They were buried in the sepulchre that Abraham bought, &c. And in that (sc. bought) of the sons of Emmor, the father of Sychem.

V. Acts vii. 42, 43. —— As it is written in the book of the prophets, O ye house of Israel, have ye offered to me slain beasts, and sacrifices by the space of forty years in the wilderness? Tea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the Star of your God Remphan, sigures which ye made to worship them; and I will carry you away beyond Babylon. Here " the few pretends, that St. Stephen hath misrepresented the prophet, and reported the words otherwise than they are in him. But he hath not said wherein he hath mis-represented him: If he had done this, I should have thought my self obliged to have considered his exceptions. "Tis certain, that upon the main matter St. Stephen's words agree with those of the LXXII, which for what appears hath given us the true sense of the Hebrew. It must be consessed, that instead of Damascus, both in the Hebrew and LXXII, St. Stephen hath Babylon. For this difference I must account.

HERE the reader is to consider, that though there be a difference between the words of the prophet and St. Stephen; yet there is no contradiction or inconsistence. The prophet predicts the captivity of the ten tribes; and they were carried captive, not only beyond Damascus, as the prophet predicts, but beyond Babylon, as St. Stephen doth express it. For Assira and Media whither the ten tribes were carried, was beyond Damascus, and Babylon also. As to the matter of fact, the words of St. Stephen are as true as the words of the prophet are; and the event of things

speaks them so to be.

Tis true, that the Jews are threatned in Amos with a captivity beyond Damascus: But how much beyond, the prophet says not: And we may

well suppose more to be meant than is expressed.

Nor will it be hard to assign the cause, why the captivity is thus expressed in Amos. The Israelites had suffered severely from the king of Damascus. Amos i. 3. After this Abaz sent to Tilgath Pileser the Assyrian king, to sight against Israel and the Syrians. 2 King xvi. 5. He did sight against the one and the other, and carried them both captives. 2 Kings xv.

\* R. Isac. 1. 2. c. 64. \*2 Kings xv. 29. xvii. 6.

29. with chap. xvi. 9. He carried away the riches of Damaseus, and the spoil of Samaria. Isa. viii. 4. Tis very probable that the captives of Israel were cartied by him to Damaseus, whose inhabitants he captivated at the same time. For we read, that Ahaz went thither to him, 2 Kings xvi. 10. after his victory. Since then they, who had suffered from Damaseus, and had been led captives thither, might flatter themselves with hopes of return: And since Damaseus was the way to Asserting, and had been a confederate of Israel's, and consequently looked upon by them as a fence; their suture captivity is sitly expressed, by the prophet, by carrying them beyond Damaseus; and after this event as sitly by St. Stephen, by carrying them beyond Babylon; which was the same thing which the prophet meant in the other words.

VI. Acts xiii. 21. And God gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of forty years. Here the recepts against St. Paul, and endeavours to prove, that Saul was so far from reigning forty years, that he thinks it not reasonable to allow him to have reigned ten. For (says the Jew) before Saul's miscarriage in the matter of the Amalekites he reigned but two years: For the proof whereof he alledgeth 1 Sam. xiii. 1. After this miscarriage of Saul's, he was reputed as a man dead, and the years of his reign are not numbred; Samuel upon this anoints David, who (says the Jew) could not at that time be less than twenty years old. 1 Sam. xvi. 18. David after Saul's death was but 30 years old, 2 Sam. v. 4. whence he concludes, that Saul could not reign ten years; when yet St. Paul reports him to have reigned forty. But to this I answer,

1. That what the Jew alledgeth for the proof of his opinion, is insufficient. It doth by no means appear from 1 Sam. xiii. 1. that Saul reigned but two years before his miscarriage in the matter of the Amalekites. The words are these, Saul reigned one year; and when he had reigned two years over Israel, &c. The sense of which words seems to be this: q. d. After the Philistines were subdued by Samuel a year passed; when Saul began to reign: And after this he reigned two years free from their yoke. After this time Saul was brought under by them, and his people in slavery to them: When this yoke was broken upon the victory over the Philistines, its said, So Saul took the kingdom over Israel, i. e. he recovered it again: 1 Sam. xiv. 47. Here's no shadow for that, which the Jew would prove from the words.

2. What the Jew adds, that upon Saul's miscarriage in the matter of the Amalekites Samuel anointed David, is nothing to the purpose; unless he could make it appear in what year of Saul's reign this was done; and from thence shew, that the Apostle speaks inconsistently with the history of Samuel.

3. I shall not deny David to be twenty years old when he was anointed; tho' I do not see how it can be proved from 1 Sam. xvi. 18. Be it so: All this still is nothing to the purpose, for which it is produced; unless it could be proved, that he was anointed in the former part of Saul's reign.

4. CERTAIN it is, that the years of Saul's reign are no where reckoned up in the old Testament: And the Jewish writers are not agreed among

7 R. Isaac. L. 2. c. 67. 2 1 Sam. xiii. 1, 2.

them-

themselves about the number of them. The author 2 of the Seder Olams allows him but two years; and the author 5 of the Juchasin allows him no more: And this proceeds from a mistake of those words 1 Sam. xiii. 1. And we find 6 several others of the Jewish writers objecting against it: And Abarbenel himself allows, that Saul reigned seventeen years: So great a variety is there among the Jewish writers in this matter. Which is a clear argument, that the years of Saul's reign are no where in Scripture expressly mentioned; and consequently, that the Jew had no just cause to sall upon St. Paul as mis-reporting this matter, unless he could have resulted him from some text, or given sufficient proof that he was mistaken. This is a matter, in which the Scripture is silent, and in which the Jews are divided among themselves: And yet Josephus 4 owns, that he reigned forty years; for he says expressly, that he reigned 18 years during Samuel's life, and 22 years after his decease.

s. St. Paul is not to be strained, beyond what his words do amount unto. And though his words at first sight seem to imply, that Saul reigned 40 years, and are very capable of being so understood (nor have we cause from what the Jew hath objected, to disown that sense of them) yet he doth not use such an expression, as is capable of no other sense. He doth not expressly say, that Saul reigned 40 years. The 40 years may refer to those words, Until Samuel the prophet, ver. 20. and the following words may be read in a parenthesis, till these words, by the space of forty years. And then the words are thus to be read, from ver. 20. And after that he gave unto them judges about the space of 450 years; until Samuel the prophet (and afterwards they desired a king; and God gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin) by the space of 40 years. But I take no advantage from this reading; nor am I

under any necessity from what the Jew hath said to fly to it.

6. I shall only add, that 'tis not my purpose to enquire any farther into the number of years which Saul reigned, than I am obliged by the Jew, who makes the above-named objection. I am only obliged to consider the force of his objections, and not to run out in this argument beyond that obligation. Had he thought good to have produced any thing of greater force, it should have been considered. I am well satisfied, that I have abundantly answered his exceptions; and that he hath no cause at all to complain of want of skill or fincerity in the holy Apostle. And tho' the number of years which Saul reigned, is not set down in the old Testament; yet we may collect from it, that he reigned many years longer, than this Jew will allow him. There were no less than three high priests during his reign, Ahiah, Ahimelec, and Abiathar. 1 Sam. xiv. 3. ch. xxii. 20. and ch. xxiii. 9. The last of them officiated before Samuel's death, and consequently a considerable while before Saul's, 1 Sam. xxv. 1. And Saul reigned several years, before we read that Abiah ministred. I Sam. xiii. 1. Again Saul was a young man when he began to reign, I Sam. ix. 2. And yet not so young, but that he had a Son Jonathan a young man of valour, when he had reigned two years, I Sam. xiii. 1, 3. Saul had three other sons, the youngest whereof was called Est Baal, I Chron, viii. 33. and Isb-bosbeth, 2 Sam. iv. 8. He was at Saul's death 40 years old, ver. 10. If Saul reigned not ten years (as this Jew would have it) then must this

Seder Olam c. 13. 5 Juchasin p. 11. V. Gantz. cum Vorst. Abarbenel in 1 Sam. xiii. 1.

4 Antiqu. 1. 6. c. ult.

youngest

youngest of his four sons be above 30 years old, when Saul began to reign; and then 'twill be hard to say, how at that time and age he could be called a young man, when in all likelihood he must be well advanced towards 60 years of age. 'Tis much more probable, that this youngest son was born in the first year of Saul's reign; and perhaps received that name, which speaks defiance to Baal from Saul, who upon coming to the kingdom designed the destruction of the worshippers of Baal.

VII. Acts xvi. 3. ----- And circumcised him because of the Jews which were in those quarters: For they all knew that his Father was a Greek. The Jew e pretends, that St. Paul in circumcifing Timothy acted contrary to the Christian religion; Circumcision being according to the belief of Christians to continue only to the coming of the MESSIAS; and that he is in this matter inconsistent with himself: For elsewhere he says, Is any man called in uncircumcision? Let him not be circumcised. I Cor. vii. And f elsewhere, Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall prosit you nothing. For I testisse again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law. Why then did he circumcife Timothy? And why did not he afterwards oblige him to keep the law of Moses? And why did not he, who was circumcised himself, think himself obliged to keep it? Another Jew s proceeds farther, and chargeth St. Paul and his followers as guilty of hypocrisie, in their compliances with the Jewish rites; and particularly St. Paul here for circumcifing Timothy for fear of the Jews; which he represents as a mean thing, and no way becoming a person inspired, and him who declares, If I yet please men, I should not be the servant of Christ: Gal. i. 10. In a word, he says, that St. Paul did not behave himself as a man sent by God; for he was to the Jews a Jew; of great compliance, and far from the steadiness of a man of God.

In answer whereunto I desire the following particulars may be considered; whence it will appear, that St. Paul did no evil thing and cannot be

justly blamed.

(1.) What the Jew affirms, that Christians believe, that circumcision was to cease upon the coming of Jesus, if by the coming of Jesus he mean his first appearance or birth, we deny, that we are of that belief. Jesus himself was circumcised; nor doth he in any of his sermons or dis-

courses speak against circumcision.

(2.) That circumcision is acknowledged to have been a thing not evil, but in its own nature indifferent; neither required by the Christian religion, nor yet any bar to it, or inconsistent with it. Is any man called being circumcised? Let him not be uncircumcised: Is any called in uncircumcision? Let him not become circumcised. Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping the commandments of God. I Cor. vii. 18, 19. St. Paul else-where declares, that God would justifie the circumcision by faith, and the uncircumcision through faith, Rom. iii. 30.

(3.) That notwithstanding what hath been said, circumcission might be so taught and practised, as to become an evil, and inconsistent with the Christian doctrine. And therefore, for the better comprehending this whole mater, I shall consider, in what cases circumcission, which was no

e R. Haze, l. 2.0. 74, and 85. f Gal. v. 2, 3. s MS. L. n. 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170.

evil thing in it self, became an evil, and inconsistent with the Christian doearine, Viz.

1. WHEN it was urged as a necessary duty, and such as we are obliged to: Then what was in truth but indifferent, was required as indispensably necessary to be done; and that which was only no bar to the Christian religion, was required as a precept of it. This was the way of false teachers, who endeavoured to bring men under a yoke, which our Saviour ne-

ver put upon them. Gal. v. 1. with Acts xv. 1.

2. When 'twas not only required as a duty, but as that without which we cannot be justified and saved. There were those who taught the brethren, Except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved. Acts xv. 1. These men would have put a yoke on the disciples, which God never designed for them; and which was a burdensome one also, and an infraction upon their Christian liberty. Gal. v. 1. Acts xv. 10. And not only so, but it would have subverted the Christian doctrine; according to which, we are justified by faith in Christ Jesus, and not by the works of the law. Christ is become of no effect unto you; whosever of you are justified by the law, ye are fallen from grace, says St. Paul, Gal. v. 4. And he that preached this necessity of circumcission, did at the same time, what in him lay, to subvert the Christan religion, and send men back again to the law of Moses, to be justified by the works thereof.

3. When circumcision was used as a mark to distinguish the Jew from the Christian; and so was used as a special token, to shew what religion a man was of. 'Twas a religious sign under the law of Moses; and intended to distinguish the Jew from the Heathen, and from the other uncircumcised part of mankind. And in this sense circumcision was unlawful to a Christian; because it spake his renouncing Christianity, and adhering to the law of Moses in opposition thereunto. The salse teachers preached up circumcision after the manner of Moses; that is, as it was commanded by him in his law: And there it was used as a note and mark of a Jew; and to distinguish him from all other men, who were of any other religion or profession.

(4.) HENCE it appears, that St. Paul in circumcifing Timothy did nothing contrary to the Christian doctrine: He is very unjustly charged by the Jew on this account. He circumcifed Timothy indeed; but in this he offended against no law; there was no law of Christ, or the church which forbad him. His mother was a Jewess, his father a Greek or Gentile. It might be presumed, that he was not circumcifed: That care belonged to the father; and if he continued uncircumcifed, he would be of no use to him: He circumcifed him, that he might remove the prejudice of the Jews, and render Timothy the sitter instrument to prevail upon them. Here's an argument of St. Paul's great charity; but no shadow of any fault.

(5.) Nor did he offend against the decree of the Apostles. chap. xv. This will plainly appear to any man, that will take the pains to consider that decree. That decree concerned them only, who from among the gentiles were turned unto God. Acts xv. 19, 23. They were not obliged to circumcision upon peril of damnation, ver. 2. They were discharged indeed from any such obligation, as the false teachers would have laid upon them, chap. xxi. 25. And therefore Titus, who was a Greek or gentile, was not

A Acts xy, I,

circumcised, Gal. ii. 3. The circumcising of him might have offended the gentiles; but not the circumcision of Timothy, who was born of a Jewess. He shewed great wisdom and charity; but was guilty of no fault.

(6.) Nor is he in this inconsistent with himself. He did not circumcise Timothy, that he might be justified thereby; so that what he writes to the Galatians, chap. v. 4. is very consistent with what he doth, when he circumciseth Timothy. The Galatians were gentiles, and in no wise under the law, which required circumcision; They renounced Christianity, when they submitted to circumcision in order to be justified thereby. This is plainly the Apostle's meaning: He that among them was circumcised, was supposed to submit to it, that he might be justified by the law. Gal. v. 3, 4. He says indeed, I testissie to every man, that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law. Gal. v. 3. But tis to be considered, to whom he speaks, viz. to the gentiles, who were never under the law of circumcision; and therefore could not be supposed to submit to it, but in order to be justified thereby, and to become Jews. What we render truly enough, That is circumcifed, is rendered by the Vulgar circumcidenti se; so that this Version gives us the sense of the place: Tis every one among them, that voluntarily gives up himself to that yoke, which God never laid upon him; He must be presumed to turn Jew and renounce Christianity. Such a man must be a debtor to the whole law, Non absoluté en genere operis, sed ex intentione operantis. Not that circumcission of its own nature implies so much; but he that in that case submits to it, must be presumed to intend an obedience to the whole law of Moses; i. c. to renounce Christianity and turn Jew.

VIII. I Cor. xv. 54. ---- Then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? Here the few chargeth the Appostle with perverting the Prophet's words, that he might draw them to support his false belief; and to this purpose he refers the reader to the words themselves, as they lie in the old Testament, as a plain proof of the justice of his charge.

In answer whereunto it will be necessary, that we duly consider both the words of the Apostle, and the words of the old Testament to which

they do refer.

(1.) The words of the Apostle. All that he says is, That then shall be brought to pass, in a present the saying that is written, so we render it. Or the thing that is written: For the Hebrew as a well as as fight, signifies not only saying, or word, but thing. The Apostle doth not quote any Prophet; much less doth he pretend to give us the formal words of any writer whatsoever. If we find the thing or substance, of what he alledgeth to his present purpose, we shall be at no loss to defend the Apostle against the Jew. If no such thing was written, we might have some shadow of objection against the Apostle.

dow of objection against the Apostle.

(2.) The words of the old Testament, to which the Apostle doth refer: And here we find two places; which shall therefore be considered sepa-

rately and apart.

THE first of them is Isa. xxv. 8. for those words of the Apostle, Death is swallowed up in victory. This is indeed the xize menusical that the A-1 R. Isac, 1. 2. c. 87.

postle

postle speaks of. Let us see, whether any such thing be written or no. And we shall find it written in the place above mentioned; and that in the Hebrew text also, if we render it, He will swallow up death in victory. The Apostle keeps to the Hebrew text, and doth not follow the LXXII. This is indeed expressed by the Apostle, Death is swallowed up in victory. Nor can any man justly blame the Apostle for using the passive voice; for besides that the Syriac version renders the Hebrew verb by a passive, 'tis certain that there is not any person expressed in the words, as they lie in the Hebrew. And where the person is not expressed, there the word is frequently to be understood in an impersonal or passive signification. Of which matter I have elsewhere spoken more largely. Here is not the least ground for charging the Apostle with perverting the words of the Prophet. Nor doth the Jew attempt to shew, that the Apostle hath misapplyed them; and therefore I am under no obligation to prove them to belong to the matter for which they are produced.

THE second place to which the Apostle is supposed to refer, is Hosea xiii. 14. And the following words of the Apostle refer to it. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? I presume, that the Jew laid the greatest stress and weight upon this place, because of the difference between the words in the Apostle, and the words as they lie in the Prophet. For in the Prophet, these are the words, O death, I will be thy plagues; O grave, I will be thy destruction. In answer where-

unto,

r. I subjoin, That the Apostle doth not cite any prophet for these words, nor so much as insinuate, that he takes these words from the old Testament. The saying that is written is, Death is swallowed up in victory: And that this is written, I have shewed before. There is no necessity, that what follows should be written also. And 'tis a great folly to charge the Apostle with misquoting and perverting, where it doth not plainly ap-

pear, that he so much as quotes at all.

2. A LLOWING that he quotes (which can never be proved) or rather refers to Hosea xiii. yet 'tis certain, that he hath not perverted, nor so much as mis-represented the sense of that place. This will appear to any man, that will look over the words, and compare them diligently. 'Tis true indeed, that what in the Hebrew is 'in, and we translate I will be; St. Paul expresseth by and we render by where, a note of interrogation. And this is the most considerable difficulty in this matter: Hence some men perhaps may be forward to accuse the Apostle of mistake and precipitancy, in taking one word for another, viz. 'In which signifies I will be, for which signifies where. But these men are too forward: St. Paul may be justified before all the world in this matter: For 'tis certain, that in the commonly signifies I will, or I will be; yet it sometime signifies the same with it as it hath the same letters with it always. We have an instance Hosea xiii. 10. where in is rendred to the same sense, and Chaldee

AFTER all, 'tis certain the sense is the same; and the place of Hoses contains a promise. The Jew can never shew, that 'twas suffilled either in the two tribes or the ten. And St. Paul is so far from perverting the place, that 'twill be hard to find any sense so agreeable as his. Not now

to

to mention, that some of the Hebrew doctors teach, that the place in Hofea refers to the days of the MESSIAS.

IX. GAL. iii. 16. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one; And to thy seed, which is Christ. The Jew pretends, that St. Paul shews want of skill or something worse, when he lays a stress upon the singular number; and thence infers the promise to belong particularly to Christ. For the genius of the Hebrew language requires the singular number; but then 'tis as evident, that the word is used of great numbers, e. g. I will make thy seed as the dust of the earth. Gen. xiii. 16. Again, Tell the stars, if thou be able to number them. It follows, and he said unto him, So shall thy seed be, chap. xv. 3. So that in the words of the Apostle there is no argument or force at all; since the Hebrew word, which signifies seed, is a collective word and extends to many. I answer,

1. That the word feed is not always taken collectively, in the old Teffament, but sometimes for one individual person. Not to insist upon Gen. iii. 15. where the Messias is promised under the character of the seed of the woman; Seth is called another seed, chap. iv. 25. And Abram said, To me thou hast given no seed, i. c. no one to inherit. chap. xv. 3. To which may be added, chap. xxxviii. 8, 9. But the few did not think sit to take notice of this, when he formed his objection; which would have

abated the force of it.

2. No R do we want other good authorities to justifie the Apostle against the aforesaid objection. The lauthor of the Seder Olam, having occasion to mention those words of God to Abraham, Gen. xv. 13. Know of a surety, that thy seed shall be a stranger, &c. 'ואי ורן: וכו' And (says he) What is this seed? He answers, This is Isaac, as it is said, In Isaac sball thy seed be called. chap. xxi. 12. Here we see, that the word seed is limited and restrained. Maimonides m hath a remarkable passage to my prelent purpole. His words are these המילה: וכו', i. e. Circumcision was commanded to Abraham and his seed only; as it is written, Thou and thy seed after thee. The seed of Ishmael is excused: For of Isaac it is written, In Isaac shall thy seed be called. Esau is excused: For behold Isaac Paid unto Facob, God give the blessing of Abraham to thee and to thy seed with thee. So that upon the whole matter, that alone is the seed of Abraham, who observes his law, and continues in his righteous steps; and these are they which are obliged to circumcision. Here seed is restrained and limited to Isaac, which may justifie the Apostle's way of speaking. Moreover, they are said to be Abraham's seed, who tread in his steps, and observe his discipline; which is very agreeable to what is taught in the new Testament. See Galat. iii. 9. John viii. 39. And very agreeable also to the notion among the Hebrews, who allow him to be our father, whom we imitate, tho' we were not born of him: A remarkable place to this purpose is what we read Ezek. xvi. 3. compared with Isaiah i. 10. Thus also,

#### Nec tibi diva parens, generis nec Dardanus auctor.

\* R. Isac. 1.2. c. 90. 1 Seder Olam Rab. c. 3. m H. Melakim & Milcham, c. 10. n Gen. xviii. 10, 21. Gen. xxi. 12. 4 Gen. xxviii. 4.

3. That supposing the word feed was always a collective word; yet still ought not the Apostle to be blamed, as he is by the objector. For when he says, Which is Christ; we are not to infer, that by Christ he means the person of Christ; we are not to infer, that by Christ he means the person of Christ only; but his mystical body the church also; the whole being denominated from the head, the principal part. And as in the old Testament, by Israel and Ephraim, are not always meant those individual persons known by those names, but their posterity and people; so by Christ is meant, not his person only, but his followers. Thus is Christ taken collectively, as comprehending his members, or the whole church, I Cor. xii. 12. Which is his body; the fulness of him that filleth all in all. Eph. i. 23.

12. Which is his body; the fulness of him that filleth all in all. Eph. i. 23.
4. 'T is certain, that Abraham a had a double seed. Not only Isaac the feed of the promise, but Ishmael who was born after the flesh; not only a carnal feed, which the Jews themselves were; but a spiritual one, which the gentiles were by faith in CHRIST. For those, that follow the faith of Abraham, are his children. Gal. iii. 7, 29. Isaac was a type of CHRIST; and they who came from him, obtained the letter of the promise: But the myflical and more spiritual part of the promise was reserved to Abraham's spiritual seed, i.e. the followers of his faith. This belongs no more to Abraham's carnal feed, than the promised land did to the posterity of Ishmael. The promise was never promiseuously given to all, that were descended from Abraham, or to his feeds that were divers from one another; but to his feed: i. e. The mystical and spiritual promise was made to his spiritual seed. This is that which the Apostle teacheth; and 'tis certain, that the promise was not made to all his feed. The autho shift the atorcibit objection.

X. Eph. iv. 8. And gave gifts unto men. Here the Jew chargeth the Apostle again, with perverting the words which he quotes; where instead of gave we find received: and infinuates, that he doth this to serve his cause. I answer,

THAT it cannot be imagined, that the Apostle should pervert the words of the Pfalmist to serve his cause. Here's no shadow for such a pretence, because there was no need of it at all: And had he perverted the Pfalmist's words, it would have been a great difference to his cause.

2. The few hath no cause to object this against the Apostle, because their own Chaldee paraphrast will justifie him. For he turns the Hebrew word, by a Chaldee that signifies giving; and he cannot be supposed to do it to serve a cause. Besides, the Syriack, Ethiopick, and Arabick versions go the same way: And whatever authority these versions may have, I am

fure, that the Jew ought not to reject that of the Targumist.

3. He that receives gifts for men, is supposed to give them also to them: for whom he receives them: And he that gives them, is supposed to have received them for that purpose. Here's nothing in the words of the Apostle which clasheth with those of the Psalmist. The Psalmist's words are a prediction, and were written long before they were suffilled; the Apostle's words were written after this prediction was suffilled: Then these gifts were not only received, but were actually given and bestowed upon men. If the Psalmist mentions the receiving these gifts, the Apostle doth not only imply that, but he tells us, that they were actually given and bestowed.

4. Tis highly probable, that as the same word among the Arabs signifies both to receive and to give (as sa learned man hath observed) so doth

9 Gal. iv. 23. R. Isac. l. 2, c. 91. f Dr. Poccok's Miscell. p. 24.

the

the Hebrew pp also. This may well be admitted in the Hebrew language, considering the narrowness of that tongue, and consequently the variety of significations of one and the same word; and that receiving for, and giving, are relatives to each other. But besides all this, some passages in the old Testament give us ground to believe thus; e.g. Speak unto the children of Israel, in that they bring me, so we render it; Elijah aid to the widow in the children, we render it: Da mihi, says the Vulgar. Thus in we render fetch me; and the Vulgar, affer. This will abundantly justifie our Apostle here, against the imputation of perverting the words of the Psalmist.

XI. Heb. i. 5. Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee. The Jew, pretends, that these words, being spoken of king David, can afford no proof for the Christians: And he refers his reader to what he hath z elsewhere discoursed to this purpose upon Acts xiii. 33. where these words are produced as a proof of the resurrection of Christ. In which place he labours to prove the words to be meant of David, the Lord's anointed; and boldly affirms, That the Psalm, whence these words are taken, cannot belong to Jesus; who because he says he came to minister, and not to be ministered unto, cannot therefore be the Messias; who was promised the heathen for his inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth

for his possession. I answer,

I. THAT whatever reference the second Psalm may have to David, 'tis most certain, that it belongs to the MESSIAS. For the truth of this I appeal to the Jews themselves; I make no doubt, but this was the sense of the ancient Jews; and notwithstanding all the shuffling of the latter Hews, we have still cause to believe the P falm to be understood of the MESSIAS. I know very well the artused by their later writers, to apply the whole to David; but when they use this art, they do at the same time give us cause to believe, that they in this matter desert the tradition of their fathers. Maimonides a understands those words, Thou art my son, &c. of the Messias. And by the anointed, ver. 2. the Jewish masters understood king M Essi As, says & Kimchi. And where it is said, Ask of me, ver. 8. the Jews refer it to MESSIAS. And the author of the Midrash on the Psalms, after all his shuffling, when he comes to those words, Ask of me, tells us of R. Jochanan, who said, There were three men whom God allowed to Ask of him: viz. Solomon I Kin. iii. 5. Ahaz, Isa. vii. 7. And king MESSIAS here, ver. 8. Ask of me. R. Solomon tells us expressly, That their Doctors expound the second Pfalm of king MESSIAS; but for all that he thinks it convenient to expound it literally of David, and that המינים, That they might be enabled to answer hereticks, as they call the Christians: For it is observed in a former edition, the Rabbi had added those words. Upon the whole, we fee the Jews will not slick to depart from the faith and tradition of their doctors, where it is to the weakening of Christians. However from this it appears, that this Psalm hath been by the Jews understood of the MESsins; and that therefore the Apostle deserveth no centure for applying

Digitized by Google

<sup>\*</sup> Exod. xxv. 2. " I Kings xvii. 10. \* Gen. xxvii. 13. 

\* Cap. 68. 

\* Sanhedr. c. 10. 

\* Kimchi in Pfal. ii. 

\* Jalcut in loc. 

\* Midrafh

Tillim. Rashi in loc. 

\* V. Dr. Pocock's Not. Miscell. p. 207.

the text to that matter; upon which account he is accused by R. Isaac in the objection.

- 2. As for what is said, Acts xiii. 33. where these words of the Psalmist are alledged as a proof of the resurrection of Christ, it hath been considered already. And for that reason I passed it by, when I took notice of some objections against that book. I have there shewed that these words, This day have I begotten thee, are justly applied to the resurrection of Christ. I have there shewed the great affinity between the womb and the earth; and that there is nothing said by the Apostle on that occasion, but what is agreeable to the way of speaking among the Jews. To what was there said, I add, what one of the Jewish authors observes: He tells us, That the Rabbins ask the reason, why the grave and womb are joined together: Prov. xxx. 16. And the answer is, Because they both make returns alike of living creatures; the womb sends forth living animals; and the grave in the resurrection doth so to. Birth and resurrection have a great affinity one with another.
- 3. And whereas he pretends, that Jesus cannot be the Messias, because he ministred, and because the Heathen were not his inheritance, nor the ends of the earth his possession; these objections would lie stronger against David. Jesus did indeed minister, before he made his solemn entrance upon his kingdom. After this the gentiles submitted to him, and he was owned to be the king among many nations. And if there be some number, who own him not to this day; yet many of those very countries have owned him. For their sins and apostacy those nations are over-run with insidels; and that great defection is foretold in the new Testament. And we are not without hope still, that all the kingdoms of the world will become the Lord's and his Christ's.

XII. HEB. ii. 7. Thou madest him a little lower that the angels; with ver. 9. where 'tis said, That Jesus was made a little lower than the angels. The Jew s pretends, that the writer of this epistle is inconsistent with himself: For in the foregoing chapter he extols Jesus, and h sets him above the angels, and applies those words to him, Let all the angels of God worship him. And yet here he placeth him a little lower than the angels. If this latter be true, 'tis not possible that the angels should worship him. Besides, the Jew pretends, that this writer depraves the words of the Psalmist; in applying them to Jesus; whereas the Psalmist represents the common condition of mankind in general, in the Psalm where these words are found; and therefore the words do not belong to the matter, to which they are applied. To which I answer,

1. 'T is very evident, That there is no inconsistence between chap. i. 6. and chap. ii. 7. And this will appear, if we will be at the pains to consider with due application of mind the words above cited. We will begin with cap. i. There Christ is mentioned under the characters of the Son of God, the Heir of all things, by whom God made the worlds; as the brightness of his glory, the express image of his person, and one who upholds all things by the word of his power, and who sits on the right hand of the majesty on high, and who had by inheritance a more excellent name than the angels. ver. 2, 3, 4. And then he proceeds to shew, how the an-

e Part I. Chap. VIII. f Menast. B. Israel, de Resur. l. 1. c. 3. sest. 4. 8 R. Isaac, l. 2. c. 96. h Heb. i. 6.

gels

gels of GDD were to worship him; as it is written, Pfalm xcvii. 7. But as CHRIST is thus considered in the First chapter as a divine person, and exalted to GoD's right hand; so in the Second he is considered as cloathed with our sless (and consequently our infirmities) and obnoxious to death: Upon which account he was indeed made lower that the angels, who are not encompassed with our mortal sless and instrmities. And in this sense he is said to be made lower or inserior to the angels, and that Besnin, for a little space of time; or as it is ver. 9. Sai to midnum ? Suratro, i. e. by the suffering of death.

2. As for the few's pretence, that the words of the Psalmist are misapplied, I am not bound to consider it, any farther than he gives something of proof to that purpose. But he is so far from this, that we have nothing but his bare word, that the Psalm represents the common condition of mankind. He should have shewed, that it is to be understood in no other sense,; and that the words cannot be applied to the Messias, as they

are by the author of this epistle.

XIII. HEB. viii. 8, &c. For finding fault with them, he faith, Behold the days come (faith the LORD) when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with house of Judah. This place is quoted from Jer. xxxi. to the confirming of the Christian doctrine. The Jew pretends, that it is nothing to the purpose, for which it is produced. The new covenant (he says) doth not import a new law (that not being the necessary import of the word covenant, as he doth by several instances endeavour to prove) but the putting the law (which they had received before) into their inward parts. To which I answer,

1. THAT it matters not, whether the word covenant do necessarily import as much as law. Be it so, that the word doth not always imply

such a sense; yet

2. It is enough to our present purpose, if in this place it be taken in that sense. And that the word covenant in the prophet Jeremiah (in the place here referred to) signifies law, will appear to him, that considers the words of the prophet. There it appears, that the new covenant, which God will make, is opposed to that covenant, which he had made with their sathers, when he brought them out of Egypt, ver. 31, 32. That covenant they brake; as 'tis expressly said there: And that 'twas the law, which they transgressed, is evident. And therefore the new covenant must also be a new law, which God promiseth in that place.

XIV. HEB. x. 5. Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he faith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not; but a body hast thou prepared me. The few k here finds great fault with the author of this epistle, for corrupting the place which he pretends to quote from the fortieth Psalm, that it may seem to serve the purpose, to which he cites it; for the words in the Psalm (says he) are these; Sacrifice and offering thou didst not desire, mine ears hast thou opened, &c. The meaning of which (says he) is q. d. Thou hast opened mine ears to hear thy voice. This is that, which God required of them, that were assembled at mount Sinai, Exod. xix. 5. This is repeated by feremiah, as God's command to them; Obey my voice, Jer. vii. 23. And this is preferred before sacrifices; To obey is better

i R. Isac. 1. 1. c. 29. k R. Isac. 1 2. c. 98. 1 Pfal. xl. 6.

than

Than facrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams. I Sam. xv. 22. The few adds, That 'tis probable, that the author of this epifle did designedly corrupt the text, when instead of Mine ears hast thou bored, he substituted, A body hast thou prepared me; to maintain the belief, that the body of Jesus was offered instead of a sacrifice; which he is pleased to call a shameful belief. Thus stands the author of this epifle charged by the few. To which I answer in the following particulars; which, if duly considered, will abundantly remove the few's objection. And to that purpose,

I. I shall consider the place, as it is in the *Pfalmist*, and lies in the *Hebrew* text; and shall explain the meaning of the words. What in this place is expressed by, *A body hast thou prepared me*, is in the *Pfalmist* expressed by, *Mine ears hast thou opened*, or *bored*: And I shall consider the

import of this expression in the Psalmist.

THE Jewish writers understand the boring, or opening the ear, to import obedience to the divine precepts; which in it self, and as it is here in the Psalmist, is more valuable than sacrifices in the sight of God. The truth of this is unquestionable; and we do agree with the Jews in this inter-

pretation.

Bur this matter may receive a farther illustration, if we reflect upon a passage in the law of Moses. It was provided by that law, that the Hebrew servant should be set at liberty in the seventh year: But if it happened, that a servant loved his master, and refused his liberty, his master, after he had brought him to the judges, was obliged m to bore his servant's ear with an awl; who was thereupon obliged to ferve him for ever. This boring the ear was a mark of servitude and obedience: And so 'tis to be understood in the Psalm, and 'tis to that sense interpreted by the Chaldee paraphrast upon the place. By this rite or ceremony the servant declared, That he was addicted to the service and obedience of his master. He was marked as his servant; and received in his body (which was at his master's disposal) this token of his subjection. And this was very fitly done by boring the ear, because the servant is obliged to have his ear open to his master's commands: And to hear (which we do by the ear) and to obey, is in the Hebrew tongue expressed by one and the same word. Twas the custom of old to mark the bodies of servants, as we now do those of beasts, to denote their state and low condition, and their relation to their lord, and his service. It was forbidden by the law of n Moses to make cuttings in the flesh, or print any marks: And this is reckoned by o Maimonides, as forbidden under the general prohibition of idolatry. He describes the manner of making those marks in the flesh; and thereupon tells us expressly, That by making such incisions and marks in their bodies, the heathens did declare themselves the servants of their idol; he that was thus marked, his mark did denote שהוא עבר מכור לה' ומורשם לעבורתה i. e. That he was fold for a servant to the idol, and marked for the worship of it. And among the Eastern people this was done by boring the ear; as appears from that of p the Satyrist, where he brings one that had been a servant, thus speaking,

Cur timeam, dubitemve locum defendere; quamvis Natus ad Euphratem? Molles quod in aure fenestræ Arguerint, licèt ipse negem.

m Exod. xxi. 2, 6. n Lev. xix. 28. with chap. xxi. 5. Maimon. H. Avod. Zar. cap. 12. P Juvenal, Sat. 1. Upon

Upon the whole matter then, we are agreed with the Jews in the main import of the words, as they imply a ready obedience to Go D's will; expressed by boring the ear, with allusion to the custom above mentioned.

2. It is very evident, that the author of this epiftle agrees in fense with the Psalmist; and however in expression he differs from the Hebrew text of the Psalmist; yet he cannot without notorious injustice be accused of perverting the sense of the place to which he refers. Both Jews and Christians agree, That the words in the Psalmist import this sense, That obedience is better than sacrifice: And to this sense they are applied by the author

of this epistle.

MOREOVER, the words made use of by the author of this epistle, are very expressive of the sense and meaning of the words of the Psalmist, as they lie in the Hebrew text. The meaning of those words, Mine ears hast thou opened, hath been given already. A body hast thou prepared me, as the author of this épistle recites the place, imports the very same sense. To this purpose 'tis to be considered, not only that the body is only capable of servitude, and of receiving the marks and characters of it; but also that the Greek word sous, i. e. body, used here by the author of this epistle, doth import among the ancient Jewish writers, as much as a servant or captive, who is altogether at the beck and will of his lord. I say among the Fewisb writers; for that is most material to my present purpose. Thus we read in the book of a Tobit, that Raguel gave unto Tobias, his wife Sarah, and half his goods, zaluala, i. e. fervants, and cattel, and mony. The author of the book of Maccabees tells us, that Nicanor proclaimed a sale, 'Indicate i. e. bodies, or fervants for one talent. Josephus the Jewish historian mentions an edict of Ptolemaus Philadelphus, in favour of the Jews, where he mentions the simple dixuitible, that is, the captive servants, taken from Judea in his father's time; and declares what should be given by way of ransome. in index minis, i. e. for each captive or servant. Agreeably hereunto we render minish by slaves; and St. Paul speaking of CHRIST'S incarnation tells us, he took upon him u the form of a servant. And A body hast thou prepared me, is an expression very agreeable to this state or condition of a fervant.

3. As the author of this epiftle agrees in sense with the Hebrew text of the Psalmist; so he useth the very same words, that are made use of by the LXXII interpreters, in the Psalm from whence this place is quoted. He doth but use a translation commonly received and understood, and written in that language in which his epiftle is also written: And this may justifie this author to all impartial men. It being the custom of the gentiles to mark the bodies of their servants, and the Hebrew custom of boring the ear not being so generally known, it no wonder, that the Greek interpreters, to render the phrase more universally understood, should render, Mine ears hast thou bored, by, A body hast thou prepared me. And there is less reason still, why this author should be blamed for using the very words, which these interpreters had made use of before him.

4. THERE is no shadow of reason, why this author should be accused, as having designedly corrupted the text to serve a turn and purpose, when its manifest, that he could not be guilty of any such design: For the serie is

the

## [92] A DEMONSTRATION PARTIL

the same of the Hebrew text, and the words, which this author uses: And besides, his words are the very same with those of the LXXII.

5. The Jew, had he spoken to the purpose, should have proved, that the Psalm, from whence these words are cited, had no reference to the Messias, and that these words ought not to be accommodated to this matter. But he lets that matter alone; and therefore I cannot be obliged to follow him any farther, than he thinks sit to lead me in this matter.

XV. JAMES ii. 24. Te see then, that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. The few \* pretends, that what is delivered in these words, is contradicted by St. Paul; who teacheth, that a man is justified by faith wi hout the deeds of the law. Rom. iii. 28. with Galat. ii. 16. Hence the few infers, that there is no truth in the words of Apostles, who contradict one another.

In answer whereunto, I desire the following particulars may be considered; from whence it will appear, that St. Paul and St. James do not contradict one the other.

(1.) What those works are, which St. Paul excludes from having any hand in our justification: And they are the deeds of the law; and what these deeds or works of the law are, is to be considered more particularly. By these works of the law in St. Paul's dispute with the Jews, must be meant the works of the law of Moses, as they are opposed to evangelical obedience or faith in Christ; as it is evident from the Apostle's words, when he says, Aman is justified by faith without the works of the law; where 'tis plain, that the works of the law are opposed to faith. The utmost that can be meant by the works of the law, which are excluded from justifying us by St. Paul, is reducible to two heads.

1. RIGOROUS and exact obedience to the precepts of the law of Mofes. These are properly speaking the works of the law in St. Paul: As many as are under the works of the law, are under the curse: For it is written Cursed is every one, that continueth not in all things, which are written in the book of the law to do them. Gal. iii. 10. with Deut. xxvii. 26.

2. By the works of the law is meant the observation of the legal rites and ceremonics; which some of the Jews urged upon Christians as necessary to justification, in conjunction with their faith. Thus was circumcission taught as necessary to salvation, Acts xv. 1. These works of the law the Apostle allows not to have any share in our justification. Christis become of none effect to you (says St. Paul to the Galatians) whosoever of you are justified by the law, ye are fallen from grace, Gal. v. 4. And a little before, If you be circumcised, Christist solutions, were

(2.) WHAT those works are, by which a man is said to be justified in

St. James: And,

First, I shall shew, that by the works in St. James are not meant the works of the law mentioned by St. Paul; and that therefore they do not contradict one another, as is pretended by the Jew. I have already shewed, that St. Paul speaks of the works of the law of Moses; and he calls them the works, or deeds of the law. But doth St. James call his works the works of the law also? By no means. He discourses against the Soli-fidian; the preten-

\* R. Isaac, l. 2. c. 92.

Digitized by Google

der to faith, who was void of charity and the other graces, and effects, that attend upon a faving faith. He shews, that such a bare and solitary faith shall not save him: And that it is necessary, that there be charity and evangelical obedience or good works, which are indispensably necessary, before we can be justified or saved; That faith, which is destitute of good works, doth not justifie: Good works I say. But what is this to those, which St. Paul calls the works of the law? The good works, which St. James speaks of, are the produce of a true faith; Charity ver. 15, 16. a ready obedience to God's voice, ver. 21. a constant affiance in God, and compliance with his will, ver. 23, 25. These are not the works of the law, but the hearing (or obedience) of faith. Gal. iii. 2. This is plain from the text of St. James. Let us consider what works he mentions. He doth not mention circumcision or legal washings: These are works of the law. He mentions charity and beneficence, ver. 16. which is a great effect, and a constant companion of faith, Gal. v. 6. He mentions Abraham's offering up Isaac. But this could be none of the deeds of the law, which was not yet given. 'Twas an act of faith, and so it is said to be ver. 23. Rahab's was also no work of the law of Moses, (which she was a stranger to) 'twas an act of faith, *Heb.* xi. 31.

Secondly, By the works in St. James must be meant evangelical obedience, or the obedience of faith. This in some measure appears from what hath been said before: And from hence it appears farther, because St. James all along impugns a bare and solitary faith only: And therefore must be understood of those works, which do accompany a lively faith. And then he is so far from contradicting St. Paul, that he persectly agrees with him. For it cannot reasonably be supposed, that when St. Paul imputes our justification to faith, he should exclude those good works, which faith produces, and which are essential to it, and involved in it. The works of St. James are the same with the faith of St. Paul. And the faith of St. Paul, excludes only the deeds of the law; but not the obedience of that faith: For then he would exclude the essentials of faith. And St. Paul would then have excussed us from good works; which he is so far from, that he always pressent us to them.

(3.) It is to be considered, in what sense it may be said, We are justified by works, in St. James. What those works are, hath been explained, viz. evangelical obedience, or the fruits of a saving saith. By these we are justified; not by virtue of a covenant of works, but by a covenant of grace, and through the divine acceptance. These works do not merit our justification; but are a condition on our part, that gives us a title to the merits of Jesus Christ. Tis enough, that our saith in Jesus, and our sincere (tho not sinless) obedience is so far accepted of God, that he esteems us righteous thereupon. \*

XVI.

<sup>\*</sup> However let us suppose, that St. Paul and St. James by works do mean the same thing, viz. evangelical obedience, or such good works as do proceed from a true saith in Christ Jesus. In this sense we may say with St. Paul, that a man is justified by faith without any such works, and also with St. James, that notwithstanding all this, yet a true saith will be shown or manisested by such works as these. In this sense our church seems to take the doctrine of justification as mentioned by St. Paul, as appears in her eleventh article. We are accounted righteous before God, only for the merit of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ by saith, and not for our own works, or deservings. Wherefore, that we are justified by faith only, is a most wholesome dostrine, and very full of comfort, as more largely is expressed in the homily of justification. And in the beginning of the same homily the saith, No man can by his own asts, works, and deeds, seem they never never so good be justified and made righteous before God: But every man of necessity is constrained to seek for another righteousness of justification.

fication to be received of God's own bands, that is to say, this forgiveness of his sins and trespasses, in such things as he bath offended. And this justification or righteousness, which we so receive of God's mercy and Christ's merits embraced by faith, is taken, accepted, and allowed of God for our perfect and full justification. Thus in our liturgy we daily confess to God, That there is no health in us; Nulla est salus in nobis. We are not able to save, bely, or deliver our selves by any thing in our selves, and therefore we pray to God to have mercy upon us miserable sinners, according to his promises declared unto mankind in Christ Jesus our Lord. And that St. Paul's words, Rom. iii. 28. may be also understood in this larger sense, is evident from verse 31. where he adds, Do we then make woid the law through faith? God forbid. He did preach down circumcision, because Christ would now no longer have a distinction between Jew and Gentile: He did absolutely preach down the covenant of works, and only depended on the covenant of grace. He did preach down all the L vitical law, the sacrifices and outward ceremonies, because C HR; s.T. the substance was exhibited. He desired to be found in C HR; s.T., not baving his own righteousness, which was by the law, but that which was by the faith of C HR; s.T., even the righteousness which is of G o D by faith. And Alls xv. 1, 2. when certain men taught the brethren and said, Extept ye be circumcifed after the manner of Moses, and ver. 5. keep the law, ye cannot be saved. St. Paul himself had no small different and disputation with them, he went to Feusalem to the apostles and elders to lay the controversy before them, and desire their determination, which they did accordingly, that there was no such necessity, that it was a putting a yole upon the necks of others, which neither they nor their fathers were able to bear, and that the scaces had troubled others with words subverting their souls, saying, Te must be circumcifed, and keep the law, to whom they had given no such commandment. St. Paul carried this determination back to Antioch, and when this heads forces farther, he wrote the epistes to the Galatians and Colossinas on thresholds. tioch, and when this herely spread farther, he wrote the epistles to the Galatians and Colossians on purpose to consute it, in both which he endeavours by many arguments to make void all the Levitical and ceremonial law through faith in Christ Jesus. But did be endeavour to make void any part of the moral law, or of the precepts of the golfel through faith? God forbid. He was so far from that, that be established all these laws. He persuaded them to yield obedience upon more forcible arguments, and stronger motives than ever was urged before. The grace of God, which bringeth salvation, bath appeared unto all men, teaching us, that denying ungodiness and wordly lusts, we should live g dly, righter oully and soberly in this present world, Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our saviour Jesus Christs, who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify to himself a peculiar people, realous of good works. So that, the what this right reverend Prelate hath observed, is enough to thence any sew; yet I hope it will not be amiss to add something more for the satisfaction and confirmation of a Christian: St. Paul having therefore declared fomething more for the satisfaction and confirmation of a Christian: St. Paul having therefore declared his mind most fully in this great doctrine of justification, that it came through faith alone, without any thing which we can perform; it may well be reckoned as one of those doctrines which at any thing which we can perform; it may well be reckoned as one of those doctrines which at that time was bard to be understood, and which they who were unlearned and unstable did wrest, as they did also the other scriptures to their own destruction. Accordingly the Consticts soon sprang up in the church, who taught from hence, that men should be saved by their knowledge only, tho' they lived as they thought sit, neglecting the commands of God, and indulging themselves in all manner of sin and licentiousness. St. James therefore in this epistle sets himself to consute this dangerous heresy. St. Paul saith, Fides sola justificat, saith alone justifies. To this St. James adds, Sed non sides, que est sola. But not that saith, which is alone. St. Paul saith, That we are justified by a true saith. St. James gives us an infallible sign, by which we may know, that it is true. If it is a justifying saith, it will be lively and active, and provoke us to good works. Faith and works are as inseparable as the light and heat in the sun. We see and believe those things to be real, which we see by the benefit of the light alone, and the heat contributes nothing to it. But if we see by virtue of the light, we shall also be warmed by the virtue of the heat. We are justified by that faith, whereby we lay hold on Christ as our priest, to satisfie the divine justice for our sine fied by that faith, whereby we lay hold on Christ as our prieft, to fatisfie the divine justice for our fine thed by that faith, whereby we lay hold on Christ as our prieft, to fatisfie the divine juffice for our fine to reconcile us to God, and make intercession for us. But this can never be effectual, unless we also take him for our king to rule and govern us, and require an exact obedience to his laws. Accordingly tho' St. Paul and St. James may speak of the same works, and so they may seem to differ; yet the difference is easily reconciled, when we consider, that they speak of a different momen of pussion. By faith alone weapprove our selves, or are justified in the sight of God, and this St. Paul continually testifies. But by works alone we are justified or approve our selves in the sight of men, and therefore St. James adds, Tea, a man may say, Thou half faith, and I have works: Show me thy faith without thy works, and I will show theen my faith by my works. Or thus, By faith show we are justified before God, as St. Paul assures us. But our good works are an undentable evidence to our own consciences of a true saith, and thereby we affure our selves, that we shall be justified by faith. God knew the saith of Abraham and of Rabab long before, which are two instances that St. ames alledges; but the offering up of slaac, and the hiding of the spiece, must be a convincing argument to both, that their faith or trust in God's promites was real and not seigned. Our country in Mr. Burkitt writes most excellently on this subject, in his expository notes upon St. James. Our Aposite (saith he) shows the vanity of a fruitles faith, that such a faith as is not the parent and principle of obedience, and productive of good works is altogether ineffectual and unprestable. Saith of no kind, when it is alone, is justifying. As there can be no good works without faith; so where true faith is, it will be fruitful in good works, otherwise faith, to more faith. No believing without obedience will avail us. Iberefore St. Paul and St. James both agree together to render to faith the things that are faith's, and not to take away from wo to reconcile us to God, and make intercession for us. But this can never be effectual, unless we also

of our persons: St. James of the justification of our saith. 2. They do not speak issuem to the same persons. St. Paul had to do with salse Apostles, and Judaizing Christians, who sought to substitute the works of the law, and a righteousness of their own instead of, or at least in conjunction with the grace of God; but St. James had to do with hypocritical prosessors, who abused St. Paul's dostrine of free grace, and took encouragement to sin, assuming, that if they believed, it was sufficient, no matter how they lived; therefore St. James urges the necessary of good works, as evidences of the since-rity of our saith. The sum of the matter is this, What God bath joyned, none must divide, and what God bath divided, none must joyn. He hath separated saith and works in the husiness of justification according to St. Paul, and we must not separated faith and works in the lives of justification according to St. Paul, and we must not some must not separate them. St. Paul assures us, that works have not a co-efficiency in justification it self; but St. James assures us, that they may and ought to have a co-existency in them that are justified.

XVI. REVEL. vii. 5, 6, 7, 8. Of the tribe of Juda were, &c. The writer of this book reckons up the several tribes of Israel. The Jew , finds great fault with him in this matter. He charges him with forgetfulness, in not making mention of the tribe of Dan; and for putting Manasseb in the stead thereof, though be were otherwise included in the mention of Joseph. Hence he concludes, that the writer of this book (whom he is pleased to call the writer of dreams) did not so much as understand (what children commonly do) the names of the tribes of Israel. And hence he takes an occasion to inveigh against the writers of the new Testament, as ignorant men, and unacquainted with the writings of the old Testament.

In answer to this severe charge, I desire, that the following particulars

may be duly considered.

1. It will be granted by the Jew, that Moses well knew the names of the children of Israel; and yet when he undertakes to bless them, Deut. xxxiii. he makes no mention of Simeon, when he makes particular mention of all the rest. I hope, that the Jew will not charge him with forgetfulness, or ignorance. And whereas the Jew chargeth it as a fault upon St. John, for putting Manasseh instead of Dan left out, whereas he was included in the mention of Joseph, I hope he will not accuse Moses also: And yet he may do it with the same justice, with which he accuseth the other. For tho Moses reckons Joseph among the children of Israel, and pronounceth a particular and ample blessing upon him; yet for all that he makes express mention of the ten thousands of Ephraim, and of the thousands of Manasfeh, ver. 13, 17. And yet they were as much included in Joseph there, as Manasseh can be supposed to be in this place, which the Jew objects against.

2. THE author of the first book of Chronicles gives us a catalogue of the sons of Israel chap. ii. 1, 2. He names Dan indeed, and mentions not Ephraim and Manasseh among them. But when he proceeds to give us a distinct account of their families, as he doth in the following chapters, he gives an account of every one of them, excepting  $\mathcal{D}$ an. And whereas  $\mathcal{D}$ an was in his lift, and Ephraim and Manasseh left out; yet in the account, which he gives, he omits Dan only, and in his stead gives an account of Ephraim and Manasseh. I hope also, that this author must not for this be charged with ignorance or forgetfulness. He leaves out Dan, where he gives an account of all the rest; and as we doubt not, but he did it upon good reason; so may it well be supposed, that St. John did it also. Moreover, we find, in that list in the second chapter of the first book of Chronicles, Joseph'among the sons of Israel; but in the account given afterwards, we find a particular mention of Ephraim and Manasseh. The mentioning of Joseph

7 R. Isaac. l. 2. c. 99.

did not exclude his two sons; and there is therefore no reason, that St. John should be blamed for mentioning of Manasseh, when he had named

Joseph before.

3. David hath composed a Psalm of praise, Psal. cxlv. He begins ver. 1. with the first letter of the Alphabet; and so he goes on throughout that Psalm, omitting only the letter 1, which is the fourteenth letter of the Hebrew Alphabet. I hope, that the Jew will not therefore accuse the Psalmist, as one ignorant of the Hebrew Alphabet; and yet hemay do it with as good reason, as he accuse that John here. I am sure, that a modest Christian will not upon that account complain of the Psalmist, or suppose him to be an

ignorant person.

4. I AM not obliged to give the Jew a reason, why Dan is omitted, nor will I positively affirm any thing in this matter: But yet 'tis not hard to offer something to this purpose. 'Tis certain, that the true servants of God are here to be marked in order to their being saved. This is represented under the names of the sons of Israel (the type of all God's people that were to come) and in a number also that was much endeared to that people. Upon this consideration the divine author of this book might think sit to omit Dan, as an unfit type of Go D's sincere worshippers, because of his apostacy and idolatry, of which we have express mention in the books of Judges and Kings. One of Jeroboam's calves was set up in the tribe of Dan. And for the same reason Levi was put in his place, having been very eminent for his zeal in the service of God, Deut. xxxiii. 8. And Ephraim also upon the same account may be supposed to be omitted: For Ephraim is not expressly mentioned in this place; nor indeed mentioned any otherwise than as he is intimated under Joseph. So it was, that 2 Ephraim had an ill name betimes for his idolatry and apostacy from GoD; and afterwards Ephraim gave name to those schismaticks, who forsook the appointed worthip of God after the death of Solomon.

2 2 Kings xviii. 13. 2 Judg. xvii.



CHAP.

## 

#### CHAP. V.

St. Matthew is accused by the Jews for misapplying the words of the Prophet. The occasion of the words of the Prophet considered. That the words were not spoken to Ahaz, but to the house of David. That as those words are applied by St. Matthew, and understood by Christians, they are very agreeable to the persons, to whom they were directed, and their present circumstances. That Alma doth properly signify a Virgin. The Jew's pretences to the contrary from Prov. 20. 19. and Cant. 6. 8. considered. Of calling by the name Emmanuel. An answer to a cavil of Abravenel. How the words in the Prophet, as applied by St. Matthew, tend very much to the support of the house of David. Of signs, and several forts of them. Of the Midrash among the Jews. That the words of the Prophet cannot be understood of Hezekiah. St. Matthew hath not misquoted the Prophet: His rendring shall call, by xadéous no fault.

### Matth. I. Vers. 22, 23.

Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken of the LORD by the prophet, saying, Behold a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel.

T. Matthew in the foregoing words gives us an account of the miraculous conception of Jesus, and that the virgin Mary was found with child of the Holy Ghost; and that an angel tells Joseph no less, and fore-tells, that she should bring forth a son, that should be called Jesus, &c. St. Matthew adds, that all this was done, &c. He produceth the words of the Prophet, where this is foretold.

THE Jewish writers accuse the Evangelist for misapplying, at least, (if not misquoting) the words of the Prophet, which (as they pretend) belong to another matter. And the substance of what they object may be reduced to the following heads.

FIRST, That the words of the *Prophet* cannot with any reason be applied, as they are, to the conception or birth of Jesus of the virgin Mary; because the Hebrew word word by the Prophet, doth not

<sup>2</sup> Lipman. Nizach. p. 123. Nizachon. vet. p. 84. R. Isac, Chizuk. Emun. par. 1. ch. 21.

M m necessarily

necessarily signify a virgin, but sometimes is used to denote a young woman who hath had the knowledge of a man. And to that purpose two instances

are produced, viz. Prov. 30. 19. Cant. 6. 8.

SECONDLY, That the name of the fon mentioned by the Prophet was to be Emmanuel; whereas that of the fon of Mary was Jesus; and that was his name according to the express command of the angel to Joseph, Matth. 1.21.

THIRDLY, That whereas there was a fon to be born promifed to Ahaz, as a fign to support his faith in God's promises, 'tis certain that by that fon Jesus could not be meant; because his birth, whatever it might have of wonder or miracle in it, could be of no use to Ahaz, since he was not born till several hundreds of years after the death of Ahaz. And that therefore that promise must be meant of Hezekiah, or some other man-child to be born soon after the promise made, and before the death of Ahaz.

BEFORE I come to take off these objections, there are some things to

be premised. And,

FIRST, I shall consider the words of the Prophet with the context, and

give a short history of that time, when those words were spoken.

IT is to be considered, that 'when Ahaz was king of Judah, Rezin the king of Syria, and Pekah king of Israel went to Ferusalem, the chief city of the king of Judah, to war against it. Upon this confederacy Ahaz and his people (when they knew it) fell under a great fear and consternation; their hearts were moved, as the trees of the wood are moved with the wind. Upon this occasion also, the Prophet is commanded to go with his son Shear-jashub, and meet king Ahaz; to encourage him not to fear these confederate kings, and to assure him, that God would defeat their confederacy. And whereas Ahaz was very fearful and full of distrust and diffidence, God (such was his goodness and condescension) offers him a sign to confirm his own promise, and to beget faith in Ahaz: But this sign Ahaz impiously refuseth; with a specious pretence indeed that he would not tempt God. Upon this, God expostulates with the house of David by the Prophet, saying, Is it a small thing for you to weary men! But will you weary my GOD also? V. 13. It follows, Therefore the LORD him-felf will give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel, (v. 14.) 'Tis to be observed, that this promise is not made to Ahaz, but to the house of David; as I have observed else-where. Ahaz had refused a sign; what is now promised, is to the house of David, which was in great jeopardy at this time. This is well observed by 'several of the ancients upon the place.

JUDAH and particularly the house of David was never in such danger of being extinguished, as in the days of Ahaz; and it appears, that Ahaz and his people were under a most fearful consternation and apprehension of it. Indeed, the Prophet endeavoured to remove their sears; he had assured them, that God would deliver them, and offered any sign to confirm the truth of this promise; but that offer was rejected by Ahaz. Upon his God himself lets the house of David know, that he will give

them a fign; Behold a virgin shall conceive, &c.

WE Christians believe this to be a prediction of the birth of the MESSIAS of a pure virgin: 'Tis to that purpose produced and applied by St. Matthew.

Digitized by Google

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>a</sup> Isaiah 7. v. 1, 2, 3, 4,—

Basilius. Theodoret. Procopius Gazaus.

The great difficulty will be to give an account, how the words in the sense

of Christians do agree with the context.

To this purpose it is to be remembred, that the people were at this time astraid, that Judah and consequently the house of David would be utterly extinguished. Now nothing could be more proper to remove those scars than a prophecy, and a miracle or sign. They had the prophecy, ver 7. It shall not stand, neither shall it come to pass. A sign or miracle is offered, but refused. There's nothing remains now but this promise of the Messias, Behold a virgin shall conceive, &c. And this is of great moment to destroy that sear and consternation, under which they were. To this purpose 'tis to be remembred, that the promise of the Messias was at first made to mankind, under the character 'of the seed of the woman. He was afterward promised in Jacob's blessing on Judah, with an assurance that that tribe should continue a polity undestroyed, till the Messias should come: And after this he was promised as' the off-spring of David. If then he must be of that tribe and that family, and must appear whilst that tribe continued a separate and distinct people, then there was no fear of the extinction of Judah, and the house of David at that time, whatever their present distress might be.

Nor is this any new account of this matter: Several ancients give the same account. Theodoret on Isaiah the seventh, speaks to the same purpose. His words are these, Tairing wirth, &c. i. e. He did not rashly produce this prophecy in this place. But because they were as a fraid of the impression of their enemies, who threatned to destroy the Davidical kingdom, he necessarily shews, how vain they were in this attempt. Die is, &c. For the off-spring of David must continue, until Shiloh come, and afford the expected blessing to the gentiles. To the same purpose speaks Procopius Gazaus on the same place; Examer, &c. It is impossible that your seed should fail, how great soever your fear be, till the virgin hath conceived. And afterwards, he represents God comforting the Jews, upon his promise of the Messias, Thus; Norwer, &c. i.e. Now therefore take courage from my kindness: For these kings shall not take your land: But rather receive this promise of the wonderful birth of Emmanuel, as a most pure pledge, that your land shall escape: For it cannot otherwise be,

It was quite otherwise as to the ten tribes called Ephraim, (ver. 8.). They were not under the like promise with Judah and the house of David: So far are they from any such security, that it is expressly foretold, that they should be destroyed. Within threescore and sive years shall Ephraim be broken, that it be not a people, ver. 8. But then Judah and the house of David must continue a people, till the Messias be exhibited; and need not therefore fear, how powerful soever their adversaries might be, that they shall be no people before that time.

SECONDLY, That the whole stress of the cause between the Jew and the Christian doth not lie upon this debate. My meaning is, that we have irrefragable proofs of the truth of the Christian doctrine, besides what lies before us. We are able to prove the truth of Christianity, from arguments that are unanswerable, and of a separate consideration from that which is now before us. The admirable doctrine of Jesus, his holy and un-

Gen. 3. 15. Gen. 49, 10. Mich. 5. 2. Is. 11. 10. Jer. 23. 5. Psal 89. 3, 4.

M m 2 parallel'd

parallel'd life, his various and mighty miracles, his undaunted courage at his death, his glorious refurrection from the dead (according to his own prediction) his ascension into heaven, and miraculous mission of the Holy Ghost; the spreading of the Christian doctrine, and completion of predictions: These are unanswerable arguments of the truth of Christianity. This I say, that it may not be thought, that a man could not be assured of the truth of our religion, without philological learning, and an insight in languages and nice speculations. The Jews are a very subtil and witty people, and able to perplex and puzzle even understanding Christians: And it must be consessed, that there are very considerable difficulties in the matter here debated. But still I would not be mistaken: I am well assured, that the Evangelist is in the right in quoting and applying the words of the Prophet, tho perhaps many good Christians may not be able to understand all the matters debated, nor to answer the objections which lie in the way.

THIRDLY, That in this place I shall confine my self to desend St. Matthew's sincerity, in quoting the Prophet upon this occasion, against the objections of the Jews on this account. This is my only business at present. I shall not enter upon the article of religion, nor make any reslections upon it as such. 'Tis enough to my present design, that I sully

answer the Jews.

Object. I. THEY object, First, That the word Alma, used by the Prophet, doth not necessarily signify a virgin, but any young woman. And if so, St. Matthew had no reason to render it by a word that signifies a virgin.

But to this it may be easily answered,

1. That St. Matthew renders it by the same word, which the LXXII. interpreters render it by: And those interpreters were Jews, and rendred the word as St. Matthew doth, about three hundred years before St. Matthew wrote his gospel, and consequently long before there could be any controversy between the Jews and Christians upon this subject; which therefore must be of great authority and moment in this matter. This alone may justify St. Matthew before any indifferent judges; and

the Jews can have no shadow of reason to object against this.

2. Nor can there be a fitter word to signify a virgin than Alma is; for it comes from an Hebrew word, which signifies to hide; and most fitly agrees with the custom of the eastern countries, who were wont to keep their daughters whilst in their virginity from much company, and publick conversation and interviews. Thus 'tis said upon a publick and extraordinary consternation, That the virgins that were kept in, ran some to the gates, and some to the walls, and others looked out of the windows, 2 Maccab 3. 19. 'Twas of a very ill report to be gadding abroad. 'Tis the character of an ill woman, which Solomon gives; Her feet abide not in her house; now is she without, now in the streets, Prov. 7. 11, 12. Virgins were kept up. And a strumpet among the Chaldees is commonly expressed by And Ingel, i. e. a gadder abroad. Dinah' went out to see the daughters of the land; but she was defiled before she return'd to her father's house, and her place of retirement. No word is firter for a virgin than Alma, which the Prophet useth.

I SHALL here add another account of the word Alma, which is not inconsistent with the former; tho in my opinion it is preserable to it. I say,

it

Gen. 34. ver. 1. & R. Bechai in loc.

it is not inconsistent; but added to the former, it gives great light and strength to the present argument. It supposes the same original from the same Hebrew word, which signifies to hide or cover. This is a most six word to signify a virgin, because it denotes one, who hath not known a man; or according to the Scripture phrase, one whose nakedness hath not been uncovered. The knowledge of a woman is expressed in the law of Moses by uncovering her nakedness; and agreeably hereunto, Alma is a most proper word for a virgin, who is covered, and whose nakedness was never uncovered or revealed by the knowledge of man. This account is very natural; persectly agreeable to the Hebrew manner of speech, and to the style of the law of Moses.

3. 'Tis very well known among learned men, that there is a very great affinity between the Hebrew and Punic language. Several learned men have shewed this, in their account of those lines in the Punic tongue, which we have in Plantus; and Bochartus ' hath gone farther, in his reflections upon several passages of St. Augustin, who was himself a Punic. Samuel Petit is said, as he hath restored those lines in Plantus, to have taken the word Almot for virgins: I lay no great stress upon that, because I have not that book by me; and at best it is but his conjecture. Be that as it will, the words of St. Jerom ' are worth our consideration: His words are these, Lingua Punica, qua de Hebraorum sontibus manare dicitur, pro-

priè virgo, Alma appellatur, i. e. In the Punic language, which is said to be derived from the Hebrew, she who is properly a virgin, is called Alma.

4. It is but a poor argument to pretend, that because the word Alma doth not necessarily or always signify a virgin, therefore it doth not signify so in this place; and that therefore it is mis-rendred in St. Matthew. For we are to be governed as to the fignification of a word by the context and the subject matter. And if it was granted, that it did not always signify so; yet if it appeared, that it generally signified so, and that there is nothing in the context, that forbids that fignification here, this would be enough to justify St. Matthew. But I have more to say than this; that this sense is so far from being repugnant to the context, that it rather seems to require this fense and nothing less. It is to be remembred, that God had offered unto Ahaz a fign or miracle to confirm his promite before, and that it had been refused: Ahaz had his option of a fign in the depth, or in the height above. Upon his profane rejecting of this God complains, and promiseth the house of David a lign, Therefore the LORD himself Shall give you a sign, Behold! a virgin, &c. The Jews wou'd have the meaning be no more than this, that a young woman being joined to a man should be with child: But where's the wonder? Where's the miracle all this while? Can there be any thing farther from it? What need of those words, the LORD himself? What need of that solemn notice, Behold? What need of the *emphatical* way of expressing it in the *Hebrew* text? Here would be nothing new or strange in all this, according to the interpretation of the Jews; no need of these solemn words, of this great apparatus. God promiseth the same thing in another prophet; but then he doth it there also after a very solemn manner, and in words that must import more, than the Jewish sense will admit of. The LORD hath created a new thing, a woman shall compass a man. But it would be too great a digression to enter upon that place.

Phaleg. l. 2. c. 16.

! Hieron. in Isa. 7.

9 Jer. 31. 22.

5. THAT

5. That Alma signifies a virgin sometimes, the Jews have not face enough to deny. I shall in the next place consider the two places, in which it is pretended it signifies otherwise. And we may be sure, that they have

pitched on those places, which they judge most to their purpose.

THE first is in Prov. 30. 19. where the wise man tells of those things, which are too wonderful for him, and which he professeth not to know, viz. The way of an eagle in the air, the way of a serpent upon a rock, the way of a ship in the midst of the sea, and the way of a man with a maid. What we render maid, is Alma in the Hebrew text. And hence the Jews pretend, that the word Alma doth not always signify a virgin, but sometimes one that hath had the knowledge of a man, as is supposed here. To which I answer,

I. THAT several of the antients understand that word as signifying youth. The V. Latin renders it in Adolescentia: the LXXII. Experiment: And the Syriac, to the same purpose. If this version be right, then is the place nothing to the purpose. But I pass this by, and lay no stress upon it. I al-

low it to be Alma; that is the same word with that in Isa. 7. 14.

2. It is enough to satisfy any indifferent person, that supposing the maid in the text vitiated by the man; yet she is expressed by that word, which truly expressed her former state antecedently to such a defilement. And as this may be allow'd in any language; so doth it not at all alter the signification of the word.

Thus when we read, (Deut. 22. 28.) of a man lying with a virgin, every man easily understands, that she is so called, with respect to what she was antecedently to the defilement; and we make no doubt of the proper, signification of the word virgin: for that expression doth not imply that

the word fignifies equally one that is defiled and undefiled.

The true fignification of the word is not alter'd; tho it should chance to be applyed to any one, to whom the thing meant by it doth not strictly belong. The word Prophet fignifies the same thing, tho it be sometimes aply'd to one that is a salse Prophet. When we say that Jesus opened the eyes of the blind; the word blind doth but denote the former condition; tho even when his eyes are opened, we apply that word to him. We say, An house is burnt to ashes: It was an house, and therefore we call it so.

The second place produced to prove, that Alma doth not necessarily signify a virgin, is Cant. 6. ver. 8. There are three score queens, and four-

score concubines, and virgins without number.

I must here declare, that I am at a loss. Not that I am pressed with any difficulty; but because I can see none. I cannot possibly discern any weighthere at all; nor so much as imagine, to what purpose it is produced by the Jew. And it is very hard to find an answer, where there is no need of any. If it serves to any purpose, it bears hard upon the Jew, and proves that, which it is produced to disprove; like some witnesses, that have in a court spoiled the cause, which they were brought to maintain. The Almoth, i. e. virgins (as we render it) are distinguished from queens and concubines. The queens are the wives of kings, the concubines are their half wives, as the Hebrew word imports: and then what the Almoth should be, but virgins, I cannot comprehend. I am sure no Jew can tell what to make of them else.

. .

So then, the first place makes nothing for the Jews; and this, if it

doth any thing, makes against them.

Object. II. It is objected, that the name of the son to be born, of whom the Prophet speaks, was to be Emmanuel; but the name of the son of Mary, of whom St. Matthew speaks, was Jesus; and that according to the express command of the angel: and therefore the words of the Prophet are misapplyed by the Evangelist, as not having relation to one and the

same person.

Answ. This objection I have formerly considered in another' place, and therefore need not say much here. I do own, that Jesus was that name of our Saviour, by which he was commonly called, and by which he was distinguished from other men. But yet there were many titles and characters given of the Messias in the antient prophets with reference to his office, and the design of his appearance: and if our Jesus answer those characters, 'tis enough. For the Jews do very well know, that being called by a name, imports no more. And we Christians too believe, that Emmanuel of right belongs to him, as he was God manifested in the sless, as he takes away our sins, and is the great Mediator between God and man.

THIS answer might very well suffice for such a trisling objection; and so it should, was it not that a Jewish writer hath attempted to improve this objection, and to carry it farther, than I have found any other to do. I shall truly report the strength of what he brings to this purpose. Among his other objections against St. Matthew, this is his fourth. From these words, Shall call his name Emmanuel וירוע שלא: וכר', Now (fays he) it is known, that no man called Jesus the Nazarene, Emmanuel: neither did his mother, nor did others call him by this name. But to this (fays he) the Christians have the assurance to answer thus: That a thing may have a Natural or Instituted name. Thus Adam is the natural name of a man: but Socrates is an instituted name, to distinguish or particularize him. That Jesus was his name by institution; Emmanuel was his natural name on the score of his divinity. But (says he) these are vain words; for the Scripture doth not speak of a natural name, when it says, Shalt call his name Emmanuel; but of his instituted name, which he was called by confent, or agreement. Of a natural name we say, שמו i. e. This is the name of it; and therefore the prophet should have said, that his name should be Emmanuel, and not have said, Shalt call his name; which fixeth the matter upon the calling, because so it is to be called. For we do not use to say of a man-child after he is born, Thou shalt call his name man; because that name doth not belong to him from his being so called, but'tis his natural name. Thus doth Abravenel object.

I Take the force of what he fays to be this, That Emnianuel must be the instituted name of the person spoken of by the Prophet, and not the natural; and that because the Scripture doth not use the word call of a natural name, but only of an instituted one: where the natural name is mentioned, it is expressed by הרא שמו , i. e. This is his name: And consequently, if the words of the Prophet had belonged to Jesus, his name could not have been Jesus, but Emmanuel.

Part. I. ch. 1. Abravenel in Isa. 7. 14.

#### A DEMONSTRATION PART IL

I Must needs fay, that this objection looks fairly, and feems to be of moment at the first fight: and therefore is to be considered; and the ground on which it is built is to be examined.

I SHALL shew, that the ground, on which he founds his affertion, is far from truth, and that this Jew hath notoriously prevaricated in this matter. I shall produce several instances from the Scripture to the contrary.

(1.) FIRST then, whereas he says the word call implies an instituted name, I shall shew the contrary from Gen. 5. 2. Male and female created he them, and called their name Adam. Now the name Adam, by the confession of this Jew, is a natural, not an instituted name.

(2.) On the other hand, whereas he affirms that a natural name is expressed by הוא שמר, I shall shew, that this is used in Scripture of a proper or instituted name, I Kin. 13.2. Behold a child shall be born of the house of David, Josiah his name. He doth not say, he shall be called Josiah, but Josiah his name, as the Hebrew words signify, which we render, Josiah by name.

Tho these two instances are sufficient to consute Abravenel, yet I will give some more under both the aforenamed heads, that the vanity of his pretences may more abundantly appear; nor shall I produce all that I might

on this occasion.

As to the first, where he affirms, that the word call implies an instituted or proper name, I would know, what can be faid to Gen. 2. 23. where Adam says, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called woman, because she was taken out of man. Surely woman is the natural name, if there be any truth in what follows, because she was taken out of man. Her proper or instituted name was Eve. Adam afterwards calls her so, because she was the Mother of all living. Again, His name shall be called, wonderful, counsellor, the mighty God, the everlasting father, the prince of peace, Isa. 9.6. Is all this the instituted or proper name of one person? I add, Jer. 23.6. And this is his name, whereby he shall be called, the Lord our righteousness. Can we think, that this is a proper or instituted name?

SECONDLY, as to what he pretends, that the natural name is expressed by הוא שמו, i. e. This is his name (without the addition of being called by that name) the instances to the contrary are so many, that I will not undertake to number them. I shall only refer the reader to some of them.

Esther 2. 5. 2 Sam. 3.7. 1 Sam. 1.2. ch. 9. 1. ch. 25. 3.
Object. III. That whereas there was a son to be born promised to Ahaz as a fign to beget faith in him, 'tis certain that Jesus could not be meant, because his birth could be of no use to Ahaz, for it did not happen till several hundred years after his death: and therefore that fon must be meant of Hezekiah, or some other man-child to be born before the death of Ahaz: and consequently, the words of the Prophet are misapplyed by the Evangelist.

Answ. 1. That it is taken for granted, that this promise is made to Ahaz: He had rejected a fign before, and this is promifed to the house of David, who were at this time in great fears, and in great danger. And therefore that is taken for granted in the objection, which is by no means

to be yielded.

2. OF what-ever use the promise of the Messias (which we Christians do believe made in the words of the Prophet) was to Ahaz, 'tis

certain it was very proper in this place, and must be of great use to the house of David, to whom it was made, and not to Ahaz. They teared destruction at this time, they and the men of Judah, ver. 2. Now what could be more for their comfort, and strengthning their faith, than these

words of God by the Prophet? Behold, &c. And that,

(1.) As they affure them, that they shall not be utterly destroyed by these their powerful enemies; and this is built upon God's veracity. He had said, The scepter shall not depart from Judah, &c. That is, the men of that tribe shall not be destroyed from being a people, until Shiloh come, that is, till the Messias doth first appear. And as this blessing was pronounced as belonging to the posterity of Judah; so it was annexed to the samily or house of David. The Lord hath sworn in truth unto David, he will not turn from it, Of the fruit of thy body will I set upon thy throne; Psal. 102. 12. (compare Luke 1.69. Acts 2.30.) this is that born of salvation, Psal. 132. 17. With Ezek. 29. 21. and Luk. 1.69. and Jer. 23.5, 6. and ch. 30.9. The men of Judah, and the house of David might from hence be assured, that they should not be destroyed, till the Messias should first come.

(2.) As these words assure them of God's almighty and irresistible power: Behold! a virgin shall conceive, &c. This is against the laws of nature, and which no power less than that of God could effect. This is foretold as a sign or a miracle here, which God alone could bring to pass: The Lord himself shall give you a sign. And thus this promise is expressed in a parallel place, The Lord hath created a new thing in the earth, a woman shall compass a man; Jer. 31.22. He that believes God able to do this, needs not doubt, but he is able to deliver from the power of the most potent enemies: And on this consideration this prophecy must be of

great use to support the house of David.

(3.) As these words assured them of God's goodness, and great goodwill toward them. The promise of the Messias shews this abundantly. This was a mighty argument of the divine goodness and philanthropy, to promise the seed of the woman to mankind; and still a farther kindness to the Israelites, from whom he was to spring; and still a more particular favour to the tribe of Judah above the rest; and after all to the house of David, of whose samily he was to be according to the sless. They that had this promise, might be secure of the divine savour; and consequently need not fear their powerful enemies.

FROM what hath been last said, it appears, that the Jesus was not to be born till about seven hundred years after this promise; yet this promise of the Messias was of great use to the house of David, to whom it

was made in a very perillous time.

IF after all this the Jew should urge, that what is here promised to the house of David, is promised as a sign, and must in reason therefore go be-

fore that thing, which it is a fign of: I answer,

3. That the word here rendred fign doth not always fignify a prognostick of something to sollow (which is such a sign as Ahaz resuled) but sometimes it signifies a miracle or wonder. This is very agreeable to the manner of speaking here used; and also with that used fer. 31.22. Besides, it is certain, that there are signs that are not only prognostick, but also rememorative: And the latter do not go before, but sollow those things of which they are signs. Of these we have several instances in the old Testanent,

Digitized by Google

ment, which are very pertinent to my present argument against the Jews,

viz. Exod. 3. 12. 1 Sam. 2. 34. Isa. 37. 30. Jer. 44. 23, 30.

PERHAPS it may be urged under this objection, that the prophet doth speak of some son to be born about that time; and that this appears from Isa. 7.15, 16. and ch. 8.4. and that therefore this prophecy was then fulfilled; and consequently mis-applyed by St. Matthew. To this I answer,

4. That admitting this to be true, yet will not this be an objection of force against the *Evangelist*. I will not enter into the inquiry, whether this be true or not; but will shew, that supposing it true that such a son

was born then; yet the Evangelist may for all that be defended.

As for the *Christians*, they do believe that the Messias is not only predicted in the *old Testament*, but that there are many shadows of him and his kingdom or oeconomy; and that many actions and events that are reported there, had a farther reference to, and a full consummation in the days of the Messias: so that some things might be suffilled then in

the type, which were afterward to be fulfilled in the anti-type.

Nor ought the Jews to reject such a way of interpretation. For they allow of their Midrash, which is an allegorical way of expounding; and do not boggle to allow a farther sense of their law, than what appears from the first blush of the letter. Whoever is acquainted with their ancient writers and their commentaries, will eafily find very much to this purpose. They do evidently confirm their doctrines from the text with much less appearance of reason. R. D. Kimchi expounds the second psalm of David; but yet he owns, that their Rabbins, by The Lord's anointed meant king Messias. Nor doth he imply any inconsistence in these feveral interpretations. It is certain, that Josephus puts a spiritual sense upon the several parts of the sanctuary, and such a sense as agrees with that of the author of the epistle to the Hebrews. St. Matthew applies the Prophet's words to the wonderful birth of Jesus; and indeed the words of the prophet are such, that it is hard to fix a lower sense upon them. But be that as it will, it ought not to exclude that of the Evangelist; especially, since it may be undeniably proved from the miracles and refurrection of Jesus, that he was the Messias.

I very well know, that the places quoted out of the old Testament by the writers of the new may occasion some difficulties in the minds of men. But this ought not so far to prevail with us, as to question the truth of the Christian doctrine, which doth not want sufficient motives of credi-

bility.

For the better judging of this whole matter, 'tis requisite, that we should have recourse to the ways of speaking and reasoning used by the Synagogue; that we should look into the Midrashim and Targumists, and observe the passages, which they apply to the Messias and his oeconomy; where we shall find many things said, that are not sounded on the bare letter, and are yet very agreeable to the interpretation of Christ, and the writers of the new Testament. We shall find among the Jews many times interpretations extended beyond the letter to a mystical sense; and sometimes such an one as belongs to the Messias. The writers of the new Testament sollow their method and principles; and the Jews have no cause on this account to vilify them.

Or all the books of the new Testament I know not any, where these mystical senses of the passages of the old Testament, and applications of them to the Messias, are so frequent as in the epistle to the Hebrews: This is a probable argument, that it was written by St. Paul; who having been brought up by Gamaliel a samous doctor may be presumed to be well versed in the Mystical sense of the places of the old Testament. And he might use the greater liberty this way, because he wrote to the Hebrews, who were much used to that way of interpretation, and were best able to judge of that method which he used. I cannot but relate a passage of a late learned writer upon this occasion. He tells us, that he gave this epistle to the Hebrews to a Jew to read, who was greatly acquainted with their antient authors. Upon the perusal of it the Jew strankly avowed, that that book could be writ by none but by some great Mekubal (i.e. man of tradition) of his own nation. This Jew was so far from affirming, that the writer of that epistle had set aside the true sense of the Scripture by allegories according to his own fancy, that he celebrated his prosound knowledge in the sub-lime sense of the Bible, and spake of his great Mekubal (as he called him) with admiration.

THE Jews condemn the Christians for using the very same methods, which their greatest doctors have constantly used. I have too much cause to add, that some of them do urge those things against Christians, which

they cannot but know have no weight in them.

THAT I may leave nothing unanswered, I shall consider their pretence, that the words of the prophet are to be understood of king Hezekias. This is an antient opinion of the Jews: Trypho, in his discourse with

Justin Martyr, owns it.

I SHALL shew in a very few words, that this cannot be. We are agreed on all hands, that the prophet speaks of a son, that was after those words to be born. I shall prove, that it cannot therefore be meant of Hezekias, because he was born before these words were spoken. And this I shall prove against the Jews beyond all exception. That these words were spoken, whilst Ahaz was king, is evident from the text, and owned by the Jews. Now Ahaz, reigned but sixteen years; and Hezekias his son and his successor was twenty and five years old when he began to reign; and therefore must be born several years before Ahaz was king, and consequently before these words were spoken. Thus (says a learned writer of our own) while the antient Jews name him only to fulfil the prophecy, in whom it is impossible it should be fulfilled, they plainly show, that for any knowledge that they had, it was not fufilled till our Saviour came: And therefore they cannot with any reason deny, but that it belonged unto the Messias; as divers of the antient Rabbins thought and confessed.

What other son the Jews may fix this prophecy upon, it is not worth my while to inquire. If they could prove, that it received some sort of completion, it will not thence follow, that it is ill applied by St. Matthew to an higher sense. For when once they shall advance any proposition, whence this can be truly inferred, when they design to destroy St. Matthew's credit, they will certainly overthrow that of their own commentators. And thus I have desended St. Matthew from the charge of mis-applying the

words of the Prophet.

Nn s

1 F

P. Simon. Histor. Crit. N. T. c. 21. \* Justin. Mart. cum Tryph. \* 2 Kirigs 16: 2. with ch. 18. 2.

### 108 A DEMONSTRATION PART IL

IF St. Matthew be charged for mis-quoting the text, it being in LXXII nations, agreeably to the Hebrew; and in St. Matthew nations, it is of no moment. And it may farther be truly said, that there is only a various lection in the case. For all copies have not nations. 'Tis sometimes nations in the text of St. Matthew.

But we will suppose that reason is the true reading in St. Matthew. as it is the most common in our printed copies; yet may St. Matthew be very easily defended against the Jews in this matter. For zantour, is to be taken impersonally in this place; and imports no more than he shall be called. Of this there can be no dispute; and I have 'elsewhere given several instances to this purpose; and such as the Jews cannot deny to be agreeable to the rules of grammar. And moreover those who contend, as the Jews do, that this prophecy was fulfilled foon after the words were spoken, cannot justly blame St. Matthew, for thus rendring the word in this place as he doth. For allowing it to have received some accomplishment in the type, 'tis easy to say, why St. Matthew should thus render the word, when he applies it to the anti-type. For that opinion of the fews may well admit, that the virgin concern'd was present, when these words were first spoken. What we render shall call in the text; we render thou, O virgin, shalt call in our marginal reading. But St. Matthew in this case applying to the anti-type, could not with any reason be obliged to render it ranious, but it was to his purpose more fit to render it by ranious, in an impersonal sense.

### **X -0550-0550-0550-0550-0550-0550-0550**

#### CHAP. VI.

The objections against the account which the Evangelists give of the Genealogy of Jesus summed up. Some general considerations toward the abating the force of these exceptions.

S

HERE is scarce any thing objected by the 'Jews against the writers of the new Testament, either more speciously or more frequently, than what they bring against St. Matthew and St. Luke, as touching the account, which they give of the genealogy of Jesus. Here they triumph and insult, and think they have a great advantage over us. For it being agreed between Christians and Jews, that the Messias was to proceed not only of the tribe of Judah, but from the samily of David, it had need be very evident, that Jesus was of that samily; and no man could be obliged to own him for the Christ, unless it appeared first, that he was of that samily of which Christ was to come: For it being so plainly predicted by the prophets, that he should be of the house of David, and that he should be born in Bethlehem, the town

where

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>a</sup> Serm. on 2 Sam, 24. 14. Nizachon vet. p. 186. R. Isaac, l. 2. c. 1. J. Albo Ikkarim, l. 4. c. 25.

where David dwelt, the Jews might not receive him for the Messias, who was not born in that place, and of that family. For tho there might be, and there were several born at that time in that place and of that family, who yet had not any title or just claim to the dignity and office of the Messias; yet certain it is, that no man could have any just title to it, who was born in any other place, or of another family: And as upon the appearance of the wife men, Herod took care to inform himself where CHRIST Should be born: so the Evangelists, St. Matthew and St. Luke took care also to inform us, that he was born of the family of David. And this one of them doth at the very beginning of his gospel, and before he doth relate his miraculous birth; the other doth it foon after he hadgiven an account of his birth, and just before he relates his exercise of his publick ministry. And tho it was necessary that this matter should be cleared, and the Evangelists should have done it effectually, and seasonably in the beginning of their gospels; yet the Jews quarrel and contend, and pretend several things, which would render this account, which the Evangelists give, not worthy of belief. And therefore I think my self obliged to represent to the reader the objections which the Jews do, or may make against the Evangelists upon this account: and then to answer them, and defend the holy writers, not only against the Jews, but against all those false people, who are ready to disparage them as persons unworthy to be credited. As for the first part of this my work, I do solemnly profess, that I will not fail very fairly to fum up the strength of those objections, which are or may be brought against the Evangelists in this matter. And the reader may find the main force of these pretences in the following parti-

First, The Jews pretend, that what the Evangelists have done is nothing to the purpose; because they only give us an account of the genealogy and descent of Joseph, who was not the real, but only the reputed father of Jesus, as all Christians grant. If they would have proved what they attempted, and what was needful, they should have given an account of the genealogy of Mary the mother of Jesus; not of Joseph, who was not really his father. For if Jesus was not the son of Joseph, the genealogy of Joseph cannot belong to Jesus: If it doth belong to him, it must do so because he was Joseph's son, which all Christians do deny. That Joseph was the reputed father of Jesus, will not prove Jesus to be of the samily of David, because Joseph was so. God did swear unto David, Out of the fruit of thy body will I set upon thy throne. And this is own'dby Christians also; for St. Peter refers to this oath, saying, that to David God had sworn with an oath, That out of the fruit of his loins according to the steph, he would raise up Christ to sit upon his throne.

SECONDLY, In the account, which they do give of the genealogy of Joseph (tho that be nothing to the purpose) they do not in the main agree between themselves. It is true, that they both derive him from David (and no wonder they should pretend to do so) but they do it after such a manner, that the accounts, which they severally give, are inconsistent one with the other. One tells us, that he was the son of Jacob; the other, that he was the son of Eli. St. Matthew derives him from Solomon the son of David;

<sup>1</sup> Mat. 2. 4. 
<sup>2</sup> Pfal. 132. 11. 
<sup>3</sup> Acts 2. 30. 
<sup>4</sup> Mat 1. 6. 
<sup>5</sup> Luk. 3. 31.

and

### 110 A DEMONSTRATION PART II.

and St. Luke from Nathan, another of David's sons: Certain it is, that if he was descended from Solomon, he did not descend from Nathan his brother: And if he did descend from Nathan, he could not descend from his brother Solomon: And consequently if one Evangelist be in the right, the other must be in the wrong; for one man cannot be descended from two brothers, and sons of the same father.

THIRDLY, Besides this main difference between them, they differ widely in relating the particulars of the genealogy of Joseph. St. Matthew reckons from Abraham to Jesus but forty and two generations: St. Luke reckons from Abraham to Jesus no less than fifty and six. Again, Joseph is both by St. Matthew and St. Luke (however they differ in deriving him from Solomon or Nathan) said to be descended from Salathiel the father of Zorobabel; and there is, in each of the Evangelists, an account of the distance of generations between Salathiel and Joseph. According to the computation of Matthew, these generations are but twelve: But in St. Luke, the generations from Joseph to the same Salathiel are no sewer than one and

twenty.

FOURTHLY, as the Evangelists are inconsistent one with the other; so they both depart from that account of things, which we find in the old Testament: The authority of which old Testament, Christians are so far from calling in question, that they do upon all other occasions appeal to it, and urge it, in all their disputes and controversies with the Jews. And therefore, if the authority of the books of the old Testament be valued by the Christians on all other occasions, they ought to be considered in this case. Now St. Luke in his genealogy adds a second Cainan, not mentioned in the old Testament; and St. Matthew in his account takes the liberty of leaving out three kings at once. For when he tells us, that Joram, begat Ozias, it is manifest that he leaves out Ahaziah, Joash and Amaziah: and then it will be hard to understand, with what truth he could say, that Foram could beget Ozias, who could not be begotten in his days. It may farther be objected, that Salathiel cannot be faid to beget Zorobabel (for he was not his father) and that the Zorobabel be faid to have begotten Abiud, yet certain it is, that where his children are reckoned up, we find none called Abiud. But these things are of little weight. There are two others particulars in St. Matthew that are very exceptionable, and seem to contradict the account given in the old Testament. The sirst is, that where he says, that 'Josias begat Jeconias, and his brethren, 'tis very certain, that Josias did not beget Jechonias: He was not the son of Josias, but his fon's fon: And then it may justly seem still more strange, that he should be said to beget him and his brethren. The other is what we read that Jechonias begat Salathiel; this may much surprize any one, that considers, what we find in the prophet Jeremy, that 'Jechonias was childless.

FIFTHLY, it hath been objected against St. Matthew, that the he has

divided his whole time into three parts, and puts fourteen generations in each; and to this purpose takes the liberty of leaving out three at once in the second of these thirds; yet after all this needless care, his numbers do not fall right. For if we reckon Jechonias to belong to the third part, there will be but thirteen from Solomon to Josias inclusively lest in the second: and if we leave Jechonias the last of the second part, we shall find but thirteen lest for the third, from Salathiel to Christ, inclusively.

Matt. 1. 11. Ver. 18. Per. 22. 30.

Digitized by Google

I HAVE faithfully summed up the main objections against the account given by the Evangelists of this matter: I shall now proceed to give an answer to them: And before I come to a particular reply to the several objections reckoned up before, I think sit to premise some things by way of introduction thereunto.

AND first it must be granted, that the difficulty is great; and these objections do require a very particular consideration, because they are levelled against the whole Christian religion. For if Jesus was not of the family of David, he could not be the Christ. That Jesus is the Christ, is the main and sundamental article of our religion, upon which all the rest, which follow upon it, do depend; and we ought not to neglect any thing, whatever it be, that attempts upon this truth. Upon which consideration I judge the present question worthy to be considered with all possible care

and application.

But then we have not sufficient cause to question the truth of the Christian religion because of these difficulties. For Jesus hath given us a sufficient demonstration, that he is the Christ the Son of God, by the mighty works which he did, and his resurrection from the dead. They are very weak and soolish men, who will renounce the whole religion, because there are some things said or taught in it, which they are not able to comprehend, or give an account of. There are many difficulties in the old Testament, and seeming contradictions; and yet both the Jews and Christians do with great reason receive those books with great veneration. It is a very easy thing to perplex a learned Jew with many difficulties to be found in the books of Moses, of Samuel, the Kings and Chronicles, especially in matters of names and numbers; but he will not therefore doubt of the whole, because he is not able to give a clear account of those difficult passages, which are found therein.

Besides, It is not reasonable, that the Jews should in this matter press the Christians; much less ought they to exult and vaunt, as they do. For (not to infift upon this, that Jesus, while he lived, was owned to be of the house of David) the books of genealogy being lost, and the means of clearing this matter remov'd, the Jews ought not to infult over Christians upon this account, and at this distance of time. We do believe that Jesus was of the family of David; the Jews do not attempt to produce any positive proof against this: We challenge them to do this, if they can. Instead of going about that, they urge us with the different account given in by our Evangelists, and put us upon reconciling them, who in the main question do agree. I appeal to any indifferent person, whether it be likely, that the Evangelists should in the beginning of their relations, fay that which would overthrow the credit of the whole. They may differ in their account, but 'tis not credible, that they should contradict one another. It may be difficult to reconcile them; but 'tis incredible, that they should say any thing, that doth subvert the credit of the whole. These writers were good men, or evil: They were sincere reporters of the truth, or else false men, who designed to cheat the world. If we fay, that they were honest and good, they cannot be supposed to contradict one another: If we say, that they designed to cheat,

<sup>?</sup> Rom. 1. 4.

#### 112 A DEMONSTRATION PART II.

it is not to be imagined, that they would have suffered so much difference in their relation: They would rather so have ordered the matter, that there should have been no seeming contradiction betwixt them.

### CHAP. VII.

The design of St. Matthew in giving an account of the genealogy of Jesus. Of his dividing the whole time from Abraham to the birth of Jesus into three intervals, each of which takes up fourteen generations. The exception against his Tessar-decads propounded. An account of the sons and successors of Josias. Jehoahaz was not the eldest son of Josias. Of Jehojakim and Jehojachin, and the little difference of those two names. Matt. 1. 11. considered at large: Of the different readings of that place. That by Jechonias sirst mentioned in St. Matthew is meant Jehojakim: that by Jechonias, Matt. 1. 12. is meant the son of Jehojakim: This desended against the exceptions, which may be brought against it. The testimony of St. Hierom in this matter. A table of the several Tessar-decads.

WOULD not be mistaken, in what I said in the close of the foregoing chapter. I grant, that there is difficulty in the question which I am upon: But then I must also affirm, That it is not so great as it seems. The Jews have no reason upon this account to reject Christianity, or to insult over the professors thereof.

HAVING premised these things; I shall now proceed to consider the force of what hath been said before, and to defend the Evangelists against the Jews. I shall not think my self obliged to observe the very same method in my answer, which is observed in the objections; I shall only take care, that I do not omit any thing, that is worthy of consideration.

FIRST, I shall consider the account given by St. Matthew, and desend him against the objections, which are brought against him. What his design and purpose was, is best learned from his own words, who calls this account which he gives, The book of the generation of Jesus Christ. And the Messias being promised to Abraham the father of the Israelites, of whose seed he was to spring; and after that more particularly to David, out of whose samily he was to be born; therefore he calls him the son of David the son of Abraham. In the deducing of this genealogy from Abraham to Christ, he divides the whole into

1 Matt. 1. 1.

three

three very remarkable parts or portions, according to the very different circumstances in which these descendants from Abraham were. The first is the age of the patriarchs, before the temple was built, and till the time that the kingdom was let up, and established in the family of David: and this portion of time extends from Abraham unto David. The second portion of time is that of the kingdom and of the temple, from Solomon to Jehojakim or Jechonias. The third takes place from the captivity of Babylon, upon which the kingdom received an end, and their first temple was destroyed: and this extends from Jechonias, the son of Jehojakim and grandchild of Josias, unto Christ. Each of these portions of time for the help of memory, and for the greater perspicuity, and to avoid all alteration of his account here given, he divides into fo many Tessara-decads. To the pitching upon the number of fourteen, it is probable he was determin'd by this, that when he took a view of the first portion of time from Abraham to David, he found this number: and for what appears, he found the same number (even according to the Jews manner of reckoning) in the third portion of time also, viz. from Jechonias to Christ: Hereupon he reduced the middle portion of time to the same number also. The Evangelist having thus divided his whole time into three parts, and filled up each part with a Tessara-decad of degrees, which are particularly set down; he proceeds to tell the equal distances of degrees, from the beginning to the close of each third portion of the whole time. So all the generations from Abraham to David are fourteen generations; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon, are fourteen generations; and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ, are fourteen generations. Where the Evangelist only tells, that there are fourteen degrees to be found reckoned up in the account, which he gives before in each third part of time: But he doth not fay, that there were not above fourteen persons born from the beginning to the close of any of those intervals.

Except I. Before I go any farther, I shall consider that pretence before mentioned, that the numbers of the Evangelist fall not right. For granting that the feveral Tessara-decads are to be understood with respect to the account, which he gives before, which cannot be reasonably denied; yet still, if we reckon Jechonias in the third part, there will be but thirteen lest in the second; and if we place him to the second, there will be but thirteen left in the third. To which I shall add another difficulty, arising from the Evangelist's words, where he says, 'Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren: Whereas it is manifest, that Josias did not beget Jechonias, who was not his, but his son's son. And as for Jechonias, as it doth not appear, that he had brethren; so there could be no manner of reason, why the Evangelist should mention them, if there had been any. I put these exceptions together, because the same answer will serve for both of

Answ. In order to give a more clear and full answer to these exceptions, I think fit to premise something of the sons and successors of Josias king of Judah. It is very well known, that Josias was killed at Megiddo by Pharaoh one of the kings of Egypt, and upon his death,

\* Matt, 1. 17.

2 Matt. 1. 11.

*7EHO-*

## 114 ADEMONSTRATION PART II.

FEHOAHAS ' his fon fucceeds him in the kingdom. He was indeed the fon of Josiah; yet not his eldest son, (who should have succeeded his father) but his second son. That he was not his eldest son, is fo plain and evident from the text, that one would think it were hardly possible, for any man that reads it to doubt of it. But I find a learned man, who pretends to give an account of this matter, affirming that he was the eldest son of Josiah. Postquam Josias excessit ex cætu mortalium, populi suffragio delatum est regnum Joachaso, primogenito Josia, saith he. That this is false, is evident from the text: For whereas Jehoahaz was twenty and three years old, when he began to reign, and reigned three months, Jehojakim his brother, who succeeded him, was twenty and five years old when he began to reign, and consequently older than Jehoahaz. Besides, it is expresly said, that the people of the land took Jehoahaz the fon of Josiah, and anointed him, and made him king in his father's stead. There was no need he should be anointed, if he had been the first born: The Hebrew doctors tell us, That the son of a king (to whom the kingdom belonged of right) was not wont to be anointed. This man was made king by the people against right, whilst his elder brother, to whom the kingdom did belong, was passed by. I say his elder brother: For so Fosephus ' calls Jehojakim, whom the king of Egypt set over the kindgom. His words are these, To πρεσβυτέρο ἀυτε ἀδελοῦ ὁμοπατρίο ὅντι Ελιακίμο τύτομα την βαπλέαν παραδίδισι. Jehoahaz ' was taken by Pharaoh-Necho, put into bands at Riblah, and carried into Egypt; and he died there. He is called Shallum, by the prophet Jeremiah; who doth in ' the same chapter speak of him, and the two succeding kings, in that order in which they succeeded one the other. And what he fays of Shallum, must be interrupted of Jehoahaz, if the words of the prophet, and context of the place be duly considered. His words are these: For thus saith the Lord concerning Shallum, the son of Josiah king of Judah, which reigned instead of Josiah his father, which went forth out of this place, He shall not return thither any more: But he shall die in the place, whither they have led him captive, and shall see this land no more. Jer. 22. 11, 12. He is succeeded by his elder brother

JEHOJAKIM, who had before that been called *Eliakim*, and received this change in his name from *Pharaoh*, who placed him in his kingdom, and whose tributary he was. He was five and twenty years old, when he began to reign, and reigned eleven years. This king becomes a

fervant to Nebuchadnezzar.

JEHOJACHIN, the fon of Jehojakim last named, succeeds in the kingdom. He was eighteen years old when he began to reign, and reigned three months. Him Nebuchadnezzar takes and carries to Babylon. This Jehojachin is called Coniah; and that is but the contraction of Jechoniah. The Septuagint, do render both Coniah and Jehojachin by Inxuria. Josias was the grandfather of this king, who was the son of Jehojakim; and was almost of the same name with his father. I know very well, that there is a difference in the Hebrew names of the one and the other; and that in two

letters;

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> 2 Kin. 23, 29, 30, 31, 36.

<sup>2</sup> V. Zemah David. R. David. Gantz. p. 46.

Seder Olam Rab. c. 24.

Joseph. Ant. l. 10. c. 6.

Z Kin. 23, 33, 34.

Abravenel in locum. V. Theodoret in Jer 22. & Aben Ezr. in Dan. 1. 1.

Z Kin. 23, 36.

Jer. 22, 24. with 2 Chron. 36. 8, 6. with the Comment of Hieron. in Dan. 1.

letters; and criticks have observed it: But they are two such letters, as make the difference very finall; and the latter of the two, which makes the chief difference, I find generally the Seventy interpreters so far from observing, that they give both names usually the same termination. Upon this account I presume it is, that 'several of the antients have affirmed this king and his father to have been of the same name. And tho I find, late writers severe upon them for their saying so; yet I do conceive, that they deserve not any severity upon this account. For besides that Josephus makes no difference in the termination of these two names, I find the Seventy interpreters render both Jehojakim and Jehojachin by the same word Total Jensey [Jer. 1. 3. 22. 18. \$, 24. chap. 24. 1. &c. 25. 1. chap. 26. 1, 21. Dan. 1.1, 2. with Jer. 52. 31. with the LXXII. in those places.]

ZEDEKIAH the son of Josiah succeeds in the kingdom. He was

twenty and one years old, when he began to reign. His name was Mattaniah: The king of Babylon chang'd it into Zedekiah upon making him

king. This was the last of the kings of Judah.

WE see that Josias lest three sons, who were kings after him, viz. Jehoahaz, who obtained it by the people against right; Jehojakim, and Zedekiah; and that Jehojakim was succeeded immediately by his son Jehojachin, as he was by his uncle Zedekiah. Having premised these things, I shall now proceed to take off the exception against the Evangelist, which I mentioned above. We see by this account, that Jechonias was not the fon of Josias, but his son's son: we find not, that he had brethren; and yet Josias is said to have begotten him and his brethren. Besides, had he had brethren, there could be no occasion of mentioning them here. And farther according to this account, there are but thirteen degrees mentioned in one of those intervals, to which the Evangelist assigns four-

teen. In answer to this difficulty, I have two things to offer.

1. THAT the different reading of Matt. 1. 11. doth remove the difficulty. We read it commonly thus, Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, &c. But we have it remarked in the margins of our Bibles, that some read, Josias begat Jakim, and Jakim begat Jechonias. And thus I find it to be in the English Bible used in the days of queen Elizabeth, before the Bible was newly translated in the days of king James I. I find this reading mentioned by Robert Stephens, in his new Testament in Folio, printed at Paris, Anno Dom. 1550. and retained in the margin. The same reading I find afterward in the text in an edition of the new Testament by Henry Stephens, printed in the year 1569. I shall not need to mention any others of later date; the diligence and integrity of those men above nam'd is unquestionable. This agrees with the account given, 1 Chron. 3. 15, 16. For this Jakim (or Jehojakim) was indeed the fon of Josias, and the father of Jechonias also. This quite removes the pretence, that there is one wanting to make up one of the Tessara-decads: nor can any man justly complain, that we trespass upon the Sacred Text, when we prefer some other reading before that, which is vulgarly and commonly followed. But provided we do with great care examine these things, we ought not to be censured, when we follow a certain reading, which is vouched by good authority, and at the same time is more agreeable to the acknowledged truth of things. However, I shall

Digitized by Google

<sup>\*</sup> Clem. Alexandrin, Stromat. Serm. 1. <sup>3</sup> J. Scaliger Annotat. in Euseb. Chron. p. 79. Sulp. Sever. S. Hist. l. 1. 4 2 Kin. 24. 17, 18.

## 116 A DEMONSTRATION PART II.

not obtrude this reading, tho it be confirmed by more copies, than what I have named:

FOR besides that it will not remove all the difficulty, which lies before us, it is not sufficiently attested. The Vulgar Latin agrees with our ordinary reading, so doth the Syriac version, and most of the Greek copies And very probable it is, that Jakim or Joakim was at first only added in the margin by some intelligent readers over against Jechonias first named, by way of explication; and that afterwards it crept into the text: Yet Robert Stephens kept it in the margin still, nor have I seen above one copy, where it hath been received into the text. And besides all that hath been faid, this reading will not fully answer the whole objection. still Jakim (i. e. Jehojakim) will be said to beget, not only Jechonias, but his brethren: And it will be hard to defend the truth first, and then the pertinence of that expression. For I cannot join with those men, who do not only admit that reading which I have mention'd (for which there doth not want some colour) but make another alteration of their own heads, without so much as a pretence of ancient copies for their warranty, reading it thus, Josias begat Joakim and his brethren, and Joakim begat Jechonias, &c. And therefore I shall not rely upon this answer (tho it be not worthy of consideration) but proceed to another.

2. That Jechonias, mentioned ver. 11. and Jechonias ver. 12. are not the same but distinct, the first the Father, called Jehojakim; the second the son, who is sometimes call'd Jehojachin, sometimes Jechoniah, and once Coniah, as hath been observed before. The first of these is the last of the second class or Tessara-decad, the second is the first of the third.

The very text of St. Matthew gives us sufficient intimation of the truth of what I affirm. Josias (saith he) begat Jechonias and his brethren. It doth by no means appear, that Jechonias the younger, mentioned ver. 12. had brethren. But this Jechonias (i.e. Jehojakim) had brethren: And there is great reason, not only why he should be mentioned (he being a king, and the son of an excellent king, the brother of two, and the sather of one,) but why his brethren should also: For his brethren were kings, Jehoahaz before him, and Zedekiah after him, and his son. This mention of his brethren determines the point, and intimates to us, who is meant by this Jechonias, who is sirst mentioned, viz. Jehojakim. For tho Jehoahaz succeeded Josiah, as hath been observed before, yet is not he, but Jehojakim mentioned here; and with very good reason: For Jehoahaz was not the elder son: and tho he reigned sirst; yet it was by stepping into the throne by the help of the people, and by usurpation; and upon that score he is not mentioned here. And I am apt to believe, that for that reason, he who put himself forward against right, is in the book of Chronicles mentioned in the last place of all, even after Zedekiah, who was younger than he. Jehojakim was the right heir to the crown of his father; and did upon the removal of Jehoahaz succeed in the kingdom; and lest a son to succeed him of his own name. Josias, as hath been observed, lest three sons, who were all kings after him.

But these three sons make but one degree in this genealogy; and Jehajakim being the eldest of the three, it was enough to mention him and his brethren.

Digitized by Google

L. Brugens. Not. ad varias Lectiones N. T. R. Simon Hist. Crit. du Text du N. Testam. p 394.

As from what hath been said, it is evident, that by Jechonias, ver. 11. is meant Joakim, or Jehojakim the son of Josiah; so it is also des monstrable, that he cannot be the same person, who is called Jechonias, ver. 12. For it appears, that Jehojakim died three months before the transfamigration, or carrying into Babylon; whereas Jechonias, mentioned, ver. 12. is said to have begotten Salathiel, after they were brought to Babylon.

AGAIN, It is manifest from the text of St. Matthew, that Jechonius, ver. 11. and Jechonius, ver. 12. are not one and the same person, because they are put into several classes; the sirst to the elose of the fecond, and the second to the beginning of the third. Of the sirst it is said, that he was begotten by Josias, about (or towards) the time they were carried away to Babylon: But then when he comes to speak of the other Jethonius, he saith, And after they were brought to Babylon Jechonius begat Salathiel, &cc. And that we might the more attentively heed his words, the Evange-list doth particularly warn us by his words ver. 17. where he tells us expressly, That all the generations from Abraham to David, are fourteen; and that he hath given in a particular of so many from David to the carrying away to Babylon, and from thence to Christ: And so many and no more there are to be found in the particulars laid before us by that Evangelist in the foregoing part of the chapter: which would not be, if Jechonius; ver. 11. and Jechonius, ver. 12. were one and the same person.

And tho the father be called Jechonias, ver. 11. and the fon called for ver. 12. yet there are so many things said in the very text of St. Matthews (especially compared with the old Testament) as do not only sufficiently assure us, that they are not one and the same person; but do likewise give us to understand, who they are. When we read in the text of St. Matthews, that Josias did beget Jechonias, we are certain that by Jechonias there must be meant one of the sons of Josias, and that it can belong to none but him, who was otherwise called Jehojakim. And when we read (ver. 12.) that Jechonias begat Salathiel, we must of necessity understand it of Jechonias

the fon of Jehojakim: For this agrees with the old Testament.

Nor is this account of this matter any new conceit of mine, or devised craftily to get loose of the Jews, who press hard upon us! There is no need of artifice; nor will any honest man or good Christian use any, upon any consideration whatsoever. I shall content my self with one testimony to my present purpose, by which we shall understand, that the text of St. Matthews was not then thought desective; and that, when Porphyry objected this dissifuculty against the Evangelist, the answer which I now give, was given in those days. 'Tis that' of St. Hierom upon Daniel, and his words are these. Nemo putet eundem in Danielis principio esse Joakim, qui in Ezekielis exordio Joachin scribitur. Iste enim extremam syllabam Kim habet, ille Chin Et ob hanc causam in evangelio secundam Matthæum una videtur deesse generatio; quia secunda rissaes strus in Joakim desinit, silio Josia, & tertia incipit a Joachin, silio Joakim. Quod ignorans Porphyrius calumniam struit ecclesia, suam ostendens imperitiam, dum evangelista Matthæi ara guere nititur falsitatem. Again, 'in another place, Sciamus Jechoniam priorem ipsum esse, quem & Joakim; secundum autem silium non patremi

3 2 Kin. 23. 6. 4 Id in Mat. cap. 17 1 Chron. 3. 15, 16, 17?

Hieronym, in Dan: es te

Non

# 118 ADEMONSTRATION PART IF.

Nor is it any objection against the Evangelist (nor yet against this account which hath been given in this matter) that he doth not mention the begetting of Jechonias, who is the first of the third Classis, as he doth that of those who go before and follow him. It is enough in this place, that he mentions the person; and that so plainly also, that the diligent reader cannot easily mistake. The word yet in St. Matthew signifies the person begotten; and it is a rule among the lawyers, as a very learned man hath well observed, That 'tis the Person begotten which adds a degree. Semper

generata persona gradum adjicit.

Some perhaps may cavil at the Evangelist (and at this account which I have given) because he says Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon. Whereas it is certain that, whatever is meant here by carrying into Babylon, Josias was dead several years before that could happen; and that he did beget Jehojakim (called here Jechonias) almost fifty years before the captivity, in the days of Zedekiah. If there was any weight in this, I should readily consider it; but there is nothing more trisling than this exception is. For besides that there is no reason, why we should understand the carrying away into Babylon, of the captivity upon the taking of Zedekiah (for not to mention what happened to Jehojakim and in his time, 2 Chron. 36. 5, 6, 7. there was a remarkable carrying away to Babylon in the days of Jehojachin, 2 Kin. 24. 12, 13, 14, 15. before the reign of Zedekiah) there being a manifest difference to be observed, between the transmigration or carrying away, and the captivity: Besides this, I say, it is evident, that the Evangelist being now come to the close of the second Classis or Tesara-decas (which ended in the fons of Josias) gives an account of them, as of those in whom the second portion of time received its full period; for they continued to the carrying away to Babylon. There is no necessity that those words, about the time they were carried away to Babylon, should connect with the word beget; it is as easy to connect them with the persons begotten: viz. Jechonias and his brethren, who are there said to have been about that time. But be that as it will, it matters not. It is very evident, tho those words should be connected with the word begat, that by them cannot be meant any precise time; unless you will say, that Josias begat his sons all at once: Whereas it is evident, that there were fifteen or fixteen years difference between the age of Jehojakim and Zedekiah. It is enough that Jechonias and his brethren were born, before the carrying away to Babylon, and lived about that time. The Mons \* Testament hath given the sense of the words of the Evangelist, by rendring Matthew 1. and 11. thus; Josias engendra Jechonias & ses freres, vers le temps que les Juiss surant transportez en Babylone. It is enough that these sons of Josias were born towards the time of the carrying away to Babylon; i. e. towards or about the time when some of the Jews were carried thither.

Some perhaps may object against the account, which I have given, That it doth not appear, that Jehojakim is any where in the old Testament called Jechoniah; and that therefore I have not sufficient warranty for affirming that Jechonias mention'd Matt. I. II. is the same with Jehojakim. To this I answer, (I.) That this is but a negative argument, against what I have said, and therefore doth not conclude much. I grant, that we do not find that Jehojakim is called Jechoniah

Petr. de Marca de stemmate Christi.

• Printed, 1672.

in any of the books of the old Testament; but this doth not infer, that he was not to called in the times of the old Testament among his own people; much less that St. Matthew could not of right term him Isxorias. (2.) That by Jechonias is meant Jehojakim (Matt. 1.11.) I have abundantly proved already, from the undeniable evidence of the text of the Evangelist, compared with the account, which we have in the old Testament of the sons and successors of king Josias. 'Tis upon this ground, that I found my Interpretation of Matt. 1.11. And therefore there remains nothing for me to do in this matter, but to defend the Evangelist for calling Jehojakim by the name of Jechonias. Wherefore I proceed to this, and answer, (3.) That the Evangelist might of right term fehojakim by the name of fechonias, which was the name given to his son in the old Testament. For fehojakim the father, and Jehojachin the son are names very like one another. As to the found, there is but the difference of one letter; tho there be the difference of two in the writing. The Jews very well know, that those letters, in which the names differ from each other in writing, are fuch as are frequently changed into one another. Several of the ancients call them the very same name, as hath been intimated before: and the difference of termination (wherein the main difference lies) is not so much as observed by Josephus, or the Septuagint. Besides this, I have shewn above, that the Greek interpreters translate both Jehojakim and Jehojachin by the very same Greek word: To which I may add, That the author of the Apocryphal books of Esdras makes no difference between the one and the other. And therefore why Jechonias may not of right be used by the Evangelist for Jeho. jakim, I do not understand: I am sure the Jews have no cause to complain.

I SHALL lay before the reader the several Tessara-decads of St. Matthew

as follows:

	<b>I.</b>	•	11.	•	m.
I	Abraham.	I	Solomon.	I	Jechonias.
2	Isaac.	2	Roboam.	2	Salathiel.
3	Jacob.	3	Abia.	3	Zorobabel.
4	Judas.	4	Afa.	4	Abiud.
4 5 6	Phares.	5 6	Josaphat.	5	Eliakim.
6	E from.	6	Joram.	6	Azor.
. <b>7</b>	Aram.	7 8	Ozias.	7	Sadoc.
. 8	Aminadab.	8	Joatham.	8	Achim.
9	Naasson.	9	Achaz.	9	Eliud.
10	Salmon.	10	Ezekias.	10	Eleazar.
11	Booz.	11	Manasses.	11	Matthan.
12	Obed.	12	Amon.	12	Jacob.
13	Jesse.	13	Josias.	13	Joseph.
14	David.	14	Jechonias.	14	Christ.
Years 882.		415.		5 <i>99</i> .	

HERE the reader sees the several Tessara-decads, as they lie in St. Matthew, without any altering his text: And as this division of the whole time from Abraham to Chisat into three parts, is very agreeable to the

practice

P Jac. Armachani Chronol. p. 29.

<sup>•</sup> Edr. c. 1. 37. with 43.

practice of the Jewish Writers; so doth it also represent to us the several circumstances, in which the Jews were from the very first sounder of that nation, considered as a separate people or church. In the first we have an account of their beginning, their sojourning and increase, before any temple was built, and the kingdom possessed by the off-spring of David. This portion of time, viz. from the hundredth year of Abraham and birth of Isaac, to David's death, contains 882 years. In the second we have an account of that people under the government of kings, and during the standing of Solomon's temple: This was their more exalted state; and from the beginning of Solomon's reign to the death of Jehojakim, call'd Jechonias Matth. I II. are 415 years. The third gives an account of the declining state of the Jews to the birth of Christ, and contains 599 years. Thus much for the first exception.

# 

#### CHAP. VIII.

A second exception against St. Matthew, for his affirming that Jechonias begat Salathiel. An answer unto it; that the old Testament saith the very same. That Jer. 22. 30. is no sufficient objection against the Evangelist. A farther consideration of those words in Jeremiah chap. 22. 30. A third exception against the Evangelist, for his affirming that Salathiel begat Zorobabel, whereas he was the son of Pedaiah, 1 Chron. 3. 19. An answer thereunto. A tourth exception against St. Matthew, for his affirming that Zorobabel beget Abiud, who is not reckoned among his sons, 1 Chron. 3. 19. An answer to this exception.

Except. II. THE next exception against St. Matthew is, for what he affirms, ver. 12. that Jechonias begat Salathiel; which, as is pretended, is a contradiction to what is said, Jer. 22. 30. where he is pronounced Childless. To which I reply,

Answ. 1. That the few ought not to object this against the Evangelist, because he says no more, than what we find written in the old Testament, where Salathiel is expressly called the son of this fechoniah, 1 Chron. 3.17. The Evangelist agrees with the old Testament, and this is sufficient to justify him; nor am I obliged to give any farther answer to it: If there be any difficulty in this matter, it is because the old Testament doth not agree with it self. But tho I am not obliged to give the Jew any other answer; yet because this seeming difference between the Book of Chronicles and Jeremiah may create some trouble to others, I shall consider it in this place.

2. I SHALL make it appear, that what is said in *Jeremiah*, is not inconsistent with what is said in the book of *Chronicles*, or what is affirmed by

our Evangelist. For taking it for granted, that in the prophet Jeremiah it is denounced against him, that he should be childless; yet it doth not thence follow, that he should not have a child; for this would be verified as much, if the children, which he bad, died before him, as if he had never had any child at all: He that is berest of his children, is as much childless, as he who never begat any. There will be no doubt of this, if we duly consider it, and compare it with Lev. 20. 20. But supposing still, that it was denounced against him, that he should never have a child (which is by no means to be granted) yet how often hath God reversed such sentences upon the repentance of him, who hath been threatned? And there is a tradition among the Jewish doctors (which Kimchi mentions in his commentary on this place) that Jechoniah repented in prison; and that thereupon the sentence, which was gone out against him, was reversed.

3. That it is not evident from the text of Jeremiah, that it was denounced against Jechoniah, that he should be childless. Indeed we render the Hebrew word so; and the Chaldee paraphrast speaks to the same sense; and so doth the Vulgar. But yet it doth not appear by any means, that the Hebrew word in that place is to be determined to that particular sense. For the it cannot be denied, that the Hebrew word sometimes signifies childless; yet, it being observed, that it comes from a word which signifies to strip or deprive, it may very well (at least in a translated sense) signify any other misery or inselicity, as well as being childless; such as banishment from our country, and being deprived of our former prosperity. observed long ago by one of the ancient, and most learned fathers of the church; who tells us how differently this Hebrew word was translated by the ancient interpreters, in these words. Pro sterili, in Hebrao, scriptum est ערירי, quod Aquilæ prima editio sterilem, secunda מישטנחדיי, i. e. non crescentem, Symmachus vacuum, LXXII & Theodotius abominabilem, & abdicatum interpretati sunt. Certain it is, that Jechoniah was abject, and cast out of his kingdom and country at once; and our LXXII render the word by inniguator, which is observed to signify such a person.

4. It is so far from appearing from feremiah, that fechoniah was to be childless, that the very contrary appears from him: And his words do sufficiently justify my interpretation, which I have given of that Hebrew word, which we render childless. The words of the prophet are these: Thus saith the Lord, Write ye this man childless (or, miserable, and stripped) a man that shall not prosper in his days: For no man of his seed shall prosper, sitting upon the throne of David, and ruling any more in Judah By which words it is evident, that he was not to be childless; tho his children should not succeed him in his throne and dignity. For in these words (as Theodoret well observes) the prophet declares the end of the kingdom of

Judah.

Except. III. The next exception against St. Matthew is, for his affirming that Salathiel begat Zorobabel; which doth not agree with the account, which we have in 'the book of the Chronicles: For it appears from thence, that Zerubbabel was the son of Pedajah, and this Pedajah the son of Salathiel: So that Zorobabel could not be the son of Salathiel, but was the son of his son.

<sup>1</sup> V. R. D. Kimchi Rad. in voce 773.

Hominem, Irenæus renders it, 1.3. c. 30. adverf. Hæref.

1 Chron. 3. 19.

Hieron, in Jer. 22 30. Abdicatum
Jer. 22, 30.

I WILL admit for once, that so it is; and that by Zorobabel in St. Matthew is meant that famous person called sometime the governour, or captain of Judah, Haggai 1.1. I will grant in this matter more than I am strictly bound to do; and yet defend our Evangelist, upon principles which

the Jews ought not to reject. And to that end I do reply,

Answ. 1. That the affirming that Salathiel begat Zorobabel imports no more than this, Zorobabel was the son of Salathiek according to the ulage of the Jewish nation might be truly said by St. Matthew, though it should appear, that Zorobabel was not the immediate son of Salathiel, but of his son Pedajah. 'Tis well known, that they are called the fons of Ifrael, who were his posterity, though at the distance of many generations. And the Evangelist according to that manner of speaking calls Jesus Christ the son of David, and the son of Abraham. But there is nothing more common among the Hebrews than to reckon the grandfon the fon of the grandfather; בוי בנים הריהן כבנים, i. e. The sons of sons are as sons, or rather, The children of children are as children. It is easy to shew this by a great many instances. Abraham speaking of Sarah ' saith, Indeed she is my sister, she is the daughter of my father, &c. It is very 'evident, that Sarah was no otherwise the daughter of Terah, than as she was the daughter of his son Haran, who is said to be the father of Milcha and of Iscah, i. e. of Sarah, as is agreed both by Jews and Christians also. And Zorobabel must be allowed to be as much the son of Salathiel, as Sarah was the daughter of Terah, who was the father of her father. But so it was, Haran died before Terah, and the daughters which he left, were called the daughters of Terah, according to the known custom of those eastern countries; where the sons, and daughters were called the children of the grandfathers, even when the father was alive. Thus we' read, that Laban expostulates with Jacob, saying, Thou hast not suffered me to kiss my sons and my daughters. He could have no sons to kiss but the sons of Jacob; which he esteemed his, as they were the sons of his children: And he tells Jacob, and twas the sense of the eastern countries, That those children were his children. Thus Laban is called the son of Nahor; whereas he was the fon of Bethuel, who was the fon of Nahor: And Jehoram is called the father of Jehoash, who was indeed the father of his father Ahaziah: And, Maachah, the daughter of Abishalom is said to be the mother of Asa, when she was so no otherwise, than as she was his father's mother.

2. THAT the old Testament, when it mentions ' Zorobabel, calls him the fon of Salathiel, (without taking notice of Pedajah) and therefore the Jews have no cause to object against the Evangelist, who speaks after the same manner. Thus is he called Zerubbabel the son of Salathiel (so tis in the Greek for Shealtiel) or of Shealtiel: Thus he is called elsewhere also. We find that our Evangelist speaks of him as the old Testament doth; and is not to be blamed for leaving out Pedajah, when the writers of the old Testament leave him out. This is "observed by David Kemchi, who says that Zerubbabel was the son of Pedajah, tho called the son of Shealtiel (or Salathiel). Salathiel he conceives mentioned as a person of

greater

<sup>\*</sup> Gen. 20. 12. with ch. 11. 28, 29.

\* V. St. Hieronym. contra Helvidi. p. 12.

\* 2 Kin. 12. 18.

Hagg. 1. 1. ( 3 Joseph Ant. l. 1. c. 7. Juchasin. fol. 7. Gen. 31. 28. Ver. 43. 2 1 Kin. 15. 10. With ver. 2. e Ezr. 3. 2. ch. 5. 2.. Neh. 12. 1. Hagg. 1. 1. ch. 2. 2. . Kimchi in Haggai 1. 1.

greater honour; and *Pedajah* as an obscure person passed by. Be that as it will, it is enough, that our *Evangelist* speaks of him after the same manner.

3. As the old Testament doth it; so do the other Jewish writers likewise call him the son of Salathiel without the mention of Pedajah. Thus in the Apocryphal book of Esdras, he is called Zorobabel the son of Salathiel several times. And thus is he called by Josephus the historian; so Salathiel said Salathiel, i. e. Zorobabel the son of Salathiel. And in the Seder Olam we find Zerubbabel, expressly called the son of Shealtiel without any mention of Pedajah. And thus I have in this matter sufficiently desended our Evangelist, tho it should be supposed, that the Zorobabel here mentioned is the same mentioned, 1 Chron. 3. and that he is that person, who was the captain of the Jews upon their return from the captivity of Babylon; into which matter I may more strictly inquire afterwards.

Except. IV. The next objection against St. Matthew is for his affirming, that Zorobabel begat Abihud: whereas the Sons of Zerubbabel are reckoned up a Chron. 3. 19. where there is no mention of Abihud. And yet 'tis not likely, that he should be omitted, if he had been one of his sons. I answer,

Answ. 1. That this objection doth suppose still, that Zorobabel in St. Matthew is meant of the same person, who is mentioned 1 Chron. 3. But this is not very evident; yet admitting it so to be, I answer,

2. That it is not unreasonable to suppose, That Abihud is mentioned in 1 Chron. 3. 19. under the name of Meshullam. It is very well known, that many persons in the old Testament had several names: And as this was common with them at all times; so it was especially about the time of their captivity (see Dan. 1. 6, 7.) They had other names in Babylon, beside those, which were used in their own land. And long before this time of the captivity this custom of several names obtained. The same son of David, who in the book of Samuel is called Chileab, is in the book of Chronicles called Daniel.

Pp2

CHAP.

## **→**\$\$& **→**\$\$**@ →**\$\$**@ →**\$\$**@ →**\$\$**@ →**\$\$**@**

#### CHAP. IX.

A fifth exception against St. Matthew, for his leaving out three kings at once. That the Evangelist cannot be charged justly of falsifying upon this account, or doing any thing inconsistent with his design. That the writers of the old Testament do frequently omit names, and are not upon that account to be rejected. That it is not hard to assign several causes, why they are omitted, and why these rather than others. That St. Matthew cannot be blamed for affirming that Joram begat Ozias.

Except. V. Another great exception against the Evangelist St. Matthew is, for his affirming, that Joram begat Ozias: It is evident that he leaves out three at once, viz. Ahaziah, Joash and Amaziah: And those three were not the worst of the kings of Judah neither, nor could he upon that pretence pass them over in silence. He might have passed by Ahaz, Manaseh, and Ammon as the greatest sinners: And after all this, for him to reckon from David to the carrying away into Babylon but sourteen generations is very strange. For though he makes but sourteen, yet it amounts to no less than seventeen; and according to his way of reckoning, he might have pitcht upon a less number, if he had thought sit. This is the most of this exception: for I have given it all the advantage, which I can. In answer whereunto, I offer the following particulars.

Anfw. 1. It is to be considered, That St. Matthew doth not say, that there were but sourteen persons born from David (to whom they succeeded in the kingdom) to the carrying away to Babylon. He says no such thing: He is very far from it: And his words deserve a very particular consideration. For as there were really but sourteen generations from Abraham to David; so he thought sit in the next interval to mention no more: But he no where affirms, that there were in all but sourteen degrees or descents from David to the carrying away into Babylon. So sar is he from saying so, that he gives an account of this matter in such terms, that a diligent reader may from the Evangelist's own words desend him in this matter. When then he summs up the generations of the first interval, he says, nagar, &cc. All the generations from Abraham to David, are fourteen generations: There were no more in all the degrees or descents from Abraham to David: But then when he comes to the second interval, he doth not say nagar all, as he did before (tho if he had done so, the all must have referred only

. Matt. 1. 17.

to those, whom he had mentioned) but, from David, until the carrying away into Babylon, are fourteen generations. So that all that he doth is this, that when he hath reckoned up so many, as he judged sufficient for his purpose, he tells us, That the whole number of those, which he had mentioned, came to fourteen, and so they do. For from Solomon to Jehojakim, or the first Jechonias inclusively, as they are reckoned by him, are just so many. Nor are those words of his (ver. 17.) superfluous or needless; where he tells us, That the summ of the generations, which he hath before fet down, are fourteen: The holy writers of the old Testament do frequently give in the particulars first, and then the total summ of the whole. The Evangelist doth so here; he divides his whole into three parts, and then tells you, how many generations he hath assigned or reckoned to each part. By this means we are assured, that if thro' the ignorance or carelesness of any transcriber, there should be found more or less than fourteen, under any of the several classes or sassipara, that there is some one generation or more wanting, or else supernumerary. It is true, that St. Luke did not take this course: he doth not give us the summ total of the generations from Joseph, unto the first man Adam. It seemed good to the divine wisdom, that we should have the names only in St. Luke, and not the number of the whole. In this we ought to acquiesce, as that which God thought fit and convenient. But still this we may fay, That if St. Luke (as St. Matthew hath done) had fet down the total fumm at the close of all, the great dispute about the Switts @ Cainan (not to mention any thing of Matthat and Levi) would have been easily prevented, or soon put to an end.

2. The paffing by these three kings, Ahaziah, Joash and Amaziah, is not inconsistent with the design of the Evangelist; nor doth it in the least hinder the gaining of his end, if the matter be considered with due application. The design of the Evangelist is plainly this, to shew that Jesus was of the house of David. To this purpose he reckons up Solomon, and those who succeeded him in his kingdom (as those from whom CHRIST was descended) for fix kings together, in the same order in which they are found in the old Testament; and after the omission of three kings, he returns to the same course, reckoning the kings successively to the carrying away to Babylon. His passing from foram to Ozias cannot be called a going out of the way at all: He keeps in the same line, and uses the very same method still, to prove Jesus of the house and family of David. And admitting Ozias to be of the family of David (as 'tis confest by all that he was) he proves Jesus to be of the same family, as much by deducing him from Ozias, as if he had mentioned the three kings, whom he thought fit to omit. Aram was as truly descended from Abraham, as Jacob was (the there be three generations between Jacob and Aram;) and he that proves, that David did descend from Aram, doth at the same time prove him to have descended both from Jacob, and from Abraham also. If the Jews could prove, that Ozias was not of the family of David, or that Jesus was not descended from Ozias, they would say something to the purpose: But this they do not attempt. They quarrel with the Evangelist for omitting three kings; but this is nothing to the main question. There was no need that he should mention them, for the purpose which he had in hand. Had he named some, not mentioned in the old Testament, the Jews might have excepted against him

very justly for obtruding persons of his own head, whom the sacred writers had not mentioned, when yet there were books in the old Testament, which were penned for our instruction in that matter. But I see no reason, why they should blame him for omitting three kings, when he neither undertook to give a persect list of them, nor did he pretend at any time, that he had so done; nor was it in the least requisite to his purpose, that he should do it.

3. As it is not inconfishent with the design of the Evangelist as to the main; so it was very fit, in order to make his second class agree with his first, and with his third. For he having divided his whole time into three very remarkable parts, agreeably to the various circumstances of the Hebrews from Abraham to CHRIST, it needed not to feem strange, that he should take so many only of the kings of Judah, as would answer the number from Abraham to David, and that from Jechonias to Joseph. Nor can I fee any cause, why the Jews should upon this account find fault. For as we are able to give a plausible account, why St. Matthew omitted three under his fecond class; so it is certain, that the writers of the old Testament do sometimes omit names, where we might as justly have expected them, as the reader of St. Matthew might have looked for those of Ahaziah, Joash and Amaziah: and yet no Man ought upon that account to question the authority of those books. The writer of the first book of Chronicles, when he begins with the sons of Judah (as he doth Chap. 4. ver. 1.) doth yet omit Zerah, one of his sons; and set down others who were not strictly his sons, tho they were indeed descended from him. St. Matthew omits three kings; but the penman of the books of Samuel, when he recounts the worthies of David, omits Joah; when yet he mentions his brother Abishai. If three kings are omitted, so is Cain in the book of Chronicles; and so is Simeon (even then when the children of Israel were reckoned up, and blessed by Moses) even in that place, where one would not have doubted, but to have found his name among the rest of his brethren. The writer of the book of Chronicles reckons up all the sons of Jacob (1 Chron. 2.1, 2.) and seems to design a particular account of the posterity of each of his sons: He doth actually give an account of the posterity of ten of them; but yet he omits in this account Zebulun and Dan. We find that Benjamin had ten sons, when the sons of Israel went down into Egypt; these are reckoned up by their names in the book of Genesis: And yet the writer of the first book of Chronicles, when he gives an account of the sons of Benjamin (which he doth in several places) doth not only give it different from that in Genesis, but one place differs from the other. For in one place he reckons no more than three, in the other five; and there are in both places names different, both from the account in the book of Genesis, and the several accounts which he gives himself: And yet no wife man doubts of the authority of that book upon this score. Again, the ' same author (as the author of the book of Samuel had done) doth mention and reckon up the chief and mighty men of David: And tho it be evident even from that book, that Joab was the chief among these; yet is he not so much as mentioned, even there where he gives in the number of the chief and mighty men belonging to David; when yet Asabel, the bro-

ther

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>o</sup> 1 Chron. 2. 3. with ch. 4. 1. 
<sup>o</sup> 2 Sam. 23, 18. 
<sup>o</sup> Deut. 33. 
<sup>o</sup> 1 Chr. 9. 1. 
<sup>o</sup> Gen. 46. 2. with 1 Chron. 7. & 6. & ch. 8. 2. 
<sup>o</sup> 1 Chron. 11. 6. with ver. 16, 11, 26, 39.

ther of Foab, and another who was his armour-bearer, are found in that The authors of the Juchasin (a book of great same among the שרילג ז רורות מאחישוב לאחישוב ובר׳ הימים hath observed of Ezra שרילג ז רורות מאחישוב לאחישוב ובר׳ הימים הוכירם. That he hath skipped over seven generations from one Ahitub to another, and that he hath mentioned them in the book of Chronicles. Thus much is very certain, that according to 'the account in the book of Ezra, there are reckoned from Serajah to Aaron sixteen generations inclusively, and no more: But in the Book of Chronicles, from Aaron to the same Serajah are reckoned two and twenty; and then there are just fix omitted in the one place, which are mentioned in another. And I am apt to believe, that the author of the Juchasin set down but six himself, tho we find it seven in his printed copy. For the Jewish writers numbering by the letters of the Alphabet; and there being so much likeness between the letter; (which is put for seven) and which stands for six, it is not to be wondred at, that the printer should put one for the other. If Ezra did cut short his genealogy, and omitted fix at once for no apparent reason, but for brevity lake, why should any man quarrel with our Evangelist for omitting three?

4. And the it doth not become Christians, who are sufficiently assured of the divine authority of the holy writers of the gospels, to inquire nicely into the reasons, why the Evangelist did pass by Ahaziah, Joash and Amaziah; yet it may, I think, be granted without any scruple, that they are not therefore passed by, because they were the greatest sinners that were to be found among all the kings of Judah, as is supposed in the exception Yet indeed they were bad men: Jehoram himself trod in the Jait named. steps of Ahab; and as for Ahaziah, who succeeded him, he was (says Josephus) ziger si margde, i. e. worse than his father. He' reigned but one year, and died a violent death, being flain by Jehu; as were also forty and two of his brethren: upon which accounts he was of very little value and consideration. Jehoash, who succeeded him, did well during the time of Jehojada, who instructed him: But afterwards he fell into idolatry; and is very infamous for killing Zechariah the son of Jehojada, who would have reduced him. He also died an untimely death, being slain by his own servants. As for Amaziah, the we read something of him that is good, yet it is certain he was a man of pride and vanity; and when he had overcome the Edomites, he worthipped their gods. He was taken by the king of Israel, who brake down the wall of Ferusalem, took hostages, and put him to an open shame. So that upon the whole matter, these kings were very evil men; and might very well be passed over in silence, as men who were of little note, if not very infamous, and unhappy; all of them coming to an untimely end.

5. No R will it be very hard to offer a very probable reason to the fews, who targe the omission of these three kings, with a design to overthrow the credit of the Evangelist, why they rather than any others are passed by in silence; tho I think, that they are very unreasonable in demanding it. To this purpose we are to remember, that offer some (who in the Evangelist is said to beget Ozias) was not only a very bad man, but an idolater, and one that married into an idolatrous samily. He walked in the ways of the

kings

<sup>\*</sup> Juchasin. fol. 10.

\* Ezra c. 7. with 2 Chron. 6.

\* 2 Kin. 8. 26.

\* 2 Kin. 10. 14.

\* 2 Kin. 12. 2.

\* 2 Chron. 24. 18, 21, 22, 25.

\* 2 Chron. 25. 12. 2 Kin. 14. 3.

\* 2 Chron. 21. 6. with 2 Kin. 8. 18.

kings of Israel, like as did the house of Ahab: for he had the daughter of Ahab to wife, and he wrought that which was evil in the eyes of the LORD. This account we have of him both in the book of Kings and Chronicles; and the words, which follow in both places, are very remarkable; for they import, that God was provoked by this king to destroy his family, as he had done that of Jeroboam, and as he was about to destroy that of Ahab. The words in the book of Chronicles are these: Howbeit the LORD would not destroy the house of David, because of the covenant that he had made with David; and as he promised to give a light to him, and to his fons for ever. Yet so it was, that for the cruelty and idolatry of this king, he is smitten in his bowels with an incurable disease: And as for Ahaziah, Joash and Amaziah, they were all cut off by an untimely and unnatural death: so remarkably did God punish the idolatry of this king; and the house of Ahab in his posterity. To what hath been related from the book of Kings and Chronicles, I add a tradition among the Jews, reported by one of their celebrated authors, that upon the affinity contracted by a king of the house of David with the house of Omri, God did decree to destroy the house of David with that of Ahab. And the God did not execute that decree vigorously, yet he imputes the destruction of Abaziah to it; and the two other kings came to violent deaths, who are ommitted by St. Matthew here.

If any man should enquire, why this sin was not also punished after the same manner in the succeeding kings, who descended from Joram and from Ahab's house as well as these; I answer, that God having threatned to punish the iniquity of idolatrous parents (for such are those to whom this is threatned, Exod. 20. as Maimon's well observes) to the third and fourth generation, it is enough that these succeeding kings are passed

over in silence by the Evangelist.

It is true, that he might have passed over Ahaz, Manaseh, and Amon, if it had been thought sit so to do; It is enough, that he rather chose to pass over these. And yet we may very well suppose, that Ahaz might be spared upon the account of the great virtue of his son Hezekiah, and Manaseh upon the account of his own repentance, and Amon upon the score of the eximious piety of his son Josiah. Whereas the kings omitted, besides the great faults of their own and of Joram's, were of the blood of Ahab an idolater, whose house was devoted to destruction. And tho they were not altogether destroyed; yet they all died violent Deaths, and are justly passed over in silence. I shall end this particular with the words of the Glossa ordinaria upon the first chapter of St. Matthew; where speaking of this omission, he gives this reason of it; viz. because Joram had married into the idolatrous samily of Abab: and then adds these words, Ideò memoria ejus à santa generatione tollitur, usque ad tertiam generationem: purgat vero labe gentilis samiliae, in quarta origo Christi numeratur.

6. Tho I think, that what hath been already said, is an abundantly sufficient answer to the difficulty that I am removing; yet I think good to name another answer, which a very learned man hath given to the exception above-named: And it is this; that the true reason why the Evangelist omits the mention of these three kings is this, viz. because they were omit-

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>a</sup> 2 Chron. 21. 7. with 2 Kin. 8. 19.
<sup>a</sup> More Nevochim, p. 1. c. 36.
<sup>a</sup> I Kin. 21. 21, 22.
<sup>a</sup> Gloff. ordinar. in Matt. cap. 1.
<sup>a</sup> Poffin. Diallacticon Interval. III. c. 29.

ted

ted in the Tabulæ censuales, which were kept in the temple, wherein the flems of families (especially of the Davidical and kingly line) were written down. This learned man endeavours to prove, that there were such tables kept in the archives of the temple; some of which were designed barely to give an historical account of the successions of one to another, in which no change could be admitted; and that there were others, which preserved the fame of the ecclesiasticks and civil magistrates, whose names were there registered; and that it was in use for the priests to erase out of these tables of this fecond fort the names of those, who had deserved ill; and that thence the custom did arise in the Christian church of blotting the names of evil clergy-men out of the ecclesiastick tables; and of deceased bishops, who were infamous, out of the facred diptychs: And thus among the Romans, the tyrants and evil magistrates were erased out of their fasti and publick monuments. I thought fit to mention this account of this very learned man: I must needs say, that this alone would be a sufficient answer to the exception above, if it was sufficiently prov'd and confirmed. And tho it may be true, and is very probable, and cannot be disproved; yet because it is not fufficiently confirmed, I will by no means urge it; but shall rest satisfied with what hath been faid before, in answer to the exception against our

I F any man should object, that it cannot be truly said that Joram begat Ozias, because Ozias was the son of Amaziah, who was the son of the grand-child of Ozias, he doth not duly consider the Hebrews way of speaking, and their maxims relating to this matter. The children of children are among that people reputed the children, not only of the immediate parents but of their ancestors. And more still, the ancestors may be said, and are said to beget those, who are removed some generations from them. Thus Isaiah tells Hezekiah, Of thy sons that shall issue from thee, which thou shalt beget, shall they take away; and they shall be eunuchs in the palace of the king of Babylon; Isa. 39.7. This prediction (as Procopius on the place well observes) was suffilled in the days of Jechonias; and tho these men, who thus served in the palace of the king of Babylon, were born long after the days of Hezekiah; yet notwithstanding they were at that great distance from him, he is said to beget them; and therefore St. Matthew ought not to be blamed, for saying that Joram begat Ozias.

CHAP.

Qq

#### CHAP. X.

An exception against St. Luke for his second Cainan, ch. 3.36. It is granted, that Cainan is added. This proved at large from the testimony of Berosus, of Josephus and R. David Gantz, and the author of Seder Olam; as also from Theophilus Antiochenus, Eusebius and Hieronymus, &c. That St. Luke may be defended; tho we should grant, that be had inscrted this Cainan. That this Cainan was not always in the LXXII. This is proved at large; and that this Cainan was not inserted by St. Luke. A testimony of Irenaus to this purpose; and the authority of a very ancient copy. The thing it self is of small moment. The seventh exception propounded.

Except. VI. THE next exception is against St. Luke the evangelist; for inserting a second Cainan (ch. 3. ver. 36.) whereas there is no such person mentioned in the Hebrew text of the old Testament, in any place where the generations from Adam to Abraham are reckoned up: And however St. Matthew may be defended for leaving out three kings; yet he could not have been defended, if he had added any one, who is not mentioned in the old Testament, which gives an account of them all. And therefore St. Luke cannot be justified for adding this Cainan, if it be granted (as it cannot be denied) that the holy writers of the ol! Teftament do, de industria, undertake to give us an account of all the names (as St. Luke pretends to do here) from Adam unto Abraham. And if it doth appear, that this Evangelist hath falsisted in this matter, this will very much shake, or rather overthrow the credit of that writer. For whether he was mistaken, or did purposely design to impose upon his reader, it matters little to the present purpose: He ought not to be received as a writer divincly inspired.

FOR the giving a full and clear answer to this difficulty, I shall proceed

in the following method. 1. I do readily grant, That the fecond Cainan mentioned Luke 3. 36. is a supernumerary name, which doth not belong strictly, and of right to that genealogy, into which he is inserted. In that matter I have no con-

troverly with the Jews. But because some Christians (who do, for what reason I know not, preser the Septuagint to the Hebrew text) may think, that I have granted too much, I shall spend some time in confirming the truth of it.

 $\mathbf{W}_{\mathbf{E}}$ 

WE read in the book of Genesis, That Arphaxad lived five and thirty years, and begat Salah: Where there is no mention of this second Cainan, who is in St. Luke supposed to be the son of Arphaxad, and the father of Salah. And as there is no mention of him in this place; so there is no room for him. For if Cainan should be taken in between Arphaxad and Salah, we must suppose one of them to beget at eighteen, and the other at seventeen years of age; which is not to be supposed: Nor doth it agree in any measure with the other ages (mentioned in that chapter) at which the posterity of Shem and ancestors of Abraham are said to beget children. And as Cainan is not mentioned there in the Hebrew Text; so neither is he mentioned in the Targum of Onkelos, nor in the Vulgar Latin, nor in the Samaritan, Arabick and Syriac versions. To which I may add, That we have the very fame account of this matter, where we read that Arphaxad begat Salah, and Salah begat Eber. If we proceed to the book of Chronicles, we shall find that it agrees with this of Genesis. It is there expresly said, That Arphaxad begat Shelah; and in the same chapter we have an account of all the names from Shem to Abraham, agreeable to the account in Genesis, thus: Shem, Arphaxad, Shelah, Eber, Peleg, Reu, Serug, Nahor, Terah, Abram, the same is Abraham Here was a fair occasion of inserting Cainan, if he had been omitted by Moses.

It is very well known, That Noah was the tenth from Adam, our first parent: And Abraham, the father of the faithful, and the friend of God, was the tenth from Noah, according to the Hibrew account. Perhaps it is not without some mystery, that these men are placed at these equal distances from each other: That Noah should arise in the tenth generation after Adam; and that Abraham should arise just so many generations after Noah. The first of these was the common parent of mankind: The second was the head of the new world; the third, the common parent of the faithful. But I will not look after mysteries now. It is acknowledged by all, that Noah was the tenth from Adam: and the ancients acknowledge Abraham to be the tenth from Noah: and consequently, they cannot acknowledge this fecond Cainan; who would render Abraham not the tenth, but the eleventh from Noah. Thus Berosus fpeaks of Abraham: Mera ter κατακλυσμέν δεκάτη γενες παςα Χαλδαίοις τις ήν δίκαι 🖰 ανής, κὶ μέγας, κὴ τὰ ε'ς ένια ἐμπεις 🕒 , i. C. In the tenth generation after the flood, there was among the Chaldwans, a certain man who was righteous, and great and skilful in the heavens. To this I shall add the testimony of Josephus, who giving account of the sons of Shem, mentions Arphaxad as the ruler of the Chaldees: And adds, 'Aspated Se Si giveras rais, Edans, i. e. The fon of Arphaxad was Salah. That author goes on, and reckons up the rest to Abraham, viz. Eber, Peleg, Reu, Serug, Nahor, and Terah, who (says he) is the father of Abraham, de Nuarde μίν is iv and Naχu, i.e. Who is the tenth from Noah. This is also the affirmation of the later Jews. R. David Gantz, when the mentions the birth of Abraham, adds, That there were ten generations from Noah unto Abraham. And the author of the Seder Olam Zutah lets us know, that from the creation to Noah were ten generations; and that from the flood to Abraham, were likewise ten generations. And Abraham is likewise called sixer, in Philo the Jew. They do not, nor can they reckon

Gen. 11. 12.
 Euseb. Præpar. l. 9. c. 16.
 R. D. Gantz. Tzemah, David.
 Sc. 16.

Gen. 10. 24.
 Joseph. Antiqu. Jud. l. 1. c. 7.
 Seder Olam Zutah.
 L. περὶ τῆς εἰς τὰ προπαιδ. συγόδε.
 Qq 2.

IT is also very certain, That this Cainan is not owned by the antient writers of the church. Theophilus Antiochenus undertakes to give an account of the posterity of Shem to Abraham, as he doth of the ante-dilavian patriarchs a little before; and when he comes to Arphaxad, he tells us expressly, That Arphaxad begat Salah, and that Salah begat Eber. Indeed the Latin translation puts in Cainan; but 'tis a lewd imposition upon the ignorant reader, there being nothing more plain than the author's text. Eusebius gives ' an account of the genealogy of Abraham: and he doth it ex professo, and not by the bye. He gives a particular account according to Africanus, another according to the Septuagint, a third according to the Hebrew, and a fourth according to the Samaritan; in every one of these he makes Abraham the tenth from Noah: and whatever other difference there be, he leaves Cainan out of them all, and places Salah in every one of them next to Arphaxad. And we find 3 St. Hierom in his questions upon Genesis expresly affirms, That Arphaxad begat Salah: Nor doth he take any notice of the LXXII interpreters as faying otherwise; and yet he mentions them upon other occasions in that book of his several times: and is not wont to spare them, when they departed from the Hebrew text. For it is very well known, that he was a strenuous affertor of the authority of the Hebrew text; and did not own the LXXII any farther, than they agreed with it.

This is evidence enough against this second Cainan; who is supposed to be the son of Arphaxad, but in truth was not: For Salah was his son; and this Cainan never was at all. He is not owned by Moses: and the writer of the books of Chronicles owns him not: for besides that he expressly tells us, That Arphaxad begat Shelah, he doth in the same chapter set down the names from Shem to Abraham. And thus he begins; Shem, Arphaxad, Shelah: Upon which verse there is a Masoretical note in the margin, that sufficiently bears witness against Cainan, and its this; that this is one of those verses, שול מול מול הוא in each several word of the Verse; and so every word indeed hath; but it would not be true, if Cainan had been there. But Cainan is not in the Hebrew text; tho Salah be, no less than in three or four places. He is not owned by the most of the versions; nor by the Jewish writers, nor the

ancient Father's of the church.

2. Let us suppose, that the second Cainan, which we now find in the copy of St. Luke, was set there by his own hand (which is by no means to be granted) yet will not this destroy the authority of that Evangelist. Those men, who are of this opinion among Christians, do not for that reason call in question the authority of our Evangelist; because it is certain, That this account, which he gives, is agreeable to the account which is given by the Septuagint in the book of Genesis; who have inserted Cainan, between Arphaxad and Salah. And as Christians, who are of this opinion, however they may too much magnify upon this account the version of the LXXII; yet they do not call in question the authority of the Evangelist: so the Jews our common enemies have not sufficient reason to reject the authority of our Evangelist upon this score. For the Evangelist

writing

Theophilus Antiochen. ad Autolych. lib. 3. Euseb. Chron. lib. 1. Hieronym. Quæst. in Genesim. 4 Id. præsat. in Pentat. Mos. 5 Id. Epistol. ad Sun. & Fretel. 6 I Chron. 1. 17. with ver. 24.

writing in Greek, and for the fake of the Gentiles, who generally understood that language, might (without any just imputation of unfaithfulness) make use of that version; which was common among them, as well as among the Jewish Hellenists. The putting down of Cainan, as he found it in a received translation, doth not speak the Evangelist's sense, but the sense of those interpreters, whom he truly cites, and lays before his reader, without his own observation or remarks upon them. Not to have done thus might have brought him into suspicion with some: but to do it (as he is supposed to do) ought not to be imputed to him as a crime, when he speaks the sense of others only, and proceeds upon principles generally own'd and received. We should not have been obliged (upon this supposition) to believe Cainan to be the fon of Arphaxad, any more than we are obliged to believe that 1 Melchisedec was really without father and without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life; because the author of the epistle to the Hebrews, according to the received and vulgar opinion, speaks of him after that manner. Admitting that St. Luke himself had put this second Cainan into his list, yet is there enough in the text of St. Luke, to fecure the diligent and wary reader from concluding from his words, that this Cainan was really the fon of Arphaxad. For propounding to himself to fet down all our Saviour's ancestors, were they really so, or commonly fo reputed, he begins thus, speaking of Jesus, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, of Eli, of Matthat, &c. And then Cainan might be very justly reckoned the son of Arphaxad (as was supposed) not that he was really so, but so reckoned by the Hellenists; because he was so said to be, in that vulgar translation which they received. (\*)

But I would not be understood amis. I am far from believing, that St. Luke did ever put this Cainan into his list. I only think that he might be defended in this matter, if he had done so; upon this supposition, that he

had found him in the version of the Septuagint.

3. That tho this second Cainan be now mentioned in the version of the LXXII, and was of old in that version, which was very commonly received; yet we have just reason to believe, that it is a fault, and that it ought not to be there: And that however it might be in some common copies; yet it was not in the Greek text from the beginning. However some men magnify the translation of the LXXII, even to the disparagement of the Hebrew text, and have defended them, even in this matter

Digitized by Google

<sup>&</sup>quot;Heb. 7. 3. "Jac. Usserii Chronolog, p. 100. "Luke 3. 23. 1"") To this may be also added, That as St. Luke may be justly defended for putting this second Cainan into his list; so he might have been justly blamed, if he had lest it out. St. Luke was the constant companion of St. Paul, in Asia the less, in Greece, and other places, where the Greek was their native language's, and also in Italy, where all the learned understood it. The Septuagint Translation of the OLD TESTAMENT was very common in their hands, and they could have recourse to it at any time. These were the only Scriptures, which they were capable of searching to try all dostrines by. Now as St. Matthew wrote his gospel for the sake of the Hebrews; so St. Luke wrote his for the sake of these Gentiles; so that it could not be expected, but they would compare it with the Septuagint. But this second Cainan is to be found in the Septuagint, and therefore if St. Luke had lest it out; their searching at that time instead of converting them to Christianity, must have prejudiced them against it. And tho it may be said, that he ought to have said a thing, which is salse, for the sake of doing any good. To this it may be answered, that he doth not. He doth not say, that FESUS was the real son of Cainan; but he qualifies it; so so evoluters, but being so, as it was supposed. And it was supposed to be so by all those to whom he wrote, since it was sound so in the most authentick records, which they had of these matters. And this is a sufficient argument to convince me, that this second Cainan was in the Septuagint before St. Luke's Time, and that he himself inserted it into his Gospel, and that the difficulty to account for it was the reason which made so many copiers and expositors to leave it out.

of which I am now speaking; yet I make no doubt, but it will appear, that they are very faulty, as in many other places, so in this also which lies before us. This will appear, I say, to any indifferent men: For where men are prejudiced, and resolved to maintain an Hypothesis, no-

thing will convince them.

If there had been such a person as our second Cainan, who was the son of Arphaxad, why did not Moses mention him? He knew that there was such an one, or he knew it not: If he did not know, I would sain learn, how the LXXII came to the knowledge of this secret? But if he did, what reason can be assigned, that he should even in two places make Salah (and not Cainan) the son of Arphaxad? Sure, none will be so impudent as to say, that Moses put in Cainan, and that since his time it is taken out. If any should, I would know of him, What shadow of reason he can produce for it; Who should attempt this? The Jew could have no interest to move him to do it? And 'twas against the interest of the Christians to do it, as well as out of their reach or power. Besides, the account which Moses gives is very much consirm'd by the writer of the first book of Chronicles, in several places of the third chapter of that book.

The truth of what I maintain here, is farther confirmed by the testimonies produced before. That of Berosus in Eusebius is of great antiquity; and that of Josephus of great moment, in a question of this nature. But then that of Theophilus Antiochenus is not only upon the account of its antiquity very venerable, but still the more to be regarded, because that ancient author doth, in that place, treat of the genealogy from Shem to Abraham. To which hath been added before, the sense of Africanus, of the Samaritan, and of that copy of the LXXII interpreters, which Eusebius made use of, as also the express testimony of St. Hierom. To which I may add the sense of the whole nation of the Jews; as well as the agreement of the learned, and ancient versions and paraphrases upon the book of Genesis. To which: our countryman Mr. Gregory adds, That it is not in the Russ bible, translated from the Septuagint: Nor (saith he) did ever any translation out of the Hebrew acknowledge it: Not the Targums what soever, not the vulgar Latin, not the Spanish or the vulgar Greek, both translated by the Jews themselves, and printed at Constantinople in Hebrew letters: Not the Persian paraphrase by Tawos; the Arabick by Saadiah Gaon; or that other by the Jews in Mauritania set forth by Erpenius.

It is granted, that Cainan is to this day in the Version of the LXXII: but 'tis there alone; 'tis no where else. There it is found indeed; but there it ought not to be: and there it was not always, as is evident from the testimonies mention'd above. I grant, that Cainan is found there; and that it was so many hundred years ago: But when it was found there, it was however marked, as that which did not belong to the text. Of this we have a 'very pregnant testimony from Procopius Gazaus. He tells us what the Hebrew assirms, viz. That Salah was begotten by Arphaxad; and that for what is added to the Text, it had a mark upon it, as not of right belonging to it. His words are these; Hebraica veritas habet, Sa-

lam.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>a</sup> Gregory's Posthuma, p. 84.

Procop. Gazzus, in Octateuch. in Gen. 11.

lam genitum esse ab Arphaxad: Quæ deinde in medio ponuntur, obelisco

signata visuntur.

THE words as they lie in the LXXII interpreters are these: Kal Your σεν 'Αρφαξάδ έχατον τειακουτα πέντε έτη, κ) έγεννησε τον Καινάν. Καὶ έζητεν 'Αρφαξάδ μετά το γερνήσει αυτορ में Καιναν देगा परम् एक्स्रेजाब, में देश्रेणणाज्य पृथेत में θυγαπές σε, મે बेमरं θανες Και έζησε Καιναν ένατον ε) τειάκοντα έτη, ε) έγέννησε τ Σαλά. Καὶ έζησε Καινάν μετά το γεννήσαι αυτίν τ. Σαλά ти тенанопа тенанопи. i. e. And Arphaxad lived 135 years, and begat Cainan; and Arphaxad lived after he begat Cainan 400 years, and begat sons and daughters; and he died. And Cainan lived 130 years, and begat Salah: And Cainan lived after he begat Salah 330 years. This is the account of the LXXII according to the Vatican exemplar. I will not now concern my self with the different account which we find here, as to the age of Arphaxad, when he begat, from what is in the Hebrew: The LXXII have 135, where the Hebrew text hath no more than 35. It is well known, how much the LXXII differ from the Hebrew in that matter. Theophilus Antiochenus (whom I quoted before) doth, as to the age of Arphaxad, when he begat, follow the account of the LXXII. But yet, as hath been noted above, he leaves out Cainan: which is a good argument that he was not found in that copy, which he made use of. Nay, this very 'copy of the LXXII, which hath Cainan in Genesis, leaves him out in the book of Chronicles; where he ought also to have been, as much as in Genesis: for there we read 'Agoatlo, Sand, 'Ests, &c.

Allowing to the LXXII interpreters as much authority as can reasonably be granted, it will not hence follow, that the copy, which we now have, agrees with that which those elders wrote in Ptolomy's time. For as St. Augustin hath well observ'd, it might easily be, that the first transcriber of the copy, which was lodged in the library of Ptolomy, might easily spread errors abroad through his own ignorance or inadvertence; and those errors are not to be imputed to the LXXII, but to him that undertook to transcribe. Hence it came to pass, that there was a considerable variety in the Greek copies, which were commonly called the LXXII, among the ancients; they were not all of the same vogue and authority among them. Besides this, there were several men, who undertook the Greek translation of the old Testament after the LXXII; and the Origen took great pains to represent to the reader those various versions, together with the LXXII and the Hebrew text; yet (that work being now lost) it will be very hard at the distance of so many years, and after so many changes, to judge what is the work, that was the genuine version of the LXXII; and

what was an addition to it or variation from it.

It is enough to my present purpose, that I have shewed, that this second Cainan doth not of right belong to the text. How it came to be inserted, I am not obliged to determine. And yet supposing the transcriber to have drawn, for the sake of his memory (or any other reason) a rable of those who descended from Adam, and of those who descended from Noah in two several Columns, it will not be hard to say, how Cainan might be inserted into the other side over against Cainan the son of Enos; the one being placed at the very same distance from Noah, which the other stands in from Adam: Thus,

z. Adam,

<sup>\*</sup> Gen. 11. ver. 12, 13. 2 1 Chron. 1. 4. cum LXXII. De civitate Dei, l. 15. c. 13. 4 Hieronym. ad Sun. & Fretell.

 1. Adam.
 1. Noah.

 2. Seth.
 2. Shem.

 3. Enos.
 3. Arphaxad.

 4. Cainan.
 4. Cainan.

In such a case it might very easily come to pass, that a careless transcriber

might, by a mistake, fetch over Cainan into the other side.

4. That the Evangelist ought not to be charged with having inserted this fecond Cainan. For could it be proved, that he had inferted him; yet it appears, from what hath been faid, That the Greek interpreters must in that be supposed to have done so before him; and then he could be supposed but to speak their sense, and not his own. But it is not evident, that St. Luke did put in this second Cainan; but rather very evident, that he did not. For as we have great reason to believe, that there never was such a person as this second Cainan in the world, so we have, besides that, very great presumptions, that this Cainan was not in the text of St. Luke from the beginning. Indeed if St. Luke had done, as St. Matthew did; i. e. if he had given us in the number of those generations, which he reckon'd up at the close of his list; this controverly would have been at an end. But tho St. Luke did not summ up the number of his generations; yet one of the most ancient fathers of the church hath done it; and after such a manner, as it is evident from the words of, that father, that there is a supernumerary name in the copies of St. Luke, which now obtain among us; his words are these: Propter hoc Lucas genealogiam, quæ est à generatione domini nostri usque ad Adam, LXXII generationes habere ostendit, sinem conjungens initio, & signisicans, quo ipse, qui omnes gentes exinde ab Adam dispersas, & universas linguas & generationem hominum cum ipso Adam in semetipso recapitulatus est: Unde & à Paulo typus futuri dittus est ipse Adam. Here is an express testimony, and there can be no just exception against it, nor any reason to believe, that the number mentioned here of the LXXII is altered. For he tells us, That this genealogy of St. Luke, usque ad Adam, i. e. even to Adam, hath seventy two generations, according to the 2 number of the nations and languages of the whole world (which are acknowledg'd to amount to that number) whom our Saviour was concerned for. Those words, usque ad Adam, feem to allow us the liberty of understanding this number of seventy two of all the intermedial generations, from the first to the last exclusively. And so many generations there are precisely, and no more (if we leave out this second Cainan) between Joseph and Adam exclusively; but if we admit him, there are seventy three. I may have a farther occasion to reflect upon this testimony afterwards: It is enough at present, that it is a good argument, that this fecond Cainan was not always in the text of St. Luke. And as it was not always in the text, so neither is it now in all ancient copies. The University of Cambridge hath a very ancient copy of the Greek, written above 1200 years ago, and a Latin version also of great antiquity; in both which this second Cainan is omitted.

This matter doth very little affect the main question between us and the Jews: Nor doth the supposing this Cainan's getting into the text by

! Irenzus, l. 3. c. 33.

Augustin. de civitat. Dei, l. 16. c. 3.

the

the ignorance of a transcriber, overthrow the credit of the Evangelist. For besides that it is not in all copies; that it is in the most doth no more disparage the Evangelist, than the difference which is made by a Keri and a Cethib (of which there are great numbers in the old Testament) doth

take from the reputation of the writers of those holy books.

Except. VII. The next exception is against both the Evangelists, as speaking inconsistently with one another in relating the particulars of the genealogy of Joseph. Thus St. Matthew reckons from Abraham to Jesus but sorty and two generations: St. Luke reckons from Abraham to Jesus no less than sifty six. Again, Joseph is both by St. Matthew and St. Luke (however they differ in deriving him from Solomon or Nathan) said to be descended from Salathiel the father of Zorobabel; and there is in each Evangelist an account of the distance of generations between Salathiel and Joseph; according to the computation of St. Matthew, these generations are but twelve; but in St. Luke, the generations from Joseph to the same Salathiel are no sewer than twenty one.



#### CHAP. XI.

An answer to the objection mentioned in the close of the foregoing chapter. That St. Matthew hath omitted some names in his second interval. The two Evangelists do not keep in the same line from David. That Salathiel in St. Luke is not the same person so called in St. Matthew.

HE exception above named confishing of several particulars, it will be needful, that I should in answer to it consider them apart: And

to that end I offer the following particulars to be duly considered.

Answ. 1. We are to consider, what hath been observed before, that St. Matthew doth only number up the total sum of each generation, which he thought sit to mention, under his several intervals, into which he had divided his whole time from Abraham to the birth of Jesus; but doth no where affirm, nor was it needful that he should, that there were no more persons born in each interval, than what he hath set down. It is very well known (and I have accounted for it before) that in his second interval he omits three kings at once. These three (which he thought not sit to name) added to his number make forty sive: and then the difference between that number, and the number of the persons mentioned by St. Luke, is but eleven.

2. As the difference is rendred less, by what hath been said above; so all the difficulty will be removed, if it be considered, that St. Matthew and St. Luke do not keep in the same line. One reckons from Solomon to Christ; and the other keeps in the samily of Nathan, another of David's sons, and brother of Solomon. We will suppose now, that from Solomon to Christ were but just twenty and eight generations (tho if we reckon

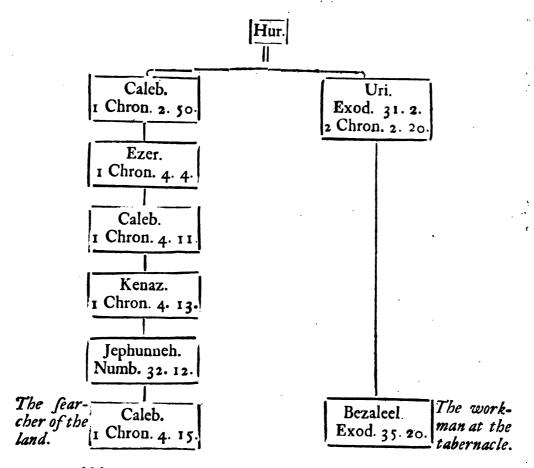
the three omitted, there were no less than thirty and one) as St. Matthew mentions no more; and that St. Luke reckons from Nathan to CHRIST no less than forty and two: the difference between one and the other would be at most but fourteen descents. Admitting all this, there would be no manner of difficulty in this matter at all; so far would the Evangelists be from clashing with one another, or being justly liable to any exception. From the beginning of Solomon's reign to the birth of Christ is something more than a thousand years: In such a space of time it may be very fairly admitted, that in the family of Solomon, and that of his brother Nathan, there might easily be the difference of fourteen descents. From the birth of a grandfather to that of his grandson, there do happen in some families not above fifty or fixty years; in others about twice that number of years intervene. This difference doth depend upon a great many contingencies, and accidents; and they are very unthinking people, who do upon this account quarrel with our Evangelists. But the Jews of all men living have no cause to find fault with them: For besides that they may well grant a peculiar bleffing upon the royal, or Solomonical family, even beyond that of the Nathanical, they cannot but know from their own books, that nothing hath been more common, than what hath been here supposed to be the case of the posterity of Solomon and Nathan.

It is very well known, that Jacob was above seventy years old before he was the father of any child: But then Judah was not only a grandsather when he was but forty three years of age, but might have been a great grandsather too, if we will but suppose Shelah sit to have married Tamar, at that time when she conceived by Judah. So great a difference ariseth from the early or later marriages. For the better illustrating this matter, I shall lay before the reader the descents of Caleb and Bezaleel of the samily of Judah, who were both active men and cotemporaries in the wilderness: the one a searcher of the land, the other a samous workman in the tabernacle; both descended from Hezron (Gen. 46. 12.) and his son Caleb (1 Chron. 2. 9, 18.) by Hur (1 Chron. 2. 19.) from whom their descent

is thus represented by a diligent countryman of our own.

Hur

<sup>See my Differtation concerning the Author of the Pentateuch.
Speed's Cloud of Witnesses, p. 40.</sup> 



It would be too great a digression in this place to prove every branch of this descent from Hur to Caleb the searcher of the land: and I therefore refer my reader to the texts adjoyned, and to my author; for that I see not how that from Hur to Bezaleel can be doubted of.

I WILL therefore take this account of the descent of Caleb and Bezalvel, as it lies before us: And if I can remove the difficulty, which it is loaded with, I shall have gained the purpose, which I produce it for, in desending the Evangelists against the exception mentioned in the close of the foregoing chapter. The difficulty attending upon this descent is this, that whereas Caleb the searcher of the land, and Bezaleel the workman at the tabernacle were not only cotemporaries, but about the same age, being active men at the same time in the wilderness, they should be so differently removed from Hur, the common ancestor or proparent of them both. Between Hur and Bezaleel there is but one descent: But between Hur and Caleb the searcher of the land, there are no less than sive. I shall shew how this may be: and if it may, there can be no weight at all in that exception last mentioned against our Evangelist. To this purpose, I admit Hur to be twenty years old when he begat Caleb, and Caleb twenty, when he begat Ezer, and Ezer twenty, when he begat Caleb, and Caleb twenty, when he begat Kenaz, and Kenaz twenty when he begat Jephunneh, and Jephunneh twenty, when he begat Caleb the searcher of the land; to which if we add forty years (for so' old was Caleb when he searched the land) there arise 160

Rr 2

years

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>a</sup> Josh. 14. 7.

years from the birth of *Hur*, to the fortieth year of *Caleb* the fearcher of the land; on the other fide admit *Hur* to be feventy years old when he begat *Uri*, and *Uri* to be fixty when he begat *Bezalzel*, and *Bezaleel* thirty when he wrought in the tabernacle (at which age the *Levites* afterwards were chosen to do fervice there) and there ariseth the same number of 160 years. And if this may be, it is not strange at all, that there should be found such a disparity of descents in the line of *Solomon*, and that of *Nathan*.

3. As to the distance between Salathiel and Joseph, which each Evangelist relates very differently, one making but twelve, the other one and twenty generations between one and the other, I should reckon it a greater difficulty than that named before, was it not, that this exception supposeth fomething, which is by no means to be granted, and which the objector will never be able to prove. It is supposed here, and taken for granted, That Salathiel mentioned in St. Matthew, and Salathiel mentioned in St. Luke, are one and the same person. But he that objects against the Evangelists, takes this for granted, which he ought first to have proved. And this answer is sufficient to him, who makes this objection against our Evangelists. But I shall not leave it thus. But before I proceed any farther, I shall prove, that Salathiel in St. Luke is not the same person with him in St. Matthew. And this will abundantly appear, if we consider either the ancestors, or the posterity of each Sala-thiel, in the several Evangelists. In St. Luke Salathiel is said to be the son of Neri, and to be descended by him from Melchi, Addi, Cosam, Elmodam, &c. in St. Matthew he is said to be the son of Jechonias, and by him to have been descended from Jehojakim, Josias, Amon, Manasses, &c. As for his posterity in St. Luke, they are said to be Zorobabel (in which Matthew indeed agrees) Rhesa, Joanna, Juda, Joseph, &c. in St. Matthew they are said to be Zorababel, Abiud, Eliakim, Azor. That many had indeed two names among the antient Hebrews cannot be denied; but it cannot therefore be imagined, that these different names should be all the names of the same persons; nothing can be more gross than such a conceit. This may be added to what hath been faid, That it is evident, that Salathiel in St. Luke is derived from Nathan; and that he of that name in St. Matthew is derived from Solomon: whence it follows, That it cannot be the same person; and that therefore it is very absurd to suppose, that the different names of the ancestors and posterity of Salathiel in each Evangelist are the names of the very same persons.

It is true, that Salathiel in each Evangelist is represented as the father of Zorobabel: And that hath been the occasion, upon which men have been mistaken in this matter. But there is not a sufficient cause from thence to conclude, That by Salathiel in each Evangelist is meant one and the same person. Solomon and Nathan were brethren, and their off-spring were kindred; and there was nothing more common than for such to give names, which had been used among their kindred. When St. John the baptist was circumcised, they who were present, would have him called Zacharias, after the name of his father. And when his mother would have him named John, They said unto her, There is none of thy kindred, that is called by this name. It is not strange that there should be a Salathiel in the line of Solomon, and another of that name in the line of his brother Nathan. It

1 Luke 1.61.

140

wa**s** 

was very usual to give the same names to the same samilies and kindred; and to repeat the names upon occasion. In the list of St. Luke there are no less than five (reckoning him, who is mentioned ver. 29. for one) who in the same line are called foseph, Three who are called by the names of Juda. And there are two apiece called by the names of Matthat, Mattathias and Melchi. There are several called by the name of Zechariah, Azariah, &c. in the old Testament: And 'tis no wonder at all, that there should be a Salathiel, both in the line of Solomon and Nathan also. And that the latter Salathiel should call his son Zorobabel, in imitation of a kinsman of the house of David, who had done so before, hath nothing strange in it at all; and is so far from it, that there is nothing more commonly practised among mankind.

## 

## CHAP. XII.

Another Exception propounded; that the Evangelists are inconfishent one with the other, in deriving Joseph from Solomon and Nathan; and making him the son of Jacob and Heli. In what senses one may be the son of divers persons. It implies no contradiction, that Joseph should be said to be the son of Jacob and Heli. Of the testimony of Africanus out of Eusebius.

Except. VIII. NOTHER exception against the Evangelists is this: That in the account, which they give of the genealogy of Joseph, they do not agree between themselves. For tho they both derive him from David; yet is their account inconsistent. One makes him the son of Jacob; the other of Heli: One derives him from Solomon; the other from Nathan, another of David's sons. Whereas it is impossible, that the same man should descend from two brothers, and sons of the same father. So that if Joseph did indeed descend from Nathan, he could not descend from Solomon: and if he did descend from Solomon, he could not descend from Nathan: And consequently if one Evangelist be in the right, the other must be in the wrong.

This object ion, how specious soever it seems to be at the first proposing, is very trisling: And if we will take the pains to consider the following

particulars, it will appear to have no weight in it.

Answ. 1. A Man may be said to be the son of another man upon several respects: And consequently, it is not a contradiction or absurd to affirm, That Joseph was the son of Jacob, and that the same Joseph was the son of Heli. A man is said to be the son of another, either by nature, or by law. He is by nature a son of him, of whom he was begotten: But then he may be a legal son to another. And this a man may be several ways: Either by the common law of nations; or by the particular law and constitution of the Jews.

Jews. By the common law of nations this may happen two ways; either by adoption, or by marriage. By adoption a stranger was assumed into the place and title of a son: By marriage the son of the wise becomes the son of the husband, to whom she is married: thus was Joseph called the sather of Jesus: And he that married a daughter, becomes a son-in-law to the sather of his wise. But there was a particular law among the Jews relating to this mat-

ter; which deserves our serious consideration in this place.

2. The 'law among the fews concerning this matter we find thus expressed: If brethren dwell together, and one of them die and have no child, the wife of the dead shall not marry without unto a stranger: her husband's brother shall go in unto her, and take her to him to wife, and perform the duty of an husband's brother unto her. And it shall be, that the first-born, which she beareth, shall succeed in the name of his brother which is dead, that his name be not put out of Israel. This was made into a law by Moses; but it was practised (as very many other of his constitutions and laws were) long before his time; as is very evident from the story of Er and Onan, Gen. 38. By this law, the memory of the first-born of a family, who died childless, was preserved, and the inheritance kept in a right line, and there was great care taken for preferving the families, and the inheritances, which belonged to them. It was reputed a great infelicity, when the head of a family was taken away by an immature death; or when the inheritance was alienated, which belonged to that family. This appears from the words of the daughters of Zelophehad; and from the answer which Naboth made to Ahab. The land of Canaan was divided among the tribes and families of Israel by lot; and not left to their scramble, to be possessed by the first occupant: Besides, God gave the Israelites and their posterity only the tenancy and usus fructus of the land; but referved the propriety to himself. Hence there was a lex agraria made amongst the Jews, by which they were prohibited to alienate their lands for ever. The words of the law are these: The land shall not be fold for ever, for the land is mine; for ye are strangers and sojourners with me. So that it was not in the power of any man to fell (as we fay) out-right the land, which belonged to him and his family; he being rather a tenant for life than a proprietor. And hence it was, That the Ahab offered unto Naboth for his vineyard a better vineyard in exchange, or the worth of it in mony; yet he refused his offer, laying, The Lord forbid it me, that I should give the inheritance of my fathers unto thee. For the preserving the several families and the inheritances thereunto belonging in a right line was that law made, which I mentioned above from Deut. 25. According to that law a man might be the son of several fathers: e.g. Reuben and Simeon are two brethren: Reuben marries a wife, and dies without issue; Sineon afterward marries the relict of his deceased brother Reuben; he begets a son, and calls him Joseph: This Joseph is the son of Reuben, and of Simeon too. He is the legal son of Reuben, and as such he inherits Reuben's laud; but then tho Joseph be by law the son and beir of Reuben; yer he is by Nature the son of Simeon, by whom he is begotten. The only reason, why I produce this law here, is to shew, that the few hath no reason to triumph or boast, as if our Evangelists were not worthy of be-

\* Numb. 27. 3. 4.

1 Kin. 21. 3.

lief,

Deut. 25. 5, 6.
Levic. 25. 23, 25.

lief, because one calls Joseph the son of Jacob, and the other calls him the son of Heli: For granting this, yet here is no contradiction all this while barely upon that account. I may have occasion afterwards to resume the consideration of the law above-mentioned, as far as my present argument is concerned therein; in the mean while I produce it for no other reason, but for what I have assigned.

3. As by the particular law or constitution of the Jews a man may be said to be the son of several men, as hath been shewed above; so might this be affirmed by the common law of nations also, from which the Jews are not to be excepted in the question now debated. Thus for example, a man might be a son, by adoption, or by marriage. The son begotten by Reuben might be the adopted son of Simeon: And he that by nature is the son of one man, may by marriage become the son also of him, whose daughter he took in marriage. This latter there can be no question about; he that

marries a daughter, becomes a fon to the father of his wife.

As for the other way, of adoption, that was also in 'use among the Jews. He was owned among the Hebrews for a freeman, who was to declared by his Hebrew master; and for a son also, whom he owned so to be. He that was free among the Hebrews, was allowed to call an Hebrew man his father; and by that compellation to bespeak and court an adoption: Which was then completed and confirmed, when he, who was called father, owned him, who called him so, for his son. Indeed it was not allowed, that a servant should call an Hebrew his father: Where there wanted liberty, there adoption obtained not. He who was not free, could not be adopted: The same man could not be a bondman and a son. To which the Apostle's words seem to refer, Gal. 4. 6. But this exception makes it evident, that adoption was in other cases permitted to the Jews. And its enough to my present purpose to shew, that a man might without any contradiction among the Hebrews, be said to be the son of several persons; and that therefore the Evangelists are not to be rejected, tho they should affirm Joseph to be the son of Jacob and of Heli.

4. That supposing (which is indeed in the objection taken for granted)

that both Evangelists give us an account of the genealogy of Joseph (which is to be examined afterwards) yet it doth not thence follow, that they speak inconsistently with one another; because, as appears from what hath been faid before, Joseph might very well be called the son both of Jacob and Heli; the son of one by nature, and a legal son to the other: And they, who grant, that the genealogy of Joseph is delivered both by St. Matthew and St. Luke, do yet affirm, That one lays down his natural parents, and the other his legal. Nor doth there want a very good colour for this: There is a difference between the being called the son of such a man, and the being said to be begotten by him. We may eafily discern the difference from what hath been said before. St. Matthew proceeds from father to son; and tells you in order, that such a man begat such a one. On the other hand, St. Luke goes upward from fon to father; and doth not any where fay, that fuch a fon was begotten by fuch a father, or that he was the son of such a father by nature: but speaking of Jesus, he tells you, that he was ( of tropicero) as was supposed, according to common estimation, or according to the rough (the legal constitution, called among the Hebrew writers, נימוסה, which signifies a received and

\*V. Selden. de successionibus c. iv.

\* Luke 3. 23.

allowed

allowed rite or manner) the son of Joseph. And then why may not Joseph, who was by nature the son of Jacob, be said to be the legal son of Heli? It is very evident both from the beginning and the close of the genealogy of St. Luke, that they are said to be sons, who cannot be so in a physical sense, as Isaac was the son of Abraham, Jacob of Isaac: And tho Joseph be called the son of Heli in St. Luke; yet St. Matthew saith that Jacob begat Joseph; which plainly enough speaks him to be his natural sather: and the reader will have cause to conclude no less, who shall with sufficient application consider the whole contexture of the genealogy in St. Matthew, and compare it diligently with that in St. Luke.

5. THAT this is no new or private opinion in this matter; but that which was affirmed by several great persons in the ancient church. They did affirm, that Jacob was the natural, and Heli the legal sather of Joseph. This account Africanus a very learned and ancient Christian, and a writer also, gives in his letter to Aristides, mentioned by Eusebius, and by him approved. The account which he gives (as far as I am concerned in it at present) is this. That the genealogies among the Jews were of descents either natural, or legal. The natural are the genuine seed and offspring: The legal were those, who take place by virtue of a received law. Thus the natural child of the surviving brother was reputed the child of the deceased: For there not being among the Jews under the law any express and clear hope of a resurrection, God thought fit to allow them a symbol of it in that law; whereby the name of the deceased was to be preserved and kept alive. Those names which are inserted in these genealogies, are of two forts: some the genuine children, who succeeded to their parents; some are such, who were legally esteemed and reputed the children of those, who did not beget them. So that the Evangelists are not inconsistent with each other, when they give in the number of those, who were naturally and legally the children of different parents, they being the sons of divers parents, either naturally or legally. This is the account, which Africanus gives, and which Eusebius approves of, and affirms to have been given by the Desmons, or kindred of our Saviour. Indeed Africanus says more upon this argument; which may perhaps be considered in due place. I produce this part of it here for no other reason, but to shew, that this answer is not newly devised. And what hath been hitherto said, is sufficient to take off the force of the last mentioned exception against the Evangelists, for affirming Joseph to be the son of Jacob and of Heli; and for deriving him from Solomon and Nathan also, which is supposed in the objection.

\* Euseb. Eccles. Hist. l. 1. c. 7.

CHAP.

**씂뺚**춙춫춫궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦궦

#### C H A P. XIII.

It is pretended, that the genealogy of Joseph is nothing to the purpose. It was fit, that we should have the genealogy of Joseph, because he was the reputed father of Jesus, and because of the law, Deut. 25. 6. and because the Jews were not wont to reckon genealogies by women. Baronius considered, and refuted. It is shown at large, that St. Matthew speaks to the purpose, when he promiseth the genealogy of JESUS, and gives that of Joseph. That Joseph and Mary were of the same family; and that the genealogy of one contains that of the other. Upon what grounds Christians believe this. Luke 1.26. considered. This was the belief of the antient Christians; and not repugnant to the law or practice of the Of the law concerning heiresses, Numb. 36. That it is highly probable, that the virgin Mary was an heiress. That the antient Jews allowed her to be of the family of David.

AVING taken off the main strength and force of the last exception, I proceed to another; which the I mention it in the last place, yet hath much more of force in it, than any which hath been named before;

and perhaps more than all together.

Except. IX. It is pretended, that what the Evangelists have done, is nothing to the purpose: Because they only give us an account of the genealogy and descent of Joseph; who was not the real, but only the reputed sather of Jesus, as all Christians grant. If they would have gained their end, they should have given us an account of the genealogy of Mary the mother of Jesus; not of Joseph, who was not really his father. For if Jesus was not really the son of Joseph, the genealogy of Joseph cannot belong to Jesus: If it doth belong to him, it must do so, because he was Joseph's son, which all Christians do deny. That Joseph was the reputed father of Jesus, will not prove Jesus to be of the samily of David, because Joseph was so. God did swear unto David, Out of the fruit of thy body will Iset upon thy throne: And this is owned by Christians to belong to the Messias: For St. Peter refers to this oath, saying, That to David God had sworn with an oath, That out of the fruit of his loins according to the sless, he would raise up Christ to sit upon his throne. Now tho St. Matthew, in the very beginning of his Gospel, pretends to give us the genealogy of

Pal. 132. 11. Acts 2. 30.

Matth. I. I. With yer. 16.

Şſ

Jesus;

JESUS; yet it is most evident from his own words, (ver. 16.) that he brings

it to Joseph only.

Anfw. In answer to this exception, I shall at present only defend St. Matthew; and shall afterward consider the account, which St. Luke gives, by it self. And in answer to what is excepted above, I offer the following particulars.

That it was fit, that Sr. Matthew should give us the genealogy of

Joseph, when he undertook to give us that of Jesus. For,

- (1.) Joseph was looked upon by the Jews as the father of Jesus; and it was therefore necessary, that Joseph should be acknowledged to be of the tribe of Judah, and of the family of David. The Jews would otherwise have had a fair pretence for rejecting Jesus, as falfely claiming the title of Messias, when Joseph whom they concluded to be his father, and who had married his mother, was not of the family of David. This would have been so great a stumbling block to the fews, that God thought sit to remove it out of the way, lest they should, without any more to do or farther examination, have rejected Jesus upon this account. For if the presumption, that JES us sprang from Galilee, because there he was conceived, and there he also lived, was an occasion why they did despite and reject him; they would not have failed to have rejected him, had Joseph been of any other tribe than that of Judah, or any other family than that of David, upon this account. Hence it was necessary, that when Jesus appeared, his reputed father should be one, that was acknowledged to be of family of David; of which family the MESSIAS was to be according to the predictions in the old Testament: For if any did appear, who was not of that family, he ought not to be received as the CHRIST. And tho it is certain, That Jesus was born of a virgin after a miraculous manner, and without the assistance of a man; yet because the Jews (for whom especially St. Matthew wrote his gospel, and in the Hebrew Tongue also, as the antients affirm) might cavil at that account of the birth of Jesus, and call it in question; it was fit that Joseph, to whom the Mother of Jesus was espoused, should be acknowledged to descend from the samily of
- (2.) Again, it was very needful, that we should have this account of the genealogy of Joseph, who was the reputed father of Jesus, because Jesus might, even upon the consideration of his being the reputed son of Joseph, and born of her, who was in the sense of the Jewish law his wise, be said to be of the samily of David, from whom Joseph was descended. This is not the opinion of many learned men of later times only, but it was also very early in the church of Christ. And tho I will not lay the main stress of the cause upon it, nor urge it beyond what is sit; yet I do think it worth my improving; at least so far, as to make it an argument, that it was highly fit, that St. Matthew should give us the genealogy of Joseph, when he undertakes to give an account of that of Jesus. this purpose I cannot omit the mention, of what the author of the questions and answers, which go under the name of Justin Martyr, says in this matter. His words are these; That the LORD CHRIST is called the fon of Joseph, who had two fathers: one according to the divine law; that when we hear that CHRIST was the son of Joseph,

<sup>&</sup>quot; Just. Mart. Quæst. 133.

tho not begotten by him, we might not think strange of it: The other according to the nature: For as Joseph was called the son of Heli, tho not be gotten of him, because agreeably to the law it pleased God to give Heli a son, which was born of the wife of Heli; so it seemed good to God to give Joseph a son by his wife, tho not begotten by him according to nature; saying, . Joseph thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife. For what is born of any wife without adultery, is of necessity the child of the husband and wife at once. For the better comprehending the force of this argument, we must have recourse to that law mentioned before, from Deut. 25. where it was appointed, that if a brother died and had no child, his furviving brother should marry his relict; and it shall be that the first-born which she beareth, shall succeed in the name of his brother, which is dead; that his name be not put out of Israel. By which it appears, That, the first-born in this case was according to that law to be esteemed, not the son of him who begat him, but the son and seed of the deceased brother. In like manner, fays my author, Jesus is called the son of Joseph (and consequently of David) because he was born of the wise of Joseph, even whilst he was living, without the assistance of any other man. For if, according to the express words of the law, he was to be esteemed the fon of the deceased brother, who after his death was born of his relict, altho in truth he was begotten by another; much more doth he deserve to be so called, who is born of a wife, her husband living, and making but one body with her; and who hath no other father upon earth. For (as the ' same author expresseth himself elsewhere) if what was born of the wife of Heli, be the son of Heli according to the law of God; much more was he who was born of the wife of Joseph, according to the good pleasure of God, the son of Joseph, tho not begotten by him. If he who was born after Heli's death is notwithstanding to be reckoned the son of Heli; why may not Jesus, who was born of the wife of Joseph, be reckoned of the same family with Joseph? The Jews have not a sufficient cause to reject this argument: And when this is urged (as it is frequently) by Christian writers, it is not very easy for the few to get loose from the force of it.

It is no difficult thing to urge this very hard upon the Jews; because their law admitted of something else, which takes off that absurdity, which the Jews might else have objected against the opinion of this ancient writer. For if they should now pretend, that 'tis unreasonable to affirm, that Jesus was of David's samily, because Joseph, who was not his natural father, was descended from it; the Christian will be able to prove, that by their law the difficulty is removed. For if it was not unreasonable to admit him to be the son of Heli, who was neither begotten by him, nor yet born in his life-time, where's the absurdity of affirming Jesus to be of the house of David, because Joseph was so? A Jew could not reasonably object the prediction Psal. 132. 11. as not literally sulfilled this way: Because it may easily be made good, that there are many predictions relating to the Messias and his time, which are not to be understood rigorously in the letter, but must be understood in a more spiritual sense: Whereas in truth here is no need of being beholden to the Jews, when we desire nothing from them, but to use that liberty of speaking, which their law allows, and requires also. Besides that it is very well known, that among the heathens it was always owned, That an adopted son was taken into the

\* Mat. 1. 20.

9 Deut. 25. 6.

\* Respons. ad Quæst. 66.

Sf<sub>2</sub>

family;

family; and did partake of the nobility, and other rights and properties belonging thereunto. And therefore why should Jesus be excluded from the family and rights belonging to Joseph? Be it as it will, here is cause enough, why St. Matthew should give us the genealogy of Joseph.

(3.) ANOTHER reason, for which it was fit, that we should have the genealogy of Joseph, is this, because the Jews were not wont to draw genealogies by the mother's fide. It is a rule among the *Hebrews*, that the family of the mother is not called a family, as the author of the Juchasin expressent it. It would have been very odd, and very exceptionable by the Jews themselves, if St. Matthew had proceeded in this matter, against the constant rules and customs of the nation. This would have been without example, and against the rules and maxims of the nation. We are so far from any such example in the old Testament, that we have not fo much as an account of the years of life of any woman there recorded, excepting Sarah. There is no mention in St. Luke of any woman, in his long list of degrees from Joseph to Adam. And the there be some mention of women in the genealogy in St. Matthew; yet that is no objection, against what I now maintain to be the custom of the Jewish nation: I may afterwards shew the true reason, why there is any mention of them. The family was preserved and continued in the males of Israel. The daughters of Zelophehad were fensible, that their family was in danger of expiring, and that it was not in their power to preserve it. Their words are these: Our father died in the wilderness, &c. and had no sons: Why should the name of our father be done away from among his family, because he hath no son? They were the males, who kept up the families, and preserved their memory: It was therefore necessary, that pedigrees should consist of them. This may suffice to prove, that it was fit, that St. Matthew should give us the genealogy of Joseph, when he undertakes to give us that of Jesus.

II. I SHALL now shew, that the Jews have not sufficient cause to affirm, that this genealogy of Joseph is nothing to the purpose. This in a great measure appears, from what hath been said above. But I shall not content my self with that, but proceed to shew, that St. Matthew may be abundantly desended against the Jews, when he gives us the genealogy of Joseph, where he undertook to give us that of Jesus. For I do readily grant, that St. Matthew undertakes to give the genealogy of Jesus, and that he doth give us the genealogy of Joseph: This is undeniable from his own words. And it is also as evident, that the Evangelist doth by the method which he uses, and from the genealogy which he gives of Joseph, conclude, that he hath given us that of Jesus. This is evident from 'his own words: And Jacob begat Joseph the busband of Mary; of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ. Hence it appears, That he infers the genealogy of Jesus from the premisse. And this he doth afterwards, where he places Jesus in the third Tessara-decad, as one whose genealogy had been deduced from Abraham and David, in these words; And from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ, are fourteen generations. I am therefore to shew, how the Evangelist may be defended: Or which comes to the same thing, to shew, how St. Matthew might

. Numb. 27. 3, 4:

discharge

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> Juchasin, fol. 55. V. Chrysost. in Matth. Hom. 2. <sup>4</sup> Matt. 1. 16, 17.

discharge his promise of giving the genealogy of JESUS, when he gives us

But before I proceed, to what I mainly intend, I cannot forbear to take notice of a great error of some Christian writers, who have endeavoured to account for this matter: They have faid, that which is not true generally speaking; or if it was true, it is not at all to the purpose, or any manner of proof of that, which it is produced for. That which they have faid is this, That the Jews were obliged to marry within their own tribe: that therefore when Joseph appears to be of the tribe of Judah, it follows, that Mary his wife was fo too; it not being fo much as to be supposed, that so just a man would break the law of God in that case. Cardinal Baronius ' owns this foul error: His words are these, Cùm certum, exploratúmque habeatur, nec feminæ alterius tribûs virum, nec viro alterius tribûs fæminam sibi matrimonio jungere licuisse; id jubente divina Scripturâ atque dicente, Nubant quibus volunt, tantúm ut suæ tribûs hominibus, &c. It is very manifest, that what he affirms is false, and that the proof which he produceth, is nothing to the purpose; and more than that, if it was true, yet it is not of any moment in our present question against the Jews. And it very ill becomes Christian men to give the Jews an advantage against us, by going about to confute them with arguments, which are neither true, nor

pertinent; but the mere figments of our own brain.

THAT it was forbidden the Jews to marry out of their own tribe, is most false: and that it is so (says Possinus the Jesuit) Intelligunt, qui Scripturas vel semel legerint; They understand it so to be, who have read the Scripture but once. For besides that there is no such law any where to be found in all the old Testament, we want not the greatest evidence on the other fide. We find the other tribes of Israel concerned greatly for those, who were left of Benjamin, to provide them wives: They might not beshow their daughters upon them; not because it was not lawful for them antecedently so to do, but because they had bound themselves by an oath not to do it. They had sworn, and said, Cursed be he, that giveth a wife to Benjamin: Hence it is that they' fay, We may not give them wives of our daughters; for the children of Israel have fworn, &c. There was no need, they should swear they would not do it, if it had been antecedently forbidden by their law: Nor need they have assigned their oath as the reason, why they might not do it, had it been any where forbidden by Moses. Besides, How many examples have we in holy writ of those, who without any reprehension married out of their tribe? I shall not urge that of ' Aaron, who married the daughter of Amminadab, of the tribe of Judah; because it may be said, this was done before the law was given by Moses. It is very well known, that 'Salmon married Rahab a woman of Canaan: David' married a daughter of Saul of the tribe of Benjamin: Booz married Ruth the Moabitess. Jehojada the priest married out of his own tribe; for he married Jehoshebeath the daughter of king Jehoram, of the tribe of Judah. And the law of Moses was to far from forbidding a man to marry out of his tribe, that it allowed him .to marry, a captive. And when Samson desired a wife of the Philistines, all that his father and mother said was othis, Is there never a woman of the

daughters

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>7</sup> Baron. Apparat. ad Annal. n. 31. Num. ult. <sup>8</sup> Judg. 21. 13. 

<sup>4</sup> Exod. 6. 23. <sup>a</sup> P. Possin. Diallact. cap. 59 <sup>d</sup> 1 Sam. 18. 27 Judg. 21, 13.
Ruth 4. 10. 5 Matt. 1. <sup>6</sup> 2 Chron, 22, 11. 10 Judg 14. 3. , Deut. 21. 11.

daughters of thy brethren, or among all my people, that thou goest to take a wife of the uncircumcised Philistines? They did not restrain him to a daughter of the tribe of Dan, but lest him at liberty to choose out of all

the people.

As to what Baronius alledgeth in defence of this opinion, 'tis nothing to his purpose. The daughters of Zelophehad received an inheritance in their tribe: There was care taken, that the inheritance might not be taken away (by their marriages into other tribes) from the tribe of their father. Hence a law was made for those virgins, who were heiresses (and called among the Greeks 'Eninances') by which they were determined to marry into their own tribe, to preserve and keep the inheritance there. All that can be truly said is, That this is an excepted case: Others are left at liberty; such as these are restrained; and that too upon the account of the inheritance, that it might not pass into another tribe. So that upon the whole matter, it is so far from proving what it is produced for, that it rather makes against An excepted case (we say) confirms the rule in all things not excepted. If by a special law these virgins who inherited, and others that did so, were confined to marry within their own tribe; then sure others, who had not fuch inheritances, were left at liberty: And tho a man might not marry an heiress from another tribe; yet he was at liberty, as to any other that was not fo.

AGAIN, Let us take it for granted for once, that what Baronius affirms to be certain and approved, is true (tho it appears upon examination to be false) yet still it is not pertinent; nor doth it serve the purpose, for which it is produced. What he would prove is too little. All that can be inferred from it, if it was true, is this, That Mary was of the tribe of Judah; and consequently our Jesus was so too. But still this doth not conclude Mary to be of the samily of David; whereas Christ was to proceed from the fruit of his loins. There were many other samilies of Judah besides that of David. The Messias was promised from the beginning, as the seed of the woman: afterwards it was predicted, that he should spring from the tribe of Judah: and in process of time, that he should arise out of the samily of David. If he who pretended to be the Messias was not of the family of David, as well as of the tribe of Judah, he ought not to be received. Having premised this, I return to the desence of St. Matthew; who, tho he gives us the genealogy of Joseph, when he undertakes to give that of Jesus, is not upon that account to be rejected, as one who doth that, which is nothing to the purpose.

BECAUSE Joseph and Mary were of the same family: And then he that gives us the genealogy of Joseph, doth at the same time give us the gene-

alogy of Mary, and consequently of Jesus the son of Mary.

SEVERAL of the ancients inquire, why Jesus was conceived of a virgin that was espoused, and not of a virgin persectly at liberty? One reason which they give is this, That by the family of Joseph, the family of Mary might be shown. A late 's learned writer hath collected several places to this purpose. This will make it appear, that what I affirm is no novel opinion: And as the other reasons, which they give are of great weight, so if what follows be considered, this which they give is very well grounded.

Gen. 3. 15. Gen. 49, 10. Pfal. 132. II. Coteler. in Epistol. Ignatii ad Ephes.

I Make no doubt at all, but so it was, that foseph and Mary were not only of the same tribe, but of the same family also; and that this was known and generally owned in the fewish nation, when St. Matthew wrote. But if the few do press the Christian to prove this, I think it is very unreasonable to require such a proof at this distance of time and place, when the few hath nothing to offer against it. But I will shew, upon what ground we believe this; and make no doubt but to offer upon this occasion, what may satisfy any indifferent and impartial inquirer. The

grounds of our belief of this are these that follow.

(1.) The new Testament gives us some ground to believe it. The angel Gabriel was fent to a virgin, espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary, Luke 1. ver. 26. I can fee no cause from the Greek text, why we should not connect those words, Of the house of David, to those, to a virgin: And then I would read them with a parenthesis thus. To a virgin (espoused to a man whose name was Joseph) of the house of David. Here is nothing forced, or strained in the least degree; but all bids fair for it. For certain it is, that the virgin is the subject of the text: 'Tis the message to her, that is there related: And she is there very particularly described, (1.) From the place of her habitation, ver. 26. A city of Galilee, named Nazareth. (2.) From her relation to Joseph (espoused to a man whose name was Joseph). (3.) From her family, of the house of David. (4.) From the name by which the was commonly called; And the virgin's name was (or is) Mary. The mention of Joseph in that place, is not upon his own account, but upon the account of the virgin Mary, to whom the angel is directed: And the virgin is so particularly described, that there can be no doubt remaining, which was she. That she was a virgin was not enough; because there were doubtless many virgins in Nazareth. That her name was Mary, was not sufficient; for there might be several of that name: But add to this, that she was of the house of David, and espoused to Joseph, and all doubt is removed out of the way. If this sense of the words be admitted (and it cannot with good reason be rejected) the difficulty is intirely taken away. For if Joseph and Mary be of the same samily, then he that gives the genealogy of Joseph, gives that of Mary (and consequently of Jesus) at the same time. Abraham married Sarah his brother's daughter; he that gives an account of the ancestors of Abraham, must be allowed to give an account of the ancestors of Sarah at the same time. The case is the same

Nor is this interpretation of the words of St. Luke, chap. 1. ver. 26. a novel one: St. Chrysoftom gives the same. The st. 8cc. i. e. How shall we know (says he) that the virgin sprang from David? Hear God speaking to Gabriel to go to a virgin, espoused to a man whose name is Joseph, of the house and samily of David. What would you have more manifest than this, when thou hearest, that the virgin is of the house and family of David? Nicetas speaks to the same purpose: "Iva Iv µdbys, &cc. i. e. That thou mayest learn, that the virgin was from David, hear God speaking to Gabriel, commanding him to go to a virgin, espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house and family of David.

. In Matt. Hom. 25

? Nicet, in Matt. c. 1.

To

To Luke 1. 26. I might add Luke 2. 3, 4, 5. where we read that, upon the decree of Augustus Casar, that all the world, or Roman empire, should be taxed, All went to be taxed, every one to his own city, ver. 3. And as Foseph upon that occasion lest Nazareth, and went to the town of David, i. e. to Bethlehem, because he was of the house and lineage of David, ver. 4. on the same occasion, and (as is probably thought) for the fame reason Mary went thither also, ver. 5. For if every one went to their own city, as is affirmed, ver. 3. why should we doubt but Mary did it likewise? This H. Grotius takes to be so evident, That upon ver. 5. he hath these words. Apertè satis ostendit Lucas, etiam Mariam ex genere Davidis suisse: Nam alioqui ipsa in samiliæ suæ urbe prositeri debuerat. i. e. St. Luke clearly shews, that Mary was of the samily of David, otherwise she ought to have been taxed (or enrolled) in the city of her own family. To which I may well add the words of Zacharias the priest, who by the Holy Ghost prophesied, saying, That God raised up an horn of salvation for us, in the house of his servant David, Luke 1.69. If any man will with care read the whole hymn, he must confess, that those words must refer to the birth of Jesus, and to no other. John the Baptist was of the house of Aaron, not of David.

(2.) This also is the doctrine of 'the fathers of the church They tell us, That Joseph and Mary were of the same house or family. This being a matter of fact, they are the best witnesses, who lived nearest that time. I do not produce these things as proofs against the Jews, any farther than to show them the grounds, upon which Christians do thus be-

lieve; and that they are sufficient. This is no new doctrine.

(3.) That there is nothing in this belief, but what is very confishent with the Jewish law and practice. Even before the law, Abraham, to whom the promise of the Messias was given, married into his own family; and care was taken, that Isaac and Jacob the heirs of the promise should do so likewise. That this was commonly done asterward, the Jews cannot deny. Nor do I know any better reason, why Thamar, Rahab and Ruth are mentioned in St. Matthew's record than this, that they were exceptions to the general practice: and perhaps this is the reason, why the mothers of the kings of Judah are so frequently mentioned in the book of Kings; and one reason, why the three kings are omitted; they being descended from Joram, who was married, not only to an idolatrous samily, but also one that was alien. 'Tis certain as to sach, that the Jews were nicely careful to uphold their samilies, and marry into them: And none had more cause so to do than the family of David; not only because they were very illustrious and noble; but because the Messias was to spring from thence, according to God's express promise to king David.

AGREEABLE to this practice and usage are the words of Sarah the daughter of Raguel to be understood. Tobit 3 15. I am the only daughter of my father; neither hath he any child to be his heir; neither any near kinsman (or brother) nor any son of his alive, to whom I may keep my self for a wife. She was an heiress, and therefore thought her self obliged, not only to marry into her tribe, but into her family and near kindred. But so it was, she

had

V. Chryfost. Homil, 2. in Matth. Hieron. in Matth. 1.

had neither uncle nor first cousin: At last she married to Tobias, to whom she belonged by right of inheritance, ver. 16. And Manasses the husband of Judith is said to have been of her tribe and kindred, Judith 8.2.

LET us consider the law of Moses in the case of heiresses, for the better comprehending this whole matter, Numb. 36. And in order to it I shall consider the case of the daughters of Zelophehad. Their father died in the wilderness, and left no son behind him: Nor did he die in rebellion, as others did. His daughters apply themselves to Moses; and defire a possession among the brethren of their father; that their fathers name might not be done away. Their request was granted by the divine direction, and the law of inheritances was established, Numb. 27. Upon this a difficulty arose, which is laid before Moses by the chief fathers of the families of the children of Gilead; and it is this. They represent the mischief that would happen, if these heiresses should marry to husbands of another tribe; by this means the inheritance would irredeemably be lost from the tribe, to which it originally belonged, and would be added to another tribe. For a remedy whereof it is ordained, that those who were heiresses, should be obliged to be married to the family of the tribe (or house) of their fathers, Numb. 36. ver. 6. which is repeated again, ver. 8. So that by this law they were obliged to marry, not only into the tribe, but into the kindred or family of their father. The practice of the Jews is an evidence, that they thus understood this law. And the daughters of Zelophehad did upon this marry their uncles sons; and are said to have done even as the LORD commanded Moses, ver. 10. It follows, Their inheritance remained in the tribe of the family (the V. Lat. renders it in triba & familia) of their fathers.

If it be asked, What all this is to my present purpose? I answer, that I think it very much so For the virgin Mary is said to have been 'Extractors', an heires: And then what hath been said is greatly to my purpose. Beside the tradition for this opinion, I add, that it is highly probable from this, that we have no mention of any brother which she had (we deny not that she had sister or sisters) and if she had none, it is highly probable, that she was an heires; and consequently under this law, as I have explained it; and if so, she was obliged to marry, not only one of her own tribe, but samily also. Nor is the meanness of the blessed virgin's provision at Bethelehem, or of her sacrifice afterward, any objection against her being an heiress. Ruth gleaned in the field, and was very poor, and yet had an inheritance after all; as appears from the book of Ruth.

(4.) That Mary was of the same family with Joseph (i. e. of the samily of David) ought not to be called in question by the modern, because it was not disowned by the antient Jews: By this the modern Jews ought to be concluded. Now that this was not disowned by the antient Jews, I shall make appear.

Jesus was commonly called the fon of David, whilst he lived among the Jews; as I have elsewhere shewed. Jesus owned himself so to be; nor did the Jews ever accuse him on this account, tho they were

Digitized by Google

<sup>\*</sup> The Virgin was given to Joseph, หมัญอง รับร ชัย ส่งสุดสาสงานง ส่งรหิง หันคง; i. e. She being oblig'd to it on the account of the Inheritance, Epiphan. Hæres, lxxviii.

very prone to do it upon all other occasions. They did not deny him to be of *David*'s family: He was not accused, or put to death for this reason.

Nor do we find, that his apostles afterwards were ever so much as accused, or called in question for affirming, that Jesus was the son of David. They were indeed commanded by the council not to preach in the name of Jesus; but never forbidden to affirm him to have been of the samily of David. When St. Matthew and St. Luke first wrote their genealogies, who was there among the Jews, who opened their mouths against them? Who attempted to convince them of a salsity? And yet that was the proper time of doing it. There were about the time in which these writers lived, censual or genealogical tables; for these were kept with great care, as the Jews do well know. It would have been a very easy matter to have consuted these men, had they prevaricated in this matter: And the detecting of their fraud would soon have put a stop to Christianity. 'Tis now too late to object against the Evangelists, and a very unreasonable thing to put us upon proofs of this kind; when all their censual tables have been destroyed many hundred of years since.

I ADD, what Hegesippus \* relates in Eusebius to my present purpose, viz. That Domitian had given out a command, to destroy all that could be found of the house or samily of David: Upon which several persons were brought before him, that were descended from Judas, who was the brother of Jesus; and were accused in principal about, as being of the family of David, which they frankly owned before the emperor. The same author tells us, That in the times of Trajan, the Jews accused Simeon the son of Cleophas, for that he was of the samily of David, and a Christian. Now this Simeon was a kinsman of our Saviour also (Matt. 13.55) And when the Jews accused them before the Roman emperors, they did at the same time testify, that Jesus was of the house or family of David.

To what hath been said I cannot but add, what several of our slearned writers have upon this occasion proved against the modern Jews. And it is, that the antient Jews did own, that Jesus was of the house and samily of David. This they make good from the Babylonian Talmud, a book of great antiquity; and to which the Jews on other occasions pay the greatest descrence and regard. The passage in the Talmud is to this purpose: That Jesus was hanged on the evening of the Passover; that a crier went before him for forty days, to proclaim that if any one knew any cause, why he should not be put to death, he should declare it; that there was none to be found, that could speak on the behalf of Jesus; and that one, whose name was Ula, gives the reason of this proceeding to be, that Jesus was related to the kingdom; which he could not be unless he were ex semine regio, i. e. of the Davidical samily; as R. D. Gantz expresses himself in this matter, when he speaks of R. Jehudah Hakkodesh, the compiler of the Misua.

I TAKE this to be a very considerable testimony, as it now lies before us in the *Talmud*: But yet it is in the printed copies so delivered, that it gives too great a suspicion, that the *Jews* have, in the printed *Talmud*,

used

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> Hiftor. l. 3. c. 15. <sup>†</sup> c. 26 Zemach David. p. 259. Jac. Alting. Shiloh, p. 258. <sup>7</sup> P. 106. per Vorstium.

used some fraud and artistice in this matter on purpose to obscure the tradition. They who have more time and leisure, will bestow it well in a farther search. I have seen a copy of a MS. of Sorbon, written towards the end of the XIII century, communicated to me by my very worthy and learned friend Dr. Peter Allix, in which this matter is related with much greater perspicuity, than we find it in the printed copies of the Talmud. For there Ula, after the account before rehearsed, is brought in saying expressly, Sed hoc fastum est de Jesu Nazareno, quia consanguineus erat regno. And the Dominican, who gives us that translation, tells us, That the same words are to be found in the book called Mohed, in the title Sabbath, which now (tho there be still mention of Jesus) is in the printed copies intirely lest out. Instead of being allied to the kingdom, R. Solomon in the margin traduceth him for being a Manzer, or one that is base born.

I VERY well know, that the Jews have been accused of erasing out of the late editions of the Talmud, what was found in the antient copies to our present purpose. I will not charge them with what I cannot prove; but wish that learned men, who have the opportunity of comparing the several copies, would make it their business to inquire into this matter

with great application.

This is certain, and may easily be made good, that the modern Jews are much departed from the belief of their antient writers. They have studied shifts and evasions; and put Christians upon proofs, where their forefathers made no exceptions. We have evidence sufficient of this, besides what hath been mentioned upon this subject. A samous instance to this purpose we have from Manasch Ben Israel, in his attempts to pervert that place, Gen. 49. 10. to a sense that is no ways agreeable to the sense of Christians, and of the antient Jews themselves.

Tt<sub>2</sub> CHAP.

Conciliat. in Gen.



#### CHAP. XIV.

Of the opinion, that St. Luke gives the genealogy of Jesus by his mother. A pretence against that account removed. The text of St. Luke, chap. 3. 23. considered. Some remarkable differences between the genealogies of the two Evangelists. That the aforesaid opinion is not inconsistent with the text or design of St. Luke. This is proved. An objection answered. The usefulness of this opinion if admitted. That we do not want sufficient proof, that Jesus was of the seed of David according to the sless, besides what we have from the genealogies of St. Matthew and St. Luke.

T is said in the last Exception, that if the Evangelists would have gained their end, they should have given us an account of the genealogy of Mary the mother of Jesus; not of Joseph, who was not really his father. I have, I hope, given satisfaction already in this matter, and desended St. Matthew: Nor do I think I need say any more upon this argument. But because I will omit nothing that is material, I shall in this place acquaint the objector, that there have been very learned men of opinion, that, as St. Matthew gives us the genealogy of Joseph, so St. Luke gives us that of Mary. I meddle not with determining that question; nor do I prosess to be of that opinion: But yet I think, it is very sit to represent the grounds, on which learned men have taken up that belief. If these grounds be good, then, as I think, what hath been said already is a competent answer to the forenamed exception; so this added to it, will be a very abundant one.

HOWEVER, I shall here have a fair occasion of making some farther reflection upon the genealogy of St. Luke, than I have hitherto done; which the reader may also expect from me upon this occasion.

BEFORE I proceed to what I mainly intend, I shall remove a prejudice against this opinion, which is very obvious from what hath been said before

It hath been said, that the Jews are not wont to draw genealogies by the mother's side: That to do so is against the constant custom and practice and rules of the Jews. This hath been urged in the foregoing chapter, and made use of in defence of St. Matthew; for giving us the genealogy of Joseph, when he promise that of Jesus. That to urge this opinion therefore looks like shifting and shuffling, as men use to do in a bad cause.

IΝ

In answer to this there are many things, which might be said: But I will do it in as few words, as I can. I do allow, that it is against the rule and custom of the Jews to draw genealogies by the mother. 'Tis certain also, that 'this doth justify St. Matthew, in giving us the genealogy of Joseph. St. Matthew was a Jew; he wrote for the benefit of the Jews; and kept to the received custom of the Jews in this matter of the genealogy. But what is this to St. Luke? He was no Jew by birth, and no ways obliged to this custom of theirs. He wrote for the Gentiles; and might in this matter be allowed his liberty. St. Matthew begins no higher than Abraham the father of the Hebrews. St. Luke carries his as high as Adam the father of mankind. St. Matthew comes downward from Abraham to Joseph; St. Luke on the other hand goes upward, from the time of Jesus to the first man. One comes down by the line of Solomon, the other goes up by that of Nathan. Both indeed kept in the family of David; but they use different lines and methods. And therefore it needs not to seem strange at all, that when St. Matthew gives the genealogy of Joseph, St. Luke should give that of Mary. Again, it is to be considered, that this is an extraordinary case. Jesus was born of a virgin, his genealogy is to be accounted for, and he was not to be allowed to be the Christ, unless he was of the family of David. So that this is a case peculiar and without any parallel, and may therefore well be exempt from the common rule and usage. Joseph was indeed the husband of Mary, and consequently so far the father of Jesus; but still he was not his natural, but his reputed father. He was indeed supposed to be his father, and this St. Luke mentions in the beginning of his genealogy, which might ferve to justify the manner of his proceeding, allowing him to give the genealogy of Mary. Thus he begins, And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, Luke 3.23. As for the pretence, that the urging this opinion looks like shuffling, and may infinuate a bad cause, it cannot be thought so by any indifferent person. The Jews indeed have used very ill methods, and given such an account of the original of Jesus, in that filthy book called the Toldoth Jesu, as is altogether groundless and fabulous; they have stuck at nothing to disparage Jesus, his miracles and his holy religion. They use unlawful weapons, and surely the Christians are at liberty to use such as are lawful. For the cause is good, and needs no artistice. And what hath been said above is sufficient at least and is what the sufficient at least, and is what the Jew will never be able to answer.

I ADD, that a very fair account may be given of the various methods of St. Matthew and St. Luke. St. Matthew wrote among the Jews, as well as for their use. He wrote first, and soon after many of those things happened, which he relates: These things were well known among those, who were his countrymen. Jesus was all along owned publickly, to be the son of David at that time, and in the place where he lived. The kindred or consanguinity between Joseph and Mary was as well known, as it was of old owned between Abraham and Sarah. To have given an account of the ancestors of Mary was needless, when her samily was accounted for in the genealogy of Joseph; besides, it would have been among the Jews, not only a needless; thing, but it would have been very uncouth, and disagreeable to their practice and their rule. But St. Luke was no Jew;

<sup>\*</sup> Hieron. Procemium in S. Matt.

#### PART II. 158 A DEMONSTRATION

he went into foreign countries, where these matters were not known, and these customs did not obtain; and no wonder, that he should take another method for the satisfaction of mankind, from what St. Matthew took for the satisfaction of the Jews. He wrote after St. Matthew; and cannot therefore be supposed to be concerned to give us the genealogy of Joseph,

which St. Matthew had given before.

THE main thing to be considered in this matter is this, whether the words of St. Luke, and his design be consistent with this opinion. For if this opinion be not confistent with the text and purpose of St. Luke, it ought to be rejected. I do not think it fit to do any violence to the text, to serve an Hypothesis. I shall make it appear, that the words of St. Luke are confistent with this opinion. And tho those, who advance this opinion, may a little differ from each other; yet it is plain they mean the same thing.

FIRST then, the words as we translate them are these: And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was (the son) of Heli. Those words, which was the son of Heli, may very well be applied to Jesus, without the least violence to the text. And the Parenthesis might consistently enough with the text have been closed after the word Joseph. And they may be read thus, Being (as was supposed the son of Joseph) the son of Heli: and then the meaning is, that he really was (the reputed the son of Joseph) the son of Heli. This Heli was the father of Mary; and then we have the genealogy of Jesus by his mother. And well might he be called the fon of Heli his mother's father; nothing being more common among the Hebrews, than to call the grandson by the name of son. And here especially it may be allowed, because Jesus was a'wa' Tws, i. e. without a father intervening: Tho 'tis certain, that in those words the son of Heli, the word fon is not in the text; all that is in the text is, To Hall i. e. of Heli; which may be as truly said of the grandson of Eli, as of any child begotten by Jacob may as truly be said to be of Abraham, as Isaac might. And yet I do not blame our English, for putting in the word son through the whole line: and for what appears, the word fon refers throughout to JE sus. He was in truth the son of Heli, and the son of Matthat, and the son of Levi, and so on to the end; and at the last, the Son of GoD, in the truest and highest sense. And so he was proclaimed to be, ver. 22. As for the parenthetical reading, which I mention above, I dare appeal to any man that will compare the Syriac version, whether that very ancient version will warrant it or not. I am fure, that nothing could have been more agreeable than such a Parenthesis to that version: And it is evident, that the same may be affirmed of the Greek text. Here is nothing in this account that is harsh or strained. That Jesus should be said to be of Heli, or the son of Heli, cannot be strange to him, who considers, That he is in St. Matthew called the Son of David, and the Son of Abraham. But the I see no manner of objection against this account; yet I am not so sar tyed to it, but that I am at liberty,

SECONDLY, To admit that Joseph is here said to be the son of Heli, as he married Mary the daughter of Heli; and then he was the son-in-law of Heli, the father of Mary. This amounts to the very same thing: For then is Jesus allowed to be the grandfon of Heli, which is all that is pleaded for. The Jews ought not to refuse this way of speaking, because it is agree-

\* Luke 3. 23.

able

cable to their own way and manner of expression. He that married Heli's daughter may well be faid to be his Son. I am fure nothing is more common than this way of speaking. A man calls him that marries his daughter, his fon; and her who is married to his fon, his daughter. And there is fufficient ground for it; because the husband and wife are one slesh. There is a remarkable passage to this purpose in the Bereshith Rabbah, on Gen. 37. ver. 35. We read of Jacob, That all his sons, and all his daughters rose up to comfort him. We read but of one daughter that he had, viz. Dinah: It is faid in answer to it by that author אין ארם נמנע מלקורא לחתנד בנו ולכלתו בתו i.e. A man is at liberty to call his son-in-law his son, and his daughter-in-law his daughter. Joseph then may be called the son of Heli. And then it will not be hard to understand, how the same Joseph might be called the son of Jacob and Heli also. Jacob begat him; and he married the daughter of Heli. And there is good ground in the text for this. It is to this purpose well observed by learned men, that St. Matthew useth the word begat throughout his line; Jacob begat Joseph: But St. Luke doth not; he only says, 78 Hai, of Heli, &c. And tho we put in the word son, yet we see how Joseph might be said to be his son, viz. by marrying his daughter. I am clearly of opinion after all, that tho this second way of interpreting St. Luke be the most common, and be also desensible against the fews; yet the first is rather to be adhered to.

It is in the next place to be shewn. That this account of the matter is no way inconsistent with St. Luke's design, but most agreeable thereunto. St. Luke was a gentile, and a companion of St. Paul, the great apostle of the gentiles. He knew, that others had written before him of those things, which he undertakes to relate: And 'tis not to be questioned, but that he had seen the gospel of St. Matthew, which was written several years before his. it is very evident, that tho he hath many things, which are related by St. Matthew; yet he hath fet down very much, which was omitted by him. He may be truly called the Evangelist, as St. Paul was the apostle of the gentiles, and St. Matthew the evangelist of the Jews. He reports many things relating to the conception and birth of John the baptist and Jesus (which St. Matthew passeth by as things known among the Jews) fit to be known in the gentile part of the world. When he comes to relate the genealogy of Jesus, he takes a very different method from him: And it is not likely, that he should do this to set forth the genealogy of Joseph, which had been done already; and that he should bring it up as far as Adam, when he had been deduced from Abraham before. Twas enough, that St. Matthew brought his stem from Abraham, and by David, downwards. I say, it was enough to the Jews, who expected a MESSIAS so descended, according to God's Promise. But the Messias by St. Luke is considered as the feed of the woman, who was to break the ferpents head; as he had been promised to Adam the sather of mankind, long before the Jewish people had any being. And hence St. Luke gives an account of the genealogy of Jesus after his baptism, when this promised seed of the woman was just entring upon his publick ministry, and about to break the serpent's head: And his temptation in the wilderness, where he vanquished the devil, is related immediately hereupon. On the other hand, St. Matthew begins his genealogy, before he relates the birth of Jesus; and gives us the genealogy of Joseph, the reputed father of Jesus, and the husband of Mary.

I SAY

## 160 A DEMONSTRATION PART II.

ISAY the husband of Mary; and under that Idea he is confidered by St. Matthew. 'Tis expressly said, That Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary. Those words, The husband of Mary, contain the true reason, why that genealogy was drawn up. The consanguinity between them (as a thing well known at that time) he mentions not: That he was Mary's husband, being the true reason for which he gave that account of his pedigree.

On the other hand, let us see under what Idea he is considered by St. Luke, when he draws up the genealogy. And by him he is not mentioned as the husband of Mary, as he really was, and as he is considered by St. Matthew, but as the supposed father of Jesus only. He was not really the father of Jesus, as he really was the husband of Mary. And if so, who can imagine that St. Luke should in that place, not only give us the genealogy of Joseph, which St. Matthew had done before; but also carry it up as high as Adam, when St. Matthew had brought it no farther than from Abraham? and that she should proceed by the line of Nathan, when St. Matthew came down by that of Solomon? If it might be objected against St. Matthew, that he gave us the genealogy of Joseph, when he should have given us that of Jesus; how much more might this objection have been urged against St. Luke, who wrote after him, and gave us the genealogy of Joseph, when yet he owns him to be but the supposed father of Jesus? And that he should give such a genealogy, that is so far from making the matter plainer than St. Matthew left it, that it hath increased the difficulties.

AND thus have I represented this opinion as an answer ex abundanti to

the Jews: I cannot see what reply they can make to it.

Object. If it should be objected by any person, that Heli was not the father of Mary, but Joakim, according to the constant tradition of the church, Ianswer,

1. That I will admit the tradition, and pay all that deference to it, that can belong to it. But for all that, Joakim or Jehojakim, among the fathers that report this tradition, may well be the same person, who is in St. Luke called Heli. For Eli is probably but the contraction of Eliakim: And tho in sound there be a difference; yet in the sense and meaning there is none; and the same man is called sometimes Joakim or Jehojakim, and Eliakim also, 2 Kin. 23. 34. with 2 Chron. 36. 4. And there can be no stress laid on this objection, unless it could be proved from the text, That the virgin's father was called in Scripture by some other name.

2. The Jews have no reason to press this objection, because Galatinus hath produced two testimonies from the Jewish writers themselves, which expressly affirm, that the father of Mary was called both Eli and Jehojakim. And certain it is, that we read in the Jerusalem Talmud, of one Mary the daughter of Eli: And such things are there said, as inclined a very learned man of our own to believe, that those words were spoken of the blessed virgin. For they are words that are to her disparagement: And such words they bestow upon her, in great plenty, and upon Jesus, in

their Toldoth mentioned before. \*

l T

De Arcan. Cathol. verit. 1. 7. c. 12.

\* Chagiga, p. 77. c. 4.

\* It feems very trange to me, that so many learned men should in this case of the genealogies, make use of this distinction between a natural and a legal parent, without taking notice of an objection, which at first view must be evident to the Jews, and is to me unanswerable. The law among the Jews concerning this matter, (as our right reverend Prelate observes, page 142) we find thus expressed, Deut. 25. 5, 6.

I HAVE proved, that this account is very confishent with the words. and with the defign of St. Luke; and I do solemnly declare, that I do not fee what the Jews can object against it with any shadow of reason. I shall add, that as it canot be disproved; so if it be admitted, it will give a very easy solution to a great many of those objections and difficultys, which are mentioned at the beginning of this discourse: v. g

I. It will be easily understood in what sense Joseph may be said to be the fon of Jacob, and of Heli. He was begotten by Jacob; and was fon

to the other, no otherwise than as he married his daughter.

II. THE different names in each genealogy will give us no trouble, because they are different lines: They begin from several persons, and terminate accordingly in several persons; or at least, upon different xious, or re-

spects.

III. The unequal numbers in the names, and the unequal distances from each other, will easily be accounted for also. Whereas it is objected in St. Matthew, That from Abraham to Jesus are reckoned forty two generations; whereas in St. Luke, from Jesus to Abraham are reckoned fifty fix; there will be no manner of difficulty in that matter; when it is confidered, that they go by feveral lines, viz. of Solomon and Nathan. And whereas St. Matthew reckons from Salathiel to Joseph but twelve descents, and St. Luke one and twenty, this is easily understood, when it is remembred, that it is not the same Salatbiel, which is mentioned by both, but of different lines. If what hath been faid above be well weighed, and this account admitted, the difficulty is quite gone.

IV. THE great difficultys concerning Salathiel and Zorobabel, as they are supposed the same in each line, are by this account intirely removed; because they are different persons. And that there should be in the line from

If brethren dwell together, and one of them die and have no child, the wife of the dead shall not marry without unto a stranger: her husband's brother shall go in unto her, and take her to him to wife, and perform the duty of an husband's brother unto her. And it shall be that the sirst born, which she beareth, shall succeed in the name of his brother, which is dead, that his name be not put out of Israel. Here a Jew will immediately object, that tho all this is true; yet it would make an alteration in one name of the genealogy alone, and not throughout the whole. For these men being brethren must be the sons of one stather, and therefore if one man had both a natural and a legal sather; yet he must still have the same grandsather. Thus, Gen. 38. If Tamar the wife of Er should have had a child by Onan or Shelah; the genealogical account must center as at first in Judah. And thus in the case before us, Luke 3. 23, 24. If Matthat had been the sather of Heli, and Heli dying without issue, his brother Jacob had taken his wife and had begotten Joseph, so that he must have been the natural son of Jacob, and legal son of Heli; and then in such a case Joseph must be as St. Luke relates it the son of Heli, who was the son of Matthat, and grandson of Levi, and then he could not be as St. Matthew tells us, Chap. 1. 15, 16. the son of this Joseph, who was the son of Matthan, and grandson of Eleazer, and whose genealogies are reckoned distinct, until they meet in David. So that the true way of solving this difficulty seems to be this: St. Matthew wrote his gospel for the use of the Jews, they reckoned their genealogies by the male only, and not by the semale; and perhaps had not so clear a notion that the Massias was to be born of a be this: St. Matthew wrote his gospel for the use of the Jews, they reckoned their genealogies by the male only, and not by the female; and perhaps had not so clear a notion that the Messias was to be born of a virgin. And for their satisfaction, he gives the genealogy from Abraham to Joseph; and tells them how these begat one another, and how they descended in a direct line. St. Luke being the companion of St. Paul, wrote his gospel for the use of the Gentiles, and particularly the Greeks: They had the Septuagint bible in their hands, who translated the text in Isaiah exactly as St. Matthew had given it. Behold a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Immanuel. When therefore they had so clear a notion that the Messias was to be born of a virgin, what did it signify to them to give a account of the genealogy of a supposed, but not a real father? He therefore gives an account of Jesus by the mother's side. He was (as it was supposed) the son of Joseph; but he was really the son of Heli, without any such supposition, as Heli was the tather of the virgin Mary, and as this learned prelate affirms. As for the virgin Mary being an heires, as it is mention'd in this treatise, page 152. really the ion of Hell, without any luch imposition, as Hell was the father of the virgin Mary, and as this learned prelate affirms. As for the virgin Mary being an heires, as it is mention'd in this treatise, page 153. it cannot be of any advantage in this case, except we suppose too many things to be granted at once swiz. That the estate came by the mother, or otherwise it would have descended to the other samily. Secondly, That this mother was nearly related to the family of Joseph before marriage. Thirdly, That there was but little or no prospect of such an inheritance when he married, otherwise care would have been taken to marry her into a nearer branch of the family. And lastly, That her mother had no male issue. But as nothing can be brought to prove any of these affertions, except what we see, page 153; so there is nothing to contradict them. Uu

Solomon,

#### A DEMONSTRATION PART II. 162

Solomon, and in that from Nathan, persons of the same Names, hath nothing

strange in it; I may say that nothing is more common.

V. In a word, whereas Faustus the heretick pretended of old, that he knew not which of the Evangelists to believe in this matter; and the Jews would represent them as inconsistent; and our modern Deists lay hold of these difficultys to run down revealed religion; if this account be admitted, I do not see, what occasion they can have left to object against them, as I am very certain (whether admitted or not) they have no just cause. I will therefore spare my self the labour of many nice enquirys, till any of the enemys of our religion shall be so hardy, as to attempt to

overthrow the account, which hath been given.

One thing I must add, That I own, that I am bound to believe Jesus to be of the House of David. I do believe this; and have reason to do it, if there were no genealogys, or if they did not prove it. For 'tis elsewhere revealed, not only that the Messias was to be of that family (which our enemies deny not) but that Jesus really was so. St. Paul expresly fays of Jesus, That he was made of the feed of David according to the flesh, Rom. 1.3. And elsewhere, he affirms him to be of the seed of David; and raised from the dead (says he) according to my gospel, 2 Tim. 2. 8. The antients are of opinion, that by his gospel he means St. Luke; and why his being of the feed, may not connect with the words according to my gospel, as well as the following words, I cannot understand; and if they do, St. Paul believed this doctrine delivered by St. Luke, whatever the Jews or our Deists do.

THE Jews would not be Christians, if the Evangelists had spoken never so clearly. Their design is to perplex Christians. God of his

mercy forgive them, and take away the veil, that is upon them.

<sup>1</sup> V. Augustin. contra Faust. Manich, l. 3.

CHAP.

#### ٵۼۣڮ۪؈ٵۼڮ؈ٵۼڮ؈ٵۼڮ۞! ڰۼۼ؈ٵۼڮ؈ٵۼڮ؈ٵۼڮڰٳ

## CHAP. XV.

Some questions answered, which were not considered before.

I. Why St. Matthew begins his genealogy with calling Jesus the son of David and of Abraham? II. Wherefore David is named before Abraham? III. Why Jacob is said here not only to have begotten Judas, but his brethren also? IV. Why David only is called king? V Why the women are mentioned in the genealogy of St. Matthew? VI. Why it is said, that Josias begat both Jechonias and his brethren? An answer to the questions, in the order in which they are proposed. The conclusion.

BEFORE I conclude that, which I have to fay as to this subject, I shall answer some questions and doubts, which may and have arisen

upon the occasion of the genealogy of Jesus.

Some of them I have accounted for in the body of this discourse, and will by no means, repeat what hath been said before; and they are such as these: How three kings come to be omitted by St. Matthew? How the Tessara-decads can be accounted for? How Jechonias can be said to have begotten Salathiel? And what can be said as to the second Cainan in St. Luke.

I WILL now proceed to some other Questions. And if I do not mention all that may be railed, it is not therefore that I shall omit any, because I think them of any great difficulty in my way, but because I really judge them to be not worth the consideration.

FIRST then, it may be inquired, why St. Matthew begins his genealogy of Jesus Christ, by calling him the fon of David, the fon of Abraham?

To which I answer, That these men had received very solemn promises of the Messias; and that he should spring from them. It was therefore very reasonable, that St. Matthew, to shew the divine veracity, should deduce Jesus from these persons. The promises were made to Abraham and to his seed, Gal. 3. 16. and Gen. 12. 3. The promise made to Abraham was transmitted to some one of his descendents. Isaac was a most eminent type of the Messias, to whom this promise was afterward conveyed. And well might St. Matthew call Jesus the son of Abraham (this great father of the faithful) and Jesus be said to have taken on him the seed of

V. Hieron, & Nicet. in Matt, 1.

Uu 2

Abraham,

# 164 A DEMONSTRATION PART II.

Abraham, Heb. 2. 16. As for David the case is plain: He received the promise of the Messias, who was according to God's promise to proceed from his family. Vide. Psalm 89. 29. and 132. ver. 11. David was himself an eminent type of the Messias; and we find the Messias called David in the old Testament; and Jesus was commonly by the people called the son of David, as I have shewed essewhere.

II. It may be inquired, Why David is named here before Abraham? For so we read, The son of David, the son of Abraham. I find St. Chry.

fostom raising this question:

To which I answer with him that raised the question, that David was nearest the time of Jesus; and being a great king as well as prophet, and an illustrious type of Christ, he is fitly enough named first; especially since the Jews expected the Messias of the lineage and samily of David.

III. It may be inquired, Why it should be said, That Jacob begat Judas and his brethren? That he begat Judas, was sit to be said; and was sufficient. Isaac had brethren, and Jacob had a brother; but they are not mentioned here; nor was it needful to do it. Those who sollow had brethren also; but they are not mentioned upon this occasion. 'Tis true, indeed, that ver. 11. Josias is said to have begot Jechonias and his brethren. That matter shall be afterwards considered by it self. As to this question I answer,

- 1. That we can with no reason say that Ishmael and Esau, &c. are omitted for their wickedness: for there are others mentioned afterwards, that were infamous for their vices.
- 2. SEVERAL of the antient' fathers give us this reason, why these persons are omitted, viz. because they had nothing common with the Israe-lites; nor had their posterity, the Saracens and Ishmaelites, &c. It is true, that they were aliens from the common-wealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, Ephel. 2. 12. But yet I cannot think, but that this question will require a fuller answer; and therefore I proceed.
- 3. FOR the clearing of this whole matter, it is to be remembred, that the MESSIAS was promifed to Abraham and to his feed, as the greatest blessing. This promise was restrained to his feed by Isaac. This blessing was transmitted from Isaac to Facob (Esau being passed by, as Ishmael had been before) till at last it was settled upon the posterity of Facob, and rested in them. How this blessing was conveyed down from Abraham, till it was thus settled, I have in another place given a more particular account.

  Thus it was, that the promised blessing, which was made to Abraham,

Thus it was, that the promised blessing, which was made to Abraham, and then made over to Isaac, and thence to Facob and his seed, doth at length rest there. To them now pertained the covenants and promises; whose are the fathers, and of whom, as concerning the stelling settled upon them; Rom. 9.4,5. The sons of Facob had this great blessing settled upon them; and therefore it was reasonable, that they should be mentioned by St. Matthew. It is true, That Christ was to arise out of the tribe of

Judah;

<sup>\*</sup> Chrysoft. in locum.

<sup>1</sup> Chrysost, & Nicetas.

<sup>\*</sup> Part I. Ch. 2.

Judah; and therefore the brethren of Judah are not mentioned by name: But the covenant and blessing belonging to them all; and therefore the brethren are fitly mentioned. And whereas part of Abraham's seed was passed by, and part of Isaac's; this glory was reserved to Facob, that all his sons inherited this promise, and were God's peculiar, and in covenant with him.

THE author of 'the Jewish book called Cosri, undertakes to shew the excellency of the Israelites. Among other things, he shews, who were God's peculiar favourites from the creation. He tells us, That Abraham was the peculium; as also the disciple of Heber, and from him called an Hebrew; that Isaac was the peculium of Abraham, his other sons being dismissed; and that Jacob was the peculium of Isaac, Esau being rejected. But then he adds, That for the sons of Jacob action, and for the holy place set aside for the divine presence: And then first did the divine presence adhere to a society or congregation; which before that time pertained only to some sew

or single Persons.

To the same purpose speaks another Jewish writer on Psal. 81. ver. 1. on those words, Make a joyful noise unto the God of Jacob. That author inquires what it should be, that should move Balaam to say, He hath not beheld iniquity in Jacob? Numb. 23. ver. 21. Why (says he) in Jacob; and not in Abraham, nor in Isaac? He saw (says he) in Abraham some thing reprobate or to be rejected, viz. Ishmael and the sons of Keturah. He saw from Isaac, that Esau and his dukes proceeded. But from Jacob, there was nothing but what was holy. And so Asaph mentions Jacob only: There being among the fathers something to be rejected; but there was no such thing in Jacob. All the sons of Jacob were in covenant, and had the promise; which Ishmael and Esau had not. And tho Judah be named particularly (the Messias being to come from that tribe, Gen. 49. 10.) yet the Evangelist (if what hath been said be duly considered) might very well make this honorary mention of his brethren.

I SHALL add, what the fon of Syrac fays to the same purpose. After he hath extolled Abraham, he tells us, That God did swear, that the nations should be blessed in his seed: That with Isaac he established the blessing and the covenant: It follows, That he made it rest upon the head of Jacob. He acknowledged him in his blessing, and gave him an heritage, and divided his portions; among the twelve tribes did he part them;

Ecclus. c. 44. ver. 19, 20, &c.

4. To what hath been faid I add, That it is to be remembred, that St. Matthew was an Israelite, and wrote his gospel for the Jews; as hath been observed before. The sons of Jacob were patriarchs, and were the heads of that people, from whence Christ was to proceed, and heirs of the promise. St. Matthew could not, without giving a needless offence, altogether pass them by.

FOR he passed by Ishmael and Esau, as those who were rejected: And naming Judah alone, might have given great offence to the Jews; as if he had intimated that he had been Jacob's only son: or that the other brethren had been passed by, as not having an equal share in the promise and blessing

<sup>2</sup> Cosri, par. I.

· Midrash Tillim.

with

with him: Whereas in truth they were joynt-heirs with him. And yet the Messias being to fpring from Judah, he doth with marvellous wisdom and temper mention his name, and make a general mention of his brethren at the same time. I am so far from thinking this to be any objection against St. Matthew, that I do admire his wildom herein; and am fully perswaded, that he did what was highly sit and agreeable.

It was fit, that they should be mentioned, the Messias being to proceed from that people; on which account, according to the sless, he was of their cognation or kindred. And so Jesus is said to be, Rom. chap. 9. ver. 5. And whereas Judah is mentioned, that ought not to diminish the privileges or rights of his brethren, who had, as the heads of their several tribes, equal power with him. And care was taken in the old Testament to let this be understood. Jacob did it, when he pronounced the blessing upon his sons. After he had named five of them, the sons of Leah, and said very great things of Judah, he mentions Dan who was born of his servant; and it might be supposed, that on that account he might not share alike in the power, which the others had. But to prevent such a supposition, Jacob says, Dan shall judge his people, as one of the tribes of Israel. I will give another instance. We have mention of the offerings of the princes. Numb. 7. The prince of the tribe of Judah offered first. Lest this should beget envy in the other princes, or occasion any suspicion, that the rest were subject to Judah's tribe. Nahshon who was the prince of that tribe, is the only person, that is not called the prince, but only said to be the son of Amminadab, of the tribe of Judah. (ver. 12.) Whereas every other succeeding offerer is called prince of his tribe respectively.

IV. It may be inquired, Why David only should be called king; as he is ver. 6. Jesse begat David the king? Those that succeeded him to the caditivity, were kings as well as he. I answer,

1. That David was the father and original of all those, who are mentioned afterwards; who indeed were kings descended from him. St. Matthew thought it sufficient to call him king. Saul was indeed king; but made so upon the culpable importunity of the people; and was of another line also. The kingdom was designed for the tribe of Judah; and the Messias was to spring from that tribe, and this samily of David.

2. ANOTHER reason I take to be this: St. Matthew designed to fit his Tessara-decads, with respect to the various state of the Israelites, from Abraham to Jesus, as hath been intimated before. The first is the age of the patriarchs, till the temple was built, and the kingdom settled in the samily of David. This was the lower, but growing condition of the Israelites. The second was the exalted state under kings. The third was the declining state after the captivity. Then is David very sitly put the last of the first Tessara-decad; and he being the root and origin of the second state, which I call the exalted or kingly state, he is, to infinuate so much very fitly called king David.

V. It may be inquired, Why women are mentioned in the genealogy of Christ by St. Matthew? For he mentions Thamar, ver. 3. Ruth, ver. 5. the wife of Urias, ver. 6. This he doth not at other times; nor do women make the family; nor were they wont to be considered in genealogies among the Jews.

I Do not think my felf bound by my argument, which I am upon, to account for this matter; nor do I think it would be any prejudice to my cause, if I neither should, nor could give any account of this matter. The Jews

would gain no advantage by this means. But yet I answer,

I. THAT it is not to be supposed, that these women are mentioned because they were sinners, to insinuate to us that Christ came to save such. It is well observed, that they who are of this opinion, are of another, that overthrows it; when they say, that the three kings omitted, were omitted for their sins. For how can this consist, that the men should for their sins be expunged out of this catalogue, and the women for their sins be put into it?

2. That which feems most probable, is this; viz. That the true reafon, why these four women above mentioned are only named in the genealogy of St. Matthew, is this; because in them only that law was departed from, which was given generally to the heirs of the promised blessing, to

take them wives of their nearest kindred.

THE promised blessing was made to Abraham; from whom this genealogy doth commence: But this bleffing was not defigned for all the feed of Abraham. It did not descend to Ishmael the son of the Egyptian woman; but to Isaac, the son of Sarah, who was Abraham's near kinswoman, viz. his brother's daughter. Abraham took great care, that I/aac, the heir of the blessing, should as Abraham had done, marry a near kinswoman; Gen. 24. There was not this regard had to Ishmael. Isaac had two sons, Esau and Jacob: The bleffing was fettled upon Jacob, and Esau was passed by. And when this appeared to Isaac, that his son Jacob was heir of the blessing, he took the same care of him, viz. that he should marry into his kindred. Gen. 28.2. His mother Rebekah, after Jacob had obtained the bleffing, was very defirous he should marry one of his kindred; and not as his brother E fau had done. She said to Isaac, I am weary of my life, because of the daughters of Heth: If Jacob take a wife of the daughters of Heth, such as these which are of the daughters of the land, what good shall my life do me? Gen. 27. 46. 'Tis thought, that Esau began quickly to be sensible of this; that he that had the bleffing, was obliged to marry one of his kindred. He had attempted to get the blessing, but failed in that attempt: He pressed hard upon his father; but could not alter his father's mind: He is supposed to try, what marrying his kinswoman might do, towards the obtaining at least some part of the blessing. Thus we read, that when Esau saw, that Isaac had blessed Jacob, and sent him away to Padan-Aram to take him a wife from thence; and that as he bleffed him, he gave him a charge, saying, Thou shalt not take a wife of the daughters of Canaan; and that Jacob obeyed his father, and his mother, and was gone to Padan-Aram: And Esau seeing that the daughters of Canaan (who were not of his kindred) pleased not Isaac his father, Then went Esau unto Ishmael (his father's brother) and took unto the wives which he had (his own first cousin) Mahalath the daughter of Ishmael, Abraham's son, the sister of Nebaioth, to be his wife, Gen. 28. 6, 7, 8, 9. I do not find (in this first Tessara-decad at least) any other variations from this general rule.

VI. WHY it should be said (as it is ver. 11.) And Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren? Had it not been enough to have said, That Josias begat

9 V. Possini Diallactic. c. 14.

Jechonias?

### 168 A DEMONSTRATION PARTIL.

Jechonias? What need was there of adding, and his brethren? I answer.

fwer,

1. That granting (which hath been sufficiently proved before) that by Jechonias in this place is meant Jehojakim, there is reason enough, why his brethren should be mentioned, as they are; because they were all kings as well as he. And if it be urged, that his brother was the first king, whose name was Jehoahaz; and therefore it might more properly be said, That he begat Jehoahaz, and his brethren: The answer is easy; that tho he was the first De facto, he was not so De jure. This Jechonias was the first born, and had the first right; and therefore is mentioned here with

great reason.

2. I conceive, that there is still a greater and more important account to be given for this way of speaking; and that is this, to let the reader know who is meant by Jechonias in this place; and that he might not be taken for Jechonias mentioned, ver. 12. Which mistake would have proved of very ill consequence in this matter. This mistake hath overtaken some men, and hath had ill essees. For by this means attempts have been made upon the original text; and great consussion hath arisen in adjusting the Tessardecads; whereas if these words had been duly considered, this had been easily prevented. For when it is said that Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, 'tis easy to know, whom St. Matthew means by Jechonias in this place, as well as why he mentions his brethren. For we do not find, that the Jechonias (ver. 12.) had any brethren; and if he had, we can assign no shadow of reason, why they should be mentioned. But by the words of St. Matthew, as they lie before us, we may certainly conclude, That by Jechonias, ver. 11. is meant Jehoiakim; as by Jechonias, ver. 12. is meant Jehojachin, as I have shewed before.

And thus I have discoursed of this difficulty; and think, that I have made it appear, That the Jews have no cause to triumph and exult upon

this occasion.

CHAP



#### CHAP. XVI.

The Jews object, that Elias is not come: and that John the Baptist ought not to be taken for him; because he disowns bimself to be Elias, John 1. 21. An account of John the Baptist, and of his office; and how he discharged it. This account defended against the Jews from their own writers. That John the Baptist was the Elias promised in Malachi. Malachi, chap. 4. 5, 6. considered. The words of John the Baptist, John 1. 21. considered. In what sense he said, that he was not Elias, and in what sense Jesus affirms him to be Elias, Matt. 11. 14. That the words of JEsus are not repugnant to those of John the Baptist. Of the opinion of the antient fathers of the church, that Elias is still to come. That this opinion hath not sufficient ground. How it came into the church. That 'tis no catholick doctrine. That granting it to be true, it will not serve the Jews turn.

MONG other things which the "Jews object against the Christians, who believe Jesus to be the Christ, this is one, that Jesus cannot be the Christ, because it was foretold, that Elias should come first; which he did not before the coming of our Jesus. The prophecy, which foretels the coming of Elias, before the coming of Christ, is very express. Behold I will send you Elijah the prophet, before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord; And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, &c. Mal. 4. 5, 6. He is there expressly called Elijah the prophet; and by the Greek interpreters Elijah the Tishbite; that the reader might be certain, that the words are to be understood of that very person so called among the Jews; and not of any other whosoever, however like him in temper and manner of life. It is true, That we say, that this promise was sulfilled in John the Baptist; and are taught by Jesus so to do. Matth. 11.10. But against this the Jews urge the express words of the prophet Malachi, and the testimony of John the Baptist himself. The Jews sent priests and Levites to him, to enquire who he was, (John 1.19.) upon which he consessed that he was not the Christ, (ver. 20.) And they asked bim,

R. Isaac. Chizuk. Emuna, l. 1. c. 39.

What

#### A DEMONSTRATION PART II. 170

What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? And he answered, No. (ver. 21.) Here John the Baptist declares, that he is not Elias, nor that prophet: and he doth it to the priests and Levites, who were sent on purpose by the Jews to examine him: And it is not to be thought, that he would have done thus, and thereby have hindred men from believing, that Jesus was the Christ, had he been the person predicted by the prophet Malachi. There was a constant belief among the Jews, that before the Messias, Elias must first come. (Matth. 17. 10.) If John the Baptist was that Elias, it was fit, that he should own it, and thereby prepare men for the reception of the Messias. To this may be added, That Jesus confesseth, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things. (ver. 11.) And many of the antient Christians were of a belief, that Elias was still to come.

FOR the more full and orderly consideration of this whole matter, I shall proceed in this method:

FIRST, I shall give a short account of John the Baptist and of his office; in which may be seen, what it is that Christians affirm of him.

SECONDLY, I shall consider, by what ways and means John the Baptist

did discharge the office, which he owned and took upon him.

THIRDLY, I shall defend the account, which our religion gives of John the Baptist against the exception which the Jews may bring against it.

FOURTHLY, I shall make it appear, that the Jows have no cause to quarrel with JESUS, or his followers; who affirm him to be the Elias which was to come.

FIFTHLY, I shall take off the objection taken from the words of John the Baptist and of Jesus, which are mentioned before; and say something to that belief among the antients, that Elias is still to come.

I. I SHALL give a short account of John the Baptist, and of his office; in which will be seen, what it is that Christians affirm of him.

Jesus calls John the Baptist, more than a prophet, (Matth. 11.9.) And presently afterward he adds, Verily I say unto you, among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist, (ver. 11.) His conception was ' foretold by an angel, he was born of a barren woman, and of parents who were advanced in years. His parents were both of the family of Aaron; of a pure conscience, and an intire fame; without fault, and without suspicion: He was the son of his parents old age (as Isaac, and several extraordinary persons were.) And the particuslars that attended upon his conception, and his circumcision were very surprize ing and strange. The angel foretels great things of him, such as these; That many should rejoice at his birth; and that he should be great in the sight of the Lord: That he should be a perpetual Nazarite; as to wine and strong dripk, and he still the Hour Great his section. and strong drink, and be filled with the Holy Ghost from his mother's womb: That he should convert many to God, and reconcile them to one another, and prepare a people for the Lord. His father is struck dumb; his mother conceives, according to the angel's prediction: This wonderful story is a preface to the conception of Jesus, and the annunciation thereof. John the Baptist was afterward a burning and a shining light; a man of great simplicity and fanctity, of undaunted courage, and a most

1 Luke 1. 5, 6, 7.

\* Ver. 14, 15, 16, 17.

fevere

fevere life: Of which I shall have occasion to say more afterward. It shall suffice at present to observe, that as he was a man of great justice and sanctity; so he was eminent for his singular and undaunted courage, his strict temperance, his humility and veracity, his great devotion towards God and contempt of the world.

As to his office, we are taught what that was, both by the words of Jesus, and his own; as well as by the angel, by Zacharias, and the Evangeliss. Jesus tells us expressly of John the Baptist, that this was he of whom it was written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. And presently after that he tells the multijudes of the Jews, to whom he speaks in that place, that he was the Elias; and he doth it in such terms, as seem to imply, that they would not readily believe that the was so: And we know, that the Jews result receive it, this is Elias, which was for to come. And as for John the Baptist himself, he frankly owns, when he is pressed to confess who he was, That he was the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make strait the way of the Lord. And the angel doth foreted of him. That he should turn many Israelites to the Lord their God, and go before him in the should go before the face of the Lord, to prepare his ways. And to the same should go before the face of the Lord, to prepare his ways. And to the same should go before the face of the Lord, to prepare his ways. And to the same should go before the face of the Lord, to prepare his ways. And to the same should go before the same should go the count it appears, that he was a messenger sent before, to make way for the reception of Christ. Let us take it for granted, at present, that Jesus is the Christ; and John the Baptist his harbinger to prepare his ways.

II. I SHALL consider, by what ways and means John the Baptist discharged the office, which he owned and took upon him: And that was, to make way for the reception of Christ, and the doctrine of the gospel.

To what I have to say upon this occasion, I shall premise this, That the very birth and conception of John the Baptist made way for the belief of the miraculous conception and birth of Jesus Christ, whose fore-runner he was. There were some things in the conception of John the Baptist, which tho they were short of what is said of Jesus; yet they advanced towards it: They did not only bear some proportion to that of his master's; but rendred it the more credible, and were apt to dispose men to the belief thereof. If Jesus was born of a virgin, John the Baptist was born of a barren and antient woman: And as Jesus was conceived of the Holy Ghost so John was filled with the same Holy Ghost, from his mother's womb; and the conception and name of one and the other was predicted and directed by an angel. There was something in the conception of John the Baptist, which tended to prepare men for the belief of that of Jesus. And this is intimated by the angel, when he brought to Mary the tidings of the wonderful birth of Jesus. She began to inquire, How that which he foretold could come to pass? To consirm her belief, he tells her, And behold thy cousin Elizabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age; and this is the sixth month with her who is called barren. (Luke 1. 36, 37.)

! Joh. I. 23. Luke I. 16, 67, 74e

Where

Digitized by Google

<sup>\*</sup> Matth. 11. 10, with ver. 7, & ver. 14. Matt. 3. 3. Mark 1. 2, 3. Joh. 1. 7.

Where the angel confirms her by a late example, and that was this of Elizabeth: She was both old and barren too; and he distinctly mentions both these; and then he adds, as well he might, For with God nothing shall be unpossible. Pramittitur filius sterilis ante filium virginis. The son of a barren (and she an antient) woman is sent before the son of a virgin; so that the very conception and birth of John the Baptist, which was so well known among the Jews, made way for the belief of what is related of that of Jesus.

HAVING premised this, I shall now shew, by what ways and means folm the Baptist did discharge the office, which he own'd and took upon

him. And,

(I.) HE did it by his *preaching*; and his preaching did very much conduce to prepare men for the reception of JESUS CHRIST and his doctrine.

FOR he preached repentance and amendment of life. There is an old tradition among the Jewish doctors, that repentance is necessary before the appearance of the Messias. The Jews do own that their impenitence is the cause, why he doth not appear. John the Baptist preacheth repentance; and moves the Jews to it from this received principle among them, that it was a needful preparation for the kingdom of the Messias. Repent ye (says he) for the kingdom of heaven (i.e. of God, or the Messias) is at hand. And it is a great change of heart and life which he requires, by fruits meet for repentance.

HE beats them off from their vain confidence, upon the score that they were descended from Abraham, the father of the faithful: Think not to say within your selves, We have Abraham to our father: For I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. The Jews were prone, upon the account of their descent from Abraham, to pride themselves, tho they had not his faith, as appears elsewhere: And it was therefore necessary, that they should be beaten off from this vain considence.

AGAIN, the more effectually to awaken them, he lays before them the divine Judgments in case of their impenitence. And now also the axe is laid to the root of the trees; therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen down and cast into the sire. They must repent or perish: And he lets them know, that tho the Messias, who was ready to appear, would offer mercy to the penitent; yet that he would severely punish the obstinate sinner: Whase san is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire. He puts the Sadducear and Pharises in mind of the wrath to come. The destruction of that people drew nigh; and as a faithful prophet, he warns them of it.

It will be very feasonable here to look into the "words of the Prophet, and to consider how exactly they were fulfilled in John the Baptist. Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet, before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord: And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to the fathers; lest I come and smite the earth with a curse. Here we have a promise

Digitized by Google

Mat. 3. 2, 8, ) . Cossi par. 1 Sect. 115.

S Mat. 3. 10. Luke 3. 9.

Mat. 3. 12.

Mat. 3. 9.

Mal. 4. 5, 6.

Of

of a certain person, whom God would send, called here Elijah the prophet; of which more afterward. I shall observe at present, for the more full explication of the prophet's words, and shewing, that they are suffilled in John the Baptist, First, the time when this person was to come; and that was, before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord: Secondly, The design of his coming; and he shall turn the heart, &c. Thirdly, A great evil threatned, in case men were not wrought

upon by him; lest I come and smite the earth, &c. FIRST, the time when this person was to come: Before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD. This great and dreadful (or, according to the Greek, illustrious) day of the LORD, must denote either the last judgment at the end of the world; or else it must refer to the first coming of CHRIST, including the destruction of the Jewish nation. The words themselves do not oblige us to understand this time of the day of judgment: There is nothing in them, but what is very accommodable to the destruction of the Jewish nation. And for the words that follow, Lest I come and smite the earth with a curse, they are so far from determining these words to the end of the world, or the day of judgment, that they assure us, that they cannot be so understood. For allowing them to refer to the same matter, as it is evident they do, they cannot be understood of the end of the world and day of judgment; as I shall prove, when I come to consider them. The destruction of the city of Jerusalem, and temple, and Jewish state is fitly enough expressed in ' such terms, as seem to imply the final conflagration, and end of the world, and the great day of judgment. Thus 'tis called the end of all things, I Pet. 4.7. with Luke 21.9. and the last days, James 5.3. The destruction of a particular country or land is frequently described as the destruction of the universe. Of this we have many examples, [See 1/a. 13. 10, 13. Ch. 34. 4. Ezek. 32. 7. Jer. 4. 23, 24. Joel 2. 10. Amos 9. 5, Dan. 8. 10. with 1 Maccab. 1. 28. Ifa. 2. 19, 21.] And the destruction of the temple is thus fet forth by our Saviour. And indeed that destruction of the Jews by the Romans was great and terrible; and a fit type of the end of all things. John the Baptist did appear before this great day, and gave the Jews warning of that wrath which was to come; when the un-

SECONDLY, the design of his coming; And he shall turn the heart. of the fathers to the children, &c. Let us hear, what the angel predicts of John the Baptist, for the better understanding these words. Many (lays he) of the children of Urael shall he turn unto the Lord their God. And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias; to turn the hearts of the sathers to the children, and the dishedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord. These words of the angel are an excellent comment upon those in Malachi; John the Baptist was designed to turn the Israelites to God, and to bring them off from their rebellion to obedience. This is the meaning of the words in Malachi: They are indeed in our version somewhat obscure. But it is to be considered, that the Hebrew particle, which we render to, is taken in several senses in the Hebrew bible: And the I have

fruitful tree was cut up, and the chaff burnt, and the land smitten with a

\* Ads 2. 20. \* Mat. 24. \* Luke 1. 16 17. \* by.

observed

observed near twenty different senses of it; yet there is one, which I have observed very frequent, and which the Jewish writers have upon occasion taken notice of, which is very agreeable to this place: And David Kimchi expresly affirms, that this is the sense' of it in this place; namely, that it fignifies with: He shall turn the heart of the fathers with the children, i. e. He shall turn both young and old, a great number unto God. And thus John the Baptist did. Great multitudes followed him; they confessed their sins, and were baptized by him. Thus this Hebrew particle signifies frequently. (See Deut. 22.6. 1 Sam. 14. 32, 33. 17. 20. Job 37. 22. Jer. 3. 18. Gen. 32. 11. Ch. 33. 13. Exod. 12. 9. Levit. 4. 11. Job 33. 23. Psal. 15. 3. Exod. 35. 22. with the Targum of Jonathan, 1 Kings 15. 20. with Kimchi on the place.)

THIRDLY, There is a great evil threatned, incase men are not wrought

upon by him: Lest I come and smite the earth with a curse: What we render earth, may as well be rendred land; and these words being spoken to the Jews, it is to be understood of the land of Israel. The smiting the land with a curse imports the destruction of this land of Israel, in case the inhabitants by their repentance upon the preaching of this person, whom God promiseth to send, did not prevent it. This sense agrees with the words of the text, with the Targum, and Syriac version of it. This curse denotes destruction. And these words do not refer to the conslagration, and universal destruction of the world, nor to the great day of judgment. Not to the first, because they only predict the destruction of the 'earth or land, Whereas the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire, against the day of judgment, and perdition of ungody men. And for the second, it is plain, that the words refer not unto it. For . the day of judgment is determined and fixed; 'tis appointed, and unavoidable: The repentance of a land cannot reverse that decree. On the other hand, here is something threatned in case they repent not, Lest 1 come and smite, &c. whereas the day of judgment is not to be prevented by any thing that we can do. Now this agrees with the account, which we have of John the Baptist, who both appeared before the destruction of the land of the Jews, preached repentance to them, minded them of the wrath to come; and told them plainly of the utter destruction coming upon them, if they prevented it not by their repentance.

Thus did he dispose men for the reception of Christ: And repentance is the best preparative. They' who find fin a burden, who have a sense of its ugly nature, that feel the load of guilt, thatare forrowful for their wickednels, these are disposed for CHRIST and his gospel. He came to seek and fave such as these: Such he invites: He is ready to bind up these broken hearts, and to comfort these mourners, and to fill the souls which hunger and thirst after righteousness. They who are proud and justify themselves, that buoy themselves up with a vain conceit and considence, are far from being prepared and disposed for this kingdom of GoD, or grace of the

gospel.

1 Pet 3. 7. Matt. 9. 13. c. 11.

(II.) John

<sup>\*</sup> Acts 17. 31. Heb. 9. 27. Rom. 14. 12. 2 Cor. 5. 16. v. 28. Joh. 7. 37. 16a. 66. 1,2,3.

(II.) John the Baptist made way for the reception of Christ and his doctrine by Baptism. And this he did,

I. As his' baptism was an engagement to repentance for their past sins. I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance. This baptism of his engaged them to this; and 'tis express said, That they 'were baptized of him in fordan confessing their sins. This confession of sins was a token and pledge of their forsaking of them by a true and sincere repentance. So that as he preached repentance (and by that prepared men for Christ, as hath been shewed before) so he administered the baptism of repentance, and by that rite obliged them to the performance of that duty, which he com-

mended to them in his preaching.

2. As by baptism he brought them to CHRIST. For it introduced men to CHRIST, his great LORD and master, whose fore-runner he was. By baptizing men he brought them to the knowledge of the MESSIAS. St. Paul expresly 'affirms thus much; John (says he) verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him, that should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. And indeed he had great reason to conclude so; for we find John the Baptist declaring ono less himself. I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance; but he that cometh after me, is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: H Shall baptize you with the HOLY GHOST, and with fire. This is mentioned by all the four Evangelists; which is an argument, that it ought to be very well considered by us. It is very plain from hence, that even by his baptim he led the people to the knowledge of JESUS CHRIST, the true and great prophet; and who would approve himself so to be, by the miraculous essusion of the Holy Ghost, on the day of Pentecost, which descended like fire upon the disciples of JESUS. To this John the Baptist refers, when he tells them, That he who cometh after him shall baptize them with the Holy Ghost, and with fire. They could not possibly mistake the person: Especially when they should observe, that by the miraculous Essusion of the Holy Ghost, he had given a most undeniable proof, that he was the CHRIST, the son of the living God. And yet he farther points them to Christ, as a just judge, who would destroy the impenitent nation of the Jews; which was accomplished in the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans. This John the Baptist doth in the following words; Whose fan is in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into his garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire. John the Baptist did not by baptism proselyte men into his own name; he did but prepare disciples for Christ. When he did administer it to men, he' directed them to him, who was mightier than himself, and whose harbinger he was. He declared plainly, that his LORD was drawing near; and disposed them, whom he did baptize, to receive him as his LORD, and their own. And there is a most remarkable place to this purpose in the gospel of St. John, where John the Baptist tells, what the purpose and design of his baptism was: When he saw Jesus, he' tells the Jews, This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is preferred before me; for he was

Matt. 3. 11. Ver. 6. Luke 3. 16, 17. Joh. 1. 26, 27. Luke 3. 15. with v. 16.

before

## 176 A DEMONSTRATION PART IL.

Is a she wilderness, very remote from that place where Jesus dwelt; that so there might be no suspection of any compact between John the Baptist be no suspection of any compact between John did not in his younger years, that so there might be no suspection of any compact between John and Jesus. But yet, tho John did not in his younger years know the person of Jesus, he very well knew, that Christ would forthwith appear, and that it was his office to prepare men for his reception. And as he was known to him by person, after he had entred upon his publick ministry; so he declares that the end of his baptism was, to make him known unto the people of

Ifrael.

3. As by his baptism men were obliged to a fincere obedience of the laws of Christ. 'Tis a thing very well known, that baptism was used by the Jews; and the Hebrew doctors do tell us, That profelytes were received, not only by circumcision and facrifice, but by baptism also. There were two sorts of proselytes among the Jews, viz. proselytes of justice, and proselytes of the gate. The first were circumcised; and therefore obliged to all the precepts of Moses: The other were baptized, but not circumcifed; and they were obliged only to those precepts, which mankind were obliged to, which are commonly called the precepts of the sons of Noah. It is on all hands agreed, That proselytes from the Gentiles were received among the Jews, not only by circumcision, but by baptism also; and the rite, by which they were received, laid an obligation upon them to the obedience of that religion, which they undertook. Thus he, who from among the Gentiles was by circumcifion received into the church of the Jews, was forthwith under an obligation to obey all the laws of Moses. His being circumcifed did lay this obligation upon him. I testify again, to every man that is circumcifed, that he is a debtor to do the whole law. And upon this account it is, that circumcision was ' so severely forbidden to the Gentiles, who had received the Christian saith. Behold, I Paul say unto yon, that if ye be circumcised, CHRIST shall prosit you nothing. For by taking circumcission upon them, they were made Jews: By submitting to this sacrament and rite they were proselyted to the Jewish religion, and undertook to obey the law of Moses, and expected to be justified thereby. This course subverted Christianity, supplanted it intirely, and justled it out of the way. It made the gospel an useless thing; and rendred the undertaking of Christ void and of no effect at all Christis become taking of Christ void, and of no effect at all. Christ is become of no effect unto you; who soever of you are justified by the law, ye are fallen from grace. As circumcision obliged men to obey the law of Moses, so doth the facrament of baptism oblige to the obedience of the laws of CHRIST: It being an institution, that introduceth men into the church and family of CHRIST; and by which they are set aside, and consecrated to his service. And the baptism of John, leading men to him, obligeth them to obey him. And our Saviour himself, who appointed this rite, and sacrament to be administered in his church, gave us to understand, that this was

\* Gal. 5. 3. \* Gal. 5. 2. \* Gal. 5. 4. \* Matt. 28. 19, 20.

the

the design and purpose of it. Go ye therefore • (says Jesus to his disciples) and teach (or rather disciple; for the word, which most properly signifies teaching, follows) all nations; baptizing them in the name of the FATHER, and of the Son and of the HOLY GHOST. And it follows (which teacheth us the obligation lying upon them who are baptized) Teaching them to

observe all things, what soever I have commanded you.

4. As by baptism men were received into the divine protection, and fecured against an approaching destruction. They who were baptized were marked out and fealed, not for destruction but salvation. For as they, who among the Jews were profelyted from the Gentiles, were 'faid to put themselves under the wings of the God of Israel; because by becoming of the number of that people, they justly expected the favour and protection, which he shewed unto them: So they who are baptized, and by that means received into the church of CHRIST, are put under the special care and providence of God. And we have sufficient evidence in the new Testament, that men had not only this apprehension of it, but that they had good reafon so to think. They justly looked on it as a sign of salvation: when John the Baptist saw the Pharisces and Sadduces come to his baptism, he said unto them, Who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? It feems that it was thought the way to escape a future judgment; and so indeed it was: For when St. Peter exhorts men to repent and to be baptiz'd, he adds, as the effect of it, Save your selves from this untoward generation. The same apostle elsewhere, speaking of those who were, in the great flood with Noah, saved by water, he adds; The like figure whereunto, even baptism doth also now save us. By baptism we are received into the ark of Christ's church, and faved from the common destruction of a wicked world. Thus did John by his baptism serve the end and purpose of our Lord's appearance; who came to fave, not to destroy.

ONLY it must be remembred, that as CHRIST never designed to save men in their fins, but to fave them from them; so this baptism of John, and that which followed, of CHRIST and his apostles, were never designed for a refuge and shelter to men in their impiety: It saved them not, unless they repented; and their hearts were cleanfed, as well as their bodies washed. And we shall find, that this may be collected from those places, that were nam'd above. The baptism of John was the baptism of repentance; and he put the *Pharisees* and *Sadduces* upon fruits meet for it, when they came to his baptism. And St. Peter bids the Jews repent and be baptized: And tho he elsewhere saith, that baptism now saves us; yet he explains himself, when he tells us, what that baptism must be attended with; and that it is not the bare washing the body, which he means, not the putting away the filth of the flesh; but the answer of a good conscience towards

(III.) JOHN the Baptist prepared the way of the Load, by removing those obstacles and impediments, which lay in his way. That was ' fulfilled which was written, Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth. And then it follows, all flesh shall fee the salvation of God. There are some things, which do hinder men

Yy

from

<sup>\*</sup> Matt. 28, 19, 20,

Matt. 3. 7.
Luk. 3. 5, 6.

Ruth 2. with ch. 1. 16, 17. and the Targum on that place, Acts 3. 40. s A&s 3.40.

## 178 A DEMONSTRATION PART II.

from receiving any benefit from the gospel of CHRIST; which if they be not taken out of the way, will render it ineffectual. There are some sins and follies of men, which put a bar to their receiving benefits by CHRIST; and they are such as these: a pertinacious and obstinate persisting in a sinful course; a vain security and confidence, upon the score of some privileges that we lay claim to; a resting in some externals of religion; a putting off the evil day of wrath; the living in malice and unmercifulness among our selves; coverousness, injustice, and oppression. We find John the Baptist diligently removing all these impediments; and thereby making way for CHRIST, and his divine doctrine. And this he doth, by preaching repentance; by taking men off from trusting in this, That Abraham was their father; by shewing them, that they were not secure in slocking to his baptism, unless they brought forth fruits meet for repentance; he denounceth God's wrath, as ready to take hold of the obstinate sinner; The axe is laid to the root of the trees, &c. He tells ' them the chaff should ere long be burnt with fire unquenchable. He commends to the people charity, and good-will and beneficence. He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise. And when the Publicans, who came to his baptism, 'enquire what he required of them, he faid to them, Exact no more than that which is appointed you. And to the soldiers he 's said, Do violence to no man, neither accuse any

falsely, and be content with your wages.

(IV.) JOHN the Baptist prepared the way of the Lord, by an holy and exemplary life and conversation. He was a burning and a shining light, He' came in the way of righteousness. All men held him to be a prophet; and our SAVIOUR affirms him to be, more than a prophet; and that among them who had been born of women, there had not been a greater than John the Baptist. He was justly reputed a Man of great fanctity; and the people had a great veneration for him; and the very fects among them, who differed greatly among themselves, yet went to his baptism. He had been bred up in the wilderness, where he had little conversation, and had learnt no arts of infinuation, no fineness of behaviour. He had not studied the arts of persuasion and popular eloquence: He was taught of God, and not by the samous doctors of the law of that time. He was bred in the wilderness; but Jesus at Nazareth; at great distances from each other: infomuch that he did not fo much as know Jesus, till he was about thirty years of age. He was a man of great abstinence and austerity of life. He drank no wine; the sumes of which put some men upon great extravagancys. He was a man of great truth and simplicity, of great modesty and humility, of great patience and contentedness, of a mighty zeal and courage, and a marvellous constancy: Well might the Jews expect a good Lord to come, when they saw so good a servant come before him. Nothing makes such way for the reception of the gospel, as a conspicuous example of vertue. This doth mightily dispose men to it. The holy life of John the Baptist made way for Jesus, and his heavenly doctrine. He was rendered by this means a witness beyond all exception. Our SAVIOUR confounded the Jews, when they demanded, By what authority he did what he did? He asked them a question, which put

Digitized by Google

them

<sup>\*</sup> Luke 3. 11. 

\* Ver. 13. 

\* Ver. 14. 

\* Matt. 21. 22. 

\* Matt. 14. 5. 21. 26. 

\* Matt. 21. 25. 

\* Matt. 21. 25. 

\* Matt. 21. 25. 

\* Matt. 21. 25. 

\* Matt. 21. 26. 

\* Matt. 21. 26.

them to silence: 'Twas, Whether John's baptism was from heaven or from men? i. e. Whether John was a person sent by God, or not? They knew not what to say: If he was sent from God, their question was answered; for John had born witness of him; and a witness from heaven was beyond exception. They would not say this; and durst not deny it: For such was the sanctity and same of John the Baptist, that he

was by all the people held for a prophet, whom God had fent.

(V.) He prepared the way of the Lord by pointing at him, and shewing who was he. And we find John the Baptist doing this several times: I shall mention the several places to this purpose. First, he' doth it in these words, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me is preferred before me; for he was before me, &c. Secondly, When he received the message from Jerusalem, he doth not only deny himself to be the Christ; but owns, that he came to prepare his way: He'it is (says he) who coming after me, is preferred before me, &c. Thirdly, The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him and saith, Behold the lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world. This is he, of whom I said, After me cometh a man, which is preferred before me, &c. And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him. And I saw and bare record, that this is the Son of God. Fourthly, John' the Baptist doth it again, before two of his disciples; Behold, says he, the lamb of God: Upon which the two disciples followed Jesus.

FOHN the Baptist was a very excellent person, and very fit for the great office, for which he was designed. For besides the great sanctity of the man, there were many other things, which might dispose men to expect, that he should be a person very extraordinary. He was the son of a priest, and born of parents of great vertue and known piety. His birth was predicted by an angel; and an holy angel he must be, for he appeared in the holy place, and when Zacharias was ministring at the altar of incense. His birth was fupernatural, of an old and barren woman. His father was struck dumb upon the prediction of his birth, and continued so till 'his circumcisson, and he spake and praised GoD; then was he filled with the HOLY GHOST, and prophesied. These things were very strange and surprizing, and raised great admiration among the people; who might justly expect some very considerable person after this. To this purpose we are told, That fear came upon all that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings (or things rather, as our marginal reading hath it) were noised abroad throughout all the hill country of Judæa. And all they that heard them, laid them up in their hearts; saying, What manner of child shall this be? Much might be expected from such a beginning as this. He must be a good witness of Christ, who received from heaven such illustrious testimonies, that he himself was sent by God.

III. I SHALL now defend the account, which the gospels give of John the Baptist, against the exception, which the Jews may bring against it. Not that I think they have any thing to say that is material:

Bur yet they may pretend, that what hath been said above, is not convincing to them, who give no credit to our gospels; nor are they obliged to

 believe, that there was any fuch man, or that he was a righteous person from such a testimony as this.

FOR the better proceeding in this matter, and for the removing this pretence; I shall offer the following particulars to be seriously considered.

I. That supposing at present, Jesus to be the Messias, and that he intended to erect a spiritual kingdom in the world, John the Baptist, according to the account given of him before, did very well persorm the office of an harbinger or messenger, who made way for the reception of this Messias, and the advancing this kingdom. If he had not done this, we should have had no cause to believe him to have been sent by God to discharge such an office. The repentance, which he preached, even by the Jews confession, was a good preparative to the reception of the Messias, and then by baptism he engaged men to repentance, and brought them to the knowledge of the Messias, and obliged them to obey his laws, and put them under the special protection of God; he removed the obstacles of piety; and commended it to them by the sanctity of his life. After all this, he pointed at him, and brought men to the knowledge of him. So that there is nothing wanting to such an end.

2. Though I do not produce the gospels as a direct proof of the question against the Jews, who do not believe them; yet when the account, which they give of John the Baptist, is consistent and very agreeable to the end, for which they give this account, 'tis but reasonable, that the Jews should believe this testimony, or give good reason, why they do reject it. That they do not believe it, will not excuse them, if they have cause to do it. It stands them in hand greatly, as they value their immortal souls, to consider with due application the credibility thereos. They would think us unreasonable, if we should deny the writings of Moses: and yet let them give what proofs they can, that Moses is worthy of credit in what he reports, and by the same arguments (not to say greater) I will prove that the Evangelists are so likewise. But having spoken in another place of the

credibility of these writers, I shall not do it over again.

3. That the Jewish writers themselves give us an account of John the Baptist, which doth very much agree, with what the Evangelists report of him; and leaves the Jew without excuse, who without farther examination rejects the credit of these writers, who yet have all the marks of sincerity whatsoever. Flavius Josephus mentions John; and tells us, that he was called the Baptist, and that he was slain by Herod. He tells us, that he was a good man, and one that taught the people the exercise of vertue, and the practice of justice one among another, and piety towards God; and that being thus disposed, they should be baptized. He adds, That the army of Herod was esteemed justly destroyed, because he slew John the Baptist. He tells us moreover, that John the Baptist taught the people, that baptism was then acceptable, when they not only parted with some of their sins; but when with the purity of their body they joyned a pure mind. He tells (as also the gospel doth) that he was mightily followed by the people. Joseph Ben Gorion mentions him also, and tells us expresly, That Herod took the wise of his brother Philip in his life-time; and that he killed

Part. I. Chap. vi. Hebr. l. 5. c. 46. Baiil. 1541.

Joseph. Ant. L 18. c. 7.

Josephus

70hn

John for telling him, that it was not lawful for him so to do; and that it was John who celebrated baptism. R. David Gantz another Jewish wria ter, tells us, That Herod was a wicked man; that he slew many of their wise men; that he took his brother Philip's wife in his life-time; and that he killed John, for reproving him for it. It is not, I am persuaded, without the special providence of GoD, that these testimonies are found in the Tewish writers; which do not only speak the eximious vertue of this holy man, but serve also mightily to confirm the credit of the Evangelists, who fay the same things of him; and consequently make for the strengthening of the faith of Christians, and stopping the mouths of the Jews.

IV. I SHALL make it appear, that the Jews have no reason to quarrel with Jesus or his followers, who affirm him to be the Elias, which was to come. And because the Jews object this frequently, I shall more particu-

larly consider this whole matter.

We are agreed, that Elias was promised; and the promise is express, Behold I send you Elijah the prophet (it is not said the Tishbite, tho the Seventy put that into their text) before the coming of the great and terrible day of the LORD. Here is a promise of Elijah, a prophet (for so I would rather turn the words) but no mention of Elijah by the title of Tishbite; by which Elijah was commonly called, and not by that of prophet. Nay 'tis observed, that Elijah the 'Tishbite is no where else, either in the old Testament or new, called Elijah the prophet. For that place, 2 Chron. 21. 12. belongs not to him, he being then not in the land of the living. But the Tishbite he is frequently called, [1 Kin. 21. 17, 28. and chap. 17. ver. 1. 2 Kin. 1. 3, and ver. 8. and chap. 9. 36.] and never called a prophet during the whole time of his life: Nor yet in the new Testament, where he is often mentioned, is he called Elias the prophet. Here is a promise of Elias a prophet; but not of that very person who lived in the days of Ahab, and was whilst he lived commonly called the Tishbite; but never the prophet, though he was one.

For the removing all pretence from the Jews in this matter, I propound to the consideration of the reader the following particulars.

1. THAT there was a great likeness of John the Baptist to Elias; and consequently so much foundation for his being called by his name; he coming in the spirit and power of Elias, as the angel expressent it. Elias was indeed a great prophet; and so was John the Baptist: all held him for a prophet; and our Lord's says, that he was more than a prophet; that is, he was a most illustrious one, who was from the womb filled with the HOLY GHOST, and had received the spirit in a great measure. He was a fit anti-type of Elias: We find, when Elias was leaving this world, Elisha, who succeeded him, begged a double portion of his spirit (that is, not as much again as he had to give, and had received; but the portion of the first-born, who was wont to have two shares, to a younger's one) and that was a great request; he 'tells him, Thou hast asked an hard thing. Elias was therefore more than an ordinary prophet. Elias was 'also a man of great zeal and fervor; and so was John the Baptist. Elias was a man of an austere life, and a great faster; and so was John the Baptist.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> Zemah David. 5 Matt. 21. 26. With ch. 11. 9.

If Elias had a girdle of leather about his loyns, so had John the Baptist also. One was an hairy man; the other had a garment of camels hair. If one was bold in rebuking vice in Ahab, the other did so by Herod; and if one was hated by Jezebel, the other was also by Herodias. In a word, they were both men of great sanctity and servor; both burning and shining lights; great contemners of sensual pleasures; and both called men from

their follies to repentance.

2. As there was a great refemblance between these two persons; so 'tis a thing very usual, even in the Scripture, as well as other authors, to call such by the same name. And therefore why should our Saviour be blamed, for calling John the Baptist by the name of Elias, who came in his spirit and power? The 'children of Israel shall return (says the prophet) and seek the Lord their God, and David their king: and shall fear the Lord, and his goodness, in the latter days. 'Tis certain that David their king was dead, long before these words were spoken; and therefore these words cannot be understood of that person. The Jewish Chaldee Paraphrast tells us, who it is that the prophet means; he tells us expressly, That 'tis Messias, the son of David their king. If the Messias be called David, who was a type of him, why should it be strange, that John the Baptist should be called Elias, who came in his spirit and power? And this way of speaking hath nothing in it, that is harsh or unusual. Thus the poet calls Turnus another Achilles:

natus & ipse deâ——

And elsewhere he useth the same liberty of speaking .:

Alter erit tum Tiphys, & altera, quæ vehat, Argo, Delectos heroas: erunt etiam altera bella: Atque iterùm ad Trojam magnus mittetur Achilles.

3. The rest of the words in the prophet Malachi, where Elias is promised, do very well agree with John the Baptist. As for example, those which speak of the time of his coming; viz. before the final destruction of the Jewish nation, when Shiloh was to come. And this is expressed in these words, Before the coming of the great and dreadful (or illustrious) day of the Lord. And those words, which speak of his office and business, do well agree to him also. He shall turn the heart of the fathers, &c. Where the Septuagint use the very same word, which the Evangelist makes use of, where Jesus speaks of John the Baptist, and affirms him to be the Elias, which was to restore all things. This agrees also with the words of the angel, and with the account which the Jewish writers give of John. And herein John the Baptist was the persect anti-type of the Tishbite; as that word signifies and imports, from the Hebrew original of it, a restorer, or converter. And then, in the last place, those words, Lest I come and smite the earth (or land) with a

curse,

<sup>2</sup> Kin. 1. 8. with Matt. 3. 4.

Virgil. Eneid. 6.

Eclog. 4.

LXXII. aronarasion. Matt. 17. 21.

Hof. 3. 5. with Ezek. 34. 23. XXXVII. 24.

\* integration. LXXII. Mal. 4. 5.

Luke I. 17.

curse, do very well agree with what John the Baptist himself said, to a-waken the Jews to repentance, from the consideration of that wrath which was to come upon the Jews in case of their impenitence, of which

I spake before.

4. It is very certain, that some of the Jews are of opinion, that by Elias (mentioned Malachi, chap. 4. ver. 5.) is not meant the very person of Elias, but some other person, like him for knowledge and endowments; who is for that reason called by his name. Maimonides 'speaks very doubtfully of this matter: He says, That from the letter of the prophets, in the beginning of the days of the Messias, it appears, that there should be the war of Gog and Magog; and that before the battle of Gog, Magog shall stand up, as a prince in Israel, to prepare their hearts; as 'tis said, Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet, &c. And soon after these words, he says, That some of their wife men do affirm, That before the coming of king MESSIAS Elijah shall come; But (says he) all these matters, and fuch like, no man knows how they will be, till they come to pass: For they are matters hidden among the prophets; and the wise men have no tradition about them, but what ariseth from the force of the text; and he adds, That in this matter they are divided. If these things be fo, all the force of the Jews objection against our MESSIAS, from this that Elias in person is not come, falls to the ground. As the Jews say, That the soul of Phineas entered into Elias, because he was a man of great zeal like him; so may John the Baptist be very well called Elias, because he was like so great a prophet; especially, since some of the Jews do not understand the prophet Malachi, to speak of the very person of Elias; of which a learned writer of our own will give the reader farther satisfaction.

AND thus having removed that pretence of the Jews, that our Jesus cannot be the Christ, because Elias did not come in person before his appearance, I shall proceed; and,

V. I SHALL take off the objections taken from the words of John the Baptist, and from the words of Jesus mentioned before; and then say something to that belief among the antients, that Elias is still to come.

FIRST, I will consider the words of John the Baptist himself; who must needs be able to give the truest account of himself. So it was, that when he appeared publickly, the Jews sent priests and levites from Jerusalem, to ask him, Who art thou? He appeared in a time, when there was a general expectation of the Messias; as I have elsewhere observed. His same grew great; and thereupon the Jews were desirous to know who he is, i. e. if he was the Messias, or what his office and character was. To this demand John the Baptist answers, first negatively, by telling them that he is not the Messias. This he frankly and sincerely doth; And he confessed and denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ. But when they proceeded and asked him farther; Art thou Elias? he saith, I am not. But when they had urged him farther, to say positively who he was, that they might be able to give an account to them that sent them, he positively answers this; I am the voice of one crying in the wilder-

Maimon. H. Melact. c. 12. V. M. B. Israel. de Resurrect. p. 313.

Dr. Pocock.
Not. in Port. Mos. p. 219. and his Comment on Malach. 4. 5.

John 1. 19, 20, 21, 22, 23.

ness,

## 184 ADEMONSTRATION PARTIL

nefs, &c. The Jew present his objection from these words of John the Baptist: Jesus affirmed that he was the Elias; John the Baptist denies and disowns it. He doth it, when he is demanded, who he was, by Priests and Levites. 'Tis not likely, that he would disown it, had he been the promised Elias; nor can his words, and those of Jesus (Matt. 17. 12, 13. with Matt. 11. 14.) who expressly affirms of John the Baptist, That he was the Elias, which was for to come, be both true. This is the most, that I can make of this objection. In answer whereunto, I shall desire the following particulars may be duly considered.

1. What the Jews meant, when they asked John the Baptist if he was Elias? I dare refer this to the Jews themselves: They will easily grant, that their meaning was, whether he was the very person of Elias, called the Tishbite; for him the Jews expected, and do so to this day, before the coming of the Messias. This they must grant, or give up their cause. They will have no pretence from the answer of John the Baptist, if this be not granted to be the meaning of their question. If this be their meaning, as it is undeniably, John the Baptist answered truly and sincerely, when he said he was not. And this answer was direct and clear to the question; and according to the sense in which it was meant, and propounded to him. But what advantage the Jew can make of it against Christianity, I do not see. For we are all agreed, That John the Baptist was not the very person of Elias the Tishbite, nor any other of the antient prophets raised from the dead. The Jews had an expectation of the Tishbite; and did suppose that some of the antient prophets would rise from the dead, about the time of the Messias. (Mat. 16. 14. with John 1. 21. and Luke 9. 7, 8.) That which John says is, that he is not that Elias, whom they expected. If it be urged still, that this might occasion the unbelief of the Jews, and hinder them from receiving Jesus for the Messias, I desire it may be considered.

ceiving Jesus for the Messias, I desire it may be considered.

2. What John the Baptist, when he was pressed to declare who he was, did after this, answer to the Jews. He said, I am the voice of one trying in the wilderness, make straight the way of the Lord, Sc. In which words he let them know, That tho he was not the very person of Elias the Tishbite; yet that he was that very messenger promised in the prophet Malachi, who came to prepare the way of the Lord: That this was his office, he tells them freely; which was also the office of that Elias promised in the same prophet; so that the he says, that he was not the very Tishbite, (who they thought was promised in Malachi) yet that he was that person who was there meant, and came to discharge the office assigned him in that prophet (Mal. 4.5.) Let any man compare the places with one another, and he will find cause to believe this. David Kimchi interprets the Lord (Mal. 3.1.) to be Messias: And its then plain, that the messenger must be meant of his fore-runner, or harbinger. And Abravenel himself grants, That by the messenger (Ch. 3.1.) and Elijah (Ch. 4.5.) may be meant one and the same person. And whereas tis pretended in the objection, That John the Baptist, by denying himself to

be 2

<sup>\*</sup> Joh. 1. 23. with Mal. 3. 1. and Matt. 11, 10.
\* R. P. Kimchi in Mal. 3. 1.

\* Abravenel in Mal. 3. 1.

be the *Elias*, hindred men from believing in Jesus; 'tis a mere pretence and cavil: For as he did not deny himself to be the same person meant in the prophet by *Elias*; so he owns his office expresly; and doth moreover preach Jesus Christ to the people, in the following words, Job. 1. 26, 29, 32, 34, 36. Of which I have spoken before. So that he is so far from hindring their belief in Jesus, that he doth not neglect to

promote it.

SECONDLY, I shall consider the words of Jesus mentioned before; and which are pretended to be inconsistent with those of John the Baptist. We find Jesus telling the multitude, That John the Baptist was not only the messenger mentioned in the prophet, (Mal. 3.1.) but 'the Elias (Mal. 4.5.) which was for to come. And in another place, when his disciples, upon his mention of his rising from the dead, asked him saying, Why then say the scribes, that Elias must first come? We find Jesus replying thus, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things. He grants, that there was ground for the scribes affirming, that Elias must first come. But then he goes on, saying, Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him what soever they listed: likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them. Then the disciples understood, that he spake unto them of John the Baptist. From whence it appears, that Jesus affirms John the Baptist to be the Elias, which was to come; when yet John denies it, as hath been seen before.

IT will not be hard to remove this difficulty, and shew, that the words of Jesus, and John the Baptist, are very consistent one with the other.

1. If we consider, what hath been observed before, what it is that John the Baptist said; he says, that he is not Elias; and saith it to those men, who inquire if he was the person of Elias, or that very Elias the Tishbite. For that this was their meaning, is evident, as hath been shewed before. And Nonnus expressent the meaning of the Jews question, Art thou Elias?

### \*Hales indens:

But he doth afterwards own his office, and the end of his appearance. But this hath been considered before.

2. If we consider, what Jesus also says: He doth not affirm John the Baptist to be the very person of Elias, or him that was called the Tishbite: By no means. He says indeed, that he is that person who was promised under the title of Elias; and this is all, that his words amount to. He calls him the Elias, which was for to come; that person promised in the prophet under the name of Elias the prophet. That this is his meaning, appears from what he says elsewhere, when he says, that Elias must first come, and restore all things: Where he manisestly refers to that place in Malachi, in which its said, That he shall turn the hearts of the fathers &c. I have proved already, that there is no necessity to understand the words in Malachi of the person of Elias; its enough that they denote one like him. And then the words of Jesus are not repugnant to those of the Baptist; tho one say he is not, and the other that he is Elias. The he was not the very person of Elias; yet he was the person designed by that name in the prophet.

Matt. 11, 10, 14, with ch. 17. 10, 11, 12. 13.

3. A N D

#### ADEMONSTRATION 186 PART II

3. And that this is really the meaning of the words of Jesus, is farther evident from our Saviour's words. He says, And if ye will receive it, this is Elias which was for to come. It may feem strange, that Jesus should say, If ye will receive it, or If you will receive him. What need of this, if our Saviour had affirmed him to be Elias the Tishbite? They expected him, and were ready enough to receive him. Besides had he spoken of the Tishbite, he would be what he was, whether they received and owned him, or not. But as these words infinuate, that the fews would reject him, who came to prepare the way, as well as his LORD; fo they sufficiently shew, that when he affirmed him to be Elias, he did not mean the very person, who bore that name in the days of Ahab. John the Baptist came to turn the hearts of the fathers, &c. i.e. to convert men to righteousness; and they that received him and owned him, helped to verify that prediction of him in the prophet: To them he was effectually that converter and restorer, which it was foretold he should be.

THIRDLY, I shall say something to that opinion amongst the antients, that Elias is still to come. That there is such an opinion among the Greek and Latin fathers of the church, no man can deny: And if there be, the Jews will not fail to serve themselves of it. And why may not they expect Elias, if the Christians did so in the primitive times? And if John the Baptist was indeed the Elias promised in Malachi, how comes it to

pass that Christians themselves expect another?

In answer to this objection, I shall offer the following particulars to be confidered.

1. THAT this opinion of some of the ancients was a mistake, and had no sufficient ground: And it is no hard matter to assign the occasions of that mistake; and they seem to be the mis-apprehending the words of JESUS, and of the prophet. When the disciples had said, Why then say the scribes, that Elias must first come? Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things. These words seem to intimate, that when they were spoken, Elias was not come; and perhaps some might mistake, what Jesus meant by restoring all things, as that which could not be said of John the Baptist. But then the solutions lowing words of Jesus put his meaning out of all doubt: But I say unto you, that Elias is come already, &c. which words the disciples understood of John the Baptist. And as for the words of the prophet Malachi, they were also mistaken. The LXXII had put the Tishbite into the text; which might be one ground for this opinion; but then there were two other occasions from the words themselves. The great and dreadful day of the Lord, they understood of the day of judgment; and the threat to smite the earth with a curse, was understood of the final destruction of the universe. But it hath been shewn already, that there is no reason to understand the words in that sense; and as for the LXXII, they have put in the word Tishbite of their own heads. From what hath been said before, we may be assured, That the smiting the earth doth not refer to the final destruction of all things; and then there will be no need to interpret the foregoing words of the day of judgment.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. 17. 12. Photius in Caten. in Matt. 1. Augustin. in Johan. c. 1. Hieronymus in Matt. 17. Chrysost. & 4 Matt. 17. 11, 12, 13.

2 THAT

2. That this is not the opinion of all Christians; and therefore ought not to be objected against Christianity: For 'tis none of the doctrines of our religion, tho it be the opinion of some doctors. It is indeed the opinion of the church of Rome to this day: But this doth not prove it to be a Catholick doctrine, or the universal belief of Christians.

3. But if this opinion of the antients, and of the present church of Rome was true, and was also universally received by all Christians; yet would it be nothing to the purpose of the Jews. For the antients held thus, That Elias would appear before the second coming of Christ, as John the Baptist was the fore-runner of his first appearance. So that they believed a double Elias; that St. John the Baptist was the first; and that the other was yet to come at the end of the world: Whereas the Jews object, That Jesus is not the Christ, because Elias in person is not yet come.

### FINIS.



#### A

# DEMONSTRATION

OF THE

# MESSIAS.

In which the Truth of the

# CHRISTIAN RELIGION

Is defended, especially against

# The JEWS.

PART III.

By the Right Reverend Father in God, RICHARD, Lord Bishop of Bath and Wells.

AUGUSTIN.

Quid illis miserius, quibus ipse Salvator saluti non erit?

•



#### THE

# REFACE



a PREFACE.

OME things there are, which I think myself obliged to acquaint the reader with in this place, to prevent a misunderstanding, and to justify my way of proceeding in this third part against the Jews. Had it not been for that, I should willingly have spared myself the trouble of

And first, I am bound to account for a great omission, which I may be plausibly enough charged with. The intelligent reader will say, that, when I undertook to prove, that the MESSIAS is already come, and thought fit to insist upon Genesis xlix. 10. and upon Haggai, ch. ij. Z. I ought to have considered Daniel's weeks, and that the work is impersect without a discourse upon that subject. I do grant, that all this is true: But I have this to say for myself, that I was prevented in that matter by a far better hand, and the reader will be so far from a just cause of complaint for my omitting it, that he is like to be a great gainer on that account. A very reverend and learned prelate of this church, who did many years ago take that argument upon himself, hath printed several sheets already, and given me leave to assure the reader, that he will finish it.

Again, The reader may, perhaps, censure me for the third chapter. of this third part of my book. He may truly say, It does not come into its For I having undertaken in my second part to answer the proper place. Jews objections against the new Testament, the places, which are here considered, ought to have come then in their due place. And he that affirms this is certainly in the right.

But then I have this to offer for my excuse, that some time it was, after the second part was printed off, and indeed, after part of the third was sent up to be printed, that I met with those objections, which I have in that chapter endeavoured to answer. Thus it was, A very learned friend, that knew what I was about, sent me down a MS. called Porta Veritatis

Digitized by Google

The Jew, who was the author of it, calls himself by the name of tatis. Jacob Aben-Amram, and wrote this book in the year (according to our account) 1634. This MS. was found in the library of the very learned Dr. Cudworth. I believe it to be one of those, which he purchased of Manasseh Ben-Israel, at a very great rate, of which I have sometime heard him make mention. Be that as it will; I take it to be the greatest effort against Christianity, that hath ever been made, or is ever like to be made against it. In perusing this MS. I met with very many objections in it against several places in the new Testament. Many of them I had considered in the second part. But there were some that were new to me: And not knowing into what hand this MS. might sometime or other fall, I resolved to consider them; and then was obliged to print them in that place, in which they are found, when I could not put them into that place, to which they did of right belong. In the following parts of my discourse, I did very carefully consider what that subtle Jew had to offer, against what I had to say on the behalf of Christianity, and have not failed to represent the full force of his reasonings, and to reply upon him in its proper place. This put me to some new trouble, and also put some stop to the press: But I rather chose this fatigue, and to run the hazard of being censtred as immethodical, than to let that pass unanswered, which was laid in my way.

Again, The reader, perhaps, might justly have expected, that when I treat so largely of Gen. xlix. 10. I should have throughly considered what is advanced on that place by a very learned person of Amsterdam, in his commentary on Genesis, printed there A. D. 1693. And I do own, that I ought to have done so, and did design it. But herein I was prevented by a learned man<sup>2</sup>, that hath done it to my hand, and excused me from that labour. And I hope the learned author of that commentary will consider that matter again: If he do it with due application, I cannot but hope, that he will answer himself, and give the church better satisfacti-

on in this matter, than he hath hitherto done.

Some, perhaps, may complain, that I have produced large quotations in Greek, out of Philo and Theodoret, which swells the book, and increaseth the charge; whereas it might have sufficed to have referred to the authors. I cannot take it ill, if the reader should make this exception, because I was sometime of the same opinion myself; and have, at other times, industriously spared the reader that trouble: And I had drawn up what I had to say, with references to Philo. But upon second thoughts and better advice I altered my mind. It is a weighty argument, which I

S. Edzardus, de Shiloh, Lond. 1698.

was upon, when I had occasion to produce those testimonies, and in which the Jews and Socinians (a subtle sort of people) are much concerned: And I leave the reader to judge, upon his second thoughts, whether, or not, it were not most adviseable to do as I did. Every reader hath not these books. I have quoted them, and translated them truly; and if the printer (after the utmost care) mistake in some few letters of the Greek,

that, I hope, the reader will not impute to me.

I am farther to acquaint the reader, that, after I had sent my papers to the press, I received from a friend, from Oxford, a book lately printed, that is intituled Bilibra Veritatis. It is written by some Socinian, with very great heat and rancour, with virulent reflections upon, and contumelious reproaches of his adversary. 'Tis full of that stuff, to an high degree of rudeness and inhumanity. He does insolently and haughtily despise the antient fathers; and spares not other learned men, as they come in his way. His design is to prove, that the Chaldee Paraphrasts, when they mention the WORD, are not to be understood of a PERSON, or substantial Word; and that they are misapplied to that purpose by our writers. Had it come to my hands in due time, I should have considered it in the following papers in its due place: But now a few strictures will be as much, as a PREFACE will allow me.

This I cannot but say of the book, that if all the contumelious and reproachful language, and the impertinencies were taken out of it, the remaining part would be of very little bulk: The former I do not think worthy of any further notice; the latter I may have occasion to reflect

upon.

He calls our belief of an ETERNAL WORD b a figment, at the very beginning of his book; and elsewhere affirms, that the Chaldees do never denote a reasonable person by the WORD of the LORD; and elsewhere says, that if these Targumists had denoted the MESSIAS by this expression; yet he should not think himself bound to believe them. And what he says in this last place, the reader may take his word for; because he believes not St. John, who expressly affirms it.

It is very boldly said by him, that it cannot be proved that the Targumists, by the WORD of the LORD, do at any time denote, personam ratiocinantem & per se subsistentem. This author, in another place, contradicts himself. For, upon those words, Gen. xxxv. 9. God appeared unto Jacob, which the Targumist renders by the WORD of GOD, this author adds, Undè colligitur, verbum Domini ibi non differre ab ipso Domino. And yet this is that, which he utterly de-

nies

nies in another place, mith a mighty confidence. Again, he expounds the WORD of the LORD, in the Targumist, to denote an Angel, in feveral other places, e. g. Exod. xij. 23. The LORD will pass: The Targumist hath it, the WORD of the LORD, as this author cites him; Hoc est, Angelus Domini, says this author. So that he plainly refutes himself, and affirms in one place, what he contradicts in another.

It would be a very hard task to reconcile this author to himself. I will give another instance; e speaking of the Jerusalem Targum, which Vechner produceth against him, he blames him for it, and adds, Cùm omnino incertum sit, num hæc paraphrasis unquam Johanni evangelistæ conspecta sit, &c. Here he says, It is uncertain whether St. John ever saw that paraphrase, or not. There is a wide difference beeween this, and what he says afterward in these words, De Hierosolymitano nulla dubitandi ratio est, eum evangelistæ nostro nunquam suisse conspectum. So that in one place he afsirms it to be uncertain, whether St. John ever saw that paraphrase, or not; and soon after, that it is undoubtedly certain, that he never saw it. For my part, I cannot reconcile him to himself. And tho' 'tis all one to me, whether he ever saw it, or not; yet I cannot understand, how the same man can affirm that a matter is uncertain, and yet undoubtedly certain also.

But this author is resolved however, that the Targumists shall not speak on our behalf: And though some personal acts are imputed to the WORD by them, yet he is willing to try his wits in this cause, rather than allow that word to denote a PERSON. We read, indeed, The Lord hath sworn, that the Lord will have war, &c. Exod. xvij. 16. He owns that the word Lord is Verbum suum, i. e. his Word, in the Targumist: He adds his gloss, let the reader judge of it, Decreto Dei, tanquam personæ, tribuit juramentum. f Again (Exod. xx. 7.) The name of the Lord is, by the Targumist, expressed by the name of the Word of the Lord. Here my author says, that by the name of GOD is to be understood, as God revealed himself in his word, vel ipsa lex Dei, i. e. Or the very law of God, by which they were wont to swear. And refers us to Gen. xxi 23 8. On which place, my author (to give him his due) by WORD, which is used by the Chaldee, disowns that he means the written word; and yet, in another place, where he resumes that text, he urgeth his adversary with the custom of the Jews, of swearing by the law of Moses, which is the written word: The reader will judge with what sincerity he does it.

4 Pag. 51, cum p. 42, & p. 46. Pag. 16, cum pag. 20. Pag. 45, & 46. Pag. 38.

•

He might have spared much of his pains in several places. I shall

take notice of some particulars under this head.

1. He endeavours to prove h, that St. John did not borrow his Ady from the Chaldee Paraphrasts. I will readily grant this. It is enough for us, that St. John speaks agreeably to the manner of speaking used by the Ancient Hebrews; and that Philo, as well as the Targumists,

speaks in the same style.

2. He might have spared the pains i, which he takes in inquiring into the Age of the Targumists; we are very little concerned in a nice inquiry into that matter. Our cause does not depend upon it. they are very ancient (I speak of Onkelos and Jonathan on the prophets) cannot reasonably be denied; and, 'tis well known, they are much esteemed by the Jews. The author of Bilibra affirms, that his adversaries pretended, that St. John borrowed his Aby from them. This is some excuse for him, if this be admitted to be true. But then, I believe, nothing can excuse his way of proceeding in this inquiry. Let would have us believe, that the Targumists are later than the Talmud, because the former borrow from the latter: This be affirms, but could never be able to prove. It is so for from being true, that it is apparently false. The author of the Milna mentions the Targum 1 as u-But the author of Bilibra takes notice of several sed in the synagogue. things in the Targumists, which are likewise in the Talmud. this is far from being any kind of proof: For the Talmudists might borrow them from the Targumists, and not the Targumists from them. At this rate he might prove the new Testament more antient than the old, because in the new Testament many things are said, which are found in the old. If he had spoken to the purpose, he should have produced some places in the Targums alledged out of the Talmud: But in the method which he takes, he does but impose upon the reader, and expose himself. St. Paul mentions Jannes and Jambres: Can we thence conclude, that he received those names from Jonathan the Targumist, who hath them? If he did, then is that Targumist much older But there is no need to affirm this. It is enough, than the Talmud. that St. Paul and that Targumist had those names from the tradition of the Jewish lynagogue. This bears hard upon my author. way of reasoning be allowed, he will be found to prove too much: For hy this method I may prove the Targumist to be as old as St. Paul; when he would prove him, by the same reasoning, later than the Talmud.

3. This author takes a great deal of pains to prove, that the Jews, (and it appears that he means the later Jews) do not believe our do-Etrine of the Trinity, but are sworn enemies to it. I know no way of excusing this impertinent digression of his. He might have spared all

h Pag. 17. Pag. 17; 18, &cc. Rag. 24. Megillah C. 4. M. 10.

this

this trouble, if he had pleased, which yet he spends several pages about. He quotes maimon, Abravenel, Lipman, and Jos. Albo; and, doubtless, he might easily have quoted many more. But all this is to no manner of purpose. Besides that his quotations do not prove, that these Jews were sworn enemies to our Trinity. But I will allow them so to be: I cannot still divine, to what purpose he takes this pains.

I take no pleasure in following this author, much less in exposing Yet because, perhaps, some may be so weak as to cry him up (I hope there are but few such) I will not think much to follow him farther yet. He tells us, that, for the ease of his reader, he will lay before him the various fignifications of Memra Jehovæ among the Targumists; and, to that purpole, he promiseth to lay before the reader all the places where that phrase occurs in the Targum of Jonathan, Quia ejus præcipue habetur ratio; utpote authoritate atque antiquitate Onkeloso & Hierosolymitano potioris, i. e. Because the Targum of Jonathan is of greatest regard, as being of greater authority and antiquity than that of Onkelos and the Ferusalem. Surely, this author must have a very mean opinion of his reader, whatever he had of himself, when he affirmed this. I shall examine the truth of what he affirms, when he says, that Jonathan's Targum on the Pentateuch is of the greatest authority and antiquity. Those men, that understand these matters, would not have said it, but rather have suspected, that this author had never read the Targums himself, after all the pother and noise he makes about them. I will examine this matter, and doubt not, but to make it appear, that what he affirms is notoriously falle.

I will not trouble the reader, nor arge him with authorities from the greatest men in this kind of learning, that the church hath had. The testimony of tearned men will signific little with our author, and there-

fore I will forbear.

Nor will I trouble myself, as to the Jerusalem Targum upon the Pentateuch. I must needs say, that I have no great opinion of the antiquity of it; and yet, for what I know, it may in that matter vye with that, which goes under the name of Jonathan. I shall shew, that it ought not to have the same authority, nor is of the same antiquity, with Onkelos; and, I may add, with that of the true Jonathan on the prophets. And,

I This appears from the style. That of Onkelos is biblical, and terse. It come near to that part of Daniel, which is written in the Chaldee language; and that of Jonathan on the prophets is like it. But that of Jonathan on the Pentateuch is written in a coarse and dreggy, novel and vulgar, very flat and low style. Any man of telerable judg-

From pag. 102, to pag. 107. \* Pag. 195.

ment

ment will be soon convinced of the truth of this, if he will be at the pains to read them over, and compare them. I was abundantly convinced of this many years ago, when I read them; and I am sure, I could not at that

time lie under any prejudice as to this matter.

2. If we consider him as a paraphrast, we shall be farther convinced. Onkelos, upon the main, is a strict version; and the true Jonathan on the prophets, keeps generally very close to the Hebrew text. He seldom adds much; and where he does add, generally speaking, it is for the illustration of the text. I might give large proofs of this, were it needful. But for Jonathan on the Pentateuch, it is quite otherwise. I will pass by all the fabulous relations, which I find a late writer hath collected, about the moon's diminution, and the monstrous Leviathan, &c. I shall refer the reader to some few other additions, out of a vast number, which I could produce. The curious reader may consult him on Gen. Chap. i. 14, 26. Ch. ii. 21. Ch. vi. 2. Ch. xiv. 18. Ch. xvi. 1. Ch. xviii. 2. Ch. xix. 24. Ch. xxv. 25. Ch. xxx. 32. Ch. xxxiii. 4. Ch. xlix. 3, 27. Exod. Ch. ii. 12. Ch. xv. 25. Ch. xxiv. 1, 5. Levit. Ch. xiv. 7. Ch. xxiv. 12. Ch. xxvi. 44. Numb. Ch. ii. 3, 10, 18, 25. Ch. xvi. 2, 4. Deut. xxii. 1, 4. There the reader will be satisfied, if he compares this with the true Jonathan on the prophets, that this is not the manner of the man. To this I might add the great variations from the Hebrew text, to be found in the Pseudo-Jonathan. Thus Gen. ii. 7. Instead of Living Soul, he hath a Talking Spirit. Ch. ix. 27. Tents is by him rendred School. Ch. xiv. 8. Belah, he renders by a city that devoureth its inhabitants. Ch. xv. 11. Fowls, he expounds by idolatrous people. Ch. xvii. 3. Fell, he says, that Abraham could not stand, because he was not circumcifed. Ch. xviii. 8. Did eat, he renders by, they seemed to him to eat. Ch. xxxix. 6. Bread, he renders by Wise. Exod. vi. 15. Shaul, he expounds by Zimri. Lev. xix. 35. Measure, he expounds by dimension of summer and winter. Numb. xxii. 5. Balaam, he expounds by Laban the Syrian. Deut. xvi. 1 6. Empty, he expounds by, Void of all the precepts. More still, he sometimes contradicts the text. As on Gen. ii. 8. he alters the Hebrew number. Exod. XXVi. 7. This is very unlike to the true Jonathan: And therefore this author ought not to have an authority equal to Onkelos and the true Jonathan. And that be is not of that antiquity, which is pretended, appears,

3. From the book itself, which is the clearest proof in this case. And this will easily appear to any man, that will read him over with due care, and compare him with the other Targumists. I have spoken of his style already; I shall now proceed to other matters. I wou'd not dispute with this author about the antiquity of the true Jonathan, who wrote on the prophets. I take the case to be this. Our author had met with some books,

who

who told him, that Jonathan was the oldest paraphrast, they meaning the true Jonathan, who wrote upon the prophets; (who hath, indeed, great marks of antiquity.) The Socinian Inatcheth at this, and applies it to this false Jonathan, because he found a Targum, that went under his name: Whereas it does not appear, that the true Jonathan ever wrote upon the Pentareuch; and if he did, it does evidently appear, that he could not write that on the Pentateuch, which goes under his name. And to the end this may still more tlearly appear, I shall make some observations

from the book itself."

We shall find in this Jonathan some words and expressions, which forbid us to allow him to be of equal antiquity or authority with the true I do not say, that the true Jonathan bath no exotick words in him: I know, that he hath some few, which are foreign, or at at least, reputed so by learned men. But this Pseudo-Jonathan hath words and expressions, that could not be used by the true Jonathan. e. g. Gen. xxxii. 6. We read, that Esau came to meet Jacob with four bundred men. What men they were, the text does not say: But Jonathan calls them פולפרכין Polemarchin, or fighting men. I find no fault with his paraphrase: The word Polemarchin is of neither Hebrew nor Chaldaick, but of a Greek extraction and composition. The novel writers of the Jews are full of such kind of words; and the reason why they are so is. obvious and plain: But the true Jonathan cannot be supposed to use such a word as this for fighting men, or men of war. And to this purpose it is to be considered, that the true Jonathan, especially in his Targum upon the first prophets, hath frequent occasion of expressing, after his way, what he finds in the Hebrew text, that imports fighting men, or men of war. And we find he does it in Chaldee words of the same import, as the reader may see that will consult him on Josh. v. 4. Ch. vi. 2. ch. viii. 8: 1 Kings ix. 22. ch. xii. 21. These places be renders by Chaldee words, and that with some variety; but no where useth Polemarchin. This is a clear evidence, that this is not the same author, who wrote upon the Pentateuch. We find, he, who wrote on the Pentateuch, useth this exotick word in another place also; Gen. xxxiii. 1. though there was nothing in the Hebrew text, that gave him occasion to use it:

But the other Jonathan useth not this word, when he hath a fair occasion given him so to do. given him fo to do.

Again, Exod. xxxviii. 8. What we turn Looking-glasses, he renders by an exotick word of a Latin original. Again, Deut. i. 12. To what we render your Cumbrance, he adds Epicureisin; a word which the true Jonathan cannot be Jupposed to use. But I have still farther proofs, that this Jonathan cannot pretend to the antiquity allowed to the true Jonathan, und to Onkelos. e.g. Exod. xxvi. 9. where there is mention

Digitized by Google

mention

mention of five curtains, and of fix. This Jonathan adds, that the five were with respect to the five books of the law, the fix with respect to the fix Seders of the Misna. It seems this Jonathan wrote, after the Misna was compiled, which was about 200 years after CHRIST; and therefore he could not be the author of any Targum taken notice of by the Misna, of which I made mention before; and consequently, could not be of such a principal authority and antiquity, as the author of Bilibra would have his reader believe. But I shall prove him still of a later time than that: For on Numb. XXIV. 19. he mentions Constantinople: Every man knows, that this he could not have done, had he not lived, after that Constantine had built this city, and given it that name. I do not deny, but that this paraphrase is, however, of good use. I will say so of Joseph Ben Gorion: But then I do not think him sit to be compared, for authority or antiquity, with the noble author Flavius Josephus.

A greater confidence I never met with in any author. He denies, that any Jew what soever affirms the Word of GOD signifies an eternal and coeffential WORD. I hope he (or his editor) will answer a late book against the Unitarians. They may find something offered in the following papers out of Philo, &c. to the same purpose: It will be time to answer intirely

the author of Bilibra, when that is done.

I might here lay before my reader all the places, that occur in the true Jonathan; where the Memra, or Word of the LORD, is mentioned: But that would be too much in a preface. I shall mention a very few, out of a great number, where that expression does necessarily denote a divine person, or GOD himself. The reader may examine the following places. 1 Kings viii. 57. Chap. ix. 7. ch. xii. 24. ch. xiv. 11. 2 Kings x. 17. ch. xviii. 5, 7. ch. xx. 6. If a. ch. i. 14. ch. x. 20. ch. xii. 2. Jer. i. 19. ch. xxviii. 23. To the Word are attributed the great things predicted of the MESSIAS, Is a. ix. 7. JEHOVAH himself is expounded by the LORD's CHRIST. Is a. xxviii. 5. This WORD of the LORD is called the redeemer. Jer. xlii. 5. and his redemption is called everlasting. Isa. xlv. 17. And the creation of the world is imputed to him. Jer. xxviii. 5.

I might lay before the reader the absurd interpretations, this author is forced to give of several places, that he may be able to maintain his hypothesis. Where repentance or grief is by the Chaldee attributed to the WORD of GOD, he interprets it of GOD's word or decree, by which he appointed the creation of man. The covenant made between man and the WORD of GOD (Gen. xvii. 2.) he thus interprets; by oath and promise on GOD's part, and the condition on a man's; and these he makes the two parties. Where the WORD of GOD is said to be a witness, he is forced (against his own principle) to expound the WORD by GOD himself, or an angel; and where the WORD of GOD is said to have given

Pag. 153. Pag. 32. Pag. 40.

B 2 children,

children Gen. xlviii. 9. he refers the reader to Gen. xxxvii 9. (I know not to what purpose,) or else he says, It is so said, because the WORD of the LORD was the cause of this blessing. Thus I have given the reader a little taste of the abilities of this author, and as much as a PREFACE can well bear.

I must own, that I have from my youth had a mighty veneration for the Chaldee paraphrasts, and think them, next to the sacred Text, one of the choicest treasures, that the learned Christians do enjoy. They are of marvellous use to us in our disputes against the Jews, not to say Socinians also. It is no hard matter to shew the various and vast usefulness and advantages, which we may receive by them. But this would require a treatise by itself. I have always thought, that we were obliged to bless GOD for such a treasure. But far be it from me, to think them all of equal value and antiquity. I grant, that the Pseudo-Jonathan is of much less authority and antiquity than some of them. The man, that advanceth him, must mightily depreciate the other. How far this may serve the Socinian's cause, I know not; I am sure, 'tis great disservice to Christianity: And therefore I hope, that the reader will bear with the foregoing digression.

For the tenth chapter, in this following part, which treats of the false Christs, the reader might have expected a fuller account: And he should have had it. But so it was, that it would have required some books, which I had not by me. And though I endeavoured to procure them from beyond the seas (as my friends know) or procure the loan of them here, yet I was not successful in it. This I mention for this reason only, that the reader may be informed, for what reason he hath not a fuller account of that matter.

I have, in the following discourse with the Jews, given their arguments their full force, and used them with that humanity, that I ought to do. I heartily pray to GOD for their conversion, and would be glad to do any thing, that might contribute to it. And if it should at any time happen, that what I have offered should gain any of them to the Christian faith, it would be to me a greater joy than to have gained all the wealth of the Indies.

This I must needs say, that the more I consider the grounds of the Christian religion, the more I like them. It stands upon a sure bottom, and does not fear the most subtle arguments, that can be brought against it. It will never fall that way. I heartily wish, that our lives were answerable to our principles. I think, nothing threatens us so much, as the general decay of piety, and rampancy of vice and immorality, and our own voluntary forsaking that faith, which was once delivered to the saints. I have nothing further to detain the reader with, but to desire his prayers to almighty GOD, that he would succeed this honest endeavour, that it may gain the end, for which it is intended.

A



# DEMONSTRATION

OF THE

### MESSIAS.

### PART III.

## CHAP. I. The CONTENTS.

The plea of the Jews for the perpetuity of the law of Moses. The state of this question between Christians and Jews. Several arguments to prove, that the law of Moses is not of perpetual obligation. An explication of Haggai ii. 6. A particular consideration of the Jews pretences. That the constitutions of Moses are said to be ordinances for ever. Deut. iv. 2. consider'd. Of the Psalmist's magnifying the law of Moses. A discourse upon Malachy iv. 4. Deut. xxxiii. 4. consider'd. A particular consideration of our Saviour's words, Matth. v. 17, 18. In what sense Jesus says, he did not come to destroy the law and the prophets, but to fulfil. Luk. xvi. 29. consider'd. A discourse on Rom. iii. 31.

NOTHER great pretence of the Jews, and prejudice against Christianity, ariseth from an opinion, which they hold pertinaciously, that the law of Moses is of perpetual obligation: Nor can it be denied, but that this pretence is specious, and the Jews have something to urge in this matter. I will be so far

from concealing any thing which they have to say, that I will produce what I have met with in their books to this purpose, and shew it to the best advantage of their cause.

IT is on all hands agreed, that a this law came from GoD; and as it was with great solemnity delivered at mount Sinai, so it was confirmed by miracles; and being of unquestionable truth, it is but reasonable to believe, that it is of perpetual obligation, and like the author of it, perfect and unchangeable. And to this purpose the Jews may, and they do urge many things to prove their law to be of perpetual obligation. E. G. That those laws, when they were first given, were not given for that present season and occasion only, but delivered as statutes and ordinances for ever; that, as an argument of the perfection of that law, it was provided that nothing should be added to it, or taken from it; that the devout pfalmist says of it such great things, as speak it to be unchangeable; that as the Jews prospered when they did obey it, so all the miseries, which overtook them, came upon them for their disobedience to that law: that upon the ceasing of the spirit of prophecy in Israel, and in the very close of the canon of Scripture, they are put in mind to adhere to the law of Moses; Remember ye the law of Moses my servant, which I commanded unto him in Horeb, for all Israel, with the statutes and judgments. (Mal. iv. 4.) By which words the Jews were obliged not only to obey the moral, but the positive precepts, called the statutes and bjudgments; this whole law was given for all Israel, and not only to them, who were present at the solemn delivery of it in the wilderness, but for their feed and posterity for ever; hence it is, that the law is called the inheritance of the congregation of Jacob. (Deut. xxxiii. 4.) To what hath been said, the Jews urge, that Jesus himself affirmed, that he did not come to destroy the law and the prophets, but to fulfil: And that till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. (Mat. v. 17.18.) That these words of JESUS were agreeable with his practice; when he cured the leper, he sent him to the priest to make his doblation; and when he did cat the passover he observed the legal custom; he bid his followers pray, that their flight might not be on the fabbath, so great was his veneration for that institution: The apostles in the first council forbad blood, &c. And the miserable man in the parable, when he pleaded for his brethren, was told, that they had e Moses and the prophets; and St. Paul, says he, is so far from making void the law by faith, that he says, Yea, we establish the law, (Rom. iii. 31.) And elsewhere affirms, that the law is good: In a word, the law was given for the posterity of Israel (Deut. xxix. 14.) And we find God declaring himself to this purpose by his prophet, saying, This is my covenant with them, saith the LORD, my Spirit that is upon thee, and my words that I have put in thy mouth, shall not depart out of thy mouth, nor out of the mouth of thy feed, nor out of the mouth thy seeds seed, saith the LORD, from henceforth and for ever. (Isa. lix. 21.

FOR my better proceeding in this weighty argument, I shall make use of the following method.

First, I SHALL state the question between the Christians and Jews, concerning the perpetuity of the law of Moses.

a J. Albo Ikkarim Par. 1. c. 17. Fortalitium fidei lib. 3.

R. Isaac Chizuk Emuna, l. 1.

MS. L. 157, 158.

MS. L. 157, 158.

MS. L. 161, 67 162.

Secondly

à

Secondly, I SHALL prove against the Jews, that the law of Moses is not of perpetual obligation.

Thirdly, I SHALL answer the pretences of the Jews produced above.

I. I SHALL state the question between the Christians and Jews, con-

cerning the perpetuity of the law of Moses.

THE laws given by Mosts were of several kinds. Some were moral, which do oblige for ever. Of this there is no dispute between Christians and Jews. Some of these laws of Moses were positive institutions; and these were of two sorts: Some were ritual and ceremonial, or the laws of the Jews considered as a church; such were the laws about sacrifices, purifications, &c. Others were political or civil, as the Jews were considered as a commonwealth, civil society or polity; such were the laws about servitude, damages, punishments, &c. The question between the Christians and Jews is concerning these positive institutions.

II. THAT these laws are not of perpetual obligation, I shall prove

from the following arguments against the Jews.

1. BECAUSE these laws are not good in themselves: They are not antecedently so; our obligation to such laws ariseth only from positive institution. They are at best but ritual, or types of some better thing to reste constitutions that are barely civil and political, and consequently alterable upon occasion, I gave them also statutes, that were not good; and judgments, whereby they should not live (Ezek. xx. 25.) These things did not perfect humane nature, nor form in mankind a divine temper and likeness. Men might be very good without these laws, and very bad when they obeyed them.

The world was two thousand years old, before the law was given by Moses, and in that space of time there were great examples of piety and vertue; there were those then who pleased God, and yet were not circumcised. Thus Justin Martyr, discoursing of the Jewish circumcision, says very well, that we need it not. Engap, &cc. For (says he) if that were necessary, as ye suppose, God would not have created Adam having on his fore-skins, nor have regarded the oblation of uncircumcised Abel, nor had Enoch pleased him, and been translated. Uncircumcised Lot was saved from Sodom by the ministry of angels. Noah with his sons went uncircumcised into the ark. Melchizedek the priess of the most high God, to whom Abraham paid tythe, and from whom he received a blessing, was uncircumcised; And yet God promises a priess for ever according to the order of Melchizedek.

It is a foolish opinion, to think these forms of worship unalterable, or that God designed them for ever: For he declares frequently, that sa-crifices and other rites were not in themselves pleasing to him; that he preserved mercy before sacrifice, and a penitent and broken heart, before any other oblation,

2. These laws were never intended for all the world; they were

2. These laws were never intended for all the world; they were given to one people, and many of them annexed and restrained to one tertain land, and some of them to a certain place of that land, and a certain place of the certain place of the certain place of that land, and a certain place of the certain place of the certain place of the certain place of that land, and certain place of the certain place of t

J. Martyr Dialog. cum Tryphon.

tain

tain tabernacle or temple situated in that place. Some precepts, which we find in the books of Moses, were so temporary, that they obliged them to whom they were given for that time only, and not for the time to come. These the Jews call nyo nuse, i. e. occasional precepts: Such in Egypt were several rites relating to the first passover, viz. Eating it with staves in their hands, &c. which did not oblige in after times. Such in the wilderness were several precepts; e. g. The setting by a pot of Manna, the not molesting Moab and Ammon, that of making the g brazen ferpent, the bringing the blood of every flain beast to the door of the tabernacle: Such, at the first entrance into the land, were the precepts of the blessings and curses in Gerizim, &c. Other of these precepts of Moses were to endure to after ages; these precepts the Jews call precepts der generations, or for after times. Of this matter I shall have occasion to speak more afterwards. In the mean time it is to be observed, That 'tis added to these precepts, that they must be observed in their generations, and in their land; which two limitations are very restrictive, and do abundantly declare, that these are precepts which do not concern mankind, and consequently are not of perpetual obligation.

3. God h doth in the old Testament declare often, that he would call the Gentiles in the days of MESSIAS, and that they should then be received into his grace and favour: This is an argument beyond exception against the perpetuity of the law of Moses, and that those laws were intended for no longer than the time, when this great event should come to pass; and then these Topical or Local statutes must give way to those laws, by which God would govern the world. These laws of Moses are like the Municipal laws of a certain city, which are of force, till the prince and law-maker shall think fit to govern all his subjects in all parts of his dominion by one and the same law. Can any man think, that the Gentiles should be governed by these laws of Moses, which were peculiar to the Jews? Would they be obliged three times a year from the remotest parts of the world to go up to Jerusalem? Must they be governed by the political laws, which the Jews were governed by? Must they keep the passover in remembrance of any deliverance from Egypt, who never were delivered thence? Shall they keep the other festivals, who were never concerned in those precepts, or in the grounds of them?

4. The practice as well as the doctrine of feveral of the Jews assure us, that their law was not indispensable, and consequently not of perpetual obligation. They admitted of proselytes of old, who were so far from undertaking to obey all the laws of Moses, that they only took upon them the observation of the precepts of the sons of Noah. Nor do we find, that Moses perswades fethro to submit to his laws. Jonah preacheth repentance to the Ninevites, but not the necessity of circumcision or of sacrifices: Nor do we find any other prophets urging these things upon any of the Gentiles. The law of Moses did indeed oblige the Jews; but yet in some cases these laws were dispensable, and good men did dispense with them: Not to say how many things there were, which did pellere sabbatum, i. e. excuse them from resting on the sabbath-day, we find holy men sometimes going cross to some of the pre-

-

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>8</sup> V. Maim. Sepher Mizvoth. 

Gen. xlix. 10. Plal. ii. 8. Isa. ii. 2. xi. 10. xiv. 1, xlix. 6, lx. 3. 5. Hos. ii. 23. Zech. viii. 22. ix. 9, 10. Mal. i. 11.

bread was to be eaten by the priest only; and yet David did eat it without any reproof. By the law of Moses, those who were hanged might not remain on the tree all night: And yet Saul's sons in David's time hanged on the tree several days and nights together. They were according to the law to i offer their sacrifices at Jerusalem: And yet Elijah offered elsewhere; and in the days of Hezekiah they did eat the passover betherwise than it was written.

The Hebrew doctors teach, that when they warred against the Gentiles, in case of scarcity or famine, they might eat carkasses, or what was torn, or swine's slesh. And that it was lawful to transgress the law it self, anyon, in case of present necessity. They taught, that the Sanhedrim, or any prophet, who was owned for a true one, had authority to dispense with all the precepts and rites of the law (excepting always the case of idolatry) for a certain time. This is a clear argument, that these laws had no antecedent goodness, and were not therefore of eternal and perpetual obligation.

It is farther observable from the Jewish writers, that they taught, that their law was not to endure for ever. Thus from the Jalkut † we are told, That God would give a new law by the hand of the Messias. Again, that in the time to come, or, in the days of the Messias, all oblations should cease, excepting the sacrifice of praise. And by another we are told, that all their festivals should cease, excepting their Purim and day of expiation. And there is a saying amongst them, that in the days of the Messias God will permit the eating of swine's flesh.

5. God hath given us notice, that he would put an end to the institutions of Moses, in the days of the Messias. Thus we read in the prophet Haggaim. Yet once, it is a little while, and I will shake the heavens and the earth, and the sea, and the dry land, &c. These words import a great mutation of things, and manifestly refer to the days of the Messias, as I have essewhere made to appear. The destruction of a kingdom or polity is among the Hebrews expressed after this manner: The shaking of the heaven and earth signifies the destruction of the Jewish polity, and consequently of those ritual and political laws, which must of necessity sall with it. Maimonides hath observed truly, that the destruction of a nation, in the scripture dialect, is parabolically describ'd by the trembling of the heavens, and commotion of the earth (of which many † instances and proofs may be found referred to in the margin) and he tells us, that when the Arabians would describe a man that had met with some singular missortune, they would say ", Calum ipsus super terram ejus cecidit, that is, His heaven is tumbled down upon his earth. He adds, that it is usual to speak of a kingdom, as if it was the whole world,

It is no wonder then, that the destruction of the Jewish polity should be described, as it is o in words that seem to import the destruction of the whole world. When the law of Moses was given, the earth shook, and so did the heavens with thunder; nor is it strange, that

<sup>1 2</sup> Sam. xxi. 10. k 2 Chron. xxx. 18. 1 R. Bechai in legem Col. 211. fol. 1. v. Lipman. Nizachon p. 211. Respons. Judaic. ad 23. quast. Quest. 18. Edit. 1644. † v. Vorstium in Abravenel de cap. sidei e. 13. m Hagg. ii. 6. † 1sa. xiii. 10, 19. 1sa. xxxiv. 4. Ezek. xxxii. 7. Jer. iv. 23. Joel ii. 10. Amos ix. 5. Dan. viii. 10. Isa. ii. 19, 21. 1 Maccab. i. 28. n More Nevochim p. 2. c. 29. Matth. xxiv. 7, 29, 37. Mark xiii. 8, 23, 24, 25. Luke xxi. 11, 25, 26.

the removing of this law should be described in the same terms, by which the setting it up at first is described. In the days of our Jesus something happened, which complies with the very letter of this prediction. The heaven was moved, when the voice came thence, and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent; and a very great earthquake phappened some time before the birth of Jesus, in the days of Herod the great, a very sit prelude to the great mutation of things predicted in this pro-

phet.

Upon the whole matter then, the Jew hath no cause to complain, that the author of the epistle to the Hebrews should apply this passage to this matter: For there is nothing strained in it, and nothing but what is perfeely agreeable to the way of speaking used by the most ancient Hebrew writers. His words are these, Whose voice then shook the earth: But now he hath promised saying, Tet once more I shake, not the earth only, but also heaven. And this word, Tet once more, signifyeth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain. (Heb. xii. 26, 27.) " q. d. as the law of Moses was given with great solemnity, and par-"ticularly with the shaking of mount Sinai; so God hath promised, " that there should come a time, that shall be attended with another great " change of things, expressed by shaking once more the earth and the " heaven; by which no less is meant than this, that those laws of Moses, " which were of positive institution, and therefore mutable, should be " taken away, that the doctrine of the MESSIAS, which is to endure " for ever, might be brought into the world, and remain with us.

I ADD what we find expressly to the same purpose in the prophet Jeremiah, in the following words. Behold the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah. Not according to the covenant, that I made with their fathers, in the day when I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt, &c. But this shall be the covenant, that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the LORD; I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts, and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. (Jer. xxxi. 31.) God will make a new covenant; he doth not say, that he will renew the old. He will write his law in their hearts; What Law? Not the institutions of Moses; not according to the tovenant, that I made with their

fathers, &c.

6. God hath by his providence declared, that the inflitutions of Moses were never designed to oblige for ever 9. For since these precepts were annexed to a certain land, and place in that land, as the ritual precepts were; and others, that were political, concerned the Jews only, and so long only, as they continued a distinct polity: Those precepts are now expired, because the Jews are dispossessed of that land, and have not been a distinct polity for about sixteen hundred years. God hath by his providence render'd those laws unpracticable. All the laws about sacrifices sell with the temple; and many sell with the city of Jerusalem; and when the Jews ceased to be a polity, their political laws were render'd null.

P v. R. D. Gantz. Zemach David. p. 84. P. Chrysostem To. 6. p. 918. Edit. Savil.
W 1 T H-

WITHOUT doubt these laws were given for wise reasons; they distinguished the Jews from the idolatrous nations, and were designed to preserve them from their idolatrous practices; they were trials of their obedience, and many of them types of some better things to come; but 'tis in the mean time very evident, that they were not given to all mankind, nor designed to oblige for ever.

III. I SHALL answer the pretences of the Jews produced above.

(1.) 'T is pretended, that when these laws were given, they were not given for that season only, and occasion, but were delivered as statutes and ordinances for ever. Thus the feast of unleavened bread is said to be an ordinance for ever. (Exod. xii. 17.) And the sabbath is called a perpetual

covenant, (Exod. xxxi. 16.) To which I answer,

I. THAT it is certain, and confessed among the Jews, that the word Olam, which we render by ever, does not fignifie always eternity, but a limited and determinate time. Joseph Albo confesseth thus much, and produceth several instances for proof of it. What is said to be for ever, is to abide to some stated and fixed time. 'Tis said of the servant, that he shall serve his master for ever. (Exod. xxi. 6.) i. e. To the jubilee. fays the Targumist i; the year of jubilee was the utmost extent of that service. Hannah fays of Samuel, That he should appear before the LORD, and there abide for ever, (1 Sam. i. 22.) which yet can be meant of no longer time than that of his life, or that part of his life, in which he was fit to minister legally. Whence it appears, that the eternal obligati-

on of these laws cannot be proved from this expression.

2. It is to be remember'd, that amongst the precepts given to Moses, as hath been noted before, some were only occasional and pro hac vice; others were to be continued in after ages. These latter, with contra-distinction to the former, may be faid to be statutes and ordinances for ever. I will give an instance in this place, that is very pertinent to my present purpose. The passover was ordained in Egypt, and the first passover was kept there: This feast was to be kept in the land of Canaan, and so The Jewish doctors do carefully distinguish between the passover of Egypt, and the passover of after ages; and tell us of some rites peculiar to the passover of Egypt, which were not used in the passover of after ages. Abravenel u reckons them up, and they are these, (1) The taking up the lamb four days before. (2) The sprinkling of the blood upon the posts of the house. (3) Eating the passover with loins girt, shoes on their feet, and staves in their hand. These rites were peculiar to the first passover, and not used in after times. But unleavened bread was to continue, and to be a constant attendant upon the passover for all fucceeding generations; and upon that confideration, no wonder, that it is called an ordinance for ever, because it was to continue as long as the passover.

3. WHEN these precepts were given, which are said to be for ever, we find something in the very text, which determines the utmost extent of this expression, and which assures us, that as these things were to continue to fucceeding generations, and were not barely for the present occasion;

Ikkarim, part. 3. c. 16. Targe. Abrayenel in legem, fol. 150. col. 2. 1 Targum Jon. in Exod. xxi. 6. פסח מצרים פסח רורותי C 2 1Q

fo they were to continue no longer than the Jewish state or polity should continue. And it will be worth our while to observe, with what exactness this matter is delivered in the law of Moses. For these laws, which are faid to be for ever, are faid to be so in their generations, or future ages, as hath been explained, and in their dwellings: Which two expressions restrain that indefinite phrase of for ever, and confine it to the Jewish country, and polity. The law, which forbad the eating of fat and blood is called a perpetual statute; but then it follows for your generations, throughout all your dwellings, (Lev. iii. 17.) The eating of fat, which was forbid, was the fat of those beasts, which were admitted as sacrifices; (Levit, vii, 23, 25.) and when the facrifices ceased, which were annexed to a certain place, this law ceased likewise. The law of afflicting their souls on the day of expiation is faid to be a flatute for ever, (Levit. xvi. 31.) But then this is confined by those expressions, in which it is said to be a statute to them throughout their generations, and in all their dwellings, (Levit xxiii. 31.) The same restrictions we find annexed to the laws of the sheaf of first-fruits, (Levit. xxiii. 14.) Of the two wave-baves, (Lev. xxiii. 17, 21.) The law of burning the lamps, (Lev. xxiv. 3.) Of blowing the trumpets, (Numb. 10. 8.) Of the meat and drink-offering, (Numb. xv. 15.) The service of the Levites, (Numb. xviii. 23.) Of the priesthood of Aaron, (Exod. xl. 15.) Of the priests abstaining from wine and strong drink, when they were in their ministration, (Levit. x. 9.) Of the offering of the blood at the door of the tabernacle, (Levit. xvii. 7.) These laws, however they are said to be statutes or ordinances for ever; yet are explained as they are confined to their generations, as they are all. God fays of Zion, This my rest for ever, (Pi. cxxxii. 14) Here will I dwell. But as God hath for the fins of the Jews for saken that place; fo all those facrifices and services annexed unto it did thereupon cease of themselves.

II. 'T is pleaded, that, as an argument, that this law was to oblige for ever, it was provided, that nothing should be added to it, or taken from it. Te shall not add unto the words, which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, (Deut. iv. 2.) And hence it may be pretended, that this law being perfect is unalterable also. To which I answer;

I. THAT this law was given to the Jews only; God did not by that lay a restraint upon himself. They were not to add or diminish, according to their own pleasure, but God might do it, as seemed good to his wisdom; as food and nourishment is altered according to the capacity of those who receive it. \* This Joseph Albo himself says in his argument,

and upon occasion of this plea.

2. That as God in those words doth not restrain himself; so 'tis certain, that he hath declared that he would made y a new covenant; that he would once more shake z the beaven and the earth; that he would raise up another 2 prophet like unto Moses, and put his words in his mouth; and set up a kingdom b that shall never be destroyed; and bring in everlasting c righteousness; and make them an everlasting d covenant; and also that he would create new beavens e and a new earth, and that the former shall not be remembred, nor come into mind.

 III. 'Tis pretended, that the devout pfalmist says such great things of the law of God, as speak it to be unchangeable. He doth every where, upon all occasions, magnific it: It would be endless to bring in the many things, which he says upon this argument. To which I answer;

1. That, as to the *moral* precepts, we have no dispute with the Jews, but readily grant them to be unalterable: Certain it is that the psalmist

doth not, when he magnifies the law, exclude these precepts.

2. That as to many of the positive institutions, which are called statutes, and judgments, or testimonies, these were such as did insinuate and commend some moral virtue; such as were designed to keep the Israelites from idolatry; and fuch as were shadows of some better thing to come. Upon which confiderations it is no wonder, that the divine psalmist should, upon all occasions, speak great things of this law, which was given by Moses. The political laws were founded upon equity, suited to that people, that time and place; and for the rituals, they had a spiritual meaning, and were many of them very instructive in moral or spiritual matters. Thus circumcision was a sign of God's covenant, a mark of their being dedicated to the true God, and that they were his property and peculiar; and this cutting off their foreskin minded them of paring away their superfluity of naughtiness, or the evil f superfluities of their mind, as Philo the Jew expresseth it. Their sacrifices were offered to God alone, and were accepted only, as they were figns of inward reverence toward God, of contrition for their fins, of gratitude, of faith, and hope in God, or as they had reference to something better. God expected that he, who laid his hands upon the head of the facrifice, might from a good conscience be able to say, (as the same Philo expresset it) g These hands have received no bribes, nor have they been polluted with innocent blood. They have not maimed any man, nor been used injuriously in wounding or oppression; They have not ministred to lewd or vile actions, but have been imployed in good or profitable things. Their great and folemn feafts were commemorations of the divine bounty. Their laws about the fringes of their garments, and writing the law in their houses, were designed against idolatry. Their laws about cities of refuge, concerning dominion, purchasing, property, trespasses, were such as commanded justice and equity.

THERE i were also many of their positive laws, which recommended to the Israelites humanity, and mercy towards the destitute and miserable. Such were the law, by which they were in their wars obliged to offer peace, and to make no havock or waste of fruit-bearing-trees during a siege. Such were the laws about k the forgotten sheaf, and the corner of the field, and the third years tithing, and the i increase of the sabbatical year. All cruelty was forbidden; to this purpose blood m was forbidden, and the killing a n cow or ewe, and their young in one day, the taking a nest of birds and dam together, p the taking the milstone to pledge (with which they grinded bread, the support of life) and the muzzling the ox, that trod out the corn. Josephus observes, that the law, that obliged them to appear at Jerusalem three times a year, tended to maintain friendship and goodwill. And that the law of the peace-offering, when it was for thanksgiving,

f Ta's meeria's φύσεις το ήγεμονικο, Philo. de victim. offerens. 6 Philo. lbid. h Deut. xx. 10, 19. 'Ου δεί πλεμείν πεδς τά μη πυλέμια. Philo do charitate. Deut. xv. 7. xxiv. 19. lev. xix. 9. k Deut. xiv. 28. lev. xxv. 4, 5, 6, 7. m Lev. xxii. 28. n Deut. xxii. 6, 7. Deut. xxiv. 6. P Deut. xxv. 4. q Joseph. Antiq. l. 4. c. 8. Ubi supra. Levit. vii. 15, 16.

by which the offerer was obliged to eat his portion of the offering, on the Tame day in which it was offered; and in case it were for a vow or voluntary offering, it was to be eaten on the morrow at farthest, f did maintain and promote charity and hospitality. I need not add, that many other laws infinuated purity temperance and chastity, &c. Upon these considerations the pfalmist might well magnishe the law of God, which yet doth by no means infer, that all the political and ritual precepts of

that law were to oblige for ever.

3. To this purpose it is farther to be considered, that though the psalmist magnifies the law in general; yet we do not find, that he lays any great stress upon particular rites and institutions absolutely and separately. As for facrifices, he is so far from magnifying them upon their own account, that he speaks in diminution of them, and magnifies the facrifice of praise, and of a broken heart. As for outward circumcision, he doth not extoll it, as the Jews do in their publick offices; nor doth he cry up the washings and purifications u that were bodily; but a clean heart indeed he prays earnestly for; and 'tis plain, that he contends for the inward circumcision of the mind. In a word, the psalmist magnifies the law, and had good reason so to do: but then he considers it, as fraught with moral precepts and spiritual instructions: And however it is certain that he took it for divine; it doth not from hence follow, that it was altogether unchangeable.

IV. IF it be faid in behalf of this law, that the Jews prospered, when they obeyed it, and that all their miseries were owing to their disobedience; I answer

1. That this is only an argument, that this law came from God, who did foretell the miseries, which would befall the Jews for their disobedience. Of this we have no controversy with the Jews at all.

2 But there is no reason to conclude from hence, that this law was to continue for ever. The Jews were obliged to obey it, whiles it did oblige them; it follows not from this, that it was to continue.

V. It may be pleaded, that upon the ceasing of the spirit of prophecy in Israel, and in the very close of the canon of the old Testament, the Jews are put in mind to adhere to the law of Moses. Remember ye the law of Moses my servant, which I commanded to him in Horeb for all Israel, with the statutes and judgments; (Malach. iv. 4.) By which it appears, that the Jews were obliged, not only to the moral precepts, but to the positive institutions, called by the prophet the statutes and judgments. To which I answer

I. THAT there was great reason for those words of the prophet, Remember ye the law of Moses, &c. This, though it do not infer the perpetuity of that law; was yet at that time a very seasonable admonition, whether we look back upon the time past, or forward upon the time to come.

As for the time past, it is to be considered, that the Jews were but newly returned from the captivity of Babylon, into their own land. They were fent to Babylon for the breach of this law; whiles they were there, it was in a great measure unpracticable, because many of its precepts were an-

Theodoret. in Levit. qu. 6. " Psalm li. 10. E Psalm li. 14, 15, 17. nexed

nexed to their own land; when they returned, they were ignorant of their law, and some of them seem not so much as to understand the language, in which 'twas written, (Nehemiah viii. 8.) Besides, they continued in the breach of it, even after their return; By usury and oppression; (Neh. v. 10.) By profaning the sabbath; (Neh. xiii. 15.) By strange and forbidden marriages; (Neh. xiii. 23. with Exr. ix. 2.) So that they still for sook the commandment; (Ezr. ix. 10.) Besides all this, this prophet Malachy complains of their ingratitude, (Chap. i. 2.) Of their profanenes, (Ver. 12.) Of their idolatry, (Ch. ii. 11.) Of their treachery and unbelief, (Ch. ii. 14, 17.) Of their rebellion, sacrilege, and insolence, (Ch. ii. 7, 8, 13.) Upon the whole matter then, nothing could be more scasonable than this admonition, Remember ye the law of Moses, &c.

And as for the time to come, 'tis certain (and the Jews confess it) that from the time of Malachy prophecy ceased in the land of Israel. These prophets had continued from the times of Moses, and the Jewish writings tell us, who they were who prophesied in the several ages successively. They were of great use to the Jews, and warned them upon all occasions, both of their duty and their danger. Henceforth, when prophecy should cease, nothing could be more seasonable, than to mind them, to attend to the written word of God; Remember the law of Moses, &c.

2. What follows in the prophet Malachy doth help to clear this difficulty, and convince us not only, that this law is not of perpetual obligation, but how long it was to endure at farthest. Behold I will send you Elijah the prophet, before the coming of the great and dreadful (or illustrious) day of the Lord, (Malach iv. 5.) That this promise of Elijah was suffilled in John the Baptist, I have essewhere proved; and shewed consequently upon that, that, by the great and illustrious day of the Lord, is meant the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans, and the dissolution of the Jewish polity. Upon the whole matter then, we see the extent of the obligation of the Mosaical institutions, to the coming of this Elijah (The law and the prophets were until John, Luke xvi. 16.) or at the utmost to the destruction of Jerusalem and the temple, the dissipation of the Jewish polity, and the dispersion of that people. Then, at farthest, the political and ritual laws, given to the Jews and annexed to that land, would cease of themselves.

The sense of the sourth and sisth verses of this sourth chapter of Malachy may be taken in this following paraphrase; q. d. Since for your disobedience to the law of Moses ye have been captives in Babylon, and have not since your return been reduced to due obedience thereunto, which bodes you some future calamity; And seeing that you are not like to enjoy prophets to remind you of your duty, as ye enjoyed them in sormer ages; see that ye keep strictly to the laws and institutions of Moses: And be assured of this, that I will in due time send you one in the spirit of Elijah, to supply the defect of prophecy among you: And this person shall appear some time before the destruction of your polity, and dispersion of your nation, when a final end will be put to the positive institutions of Moses, which in the mean time you are inviolably to observe and adhere to.

z 2 Chron, xxxvi. 15, 16.

VI. 'Tıs

VI. 'T is a weak pretence to this purpose, that this law is called an inheritance; (Deut. xxxiii. 4.) which supposeth, that it was to descend and continue.

THE answer is easie from the very words, where this law is called so: For 'tis called the *inheritance of the congregation of Jacob*. 'Twas to continue; I grant it: But no longer than the *Jewish* polity continued. It was a law; but no longer than they, to whom 'twas given, were a people. They are now no commonwealth or kingdom: No wonder then, that their political laws should cease, when their polity is destroyed; and that their rituals should receive an end, when there is no room lest for the practice of them.

VII. But 'tis urged by the Jews with much fairer shew in behalf of their law, that our Jesus said, That he did not come to destroy the law and the prophets, but to fulfil: And, that till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wife pass from the law, till all be ful-

filled, (Matt. v. 17, 18.) To this I answer

- I. THAT when JESUS fays, he did not come to destroy the law and prophets, but to fulfil, he speaks of the moral precepts of it; which he was so far from removing, that he required of his followers a greater degree of fanctity than the bare letter imported, and than the greatest contenders for it had arrived unto. He required an inward and spiritual obedience to these precepts. Let any man but read that chapter, where these words are found, and he will find great cause to believe, that Jesus speaks there of the moral law. For besides that he puts his followers all along that chapter upon the practice of these precepts, he quotes several precepts of the decalogue, and requires an inward and spiritual obedience to them. And there being no doubt of the perpetuity of this law, I need not give any other answer to this objection. For our LORD fulfilled this law, when by his doctrine he gained the great end of it, viz. the highest pitch of sanctity, the greatest love of God and of our neighbour, which is the drift and sum of the law and the prophets. But that there may be no room left for cavil, I shall shew, how our LORD might be said also to fulfil the ritual and political law, and how his words may be understood without any need of inferring the perpetuity of these laws. Wherefore
- 2 For the ritual or ceremonial laws, our Saviour was so far from destroying them, that he fulfilled them. That is, he obeyed them himself, and brought men by his holy doctrines to all that purity and sanctive, which the laws concerning sacrifices and purifications did infinuate and typisse: Besides, these laws that were typical were fulfilled in him the antitype; and thus he suffilled the prophets also, as the prophecies before were in the event suffilled in him. There was not the minutest prophecy that concerned either the birth, or kindred, or life, or sufferings of the Messias; but what was suffilled in our Jesus. Tis true, Jesus used no violence to pull down the ritual law of Moses; he did not come to destroy. But he was the substance of the legal shadows; he made good in the event of things the prophetical predictions, he gained all the spiritual ends of those carnal precepts; and so might well be said not to destroy, but to sulfil. But all this doth not speak the perpetuity of those laws:

laws: For they fell of themselves, when the temple fell; and when the Gentiles were received into the church of God, those disterminating and discriminating laws, like a partition-wall, fell without any violent hand to tumble them down.

3. As for the *political* laws, Jesus did not come to destroy, but to fulfil them. These laws were designed for that people, and during the continuance of that polity; the end of these laws was the common good and safety of the community. Our Lord transgressed none of these laws: He on the other hand taught a doctrine so good and prositable to kingdoms and polities, that the practice of those precepts will gain the end of the best political laws. His laws tend to the security of governments, the peace of the people, and the flourishing condition of all polities and

publick societies.

THE great end of all these laws was to make men better, and to make them happy. Our LORD by his laws hath laid a foundation for gaining this great end: and he that doth fo, may be truly faid not to destroy but to fulfil. There are in these positive precepts of Moses two things to be considered, viz. First, the rites and ceremonies therein prescribed; with respect to these barely considered this law of Moses is said to be a a carnal commandment: But then the scope and end of this law is also to be considered, and with respect to this end this law is called spiritual, because that was the ultimate end and purpose of it. Now certain it is, that as Jesus yielded obedience to the rites and ceremonies of Moses, and did no violence to that law, as it was a carnal commandment, and fo might truly be faid not to destroy; so, as he gained the great end of that law, and brought men over to the spiritual and inward meaning of it, he might truly be faid to fulfil it. The law then, receiving this accomplishment in our LORD JESUS, 'tis no wonder, that our SAVIOUR should say, that, till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be sulfilled. The meaning of which words is this, that heaven and earth should assoon pass away, as the least part of the law or prophets should fail to receive its due accomplishment.

AND now 'tis no wonder at all, that Jesus should obey the law of Moses; that he should shew that respect, which he did to those positive institutions; that he should give a deference to the Aaronical priests, observe the rites of the passover, and regard the sabbath; or that the apostles should have a great regard to the Jews in their council at Jerusalem. All these things do not prove the perpetuity of the laws of Moses; they only consirm what our Saviour says, that he did not come to destroy, but to fulfil. These laws expired of themselves, when the

Jews ceased to be a polity, and the church of GoD.

VIII. As for what is pretended from the parable, in behalf of this law of Moses, viz. that the rich-man's brethren are referred unto it, as a means by which they might be preserved from suture misery; I answer,

1. That they are not referred barely to the ritual, and political, and politive constitutions, but to Moses and the prophets: Now Moses and

4 Heb, vii, 16, with Rom. vii, 14.

the

the prophets were fraught with many excellent precepts of morality, fer-

ving greatly the use of life.

3. That Moses and the prophets were the rule, by which the Jews were to govern themselves during the oeconomy of Moses: But because they were, whilst those laws stood in sorce, to govern themselves by them, it doth not thence sollow, that all those laws shall oblige for ever.

- IX. The pretence from the words of St. Paul is of greater moment; he faith, that he is so far from making void the law by faith, that he adds these words, Yea, we establish the law, (Rom. iii. 31.) Now if the doctrine of justification by faith, without the works of the law, doth not make it void; nay, if it be so far from making it void, that it doth rather establish it, the law is in sorce still, and of perpetual obligation. To which I answer,
- 1. THAT the doctrine of justification by faith doth not make void the law, as by the law is meant the moral law, or that part of the law of Moses, which obligeth men to piety towards God, to justice and charity, to humility and temperance, &c. Because a lively and justifying faith requires all that piety and goodness, which that law required. Nay, we are so far from being discharged from our obedience to those moral precepts, that we are obliged to obey them from higher considerations, than were expresly made known to the Jews (such as the threats of hell, and promise of eternal life) and in a more refined and spiritual sense than the letter of the law, and interpretation of the carnal Jews amounted to. It is not enough that we do not swear falsly; We are not allowed to swear by any creature; or in our ordinary conversation to swear at all, even when we do it to confirm a truth. So far are we by the doctrine of faith from being allowed to shed our brother's blood, that we may not be angry with him without a cause, call him an empty fellow, or represent him as a wicked man or fool, without the greatest danger to our selves. And so far are we, by this doctrine of justification by faith alone, from being allowed to commit adultery, that we may not look on a woman to lust after her. And as for justice, humanity, and acts of mercy, we are taught not to restrain these things to our own country-men, or those of our own religion only (as the Jews too commonly did) but we are obliged to be just and kind ro all the world, and to call every other man our neighbour. Indeed, the doctrine of justification by faith alone, without the works of the law, may be so grosly misunderstood, as thereby to render those moral precepts of Mofes uscless and void: But then our holy religion allows not of such a doctrine. For we own the necessity of a most holy life, and all manner of works of piety, justice and mercy, (Matt. xxv. 35. 2 Cor. v. 10. Tit. ii. II, I2.
- 2. This doctrine of faith is so far from destroying this law, that 'tis accompanied with grace and power enabling men to obey these precepts; and to do this more exactly and universally, than was ever done before. The law it self was destitute of this power and divine assistance: It required obedience; but it did not enable men to obey: The essuson of the Holy Ghost was a blessing reserved to the days of the Messias; the prophets of old foretold it, and our Jesus made it good. The gospel is the ministration of the spirit: On the other hand the law was weak;

it directed men to obedience, but it did not assist them powerfully in the performance. Of this matter I have discoursed elsewhere. That, which helps us to obey the law, is so far from making it void, that it may be truly said to establish it. And this the doctrine of faith doth.

3. THE doctrine of faith is so far from making the very typical and ritual law void, that it rather doth establish it, as it exhibits and reprefents to us the substance of those things, of which the law had but the types and shadows. Hence it is, that the gospel or doctrine of faith, in op-

position to the law, is called 'truth.

4 THE doctrine of faith, or the christian religion delivered in the gospel, is so far from making the law and the prophets void, that 'tis the verification and completion of those testimonies, which are there to be found of the MESSIAS, and of those things, which were to be fulfilled in him. This I have proved at large t elsewhere. And this the apostle observes, (Rom. iii. 21.) But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets.

As for the political, or commonwealth laws, 'tis evident, that the apostle doth not in this place refer to them. They were not the laws of the Jews considered as a church, but as a polity: They must cease, when the Jews ceased to be a people, or body politick; and had no concern in their

justification as sinners.

AND for the words of Isaiah, (Chap. lix. 21.) They serve not the purpose of the Jews, they being an express promise referring to the days of the MESSIAS, as is evident from the foregoing words, And the redeemer shall come to Zion, and unto them that turn from transgression in Jacob, saith the LORD. And as for me, this is my covenant, &c.

Thus have I proved, that the law of Moses is not of perpetual obligation.

Part I. sap. ult.

1 John i, 146

Part L. chap. 10



CHAP.



#### CHAP. II.

### The CONTENTS.

Prophecies of the peaceable times of the Messias. The Jews affirm, that these are not fulfilled in the days of Jesus. They also alledge the words of Jesus, Matth. x. 34. Jesus and his religion defended against this charge. The import of the foregoing prophecies. How far those prophecies have been fulfilled already. What ground we have to believe, that those prophecies will be farther fulfilled. Dan. ii. 44. considered; as also. Dan. vii. Matth. x. 34. considered at large, and compared with a parallel place, Luke xii. 5.

THERE are many prophecies in the old Testament concerning the peaceable times of the MESSIAS: And the Jews do very frequently upbraid us Christians with our quarrels and wars; and from thence they infer, that our Jesus is not the Christ that was to come. It must be confessed, that the prophets do foretell, that there should be abundance of peace in the days of the MESSIAS: That then men b should beat their swords into plow-shares, and their spears into pruning-hooks: Nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more. The 'wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion, and the fatling together: And the lion shall eat straw like the ox; and the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp; and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice-den. Such a change shall be made, that those, who before were fierce and furious, shall be then gentle and harmless: And this temper shall prevail, and extend, as far as the christian church shall extend: It follows, & They shall not burt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: For the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea. The MESSIAS himself is called the e prince of peace: And it follows, Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end. 'Tis expressly said, that in the day of the MESSIAS, f They shall sit every man under his vine, and under his fig-tree, and none shall make them afraid. For the mouth of the LORD of hosts hath Spoken it. Moreover 'tis said of the

MESSIAS,

<sup>\*</sup> Nizachon vet. p. 96. Rambam Disputat. cum fratre Paulo p. 41. R. Isaac Chizuk. Emun. l. 1. p. 43. Fortalisium Fidei de bello Judzorum. l. 3. Lsa. ii. 4. Clfa. ii. 4. Clfa. xi. 6, 7, 8. Ver. 9. Lsa. ix. 6, 7. Micab. iv. 4.

Messias, that he & should speak peace unto the heathen. I might reckon

upon more prophecies to this purpose.

But how were these predictions (will the Jew say) fulfilled in our Jesus? His followers were not only persecuted from the beginning by the Jews, but afterward by the Gentiles also: And when they were freed from their avowed enemies, they sell soul upon one another. They have been divided into parties and sactions; and by their quarrels and bloody wars have weakened themselves, and render'd themselves an easie prey to the common enemy. The church of Christ hath been so far from not learning war any more, that those very men, that have claimed the title of catholick and most christian, have troubled the world with quarrels and contentions, and shed the blood of the followers of Jesus.

NAY furthermore (will h the Jew fay) Jesus himself (to whose times his followers apply the foregoing prophecies of the peaceable times of the Messias) disowns, that he came to introduce peace in the world. For he saith, i Think not, that I am come to send peace on earth; I am not come to send peace, but a sword: For I am come to set a man at variance against his father; and the daughter against her mother; and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law; and a man's foes shall be they of his own houshold. How can this consist with that account, which the prophets give of the times of the Messias, and of Elias, who was to be his fore-runner; Of whom it is expressly foretold, that k he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to the fathers.

IT will well become us to consider this matter with due application of mind; since it is an objection against our whole religion, and which is formed against Jesus the author of it.

In order to my better proceeding and speaking to this matter, I shall use the following method.

First, I will defend Jesus and his holy religion against the charge brought against them in the objection mentioned above.

Secondly, I WILL more particularly reflect upon the import of those

prophecies, out of which this objection is formed.

Thirdly, I will shew, how far these predictions have been already fulfilled.

Fourthly, I will also shew, what ground we have to hope, that there will come a time, when they will be farther fulfilled.

Fifthly, I will consider our SAVIOUR's words, (Matth. x. 34.)
Lastly, I will make some reflections upon the whole, which may be

of use to all of us, who profess Christianity.

I. I WILL defend Jesus and his holy religion against the charge brought against them in the objection before mentioned.

As to Jesus, certain it is, that he ought not to be charged as a disturber of the peace of the world: We have a different account of him.

FOR he was so far from invading the rights of princes, that he was content to be subject to the powers, that were then in being; and whatever their titles were, he was so far from calling them into question, that he paid

Zech, ix. 16. h. VMS. Lusitan. 132 & 152. i Matth. x. 34. k Mal. iv. 6. a ready

a ready obedience, and taught his followers fo to do. His enemies did infinuate, indeed, as if he had affected a kingdom; and made use of that pretence to take away his life. But that was malice and spite: And though Pilate, in the inscription which he put upon the cross, called him 1 king of the Jews; yet the same Pilate, after he had discoursed this matter with him, did profess that he could find no fault in him. Farther still, our SA-VIOUR paid tribute-mony m which strictly was not due from him; and whereas he had not wherewith to pay it; yet to avoid offence and the fuspicion of disobedience, he would work a miracle. As to this matter JESUS was fufficiently tried. The Pharifees sent their insidious disciples on purpose to catch him, and to entangle him if it might be. They pursue their design with great crast: " Master (say they) we know that thou art true, and teachest the way af God in truth, neither carest thou for any man; for thou regardest not the person of men. Thus slily and crastily do they address to our Lord; their main question follows, Is it lawful to give tribute to Cafar or not? A nice argument this was: Many things a witty man might fay in the negative. Cafar was an heathen, a foreigner, and an usurper: The Jews were under a Theocracy; and o when they were allowed to choose a king, they were obliged to choose one of their own nation: And he also was set apart by the holy oyl, or his succession was render'd unquestionable by his family, and his primogeniture. But JESUS is not to be wheedled by these crafty men. He called for a Roman coin, and from the image it bore, tells them their duty both of paying tribute, and all other dues to Casar: He doth not result that power, that was used amis against himself, nor suffer his disciple to use his sword. So far was he from questioning the government, and from disturbing it. And as he did not disturb the state; so was he far from any thing, that spake him an enemy to peake.

As to the church: He was far from making any schism or rent in it. The temple of the Jews was shortly to fall, and the appendant rites with it; but Jesus doth not animate his followers to hasten their ruin. And though the priesthood, that was Aaronical, was near its end, and the priests were bad men; yet doth he not invade their rights and properties: He is so far from it, that, when he himself had cleansed the leper, he bids him. I show himself to the priest, and offer the gift, that Moses commanded. He was not only perfectly obedient to the ordinances of Moses, but he complied without disputing with the innocent rites and usages, which were used among the Jews, tho' they were not required of them by the letter of the law of Moses. He did not only go to the feasts, which were pre-fcribed by the law, but to that of the q dedication, which was introduced in after times. He was not only circumcifed according to the fewish law; but, when he was about the age of thirty years, he was baptized also by John the Baptist, according to the usage, which then prevailed. He complied with the rites that were innocent, though introduced without the warranty of the letter of the law. Thus we find, that he ' fung an hymn at the close of the passover, and did eat it sitting, or at least in the posture of those, who did eat at their meals, though neither of these were required

1 John xviii. 37, 38. Matth. xvii. 14, &c. 14, 15. Matth. viii. 4. John x. 22.

\* Matth. xxii. 15. ! Matth. xxvi. 30. . Deut. xvii.

by the law, or recommended by the example of those, who did eat the

first passover in Egypt.

JESUS was a great example of those virtues, which tend to the begetting and promoting peace in the world. He led an innocent and harmless, an useful and profitable life. He went about doing good, and obliging mankind. He did no injury, and frankly forgave those who were his enemies. He was profoundly humble, meek and lowly in heart, patient and content: He had a great concern and charity for others; but pursued no worldly design of his own. No man can justly charge him as unpeaceable.

And for his holy religion, 'tis like its author; not only pure, but

peaceable also.

THE principles and doctrines of it tend to peace and unity, not only as it commends the worship of one GoD, and the acknowledging but one mediator; but also as it teacheth us, that f there is but one body, and one spirit, one hope of eternal life, but one Lord, one faith, one haptism, as well as one God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in all. Here are great endearments to each other, and a foundation laid in the christian doctrine for the most lasting peace and unity. We are members of the same mystical body: We are one body in CHRIST, and every one members one of another. Though "we are otherwise many, yet are we one body, and that too \* the body of Christ, and members in particular. But there is one Spirit also. Y For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body. We have the same hope, and ought therefore to have the same aim, and the same heart. Our LORD and our faith, as well as our baptism, our God and Father are one. This is the doctrine of our holy religion, the very articles whereof recommend to us peace and unity, and great care and tenderness for one another.

AND so do its positive institutions also. By baptism we are enter'd into Christ's church, and made members of his mystical body: Hence we are become obliged to z keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of

peace. And 'tis very fitly applied by the apostle to that purpose.

And as for the other facrament of the Lord's supper, 'tis the greatest instrument of peace and unity imaginable. The very outward symbols insinuate this unity, the end of its institution recommends it, and the hope of benefit by it exacts it at our hands. 'Tis a feast of love, a commemoration of the greatest charity of our Lord and master, and of the propitiation, which he made by the sacrifice of himself. We are not fit for it, if we be not persectly reconciled to each other; we shall in such a case be so far from receiving any benefit from it, that we shall bring a curse upon our selves. We must purge out the leaven of malice: If we be sowred with it, we shall eat and drink damnation to our selves.

AND as for the precepts of the christian religion, they directly tend to

the procuring and promotiog peace and unity.

THESE things are recommended in our holy religion as our duty. Our SAVIOUR pronounceth a 2 bleffing upon the peace-maker: And we are elsewhere required, b if it be possible, as much as lieth in us, to live

f Eph. iv. 4, 5, 6. t Rom. xii. 5. u 1 Cor. x. 17: x Cor. xii. 27: y Cor. xiii. 13. x Eph. iv. 3: 4 Matth, v. 9: b Rom. xii: 18.

peaceably

peaceably with all men: And to c follow after the things which make for peace: And that d we fludy to be quiet; and feek peace and ensue it.

AND with respect to the church, we are required to preserve the peace and unity of it: † To speak the same thing, that there be no divisions or schisms, but that we be perfectly joined together in the same mind, and in the same judgment; we are to take great care, that i nothing be done through strife or vain glory: That we be like-minded, that we may with one mind, and one mouth glorisie God. There is a mark upon those that separate themselves; and 'tis expressly commanded, that we should not i for sake the assembling our selves together.

MOREOVER, our holy religion is full of fuch precepts, as tend to the procuring and promoting peace in the world. Such are the precepts, that require us to do justly, and as we would be done by: To shew mercy to the miserable; to be kind and courteous, and tender-hearted; to be contented with what we have, and patient and meek, of an humble and lowly heart; to seek heaven and spiritual things, and to be loose to this

world. These things tend to peace.

AND so do such as follow: The doing no wrong, and speaking evil of no man: The forgiving and forbearing each other. The doing our own business: The labouring honestly to get our own bread: The being subject to higher powers. We are also commanded to be gentle to all men, to forbear threatening, rash and long anger, and all censuring and judging our brother: To be converted and become as little children; not to put our selves before other men, nor seek the highest places.

As we hope for the kingdom of heaven, we are obliged to obey these

precepts; and as we would avoid eternal and unspeakable misery.

But I proceed to confider,

II. THE import of those prophecies out of which this objection is formed. And for the better comprehending this matter I shall desire, that the

following particulars may be considered.

I. That these predictions do foretell the tendency of the gospel: And that it doth tend towards peace and concord, I have abundantly shewed before. And if the Messias be called the prince of peace, I have sufficiently made it appear, that our Jesus was a conspicuous example of peaceableness and good will. It is very certain, that the example and the dostrine of Jesus were such, as, if they were complied with, they would introduce peace and good will among men. And that may well be predicted as a thing, which will come to pass, when it naturally follows from what did really come to pass. God by sending Jesus into the world made way for that peace, which the prophets predicted; and that might well be predicted as an event, when care was taken to bring those things to pass, from whence it should result. I have purged thee (says God to Israel) and thou wast not purged, i. e. All was done, that was sit on God's part towards the purging them; but yet through their own neglect they were not purged in the event of things.

2. These words of the prophets do also declare the duty of all those, who embrace the doctrine of the Messias. 1 They shall beat their

\*Rom. xiv. 19. d 1 Theff. iv. 11, \*1 Pet. iii, 11. † 1 Cor. i, 10. f Phil. ii. 3. Rom. xv. 5. h Jud. xix. i Heb. x, 25. k Exek. xxiv. 13. i Isa. xi. 4. swords

fwords into plow-shraes: Neither shall they learn war any more. The expression (as it lies in the Hebrew) doth not necessarily imply the event, it may be enough that it intimates the duty of them, who are spoken of. And to that purpose we are to consider, that after the words above named (Isa. xi. 4.) there follows an exhortation to our duty (v. 5.) O house of

Jacob, come ye, and let us walk in the light of the LORD.

3. These prophecies are to be understood to extend no farther, than true Christianity should be received and spread in the world. For they being predictions of the days of the MESSIAS, are to be confined to his kingdom in the world. Now certain it is, that the power of Christianity hath not prevailed over the world, fince it was first made known: And where this religion hath been professed, yet it hath been a bare and empty title. And as that alone gives us no right to the blessings of Christianity; so it cannot be enough to secure peace and unity among the professors of it. But as we hope for the advancement of CHRIST'S kingdom (of which I shall speak afterwards) so we have reason to believe, that peace and unity will prevail more and more. They will not hurt or destroy, when the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea. We doubt not of an universal peace; but that must not be expected, till the kingdom of Christ shall first spread it self over the world. In the days of the Messias shall the righteous flourish, and abundance of peace, so long as the moon endureth: But this is not to be expected, till that blessed time shall come, when he shall have dominion from sea to sea, and from the river to the ends of the earth, (Psal. lxxii. 7, 8.) Then will the chariot and the horse and the battle-bow be cut off, and then shall he speak peace to the heathen (Zech. ix. 10.) We are not to expect peace without righteousness: When that returns, and the kingdoms of the world become the kingdoms of CHRIST, we justly expect abundance of peace: When judgment shall dwell in the wilderness, and righteousness remain in the fruitful field. Then the work of righteousness shall be peace, and the effect of righteousness quietness and assurance for ever. And then shall the people of God dwell in a peaceable habitation, and in sure dwellings and in quiet resting places, (Ila. xxxii. 16.)

It is enough, that these predictions be made good in any part of the days of the Messias. Tis said, indeed, that these things shall be in the last days, by which expression is meant the days of the Messias: But it is all one, as to the main question, whether these things happen in the beginning of the days of the Messias, in the middle, or not till the end of his days. Whatever happens within the compass of his kingdom,

may be faid to come to pass in the last days.

For though all the time of the Messias, with respect to the oeconomy of Moses, and the Jewish polity, is called the last days; yet is this no objection against what I am now pleading for: Because whatever happens in any part of the days of the Messias, must be allowed to come to pass in the last days; and if it come to pass toward the end of that period of time, it doth more peculiarly belong to the last days. For the days of the Messias take in a great period of time: And though m the Jews have among their doctors different opinions, how long the

Abravenel in Dan fol. 80.

E

days

days of Messias should continue before the resurrection; yet it is allowed by several of them, that his days should continue some thousands of years. And as what falls out in any part of his time, may be said to sall out in the last days; so what comes to pass towards the end of it, may more especially be said so to do. Supposing then any part of the predictions concerning the peaceable days of the Messias not yet to be fulfilled, this will be no objection against Jesus, or his religion: Because they may yet be further accomplished before the expiration of that period of time, within the compass whereof they were to come to pass. For as it is no objection against the ancient prophecies, that some of them are not yet sulfilled, (as the Jews do own they are not, which foretell their deliverance and restoration) because they may yet be accomplished: So is it no objection against Jesus, that some things are not yet sully accomplished, that were to happen in some part or other of the days of the Messias.

III. I SHALL shew, how far these predictions have been already fulfilled.

THAT they have in a good measure been fulfilled is undeniable. Before the coming of Jesus, and the planting his holy religion in the world, there were great heats, and feuds, and distances, and many wars and contentions in the world. The Jews were hated and detelted by the Gentiles; and they by the Jews no better esteemed than dogs. stood at a great distance, and were separated by certain rites and institutions. which kept up that distance and separation from each other. This nenmity was removed by the death and doctrine of Jesus, who made peace not only between GoD and man, but also between the Jew and Gentile: He threw down the wall of partition, that did separate them from each other. The fore-runner of Jusus did by his doctrine dispose men for peace; and so did Jesus, as hath been seen. And this was effected after the day of Pentecost, when the Holy Ghost was poured forth miraculously upon the followers of Jesus. Then all believers (whatever their distances were before) kept close together, and had all things in common: they continued with o one accord. And after this we read, that the p multitude of them that believed, were of one heart and of one soul.

AND when GOD had fully declared his mind, that he would receive the Gentiles into his church, the Jews on that account q glorified GOD, faying, Then hath GOD also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life. And the Gentiles on the other hand abundantly shewed their kindness to the Jews. They sent great relief to their poor, and entertained them with the greatest humanity and kindness.

THE first Christians were pointed at for their singular love to one another, and however they were by some evil men traduced as disturbers of the world, were notwithstanding very remarkable for their peaceable

temper and conversation.

THEY disturbed not the quiet of the places were they lived: They submitted to the powers that were in being. Their holy religion render'd them modest and inossensive: Whatever they were before they embraced Christianity, they were after that gentle and innocent. The wolf be-

came a lamb, the leopard a kid, and the devouring lion as gentle as a calf. Let us hear what fome of the ancient writers report of this matter. Justin the Martyr tells us, what a change Christianity made as to this matter. Οι μισάλληλοι ή κ αλληλοφώνοι, &c. We (lays he) that hated and murdered each other, and who, by our rules, which obtained among us, refused to eat at a common table with strangers, now, after the appearing of Christ, are conversing familiarly together, and praying for our enemies, and endeavouring to pacifie those that unjustly bate us, that they, living according to the excellent precepts of CHRIST, may with us have good hope to partake of good things from God the great LORD of the universe. Before the coming of CHRIST, the world was full of war and flaughter: But from the days of Augustus (when JESUS was born) the case was far otherwise, it exists de, &c. i. e. From that time (says Eusebius) 1 to this (speaking of his own time) we see not, as formerly, cities and nations fighting with each other, nor our lives worn out with hurry or disturbance: Who may not therefore justly wonder, that when of old the devils tyrannized over mankind, and were greatly worshipped by them, that then, as possessed by them, they were furiously engaged in war with each other: So that the Greeks, Egyptians, Syrians and Romans fell into wars within themselves. They captivated, and besieged their own country-men, as ancient stories report But (says he) by the appearing of the holy and most peaceable dostrine of our SA-VIOUR, the error of polytheism was destroyed, and an end was put to the mischiefs of diffentions; which I judge (says he) to be a great demonstration of the divine and unspeakable power of our SAVIOUR.

To what hath been said I may add, that as upon the birth of JESUS, the angel brought the tidings of great joy to all people, and the heavenly host praised God, and said, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will towards men; so did JESUS leave his peace with his followers upon his leaving the world. Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: Not as the world giveth, give I unto you. And as he lest his peace to his followers; so do they enjoy it. All that are truly such, do live in peace and love it: And whatever disturbances they meet with from abroad, they are at peace among themselves: They have \* peace with God, and with each other, and are possessed with an inward peace,

which passeth all understanding.

IV. Fourthly, I PROCEED to shew, what ground we have to hope, that there will come a time, when the predictions of the peaceable days of the MESSIAS will be farther fulfilled. But before I proceed, I shall premise.

(1.) THAT I do not lay the stress of the whole cause between the Christians and Jews upon this ground of a farther completion of the prophecies above named. We have ground enough to believe, that Jesus is the Christ, without it. For as the Jews had sufficient ground to believe Moses, as a prophet sent by God, before his prediction of the Jews dispersion came to pass; so have we to believe Jesus, supposing some promises relating to the more peaceable state of the church not yet made good. And therefore I do not urge this matter, as that whereon the stress of the question lies.

£ Apolog. pro Christ. L. 2. Prapar. L. 1. c. 4. Luke ii, 10, 14. John xiv. 27. Rom. v. 1. E. 2 (2.) I DO

(2.) I no not therefore think my felf obliged operosely to treat of this argument: For besides that the main of the cause doth not depend upon it, this would be too great a digression in this place: For this argument alone would take up a volume. Besides, there are many Christians, that have done it already; and others, I hope, are pursuing the same excellent de-

fign.

(3.) That, notwithstanding what hath been said, the shewing, that we have ground to hope for a more peaceable and prosperous state of the church, will be of good use in this controversie between us and the Jews. For as such a state, when it happens, will be of use to silence the Jews, and take from them the occasion of their upbraiding us with our wars and dissentions; so will the good ground of this belief very much abate the force of their pretensions against our religion upon that account. And whatever effect it may have upon the Jews, it will be of good use to those weak Christians, who are at present greatly offended at the sad and deformed condition of the church of Christ.

UPON these considerations, it is fit something should be said of this

matter; though I am not oblig'd to enlarge upon it.

IT is highly probable, that these predictions will be farther fulfilled;

if it be duly considered,

1. What we read to this purpose in the ancient prophets. Great things indeed are foretold of the peaceable days of the MESSIAS, which may farther be fulfilled. 'Tis foretold of the days of the Messias, That they shall y not learn war any more; that they shall not hurt nor destroy. The MESSIAS is not only called the 2 prince of peace; but it follows, of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end. b There will come a time not only when judgment shall dwell in the wilderness, &c. But when the work of righteousness shall be peace, and the effect of righteousness, quietness and assurance for ever; when the people of God shall dwell in a peaceable habitation, and in sure dwellings, and in quiet resting places. God hath said; c I will rejoyce in Jerusalem, and joy in my people, and the voice of weeping shall be no more heard in her. d The wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like a bullock, and dust shall be the serpent's meat. Again, c I will extend peace to her like a river. Great indeed are God's promises made to his church. That f he will be her everlasting light, and that the days of her mourning shall be ended; that she shall be no more troubled with a pricking bryer, or grieving thorn; and be h no more a prey. These are indeed glorious promises: Such as speak the great peace and security of God's people. They were never made good to the fewish people: They were in great troubles, both from the Babylonians, and after their captivity among them: They were at last a prey to the Roman power, and continue in exile ever fince. These promises then are still to be made good, according to the Jewish principles. Supposing then these promises were made to the Jewish church (which is by no means to be granted exclusively to the Christian) yet were they never fulfilled to that people, to whom they are supposed to be made. And yet their not being sulfilled will not be allowed to be any objection against the truth of the Jewish religion. And if

 J Ia. xi. 4.
 Ia. xi. 9.
 Ia. ix. 6, 7.
 Ia. xxxii. 16, 17, 18.
 Ia. kx. 19.

 Ia. lxv. 29.
 Ia. lxv. 12.
 Ezek. xxxii. 24.
 Ezek. xxxii. 24.
 Ezek. xxxii. 22.

it be not, why should it be any objection against Christianity, supposing them to belong to the days of the Messias? In a word these promises belong to the days of the Messias, or they do not. If they do not, they ought not to be brought as an argument (as they are) to prove, that Jesus is not the Christ. And if they do, they only afford a sufficient ground to believe, that they will be farther sulfilled.

2. We have reason to believe, that the Christian religion will yet make a greater progress in the world; and consequently that the promises of the peaceable days of the Messias will be farther fulfilled. For, as I have intimated before, this abundance of peace must be understood as the consequence of true Christianity, and that 'twill obtain in proportion to the progress of sincere Christianity in the world. And though Christianity (all things considered) did mightily prevail in the world, yet we do allow, that we have good cause to hope, that it will farther prevail; and when

ever it doth, peace and other bleffings will attend upon it.

We have ground to believe, that the Christian doctrine will prevail more upon the world. God hath promised to give unto the Messias, the heathen for his inheritance, and the uttermost ends of the earth for his possession. It is expressly said, he shall have dominion from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth: Tea all kings shall fall down before him, all nations shall serve him, all nations shall sall him blessed. We read in the prophet Daniel of one like the son of man coming, with the clouds of heaven, to the ancient of days: And there was given him dominion and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations and languages should serve him. I will not multiply places to this purpose: Though these predictions have in great measure been suffilled; yet we do easily yield, that they will be farther suffilled before the end of the world. And its enough to our purpose, that they be suffilled in any part of the days of the Messias.

3. We have also ground to believe, that these glorious things were in a great measure to come to pass, not in the first times of the *Christian* church, but after that desection and apostacy of *Christians*, which the holy writers do foretell; that is, after the church should emerge out of that corrupt

state, into which she would fall.

FOR that the church of CHRIST would lapse into a very great apostacy from fincere and primitive Christianity, we that are Christians cannot And indeed the main of the Jew's objections against Christianity lie not so much against the religion, as delivered by Jesus and his followers, but as it is taught and represented to them during this great apostacy, by those whose had corrupted it of the Roman church. And therefore when Abravenel m interprets the little horn in Daniel, and the mouth that speaks great things, of the bishop of Rome and his adherents, we have no dispute with him upon the main matter: We understand it the fame way, with this difference only, that he understands the place of Rome as Christian, and we of Rome as apostatized from primitive Christianity. He never faw any Christianity, but what he faw in that communion: And 'tis not much to be wonder'd, that he should therefore speak hardly of it. Twas in the time of the great apostacy, in which that Jew lived and died. But as we Christians have clear evidence, that a defection from the faith was foretold; so we have ground to hope, that the church

Pfal. ii. 8. R Pfal. lxxii. 8, 11, 17. L Dan. vii. 14. Abravenel in Dan. vii.

of Christ will recover and get out of that wretched estate; and that then the glorious things, predicted of the days of the MESSIAS, will be farther fulfilled. We do not want ground for this hope from the old Testament. The kingdom of the Messias is predicted by Daniel, in his interpretation of Nebuchadnezzer's dream. The n ftone cut out without hands doth certainly denote the first planting of CHRIST's kingdom This was done indeed not only under the fourth kingdom or Roman monarchy; but in the time of their first emperors. This was the primitive time of this kingdom: Now was Christianity first planted in the world, and Christ's kingdom but set up. This was a fair beginning indeed; but a great defection was to happen, and did fall out, and this kingdom was to be recovered and advanced: Thus we read, in the days of these kings, (that is, of the ten kings into which the Roman empire was in after times to be divided, v. 41. those toes of the feet, v. 42.) Shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed. That is, God shall again restore and advance the kingdom of the MESSIAS, which before had been brought low through the defection of Christians; and this kingdom thus restored shall never be destroyed. So far shall it be from being destroyed, that it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms. We have in another vision of Daniel a preprefentation of the four great monarchies under the character of four beatts: The fourth whereof was that of the Romans; and that under the character of a beast dreadful, and terrible, and strong exceedingly, and diverse from the foregoing: And it is faid to have ten horns, i. e. ten kings (v. 24.) Among or after these there came up a little horn; it had eyes like a man, and a mouth speaking great things, (v. 8.) I do readily grant, that this is to be understood of the apostatized church of Rome. The character given of it (v. 25.) suits well with this interpretation: But that which is to be considered to my present purpose is, that upon the destruction of this horn, the Son of man, or the MESSIAS, is restored to his kingdom: There was given him dominion and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations and languages shall serve him. His dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed. Upon the judgment pass'd, and the execution of the sentence upon this little horn, The kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven shall be given to the people of the saints of the most high. And whereas 'tis said among the Jews, 1 that after the destruction of Rome comes the MESSIAS: We shall not deny a convenient sense of it. We do hope, that when the power of Rome as anti-christian is destroyed, then the kingdom of the MESSIAS will be exalted, and his holy religion greatly spread and be advanced in the world\*.

Much more might be faid in this matter to convince Christians of the ground which we have for this hope, both from the new Testament, and the belief of the ancient Christians: But to represent these things would be too great a digression in this place, and not so agreeable to the end of this discourse.

V. I SHALL

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>a</sup> Dan, ii. 34. ° Ver. 44. P Dan. vii. 4 Vet. 14. r Ver. 27.

in Dan. fol. 4. p. 2. col. 2.

\* As a just discourse on these promises would make a volume; so I shall crave leave to add some observations, for the amusement of the reader, leaving him at liberty to believe, examine, or reject them, as he shall think proper, or suspend his opinion, until time shall discover them.

The

The glorious time of the church's peace, mentioned throughout the whole prophet Isaiah, is limited (chap. lx. 20.) to the final end of all her outward afflictions, when the Lord hall be her everlasting light, and the days of her mourning shall be ended. And this is explained by St. John (Rev. xi. 3, 7.) to be at the fall of the Popish Antichrist; when the taithful witnesses of God hall have sinished their tessimony having been a thousand two hundred and threescore days cloathed with sackcloth. For then, (ver. 15.) The kingdoms of this European world, shall become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall be received from the final propher for ever and ever.

The prophet Ezskiel, in his six and thirty first chapters, foretells the siege and taking of Jerusalem, the captivity of the Jews, and the desolation of the Israelites, together with their gracious return, and God having mercy on them, and punishing their enemies. Upon this (chap. xxxvi. 25.) he foretells the great blessings of Christ's kingdom. In the 37th chapter, he views the dispersed state of the Jows, and compares it to dry bones, and prophesses their being reunited, and restored to their own land and professing the Christian religion there. In the 38th and 39th chapters, he speaks of the sury and malice of Gog and Magog, (by which our best commentators both here, and in the Revelations, mean the Turks) against the Jews, upon their settlement in this country, and so n's judgments upon them, by destroying their armies, and disappointing all their designs, and fixing the Jews to dwell there in safety. In his nine last chapters, he gives us a most glorious description of the church, under the similitude of a magnificent temple, far surpassing all, which was ever seen in the world; and he places the tribes parallel to each other, like the several climates, and accordingly he makes it represent a map of the universe. So that according to Exekiel, this glorious state is not to happen, 'till the conversion of the Jews, and the destruction of the Turkish Empire. In the forty seventh chapter, he shews us the four different successes of the preaching of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the pure waters which issued forth from the sanctuary. The first publication of the gospel, which began with the preaching of Lusher, and brought on the reformation, is described (ver. 3.) as waters up to the ancles. And of this St. John speaks. (Rev. xiv. 6, 7.) I saw another angel sty in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people. Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him, for the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him, that made the heaven, and the earth, and the sea, and the sountains of waters. The second increase of these waters (ver. 4.) were up to the knees. This will be at the fall of the Papal Antichrist, when the true Christian religion shall be propagated in all Europe. The third increase of the waters (ver. 4.) will be up to the loins, when the Jews shall be all converted to the Christian faith. And the fourth increase of the waters, (ver. 5.) will be waters to swim in, and a river that cannot be passed over, when the Turkish Empire shall be destroyed, and the destruction thereof shall make way for the propagation of the gospel throughout all the world. The prophet Daniel takes in the history of the world, as under the four monarchies, viz. the Assyrian, Persian, Gracian, and Roman. These he compares to beasts of prey, viz., a Lion, a Bear, a Leo-So that according to Ezekiel, this glorious state is not to happen, 'till the conversion of the Jews, and the

rian, Persian, Gracian, and Roman. These he compares to beasts of prey, viz. a Lion, a Bear, a Leopard, a Ram, and a He goat, and the like. He arms them with horns, and makes them fight, with each other; so that, during their continuance, this peaceable time is not to be expected. However, he is more particular in fixing the times of the increase of gospel, (chap. i. 41.) He saith, that, as the feet are divided into ten toes; so the Roman Empire shall be divided into ten kingdoms. Thus it happened to be about the year

particular in fixing the times of the increale of golpel, (chap. 1. 41.) He faith, that, as the feet are divided into ten toes; fo the Roman Empire shall be divided into ten kingdoms. Thus it happened to be about the year 455. Thus it continued to be in several ages, and thus it is at this time. Accordingly he tells us, (chap. ii. 44.) that the sirft motion of the waters, the preaching of the gospel by Luther, and the beginning of Christ T's kingdom thereby, should be during this Epocha. And in the days of these kings, shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed, and the kingdom shall not be left to other people; but it shall break in pieces, and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever. After this, he tells us the miseries, which shall happen to the church of God, from the Papal Antichrist, (chap. vii. 23.) &cc.

The fourth beast, or the Roman Empire, shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be divers from all kingdoms, as governing chiefly by a consulary power, and is shall be different should earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces. And the ten horns out of this kingdom, are ten kings that shall arise, and another the Pope of Rome shall rise up after them, and he shall be different from the first, exercising a spiritual authority, and not only a temporal, and he shall subdue three kings, viz. those that were near to his dominions in Italy. And he shall speak great words against the most high, and shall wear out the saints of the most high, and think to change times, and laws, and they shall be given into his hand. But at last the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume, and to destrey it, unto the end. And the kingdom, and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom, shall be given into his hand. But at last the most high, whose kingdom is an everlassing kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him. And therefore according to the prophet Daniel, this glorious and peaceable time of the reign of the Mussin

dence of God hall carry her through all. As that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince, which standeth for the children of thy people; and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation, even to that same time: And at that time, thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be sound written in the book. To fix the time, when those things shall happen, a question is asked (ver. 6.) How long shall it be to the end of these wonders? And the answer is returned, (ver. 7.) that it shall be for a time, and times, and an half. These are the express words of St. John, (Rev. xii. 14.) for the time of the duration of Antichrist at Rome; and they expressly end, when Michael and his angels overcome the dragon, and his angels. (ver. 7.) This Epocha is sometimes called 1260 days, as (Rev. xii. 6.) and (Rev. xi. 3.) and some times a mouth of the same much shall be some much to the same much shall be same much to the words. times 42 months, (Rev. xi. 2.) and still consist of the same number. For 42 months being multiplied by thirty, the days of a month, according to that computation, make 1260 days. So also the Chaldean time, or 360 days, and two times, or 720 days, and half a time, or 180 days, added together, makes the same number, and end both according to Daniel, and St. John, at the destruction of the Papal Antichrift, when the second publication of the gospel comes on, and the waters of the prophet Excited are up to the knees.

The third increase of the gospel, when the waters will be up to the loins, is mentioned by Daniel, (chap. xii. 11.) to be at the end of 1290 days, that is thirty days, or rather years, after the former, which

brings on the conversion of the Jews.

The fourth increase of the gospel, when the waters will be waters to swim in, is mentioned by Daniel (chap. xii. 12.) in these words, Blessed is he that waiteth, and cometh, to the thousand three hundred and five and thirty days. This is 75 years after the fall of the Papal Antichrist, or 45 years after the conversion of the Jews. It brings on the sall of the Turkish Empire, and makes way for the propagation of

version of the Jews. It brings on the sall of the Turkish Empire, and makes way for the propagation of the gospel throughout the world.

The prophet Jeel mentions the sour monarchies, (ver. 4.) under the similitude of sour devouring infects, viz. the palmer worm, the locust, the canker worm, and the caterpillar. After this (chap. iii. 9. &c.) he speaks of violent wars, and Go D making himself known by the effect of them; and then follows the blessing upon the church, (ver. 17, 18, &c.) so that it is not to take place, until after the four monarchies, and the slaughter and commotions, which shall happen at the sall of the Papal Antichrist.

But to proceed to the new Testament, (Rev. xi. 1.) There was given to St. John a reed like unto a rod, and the angel slood saying, Rise and measure the temple of GoD, and the alsar, and them that worship therein. He was, from what he then saw and heard, to take an exact account of the church of GoD, and of those remarkable Epocha's, through which it was to pass, and if he took but due pains, he might expect

He was, from what he then saw and heard, to take an exact account of the church of God, and of those remarkable Epocha's, through which it was to pass, and if he took but due pains, he might expect to find, in this chapter, something that might gratise his curiosity. (ver. 2.) The outward court is given to the Gentiles, to the Antichristian syranny of the see of Rome, and the holy cities, or church of God, shall they tread under soot, forty and two months. (ver. 3.) And power shall be given to God's two witnesses, the Albigenses in Spain, and the Waldenses in Savoy, and they shall prophesy against the corruptions of the Papal Antichrist, one thousand two hundred and threescore days, cloathed in sackcloth, in a miserable and poor condition. (ver. 7.) And when they shall have sinished their restimony, when each of them shall be to say to God, as our Saviour add (to whose actions the past ages of this chapter do principally allude) John xvii. A. I have gloristed thee on the earth, I have sinished the work, which thou hast given me so do, the beast, that assended out of the bottomless pit, shall make war against them, and overcome them, and kill them. First, The small remains of the Albigenses, being worried out, by the continual onsets of their neghbours, the French, and Spaniards, were forced to quit their habitations, and retire to the Vaudois. Upon their being thus united, the Duke of Savoy, the sovereign of these Vaudois, by an edict dated their neghbours, the French, and Spaniards, were forced to quit their habitations, and retire to the Vaudois. Upon their being thus united, the Duke of Savoy, the sovereign of these Vaudois, by an edict dated Jan. 31. 168 N. S. forbad the exercise of their religion, on pain of death, and therein ordered their churches to be demolished, and their ministers to be banished. The edict for their banshiment was dat at Turin. April 9. enrolled the 10th, and published in the Vallies the 11th, and an army sent against them of Savoy, and French troops, who attack'd them on the 22d of the same month, and totally subdued them, in the following month of May, when many of these poor people were killed, and barbarously slaughtered; great numbers cast into prison, and inhumanly used there; and the miserable remainders of them were at length released out of prison, and permitted to depart about the beginning of December, so that the total dissipation of them was not compleated, 'till that time, or the beginning of December, 1686.

(Ver. 8.) And their dead bodies shall lie in the streets of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified. The places, from whence they are now banished, are not two, as they were formerly, but only one, in Italy, and they are now banished, are not two, as they were formerly, but only one, in Italy, and they are now banished, which is spiritually called Sodom, and Egypt, because of its detestable abominations and superstitions, where also our Lord was crucified, by bringing in such doctrines, as are derogatory to his honour and offices, and setting up another to act, as in his stead.

(Ver. 9.) And they of the people, and kindreds, and tongues, and nations, shall see their dead bodies.

LORD was crucified, by bringing in such doctrines, as are derogatory to his honour and offices, and setting up another to act, as in his stead.

(Ver. 9.) And they of the peeple, and kindreds, and tongues, and nations, shall see their dead bodies three days, and an half, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graves. In the mean time these poor Vaudois were very kindly received, and succour'd by the Protestant states, and kingdoms, particularly those of England, Holland, Brandenburgh, Geneva, and Switzerland, and so preserved from ruin.

(Ver. 10.) And they that dwell upon the earth, all those of the church of Rome, who were their neighbours, shall shew their approbation of this expulsion of the Vaudois. For they shall rejoyes over them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another, because these two prophets, by their doctrines, termented these of the church of Rome, that dwell on the earth.

(Ver. 11.) And after three days and an half, the spirit of life, from Go D, entered into them, and they should upon their feet. Toward the latter end of the year 1689, about three years and an half, after the publication of the edict before mentioned in the Vallies, or the beginning of its execution, they pass'd the lake of Geneva secretly; and entring Savey, with their swords in their hands, they recovered their ancient possession, and by the month of April, A.D. 1690, established themselves in it, notwithstanding the opposition of the troops of France and Savey, of whom they, who were comparatively but a sew, slew great numbers with inconsiderable loss, 'till the Duke himself, who had now left the French interest, see all the rest of them, and re-established them by his league, and an edict signed June 4. 1690, just three years and an half after their total disspation, and added also a liberty to the French interest, recalled the rest of them, and re-established them by his league, and can be dissipated. 1690, just three years and an half after their total dissipation, and added also a liberty to the

Ver. 13.

Ver. 13. And at the same hour (as a day makes a year; so an hour must make the 24th part of a year, or 15 days, in which time there will be or) there was a great earthquake, (a violent commotion throughout all Europe) and the tenth part of the city sell (one of the principal kingdoms, into which the Romish Empire was divided, is conquer'd, and the crown translated into another samily, which also makes an immediate way for an intire reformation from Popery, to the true Christian Religion throughout that whole kingdom) and in the earthquake were slain of men, (in Greek names of men) seven thousand. The smallest name of number, belonging to men, is a Centurion, or captain of an hundred, and supposing that to be meant, then seven thousand names of men will imply, that, in about a fortnight's time, may be slain thoughout all Europe, in battles, and massacres, about seven hundred thousand men) and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven. This dismal Crisis brings all the kingdoms of Europe into danger, and makes them all so sensible of their deliverance, that an intire reformation from Popery soon sollows among them, and occasions those triumphant songs of praise in the

the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven. This difinal Crisis brings all the kingdoms of Europe into danger, and makes them all so sensible of their deliverance, that an intire reformation from Popery soon sollows among them, and occasions those triumphant songs of praise in the church of God, which we read in the remaining part of the same chapter.

And now it is probable, that the reader will be willing to inquire, after what method it will please God to execute his judgments on the enemies of his church, until he hath utterly destroyed them, and settled her in that peace, which hath been so often foretold by the prophets, and so much expected by others. For satisfaction to which inquiry the reader is desired to turn to the 16th chapter of the Revelations, which, as soon as the grand Epocha is over, pours out the wrath of God on the enemies of his church, until they are destroyed. For the understanding whereof this observation is necessary. That the seven trumpets have a mighty correspondence with the seven vials, and they are to be look don as some way or other answerable to one another all along, and so capable to afford light to each other perpetually: So that by inquiring, how one hath been sulfilled, we may also observe, how the other shall be sulfilled in its due time. Thus (Rev. viii. 7.) The sirst angel sounded, and it affected the earth, the main continent, and inland countries of Germany, by the terrible inundation of the Goths. A. D. 376. So (Rev. xvi. 2.) The sirst angel went and poured out his vial upon the earth, upon the main continent of Germany, and there sell a grievous and a noisom fore upon the men, which had the mark of the least, and upon them which wershipped his image. Germany is first reformed from Popery, not with much, or perhaps, not with any effusion of blood, but with the discovery of the vile and abominable practices of the sect of Rome, and their adherents.

(Rev. viii. 8.) The second angel sounded, and it affected the servers and the sountains of vuster

are many battles, and much blood shed on that occasion, with a revolution of that government; and thus their destroying of the Albigenses is revenged. (Rev. x. 3, 4, 5.)

(Rev. viii. 10.) The third angel sounded, and it affected the rivers and the sountains of water. This brings in the Huns into Lombardy; and Italy. A. D. 452. So (Rev. xvi. 4, 5, 6, 7.) And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers, and sountains of waters, and they became blood. And I beheld the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O LORD, which art, and wast, and shall be; because thou hast judged thus. For they have shed the blood of thy saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink; for they are worthy. And I heard another out of the altar, saying, Even so LORD GOD almighty, true and righteous are thy judgments. The reformation proceeds into Lombardy, Savey, and Italy, but with great effusion of blood, and probably with revolutions in those parts. (Rev. xi. 3, 4, 5.)

(Rev. viii. 12.) The sourch angel sounded, and it darken'd the sun, moon, and stars, it extinguished the Western Emperor, and his subordinate governors, thereby putting an intire end to the remainders of the Roman Casars. A. D. 476. (Rev. xvi. 8, 9.) And the sourch angel poured out his vial upon the sun, and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire, &c. The towns in Italy, belonging to the Pope's dominions, are now burnt with fire, and particularly Rome it self is levelled with the ground. And soon after this all Europe seels the blessed effects of a thorough reformation in religion, and a general, happy and settled peace, both in church and state.

dominions, are now burnt with fire, and particularly Rome it sell is levelled with the ground. And soon after this all Europe feels the blessed effects of a thorough reformation in religion, and a general, happy and settled peace, both in church and state.

(Rev. ix. 1. to 13.) The sisth angel sounded, and brings a most poisonous sort of locusts, which darken'd the air, ont of the bottomless pit, viz, the Saracens out of Asia, who, about the year 726. began to be a torment to Europe; and afterwards sounded the Mahometan Empire, with its detestable religion, in Asia. (Rev. xvi. 10.) And the sisth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast, this kingdom of Mahometan Ansichrist, plaguing them with great plagues; so that their kingdom was sull of darkness, and shey gnawed their tongues for pain. And blashemed the God of heaven, because of their pains and their fores, and repented not of their deeds. The only way of computing the time, when this shall happen, must be by the analogy between the trumpets and the vials, thus: As 1423 years, the distance between the first and seventh trumpet; is to 350 years, between the first and sisth trumpet; so is 75 years, the distance between the first and sound segment the segment places.

(Rev. ix. 13.) The sixth angel sounds, and lets loofe the four angels, or kingdoms, which are bound by the great river Euphrates, and so lets loofe the Ottoman Empire, Anno 1301, to be a torment to Europe, until the end of the last century. (Rev. xvi. 12, 13, 14, 15; 16.) The sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates, the heart of the Turkish Empire, and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east may be prepared, that is, the way for the conversion of all these potentates to Christianity. Three detestable heresies arise in Turkey, which divides them very much, and they all prepare for battle against the Sews, to root them out of the land of Canaan. The only way also of computing the time, when this shall happen, must be by the analogy be 1730; so the fixth may begin about the year 1778.

Digitized by Google

(Rev. xi. 12, 13, 14, 15. to the end.) The feventh angel founds, which brings the grand catastrophe of the Popish Antichrist, so that it falls with terrible commotions, battles, convulsions of nations, with bombarding of conversions of the property of th barding of towns, in most parts of Asia. A. D. 1729. (Rev. xvi. 17. to the end.) The seventh angel pours out his vial, which is attended with the same efforts, but in a more terrible manner, throughout all Asia, and brings on the utter tall of the Turkish Empire, or dividing it into six parts. For so the word (Ezek. xxxviii, 2.) may be well translated. This the prophet (Daniel xii. 12.) fixeth to the year 1335, (Ezek. xxxviii. 2.) may be well translated. This the prophet (Daniel xii. 12.) fixeth to the year 1335, or 75 years, after 1260. the fall of Popery. A. D. 1729, viz. to the year 1804. After which the prophet (Ezekiel xxxix. 12, 13, 14.) allows feven months, or 210 years, for the cleanfing of all the world, from all idolatry, superstition, and false ways of worship, which sixeth the time for an universal love, peace, and unity, to be compleated under the reign of the Messias, in the year of the world, 2014, and so to continue for a thousand years, or perhaps much longer.

To sum up all in one view, I shall present the reader, with a short Chronological table of these affairs, where he may observe, that (2 Pet. iii. 8.) as with the Lord, one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years but as one day. So in the creation, the six days of labour seem to point out six thousand years of trouble and sorrow to the church of God; but the seventh day, being a sabbath of rest, foreshows the glorious rest and peace. Which the prophets in most ages have foretold, and will

rest, foreshows the glorious rest and peace, which the prophets in most ages have foretold, and will then in all probability be sully accomplished, to the infinite glory of God, and the honour of

our dear REDEEMER.

Anno Mundi. 1. The world is created.

Anno Mundi. 2009. At the end of the second Millennium, Abraham the father of the faithful is born.

Anno 3001. At the end of the third Millennium. The temple of Solomon is finished, and all the legal fervices settled.

Anno 4004. At the end of the fourth Afflennium. CHRIST is born of the feed of Abraham.

Anno Chrissi. 1000. At the end of the fifth Millennium. All Europe is inflaved by the Popish Antichrist, and the rest of the world is inslaved by the Mahametan Superfition.

Anno Christi. 1516. The first publication of the gospel. (Daniel ii. 35, 44. Ezek. xlvii. 1, 23. Rev. xiv.
6, 7. The waters come forth from the sanctuary up to the ancles. Luther begins the reformation.

Anno 1686. The Waldenses and the Albigenses are banished from Savey, and relieved by the protestant princes. (Rev. xi. 3, 4, 7, 8, 9, 10.)

Anno 1690. At the end of three years, and six months, they are recalled by a publick edict. (Rev. xi.
11.) And as at the end of 39 full days, after our Saviour's resurrection, he ascended into heaven,
so at the end of 30 years compleat. viz.

fo at the end of 39 years compleat, viz.

Anno 1729. The Waldenses and Albigenses are said to ascend up into heaven. (Rev. xi. 12.) So that now the second increase of the gospel begins; Daniel's time and times, and half a time, (chap. xii. 6, 7.) are now accomplished; also St. Hohn's time and times, and half a time. (Rev. xiii. 14.) or 42 months, (Rev. xi. 2.) or 1260 days, (Rev. xi. 3.) and (Rev. xii. 6.) now end. The waters of the gospel are up to the knees. (Ezek. xivii. 4.) This year there are terrible battles. (Rev. xiii. 6, 7, 8, 9, 10.) with much essentially follows, which is the fatal blow to the Antichristian Hierarchy. (Rev. xi. 12. to the end.) chy. (Rev. xi. 12. to the end.)

Anne 1730. The first vial is poured out upon the enemies of the church of Go D. (Rev. xvi. 1, 2.)

Germany is reformed, not with much effusion of blood, but by a vile discovery of the Remish prac-

tices.

Anno 1731. The second vial is poured out. (Rev. xvi. 3.) Spain is reformed, with much effusion of blood, and probably by a revolution in that kingdom. (Rev. x. 3, 4, 5.)

Anno 1732. The third vial is poured out. (Rev. xvi. 4, 5, 6, 7.) Savoy and the adjacent parts of Italy are reformed, with much effusion of blood, and probably by a revolution in those kingdoms. (Rev.

Anno 1733. The fourth vial is poured out. (Rev. xvi. 8, 9.) An utter end is put to the Papal Hierarchy, of all forts. Many towns in Italy are burnt with fire, and Rome herself is levelled with the ground.

Anno 1734. All the the potentates in Europe throw off the Popish yoke, (Rev. xvii. 15, 16, 17, 18.)

Anno 1735. Now Europe begins to enjoy a firm and a general peace; being the happy consequence of the destruction of Antichrist, and the settling the kingdom of Chais in these parts.

Anno 1748. The fifth vial is poured out. (Rev. xvi. 10, 11.) The Turkish Empire is now afflicted with many and great calamities.

many and great calamities.

Anno 1759. Daniel's 1290 days (chap. xii. 11.) now end. The third encrease of the gospel, in which the waters are up to the loyns, (Ezek. xlvii. 4.) The idolatry of the church of Rome being now removed, (which was the great stumbling block, that prejudiced others against Christianity) the Jews are now converted, and assisted by the European powers, recover the land of Canaan from the Turks, and are settled there. See these Prophecies at large. (Gen. xvii. 1,—8. Deut. xxx. 1,—10. Isai. iv. 2. Isai. vi. 13. Isai. xi. 11,—16. Isai. xii. throughout. Isai. xxiv. 23. Isai. xxv. 1,—12. Isai. xxvii. 6, 12, 13. Isai. xl. 9, 10. 11. Isai. xliii. 1,—7. Isai. xlv. 17. Isai. xlix. 8,—26. Isai. li. 1,—11, and 22. Isai. lii. 1, 2, 3, 7. Isai. lx. 1,—9. Isai. kiii. 7,—19. Isai. lxv. 8, 9, 10. Isai. lxvi. 8, 20,—14, 19, 20. Jer. iii. 12,—25. Jer. xxxiii. 3,—8. Jer. xxx. 1,—22. Jer. xxxii. 1,—17, 21, 23, 24, 27, 38, 36, 37. Jer. xxxiii. 1,—7, 19,—26. Jer. xlvi. 27, 28. Ezek. xx. 33,—44. Ezek. xxxiii. 24, 25, 26. Ezek. xxxiv. 20,—31. Ezek. xxxvi. 1,—38. Ezek. xxxvii. 1,—23. Ezek. xxxiii. 24, 25, 26. Ezek. xxxiiv. 20,—31. Ezek. xxxvi. 1,—38. Ezek. xxxviii. 1,—23. Ezek. xxxiii. 24, 25, 26. Ezek. xxxiiv. 20,—31. Ezek. xxxvi. 1,—38. Ezek. xxxviii. 1,—27. Hos. iii. 5. Joel. iii. 21,—32. Zech. viii. 7,—15, and Zech. x. 5,—12.)

Anno 1768. The Jews, being now settled in the land of Canaan, place the several tribes in their order; they rebuild the city of Jerusalem, and a famous church for the true worship of God. See these Prophecies at large. Gen. xlix. 1,—27. Deut. xxxiii. 6,—27. Isai. xxxiii. 20. Isai. liv. 17. Isai. lii. 9. Isai. liv. 11, 12. Isai. lviii, 12. Isai. lviii, 12. Isai. lviii, 13, 14, 18. Ezek. xxxvi. 361 and Ezek. xxxviii. 26, 27, 28. Tobit xiv. 4, 5, 6, 7.)

Tobit xiv. 4, 5, 6, 7.)

Ann

Anno 1778. The fixth vial is poured out upon the Turkish Empire (Rev. xvi. 12, 13, 14, 15, 16.) The Mahometan superfition seems to decline. Three other vile and abominable heresies arise in that empire. They all encourage the Turks to make war with the Jews, and have frequent skirmishes; but the

They all encourage the Turks to make war with the Jews, and have frequent skirmilles; but the Turks always are beaten. See also these Prophecies at large. (Deut. xxxii. 35, -43. Pial. lxxix. 8, -13. Isai. xxxiv. 1, -17. Isai. xli. 11, -16. Isai. xlix. 25, 26. Isai. li. 22, 23. and Jer. xxx. 16, 23, 24.

Anno 1804. The fourth increase of the gospel. Daniel's 1335 years (chap. xii. 12.) now ends. The prophet Exskiel's waters, (chap. 47. 5.) are riten so high that they are waters to swim in. The seventh vial is poured out. (Rev. xvii. 16.) to the end. The Turks bring their whole armies against the Jews, and are most terribly beaten; their empire is torn in pieces, with wars, devastations, and bombarding of towns. It is divided into three kingdoms, (Rev. xvi. 19) and after that into six, (Ezsk. xxxix. 2.) and many kingdoms revolt intirely from them, so that whole power is broken. See these Prophecies at large. (Isai. ii. 1, -4, and 10, -21. Isai. xi. 4. Isai. xxiv. 17, -23. Isai. xxvi. 20, 21. Isai. xxvii. 16. 17. towns. It is divided into three kingdoms, (Rev. xvi. 19) and after that into fix, (Ezek. xxxix. 2.) and many kingdoms revolt intirely from them, so that their whole power is broken. See these Prophecies at large. (Isia, ii. 1,—4, and 10,—21. Isia. xxi. 4. Isia. xxiv. 17,—23. Isia. xxiv. 20, 21. Isia. xxvii. 1, Isia. xxiv. 5, 6, 7, 8. Isia. xxx. 25,—33. Isia. xxi. 8, 9. Isia. xxivii. 13, 14, 15. Isia liv. 15, 16. 17. Isiai. lix. 17, 18, 19. Isiai. lix. 1,—6. Isiai. kvi. 6, 15, 16. Ezek. xxxviii. and xxxix. throughout. Joel. ii. 20. Joel iii. 1,—15. Zech. iii. 8, 19. Zech. xii. 6, 7, 8, 9. Zech. xiv. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 12, 13, 14, 15, and Rev. xx. 7, to the end. Here is now a glorious state of the Jews; as converted to the Christian faith, and professing the true religion, and other countries continually come in to the same profession. See at large. Isiai. 1,—5. Isiai. vx. 3, 4, 5. 6. Isia x. 20, 21, 22, 23. Isia; xi. 6, 7, 8, 9, 10. Isiai. xii. 1,—6. Isiai. xxv. 1,—12. Isia. xxvi. 1,—19. Isia. xxx. 18,—26. Isiai. xxii. throughout. Isiai. xxxiii. throughout. Isiai. xxxviii. throughout. Isiai. xxxviii. throughout. Isiai. xxviii. throughout. Isiai. xxxviii. throughout. Isiai. xxv. 1,—12. Isiai. xii. 3,—11. Isiai. xii. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. Isiai. xv. 17,—25. Isiai. lix. 20, 21. Isiai. lix. 18—22. Isiai. lix. 3,—11. Isiai. lixii. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. Isiai. lixv. 17,—25. Isiai. lixvi. 18, 19, 22, 23. Jer. iii. 16, 17. Jer. iv. 1, 2. Jer. xxxii. 31,—34. Jer. xxxiii. 8, 15, 16. Ezek. xxxii, 60,—63. Ezek. xxxxiv. 23, 24, 30. Ezek. xxxvi. 25, 26, 27. Ezek. xxxxvii. 21, 28. 29. Joel iii. 16,—21. Zeph. iii. 9, 10, 15. Zeph. iii. 10, 11, 12, 13. Zech. xii. 10,—14. Zech. xii. 2. Zech. xiiv. 8, 9, 16,—21. Rom. xi. throughout. Psalm lxxii. throughout. Isiai. xiix. throughout, and Isiai. kx. throughout. And the world are brought to the knowledge, and practice of the true religion, which flourishes, and is encouraged every where: All nations are in peace with each other, and axii. Anno Christi 2014. The sixth Millennium ends. The whole world is

Matth. xxiv. Mark xiii. Luke xvii. 20, &c. and xxi. 5, &c.

V. I SHALL now consider our SAVIOUR'S words, (Math. x. 34.) Think not, that I am come to send peace on earth; I am not come to send peace but a sword. From hence the Jew would infer, that Jesus was not the MESSIAS, that prince of peace, of whose times such glorious things are predicted by the prophets of old. But in answer to this pretence, I offer the following particulars. And

I. THAT we consider the context, and design of the words of Jesus; He fends his apostles to preach, and sends them, as he tells them, as t sheep in the midst of wolves. He lets them know what treatment they must expect, viz. u to be delivered up to the counsels, to be scourged in synagogues, and brought before kings and governors: Moreover, that \* the brother shall deliver the brother, the father the child, and children cause their parents to be put to death. So great a rage will the unbelievers fall into upon the preaching of the Christian doctrine: It will expose the preachers to the hatred of mankind. Jesus arms his followers against these trials, and lets them know, that they will certainly meet with them, if they persevere in the constant profession of the truth. He would not have them flatter themselves with a vain opinion, that they should be able to persuade all men to receive their doctrine: They will find many reject it, and some of their kindred and relations among them, who would thereupon withdraw from them, and treat them hardly. They must not

> \* Matth. x. 16. " Matth. xvii. 18. \* Matth. xxi. 22.

> > therefore

therefore desist, but be stedsast, and know, that he designed not, that his followers should comply with the enemies of his truth: He designed not to set on foot such a wicked and ungodly peace in the world, but rather to renounce and bid desiance to these perverse opposers of the Christian doc-

trine This is the scope of our Saviour's words.

2. That the word fword doth not in this place denote wars or fightings; but division and separation from one another upon account of religion. And this is evident from the following words here, and from a parallel place. For the following words are these, y For I am come (not to animate my followers to blood and slaughter, but) 2 λικάσω, to separate son and sather, &c. one rejecting, and the other receiving my holy doctrine. The parallel place instead of sword hath 2 division. Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, nay, but rather division: b Διαμέρωσμον. There cannot be any concord between light and darkness, between Christ and Belial: The sword, which Christ sends, was not to murder but to part, not to slay but to separate the precious from the vile. If all had received the truth, there would have followed no division: Christ's disword is the word of God, the sword of the spirit, which divides a sunder indeed, but sheds no blood. Christ strent a sword e weeks. Christ's different indeed, but sheds no blood. Christ strent a sword e weeks.

3. That whatever evil follows upon preaching the Christian doctrine, Christ was not the cause of it, nor his doctrine. I have before vindicated Jesus, and his holy religion: 'Tis certain, that all the bad effects and consequences are to be imputed to the wickedness of unbelievers. I our advite ravial etales, and is exciton normela. Jesus is not the author of them, but the wickedness of unbelievers. Whatever occasion Jesus or his holy religion might be of other things, they were not the cause of any evil. 'Tis he that denies or opposeth the truth, that brings the mischief upon himself and others. This will be very plain to him, that will take the pains to consider, what hath been said before in defence of Jesus and his religion. Whatever evils followed upon spreading the Christian doctrine were accidental: And if the world was turn'd upside down, the charge could not justly be brought against the Christian doctrine, or the preachers of it: They were those who opposed it, that caused all the

mischief that happened.

4. Nor do the words of Jesus, I am not come to send peace, but a sword, denote his design and the purpose of his coming, but the event of things. All that can be inferred is the certainty of the thing, or that it will as surely come to pass, as if he had designed it. We are in interpreting such places as those to consider the particular manner of speaking in use among these ancient writers: And we shall by doing so find, that all that the words import is the certain futurity of the thing. Simeon said of Jesus, This Child is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel; and for a sign, which shall be spoken against. Where 'tis evident, that the words denote not the design, but event: And they denote no more than this, when the Greek particle in (which elsewhere denotes the design of the

<sup>7</sup> Matth. x. 35. 2 Separare. V. L. Luke xii. 15. 5 Separationem, V. L. C Bellum missum est bonum, ut rumperetur pax mala, Hieron.
in Heb. iv. 12. Theodor. Heracleot, in Matth, x. 34.

<sup>6</sup> Chrysost. in Matth, x. 34.

<sup>6</sup> Chrysost. in Matth, x. 34.

<sup>7</sup> Luke ii. 34.

6

agent

Digitized by Google

agent, or the final cause) is used. In For judgment (says Jusus) I am come into this world; that they which see not might see, and that they which see might be made blind. In which words is expressed, not the design but event of Chists coming. Again, I The law entred, was not the design of the law's entring, but the event or consequent only. And if where this particle is added, the words import no more than the event, there is less reason, they should import more where it is omitted; and it is omitted in the words of Jesus, (Matth. x. 34.)

VI I WILL now make fome reflections upon the whole, which may

be of use to all of us, who profess Christianity.

1. We see the true method of coming to a right judgment of religion. We are to consider its principles, its tendency, and its motives of credibility; and as it is in its felf, and in its naked purity, not as it is reprefented by partial men, or as 'tis exemplified by the lives of many of the professor of it. This is the fault of the Jews, they judge of Christianity by Christians, of Jesus by his followers, and of the whole cause by a false measure. I must confess, that if I knew no Christianity but what is to be found in some parts of the church of Rome, or did I know no more of it, than as it is represented in some of their books, perhaps it would be the last religion, which I should choose. A man would be tempted to believe, that Jesus was not the prince of peace, when he beholds the fightings and quarrels of his professed fellowers: He would suspect, that this religion is no friend to peace, who looks no farther than to the schisms and contentions of those who profess it. But this is not the way to come at the truth. All that we can infer is, that such contentious and evil men are not Christians; and whatever they profess, that they are not the genuine disciples of JESUS. 'Tis unjust to charge the faults of false people upon the religion or author of it; Especially when the books, where this religion is taught, give us notice of a great defection from primitive Christianity, that should happen in the world.

2. We may judge from what hath been said, whether our religion hath gained its end upon us or not, or whether we have receiv'd the grace of God in vain. Hath it render'd us gentle, of easie access, harmless and of a lamb-like disposition? Hath it siled off the roughness and sierceness of our temper, all cruelty and proneness to rapacity, the wolfish and lion-like disposition, and turn'd us into the innocence and inossensiveness of a lamb or little child? This change it doth make, wherever it prevails in power. And wherever it is professed, and doth not mend our temper and new mould us, we receive it in vain. 'Twas designed to mend our tempers, and to pare away all that supersluity of naughtiness, by which we are render'd less useful and less conversable with our fellow-creatures. Jesus did not strive, nor lift up his voice on high. His doctrine is design'd

to render us peaceable, and oasie to be intreated.

3. We see, what need we have to live at peace with each other, and to preserve unity, as much as may be, in the church of CHRIST. Our quarrels, and unnecessary separations from one another do not only much mischief within the church, but without it too. They tempt the Jew to

h John ix. 39. i Rom. v. 20.

reject

## A DEMONSTRATION

reject the whole religion, and to impute to that, what is only to be charged upon our felves. Good God, awaken us all to a due fense of this matter, and grant, that we may prefer the unity of the church, and the interest of our common Christianity, before our own particularities, and private opinions! Nothing so ill becomes us as strife and debate, quarrels and schiss. Our holy religion puts us upon a vigorous pursuit of peace and unity. For the gaining whereof 'twill be worth our while to part with very much: For by keeping our breaches wide we endanger the whole. 'Tis high time to mind the things that belong to peace; as well as those, by which we may be able to edifie one another.



CHAP.



## CHAP. III.

## The CONTENTS.

A defence of the writers of the new Testament against some other objections of J. Aben Amram. His objection against Matth. xii. 3, 4. answered. An answer to his objection against Luke iv. 25. His objection against the words of Jesus in Mark x. 19. An answer to that objection. An objection against JESUS for destroying the herd of swine, Matth. viii. 32. An answer to The Jew's objections against JESUS for not making good his promise, Matth. xxvi. 32. and against the credibility of the history of his ascension. An answer to these objections. The Jew's objections against the words of JESUS, John xvi. 7. and 13. An answer to those objections. His objections against the evangelists relating our Saviour's keeping the passover just before his death. The Jew pretends, that the relation is inconsoftent and incredible: An answer at large to the Tew's pretences. His objection against the relation of Pilate's washing his hands, answered. An answer to his objection concerning the weight of the Myrrh and Aloes, John xix. 39. An answer to his objection against Matth. xxviii. 18. His objection against John xxi. 25. A defence of that evangelist against the Jew's assaults. The Jew objects against the words of St. Paul. Gal. iii. 10. A defence of St. Paul. He objects against the author of the epistle to the Hebrews, for those words which are found, ch. ix. 19. A defence of that divine author. His objection against the epistle of St. James. An answer to his objection.

FTER I had finished my second part of this book against the Jews, and made it publick, a friend lent me a MS. written by a Jew against the Christian religion, bearing the title of Porta veritatis: The author goes under the name of Jacob Aben Amram. In that MS. I find a great many objections against the writings of the new Testament;

Digitized by Google

and among them some, which had not been considered before, and that required a more particular confideration. And not knowing into what hands that MS. might come, I thought fit to consider those objections in this place, rather than to let them go without any answer at all.

I. THE first objection, which I met with in that author, in that part of his MS. 2 where he treats of this matter ex professo, is against the words of Jesus reported by St. Matthew ch. xii. 3, 4.) Have ye not read what David did, when he was bungry, and they that were with him? How he entred into the house of GoD, and did eat the shew-bread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, &c. The Jew objects, that these words cannot be true, because David was alone; which he attempts to prove from the words of the priest, where this passage is related, Why art thou alone, and no man with thee? (I Sam. xxi. I.)

HE concludes thence, that David fled alone; and that he only eat of the shew-bread: And therefore it ought not to have been said by JESUS, and they that were with him. He concludes, that Jesus and the evangelists were deceived in this matter of fact; but yet he is so courteous as to allow, that perhaps it might so happen by occasion of the words, (1 Sam. xxi. 2.) I have appointed my servants to such and such a place. We need not this courtesie. I shall defend Jesus and the evangelists from the 7ew's charge. And I answer,

I. THAT David did appear alone before the priest, cannot be denied; nor doth Jesus say any thing that contradicts it. He says that he (i. e. David) entred into the house of God. And Doeg, in his accusation, mentions David only. I saw the son of Jesse, says he, (1 Sam. xxii. 9.) And this agrees with what we read, (1 Sam. xxi. 1.)

2. But then it is as evident also, that he had company in this his journey or flight, even from the text of Samuel. He asked for five loaves of bread, or at least what the priest had to spare. The priest tells him, he had no common bread, but that he had hallowed bread; which, indeed, was to be eaten, according to the law, by hallowed persons; at least it was not fit it should be eaten by those, who were under any legal uncleanness: And therefore the priest expresset his caution in those words, If the young men have kept themselves at least from women: (See Exod. xix. 15.) by which it appears, that this bread would be eaten by David, and his companions also. By the young men must be meant David's companions, as appears from his reply; Of a truth (says David) wo-men have been kept from us about these three days since I came out; and the vessels of the young men are holy, &c. By which answer David satisfied the scruple of the priest, who feared lest some of his company might eat of the hallowed bread under some legal defilement. Upon this he gives David the hallowed bread for the use of himself and his company, in their great necessity.

3 HENCE it appears, that the Jew is very impudent in his charge, against Jesus and his evangelists, whereas they have not in any kind mis-reported the history, as it lies in the book of Samuel. He affirms, that David only did eat; but Samuel doth not fay fo. His words imply.

\_\_\_Digitized by\_GOOGIE-

that

Jacob Amram Port. Verit. Artic. III. par. 3. de Laboribus Evangel. Num. 933.

that the holy bread was given to David, not only for his own eating, but for the use of them that were with him (Mark ii. 26.) Indeed, the Jew on this occasion falls upon St. Mark for misnaming this priest, and calling him Abiathar; but b I have elsewhere given an account of that matter.

II. The same author c objects against the words in St. Luke (ch. iv. 25.) In the days of Elias, when the heavens were shut up three years and six months, where Jesus speaks of the time of drought in the days of Elias; whereas that drought did not continue three sull years, as appears from I King. xviii. I. where it is said, that the word of the Lord came to Elijah in the third year. I answer,

THE whole stress of this objection is derived from what is related (1 King. xviii. 1.) And therefore I am obliged very particularly to consider those words; and then it will appear, that Jesus affirms nothing in St. Luke, that is inconsistent with what is related in the book of Kings. I will therefore consider the words, as they lie in the book of Kings.

THE words in the book of Kings are thus translated by the English. And it came to pass after many days, that the word of the LORD came to Elijah in the third year. The words as they lie in the Hebrew are thefe, ויהי ימים רבים ורבר יחוח היה אל אליהו בשנה הטלישית, I must needs join with Grotius, d who thought the words might be thus interpreted. Dies aliquam multi (id est, sex menses) praterierant, ex quo Deus allocutus erat etiam anno tertio; id est, sine anni tertii, postquam pluere desierat, i. c. Many days passed (viz. fixth months) from the time when GOD had spoken to Elias in the third year, i. e. in the end of the third year, after it had ceased to rain: And then the command, which Elias had received at the end of the third year, was to be executed fix months afterwards. This interpretation quite overthrows the Jew's objection. I do declare folemnly, that this interpretation of the words, as they lie in the text, is very agreeable to the text, and to the e use and sense of the Hebrew words and particles in other places. It would be too great a digression to bring in what might be said in confirmation of this interpretation, which yet I shall be ready to do, if required. In the mean while the marginal quotation will furnish the curious reader with store of examples, which will justifie this interpretation. I do appeal to the learned, for the account I have given of the place; nor do I see what the learned Few can object against it. I am sure the words, as they are translated by the English, seem very uncouth and strange.

I VERY well know, that much more might be faid upon this occasion, and to very good purpose also; but I am satisfied, that what hath been said above is sufficient to put the few to silence; nor do I care to amuse the reader with the several ways, which Christians have taken to answer this difficulty. Our Saviour doubtless spake nothing, but what was the received opinion of the Jews at that time: Nor do we find, that the fews contradicted him in this matter.

Digitized by Google

b Part II. chap. 3. paulò post medium. e Id. ibid. n. 994: 4 H. Grot, in Luc. c. iv. ve 25. eV. Noldii Concord, Particul. p. 156. & p. 279.

III. THE same few f objects, what we read (Luke ii. 22, 23, 24.) concerning the purification of the virgin Mary, the presenting of Jesus, and offering a facrifice. He thinks this purification inconsistent with the belief, that the Christians have of the immaculate conception; and that Jesus being miraculously born could not be said to open the womb; nor

confequently was there any need of a facrifice. I answer,

That the legal purifications and facrifices did not always imply a guilt. Men were obliged to obey the divine institutions; and not to have done it would have involved them in guilt. The virgin Mary was a debtor to the law; and our Saviour was made of a woman, and made under the law, (Gal. iv. 4.) And being really a man and born of a woman, might truly be said to open the womb. We believe that Christ was made sin for us (2 Cor. v. 21.) and was fent in the likeness of sinful sless, (Rom. viii. 3.) And agreeably hereunto he obeyed the law, and sulfilled all righteousness (Matth. iii. 15.) He was baptized, though he had no impurity to wash away; and he was circumcised, though he had no superfluity of naughtiness to pare off. And a Jew, of all men, should not object this; for if our Saviour had not complied with the divine institutions, they would not have failed to have objected that against him, and would not have wanted a colour for it.

IV. This & Jew objects against the words of Jesus (Mark x. 19.) A man came to Jesus, and asked him, What he should do that he might inherit eternal life? Jesus replies, Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother. The Jew objects against Jesus, that he did not mention the other precepts mentioned, (Exod. xx. & Deut. v.) which are of greater moment. He thinks, that Jesus ought to have made some general mention of them, and ought not to have subjoined, One thing thou lackess, go thy way, sell what so ever thou hast, and give to the poor. As if nothing else be wanting, when there were a great many precepts (which he had not named) that the man was obliged to obey. Besides, for that one thing, 'tis not necessary; for many have been saved without it, as the Christians do not deny. I answer,

I. THAT JESUS, by naming these precepts only, cannot in justice be supposed to excuse this man from his obligation to the other precepts. Nothing is more common than to put some precepts for the whole. The sear of God is sometimes used for our whole duty. What doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God? Says the propher (Micab vi. 8.) And I hope, that he will not be blamed, that said those words, though there was a great number of other precepts in the law of Moses. But perhaps the stress of the Jew's objection may lie in this, viz. That when the man inquired the way to eternal life, Jesus should mention the precepts of the second table only, and not any of the first, which concern our duty towards God. I therefore answer,

£ Ibid, num 1001. 

E Ibid, num. 1026.

2. THAT

2. THAT JESUS is not blameable upon this account, because he may be justified from the old Testament in this method. Lord, who shall abide in thy tabernacle? And who shall dwell in thy holy hill? (Pfal. xv. 1.) This is a question very like to that of the man in the gospel. David Kimchi h tells us, that by the tabernacle and the holy hill heaven is meant, the state of recompence and bliss to righteous souls. Now the anfwer to this question follows: He that walks righteously or uprightly, he that doth righteousness, that speaks the truth. He that neither injures, backbites, nor reproacheth his neighbour, &c. where we find nothing mentioned but obedience to the fecond table. This doth not exclude the duties of the first table in the Psalmist; nor in the words of Jesus may this be presumed to do it. Thus the prophet Feremy speaks to the Jews, Did not thy father do judgment and justice? He judged the cause of the poor and needy; then it was well with him: Was not this to know me? faith the LORD, (Jer. xxii. 15, 16.) This is so far from excluding the precepts of the first table, that it rather implies and infers them; as appears from those words, Was not this to know me? faith the LORD.

3. WE do not doubt, but rich men have been faved, nor do we believe that it is absolutely and universally necessary, that we should strip our felves of all that we do possess. But we do believe, that we ought to be in a preparation to part with our wealth, when God declares his will, 'Tis necessary that we obey Jesus; that we shall keep it no longer. and whenever the enjoyment of our riches becomes inconsistent with our obedience to the laws of our holy religion, we ought to part with them. JESUS tells the man: One thing thou lackest. And it appeared, from what follows, that here he came short: He was not ready to part with his riches, when JESUS commanded him to do it. If the Jew concludes from this passage, that all Christians are obliged to part with their worldly estates, he concludes too much. 'Tis enough that we do it, as often as Jesus re-

quires it.

V. THE Jew objects against what JESUS did in destroying the herd of swine (Matth. viii. 32.) He says, i no man ought to hurt his neighbour; that it was a great injury to destroy this great herd, which were under a keeper. He adds, that whereas St. Matthew mentions two, that met JESUS, yet St. Mark and St. Luke mention but one (Mark v. 1. Luke

viii. 27.) I answer,

1. 'Tis very well known, that swine's-flesh was prohibited by the law of Moses. It was so far from being allowed for sacrifice, that it was not allowed for food. And how much foever the Romans valued that flesh, (as 'tis certain they did it at a great rate) there was nothing that the Jews, who adhered to their law, more detested. No man received any good from a swine till after its death; but the Jew even then received no advantage by it. They were so far from it, that it was among them detestable, even when alive. A nourisher of swine was one of an ill name; 'Tis in their Talmud k reckoned as an infamy, and reckoned among the crimes of drunkenness and usury. Maimonides reports as 1 a saying of their wise men, Cursed is he that brings up dogs or swine, because they are mis-

h R. D. Kimchi in Pf. xv. mon. Nizke Mammon. c. 5.

! Ibid. num. 1028.

k Talm, Hierof. Shekalim.

1 Mai-

chievous. The same author tells us, that their wife men forbad the bring. ing up of swine in any place; but they did not thus absolutely forbid the bringing up of dogs. But we have an older author than Maimonides, that delivers it as a m canon and settled constitution among the Jews; I mean the author of the Misna. His words are these, אין מגרלין וכוי i. c. They do not bring up small beasts in the land of Israel, &c. They do not bring up cocks in Jerusalem, &c, nor may an Israelite bring up swine in any place, &c. This is the ancient constitution of their wise men, to which the Jews think themselves obliged to pay obedience. It hath been supposed, that the Gentiles might keep this herd of swine, who lived among the Jews; but this is not sufficiently proved: And granting it so to be, yet it must be allowed to be a great hardship upon the Jews, as well as a great fnare also. For the Jews were remarkable among the Gentiles for their detestation of swine's-flesh; and this practice was an ill example to that people, who, out of the defire of lucre, might be tempted to fet up the same trade; and tempted also to tast of the forbidden slesh, out of compliance with the Gentile practice; or to avoid their scoffs on this account; To that it was in truth an act of grace and favour to the Jews to remove from them so dangerous a snare, and so bad an example.

2. I see no cause, why the Jew should charge Jesus with any injustice or injury done: For it doth not appear, that Jesus destroyed this herd of swine. The devils besought Jesus, that he would suffer them to go into the herd of swine; and he did permit them. He suffered them, says St. Luke (ch. viii. 32.) The devils had a natural power to do it of themselves, were they not restrained by a superior power. Jesus did not think sit (and doubtless for great reason) to restrain them. They were the devils, which destroyed the swine, not Jesus. Doth the Jew think Jesus bound to interpose in this matter? The good work was his; He dispossessed the poor man; the devils upon this enter'd into the herd. The man was worth the saving, and Jesus saved him; He did not think sit to concern himself any farther. He relieved the man, and only neglected the swine. He preserved the image of God, but did not think the unclean and forbidden swine worthy of his care. This is all that this mighty

charge amounts unto.

3. 'T is great severity in the Jew upon this occasion to censure our Saviour. The miracles, that Jesus did, were generally so many rescues and reliefs, so many acts of mercy and compassion. Those, which Moses wrought, were many times so many plagues and inslictions: And yet we do not charge Moses upon that account. We do not complain of Elijah for his destroying fifty men at a time; nor against Elishah for his severity to the forty two children: And 'tis very hard, that the Jew should inveigh against Jesus for permitting the devils to destroy the herd of swine. 'Tis true Moses had a divine commission, and the other were true prophets, and we ought not to question them. But then I have proved, that we have as much ground, not to say very much more, to believe the divine mission of Jesus, as the Jews have for the divine mission of Moses, or any other of their prophets.

4. As for what the Jew objects, that St. Matthew mentions two that met Jesus, and St. Mark and St. Luke mention but one, I need not

m Baba kamah c. 7. m, 7.

trouble

trouble my felf about it. For besides that the objection hath no weight in it, a parallel case of this kind hath been considered before, in the n fecond part of this book.

VI. THE same Jew tells us, o that Jesus said to his disciples, a little before his death, that after his refurrection from the dead he would go before them into Galilee (Matth. xxvi. 32.) He promiseth the same after his refurrection (Matth. xxviii. 10.) The same thing is predicted by an angel (Mark xvi. 7.) that it is subjoined, v. 12. that he appeared to two disciples (in Jerusalem the Jew adds to the text; but in St. Mark it is) as they walked, and went into the country. After this he appeared to the eleven, v. 14. (in the same city of Jerusalem adds the Jew) and after his discourse ended he took his last farewell of them, and he ascended into heaven, v. 14. with v. 19. Hence he concludes, that Je sus never appeared to them in Galilee, and that he ascended not from Bethany, or mount Olivet, but from the table, where he did eat with his disciples. He says, that St. Luke doth more clearly bear witness to this in his last chapter, where he fays nothing of Galilee; but on the contrary, all together, viz. that he only appeared in Jerusalem, and v. 50. that he departed from his disciples ascending into heaven. He quotes St. Luke again, Acts i. 12. and says, that there is no mention of Galilee, or of the table. He adds, that St. John (ch. xx.) agrees with St. Mark and St. Luke, that he appeared to his disciples in Jerusalem; but that he dissents from them (ch. xxi.) where he affirms, that he departed from his disciples in Galilee. This he reckons as inconsistent with what is faid of his ascending from mount Olivet in Bethany, and from the table. He adds, that St. Matthew, (ch. xxviii. 16.) affirms, that the disciples went unto a mountain in Galilee, as JESUS had commanded, and that he mentions no appearance in Jerusalem, but that to Mary Magdalen, in which he dissents from the other evangelists. Hence he infers, that the account is inconfistent, and that there is no ground to believe the ascension of Jesus.

ANY man may fee the tendency of this. The Jew would represent Jesus, as one who was false to his word, and the article of his ascension as incredible; and that the evangelists deserve no belief, in that they

speak inconsistently with one another. I answer,

I. I Do grant, that Jesus did promise his disciples, that he would go before them into Galilee, after he should rise from the dead: And yet, if the evangelists had not after this related that he had done it, it would not thence have followed, that Jesus had never done it; nor could this have been inferred from their silence, with any sound reason; nor would the evangelists upon that account have been unworthy of belief: Much less would Jesus have been so, unless the Jew could prove (which he can never do) that Jesus did not meet his disciples in Galilee, as he promised he would. And he must, to prove that, have produced a stronger proof than the bare silence of the evangelists. And yet that is more than he can pretend to. For,

2. This going of Jesus into Galilee is mentioned. St. Matthew fays expresly, Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a a mountain where Jesus had appointed them; and when they saw him

n Chap. 2. in med. 9 1bid. num. 2030.

they

they worshipped him (ch. xxviii. 16, 17.) These words do not only assure us; that the disciples went to Galilee, but also that they met with Jesus there. St. Matthew did not think sit to mention all the other appearances; but mentions this as the most illustrious. It seems to be that appearance, which is mentioned (1 Cor. xv. 6.) St. John relates also this appearance in Galilee, saying, Aster these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples, at the sea of Tiberias, ch. xxi. 1. At the sea of Tiberias, that is, in Galilee, as we learn from John vi. 1. We have in this matter the express testimony of two evangelists; and yet this bold Jew would insinuate to his reader, that Jesus did not appear to his disciples in Galilee, as he had promised. The Jew believes, that Jesus promised to meet his disciples in Galilee; But why doth he believe this? He says the evangelist affirms it, and so it is. But why doth he not believe, that he did meet them there, when yet two evangelists affirm that also? The Jew must pretend, that these two evangelists affirm that also? The Jew must pretend, that these two evangelists affirm that also? The Jew must pretend, that these two evangelists affirm that also? I take that to be his meaning, and therefore I am to shew,

3. That there is no inconfishency in the relation given by the four evangelists: I will not think much to follow the Jew, and examine his pretences in that order, in which he hath laid them before the reader.

And first, I must begin with St. Mark. He relates that Jesus appeared to two disciples (ch. xvi. 12.) not, as the Jew reports it, in Jerusalem; but as they were going into the country: After this he appeared to the eleven as they sat at meat (v. 14) He discourseth with his disciples; and says the Jew, took his last farewell of them, and ascended into heaven. That is, as the Jew would have St. Mark speak, he ascended immediately à mens à ad cœlum, from the table unto heaven: And hence he rashly concludes, that Jesus never appeared to his disciples in Galilee, and that he did not ascend from mount Olivet (in Bethany) as St. Luke relates (ch. xxiv. 50. and Atts i. 12.)

But the Jew makes St. Mark say what he never said, and what is notoriously false likewise, What St. Mark says is this; So then after the LORD had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven (Mark xvi. 19.) He doth not fay, that after he had spoken these things, he was immediately received into heaven, as the Jew would have him say: But that after he had given the precepts and promises, which he had to impart to his disciples, and nothing now remained, but that they should be fealed and confirmed by the Holy Ghost, he was received up into heaven. The words of St. Mark will be better understood, if we compare them with the words of St. Luke (Acts i. 2, 3.) Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he, through the Holy Ghost, had given commandment unto the apostles, whom he had chosen; To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God. So that those words of St. Mark, After the LORD had spoken to them, are not to be restrained to the particulars mentioned (v. 14, 15, 16, 17, 18.) but are to be understood of all the things delivered to them during his forty days stay upon earth. Those words in St. Mark were spoken in the evening of that day, in which he arose from the dead.

Digitized by Google.

But to this purpose (and to put this whole matter out of all doubt) I shall compare what we read in St. John. We find in St. John, ch. xx. v. 19. a parallel place to St. Mark xvi. 14. I cannot see the least shadow to doubt, but that it is perfectly parallel, and I believe all mankind must own it. And yet St. John reports, that after that appearance of Jesus he appeared again to his disciples after eight days, when Thomas was with them, v. 26. And after this appearance he relates the appearance of Jesus in Galilee, ch. xxi. v. 1. in these words, After these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias.

THE Jew afterwards appeals to St. Luke, as the clearer witness in this matter. He says, that St. Luke says nothing of Galilee, imd totum contrarium, nempe in Jerusalem duntaxat comparuisse: They are the Jew's words; he affirms, that St. Luke affirms that Jesus appeared only in Jerusalem. He cites Luke xxiv. 50, and 52. And Asts i. 12. I shall exa-

mine the truth of this affertion.

THAT St. Luke doth not mention the appearance in Galilee, is of no moment in this case, as I have shewed before. 'Tis enough that two

evangelists do mention it.

HE affirms, that St. Luke says, that Jesus appeared only in Jerusalem. But what proof doth he produce for this? The reader might justly have expected a very clear one: For there is no such thing said in the places, which he cites from St. Luke, ch. xxiv. v. 50, and 51, and Acts i. 12. more than that St. Luke is so far from affirming any such thing, that the very contrary may be collected from his words. St. Luke tells us, that Jesus led out his disciples as far as Bethany, and that upon the ascension of Jesus they returned to Jerusalem, from the mount called Olivet, and that they looked stedsastly towards heaven as he went up, and that this place was from Jerusalem a sabbath-day's journey. This doth abundantly resulte the Jew, who pretends, that St. Luke assirms, that Jesus appeared only in Jerusalem.

THE Jew affirms, that St. John doth affert (ch. 21.) quod Jesus posttremâ vice comparuit & discessit ab illis (viz. discipulis) in Galilaa. They are the very words of the Jew; but how far they are from truth, any man will see, that will take the pains to read over the twenty-first chap-

ter of St. John.

As for what he adds of St. Matthew, it needs no answer, if what hath been said before be duly considered. Upon the whole, there is nothing said by the Jew of any weight or moment. I am sorry, that I can truly say, that he hath said any thing that is notoriously salse: But so it is, that his prejudice against Jesus and the evangelists was so great, that it drew him aside, and put him upon objections, which when examined appeared to have no truth, and consequently no weight in them.

VII. This Jew p proceeds to object against Matth. xxvi. 34. This night before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice; compared with other passages in the evangelists. In St. Mark (ch. xxiv. 30.) it is thus, Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. Whether the cock did crow once or twice is doubtful, saith the Jew. For Matth. xxvi. 74. Luke xxii. 60. and John xiii. 38, and xviii. 27. mention but one

? Ibid. num. 1031.

crowing

2

crowing of the cock; but St. Mark xiv. 72. mentions the crowing of the cock a fecond time, as a fignal unto Peter.

This may feem to be a confiderable difficulty, at the first view of these several ways of expression: But when the matter is throughly

weighed, I hope the difficulty will vanish away. I answer,

I. That as to the difficulty occasioned by the words in St. Mark, 'tis certain, that there is a various reading, that removes it intirely, from ch. xiv. 30. For hole is left out in the ancient copy of the university library of Cambridge. Admitting the reading of that very ancient copy, St. Mark doth perfectly agree with St. Matthew, ch. xxvi. 34. And then the Jew's objection falls of it self. But I will not lay hold of this, because the generality of copies read as we do now; and I do not think it reasonable to depart from the reading, which the Jew follows, and which is most common.

2. I WILL therefore consider the importance of the words, as they lie in St. Matthew, upon which the main stress of this controversie depends. This night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice, says JBSUS; Here it is to be considered, what is meant by these words, Before the rock It hath been observed, that the cock crows twice in a night; at midnight, and in the fourth watch or approach of the morning. The latter is more properly called the Gallicinium, or cock-crowing. This is confirmed by the words of our Saviour in St. Mark xiii. 35.—Te know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cockcrowing, or in the morning: Where it is evident, that that is called the cock-crowing, which doth immediately precede the morning, and which fucceeds the midnight. Our SAVIOUR in those words explains these abundantly. For though the cock was wont to crow at midnight; yet properly speaking, that is the cockcrowing, which is the fore-runner of the morning; this being the more noble and welcome crowing, which precedes and ushers in the dawning of the day. And when the cock-crowing is mentioned absolutely, it is taken for this time; and is always to taken, where there is not fomething faid, that doth determine and limit it to another sense. In this case, I say, the cock-crowing signifies that time, when the cock crows the second time. So that those words, Before the cock crow, are as much as ante Gallicinium; that is, before the cock crow twice. I am much inclined to the opinion of a very learned man, that St. Mark took from the mouth of Peter the very express words of Chr 1s t, when he faid, Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice; i. e. Before that time in which the cock is wont to crow the second time (which is, most properly speaking, the cock-crowing) thou shalt deny me thrice. And then St. Mark and St. Matthew perfectly agree. He that is so curious, as to see this matter more largely discussed, and proved from greater variety of witnesses, may consult a Bochartus.

VIII. THE Jew goes on, and objects against those words of Jesus (John xvi. 7.) I tell you the truth, it is expedient for you, that I go away; for if I go not away, the comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will fend him unto you. And against these words, v. 13 Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come; he will guide you into

9 V. Bocharti Hierozoic, p. 11. l. 1. c. 17. 1bid. num. 1033.

Digitized by Google

all truth: For he shall not speak of himself: But what soever he shall hear, that shall he speak. The few profanely and scoffingly says, that Jesus affirms, that the Spirit (the third person of the Christian's Trinity) could not come, unless Jesus returned to his Father, and sent him. He would know, why two persons might not be here together; and most profanely and scoffingly offers a reason of his own, not sit to be named, having nothing of weight, but much of profaneness in it. He adds, that the Spirit and Jesus were here together, (Matthew iii. 16.) He proceeds to scoff, in which I will not follow him: He says, if the spirit speak not of himself, then he hath no power of himself; and if he leads into all truth, because he speaks not of himself, then he says, if he did speak of himself, he would not lead into all truth. I answer,

I. I OBSERVE, before I proceed any farther, that the Jew mis-represents the words of Jesus. He tells us, that Jesus doth assert, non posse, &c. i. e. that the spirit could not come, unless he sirst returned to his Father. So that he supposeth, that Jesus affirmed this to be a thing absolutely and in its own nature impossible: And then, he exercises his wit and raillery in inquiring into the causes of it; and in so profane a manner, that I cannot think it fit to repeat his words. He would make Jesus fay, what he never said, and then scoffs at him: But JESUS doth not affirm, what the Jew says he did. The words of Jesus are these. It is expedient for you, that I go away—If I go not away, the comforter will not come. In which words Jesus doth not fay, that it was absolutely impossible, that he and his spirit should be upon the earth at the same time; and therefore the Jew might have spared his profane scoff, in inquiring into the reason of this affirmation of Jesus, and his quotation of St. Matthew, (ch. iii. 16.) Jesus only affirms, what was expedient for the forrowful disciples; and that if he did not go away, the comforter would not come amongst them.

2. I SHALL next consider the words of Jesus, as they lie before us in the words of St. John: I tell you the truth, it is expedient for you that I go away; for if I go not away the comforter will not come unto you: But if I depart, I will fend him unto you. In which words our Saviour only tells his sorrowful disciples, what is best for them, and what they might expect in the event of things. He doth not say, that it was absolutely impossible, that it should be otherwise, as the Jew precipitantly represents our Saviour's meaning. And for the better explaining this whole matter, I shall endeavour to put it into as clear a light as I can.

Our Saviour speaks to his disciples, who were in sorrow upon the account of his departure; and the more effectually to comfort them, lets them know, that it was expedient for them, that he should go away: And to make them sensible of this, he adds, If I go not away, the comforter will not come unto you: But if I depart, I will send him unto you. He foretells, what will be the event: If he stays, the comforter will not come: If he goes, he will send him. He tells them, that God had in his wissom thought sit, that so it should be, that the miraculous gifts of the Holy Ghost should not be bestowed upon the disciples, till he should be exalted to the heavenly kingdom. It seemed good to the divine wissom so to order things; and doubtless for good causes. That thus it should be, was predicted

predicted long before, (Pfalm lxviii. 18.) That place is applied to this matter by St. Paul, (Ephes. iv. 8.) Wherefore he faith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. It was God's will, that those gifts should not be bestowed, till Jesus was exalted to God's right-hand. Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear, (Acts ii. 33.) This serves to explain what we read in St. John (ch. vii. 39.) The Holy Ghost was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified. It was so ordered by God, that Jesus should receive the promise of the Holy Ghost, while he was upon earth; but that he should not bestow the wonderful gifts of the Holy Ghost, till he should be exalted to God's right-hand in his heavenly kingdom. And Jesus, agreeably hereunto, bids his disciples to stay at Jerusalem, waiting for this promise of the Father.

But still here was not any absolute necessity that the Spirit should not be given, till after Jesus was glorified, as St. Augustin i observed long ago: No doubt but Jesus might have fent him fooner. There was no antecedent necessity, that things should be thus: And it is evident, that the Jew mis-represents the sense of the words of Jesus. But though there was no anrecedent necessity; yet we ought to believe, that what was done was best, and that it was becoming the divine wisdom. And this course was very fit, with respect and reference to the Holy Spirit. The mighty miracles, which were wrought by the Holy Spirit, did very much tend to the honour of this Spirit of God, and were a great proof of the divinity of this Spirit of God. And this was more effectual still, when JEsus was glorified: Whereas, had these miraculous gifts been bestowed during his continuance upon earth, they might indeed have been imputed to some secret power of his, but would not have been so publickly owned, as the works of the Holy Ghost, and as clear proofs of the divinity of that person of the Holy Trinity. Again, it was very fit upon the account of JESUS also. For CHRIST having promised to send the HOLY GHOST after his departure, the HOLY GHOST, when he came, did not only confirm the truth of his prediction, but also gave assurance to his disciples, that he was sent by Jesus according to his prediction; which might otherwise have been doubted of, if the Holy Ghost had been poured out, while he lived upon earth. The Holy Ghost was an advocate, with respect to Jesus; as that word, which we render comforter sometimes signifies, (John xvi. 7, 8, &c.) He testissied of our SAVI-OUR, (John xv. 26.) And he was justified by the Spirit, (1 Tim. iii. 16.) The coming of the HOLY GHOST did not only bear witness to the veracity of Jesus; but was also an unexceptionable proof of his exaltation to heaven, and of his great power as well as glory in that place; which would not have appeared so evidently, had the miraculous gifts been bestowed, while JESUS lived upon earth.

It is true, and St. Augnstin takes notice of the objection, that the Holy Spirit had been among men before. He was in Simeon; by him the virgin Mary conceived. Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost: The Holy Ghost attended upon the baptism of Jesus; and the prophets of old spake, as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. But the

August. in Joan. Trast, 94. Trast. 32. in S. Joan.

answer

answer is easie: Our Saviour predicts the miraculous and plentiful effusion of the Holy Ghost; which is mentioned in the Acts, and which came to pass on the day of Pentecost. We have nothing like that essuance to pass on the day of Pentecost. We have nothing like that essuance to pass on the day of Pentecost. We have nothing like that essuance that believeth on me (says Jesus) out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. It follows, This spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: For the Holy Ghost was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified, (John vii. 38, 39.) Whence it is very evident, that these words refer to the stupendious and plentiful essuance long time, before these words were spoken; and though some holy men had upon occasions received the Holy Ghost; yet this plentiful essuance of the sus was reserved, till Jesus was glorified.

It is farther faid, what the *Spirit* shall do, when he doth come, (v. 13) He will guide you into all truth. All necessary truth, whether relating to faith, or manners, or the establishing and well governing the church.

FOR he shall not speak of himself, i. e He shall deliver nothing for truth, but what is the will of God, and nothing contrary to it. Compare (John vii. 18. ch. viii. 26 and ch. xiv. 10.) He shall discharge the office of a faithful legate; and deliver to you nothing but what he hears, i. e. receives from my Father and me, who send him. The Jew might have spared his scoff, when he says, if the Spirit spake not of himself, he hath no power of himself. His not speaking of himself speaks his veracity, but doth not infer want or defect of power; for God, who is almighty, yet cannot lye, nor repent. The Jew's last words are as weak and vain, as any thing can be, viz. That if the Spirit did speak of himself, he would not lead into all truth. If what hath been said before be considered, it will need no answer: The Spirit of God cannot be supposed to speak of himself in that sense, in which that is to be understood, without a contradiction.

IX. The same few objects against the evangelists relation of Jesus his eating the passover. The disciples ask Jesus (Matth. xxvi. 17.) on the first day of the passover, where he would have them prepare to eat the passover; and Jesus directed them in this matter. This first day, the few says, was that day, in the evening whereof they killed and eat the paschal lamb; the following night being the time, whence the first day of the passover commenced. After Jesus had eaten of the paschal lamb, he went out to pray; and that that very night he was taken, and crucissed the next day. This the few says cannot consist; it not being lawful to apprehend, to accuse in court, nor to execute a malesactor on that solemn festival. He adds, that St. John relates, that Jesus supped with his disciples, and performed all the rites of the passover, and that the day before the passover he was crucissed, and was buried; and to prove this, he refers to St. John xiii. at the beginning, and to St. John (ch. xix. 14. 31.) And that St. Luke intimates the same, (ch. xxiii. 54.) Though he be in that matter inconsistent with himself. He says, St. John is contradicted by the other evangelists; besides that no man could eat the paschal lamb out of its appointed time. From the whole he infers the incredibility of the relation. Here are a great many things,

u 1bid. num. 1034. H 2

which

which are with great application of mind to be considered separately and apart: When that is done, we shall soon see, whether there be any weight or not, in what this Jew hath laid before his reader. I answer,

I. I OBSERVE, that the Jew speaks inconsistently with himself. The first day mentioned (Matth. xxvi. 17.) he says, was the first day of the passover, that is, says he, Ante ejus ingressum, i. e. Before the passover began, in which the paschal lamb was sacrificed, which was done in the evening, viz. before the night, from which night begins the first day of the passover, and in which the lamb was eaten. All that I observe in this matter is this only, that the Jew speaks either very obscurely, or very inconsistently with himself. If his meaning be, that it was the day before the passover, then he doth not speak clearly, when he calls it the first day of the passover. If this be not his meaning, then he speaks inconsistently, because he says afterwards, that the first day of the passover commenced from the evening of that day, when these words were spoken. But I lay no great stress upon this.

2. I OBSERVE, that the Jew, to serve his purpose and promote his opinion, makes use of a testimony or argument, which is nothing to his

purpose: And this I make appear.

Thus to prove the time of our Saviour's eating the passouer, he cites the beginning of the thirteenth chapter of St. John: Here he would have his reader believe, that the supper mentioned, (John xiii. 2.) was the paschal supper. This belief would encrease the difficulties, that attend upon this matter; it would serve his purpose, which was to represent the evangelists as inconsistent with each other, and therefore he produceth

that place.

60

I SHALL shew, that the supper mentioned in that place was not the paschal supper; I do very well know, that many learned men are of that opinion, and know also the consequence of it in my present debate. I shall therefore shew with all possible clearness, that it was not the paschal supper which is mentioned, (John xiii. 2.) And that appears, (1) From St. John (ch. xiii. 1.) It is there expresly said, to be before the feast of the passover. 'Tis probable, that it is the same which is mentioned, (Mattb. xxvi. 6.) which was in the house of Simon the leper, and was two days before the paffover, (Matth. xxvi. 2. Mark xiv. 1. (2) From St. John (ch. xiii. 27, 29.) Jesus said unto Judas, That thou doest, do quickly. These words were not understood by the other disciples. Some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that the meaning of those words of Jesus was, that he should buy those things, which were needful against the feast. That feast must be the feast of the passover: For if the paschal supper had been over, the disciples could never have thought, that this was the meaning of these words. (3) From St. Luke (ch. xxii. 3.) Then entred Satan into Judas; and (v. 4) And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests, and captains, how he might betray him unto them. It follows in St. Luke (v. 7.) Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover (i. e. the paschal lamb) must be killed. So the devil entred into Judas before the passover, viz. at the supper mentioned, (John xiii. 2. with v. 27.) and that supper must therefore be before the passover, and consequently it could not be the paschal supper. (4) The paschal supper was a part of the feast of the passover, and so considerable a part, that it gave a denomination to the whole feast, and therefore ought not to be excluded from the title of that feast; and if so, the supper (John xiii. 2.) which is said to be before the feast of passouer, could not be the paschal supper. (5) If the supper which is mentioned, (John xiii. 2.) was the paschal supper, then Judas must be supposed to have made his agreement to betray Jesus with the priests, and captains, that very night after supper, which is by no means to be supposed. For he had not time that night to do it. For that night they did not sup together. By the law every master of a family was obliged to sup with his family, and such a number of men as Judas had to agree, and contract with, could not be supposed to be together that night; and yet they could not contract, unless they were together, and did it by common consent. (6) From St. John (ch. xiv. 31.) compared with St. John (ch. xviii. 1.) it may well be concluded, that JESUS did change his place, when he had said, Arise, let us go hence; but then that change of place after the passover, (ch. xviii. 1.) is clearly another from that mentioned, (ch. xiv. 31.) The reader, who is curious, may see more upon this argument in a very x learned writer of our own.

I ADD, that there is nothing mentioned in this chapter of a paschal supper. The washing of the disciples seet is no rite belonging to the paschal supper. Mr. Buxtorf owns y that there was no such usage among the Jews; though he was himself of opinion, that St. John (ch. xiii. 2.) is to be understood of the paschal supper. Let them that are of this opinion shew, how these difficulties, which attend it, can be answered: Let them shew, what rites of the paschal seast they can find in this 13th chapter of St. John. Here is no mention of the institution of the LORD's supper. And the Jew, who z to serve his purpose would have chap. 13th of St. John to be understood of this supper; yet srankly owns, that there is no mention of the

Christian Eucharist in St. John's gospel.

I must do the Jew right, that tho' St. John (ch. 13.) doth not serve his purpose; yet the other places he quotes from St. John (ch. xix. 14.) and (v. 31.) deserve to be very carefully considered. His design is to prove from those places, that St. John relates, that Jesus was crucissed, and buried the day before the passover. It was the preparation of the passover, (v. 14) And after our Saviour died on the cross, it is said, The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath-day besought Pilate, &c. (v. 31.) He says, that in this St. Luke agrees, and that was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on (Luke xxiii. 54.) If Jesus did die a day before the passover, how could he be said to have eaten the passover with his disciples? For that could not be eaten but in its appointed time. I answer therefore,

3. I WILL not dispute with the Jew concerning the precise time, when JESUS kept this last passover with his disciples. I will suppose (I do not say grant) that he kept the passover supper with his disciples a day before the Jews eat their paschal supper; which is what the Jew contends for. Yet still upon this supposition I will defend the evangelists, whom he would endeavour to represent as inconsistent with one another. And if I do that, I shall do the Jew justice, and he will have no cause to complain,

J. Aben Amram.

Lightfoot's Hor. Hebr. in Matth. xxvi. 6. Inflitut. SS. Cana. Ibid. num. 1084.

or to represent the holy evangelists as unworthy of belief. And there are two things to this purpose, which I shall lay before the reader.

First, THAT there was a two fold passover in use among the Jews. There was a zaga bunkov and urnmordinion i. e. The passover was said crificial or commemorative. The first of these was solumn and full, and perfectly agreeable to the law of Moses. This was determined, and fixed, as to the precise time, and place, when God had made choice of Jerufalem for the place of his publick worship. There was the paschal lamb flain as a proper facrifice, and the blood sprinkled upon the altar by the priests at the temple. Of this there is no dispute between the Jews and Christians. The utmost then that the Jew can contend for is, that Jesus did not just before his death keep this passover with his disciples: Nor will I contend with the Jew about this matter. Let it be supposed, that JEsus did not keep this passover. But then there was also a passover that was commemorative, which was not fixed to time and place as the facrificial This was subrogated or substituted into the room and place of the facrificial, for the sake of those Jews who were dispersed and lived at a great distance from Jerusalem, and could not therefore be present at their solemn sestivals. 'Tis reasonable to believe, that these Jews, wherever they were, must think themselves obliged to commemorate the mercy of God in delivering their fore-fathers from the bondage of Egypt. And though they could not by their law facrifice out of their land; yet they must be obliged to commemorate Goo's mercies. There is no doubt, but that the plous Jews, even in Babylon, did this. And the Jews among us do it to this day. And yet neither could the devout Jews in Babylon, nor can the Jews living among us do it any otherwise than by way of commemoration. Sacrifice they cannot, I might say they ought not, by their own law; but they may keep a supper, they may eat unleavenedbread (and they do it) and bitter herbs. Maimonides 2 gives us an account of the passever supper, and the provisions for it during the standing of the temple: But then he adds, that in this time, i. e. the time of their captivity, יוכוי they bring to the table two forts of flesh, one a memorial of the passover, and the other a memorial of the Chagigah

But it will be objected, that granting such a commemorative passover in Babylon, and in remote places, and now the temple is down; yet was there no occasion for it in our Saviour's time. The temple was then standing. It is not to be supposed, that Jesus would depart from the letter of the law, when it was in his power to keep to it.

To this it is answered, That b Jesus knew that he was to die the next day, and therefore not being to live to the legal time he anticipated it, and must do so, or not keep the passover at all. And in that case he did all that was possible for him to do, when he kept the commemorative passover. In which he was so far from breaking the law of God, that he kept it, as far as it was possible to do it. He did that which was allowable in all cases of necessity. Thus (Matth. xxvi. 18.) Jesus says to his disciples, Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him, The master saith, My time is at hand, I will keep the passover at thy house with my disciples: What we render I will keep is now in the present tense, I keep, that is, I cannot stay to the following day, when the paschal lamb

• H. Chametz Umatzah, c. 8. S. 1. 

• Grot. in Matth. xxvi. 18.

Digitized by Google \_.

was to be facrificed, but intend forthwith (my time being at hand) to keep the passover with my disciples. 'Tis farther observed, that Jesus is said to eat the passover, not to sacrifice it. We grant, that the sacrificial passover could not be kept out of the legal and appointed time. But this doth not infer, that Jesus might not keep that which was the commemorative.

PERHAPS it may be objected, that this account of the anticipation of this last passover which Jesus kept is a novel opinion, and not of any

antiquity, and therefore not to be credited.

To this it is answered, that several of the ancients have said the same. Photius c is a competent witness in this case. He tells us, that he read a book of an Anonymomus author, written against the Jews, in which the author affirms, τη άγια πίμπτη μιὰ το νομακόν φαγεῖν πάγα τὸν κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰποῦν χεικόν μιποὶ γὰρ το καιρον, ἀλλὰ τῆ ἐπιέση, i.e. That is, Our Lord Jesus Christ did eat the passover on the fifth day of the holy week, which was not legal, for the time (or legal season) was not then, but the following day. The same Photius mentions another of the ancients, who wrote a book concerning the seast of passover, in which he affirms, On naταὶ μὲν, &c. That Christ our Lord and God did in the other years in his presence keep a legal passover, but did not do so, in that year when he was betrayed. This is sufficient to shew, that this is no novel doctrine.

Secondly, Supposing that Jesus did keep the facrificial passover; yet in that case I have something to offer the Jew, which will be enough to silence him, and, as I hope, sufficiently defend the evangelists.

And that is what hath been said on this occasion by a d very learned countryman of our own. He tells us, that the difference of time between our Saviour's passover, and that of the Jews, must be derived from the way of reckoning the month, and of determining the way or beginning of the month, which was in use in our Saviour's time, which was by the  $\varphi ans$ . He describes the whole manner of it in the following words.

IN e the great or outer court of the temple there was a house called Bethjazek, where the senate sate all the thirtieth day of every month, to receive the witnesses of the moon's appearance, and to examine them. And here they always had a feast provided for the entertainment of those that came, to encourage men to come the more willingly. In ancient times they did admit of strangers, and receive their testimony, if it was approved upon examination. But when the hereticks (that is, the Christians) afterwards grew up, by whom (they say) they were sometimes deluded, they began to grow shy, and to admit of none, but such as were approved of to be of the Jews religion. If there came approved witnesses upon the thirtieth day of the pains seen, then the chief man of the senate stood up, and pronounced Mckuddash, It is fantisted; and the people standing by caught the word from him, and cried out Mckuddash, Mekuddash. Whereupon there was notice presently given to all the country, which was done at first by torches from mountain to mountain, till

Digitized by Google

e Photii Bibliothee, Edit. Rhotomag. pag. 291. & 294. d Dr. Cudwerth's notion of the Lord's supper. Tahaud. Babylon. Rosh Hashan, and Maimon. Kiddosh, Hached.

## 64 A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

at length the Christians (they say) abused them in that kind also with false fires; wherefore they were fain to send messengers from place to place over the whole land to give intelligence of the new moon. But if, when the consistory had sate all the thirtieth day, there came no approved witnesses of the pass, then they made an intercalation of one day in the former month, and decreed the following one and thirtieth day to be the calends. And yet notwithstanding, if after the fourth, or sifth day there should come some witnesses from afar, that testified they had seen the pass in its due time; nay, though they came toward the end of the month, the senate, when they had used all means by affrighting them from that testimony, that so, if it were possible, they might decline a new consecration, (after they had already made an embolism in the former month) if the witnesses remained constant, were then bound to alter the beginning of the month, and reckon it a day sooner, to wit, from the thirtieth day.

WE may learn hence the ground of the difference of a day concerning the calends, and consequently the feast depending thereupon; viz. from the true pains, and the senate's decree. It appears, that the senate, having once decreed and made their consecration of the Neomenia, was very unwilling to make any alteration: And the senate in corrupt times might refuse to approve of the testimony of undoubted witnesses in the case. And hence we may well suppose, that the difference of time between our SA-VIOUR'S passover and that of the Jews may be well accounted for. It was f a canon or constitution among the Jews, that what the Sanhedrin or senate had decreed in this matter, tho' they were mistaken in their judgment, must stand good. Our SAVIOUR and other pious Jews could not be obliged by this canon in any good reason. This probably might be the case in our SAVIOUR'S time, and that he followed the true  $\varphi \alpha \sigma s$  and some number of the superstitious Jews the decree of the Sanhedrin, which was for the day after. So that supposing our SAVIOUR to have kept the sacrificial passover, it is from what hath been said easie to understand, how our Saviour's passover might be facrificed a day before that of some of the other Jews. And then the seeming inconsistence of the evangelists is removed, and I think, the force of all the Jews objections is intirely taken away.

FOR in such a case we may well suppose the Jews divided. That Jesus and many others with him kept the precise time according to the true opins or appearance, and that another part of them stuck to the Sanhedrin's decree, and kept it the day after. And then it is infinitely plain, that our Saviour kept it the right time, and the other Jews in the wrong. For notwithstanding the canon or constitution above-named, it is certain, that Jesus observed the time that was legal, the quous being the true direction in this whole matter. As for what our very learned author mentioned before quotes from Epiphanius, I suppose the printer hath done him wrong as to the quotation. However, it is certain that Epiphanius in another place says, that the Jews did keep their passover that year not in the legal time, but then he adds withal such things, as render that testimony of no manner of force in this my argument against the Jew: And I think,

Maimon. Kiddush Hached, c. 2 S. 10. Epiphan, in Panar, Hares. LL.

that

that I ought not to urge any thing as a proof, which upon examination will not bear. What other place may be elsewhere in that Father to my

present purpose I cannot tell.

WHAT I am going to add on this occasion is a matter of greater moment in the question before us, and it is this. That differences arising concerning the confecrating of the Neomenia, it came to pass in such doubtful cases, that the Jews permitted the feasts (and particularly the passover) to be kept two days together. Maimonides hath declared himself upon this occasion. He affirms, that the Jews, who lived remote, kept two days, and that in Jerusalem, where the senate sate, they kept the new moon two days. Our very learned author produceth an instance out of the Talmud of the paffover's being kept two days together, because the new moon was doubtful. Hence the Karraites, who are governed by the moons φάσις, retain as a rule to this day (says our author) observare duos dies propter dubium, i. e. To keep two days in a doubtful case. In imitation of whom even the Rabbinical Jews are observed to keep the pass. over two days together. \*

I Do not know any thing now in the Jew's objections, which can have any force, if what hath been faid before be duly considered; and the Few ought not to represent the evangelists as unworthy of credit, unless he

can answer what is offered in their defence.

X. The Jew would disparage the relation of Pilate's washing his hands before his giving Jesus up to be crucified, as importing his unwillingness to put him to death. If he was unwilling, fays k the Jew, to put him to death, how came Pilate to scourge him before that?

But this objection is so frivolous, that it needs no answer. There is no accounting for the actions of an unjust judge. 'Tis enough, that there is nothing related in this matter, that doth in any degree weaken the credit

of the relators.

XI. THE Jew 1 objects against St. John, for saying that Nicodemus brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes about an hundred pound weight, ch. xix. 39. He affirms, that this was enough for two hundred dead bodies, and that it could not be carried with less than the strength of a mule, and therefore not by Nicodemus. So that this relation of St. John

is not worthy of belief. I answer,

1. We have nothing but this Jew's word for it, that this was enough for two hundred bodies, and that this would have been a load for a mule: We have no manner of reason to believe this. Had the Jew done any thing to the purpose, he should have told us what was the weight of the Nitea mentioned by St. John, and reduced the hundred to a weight known among us, that the reader might have been able to see the force of the objection. But m'tis probable, that this was beyond his skill, the Airea being a Greek word, and a Greek weight signified thereby, and not of Hebrew extraction. And we, having no assurance of the exact weight from

Digitized by Google

i Kiddush. Hachod. c. 5. Sett. 6, 8. k 1bid. num. 1036. 1 1bid. num. 1040.

Aristarch.

\* The reader is desir'd to take notice, That a book is designed to be printed, intituled, The Scripture Chronology demonstrated by Astronomical Observations, in which it is hop'd; that this controversy, will be set in a clear light.

I the

the Jew, are not concerned at what he fays, that Nicodemus could not carry so great a burden. Besides, Nicodemus might be properly said to

bring, what he caused to be brought.

2. We will consider what was the custom of the Jews on these occasions. Tis a thing well known, that among the Jews, the bodies of great men were buried with great quantity of spices. We read of Asa, that they buried him in his own sepulchre, which he had made for himself, in the city of David, and laid him in the bed, which was filled with sweet odors, and divers kinds of spices, 2 Chr. xvi. 14. It was allowed to be prosuse in this expence. And Nicodemus out of honour to our Lord may well be allowed to be at greater expence than usual. Besides, we Christians do believe, that the honourable burial of our Saviour was predicted long before by the prophet Isaiah, and then it is not strange, that the fulfilling that prediction should be very remarkable.

THE Jew subjoins under the same number, that St. John says, that Mary seeking at the sepulchre for the body of Jesus sound two angels, to which St. Luke agrees: But (says he) Mattheus testatur unum duntaxat invenisse, i. e. Matthew testisses, that she found one only. To

which, fays he, St. Mark agrees. I answer,

THAT as for the main of this m objection it hath been answered fully already, and I will not so far impose upon the reader, as to repeat in this place, what I have said before upon this occasion. I am fully convinced, that that answer may satisfie any Jew, who is willing to receive any reasonable satisfaction.

The reason why I mention it here is, that I might lay before the reader the great infincerity of the Jew in mis-representing St. Matthew, and St. Mark. He would have his reader believe, that these two evangelists affirm, that there was one only angel found, and not two, as the others affirm, and that out of a design to make them contradict each other; whereas in truth St. Matthew and St Mark affirm no such thing, as the Jew pretends; as the reader, who can believe his eyes, may soon find. I must needs say, that this is very unjust, and at this rate he may easily impose upon the unwary reader.

XII. THE Jew nobjects against the words of Jesus, (Matth. xxviii. 18.) where he says to his disciples, All power is given to me in heaven and in earth. If Jesus was God, and equal with the Father, how could he say this? These words suppose, that he had it not before. Perhaps, says he, he received it for the merit of the cross, or that the Father being weary with long governing now leaves that care to his Son, as he scoffingly proceeds. I answer,

I. That we Christians do believe the Son to be God, and co-eternal with the Father, and therefore he had a power before this power was said

to be given him in these words.

2. What we Christians teach is this: That the Son of God, the  $\lambda \delta \gamma \Theta$ , is a divine person, and as such he hath a natural and independent authority and right over all his creatures, whether in heaven or on earth, as he is the creator of them: The words in St. Matthew are not to be understood of this right or authority; for this is independent and unde-

Part II. Chap. 3. a Ibid. num. 1041.

rived.

3

rived. But the power mentioned in St. Matthew is to be understood of a right imparted to him, as a man that was fent by GoD, anointed, and constituted the mediator between God and man, and was raised from the dead, and exalted into heaven. Now this derived authority is partly oeconomical, and therefore to be refigned to the Father, from whom it was derived, assoon as those ends are fully accomplished, for which this power was at first granted; partly so proper to the union, or due to the passion of the humane nature, that it must be co-eval to it, that is, of eternal duration. To confirm all this from the new Testament will signifie nothing to a Jew; but however this is enough to fet the matter in its true light. And for the profane scoffs of the Jew I leave him to a righteous judge; it doth not become me to render him scoff for scoff. I do not think, that such a method could ever gain any proselytes. But if the Jew will pretend to reply, he ought to take this question, as it is stated by Christians, and to answer it as it is so stated, and then he may expect farther satisfaction.

XIII. THE Jew o objects against St. John ch. xxi. 25. and prefaces to this objection. He fays, he hath often observed and proved, that the gospels are of suspected credit, he adds, and of no credit: And among them, that of St. John especially, because he says, And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world it self could not contain the books, that should be written. Here the Jew objects, that St. John's phrase is not scriptural, that Jesus did not preach, till he was thirty years of age, that then he did not continue above three years, more or less, till his crucifixion. How many books (fays he) could be written? A book for a day? But would not the world contain so many? Why did St. John write so little a gospel? And why was that, which he wrote, replete with vain, and amorous, and rhetorical speeches? As particularly beginning from ch. xiv. 7. Some more such stuff he adds, not worth the repeating; having nothing in it of reason, or force. I answer,

I. THAT I do not doubt of his ill opinion of the evangelists. I dare take a Jew's word for that: But that he hath proved them to be of sufpected, and of no credit, I have no reason to believe. And yet I am never like to have any better proof than the word of the few.

2. However, I am no farther concerned in this place, than to defend St. John for the words afore-recited: I believe, that I shall not find any great difficulty in that matter. Nor will I lay hold of any evasion: I will not suppose, that the world's not containing is to be interpreted of the incapacity of the men of the world. This looks too much like artifice.

3. I Do allow it to be an hyperbolical expression. But of all men in the world a Jew should not have brought this objection against the evangelists, because not only the sacred writers of the old Testament take this liberty, which St. John takes; but the Jewish writers do it frequently, and nothing is more common in other writers, and common discourse and conversation.

As for the facred writers nothing is more common. St. Austin p long fince takes notice of that hyperbolical expression, Gen. xiii. 16. where

> P Aug. de Civ. D. l. 16. c. 21. º Ibid. num. 1094.

God

GOD fays to Abram: I will make thy seed as the dust of the earth; so that if a man can number the dust of the earth, then shall thy seed also be numbred. What proportion was there between the seed of Abram (I might have faid Adam) and the dust of the earth? As great the disproportion is, as between the space that those books would take up, which might have been written of Jesus, and the capacity of the whole world. And yet these are the words of God himself: And I hope, the Jew will not be so profane as to scoff at them, whatever he doth by the evangelists. Compare Gen. xv. 5. God promiseth to the Israelites a land flowing with milk and honey, Exod. iii. 8. The expression is hyperbolical; but all that is meant is a very fruitful land. Thus we read of a darkness that may be felt, for a great darkness, Exod. x. 21. Of a 9 great number of camels hyperbolically expressed, by being without number, as the sand of the sea side for multitude, Judges vii. 12. Compare 1 Sam. xiii 5. Thus when there was a great noise of pipes, it is hyperbolically expressed thus, that the earth rent with the sound of them, 1 Kings i. 40. The wealth of Solomon's time is thus hyperbolically expressed. The king made silver to be in Jerusalem as stones; and cedars made he to be as the sycomore-trees, that are in the vale for abundance, I Kings x. 27. The reader may find more of these ways of speaking, Gen. x. 4. Numb. xiii. 33. Dan. iv. 20. And in this very evangelist, ch. xii. 19. So that the evangelists way of speaking may be justified from the sacred writers, whatever the Jew affirms to the contrary.

But all men know, that are conversant in the Jewish writings, that they are full of fuch kind of expressions: As the sacred writers are confesfed so to be; so are the Talmudical and other writers, which yet are of great fame, and esteem among them. There are some things said by the Jewish doctors so very strange and surprizing, that this hyperbolical speech of St. John can give no just offence to a Jew of any men whatsoever. For their way of speaking is so romantick, that if we consider the bare letter, they cannot be defended. We must allow them their דרך נוובא, i. e. their hyperbolical way of speaking, or we must suppose, that there lies a farther and more hidden meaning under it, than what the bare letter imports. It is a faying among the Jews, that God hath nothing in this his world but four cubits of Talmudical constitutions. Maimonides takes a great deal of pains to defend this odd expression. Many more fuch expressions we have, which cannot be defended without allowing of great hyperboles, or of some other meaning than the bare letter will afford, of which 'twere easie to give several instances, if it was worth the the reader's while.

AGAIN, there is nothing more common than hyperboles in all other writers, and common conversation. The Jew, if he pleaseth, may quarrel with all mankind as well as with St. John on this account.

4. As for his scurrility and scoffs they prove nothing but the rancor and vanity of his own mind. Those divine words in St. John xiv. and the following chapters are far above contempt. But there is nothing so sacred, which a profane and reprobate mind will not reproach and revile.

I V. Hack-IV. Dr. Pocock's Port. Mosis. p. 90. q V. Maimon. More Nev. P. II. c. 47. span, in Lipman. Nizachon, c. 2,

XIV. THE



XIV. THE same Jew to objects against St. Paul for his words, Gal. iii. 10. For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: For it is written, Cursed is every one, that continueth not in all things, which are written in the book of the law to do them. He thinks St. Paul very unequal in this matter: For 'tis certain according to the doctrine of the old Testament, that as he was pronounced curled that obeyed not; so on the other hand he was esteemed blessed, who yielded obedience to the law of Moses. The Jew demands of St. Paul, what punishment he shall incur, who professeth and doth not practise the Christian religion? He supposeth, he will answer, that he will incur heresy or eternal condemnation: Then (says the Jew) may I infer, that whoso is under the Christian faith or religion, is under eternal herefy or condemnation, by the same reasoning that St. Paul useth here. He says, that St. Paul runs into the same impiety again, Rom. iii. 20. & ch. iv. 15. & ch. v. 13. where he affirms, that we cannot be justified by the works of the law, because by it we come to the knowledge of fin, and incur the penalty of our disobedience. The Jew replies, that fin and punishment flow from the violation of the law, and the keeping it would affure men of the reward. He goes on and asks the Christian; He that is a Christian and doth not obey the Chriflian laws, and papal constitutions, doth he sin and incur any penalty? He will own, that he sins and is liable to punishment. Then, says he, I argue thus, By the works of faith no man can be faved; for by faith, that is the Christian doctrine, we have the knowledge of sin; and by our disobedience we render our felves liable to punishment. According to this way of arguing (fays the  $\mathcal{J} \in w$ ) it would be better for mankind to be without any law at all. I answer,

whatsoever, if we take some of his words separately from the context, and frame objections against them. At this rate I could very easily object against many passages of the old Testament. It is fit, that we should consider the argument, which the author insists upon, and fairly consider the import of the words themselves. I do consess as the few lays his objection, it looks very plausibly; but when we consider the words with application, and the argument, which St. Paul pursues, and the context also, perhaps there is hardly any thing bears harder upon the fews then the words of St. Paul do. It is infinitely plain, that St Paul argues against those, who expected to be justified by the law of Moses; this is what he means, as is evident from the context. Those that are of the works of the law are those, who expected to be justified by their obedience to the law of Moses. This is so plainly the meaning of the apostle, that I shall not need to prove it. Let any man read the whole context, and he will soon be satisfied in this matter. This being granted (as it cannot reasonably be denied) it will be no hard matter to desend the apostle against the few.

2. This being premised, it will be very easie to defend St. Paul, both as to what he affirms here, and what he says upon the same argument in his epistle to the Romans. His design is to prove, that the Jews had no no sufficient ground to expect to be justified by obedience to the law of Moses; and consequently to oblige them to seek for justification by the

t lbid. num. 1097.

gospel

gospel, which requires a faith in our LORD JESUS CHRIST. This was a main and fundamental point between the few and Christian. I shall confider the several arguments which are, and may justly be produced, to

confirm St. Paul's doctrine.

(1.) HE that would be justified by the law of Moses, must give an abfolute and perfect obedience to it. To do this the Jew could not pretend, and was consequently liable for his disobedience to the curse of the law. Did not Moses give you the law, says Jesus to the Jews, and yet none of you keepeth the law? John vii. 19. St. Peter calls it a yoke, that neither they nor their fathers were able to bear, Acts xv. 10. St. Paul shews, that it is not possible to be justified by this law; he says, It is evident from what is said by the prophet, the just shall live by his faith, Gal. iii. 11. The condition of the law is not that of faith, but absolute obedience. The man that doeth them shall live in them, v. 12. The Jew cannot pretend to perfect and finless obedience; and therefore must consent to what St. Paul says elsewhere, All have sinned, and come short of the glory of God, Rom iii. 23. And consequently the Jew is liable to the curse mentioned, Deut. xxvii. 26. Cursed is be, that confirmeth not all the words of this law to do them. The Jew can never with good ground expect to be justified by that law, which he hath not obeyed. For if he hath not obeyed its precepts, he must lie under its curse. In this case the law worketh wrath, Rom. iv. 15. The Jew may flatter himself as he pleaseth: But he can never expect to be justified by that which condemns him. The words of the law are very plain and positive, truly quoted and rightly applied by St. Paul. The law it felf is our school-master to bring us unto CHRIST. It excludes all the transgressors of it from all possibility of hope of being justified by it: For nothing short of absolute obedience can have any just claim to be justified by it.

(2.) THE law of Moses did not enable the Jews to obey its precepts, and therefore they may not expect to be justified by it. Had it given power as it gave precepts, the Jew might have some ground to expect justification this way. By the law is the knowledge of sin, Rom. iii. 20. but not the ability of absolute obedience. And therefore it condemns, but justifies not. Hence it is, that St. Paul with great reason calls the law the ministration of condemnation, and the ministration of death, 2 Cor. iii. 7, 9. And the letter that killeth v. 6. On the other hand he calls the gospel the ministration of the Spirit, and the ministration of righteousness: As we are enabled by it, and justified by it also. To the same purpose he discourseth, Rom. vii. 5, 6. and ch. viii. 1, 2, 3. To this purpose it is said, that the law came by Moses; but grace and truth by JESUS CHRIST, John i. 17. The gospel is called grace, with respect to that grace or heavenly assistance, with which it is attended. For it is very certain from the old Testament (as I have had occasion formerly to observe) that a plentiful effusion of the Holy Spirit was promised in the days of the MESSIAS, and we Christians do believe, that this promise was made good upon the day of Pentecost. 'Twas by the power of this Holy Spirit, that the gospel spread, and that the first planters of it were enabled to do and suffer so great things. And though the Jews deny Jesus to be the Christ; yet the wonderful propagation of the doctrine, and faith of Jesus they cannot with any shadow of reason deny. Admitting the matters of sact, 'twill be next to impossible

impossible to impute them to any other cause, but to the power and

energy of the Holy Spirit, bearing witness to the truth.

(3.) Non did the expiatory or propitiatory facrifices, which were allowed under the law of Moses, give any just assurance to the Jews of being justified by that law. For besides, that these sacrifices were allowed only in case of transgression of some laws, and so were not the primary laws of Moses, as those commands were, which required obedience to the other laws of God: Besides this, I say, these sacrifices only sheltered the Jews from temporal punishments, but did neither rescue them from death, nor give them any just claim to eternal life. To which I may add, that there were a great many firs, that by the law of Moses would not admit of any atonement from these sacrifices, and in all those cases the Jew was left without any hope of pardon by the law of Moses, so far was he from being justified by it. The Jew will find poor relief from this allowance of propitiatory facrifices. I shall consider this matter a little more particularly, that, if it be possible, I may convince the Jew in this pretence [1.] It is to be confidered, what place the laws about propitiatory facrifices have in the laws of *Moses*. They do not stand in the first place or rank of precepts. God required obedience to his laws antecedently to facrifices. This was God's first intention, and not expiatory sacrifices; they were required consequenter, as a remedy when the sin was committed: Sacrifice like repentance was but fecunda tabula post naufragium. It was the method, which God allowed for reconciling finners. But God required men to obey his laws, and not to need expiation and atonement. Withdraw thy foot Jewish doctors u teach this lesson themselves. from thy neighbour's house, lest he be weary of thee, and so hate thee, Prov. xxv. 17. There is a Midrash among the Jews, that interprets those words to my present purpose: It is said, that by the neighbour's house is meant the sanctuary, and it is an admonition to men to obey God's laws, and not to be frequent at the fanctuary with expiatory facrifices, which are not so welcome to God, as obedience is. To the same purpose Maimonides x delivers himself. He affirms, that the scripture and Kabbala do both teach, that the laws about facrifices are not the first laws; but proceed from a fecond intention. It was most pleasing to God, that men should not transgress. God required obedience in the first place: Upon failure he admitted in the second place of an expiatory sacrifice. To obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams, 1 Sam. xv. 22. Agreeable hereunto are the words of Jeremiah, ch. vii. 22, 23. I spake not unto your fathers, nor commanded them in the day that I brought them out of the land of Egypt concerning burnt-offerings or sacrifices: But this thing commanded I them saying, Obey my voice. To this purpose it is farther to be considered, that the laws concerming facrifices were not given till after the decalogue, and the flatutes, which were given afterwards. [2.] The facrifices themselves were very defective, and did not produce the more desirable esseas. They kept off temporal punishment, they were means to preserve men in the peace and external communion of the church, but they did not purifie the conscience of the offerer, Heb. ix. 9, 10, 13. [3.] There were many fins, for which

\* More Nevo. p. 3. c. 32. Abravenel Prefat. in Levit. c. 4.

W. Bechai in Legem, fol. 135. C. 2. Men. Ben. Israel. Conciliator. p. 181.

no facrifices were allowed by the law of Mofes; and in this case the few was left without hope of pardon from that law, and therefore could not be justified by it. Of this matter y I have spoken in another place, and therefore will not pursue it here.

(4.) The law of Moses had not any explicit promise of eternal life, to encourage to a persect obedience to its precepts. This was reserved for the gospel, where it is brought to light. And now if these things be laid

together, we shall find St. Paul fully defended against the Jew.

3. It will therefore be easie to answer the Jew's question, What shall become of the Christian professor, who doth notobey his religion? We do not excuse the disobedience of the Christian, or think him exempt from punishment, unless he repent and return to his duty. But we do not believe our condition to be the same with that of the Jews. The law required of them an absolute and perfect obedience, which because they could not yield, they could never be justified by that law: For the broken law could never justifie them. Our case under the covenant of grace is otherwise; for our justification doth not depend upon an absolute and sinless obedience, but upon a fincere and unfeigned one. We have divine assistances, and a mighty reward in our eye. And if any man sin, we bave an advocate with the Father, JESUS CHRIST the righteous: And he is the propitiation for our sins, 1 John ii. 1, 2. Let the Jew shew, what shadow of hope he can have of being justified by the law of Moses. If we say, that we have no sin, we deceive our selves—If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness, 1 John i. 8, 9.

XV. THE same Jew proceeds to object against Heb. ix. 19. where it's faid, that When Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water and scarlet wooll, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book and all the people. The Jew takes these words to refer to Exod. xxiv. 7, 8. And that the author of this epistle refers to this place: But, says the Jew, he doth it to perverily and fottifully, that one may fecurely conclude, that he was not an Hebrew, but a filly wretch for the text in Exodus is thus: And he took the book of the covenant, and read in the audience of the people: And they said, All that the LORD bath said, will we do, and be obedient. And Moses took the blood and sprinkled it on the people, and said, Behold the blood of the covenant, which the LORD hath made with you concerning all these words. Here's nothing of the water, of the wooll, or of the hyssop. He adds, that what is said of sprinkling the blood upon the book is false and foolish: For (fays the Jew) those words, concerning all these words, do only denote the cause of the covenant, for which the blood was sprinkled upon the people, that is, for the cleansing of the people. For (fays the Jew) neither did the sprinkled blood fall upon the people, but upon the altar for the cleanfing of the people, as the manner was, and as the divine Chaldee Paraphrase hath it. For (says he) it was not possible, nor credible, that the blood should be sprinkled upon all that very numerous people. Besides (he says) that from Exod. xxiv. 5. there is no mention of any blood but that of oxen (Taurorum, fays the Jew) no men-

Part I. chap. 1.

\_\_Digitized by Google ---

tion of the blood of calves and goats. And he concludes hence, that if the Christian cenfor would consider the writings of St. Paul, which are commonly owned to be his, with attention and with freedom, he will find them partly vain, and partly false, as to the fundamentals of the Christian faith.

I HAVE faithfully represented the Jew's objection in its fullest force and strength. I answer,

I. THAT I will allow, that the author of the epistle to the Hebrews doth refer to Exod xxiv. Nor will I in the least controvert or dispute this

matter with him, but take it for granted.

2. THAT it is very unreasonable, that the Jew should quarrel with St. Paul, when he fays the very same thing, which Moses doth say, whose relation he follows. He saith, that Moses sprinkled the people, and Moses tells us the very same. But the bold Jew says, None of the sprinkled blood fell on the people; and whatever Moses saith, he will follow Onkelos: And pretends it was not possible, that so very numerous a people should be sprinkled. And yet he doth not object against what is said before, that Moses read in the audience of the people. Sure it was as hard to do that, as to sprinkle them. I need not concern my self in shewing how this might be done, or how it is to be understood. that I observe at present is, that the Jew finds fault with St. Paul with. out cause, when he says what Moses said before him. Indeed Moses says, he sprinkled the people, St. Paul that he sprinkled all the people. This is mere trifling. For if the people's representatives were sprinkled, all the people might be said to be so. 'Tis not to be imagined that Moses, as oft as he spake to the people, could be heard by all the people. If the Jew's interpretation was admitted, which he borrows from Onkelos; yet by the people, even in that case, must be signified all the people, because all the people stood in need of cleansing: This Jew was surely greatly prejudiced against St. Paul, when he doth not only quarrel with him, when he departs from Moses; but even when he follows him too.

2. But, faith the Jew, there is no mention of the water and the wooll, and the hyssop, in the words of Moses, to which these words in the epistle to the Hebrews do refer. I grant it, but it doth not thence follow, that no such things were used; unless we do affirm that every circumstance was written by Moses (which no man can with any sound reason believe) in those things which he relates that he did. These things are not mentioned here. 'Tis true: But then all these things are elsewhere, upon the occasion of sprinkling or aspersion, which is the case before us. See Levit.

xiv. 49, 50, &c. Exod. xii. 22. Psal. li.

4. But (saith the Jew) Moses is said to have sprinkled the book, which he adds is both false and foolish. If it be allowed him, that this be said of Moses, by the author of the epistle to the Hebrews; yet we have nothing but the Jew's word for it, that it is salse and soolish. I should be very loth to take this upon his bare word, and I am sure he offers no argument to prove it so. Had he proved it soolish, I should have believed it to be salse without any more to do. But let us examine this matter a little more narrowly. I own, that Christians commonly understand the words in the Hebrew, as the Jew doth. But notwithstanding all that, I believe it cannot be proved, that St. Paul doth affirm, that Moses forinkled

sprinkled the book. The best way to know this is, to consider his words as they lie in the Greek. Λαβών πο αιμα των μόχων ε τεάχων μεταί εδατ Θ. ε) ε είε κοκάνε, ε) υωτώπε, αυτό τε το βιβλίον, ε) πάντα τον λαον ερράντισε. These words may be translated thus, Taking the blood of calves and goats with water and scarlet wooll and hyssop, and the book, he sprinkled all the people. The auto to Biblion will then refer to lason, as well it may. And this perfectly agrees with Exod. xxiv. 7. where it is faid, that Moses took the book λαβων το βιβλίον. And then it is, as if he had said Ελαβε τὸ ερράντισε, &c. He took these things, and sprinkled the people. In this case the 2 before marra is redundant as both 2, in the new Testament, and in the old Testament very often is, as is well known to all that are skilled, and well versed in these matters. I cannot imagine, how the Jew can anfwer this account of the words: Here is nothing strained, nothing added, no manner of violence nor of artifice used. So that if he was able to prove, that it was false and foolish to affirm, that Moses sprinkled the book; yet it is absolutely impossible for him to prove from these words, that St. Paul ever affirmed it. The V. Latin renders the words thus. Accipiens sanguinem vitulorum & hircorum, cum aquâ, & lanâ coccineâ, & hyssopo, ipsum quoque librum, & omnem populum aspersit. Where Librum may very well refer to the word Accipiens, and that, which appears as a copula, be no more but an expletive, as it is very frequently in other places.

5. But still he urgeth, that St. Paul mentions the blood of calves and goats, whereas Moses only mentions the blood of bulls. And this he reckons as another great fault in this author of the epistle to the Hebrews. The Jew is right so far, that Moses doth not, as this author doth, mention the blood of calves and goats; but it is by no means truly inferred from hence, that Moses did not use them. Moses mentions only bolocausts and peace-offerings, v. 5. Had St. Paul not mentioned any thing more, yet it had been reasonable to believe, that upon this solemn occasion there was some facrifice for sin added, to which purpose the goat was of eminent use, Levit. iv. 23, 24. ch. ix. 3. ch. xvi. 15. It was the manner on such occasions to join sin-offerings with peace offerings, v. Levit. ix. 3, 4. And especially where the people were to be cleansed, for whose sake the oblation was made. Nothing can be more credible than this is to him, that considers the whole oeconomy and system of sacrifices, and the practice among the *Jewish* people, v. Levit. viii. & ch. ix. & ch. xiv. 7. & 52. There was nothing more consistent with the ancient usage, and order, than what St. Paul affirms here. 'Tis certain, he could serve no end of his own by mis-representing Moses in this matter. This would have been the way to have differred himself. Indeed the Jew represents him as filly and unskilful. But that is easily said. The author of that epistle doth not argue like fuch a person.

Bur still, though I think I have said enough to satisfie any indifferent person; yet, to convince a Jew, I shall add something more to what hath

been said already.

6. That however the few is pleased to disparage our author; yet he cannot charge him with so much as mis-quoting or altering the text of Moses: He tells what Moses did; but he doth not say, Thus it is written in the book, or law of Moses; nor doth he say any thing like it. He might

might have what he adds concerning the wooll and water by tradition or inspiration. Many sacts were conveyed down among the Jews by a constant tradition, which were never written in the law or prophets. What the apostle saith of Jannes and Jambres resisting Moses, is no where written in his law; but yet it was a tradition among the Jews, and the Chaldee paraphrast upon Moses's law mentions these names. The widow which is mentioned 2 Kings iv. 1. is by the Chaldee paraphrast said expressly to be the widow of Obadiah: But then that is more than the text saith. Yet I think no man can doubt, but so it was. Josephus 2 says the very same, the character of the man agrees, and so doth the time also; and no Christian (I believe) doubts, but so it was in sact, but yet it was not so written in any text of the Holy Scripture. Our author quotes what Moses did not write; Doth it thence follow, that he affirms what is not true? He cites not any writing upon this occasion. He relates not what Moses wrote, but what he did.

I OBSERVE, that when he mentions the Chaldee paraphrast, he calls him divine, and he admires his exposition of those words, He sprinkled the people; when yet St. Paul in that matter follows the letter of Moses, and the Targumist is supposed to destroy it. This speaks the Jew's prejudice against the Christian writer. It was easie to shew a multitude of instances, where the Chaldee paraphrasts add to the text, and yet they must be divine and magnissed, and St. Paul, who doth no such thing, must be represented as filly or something worse. For 'tis plain, that St. Paul doth not so much as quote any place of Scripture upon this occasion.

doth not so much as quote any place of Scripture upon this occasion.

Bur because the Jew doth so much revise St. Paul on this occasion, and magnifie the Chaldee paraphrast, I shall not think much (to shew how partial the Jew is) to reslect a little upon the Chaldee paraphrasts, and shew what liberty they have taken of adding to the Hebrew text upon occasion. I might produce a multitude of instances. I shall select enough for

my present purpose.

I WILL begin with Onkelos, who is the oldest and best of them, and who keeps closest to the text. His paraphrase is generally rather a strict version, than a paraphrase. On Levit. xviii. 5. to those words he shall live, he adds, Eternal life: And yet there is no mention of eternal life in the law of Moses. Numb. xii. 1. to those words, Whom he had married, or taken, as it is in the marginal reading; he adds, he dismissed her whom he had taken. Numb. xxiv. 1. the wilderness; he adds, toward the calf which the Israelites made in the wilderness. Numb. xxvii. 18. Spirit; he adds of prophecy. Deut. xvii. 8. he adds to stroke, of leprose. Deut. xxv. 7. To the gate; he adds xii. e. of the house of judgment. Deut. xxxiii. 6. live; to this he adds, Eternal life. v 18. in thy going out; he adds, to sight against thy enemies. I might mention several more additions of Onkelos.

As for the Jerusalem Targum and that of Jonathan on the Pentateuch, they are full of additions. It would be too tedious and operose a thing to reckon them up, and therefore I will not attempt it. I shall name some sew. To Gen. v. 24. Jonathan adds, And his name was called Metatron a great scribe. To Gen. xiv. 18. Melchizedeck King of Salem, Jonathan and the Jerusalem add, He is Shem the son of Noah. Gen. xvi. 1. To

<sup>2</sup> Joseph Ant. l. 9, c. 2. K 2

Hagar



Hagar, Jonathen adds, the daughter of Pharaoh, &c. He that is curious may fee more in this book of Genesis. See those Targums on Genesis, Chap. xxiv. 31, 55. ch xxv. 1, 25, 34. ch. xxxiii. 4. ch. xxxvi. 12. ch. xlii. 23. ch. xliii. 16. ch. xlvi. 13, 14. ch. xlvii. 2. He may also see them on Exodus, Chap. ii. 12. ch. iv. 25. ch. vi. 16. ch. ix. 20. ch. xii. 3, 10, 11, 29, 40, 44. ch. xv. 25. ch. xxiv. 5. I will not pursue these

Targumists any farther.

As for the other Targums, I should be endless, if I should lay before the reader the liberties which they take. It is easie to give a vast number of instances, if there was any occasion. I do readily grant, that some of their additions, though not warranted by the text, might be agreeable enough to the truth of things, and to the constant tradition among the Jews, and they may be allowed to be good and useful authors notwithstanding all these additions. But then, why may not St. Paul be allowed to be of credit, when what he affirms is less exceptionable than many passages, which I could easily produce out of the Targumists? I have been the longer upon this matter, both because the Jew insults, and because such an objection as this may be brought against several other places of the new Testament upon the same account. And I thought a full answer to this might furnish the reader, wherewithal to answer other objections of the same kind.

XVI. THE same Jew 2 objects (I might say he scoss) against the epistle of St. James. He reckons it worthy of his scorn and contempt. It is directed (says he) to the twelve tribes of Israel dispersed in the world. But (he goes on) Ubi Jacobus? Where is this James? And where are ten of the twelve tribes? They were of old (says he) in a far, an unknown and inaccessible country. And as for the other two tribes of Judah and Benjamin they were not then dispersed, nor were they (saith he) dispersed till forty and two years after the death of Jesus, as he saith he hath observed in another place: And then (he saith) James

was not alive to write to them. I answer,

1. That the Hebrews reckon those Jews, who are out of their own land, to be of the dispersion. When St. James writes to the twelve tribes scattered abroad, he writes to all the Israelites, who were any where out of their own country. And the Jew must grant, that there were many that were so, when St. James wrote that epistle. The Jews scattered abroad are those Jews, which lived among the Gentiles. The Syriack version render scattered abroad, by words that signific as much as disseminated among the Gentiles. He is in the law of Moses called 1713, who lives out of his own country, Deut. xxx. 4. The LXXII. render that word by Alamoes, which is the word used by St. James in this place. The very same Hebrew word is used in the same sense, Nehemiab i. 9. and there also rendered by the same Greek word. The Jew doth not (I hope) pretend, that all of the tribes of Judah and Benjamin were at that time in their own land. And if he doth, he ought to have proved it, and not to have insulted. He directs his epistle to all the Israelites whatsoever, that were abroad, and therefore he doth it by the sittest expression of the twelve tribes; Israel had so many sons,

• Num. 1096.

and

and this number comprehends all his race. It is all one as to the matter in hand, when St. James died; he might in any part of his life direct

his epistle as he doth.

2. I OBSERVE, how very unfairly the Jew deals in this matter. He puts his own sense upon the words of St. James first, and then ridicules him. The ten tribes lived in a strange land, and the two were not yet dispersed; nor were they dispersed till after St. James died. And therefore St. James could not write thus. I do not think, that St. James wrote an epistle after his death. The Jews know very well, that some of them have affirmed, that one of their prophets did send a letter to one of their kings, after he had left the world. But we Christians are not put to it to use any such shifts. 'Tis well, that he will allow ten of the tribes to be dispersed: As for the other two, 'tis enough that any of them at that time lived out of their own land, and to them only is this episse directed.



CHAP.

### 

## CHAP. IV.

That the Christian's doctrine of the Holy Trinity is no Jufficient bar to the Jew's embracing the Christian religion. What the new Testament teacheth us concerning the Holy Trinity. The Jews pretend, that this doctrine is absurd and against reason, and that it infers tritheism, or a plurality of gods. These pretences considered. They also object, that the Christian's doctrine is against the law of Moses, and the old Testament: In answer whereunto it is granted, that this doctrine is not clearly revealed in the old Testament; but there are intimations of it there. Several places produced to shew, that there are in the old Testament intimations of some kind of plurality in the divine nature; and more particularly of the trinity. This shewed from the Jewish writers. A testimony to this purpose from R. Bechai. Several other testimonies from the Rabbins. Of GoD's creating man, as 'tis related, Gen. i. Ps. l. 1. considered, with a place quoted from Midrash Tehillim. Isa. vi. 3. with some testimonies related by P. Galatinus. Numb. vi. 24, &c. considered, with several testimonies from the Hebrew doctors. Deut. Vi. 4. considered. How those words ·may be translated. Another testimony out of Zohar from a Jewish Some objections against what hath been said, viz. [1] Abravanel's, that Elohim is of the singular number. An answer thereto. [2] The pretence that the plural Elohim is used from the custom of speaking, which obtained among the idolatrous Canaanites. An answer at large to that pretension. [3] A pretence that the plural is used according to the custom of kings, who speak of themselves after the same manner. An answer to this pretension. [4] An objection mentioned by Aben Ezra on Gen. i. 26. but disapproved by him also. An answer to it. A reflection upon passages quoted out of the Berc-Thith Rabba relating to this matter. Several places quoted from the Apocryphal books, to prove that the ancient Jews own'd some kind of plurality in the divine nature; and that there were among them some intimations of the Holy Trinity.

I SHALL now proceed to shew, that the doctrine of the Holy Trinity, as that doctrine is delivered in the new Testament, is no sufficient bar to the Jew's embracing the Christian religion.

THEY do indeed upon all occasions dispute against this doctrine with great vehemence: They endeavour to expose it, and render it ridiculous

and incredible; In fast it is true, that this doctrine is a bar hindering them from embracing Christianity. This they pretend as a main obstacle: And I will admit, that in fact so it is; it shall be my business to prove, that it

ought not to hinder them.

AND I am obliged to shew (before I go any farther) what it is that the new Testament teacheth us concerning the Holy Trinity: I choose to do it in the very words of scripture. There are three, that bear record in beaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost; and these three are one, I John v. 7. These words are very expressive of the scriptural doctrine concerning the Holy Trinity. I very well know, that some have called in question this text, and some (I hope very few) have given it up. It would be in this place too great a digression to enter into that matter, nor is there any need to do it. Those men who doubt of the place, and those who are so rash as to give it up, yet cannot deny but these words contain the doctrine of the new Testament concerning the Holy Trinity; nay farther, they do allow that the same doctrine is delivered (though not in these words) in other parts of the new Testament. But we have no dispute with the Jew in this matter. The new Testament teacheth us, that there is but one GoD; and that one GoD ought to be owned and worshipped under the personal distinctions of Father, Son, and Holy Ghoft. It is infinitely plain, that these names are applied to God in the new Testament. This is in short the doctrine of the scriptures of the new Testament. I think, that the Jew's objections against this doctrine of the new Testament are reducible to the following heads.

First, THAT this doctrine is absurd, against reason, and a contradiction.

Secondly, THAT it infers tritheism, or a plurality of gods.

Thirdly, THAT it is not agreeable to the law of Moses, but rather repugnant to that law, and to the old Testament.

First, THAT this doctrine is absurd, against reason, and that it implies a contradiction. All this is eafily pretended, and said, but can never be

I ACKNOWLEDGE, that if it was against sound reason, and if it did imply a contradiction, it ought not to be received; and my reason is, that then we could never be fure of any thing else: For if we admit any doctrine, that is manifestly absurd and against reason, we can never be sure of any thing whatsoever. Upon this consideration we justly reject the doctrine of *Transubstantiation*: We are sure; that that doctrine cannot be true; and if it were admitted as true, we should overthrow those grounds, upon which the whole Christian faith is built. If we are not sure, that that doctrine is false; we can never be sure, that the Christian religion is

I KNOW very well, that it hath been urged by those of the church of Rome, that we ought to admit the doctrine of Transubstantiation upon the same grounds, on which we admit the doctrine of the Trinity: But the case is not the same, as I 2 have elsewhere proved: And that,

1. BECAUSE

<sup>\*</sup> Second dialogue between a Cathelick convert and a Protofiant. Printed, 1687.

1. Because the doctrine of the Trinity is plainly revealed in the new Testament: In this both sides are agreed. The other doctrine is not revealed: So the Protestants affirm with one consent. And those of the church of Rome do grant, that the doctrine of Transubstantiation is not clearly revealed in Holy Writ. Scotas assirms, as Bellarmine confesseth (and thinks his opinion not altogether improbable) that Transubstantiation cannot be evidently proved from any express scripture. Now the fathers of the council of Nice urge the text of Holy Writ against the Arians: But the church of Rome maintains her doctrine upon another bottom, and that is, the authority and declaration of the Church.

2. The doctrine of Transubstantiation contradicts right reason: It involves an heap of contradictions: It supposeth a change of substance, when the accidents remain; That these accidents can nourish or destroy; that a body can be in many places at once, and broken, and whole at the same time; that a whole body may be in a point; that every waser is the whole body, and yet the body but one; and that a thing can be divided into two wholes. The doctrine of the Trinity may be above our reason, but it is not against it. Besides, 'tis revealed; and 'tis sit we should believe the revelation. We are after all better able to judge of the nature of bodies, than of the spiritual nature of God. We reject not what our reason doth not comprehend: But shall we therefore admit that which contradicts the reason and sense of all mankind?

We believe but one God; nor do we believe that one can be three in the same respect, in which it is one; nor that the three persons in the Trinity are to be understood to be three, as three men are three persons. We do not affirm any thing, that undermines the soundation of all other knowledge, or that endangers the whole Christian doctrine.

Secondly, It is pretended, that this doctrine will infer tritheism, or a plurality of gods. This is pretended among the Jews; and hence it is that they vehemently clamour against this doctrine, and against Christians for holding it: But this is altogether a false charge.

We appeal to the new Testament, the rule of our Christian saith. We cannot conceive that there are a plurality of gods. It is not possible for us to maintain such a trinity, without forsaking at once our rule, and our reason also. If any private doctors have given any such explication of the doctrine of the trinity, as doth inser such a plurality of gods; we disown such explications, and therefore this cannot be charged upon our religion.

Thirdly, It is pretended, that this doctrine is not agreeable to the law of Moses, but rather repugnant to that law, and to the old Testament. This the Jewish writers do mightily insist upon; and that which they principally urge is, that the doctrine of the Christians infers a plurality of gods; which is indeed a doctrine inconsistent with the old Testament, and is a doctrine, which the Christians do disclaim. And then all, which the Jews can reasonably pretend under this head, is this, that the doctrine of the trinity was never revealed to the Jews in the old Testament, and therefore is by no means to be admitted. This matter will require good

Salmeron. Tom, 9. Traft. 16. EBellarm, de Euchar. h. 3. c. 23.

. j.

Digitized by Google

considera-

confideration: And for my better and more orderly proceeding, I shall

discourse under the following heads.

First, I shall readily grant, that the doctrine of the Holy Trinity was not explicitly and plainly revealed in the law of Moses, nor in the old Testament. I shall not (as some have done, both ancient and modern writers) inquire into the reasons, why this doctrine was not there plainly revealed: But I shall shew, that the Jew will not be sufficiently excused for rejecting Christianity upon the account of this doctrine. For there are several articles of faith, and propositions, which are firmly behered by the Jews, and yet are not plainly revealed in the law of Moses. The Jews believe the refurrection of the dead and everlasting life; but will never be able to prove these things from any express testimony in the law of Moses. Menasseh B. Israel hath d tried his skill as to the doctrine of the refurrection; but the proofs, which he brings of this doctrine from the law of Moses, are so very short, that as he will hardly satisfie another indifferent man, so he doth not seem to satisfie himself. For thus he conchides, Ex his omnibus liquet, loca nonnulla in libris Mosaicis reperiri, ex quibus licet apodicticis demonstrationibus fundamentalis & essentialis articulus de resurrectione mortuorum probari non possit, verisimiliter tamen ex iis evincitur. And he tells us afterwards, that he will give an account, why that article is not more plainly and explicitly delivered in the law of Moses. The Jew is not able from any express place in the law of Moses to prove the article of everlasting life; and yet he pretends to believe this article. Moses makes no express mention of the creation of angels; and yet the Jews believe they were God's creatures. I wou'd press the Jew to shew me any express doctrine of the rewards and punish. ments in the life to come. If he will attempt to prove this, I will undertake to shew him as much ground to believe the doctrine of the Holy Trinity from that law.

Secondly, That though this doctrine is not plainly revealed in the old Testament; yet there are even there fair intimations of it. To shew this briefly will be sufficient at present: I shall consirm the truth of it afterwards, from arguments which to the Jews are unexceptionable. I will not undertake to give in a perfect account of all the intimations of this doctrine, which are to be found in the old Testament; it shall be enough that I give some instances, which are most obvious, and most material. And first, I shall shew, that in the old Testament there are some places, which intimate some kind of plurality in the divine nature. And secondly,

that there are other places that intimate a Trinity.

(1.) As for those places, which intimate some kind of plurality, I shall not enlarge on them, but only pitch upon a sew: I cannot omit the very suffict words of the old Testament in the history of the creation. In the beginning God created; it is Bara Elohim. Gen. i. 1. The verb is of the singular, but the noun of the plural number. I add Gen. i. 26. And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness. Here we have a verb of a plural number, and another intimation of some plurality. It is farther observed, that the word Elohim is frequently joyned to verbs and adjectives of the plural number. I shall take notice of some sew; the reader may easily collect a great number. v. Gen. xx. 13: God

d Menasseh B. lirael de Resur. mortubrum. c. 1, 1.

L

caused

caused me to wander התעו אחי אלהים, ch. xxxv. 7. God appeared unto him, התעו אלהים; Josh. xxiv. 19, an holy God אלהים, קרשים God, בגלו אליו האלהים To which I shall only add, Eccles. xii. 1. Remember thy creator; in the Hebrew it is, creators, in the plural number. This way of speaking doth intimate some kind of plurality; though not a plurality of gods, as I shall endeavour to prove against the Jews afterwards.

(2.) I ADD, that there are other places which intimate a trinity. This I will prove from the history of the creation, as it is delivered by Moses, in the book of Genesis. But this shall be done in its proper place: I will in the mean while mention some other places to the same purpose. The form of bleffing the people is very remarkable, where the name of God is repeated three times; and fure it is no vain repetition. The Lord bless thee, and keep thee: The LORD make his face to shine upon thee: The LORD lift up his countenance upon thee, and give thee peace, Numb. vi. 24, 25, 26. Again, The LORD is our judge, the LORD is our lawgiver, the LORD is our king, he will fave us, Isa. xxxiii. 2. Again, O LORD hear, OLORD forgive, OLORD hearken and do. Dan. ix. 19. The feraphims in the prophet cried and faid, Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of hosts, Isa. vi. 3. To which I must add what we read, Psal. 1. 1. we render it indeed, the mighty God, even the Lord hath spoken. But there are in the Hebrew three names of God expressed, El, Elohim, and Jehovah. Some very learned men do add those words, Deut. vi. 4. which the Jews repeat daily, and think it most express against this belief of Christians. Hear, O Israel, the LORD our God, is one LORD.

Thirdly, I will appeal to the Jewish writers themselves, as to the truth of what I have affirmed, viz. That in the old Testament there are intimations of some kind of plurality in the divine nature, and of the doctrine of the trinity. If I was to prove the doctrine of the trinity against the Arians and Socinians, I would take another method. For though the testimony of the old Testament in that case ought not to be despised; yet that from the New would be sufficient to them, who own its authority, as those men do. But when I have to do with the Jews, I must use another method. They deny the authority of the new Testament, where this doctrine is clearly taught; and therefore I must insist upon the Old, and their doctors explication of it. And 'twill be enough against them, to shew that there were intimations of this belief in the old Testament, as that was understood and expounded by their Catholick doctors;

and that shall be my next work.

R. Bechai, e a celebrated author among the Jews, discoursing of the word Elohim, and of the import and signification of it, adds these words:

חבר הקבלה השבו הוה שתי מלות אל הבו והנה ביי היור חבר את That is, According to the Kabbalistical way this name Elohim is two words, viz. El Hem, i. e. They are God. But then the explanation of the Jod (which is wanting in these two words) is to be fetch'd from Eccles. xii. 1. Remember thy creators. He that is prudent will understand it. These words do sufficiently prove the Kabbala among the Jews, that though the divine nature was but one; yet there was some kind of plurality in this divine nature: And this is fairly insi-

Bechai in Legem, fol. 4. col. 1. Edit. Cracovi

**nuated** 

# Part III. of the MESSIAS.

nuated in the Barah Elohim, which we find in the book of Genesis. I shall add another testimony to the same purpose, as I find it in a late s learned writer out of the Zohar. I have not that book by me, but I doubt not but the curious reader, who will take the pains to consult that author, will foon find the paffage. The author fpeaking of the word Eוסים, doth it in these very words : רוא רמלה ג' דרגין אינון וכל דרגא בלחודוהי ואעג דכלא חד ומתקשרי בחד ולא יתפרד דא מן דא: i.e. The mystery of Elohim is this: There are three degrees, and every one of these degrees subsisteth by it self; and yet all of them are one, and knit together in one, nor can one be separated from the other. The same g author quotes feveral other passages to the same purpose, which do intimate some kind of plurality in the divine nature at least, and sometimes the trinity. As for example, Deut. iv. 7. We read, אלהים קרבום. He tells us, that by that plural expression is meant the supreme God, the God who was called the fear of Isaac; and Elohim, which he calls בתראה. The fame h author having quoted, Deut. vi. 4. where the name of God is mentioned three times, adds, אלין וכו', i. e. These are three degrees with respect to this high mystery, In the beginning, Barah Elobim. And elsewhere the fame i author upon the same occasion speaks more plainly thus, איהו ויהודא; i. e. This is the unity which is called the first JEHOVAH, our GOD, the Jehovah, Behold all is One: And therefore it is said אחד One, intimating that these three names are One: And therefore we read one, intimating that they are One. This is known so to be by the revelation of the Holy Ghost; However it be otherwise also apparent דתלתא אלן That is, that, These three are one.

I CANNOT omit one place more of k the above-named author, who speaking of that samous place, Deut. vi. 4. The Lord our God is one Lord, he adds the following explication, הוא : That is, This is the mystery of him, who was before the rocks, and is united with the head, the stem, השבילא, i. e. and the way; by Jehovah (i. e. the sirst Jehovah mentioned, Deut. vi. 4.) is meant the high, or sirst, beginning; by the Stem is meant the Stem spoken of Isai. xi. the Stem of Jesse; by Jehovah (viz. last mentioned in Deut. vi. 4.) is meant the way.

ANY man may perceive, that by the second of these is meant the Messias (of whom the words Isai. xi. 1. are by the Jews understood.) And perhaps it might be very easie to shew, why the Holy Spirit is called the way. Teach me to do thy will, for thou art my God: Thy Spirit is good; lead me into the land of uprightness, Psal. cxliii 10. Our Saviour tells his followers, that the Spirit shall guide them into all truth, John xvi. 13. Tis Odryion in the Greek, he shall be the way to the truth, and shall bring you to it.

BEFORE I proceed any farther, I will consider some passages in the first chapter of Genesis relating to the creation. I would have the fews consider them, as they lie in the Hebrew text, to which we Christians do appeal. There they may easily find intimations of that truth, which I am now contending for. Let them give a good account if they can of the

F. J. Henr. Mail Synops. Theolog. Judaic. pag. 31. Zohar. in Levit. fol. 29. col. 4. lin. 25. Edit. Cremon. Ed. Sulzbac. col. 106,

Bid. pag. 35.

L. 2

Barah

'Tis of little moment, which we find in the Bereshith Barah Elohim. Rabbah, that it is not said Barau in the plural number. It is certain, that the noun is plural, though the verb be fingular: I would fain know of the Jew the meaning of this. The Christians urge, that it is an intimation of one divine nature, but that it is also an intimation of some plurality, and that only of persons. I cannot imagine, what satisfaction the Jews can give of this matter. If we proceed to v. 26. It is faid, Let us make man in our image, after our likenefs. These are words, that bear very hard upon the fews. They may put what face upon the matter they will, but the words will still fly in their face. They very well know what he faid in 1 the Bereshith Rabbah on this occasion. It is there related, that when Moses wrote the law, he gave an account of the several works of creation day by day; but when he came to write those words, Gen. i. 26. Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; God questioned him about it, and demanded of him, Why he, after that manner, give occasion to hereticks to open their mouth? I quote that passage for this reason only, that I may shew, that the ancient Jews were of opinion, that that expression of Moses did give ground or occasion to believe, that there is some kind of plurality in the divine nature. And therefore it is not to be wonder'd at, that the ancient Christians should even from these words be induced to fuch a belief. Epiphanius m fays expresly, That Adam was formed by the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, Kara To yeyeaupever, &c. according to what is written, when God the Father is brought in speaking to his Son, Let us make man. Nor can he be justly censured for it, it being plain even from the old Testament, that the divine  $\lambda \delta \gamma \otimes A$ , or Word, as well as the Spirit of God were concerned in the creation of the world. By the word of the LORD were the heavens made, and all the host of them, by the breath of his mouth, Pfal. xxxiii. 6. And, by his Spirit he hath garnished the heavens, Job xxvi. 13. And, the spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters, Gen. i. 2. That spirit which moved, the Jews commonly say, was the spirit of the MESSIAS.

I SHALL now confider those other places of scripture, which do intimate a trinity. Here I shall begin with Psal. l. i. 'Tis true, as I intimated before, that our English translation doth not give to those words any such idea. I shall therefore consider them, as they lie in the Hebrew text, to which I shall appeal in this matter. God is there expressed by El, Elohim and Jehovah. The author n of Midrash Tillim allows, that these are three several names of God; for he asketh this question, : 'למה: וכו' Why doth he mention the name of the blessed God three times? He answers thus, It is to teach thee, that the bleffed God created his world by these three names, which answer to the three Middoth (or properties) by which the world was created; and they are these, wisdom, knowledge and understanding: Wisdom, as it is said, The LORD by wisdom hath founded the earth; Understanding, as 'tis said, By understanding he hath established the heavens; Knowledge, as'tis said, By his knowledge the depths were broken up. And thus it is said Exod. xx. 5. I am the Lord, thy God, a jealous God (Jehovah, Elohim, El, are the words there used) Three answering to the three, by which the world was made. And thus the chil-

<sup>1</sup> V. Beresh Rabbah, fol. 9. col. 2. Edit. Amsteledam. Epiphan. Hares. 46. num. 3. Midr. Tillim. in Psal. 1. 1.

dren of Gad, and the children of Reuben say, o El, Elohim, Jehovah; El, Elohim, Jehovah he knoweth. And why are these mentioned twice? Because by them the world was made, and because by them the law was given. I must leave the reader to make his reslections upon this very remarkable passage. I shall however add what p Jos. Voisin observes for the making this passage more useful, That though the Jews do on this occasion industriously avoid the word person; that yet the Jews do call these three Middoth, in the book Jetzira man, and in the book called the Shaare

Tsedek, פנים הפנימים, i. e. Hypostases or persons.

I PROCEED to Isaiah vi. 3. where the seraphims cry to each other, Holy, holy, holy is the LORD GOD of hosts, the whole earth is full of his glory. I would know of the Jew the cause of this repetition of the word Holy three times; for he cannot suppose it to be a vain repetition: And though I do not produce the place as a clear proof of the trinity; yet all things confidered, it may be allowed as a fair intimation of it: And if what a Galatinus affirms be admitted, it hath a very great weight in this present argument. Galatinus afferts, that this repetition of Holy three times doth expresly shew to us the three divine persons. To prove this he appeals to R. Simeon, the fon of Johai, and to Jonathan the fon of Uziel upon this place. The first of which thus expounds the place: דום וה רנח הקרוש וה בן קרוש וה לו That is, Holy, this is the Father; Holy, this is the Son; Holy, this is the Holy Ghost: The latter of them in Chaldee thus, 'דו' קרוש אבא קד' ברא קד' הוא, That is, Holy, Father; Holy Son; Holy, Holy Ghost. As for what he says from R. Simeon, I can affirm nothing upon my own knowledge: But as for what he fays of 70nathan, it is not so in the copies, which we now have: But then Galatinus affirms positively, that it was so in the ancient copies of Jonathan, out of which the Jews have razed it. He farther avows, that he saw these words in an ancient copy at that time, when the Jews were expelled the kingdom of Naples by the king of Spain. The Jews will believe as they please; I see no cause to disbelieve him. He positively affirms, that he faw it in an ancient copy, and doth truly own, that it is not to be found in the modern copies, which we now make use of. Be that as it will, this is certain, that as the feraphims cry Holy, holy, holy, three times, of the LORD GOD of hosts; so the glory, which they ascribe to him in the following words, is acknowledged to be three-fold also. To this purpose we have a remarkable passage in R. Bechai upon the law. He tells us of three degrees or excellencies which are in Goo; and every degree or excellency is called כבור that is, glory, and פנים that is, faces; which, for what I fee, I may call Πεόσωπα, or persons, The first degree or excellency (saith he) is called the Supreme glory. The fecond is called the Middle glory, the third degree or excellency is called the Latter glory: And he adds, יוהו סור: וכוי, That is, This is the mystery, &c.

I WILL next consider Numb. vi. 24, 25, 26. where we have an account of the form of blessing the people prescribed to Aaron, and to his sons. The Lord bless thee, and keep thee: The Lord make his face to shine upon thee, and be gracious unto thee: The Lord lift up his countenance upon thee, and give thee peace. Here is also a repetition of the name of

o Jos. xxii. 22.
lib. 2. cap. 1.

P Jos. Voilin. in pug. sid. pag. 406.

P Bechai in Legem, fol. 124, col. Edit. Cracov.

3

GOD

GOD three times. The Christians will easily believe, that there is in these words an intimation of the trinity: For this bears a great conformity to what we read in the new Testament; whence we are obliged to be bap-tized into the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, Matth. xxviii. And the apostolical bleffing runs in this form. The grace of the Lord JESUS CHRIST, and the love of God, and the communion of the HOLY GHOST be with you all, 2 Cor. xiii. 14. To which I must add the words of St. John: Grace be unto you and peace from him which is, and which was, and which is to come, Rev. i. 4. This latter place I name the rather upon the account of what R. Bechai observes upon the words before recited from the book of Numbers. He observes the name JEHOVAH repeated three times, with respect to the three several times. the present, past, and future, which the divine being hath a power over. Of him it may be said, that he is, he was, and is to come, or will for ever be. But it will be more material to my present purpose to take notice of what the Jewish writers observe in the very ancient and celebrated book called Bahir, on this occasion. He saith t that the repeating Jehovah three times in this place teacheth us, that these names of the blessed God are three powers, and adds, וכל חיל וחיל דומה לחברו ושמו כשמו i.e. Every distinct power is like to each other, and hath the same name with That is to fay, as it is evident from the u words of that author, Every one is, and is called Jehovah. The same author adds, that in the words of the Psalmist, where it is said, The Lord reigneth, that the words bear witness of the three הוורת (the word signifies existencies or subsistencies) which are in the blessed creator. And what is said, that all is closed with Jehovah, the peculiar name of God, intimates that he is the fountain of all, and from him are the emanations of all: He adds, that it is said in the book Zohar, that in those words, The Lord reigneth, there is a great mystery. But I will not pursue this matter any farther in this place: they who are curious may see more in the authors, which are quoted in the margin. I do not think, that I need to infift particularly on the words of Isaiah, xxxiii. 22. which is parallel to what I mentioned last, at least as to my present occasion. And for the same reason I pass by Dan. ix. 19.

I SHALL proceed to the famous place, Deut. vi. 4. Hear, O Ifrael, the Lord our God is one Lord. This is recited daily by the Jews, and they think it bears very hard upon the Christian's belief of the holy trinity. And indeed so it would, if the Christians did believe a plurality of Gods. But they need not fear this, or any other place of the old Testament, which the Jews are able to produce. We believe the doctrine contained in this scripture as sincerely as the Jews do; and appeal in this matter to the ancient Jews themselves, who have given such an account of these words, as is so far from destroying and subverting their belief of the holy trinity, that it mightily promotes and advances it. And whatever the Jews may conceit, I doubt not but to make it appear, that if the Jews will but admit the interpretation of the ancient doctors upon this place, they will soon find the Christian doctrine consisted greatly, and themselves consuted by their own writers.

R. Bechai. in Pentat. fol. 169. col. 2. Edit. Cracev. fol. 173. col. 1. Edit. Venet. "Ibid. col. 3.

Bechai ib. & R. M. Markanti in Leg.

THOSE

Digitized by Google

THOSE words which we translate thus, The LORD our GOD is one LORD, may be translated thus, The LORD, our GOD, the LORD, are one. This agrees perfectly with the Hebrew text ארותו אלהינו יהוה' אחר. and the Pesik between the two last words requires some pause or stop. So that this version is exactly agreeable to the Hebrew words and to the accent, and (as will appear more afterwards) to the interpretation of the ancient Jewish doctors. This version agrees perfectly with that explication of the Zobar mentioned above, where that author speaking of these words saith expresly, that these three are one. I shall add to what I have observed before, another testimony out of Zobar from \*a Jew: So that the Jews ought not to suspect a writer of their own in this matter, how prone soever they are to suspect the quotations of Christians. That author gives an account of these words, and explains them in that order in which they lie before us in the text. He begins with Jehovah first mentioned. And thus he faith, יהוה:תוי, That is, Jehovah is the head (or beginning) of all things, in splendor, antiquity and holiness; and he is called the FATHER. Elohenu, i, e. Our God, is the profundity of rivers and springs, which go forth and flow unto all things. And then he adds of the Jehovah last mentioned, that he is the tree, &c. I presume he speaks of y the Kabbalistical tree, which is another of the divine Sephiroth, by whom the world was created, the בינה or חבונה by which the world was made. See Prov. iii. 19. My author goes on, And all is one, one is knit to the other, and there is not found any separation, but all are one. He tells us afterwards, that this mystery was to be revealed in the days of the Messias.

BEFORE I proceed any farther in this argument, I shall take off some objections, that are laid in my way against some particulars above-mentioned; which are such, that as some pretend, will not bear the weight and stress, which I have laid upon them.

Obj. 1. The first objection, which I shall mention, shall be what I find in Abravenel, who z after he hath refuted (as he thought) an opinion of Nachman, endeavours to prove that Elohim is not a plural, but that it is a singular, as much as El is. He tells us, that to El two letters of the Tetragrammaton are added, according to a saying among their wise-men; That God created the world with two letters. And that for the termination of the word, that is no proof that it is of the plural number, because there are several words of that termination, which are singular, and denote individual persons, as Mizraim, and Ephraim. I answer,

I. That though the termination of Elohim do very frequently denote a plural; yet no wise Christian lays the whole stress upon that. I have shewed, that Elohim, besides its plural termination, is joined with verbs and adjectives in the plural number. When he contends, that Elohim is of the singular number, he knows that the nation of the Jews is against him. 'Tis very well if he believed otherwise himself. I am sure, that after all his pains to prove this a singular word, he betakes himself to a new method to get himself clear of this difficulty, which is so much the more surprizing, because this his opinion, that Elohim is a singular, and

" Markanti in Legem, fol. 194. col. 3. in Legem, fol. 6, cap. 3.

7 V. Buxtorf, Lexic. Talmud. 17'8

\* Abravenel

made

made up of El, and his additional letters of the Tetragrammaton, he says a little before, is the truth of the matter paper. That is, without doubt. If he really believed it himself, he needed not to have sought out another method.

- 2. WHEREAS he would have his reader believe, that *Elohim* is made up of *El*, and his two other letters, we have nothing but his word, no manner of proof of it. I know that *Jew* too well to take this from him upon trust. But besides this, it is very well known, that the singular number of *Elohim* is not *El*, but *Eloha*, from which 'tis probable 'tis taken, as *Jah*, from Jehovah. As for his names of *Mizraim* and *Ephraim*, he might have spared his pains, till any *Christian* had laid a greater stress upon the bare termination.
- Obj. 2. It is objected farther (not by a Jew; I speak it with trouble when I say, by a Christian) that the using of a plural to express the name of God is derived from Polytheists, who used this way of speaking. The Hebrews lived in Palestine among the idolatrous Canaanites, who worshipped false gods, and accordingly spoke of them in a word of the plural number; and thence it was, with compliance with that usage of these idolaters, that the word Elohim is used in the holy Scripture, of the true God. The Hebrews used a verb in the singular number in conjunction with Elohim, and by that method disowned Polytheism themselves; and when they joined it with a plural in compliance with the usage of the idolaters, yet they where no Polytheists themselves. I answer,
- 1. This is indeed faid, but not proved, nor so much as probable. For is it probable, that the Holy Ghoft (by whom the holy writers were inspired) should use this method? That he should imitate the way of speaking used by these idolatrous Canaanites? That he should do it, when it could not but be very dangerous to the fouls of men! Tis certain, that the Hebrews did not want words enough to express the name of God by, which were of the fingular number, and which they many times use. We well know, that great care was taken to warn the Hebrews not to imitate the usages and practices of the Canaanites: And do we think, that they were left at liberty to speak of the true God in those rerms, which were used of idols? The word Baal was forbid the Israelites, because it was a word that hath been applied to an idol. Thou shalt call me Ishi, and shalt call me no more Baali. For I will take away the names of Baalim out of her mouth, and they shall no more be remembred by their name, Hos. ii. 16, 17. And yet the word Baal did not always import an idol; it was indeed frequently applied that way. According to the objector's opinion, the true God is often meant by Elohim; which was the very word by which the filthy Canaanites ordinarily called their idols and false gods. Here are great presumptions against this this novel and upstart opinion.
- 2. If it be said, that the HOLY GHOST did not choose words for the holy and inspired writers, I will not in this present question debate that matter: I will suppose it so to be. Yet still it cannot be supposed, that the holy writers, when they spake of God, would do it in a manner that was so scandalous and dangerous; that they would speak of him in

V. S. Edzardi Differtation. de nomine Elohim.

Digitized by Google---

fuch terms, as the idolaters were wont to apply to their idols. Much less is it to be supposed, that God himself should use such terms in that law, which he himself wrote; and that this should be written by the singer of God, is incredible: And yet we know, that God stiles himself Elohim, Exod. xx. & Deut. v.

- 3. I would fain know of these objectors, When and where the patriarchs changed their own language? Was it when they (few in number) fojourned in the land of Canaan? Or was it in Egypt that they did it. where they were 215 years, or at least 210? They will not, I suppose; pretend that they changed it in Egypt; notwithstanding their long stay there. Moses was born there, and bred up at court, and was learned in all the Egyptian learning; yet he did not write his law in the Egyptian language. The objectors do not fo much as affirm this. But was it done when they were sojourners in Canaan? How doth this appear? For it is not enough to suppose it. It is a matter of greater weight than to be taken upon trust. It cannot be denied but God spake to Abraham, when he sent him out of his own country towards the land of Canaan: And it must be allowed, that he spake to him in his own language, which Abraham understood. Abraham had those about him in Canaan, which understood this language. Abraham had that abhorrence of the idolatrous Canaanites, that he would not be buried with them, but bought a separate place for the burial of himself and family. He would not enter into affinities with them, but fends his fervant for a wife for his fon into his own country. His fon Isaac trod in his father's steps in this matter, and his wife sufficiently declared her abhorrence of such an affinity. Jacob, we know, went into Abraham's country for a wife. After all, can we think that they were fo fond of the language of Canaan, that for the fake of that they did forego and forget their own? Supposing they understood that language when they sojourned there, doth it follow, that they retained it in Egypt also, for above two hundred years together? Must Moses be supposed to write his books in the language of Canaan, who was never there? He uleth the word Elohim; but whence did he learn it? Sure not from the Canaanites, with whom he had no conversation. To learn the language of Ashdod, and to forget their own, was a reproach to the Hebrews in after-times, Neh xiii. 25.
- 4. I ADD, that this opinion is novel and fingular, and directly contrary to the sense of the fathers of the primitive-church. For this I dare appeal to all those who are conversant in their writings. They argued as we do; and believed the doctrine of the Holy Trinity to be at least intimated in the old Testament: And laid a great stress upon the words used in the beginning of Genesis, which relates the history of the creation. And we ought to have that deserence for them, as not to depart from them without very good reason.

Obj. 3. It is farther objected, that this plural way of speaking is מלכים, according to the manner of kings, who speak of themselves in the plural number. I answer,

I. THAT we have no sufficient proof of this: I do not find any thing offered to this purpose. And if a bare affirmation was enough, we shall never fail of enough of that from the Jewish writers.

2. THAT

2. That the matter of fact is not true, when 'tis said to be the manner of kings to speak in the plural number. I grant, that so it is now; but 'twas not so, when Moses wrote his law. We have plenty of instances to the contrary. Pharaoh, David, Nebuchadnezzar speak of themselves in the singular, not plural number. And its a very extravagant fansie to suppose, that Moses alludes to a custom, that was not (for what appears) in being at that time, nor a great while after. This puts me in mind of a like extravagant conceit of a German divineb, that hath commented upon Genesis. On Genesis ii. 7. He breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, he tells us, That it is not inelegantly by some observed, that this is a metaphor drawn from glass-makers, who by their breath make their cups and glasses into their several forms. That divine should have been sure, that this art of blowing glasses had been as old as that expression of Moses, before he had commended a metaphor, which he fancies might be drawn from thence. The like might be said of this conceit here, in the last named objection.

Obj. 4. Aben Ezra c mentions an objection, in his comment on Gen. i. 26. where it is faid, Let us make man. He says, that it is pretended, that the word nuy is not a future of the active voice; but that it is in Niphal, and signifies as much as Is made; but then what follows, In our image, which bears against that sense of the word, must be the word of Moses, and imply only bumane likeness, that is, such as that of Moses was. I answer,

As Aben Ezra doth, and it deserves no better, that this is ארב לב. That is, a foolish interpretation. The context it self will not admit it. For man was not then made, but we have an account of his creation after this, v. 27. So God created man (not in the image of Moses, but)

in his own image.

I FIND the Jews at a great stand when they mention Gen. i. 26. They blunder at a strange rate, and know not how to extricate themselves out of the difficulty. This may appear from what we find in the description Babba. On those words, Let us make man: It is said, With whom did he advise? R. Joshua in the name of R. Levi says, With his works of heaven and earth, like a king that hath two counsellors, and would do nothing without them. R. Samuel the son of Nachman says, that he advised with every day's work. Another Rabbi says, That he advised with his own heart. R. Chaninah says, With his ministring angels.

Thus diversly and extravagantly do the Jews deliver themselves on this occasion. They foolishly suppose God to advise with his creatures, and even with the earth it self. The angels shall be brought into counsel, who are not so much as mentioned in the history of the creation. But these men do not seem to consider what follows, In our image. Do they suppose man made in the image of any of the creatures? If they do, they may soon be consuted from the next words, where it is said, he created man in his own image.

But it is now time to return to my argument. I shall therefore in the next place consider some passages in the apocryphal books, to prove that the ancient Jews had among them some notion of some plurality in the

b Parzus in Gen. ii. 7. E Aben Ezra in Gen. i. 26. d Fol. 10, c. 1. Edu. Amstelod.

\_ Digitized by Google --

divine nature, and of the holy Trinity. Though these Apoeryphal books be not received into the canon of scripture; yet they must be owned to be written by the Jews, and to contain the sense of that nation in this matter; and to have at least as good authority as the Targums, and other celebrated authors among the ancient Hebrews: And though we may not expect such clear testimonies for the holy Trinity as we have in the new Testament, where this doctrine is explicitly revealed; yet will it be of great moment, if we find such expressions, as intimate that there was a Jewish Kabbala concerning this doctrine, and so confirm that more express revelation, which we have of it in the new Testament.

And here I will be very brief. A late e very learned writer, and my very worthy friend, hath very happily prevented me in this matter; and to him I refer the learned and curious reader for a larger account and

more ample fatisfaction.

HE very well observes, that the Jews from Gen. i. 26. were sensible of some kind of plurality in the divine nature; and that he doth from the prayer of young Tobias thus expressed, Thou madest Adam, and gavest him Eve his wife for an helper and stay; of them came mankind: Thou hast said, It is not good, that man should be alone. Let us make unto him an aid like unto himself. Tobit viii. 6. It is Ποιήσωμεν, the very same word that is used by the LXXII. Gen. i. 26. And that also tho' the word used Gen. ii. 18. be of the singular number. The author of the book of Wisdom ascribes the creation of the world to the Word, ch. ix. 1. And distinguisheth between Wisdom (or the Word) v. 2. and the Holy Spirit, v. 17. This Wisdom he elsewhere calls the worker of all things, ch. vii. 22. having all power, v. 23. The brightness of the everlasting light, and image of God's goodness. We find a distinct acknowledgment of Father and Son, Ecclus. 1. 10. We have an account that the Word and Binah were before all things; and those in the Jewish books are put for the divine λόγ. and Spirit. Wisdom hath been created before all things, and the understanding of prudence from everlasting. The word of God most high is the fountain of wisdom, and her ways are everlast-ing commandments, Ecclus. i. 4, 5. The Spirit of the Lord is said to fill the world. Wisd. i. 7. There is another passage still, which I find mentioned by the very learned author above-named, which I take to be a very clear testimony of the incarnation of the deity. The words are to be found in Baruch, iii. 35, 36, 37. This is our God: And there shall none other be accounted of in comparison of him. He hath found out all the way of knowledge, and hath given it to Jacob his servant, and to Israel his beloved. Afterward did he shew himself upon earth, and conversed with men. This is a passage so very full and pertinent to my purpose; that I think it of mighty force in my present argument against the Jews.

IF these things be put all together, and the whole evidence summed up, they must be of great force in the present question, and enough to convince us, that the ancient Jews did believe some plurality in God, and had great reason so to do: And that there is in the old Testament ground to believe this, and some obscure intimation at least of the boly Trinity.

Digitized by Google

e Judgment of the Jewish church against the Unitarians, ch. viii.

92

But for a fuller proof of this against the Jews, I must refer the reader to

the following chapter.

MEAN while as to what has been said already, I find that f facob Aben Amram the Jew reslects upon the Kabbalistical way of proving the Trinity, he says, that some Christians use this method: But he says, that this theology is above the vulgar; that it contains, indeed, abstruct mysteries, but under such cortical coverings, that the vulgar cannot come at the kernel. He adds, that the most skilful Hebrew divines of this sort do teach the most simple unity of God, clothed with many supreme attributes; and therefore thinks the very ignorant can never prove the Trinity from them.

I AM something surprized with this weak reflection from so subtle and learned a Jew. I think it much below him: I cannot but take notice of

this reflection.

First, HE says, that this learning is above the vulgar and most ignorant: And doubtless so it is. But then we are not to think, that they are the men, that use these sort of arguments. We do not reckon this among the popular ways of arguing. The most learned men in the world, and most conversant in the Jewish learning, have produced such pregnant proofs of this kind, that no Jew will be able to answer them. However he might have attempted it, and tried what he could have answered to those passages produced out of Zohar, and other Kabbalistical books, in behalf of this Christian doctrine.

Secondly, He says, the Kabbalistical divines own the Unity of God I believe this also, but this is nothing to his purpose; for so do the Christians too, who yet believe the doctrine of the Trinity. We are agreed, that there is but one God. And it doth not thence follow that what the Christians teach from the new Testament, concerning the Trinity, was

not agreeable to what the Jews taught also.

f Jacob Aben Amram num. 141,



CHAP.



## CHAP. V.

The testimony of Philo the Jew, concerning the Holy Trinity, and the λόχ. A fragment of his out of Eusebius, with a reflection upon it. His account of the cherubims and flaming sword. Its agreeableness to the Jacred writers. A passage of Origen to the same purpose. His account of the three persons mentioned, Gen. xviii. Some reflections upon that account with relation to the Christian's account of the Holy Trinity. Some other places out of Philo the Jew to the same purpose, with reflections upon them. The account which Philo gives of the xóx&. He makes the Manna a symbol of the Noy. He speaks in this agreeably to the other Jewish writers, and to what we read in the new Testament. Philo owns the Ady . to be the governour of the world, the Son of God, and that he was begotten eternally, and that he is necessarily immortal. The rows of precious stones on Aaron's breastplate a symbol of the 2649. A very remarkable place of Philo to that purpose. The xoyo considered by Philo as an advocate. That the 2626. cannot be a creature is shewn from another passage in Philo. He calls the hope the Angel mentioned, Exod. xxiii. 22. And the true high-priest. He affirms the Levitical high priest to be a type or fymbol of the xixo. He expounds these words. Zech. vi. 12. Behold the man whose name is the branch, of the hoy. He affirms him to be the mediator between GoD and man; To be not unbegotten as the Father, and not begotten as men. The substance of Philo's evidence summed up. The Chaldee Paraphrasts considered in this matter. They speak of the Norse as of a divine person. Several testimonies to this purpose out of Onkelos, and from the paraphrase of Jonathan, and that of Jerusalem. An objection of an Anti-trinitarian: An answer to that Objection. Of the Shechinah.

I SHALL now proceed to lay before the Jews, what their countryman Philo hath faid in confirmation of the Christian doctrine concerning the Holy Trinity, the Son of God, and the divine λόγ.

I SHALL begin with a fragment of Philo's mentioned by <sup>2</sup> Eusebius, who cites Philo speaking of God's creation of man, in the following words. ΔΙΑ τί, ώς του έτιρου δεῦ φησὶ τὸ, Ε΄ν εἰκόνι δεῦ ἐπρίπσα τὰ ἄνθρωπω, ἀλλ' ἐχὶ τῆ ἑαυτῦ; παίκαλως ὰ, σοφῶς πυτὶ καχρησμάδηλας θνητών γδ ἐδὲν ἀπείκονιδηνου τερὸς τὰ ἀνωταίτω ὰ παίκου δηλών εδιωίατο, ἀλλὰ ωρος τὸν διωτιερν δεὸν, ὅς εμιέρι Ρερρα. Εναηςεί, 1.7. εκρ. 13. Paris. 1628.

· 83.1

I could not justifie a Christian, that should say, that the  $\lambda \delta_{\gamma}$  is the second God, because this might infinuate that there were more gods than one: But this doth not render the testimony of Philo useless. His words are of great use in the present question: For first, he doth distinguish between the person of the Father, and the  $\lambda \delta_{\gamma}$ , whom he elsewhere calls the Son: And secondly, He doth expressly affirm this  $\lambda \delta_{\gamma}$  or Son to be God. And consequently that he did acknowledge some kind of plurality in the divine nature, which can be nothing more or less than a plurality of persons; as, I presume, will appear before I have done with this

matter.

THE next place which I shall take notice of is, b where he discourseth of the Cherubims and flaming sword mentioned, Gen. iii. 24. He gives his allegorical interpretation of the Cherubims and flaming sword; the former he makes a representation of the two hemispheres, the latter a symbol of the sun: But after all he proceeds, and adds, "Husou de mon es ous de le respe λόγε σθα θυχῆς εμῆς εἰρθυίας ταὶ πολλαί θεοληταθείθαι, κὶ τοθί τον έκ οἶδε μανπύεραι, ον εάν δύνωμαι δπομνημονδύσας ερώ ελεγε δε μοι, κζ τον ένα ζετως οιπα θερι ορο της σκαιατης εξ) κρών ο παρικών τη κερερίκ εξ) οραθογα κριών, αθα θε εριών κριών κριών κριών κριών το και δεριών το και δεριών ο κριών το κρι γίνω ρόμφαίαν όξυκινηπότα τον ηδ κ Αερμόν λόγω, κ μάλισα τε αίτίε, επ κ αυτό πάντα φθούσαν παρημείλα το, ε το πάντων νοκμβύον, ε ठिलो πασι φαινόμβμον, i.e. But my own soul, which sometimes is divinely transported, and delivers oracles not known to it self hath given me a more exact account, which I will endeavour to recollect and report. It said unto me, That to the truly one God there were two supreme and primary powers belonging, Goodness and Power. And by Goodness all things were made, and were governed by Power. That there was still a third as a conciliator in the midst of the two former, viz. the Word. That by this Word, God the midst of the Gambala of the G is both a governor and good, and that the cherubims are symbols of these two powers of government and goodness, and the flaming sword of the Word. For the hope or word, was very swift and fervent, especially that of the first cause; it being in time before all things understood, and appearing above all. After this manner of speaking doth he in the foregoing words, as also in those which follow, give an account of the

Philo Alleger. 1. 2. pag. 86. F. Ship .

divine

divine being: and plainly afferts at the same time the unity of the divine essence. To what Philo says here of the horse. To word, of which he makes the slaming sword a symbol, he speaks conformably in another place; where speaking of God's cutting and dividing the united natures of things, he adds, that he doth it which we will some all things. This is very agreeable to what we read, Heb. iii. 12. The word of God is quick and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is

a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

IT appears from what hath been faid before, how agreeable what Philo fays of the  $\lambda \delta \gamma \otimes \gamma$  is to what the author of the epistle to the Hebrews speaks of the same. I may add, that it agrees also with what we read Wisdom xviii. 15, 16. Thine almighty word leapt down from heaven, out of thy royal throne, as a fierce man of war, into the midst of a land of destruction; and brought thine unfeigned commandment as a sharp sword, &c. And as Philo agrees with this Jewish writer; so they both agree with the author of the Apocalypse, Rev. xix. 13, 15, 21. compared with Chap. i. 16. and Ch. ii. 16. where the Word of God is described with a sharp sword going out of his mouth. And how agreeable all this is with the prophecy of Isaiah concerning the MESSIAS, hath been obferved by d one of the ancient Christians. I shall not think much to transscribe his words upon this occasion, and they are these; Er o ro Hodge έτασ το το πατρός πεθείδαι αυτό το σομα ώς μαχαιραν όξειαν, η κεκρύρδαι ύπο των σκέτωων της χειρός αυτές, βέλει εκλεκτώ ώμοιωμβίθο, κ) εν τη φαρέτρα τέ παίρος κεκρυμμβίω, δέλω το δεκά δλι το σόμα το μάκαλεμβίω, κὸ Ἰσεαλλ, τὸ φῶς εθνῶν μάχαιεα μὰ διο όξεκά δλι το σόμα το μίε το δεκ, επείζων τυγχάνει δ λόγ. Τέ θευ, η ενεργής, η τομώπερ. ζωέρ ωᾶσαν μάχαιεαν δίσομον, η δικυθμύμο. ἄχει μερισμέ ψυχῆς κὰ πυδίμα ο, έρμῶν τε κὰ μυτλών, κὰ κεντικός ἐνδυμήσεων καὶ ἐννοιῶν καιρδίας, ἄλλως τε καὶ ἐλλων ἐκ ἐιρήνλω ὁπὶ τλω γλῶ, τετ έςιν 6π Τα σωματικο καί αιδηπα, βαλείν, αλλα μα χαιεαν, καὶ διακόπων τίως είν ετως είπω, 6πιβλαβη φιλίαν ψυχής καὶ σώματ. το πίν ή ψυχή 6πιδιδεσα εαυτίω τως ς εατδουθώω η διακόπος πνόματι, φιλιωθη τω δεω That is, It is faid in Isaiah, that the Father made his mouth like a sharp sword, and that he was hidden in the shadow of his hand, and likened to a polished shaft, and hidden in his quiver, and was called the servant of Gon, and Israel, and a light to the Gentiles. Therefore is the mouth of the Son of God a sharp sword. The Word of God is quick and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart; he coming not to send peace upon the earth, that is upon corporeal and sensible things, but a sword; cutting asunder the hurtful friendship between the soul and body, that the soul permitting it self to the spirit, that wars against the slesh, might be at friendship with God. By this it appears, that Philo speaks of the Noy . in the same terms, and under the same Idea and character, that the holy writers made use of both Jews and Christians. I very well know, that Abravenel (as well as some of the Jews) understands the words above cited to be meant not of the Messias, but of the pro.

d Origen in Joannem. Colonie, 1685. pag. 34. Isa. xlix. Heb. iv. 12.

phet

phet *Isaiah*. It would be too great a digression in this place to enter into that debate. There is no indifferent person, who can make any doubt of that matter, that considers the context with due application of mind.

Philo hath another passage in his second book of allegories, something to the same purpose with that first above named, which I will not now

insist upon.

But essewhere che hath a passage more clearly relating to the same purpose. He tells us, that the soul fully enlightned Τρίττην φαντασίαν ένδι υποκειμένει παπαλαμβάνει, i. e. Receives as it were a three-fold image of one subject. He goes on and tells us, that there is one Father of all things, who in the scripture is called O an, or he who is. But he who is, is attended with his most ancient and nearest powers; of which one is creative, the other kingly or governing, The sirst is called God, by which he made and disposed all things: The other Lord; it being sit that the creature should be governed by its maker. And that being thus attended with these powers, παρέχει τη δεατική διανόια, τότι μὲν ένδι, τότι β τριών φαντασίαν, i. e. He exhibits to the discerning mind some

time the representation of one, some times of three.

I THINK fit, that the reader may make the better judgment, to transcribe that whole passage out of Philo. I shall premise, that he is discoursing in that place of Abraham's entertaining the three persons mentioned, Gen. xviii. who came to him in the heat of the day, which he, following the LXXII, understands of the noon, or mid-day. His words are these; Ένειδεν οιὖ ψυχή καθάπερ ον μεσημερία θεῷ το κυκομβρία δεῷ το κυκομβρία δεῷ το κυκομβρίας το κυκομβρία Kinτal, τειτίω φανίασίαν ένις σουκημήνε παπαλαμβανα τε μ ώς εντω. τοιν δ' άλλου δυοίν, ώς αν άπαυραζομθών άπο τέτε σπάν, δποίδν τι συμβαίνα καλ ποίς εν αίσθητος φωτί διατρίβεσην. Η θο έξωτων η κακμβίων διτίας σκιας πολλάκις συμπίπθεω. Μη κέν τοι κομισάτα τις βλή θες τας ακιάς κυθιογολειθαί. κατήχρησις διλματ. αὐτὸ μόνο, δξὶ ωθός εἰαργες εμφασιν τὰ διλεμένε ωθάγματο: έστε πόγε άληθες έχ έτως έχει άλλ ές ν ώς άν πε της άληθείας εγίντα α ίταμω 🕒 Εποι, πατήρ μέν την όλων δ μέσ 🗣, δς έν τας ι εραίς γραφας πυρία ονοματι καλείται ο ων αί ή παρ έκαιτεςα σερεσδύπαται η είγυπα αι τε εντ. Ο בער אונים של אונים אים או אונים אים ווידואות, או של בער אונות שו בער של בער אונות אונים Απός · παύτη ης έληνικ τε καί διεκόσ μησε το παίν · ή ή βασιλική κύρι . θέμις ης άρχειν και κεπτείν το πεποιηκός το γκομένο δομφορεμίνος οιώ δ μέσο ύρ' έκατερας τη δυνάμεων παρέχει τη δεαπκή διανιία, ποτέ με ένος, ποτέ ή τριών φαπίασίαν ένδς μβύ, όταν άπρως καθαρθείση ή ψυχή, και μή μόνον τά πλήθη Αβ άριθμίζη, άλλα ε τίω γείπονα μονάδ 6 δυάδα τως εασα, σε ες τίω αμιγή καὶ εσύμπλοκον καὶ καθ' αυτίω εδενός επιδεάπο ωθάπαν εδεαν επείγηση τριών Β, δταν μήπω τὰς μεγάλας τελεωθίσε τελετάς, έτι ο τ βραχυτίρας δργιάζεθαι καί μη διώνται το δν ανου έτερε τινός εξ αυτέ μόνε καλαλαβάν, αλλα λία το δρω-μονων, η κτίζον η άρχον. That is, When therefore the soul, as at noon-day, is enlightned by God, and is intirely filled with intelligible light, being surrounded with the beams of it, then it becomes without any shadow, and it receives a three-fold image of one subject: Of one as of a being, of the other two as of shadows enlightned from that being, as it happens to them that continue in a sensible light; to whom often two shadows happen, whether they stand or move. But let no man think, that shadows can

Philo de Abrahamo, pag. 287.

properly

flood, in order to the better and more clear apprehending this matter; the truth of the thing being otherwise. But to come as near to the truth as may be, the Father of all things is the middle, who in the holy Scriptures is properly called O âv, i. e. He who is. But then he who is, is on each side attended by his most ancient and nearest powers, of which one is creative, the other kingly. The creative is God, by which he founded and adorned the universe. The kingly is Lord. It is sit that the creature should be governed by its maker. He that is in the middle, being thus attended by both his powers, doth exhibit to the discerning mind sometime the representation of one, sometime of three: Of One, when the soul being throughly purified, and not only having got beyond a multitude of numbers, but also the Dual that stands next to the Unite, is carried on to the simple and unmingled Idea that wants nothing; of Three when the soul not being initiated into the greater mysteries, but detained under the lesser, is not able to comprehend him Who Is, without

some other, either his Acts of creation or government.

THE same author, in the very next page, pursues the same argument, and farther explains himself. I will lay before the reader the substance of what he fays upon this occasion. He fays, there are three orders of men, and they are distinguished according to their several apprehensions of the divine being. The best of the three are such, as apprehend the divinity under the representation of Him Who Is. The second are such as apprehend rin disposito, & deds drouged i. c. The creative or beneficent power, which is called God; the third the kingly or governing power, which is called LORD. The first rank he reckons the best, but doth not exclude those, who are known to the Father by those Powers. He explains himself thus. Men are shy of those who court their friendship for By ends: But God admits all men who worship him. But then he will bestow the prime rewards on them, that worship him for his own sake; and in the next place he will reward them that worship him for the fake of some other good things, or the avoiding of some evils, i. e. that worship him as a benefactor, or a king; for they all agree in a good work, viz. the worship of God. That there is a three-fold representation of one subject, is plain, not only from the allegorical but literal sense. For when Abraham desired the three persons to receive his hospitality, he doth not address to them as to Three, but as to One, saying, My Lord, if I have found favour in thy sight, pass not away. And he treats them afterwards as One.

I CANNOT but make some reslection upon this noble testimony of *Philo*, before I proceed any farther. It comes up to the purpose for which it is produced, viz. It shews that there was among the *Jews* a belief of some kind of plurality in God, and that that plurality exceeded not the number of three; and farther still, that the two *Powers*, which attended upon the Od, were not creatures, or attributes only, but divine persons. And tho' this last cited passage of *Philo* doth alone bid fair for the proof of all this; yet I shall not only reslect on this passage, but shall confirm this from other places of the same writer.

First, I WILL restect upon the last recited passage of Philo. And here I observe a plurality in the divine nature observed by Philo. It is

Digitized by Google

certain that he was no Polytheist. He sufficiently declares his belief of one God on all occasions; he doth it particularly f in a place, where he takes notice at the same time of some kind of plurality in the divine nature: As on those words, Gen. i. 26. Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; where, says he, Let us make, doth declare aniflos, a plurality. He observes the like on Gen. iii. 22. Behold the man is become like one of us. His words on these last words are these, no 30 ws as huw, con es ink, and bill πλειόνων τίθεται. That is, those words, as one of us, are not put for One, but for more than One. Soon after these words he adds. "Ear είς αρχων, καὶ βαπλούς, ῷ σορυπανούειν κὸ διοικεῖν μόνφ θέμις πὰ σύμπαν Τα· τὸ χὸς Ουκ άχαθον πολυχριεανίη, είς κοίεαν 🕒 έςω, Είς βασιλούς, έκ όπι πόλεων κὶ άιθρώπων λεγοιτ' αν ονδίκη μαϊλον, η επί κόσμε και δεδ. ένος ηδ ενα πυιντίω τε και πατέρα πάλιι, και δεσσότω αναγκαίον εί). i. e. God is one governour, prince, king, by whom alone it is fit that all things should be administred and disposed of. For what is commonly said, That the government of many is not good, and there must be one head, one king, doth not more belong to cities and people, than to the world and God. That it is necessary, that there should be only One maker, and father, and governour of the one world.

Philo sufficiently clears himself in these words from any just imputation of Polytheism: And yet doth he believe some plurality, and indeed a trinity. He mentions the O av, i. e. He who is, and whom he calls the Father of all things (of whose divinity there is no dispute.) But then he mentions the Two Powers: One which is called (he says) God, the other Lord: One making the world, the other governing it; and

therefore they cannot be creatures, but divine persons.

I SHALL next consider some other places of Philo to the same purpose. For what he delivers concerning this matter, he repeats upon all occasions, as that which was his constant and settled judgment in the case. I will not name all the places, that I could; it shall suffice, that I produce some of them; and that with this intention, that the reader may see, that this was the constant doctrine of this Jew. I will lay be his own words before the reader, and they are these: "H sx bpac, cri al no or at arcura 2) μέχιται τη διωάμεων είσιν, ήτε διεργέτις κο πολαςήριω; ε προσαγορδίεται, ή με διεργέτις θεός, επειδή η παύτιω έθηκε κο διεκόσμησε το παν ή δοντέρα κύριω. ησω ην ανηπία τη ολων το κράτω; θεδς έκ ανθρώπων μένον, αλλά κα Dew Bi Deòs, μέγας το αν, ων όντως, και lqueòs, και κεαταιός. i. c. Dost thou not see that about him who is, are his first and greatest powers, his beneficent and his punishing? The beneficent is called God; for according to this he founded and adorned the Universe: The other is called LORD, to whom belongs the Government of all things, God is not the God of men only, but of gods. He who Truly Is, is great and strong, and mighty. Elsewhere the h same author making mention of Kuplos, & beds alwinos, That is, the LORD, the Eternal God, he immediately adds these words; 'Aι τοινυν λεχθώσαι περσρήσεις τως περί το ον εμφαίνεσι δυνάμεις ή μεν 35 κύριος, καθ' ην άρχει, ή δε θεός, καθ' ην δεργεπε.

That is, These words, (i. e. The Lord the eternal God) declare the Powers which are about him who is: the one of them is the

Philo de confus. ling, pag. 270, A. B. Philo de vitt. offer. pag. 661. B. C. Philo de plantat. Nos pag. 176.

Lord,

\_Digitized by Google

LORD, by which he governs; the other is God, by which he is beineficent.

THE same Philo mentioning Gen. xviii. 6. where Abraham commands Sarah to make ready three measures of fine meal, and to make cakes for the entertainment of his three strangers, adds i these words; "Hring & θεός δορυφοερύμβυ. το δυείν την ανωτάτω δυμάμεων, αρχής τε αυ και αγαολα. η μι οιμι αβαθοτικ αντι μετρον αβαθων εξιν. η β εξεσία μετρον επικόων. Είς ων δ μέσων τριτίας φαντασίας ενειργάζετο τη δεστική ψυχή, ων εκάς πριμέτρηκε β τα συντικό το με μετρον επικόων. δ ή ήγεμων αυτός απάνθων και σωματων και ασωμάτων διο κ αι διωάμεις κανόνων κὶ εξαγελμάτων λαβεσαι λόγον, τὰ μζ παύτας ἐςαθμήσαντο τὰ μὶ δη τρία μέτρα παυτα καλόν ἐν ψυχη ώστερ φυραθιμαί τι κὶ σιμενεγχορίναι, Ινα ποωθεσα τὰ ἀνωτάτω ἔὶ θτον, ὁς ἐρθκόνυφε τὰς δυνάμεις αὐτό, καὶ χωρίς αὐτίμος ὁρφιμος κὰ ἐν ταύταις ἐμφαινόμος, δέξη αχαρακτήρας ἐξεσίας τι καὶ δίεργεσίας αὐτό, κὰ την τελείων μύςις χυριμόνη πελετίμο, μηθενὶ περχείρως ἐκλαλή τὰ Αεία μυτήρια, παμιδιομένη δι αὐταί τὸ έχεμιθέσα εν εποβρήτω φυλάτζη. γεγρααύτε μισην λόγον επεί θείων ωθακαθαλήκην δργίων ε παντός εξι φυλάξαι, i. c. When God is attended with his two supreme powers, government and goodness, being One in the middle, he exhibits to the discerning soul a three-fold Idea, each of which are not to be measured; for his powers are not to be circumscribed. He gives measure to all things. His goodness is the measure of Good Things; His Power of things subjest; but he himself is governour of all things corporeal and incorporeal. Therefore these powers sustain the notion of rules and precepts, and set a weight on other things. It is good that these three measures should, as it were, be fermented and mingled in the soul, that being perswaded that there is a supreme God, eminent over his powers, seen without them, and appearing in them, it may receive the characters of his power and goodness; and being initiated into the holy mysteries, it may not easily discover them, but silently keep them hidden. It is written, And made k Cakes; because it is fit that the mystical account of him, who is unbegotten, and of his powers should be hidden; for every one is not fit to be keeper of these divine mysteries.

In another place the same Philo puts his reader upon approving himself to the supreme being, laying aside all lower familiarities: But then he adds these following words; 'Ea' δ' aea αδυνατής, πορβάκου χάρ το τε άξιώμα
1. μέγεθω. ιως αμεταπρεπίι περίς πείς διωμμες κὰ τέπων εκέπες κυν μέχεις αν καταπεξων το συνερες κὰ γνήσου τῆς δεραπείας, ἐν τῆ τῆς δίαρες στατον καὶ καγοπατος κώρα, καθάπερ κὰ τὰ Νῶε, ε τῆς ἐρρων θαυμας όπατον καὶ καγοπατον πεποίντας τὰ καπάλογον φικό χαρ, Αυται αι κυέσεις Νῶε Νῶε ανθρωπω δίκαιω, τέλειω ῶν ἐν τῆ κυες ἀυτες κὰ τῷ δεῷ δίκρες κοτ Νῶε. That is, But if thou art not able (viz. to arise to this highest pitch of perfection) for this is a very high flight, forthwith apply thy self to his powers, and be a supplicant to them, that being prevailed on by thy constant and sincere worship, thou mayst be received into the order or rank of them that walk with or please God; as it was with Noah, of whose works

Digitized by Google

the

i Philo de Sacrif. Abel & Caini, pag. 108. B. L'Eyappolas is the Word used by the LXXIL and by Philo; which we render Cakes on the hearth, viz. Such cakes as are hidden with embers. Philo, qued Deus sis immutabilis, pag. 244. B.

the scripture gives this marvellous account, that he was righteous and

perfect in his generation, and that he pleased God.

I MIGHT add more to these places which I have produced; but these are sufficient to my purpose. These powers are ranked with him who is; are said to have made and to govern the world; to be God and Lord; to be winesyeapos, that is, not to be circumscribed, as well as he who is; We are directed to pray to them, and worship them; they are distinguished from the Father; and Philo, who says all this, must believe them to be divine persons, and so must every man do, that believes him.

I SHALL now proceed to consider, what Philo says of the  $\lambda \delta \gamma \Theta$ . or Word, and the son of God; which are the titles, which the sacred writers of the new Testament bestow upon the Messias, and apply to Jesus: In which we shall plainly see, how conformably he speaks to

the style of our holy writers.

Philo speaking of the Manna, which the Israelites did eat in the wilderness, hath m these words: Καλείται γάρ το μάνια τι, or as it ought to be read (as appears from a parallel place; Leg. Allegor. Lib. 2.) Καλάται γάρ ποι μάντα τί δ πάντων εξί γίνω. το 3 χυνώπα τον εξιν δ θελς και δάντοω δ θε λόγω, i.e. The Manna is called τί, which is the Genus of all things. But that which is most general is GoD; and the second is the Aby G., or the Word of God. For the explication of which it is to be remembred that when the people of Israel first saw the Manna, they were surprised, not knowing what it was: They faid, as the LXXII have it, Exod. xvi. 15. Il & Tow; i. c. What is this? The text says, that they wish not what it was. This translation Philo n follows, as appears from another of his books. And it being a thing strange to them, and which they did not explicitly understand, he calls it wirlow sire, the Genus of all things, whose particular name and nature they did not comprehend. Such (fays he) is God; and the second, the Nord of God. We are to know, that Philo makes the Manna to be a symbol of the divine  $\lambda \sigma_{\lambda} \Theta_{\lambda}$ or Word, the food and nourishment of our immortal souls. He tells us, that o this x50 is the bread, which God gives us to eat, and is above all the world, more ancient and general than all the creatures. To this purpose he applies Deut. viii, 3. Man doth not live by bread only; but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. He affirms, that siμα, or Mouth, in those words is σύμβολον το λόγε, i. e. A symbol of this 2679, or Word of God. To the same purpose doth Philo discourse elsewhere p. He tells us, that the Israelites, upon their first finding of Manna, did not indeed understand what it was; but that being instructed they found that it was bas dogs, i, e. the divine Word, which was the spanis reoph, or heavenly food; which, as he says afterwards, affords light and sweetness to the soul. He elsewhere a calls Manna the divine Word, and the heavenly and immortal food of the foul. The reader will eafily discern, how conformable these words of Philo are to the words of the gospel of St. John. Our Jusus, who is called the Ady G., or word, John i. speaks very agreeable to this notion of Philo concerning the Manne, which the Israelites found, and did eat in the wilderness. He commands the Jews, who followed him for the loaves, in these words, Labour not

m Log. Alleger, lib. 3. Alleger, lib. 2. Ibid. ? Philo de profugis. 4 Philo, Quis rer. Divin. bares.

for

for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the son of man shall give unto you, John vi. 27. Upon this the Jews enquire of him farther, what they should do, and what fign he would shew them; and add, Our fathers did eat Manna in the desert, as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat, Vers. 31. Then said Jesus unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my father giveth you that true bread from heaven. For the bread of Gon is he, which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world. Upon this the Jews faid, LORD, evermore give us this bread. And JESUS said unto them, I am the bread of life. He that cometh to me shall never hunger, and he that believeth on me shall never thirst: Verse. 31, 32, 33, 34, 35. Upon these words the Jews murmured at him: But Jesus repeats the same words again, I am the bread of life; Your fathers did eat Manne in the wilderness, and are dead: This is the bread, which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof and not die; I am the living bread, which came down from heaven, Verse. 48, 49, 50, 51.

It is farther observable, that our Saviour, who was the antitype of the Manna, met with such an entertainment from the Jews, as the Manna is observed by Philo to have met with from the Israelites. When the Israelites sirst saw the Manna, they said, Ti vivo; i. e. What is this? The text tells us, that they wist not what it was; And after that they despised and loathed it. This was what Jesus met with also. His own knew him not, and rejected him. We know (say they) that God spake by Moses: As for this fellow we know not whence he is. John ix. 29.

I ADD, that what Philo says concerning the Manna is very agreeable, not only to what we read in the new Testament, as hath in some measure been observed before; but to what the other Jewish writers say concerning it. If he makes it a fymbol, and puts a spiritual meaning upon it, so do they also. Know (says a Jewish author) that there is in the Man-חם, i. e. a great mystery. This was a bread from heaven, and the food of angels. The light is sweet, says Solomon; This Manna (say the Jews) is of the cognation of light, and this light is from above, and was incorporated by the will of the bleffed creator: So that they, who did eat Manna, were nourished with the same food with angels, viz. the splender of the Shechinah. Of this Manna (they say) the just shall eat in the world to come. God gave Manna (says R. Bechai) to them who received the law, to purific their minds, and to prepare them for the knowledge of the blessed God. The author of the book of Wisdom calls Manna, angel's food, and bread prepared from heaven without man's labour; able to content every man's delight, and agreeing to every taffe. And a while after he adds, That thy children, O LORD, when thou lovest, might know, that it is not the growing of fruits that nowrisheth man, but that it is thy WORD, &c. Wisdom xvi. 20, 26. These will justifie the Christian writers to all intents and purposes. If the Jew calls it the heavenly food, and the food of the foul, no wonder that St. Paul should call it spiritual meat, I Cor. x. 3. If it was the bread of angels, or that glory, which they partake of in heaven, no wonder that

<sup>\*</sup>R. M. Markanti in Leg. fol. 34, col. 3, 69 4, R. Bechai in Leg. fol. 88, vol 4, 1 2 2 R. Bechai in Exod.

St. John should express the heavenly reward by eating of hidden Manna, Apoc. ii. 17. If the Jews say, that it was the heavenly splendor incorporated, nothing can be a fitter type of the  $\lambda \acute{o}\gamma \odot$ , that was made sless. If the Jews make it a symbol of the divine Word, no wonder that Jesus (who professed himself to be that Word) should apply it to himself, John vi. If according to the Jews, the just were to eat of this Manna in the world to come, it cannot seem strange, that Christians should express the spiritual blessings of the days of Messias, and the bliss of a suture state after the same manner. And if Philo affirms the rock in the wilderness to be synonymous to the Manna, which he styles for apostication was overal, how or overal, we need not wonder, that St. Paul should say of the Israelites, that they did all drink of the same spiritual drink: For they drank of that spiritual rock that sollowed them; and that rock was Christ, 2 Cor. x. 4.

THE same u author tells us, that this divine λόγ . is the governour of this lower world, that he is ὁ πηθαλιέχος και κυβερνήτης τε παντός: He sits at the helm and disposeth of all things. This he lays down as a principle, which ought to quiet our minds under all contingencies or events. And \* elsewhere, more particularly, he tells us. That God, As a king, and as a shepherd, doth according to right and law govern the creatures as a flock; the earth and water, the air and fire, all plants and living creatures, perishing things, and things more divine, the nature of the heaven, the periods of the sun and moon, the motions of the stars and their harmonious dances; Πεοςνοτάμθω. τον έρθεν αυτέ λόγον τρωτόρονον τίς, &c. Setling over them the right Word, the first begotten Son, who takes upon him the care of his holy flock, as the vicegerent of this great king, as 'tis written (Exod. xxiii. 23.) I will send mine angel before thee, &c, And then he goes on, Now (says he) let all the world say, that great and most perfect flock of the true God, The Lord is my shepherd, and I shall want nothing. He goes on to stir up the particular creatures after the most hearty manner to praise God upon this account, as being now fecure, that they shall want nothing, that is needful for them Grisurge Terror bee, God now presiding over them, who will not fail to supply the necessities of his creatures. I will set down the words of the author, Καθάπερ γάρτινα ποίμνων, γων ѝ υδωρ ѝ αίεα ѝ πυρ ѝ έσα έν τέποις φυτά τι αυ છે (જેવ, મહ દિ ઝળાયો, મહ છે જેકાંવ ' हैंग છે કેટલાઈ φύના, છે મેર્રોક છે જદ્રરોર્દ્યાં જિટ્ટાઇક કર, છે το αλλων αξέρων τεσπάς τε αυ εξ χορέας εναρμονίς, ως ποιμίω και βασιλούς Δεξς αχει κ. δερθόν αυτέ λόχον πρωτόχονον ψόν, δε λαωτάτη τη δυτ. Θ. Θες ποίμνη αγέλης, οια τι μεγάλε βασιλέως υπαρχ. δια-δίζεται και ηδ ερπταί πε. Ιδε εγώ είμι, δποςελών αίγελον με είς πεόσωπόν σε πε φυλάξαι σε εν τη δδώ. λεγέτω τοίνων και δ ηφομ. απας, ή μεγίς και τε-περε το σεκών και νομον, ωρυσποιαργών. σω έκας 🕒 την εν μέρα το αυτό τέτο, μη τη διά γλωτίης η σοματ Θ. ρεκση σωνή, πεκ βεαχείαν αίρο. Κυνεμθή μοιεαν, αλλά τη τ διανοίαι δύριμομένη, κ των πε παντός απίομένη περάτων αμήχανον 36 των 6πιθακλόντων ενθειαν είναι πινος, Επιτυτύντο θου πλήρη ε τίλεια πάγαθα τοις είν απαπι εωθότος χαρίζεοθαι.

Thus like a Christian doth this great man deliver himself. Any man may soon discern, that he speaks what is very conformable to what is said

Digitized by Google

<sup>2</sup> Philo pag. 137. G. Kabbala Denudat. Tom, 2. pag. 393. "Lib. 2. Alleg. pag. 28. B. x Philo de Agricultur, pag. 152. B.

in the new Testament; where we shall find the same doctrine delivered and the same power and dominion attributed to the Messias, and claimed by Jesus, which Philo owns to belong to the λόγ. All things (says Jesus) are delivered unto me of the Father, Matth. xi. 27. All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth, Ch. xxviii. 18. The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand, John iii. 35, And hath given him authority to execute judgment also: Ch. v. 27. He is said, to uphold all things by the word of his power, Heb. i. 2. φέρων, which we render upholding, signifies governing or ruling, in that place; as the word wull is observed to do, from which comes xwil, which signifies a prince. Our Saviour is called appar, and prince of the kings of the

earth. Apoc. i. 5.

WE see, that he calls the Abyos the Son of God, and his first begotten Son. It will be fit here, for the farther clearing of this whole matter, to shew, that Philo believed that this Son of God was begotten from all eternity, as we Christians do believe and teach. I will lay his words before the reader: His y words are these, Kar μηθέπω μέν τοι τυγχάνη τις αξιόχρεως ών ψές θεδ σερσαρορούεδαι, σε εδαζε ποσμείδαι η τη πρωτόρονον συτε λόγον, τον αγγελον πρεσθυταίον, ως άρχωγγελον πολυώνυμον ύπαρχονία και γο άρχη, και δυομα πρεσθυταίον, ως άρχωγγελον πολυώνυμον ύπαρχονία και γο άρχη, και δυομα δεθ, και λόγος, και δ κατ εἰκόνα ἄνθρωπος, και δρών Ισεαήλ πεοσαγορούεται διό πεοήχθω ἐλίγω πεότερον ἐπαινέσαι ται άρχας τ'μό φασκόνίων, ὅτι παντες ἐσμεν ψοι ἐνὸς ἀνθρώπε και γο εἰ μήπω ίκανοι δεξ παίδες νομίζεδαι γεγόναμθο, άλλα τοι τ αίδιε εἰκόνος ἀυτέ λόγε τε ιερωίατε θεξ γο εἰκών λόγος ὁ πρεσβύτα-Τος Τhar is If it he to that as wet a man more has συσκένο το Le To. That is, If it be so, that as yet a man may not be worthy to be called the Son of God, however do thy endeavour to be adorned like unto his first-begotten Word, the most ancient angel, and archangel, that bath several appellations or names, viz. The beginning, the name of God, the Word, and the man according to his image, and the seeing Israel; for thus is he called: And therefore I was induced a little before to commend those, who mention their original, saying, that we are all the fons of one man. For if we are not fit to be esteemed the children if GoD; yet we may be of him, who is his ETERNAL Image, and most holy WORD. For the most ancient WORD is the image of GOD. The fame Philo (pag. 255, D.) in the fame Book, speaking of the same matter, hath these words, Έπει και πῶς ἐκ ἐμέλλεπ, φήσαιμι ἀν, ὡ χυταῖοι, πολέμω μω μεν δυσχεραίνειν, εἰρίωιω ζ ἀχαπάν, ἔνα και τ αὐτ ὁπιχεγραμμένοι παίέρα ἐ θνητόν, ἀλλ ἀλοίναῖον, ἀνθρωπον θεῦ, ὅς τε ἀιδίε λόγκε ῶν ἔς ἀνάγκης και αὐτός ζεν ἄφθαρίος. Ο excellent men, how can it be otherwise, but that you should hate war and love peace, when you do profess to have the same father, and he not mortal but immortal? The man of God, who being the WORD of the eternal, is of necessity himself also immortal.

Philo in these two passages seems to refer to Gen. xlii. 11. But that, which I think of greatest moment, is what he affirms of the λόγος, whom he frequently calls the Son of God, and God's image: And two things I cannot but observe, viz. (1) That he owns this Son of God to be his eternal image; and if so, he was not born or made in time; which is what we Christians believe and teach. (2) That he affirms, that this λόγ. is not only immortal, but that he is of necessity, or necessarily so, which can be affirmed of no creature whatsoever. For though we believe

7 Philo de Confus. linguar. p2g. 267.

the

#### A DEMONSTRATION Part III. 104.

the fouls of men to be immortal; yet we cannot truly affirm of them, that they are of necessity, or necessarily fo. I shall in this place observe farther, that Philo doth 2 affirm, that the wisdom and the Word of God are one and the same: Of which confession of his I may have an occasion to make use afterwards.

THE same author in another place, speaking of the several rows of the pretious stones upon Aaron's breast, tells us, that they 2 were a representation. Το συνέχον Τω. ο διοικον Τω. λόγε το σύμπαν, i. c. Of the λόγω that upholdeth and governeth all things. To which the author adds, 'Averκαΐου ηδ πν πον ιερωμένου του το το κόσμε πατεί εδοκλήτο χρπολαμ πλοιστάτο τω ἀρετω ήδι, webs τε άμνης ίαν άμαρτημώτων, ή χορηγίας άρθονωτάτων άχα-δων. That is, For it was necessary, that the priest of the father of the universe should make use of the most perfect advocate his Son, to procure an amnesty of sins, and a supply of grace, or good things. I take the substance of what he says last to be this: The high-priest had upon his breast a breast-plate, which was called the horson, or horsion (as the LXXII render it, Exed. xxviii. 15.) feveral rows of precious stones; This was a type of the divine  $\lambda \delta \gamma \Theta$ , or Word; and this therefore implied the necessity of a more perfect advocate with the Father than the Jewish high-priest could be; viz. The Son of God himself, the great anti-type

of that breast-plate, the  $\theta \in \tilde{S} \otimes \lambda \circ \gamma \otimes \tilde{S}$ , or divine word. And, thanks be to  $G \circ D$ , such an advocate we have, I folm ii. I. Heb. ix. 24.

I CANNOT but in this place add another b very remarkable passage of the same author; and I will do it in his own words. They are these;  $E_{\mu}$ πρεπές 30 τοις εταιρίαν πους όπις μλω θεμβύοις, ερίεοθαι με τίστον ίδαν · a j μd διωίσιντο, τλω γων είκονα αυτώ, τ ໂερώτατον λόγον, μεθ' ον κή το όν αισθυποίς τεγειότα τον έρχον τον δε τον κόσμον το γο φιλοσοφείν εδεν ίω άλλο, η ταίντα απεde Cer aneilasid er tor jalantor nor proposos de carridor des quer El Ala lade πρώτον μβύ ίν' βπιδείξη δτι έκ εν πώ γεγονότι το πεποιπιός αίπον : ἐκεία δ', τέφ ται, αλλ' δπιβιβημαν δ πυβερνήτης θεός τη δλων οικανομήν και παθαλικχών αν-Inches τὰ σύμπανία, έτε ποοίν, έτε χεροίν, έτε ἄλλφ τῷ ὁν χίεσα κιχρη κομίως μέρα το ωθάπαν έδινί, τζ τὸν άληθη λόγον. That is, It is very becoming the friends of knowledge, that they should be desirous to see God: (or to comtemplate the place of his residence, and the world his sootstool.) If they cannot attain to that, yet at least to contemplate his boly Word; and then the most perfect of sensible things, this world: For to philosophize is nothing else, but diligently to endeavour to contemplate these things. This sensible world is said to be God's footstool for these reasons. First, That it might appear, that a creature is not the efficient cause. Secondly, To make it appear, that the world is not moved from it self, but that God governs the whole, and savingly sits at the helm, not with feet, or hands, or other members, but according to his true Word. The use, which I make of this passage, is to prove the divinity of the λόγ @ against the Jews, from one of their most celebrated writers. For if the λόγ. made the world, as this author in many places before named owns, then is he no creature himself, as we find he affirms here.

THE

Philo leg. Allegor. lib. 1. pag. 39. C. 2 Philo de 2 Philo de viva Moss, lib. 3. pag. 521. confus. linguar. pag. 161. F.

The same author c in sundry other places speaking of this  $\lambda \delta \gamma \otimes \cdot$ , calls him divine, stiles him the light, the high-priest, the image of God, whom we ought to imitate: In which he speaks very conformably to the style of the new Testament. Heb. i. 3. & ch. v. 5. John i. 4, 5, 9. Sometimes he calls him the archetypal seal, the archetypal paradigm, the intellectual world, God, and the disquest of the Universe.

WHEN he speaks upon those words, Lev. iv. 3. If the priest that is anointed do sin, according to the sin of the people, He adds d these words; Οτι δ πεδς αλήθειαν αρχιερούς, η μη Ιδυδάνυμο αμέτοχος άμαρτημάταν εξίν. That is, The true high-priest, and he who is not falsly so called, is free from sins. Such an high-priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, &c. And who needs not to offer up sacrifice for his own sins, Heb. vii. 26, 27. He supposes the true high-priest to be without fin; and this agrees with the character given him by the author of the epistle to the Hebrews. He speaks in e another place to the same purpose; Λέρομβι 3 τον αρχιερία εκ άνθρωπον, άλλα λόγον θείον εθ, παίντων εκ έκουσίων μόνον άλλα κλ ακουσίων αδυκημάτων αμέτοχον. That is, We affirm, that the high priest is not a man but the divine Word; free from all sins, both voluntary and involuntary. Philo elsewhere f mentioning these words, Zech. vi. 12. Behold the man whose name is the Branch, hath a very remarkable passage to my present purpose. I only premise, that what is rendered Branch, is in the Greek 'Avaman'; and so it is in Philo; and signifies as much as the latin word Oriens, and imports the rising of the sun; but of it felf it fignifies indefinitely any rifing; A branch rifeth, indeed, from the stock of the tree. But Philo (not to fay others) understands the words in the former sense. His words are to this purpose. This would be a new fort of appellation, if the words were to be understood of a man consisting of body and soul. But if we understand it of that incorporeal being, who bears the image of God, that appellation doth fitly belong to him: For the Father of beings was for the rising of this his most ancient Son, whom he otherwise calls his first-born: And he being born, imitating his father's ways, he formed such species as were agreeable to the archetypal exemplars of his father's, which he had seen. But I shall choose to lay the words before the reader, as they are in the author. The words are thele; Καινοπάτη γε το εύσρησες, εάν μβύ γε τ όκ σώματος κέ ψυχής σιμεςώτα λέγεωση κοιπομε, εση, η η σεκή πατον ςκεικον γείαν σριαδολερεντα εμορω. γη νη αδεαβρίτατος Αποροί κοιπομε, εση, η η σεκή πατον ςκεικον γείαν σριαδολερεντα εμορω. γη νη αδεαβρίτατος υδυ ο τη τυπων ανέτειλε πατήρ, δυ έτερω δι πρωτόγονον ωνόμασε, η ο γυτηθείς μβιτοι μιμέμβιος τας τε παῖρος εδούς, τορος αδραδεί ματα αρχέτυπα έκενε βλέσων, εμόρες είδη. These words are quoted by Eusebius, who followed a truer copy, than what we now have: But that quotation agrees for the substance, with what we now read in Philo. What in Philo is now askaφορώντα einovos is θείαν ίδιαν φορώντα in Eusebius, which is doubtless the truest The reader may compare this with what is to be reading of the place. found, John v. 19, 20.

BEFORE I conclude this head, I shall consider what Philo says concerning the Mediatorship and intercession of this  $\lambda \delta \gamma \mathcal{B}$ , which is a parti-

confus, linguar, pag. 258, A. De Victimis pag. 652. E. De prosug. pag. 364. B. De Cular

cular that Christians are much concerned in: And we shall find, that even here he speaks very conformably to the style of the new Testament. He tells us that the λόγω, or Word, had this granted him by his father, that he should stand the μεθόριω, in the mids, between God and his creatures: That is, A supplicant intercessor for mortals with the immortal, a legate of the ruler to his subjects. That he is neither begotten as mortals, nor unbegotten as God; That he intercedes with God, that he will not destroy his creature; and assures the creature, that God will not lay asside the care of his own work. This agrees with what we read Heb. viii. 6. The reader may take what he says in his own words. To sapassinally we were but take what he says in his own words. To sapassinally we supply so says of sapassinally of a survive subjects of autos subjects of the survive supply of actions who says in the survive supply of actions who says is survive as a survive survive supply of a survive survive survive supply of a survive s

To fum up at once what this excellent writer says to our present purpose, thus it is in short. He plainly enough insinuates the Holy Trinity under the titles of him who is, and his two powers. He gives a representation of the divine nature under the ideas of three and one. He gives to the two powers of him who is, the title of GOD and LORD. To one he attributes the creation, to the other the government of the universe. He puts men upon making supplication to these powers, and affirms that they are no more circumscribed than he who is. And for the  $\lambda \acute{o}\gamma \acute{o}$ , he makes him to be the anti-type of the Manna, or bread from heaven; and affirms, that he is the Son of God, eternally begotten, and necessarily immortal, The true high-priest, the prince of the universe the branch, the image of GOD, the intellectual world, the archetypal seal and paradigm; and lastly, that he is the advocate, and the mediator between God and men: Not unbegotten as the sather is, nor yet begotten as men are begotten. This is the sum of the evidence, which is given us

by Philo the Jew, whom Amram calls the divine Philo.

HAVING shewn what account *Philo* the Jew hath given of the λόγος or Word, I shall now proceed to consider the Chaldee Paraphrasts, who are

authors of great esteem among the Jews.

I WILL begin with Onkelos, whom Maimonides greatly commends in i feveral places; and doubtless very justly. He is the most ancient of them; and his Chaldee style, which is very terse and biblical, speaks him so to be. Maimonides doth justly commend him for his singular care, in turning those places very cautiously and wisely, which are spoken of God after the manner of men; and the particulars which he produceth to this purpose are well worth the observing. But that is not my present purpose: I shall shew, that the word which he uses as answerable to the  $\lambda 6 \gamma 05$ , he so useth, that it plainly appears, that he represents by it a divine person, or God himself. I begin with Gen. ix. 12. And God said, This is the token of the covenant, which I make between me and you. Between me and you,

h Pag. 197. & 398. ! Maimon, more nevochim;

Digitized by Google ...

is

is rendred by Onkelos, Between my word and you, Again, Chap. xv. r. God fays to Abraham, I am thy shield, Onkelos renders it, My word is thy strength. And verse 6. where it is said, He believed in the Lord. Onkelos renders it, He believed in the word of the Lord. Again, Chap. xvii. 2. Between me and thee is rendred by Onkelos, Between my Word and thee. And so 'tis by Onkelos rendered again, vers. 7. I say, 'tis so rendered again by Onkelos, though the Latin version of that Paraphrast doth take no notice of it. But the Latin version is not to be relied upon; especially in the first part of it. So it is rendered again, vers. 10. Lev. xxvi. 9. God says, I will have respect unto you; Onkelos renders it.

I will look upon you in my Word.

THE other Paraphrasts on the Pentateuch speak agreeably to Onkelos in this matter. I will give an instance or two Gen. xix. 24 'Tis said, The LORD rained upon Sodom. But both Jonathan and the Jerusalem Targum render it, The Word of the LORD sent rain, &c. Again, Levit. xxvi. 12. God makes a promise to the Israelites upon their obedience, and faith, I will walk among you, and will be your GoD, and ye shall be my people. Thus doth Jonathan paraphrase upon those words. I will be your Go D, יידוי מימרי לכח לאלהא פרוק, i. e. And my Word Shall be unto you God the Redeemer. It will be worth our while to consider this place with its context with care and farther application. I observed before how Onkelos turns the words, verse 9. I will have respect unto you, i. e. I will look upon you in my Word. It follows v. 11., I will set my tabernacle amongst you, and my soul shall not abhor you. This very observable that my soul, is turned by Onkelos word, which must be understood of the essential and θωσς λόγος, o: divine Word. This is manifestly the meaning of that Paraphrast: And then those words, I will set my tabernacle amongst you, are perfectly agreeable to what is related by St. John of the eternal Noy . or Word; The word was made flesh, ral controser on nuiv, And he tabernacled among us: and it follows, and we beheld his glory, John i. 14. This agrees exactly with what is k promised thow the σκηνήν με ον υμίν, as the LXXII have it. 'Tis very well known that σκηνών, to tabernacle, hath a great affinity as well in sense as sound to the Hebrew which fignifies to tabernacle; from whence comes the Shechinah, which fignifies the divine presence, glory, or majesty. To which sense Onkelos turns the word in this place: from whence it is easie to see how agreeably St. John speaks; who after he had told us that the Word was made flesh, and tabernacled among us, adds, and we beheld his glory. How agreeably these words, we beheld his glory, follow, the Jew will easily see, if he will take the pains to compare what Aben Ezra hath faid on Levit. xxvi. 11. Several of the Jews allow of a farther sense of the words in Leviticus than what ariseth from the first view of the letter; and Rabbi Solomon, and the author of the Pesikta expound the covenant, v. 9. of the new covenant, which the prophet *Jeremy* (Ch. xxxi. 31.) foretells, and which the author of the epiftle to the *Hebrews* (Chap. viii.) applies to the evangelical dispensation: But I need not enter into that Matter.

AGAIN, Isaiah xlviii. 15. I, even I have spoken'; The Chaldee Paraphrast hath it, I by my Word have made a covenant with Abraham your

Levit, xxvi. 11.

father.

# 108 A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

father. Again, v. 13. Mine hand hath laid the foundation of the earth; the Chaldee hath it, I have founded the earth by my word. Again, v. xvi. Come ye near unto me; the Chaldee thus, Come near unto my Word. Again, Ps. cx. 1. The Lord said unto my Lord. The Chaldee

Paraphrast hath it, The LORD said by his word.

But to return to Onkelos; he doth in many places turn the word min, which we render Lord, by min, the Word of the Lord. I shall name some of them, Gen. xxviii. 21. Then shall the Lord be my God; Onk. Then shall the Word of the Lord, &c. ch. xxxi. 49. The Lord watch between me and thee; Onk. The Word of the Lord watch, &c. Exod. xvi. 8. Your murmurings are not against us, but against the Lord; Onk. Your murmurings are not against us, but against the word of the Lord. Levit. xxvi. 46. Between him and the children of Israel; Onk. Between his word, &c. Numb. xi. 20. Te have despised the Lord; Onk. Ye have despised the Word of the Lord. Deut. xx. 1. The Lord thy God; Onk. The Word of the Lord thy God. Deut. v. 5. Between the Lord and you; Onk. Between the Word of the Lord, &c. I shall afterward have occasion to return to the place last quoted.

Comformable to Onkelos is the Targum of Jerusalem; v. 9. Gen. i.

COMFORMABLE to Onkelos is the Targum of Jerusalem; v. 9. Gen. i. 27. God created man; Targ. Hieros. The Word of the Lord created Man. Ch. iii. 9. The Lord called; T. H. The Word of the Lord God. led. V. 23. The Lord God; T. H. The Word of the Lord God. Ch. xxx. 22. God remembred; T. H. The Word of the Lord. I forbear to quote more places: These are sufficient to my purpose; and if they were not, a greater number would not suffice. By what hath been produced it doth appear abundantly, that the Chaldee Paraphrasis speak of the Word in the same manner that Philo doth, and conformably to

what we read in St. John.

Obj. I VERY well know, that it hath been objected by an Anti-trinitarian, that these expressions are not to be understood of the substantial מלאסה or Word, but of the command or speech of Godor man, which is in the Hebrew expressed by דבר, to which he supposeth the Chaldee מינורא, to answer. This is indeed a plausible pretext and worth our consideration.

Answ. 1. 'T is very certain, that these words of the Paraphrasts cannot be understood in the sense pretended. Let any man living, that is in his sound mind, go over the places above named, and he must consess that this can never consist. Can any man suppose this agreeable with what hath been observed before from Gen. xxviii. 21? or with the words, ch. xxxi. 41? No man can deny, but the Targumists had an higher meaning than this. I only desire the reader to restect on the forecited places, and he will not make any doubt of this matter.

2. To pretend that מיכרא, which is the word used by the Targumists, doth answer to the Hebrew, which signifies speech, command or decree, is indeed something, if any shadow of proof were produced. But here is no offer of any such thing. 'Tis easie to suppose or to affirm any thing, to get loose from the pressure of an argument; but this is to trisle,

and not to argue.

3. A

3

3. A LEAR NED man hath observed, that the supposition in the objection is in fact absolutely false; viz. that the Hebrew הבר, which signifies a speech, a commandment, a decree or order, is turned by the Chaldee word word, which is the word used by the Targumists in the places above-quoted. He affirms, that this can never be proved from the text. And we have reason to believe him, till we find any Arian or Socinian, or any other person whatsoever, produce any one text to that purpose.

4. It is very certain, that the Chaldees had another word, by which they turned the Hebrew word רבר, and that was the word פתנם or פתומא. Elias Levita, who very well understood this matter, makes m that the Chaldee word into which the Hebrew רבר is turn'd, and produceth several instances to that purpose: But he makes no mention of ממרא upon that occasion; which he would not have failed (in all probability) to have done, had he been able to have done it. I shall here reslect upon a very remarkable place, which I had occasion to mention before. It is Deut. v. 5. I flood between the Lord and you at that time, to shew you the Word of the Lord. The Chaldee Paraphrasts turn the words thus: I stood between the Word of the LORD and you at that time, to shew you the Word of the LORD. In this version Word occurs twice, but in different senses: In the former part of the verse it is put instead of Lord, and must signifie the effential אלין, and is accordingly expressed by מימרא; but in the latter part of the verse it signifies commandment, or the revealed will of God, which rec fignifies; which is the word used in the Hebrew text of the place, and is by the Chaldee Paraphrast expressed by the word אַרוגמא, which is the Chaldee word that answers it.

From the particulars mentioned before it evidently appears, that the ancient Jews did by the Word mean a divine person: And whosoever will diligently consider the places above mentioned (and many more might be produced) must needs consess it. My n author, whom I named before, tells us, that he urged this argument so closely upon his Anti-trinitarian, (who had skill in this fort of learning) that after all his shifts and evasions, he was forced formally to declare, that if this were the sense of these words, Actum est de nobis; vestræ enim sidei sirmissima propugnacula inde suppeditari videntur, i. e. That their cause was lost; for that there seem'd to arise from thence very strong arguments in desence of our belief.

The last named author proceeds, and attempts to prove from many testimonies out of Onkelos, that the third person, or Holy Spirit, is very often expressed by איניתוא, or the Divine Majesty. I shall not follow him in the enumeration of these places, nor lay a greater stress upon it, than it will bear. Yet certain it is (as Elias Levita o informs us) that the Rabbins did call the Holy Spirit איניתוא. And to this purpose they say, that the Shechinah (i. e. the Divine Spirit) doth not rest, but upon a man that is valiant, &c. He tell us elsewhere, that the ordinarily the word איניתוא be rendred by another word; Yet when it is applied to the blessed God, that the Targumist adds the word איניתוא, which signifies the majesty or divinity.

1 Rittangel, in Jetzira.

Thisbi in 100

● El. Levit. Methurg, in voce.

F Rittangel. pag. 112.

CHAP.

# THE PROPERTY OF THE PROPERTY O

## CHAP. VI.

Some objections against what hath been said before. (1) It is objected against Philo, that he was a Platonist, and that he learned what he said on this argument from Plato. An answer to this objection. It doth not appear, that Philo learnt his doctrine from Plato. That it is very credible, that Plato received his doctrine in these matters from the Jewish books, or Jewish Kabbala. Testimonies of many of the ancients to this purpose. It will be hard to give any other account of the principles of Plato. The other Jewish writers agree with Philo. Objection (2) That this is a novel doctrine. An answer to this objection. A very remarkable passage out of Theodorit to this purpose. Some reflections on that passage. The Heathens had some knowledge of the trinity, and Nor. That they received many things from the Jews. The original of Jeveral people best known from Moses. Hence the fables of the heathen had their ground. The story of Saturn was derived from that account, which Moses gives of Noah; This appears from a great many correspondences. A more particular account of them. The sons of Saturn in the Heathen mythology the same with those of Noah. Jupiter answered to Ham. He was Ammon: Of Amon-No. Jerem. xlvi. 25. explained; Neptune the same with Japhet. The congruity between the history of Moses and the heathen mythology considered. Pluto the same with Shem. Plato is observed to borrow from Moses, or the Jewish Kabbala: A clear proof of this from his Convivium, or the speech of Aristophanes; Its conformity to the text of Moses, and the Jewish Kabbala. What the ancient heathen have said concerning the horas and trinity. Of the Mithras Telπλάσι. among the Persians. Some passages from the Chaldee oracles; The testimony of Orpheus, and Epicharmus, concerning the λόγ. Footsteps of the trinity in the Egyptian theology. Of Plato's doctrine of the Trinity. The great usefulness of these testimonies from the heathens to our common Christianity shewed in sundry particulars.

AVING given this account of *Philo*, and the *Targumists*, I should next proceed to shew, that the doctrine of the *trinity*, as it was at first infinuated by *Moses*, and was a *Kabbala* among the *Jews*; so it was not altogether unknown to the wiser part of the *Gentiles*.

Digitized by Google

Bur

Bur before I proceed to that matter, I shall endeavour to remove some pretences against what hath been said in the foregoing chapter.

Except. I IT is or may be excepted, that Philo was a Platonist, and that what he fays in this argument, being received from Plato a Heather Writer can have no great weight in this matter. I answer,

Answ. 1. It doth by no means appear, that Philo ever borrowed from Plato, what he hath said before upon this occasion. Let him that makes this objection produce (if he can) any proof to this purpose out of any part of the works of Philo. I must add on the other hand, that he doth all along fetch his proofs from the law and the prophets. We find that what he fays of him who is, and of his two powers, of the one and of the three, he fetcheth from the words of Moses. What he affirms of the Abyos, he draws from the text of the old Testament, or from some symbol and type, which he finds there. Those noble testimonies of the advocation and priesthood and mediatorship of the Son of God, he takes from the law and the prophets. He neither takes any thing out of Plato, nor doth he fo much as quote him by way of confirmation of what he affirms. So that what is pretended in this exception is altogether groundless and defence-This is indeed a common exception made against Philo, to invalidate his testimony; and we run away with it as very considerable: But after all if we look for the grounds, on which it is built, we may look long

enough: For it hath no kind of foundation to support it.

2. On the other hand we have sufficient cause to believe, that Plato might, and actually did receive what he writes of these matters, from the Jewish books. That Plato went into Egypt, is agreed on all hands. Apuleius, 2 one of his disciples and an heathen affirms that he went thither, Ut inde prophetarum ritus addisceret, That is, That he might learn the rites of the prophets: Valerius Maximus another b heathen writer affirms, that he went into Egypt, and learnt of the priests. Aristobulus a c Jew says, that it is plain, that Plato sollowed our law, and that he diligently studied the several parts of it. Josephus the Jew d affirms the same. Μάλισα ή Πλάτων μεμίμητας τ ημέτερον νομοθέτων, That is, That Plato did much imitate Moses. Numenius the Pythagorean e is supposed to mean no less; by whom Plato is called Movions 'Arlungov. Moses Atticizing, After these testimonies of heathers and Jews, I may fitly enough cite those of the ancient Christians. Clemens Alexandrinus f says, that Plato was Πεσφήπιαν γνωρίζων, i. e. Acquainted with prophecy. This he says of him, when he speaks of his being in Egypt. He g says elsewhere of him, that he kindled or revived, το ἐναυσμα τῆς Ἑβεαιως φιλοπορίας. That is, The light of the Hebrew philosophy. Plato is h by the same author called, ἐξ Ἑβεαίων φιλόπορω, i. e. A philosopher of the Hebrews. Justin the Martyr i affirms, that Plato borrowed from the writings of Moses. And k that he, as well as Pythagoras and others, went into Egypt; cae της Μωσέως ισρέας εφεληθέντες, i. e. Being profited by the history of Moses. Theodorit 1 and St. Augustin m speak to the same purpose. There can be

Digitized by Google

Apuleius de dogmate Platonis.

b V. Maxim. lib. 8. cap. 7.

c Euseb. Prapar. lib. 13. cap. 12.

d Joseph. contra Apion. lib. 2.

e Theodorit, Curat. Grac. affett. lib. 2.

f Clem. Alexandr.

Strom. 1.

b Padagog. lib. 2. cap. 1.

h Stromat. lib. 1.

j Justin. Mart. Apol. 2.

k Ad Gracos exhortat.

Curat. Grac. affett. lib. 2.

m De Civitat. Dei, lib. 8. cap. 11.

no doubt left, but that *Plato* learnt his theology in these matters from the *Hebrews*, or from those who derived it from thence. We have the testimonies of all forts of men; but have none at all that *Philo* the *Jew* learnt his from *Plato*. That is nothing but surmise, it is destitute of all proof; whereas the former is attested by most unexceptionable witnesses.

ONE of the n ancient writers of the church doth not only affirm, that Plato borrowed from Moses, as the ancient Jews as well as Christians affirm, but he tells you whence his materials were borrowed. Thus from Exod. iii, 14. where God calls himself & av, Plato borrowed his to av ales. And from Deut. vi. 4. The Lord our God is one Lord, Plato affirms eva θεόν i. e. One God. My author goes on, and fays, that Moses did δυο θεολογείν πυρίες, i. e. Speak of two lords, in those words, the Lord rained upon Sodom and Gomorrha brimstone and fire from the LORD out of heaven. And so doth David in p those words, The LORD said unto my LORD. Here the AGG, or Word is to be understood. It is expressly said by the a Pfalmist in another place; By the word of the LORD were the heavens made, &c. And that Word, which created them, is the faving word mentioned elsewhere, viz. Pl. cvii. 20. who is elsewhere called Wisdom, Prov. viii. This is that word called by Philo Sourp. Deis. To this Plato speaks r very conformably, when he says, speaking of the world, δν έπαξε λόγ. πάνταν θαίπαιω, i. e. Which the most divine Word established. And Plotinus speaking of him who begets, adds, anora j eners El herous ror Nor, That is, But the image of him (who begets) we call the intellect or mind.

3. EITHER Plato did teach the same doctrine which Philo taught, or he did not. If he did not, he cannot be faid to have received it from Plato: If he did teach the same (as is implied in the exception) then another difficulty will arife, which our adverlaries will be obliged to remove. And it is this, viz, Whence Plato received this theology? To fay that he received it from fome philosophers, which were before him, is to fay nothing; Because the question will return, viz. Whence those ancients received it? To fay that the holy Trinity is knowable by the light of nature, is more than we can believe, and much more than our advertaries will allow. Nor will they fay, that Plato or these ancients were divinely inspired: This would be to give up their whole cause. They must then either devise it and forge it out of their own brains; which is hard to conceive; because they could serve no end in that, nor can we conceive that Plato and other great wits should easily embrace such a groundless belief: Or else they must receive it by tradition from the Jews. And if this be granted, we have gained our point intirely.

4. That which weakens this exception is this farther, that what Philo hath said in this matter agrees with what is said by the other Jewish authors mentioned before; who cannot reasonably be supposed to have borrowed it either from Philo, or Plato, or any Heathen philosopher whatsoever. Such as the Targumists I mean, and the author of Zohar, and the Midrash Tehillim, &c. which I have mentioned before. They cannot with any shadow of reason be supposed to have borrowed from Plato. Tis well known (to those who are acquainted with the Jewish writers)

\_Digitized by Google-

how

Euseb, praparat, lib. 11, cap. 9. • Gen. xix. 24. P Psal. cx. 1. P Psal. xxxiii. 6. Euseb, Ibid. cap. 16.

how much the Jews neglected and despised the Greek language and learning: And therefore it cannot be thought, that they ever learned their language, much less their theology: And though what Philo says be of great weight and value; yet that which renders it the more so is this, that others of his nation have said the same things, who lived in different times and places, and who very probably had no knowledge of the writings of Plato and Philo.

Except. 2. Some few others perhaps may except against what hath been before said concerning this matter, That it is a novel doctrine, and not the doctrine of the ancient and catholick church.

Answ. I AM very sure, that none can pretend this but novices, who are not competently acquainted with the ancient writers of the church. I do appeal to those who are conversant in them in this matter: Nor do I intend to be at the pains to transcribe passages out of the fathers to this purpose. I shall however take notice of one, which comes fully up to this matter: And though the passage be somewhat long, I shall not think much to transcribe it, because it is a very remarkable one. It is from I Theodorit, in a Sermon of his against the Gentiles. He tells them, what Moses had writ concerning the false gods of the Gentiles, and that he required in his law the worship of the one true God. This belief of one God Moses taught in his law, and recommended the worship of him only. Upon which he brings in the Gentiles objecting against the Christians thus: Perhaps (says he) ye will say, ye Christians have not kept this law inviolably; for ye preach not an Unity, but a Trinity: whereas the Jews, being brought up in the writings of Moses and the prophets, worship one only, and reprehend your Trinity. To whom he replies in the following words: Έρω ζ, ω φίλοι ανδρες, ύμας με ξυγνώμης αξίες εξ ύσκείλη-φα, τω καν έκ όπηςαμγώες γεαρω 'Ιεδαίων ζ τω εράτω αμαλίαν όδυεσ-μαι όπ δη αξερμμοι, κτ τ φεργητω, οκ ηριλίας, κη παιδούρμοι οκ παιδίε μεχει γήρως τα θεία, τίω της θεολογίας αγνοβουν αλήθειαν εν Αίγυπίω γδ αυίδς πλάςον διατείθαντας χεόνον, κ τω πολύθεον τη Αίγυτωίων μεμαθηκότας Ερησκάαν, δ πανσοφ πύει Φ., έκ εναργώς απαντα τα το της τειάδ Φ. 'Εξεπαίδωσε δόγματα, ίνα μη σεόραση πολυθείας λάβωση, είς τ τη Αίγυτσίων θπιρρέπονθες πλάνον ε μιω παντάπαπ τὰ περί της τριάδ 🗗 ἀπέκρυ νε δόγματα τοις υξερον εσομβύοις, της εντελες έρας θεολογίας κα Ιαστείρων τας αφορμοίς. Ήσ τοις υξερον εσομγιοις, της εντιλεξεσες νεολογιας καιαστερων τας αφοριας το χε, ποι τέτο μοναδικώς με νομοθετε, αρνιγματωδώς ή τιω τριάδα με μυσει το χε, "Ακει Ισραήλ, κυριω ό θεός σε, κυριω εκ δει, εξ τιω μονάδα διδάσκει, εξ τιω τριάδα διλόσκει, εξ τιω τριάδα διλόσκει, εξ τιω τριάδα διλόσκει, εξ τιω τριάδα τη παρεδήλωσεν επαγάγων δε το, ες δει, εξ τιω πρόσφορον Ιεδαίοις διδασκαλίαν προσήνεγκε, εξ το ταυτόν της θείας εσίας εμήνυσε μια χε της αραστιών σκαλίαν προσήνεγκε, εξ το ταυτόν της θελησις ταυτή τοι εξ της αραστων διωάμεων οί χοραί τω θεώ τ υμνον προσφέροντες, τρίς με το Αγιω, απαξ ή το Κύριω λέγεσι τω θε της εξιδιοτήτων δηλουώτες τ αριδικών τως θα κοικόν της διασκατιών τως διασκατιών τως διασκατικών τως διασκατικών τως διασκατικών τως διασκατικών διασκατικών τως διασκατικών διασκατικών τως διασκατικών διασκατικών διασκατικών τως διασκατικών διασκατικών διασκατικών τως διασκατικών τως διασκατικών διασκατικών διασκατικών διασκατικών διασκατικών διασκατικών διασκατικών τις διασκατικών διασκατικών διαδκατικών τις διασκατικών διασκατικών διαδκατικών τις διασκατικών διασκατικών τις διασκατικών διασκατικών διασκατικών τις διασκατικών διασκατ δεαποτέιας μινύοντες · αλλ' εν τέτοις με δι αγνημάτων τα ή θείας τειάδος δεδήλωται οι έπεροις ή σαφέςτερη παυτα διδάσκεση οι θεαπέσιοι ανδρες. Μωϋσής με η δ βαιόπαίο, τω κοσμογρία ενίγε άφων, απα τω τε ανθρώπε διάπλασην έζηγερίνο, τη τε παντός είρηκεναι θεύν τε κ δημικρούν, Γοιήσωμίνι ανθρωπου ! Theodorit. Cur. Gracar. affect, lib. 2. mel deges.

NG.T

### 114 ADEMONSTRATION Part III.

κατ' είκονα ήμετεραν η καθ' δμοίωσιν. είτα επήχαρχο, ως εποίησεν ο θεώς του ανθρωπον, κατ είκονα θευ εποίησεν αυτον και θεων ωνόμασε τον τε πεποιηκότα τον ανθρωπον, κὶ τὸν & το εἰς μίμησιν ἐξετύπωσεν δν διέπλασεν εκ ἐπειδη άλλο τετε κὶ αλλο γε ἐκείνε τὸ εἰδ. μία ρο δη της τειάδ. Θι ή φίσις τέτε ρο δη χαίειν, κὶ τον θεον εφησεν είρηκεναι, Γοιήσωμβο ανθρωπον κατ' είκονα ήμετες ν καθ' δμοί-ωσιν κ) επήγαγε, Κατ' είκονα θες εποίησεν αυτόν, ενα δείξη το την ποροσώπων διάφορον κὸ δη κὸ τῷ Νῶς περί κρεωφαγίας νομοθετής, και τε αμαίω άπαρο-ρούων τίω ἐδωδίω, ἔφη τὸν την έλων εἰρηκίναι θεὸν, Εδεων πάντα ώς λαίρανα χόρτε πλίω κρέας ου αίματι ψυχρίς έκ έθεως και 35 το υμέπερου άμα οκζητήσω. παντων των Απείων εκζητήσω άμτο, και έκ χειείς ανθράπε άδελφε άμτε εκζητήσω άυτό ' δ εκχεων άμα άνθρωπε, άντι τε άμα 🖫 άυτε εκχυθήσεται, επ εν είκον θεβ εποίησα τον απορωπον · Ο'υκ έρη, ον είκονι έμαυτε, ακι εν είκονι θεβ, τη τοροσώπων πάλιν δειχνύς το διάφορον : κ) ήνικα. ή κτη παύτον συλλεγχύτις οι κτη τέ πεποιηηότ . λυτί ήσαντες, πον πυργον απείνον αποδόμων τον μέχισον, της της γλωτ-Των συλχύστως που επώνυμου, φαναι που θεθυ είρηκου δ νομοθέτης, Δούτε, ε καΐαβάντες συιχέωμβη αυτών τας γλώσιας η το με Καπαβάντες συιχέωμβη, δηλοι το διμότιμον ε η είπεν Κατάβηθι η Καταβήτω, όπερ δη τοῦς καπαίοις η συρςτατίομβύοις αρμότης αλλά, Καταβάντις συγχώμβυ, δ σαρώς δηλοί τω ισότητα τό ο Δούτε, τον τόν ε το πνοίμα σημαίνα, της δημικργίας τες κοινωνές επαθή 28 κ) διαπλάτθων του ανθρωπου, έφη, Γοιήσωμβρ ανθρωπου κατ' είκονα ήμετές αν κ). καθ δμοίωπν, εἰκότας άςα κη μερίζων εἰς πελλάς τίω μίαν φωνίω, συνεργές λαμβάνει τον τόν τὸ τὸ πανάγιον τονεῦμα χεόνω ζό υσερν, τορης το τὸ κεραυνοῖς αναλῶσαι τὰ Σόδομα βελκηθείς, τὸ τὰς αγχιτέρμονας πόλεις, τῆς α σεβείας τὸ τορερομίας τὰς κοινωνες, δυάδα κυρίων ἡμῖν ἐπέδειξε, τὸ φησὶ Μωϋσῖς ὁ ταῦτα ξυίχεγεαφώς, Και εβρεξε πίρι. Το πολο πυρίε δτι Σόδομα ή Γομορρα πυρ η θείον οπ τε έρανε. Και ίνα μή τις το ολαβοι τέτον μόνον τον σερφήτιω τὰ περί της Ατίας εἰρηκεναι τριάδω, ἀκέσαπ, ω φιλότης κὰ τε θτασεσίε βοωνίω. Δαβίδ. Τῷ λόγω κυρίε οἱ ἐρανοὶ ἐςτρεωθησαν, κὰ πώ πιδύμωτι τε σύματω. ἀυτε πάσα κ διώαμις αυτάν κ πάλιν, Είπεν δ κύρι . πω κυρίω με, Κάθε οκ δεξιών με, έως αν θω τες έχθρες σε ποπόδιον των ποδών σε η με βεαχία ή, πεος τον αυτον κύριον ο τε κυρίε λέγει παίλρ, Έκ γας εδς πεδ έωσφέρε εχένησα σε κ ον έπρω Ιαλμώ, Ο Βρόνος σε ο θεος είς τον αμώνα τε αμώνο, ράβδο. δίθιτη-16 h pablo & Bandelas os hyamoas Snagorwilw, ig Epionoas avoptiar da τέπο έχρισε σε ο θείς σε έλαιον αγαλλιάσεως τές μετόχες σε τίω αυτίω ή ημών διδασκαλίαν κὸ Ἡσαίας δ το ερφήτης, κὸ Ἱερεμίας, κὸ Ἱεξεκικλ, καὶ Δανικλ, η Ζαχαρίας, η ελ Μιχαίας, καὶ ἀπας δ τέτων περσφέρει χρρός. That is, O friends, I think you to be fit to be pardoned, being ignorant of the holy scripture; but I cannot but lament the extream ignorance of the Jews, be-cause they being carried from the womb, as the prophet speaks, and in-structed in divine things from their childhood to old-age, are ignorant of the true theology, For they continuing a long time in Egypt, and learning polytheism there, the all-wise God did not think sit plainly to reveal to them the mystery of the Trinity, that they might not under that pretext fall into the polytheism of Egypt. And yet did he not altogether conceal the doctrine of the Trinity from those, who were to come, sowing some of the seeds of the more perfect theology. And therefore he gave the law under the representation of One, but did anigmatically insinuate the Trinity. For those words, t Hear, O Israel, the LORD our GOD is One LORD, teach plainly both the Unity, and the Trini-

2 Deut. vi. 4.

ty. For God being once, the Lord twice named, declare the Trinity. For adding, is One, he delivered a doctrine agreeable to the Jews, and expressed the Unity of the divine nature: For One is the essence, power and will of the Trinity. And therefore the company of the invisible powers singing an hymn to God, say " Holy thrice, but Lord but once: By the first declaring the number of [personal] properties; by the other signifying the common dominion: But hereby the Trinity was enigmatically declared. But elsewhere holy men taught it more plainly: For the most divine Moses, writing the history of the creator of the world, and relating the creation of man, affirms that God, the creator of all things, said, x Let us make man according to our image; and adds, that God created man, according to the image of God made he him: Relating that God made man, and according to whose image he made him s Not that the one and the other were of a different kind; for the nature of the Trinity is one and the same. And there he saith, y that God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: And he adds, In the image of God created he him, that he might shew the difference of persons. And when God commanded Noah concerning the eating of flesh, and forbad him the eating of blood, he affirms, that the Gop of the universe said, 2 Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you; even as the green herb have I given you all things: But flesh with the life thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall you not eat. And surely your blood of your lives will I require: At the hand of every beast will I require it; and at the hand of man, at the hand of every man's brother will I require the life of man. Whoso sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed; For in the image of God made he man. He doth not say, In my image, but In the image of God, shewing the distinction of persons. And when those men met together, who were incensed against their maker, to build the tower, that great tower which had its name from confusion, Moses affirms, 2 that God said, Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language: Let us go down and confound shews a parity of honour. But the word diven, i. e. Go to, signifies the Son and Spirit, who were joined in the creation. For feeing that when he made man, he said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; Agreeably hereunto, now he is dividing one language into many, he takes to him his fellow-workers, the Son and most Holy Spirit. In after time, being about to destroy Sodom, and its neighbouring cities, partners of her profaneness and wickedness, with thunder and fire from heaven, he mentions to us two Lords. Thus Moses writes, b Then the Lord rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the Lord out of heaven. But lest any should think, that this prophet, viz. Moses, only speaks of the Trinity, Hear, O my Friends, what divine David says: c By the word of the LORD were the heavens made, and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth, And again. The Lord faid unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right-hand, until I make thine enemies thy foot-stool. And foon after, the same LORD, the father of that LORD, saith, e From the womb of the morning, &c. And in another psalm, f Thy throne, O God, is for ever: the sceptre of thy kingdom is a right sceptre. Thou

#### 116 A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

lovest righteousness and hatest wickedness: therefore God, thy God hath anointed thee with the oyl of gladness above thy fellows. The same doctrine is delivered to us by Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and Daniel, Zechariah, and Michah, and all the company of prophets.

It is easie to quote many other passages to the same purpose if it was needful: but I will not swell the book with them, nor give the reader that needless trouble. What I have produced is of great moment, and very

much to the purpose.

He gives an account of *Deut*. vi. 4. agreeably to what hath been given before from the *Zohar*. He makes the fame use of *Isa*. vi. 3. that hath been mentioned in the foregoing chapter. What hath been observed from *Gen*. i. 26, 27. we see was the sense of the ancient *Christians*. And as for *Gen*. xix. 24. he interprets it as the *Targumist*, and as *Philo* doth.

Having premised these things, I shall now proceed to shew, that the fewish Kabbala concerning the Word, and Holy Trinity, was not unknown to the Gentiles. Some of the wisest and most celebrated philosophers had some knowledge of these mysteries. I will not say, that the Hebrews Kabbala was preserved among the gentiles sincere and unblended; and that it received no adulteration, in passing through many hands: But this I may affirm, that the tradition, as to the substance of it, was preserved. And as this doctrine among the gentiles must be derived from the books of the old Testament, and the Kabbala among the Jews; so this doctrine, as it is taught by the gentiles, is a very great confirmation of the truth, and is very serviceable to our common Christianity; as I shall have occasion more particularly to observe afterwards. And for my more orderly proceeding in this matter I shall shew,

First, That the Heathens did receive from the Jews many of those things, which we now read in their books.

Secondly, THAT this doth more particularly appear from the writings

of Plato.

Thirdly, I SHALL shew the reader what the heathers have delivered concerning the  $\lambda \delta \gamma \otimes \cdot$ , and the Holy Trinity.

Fourthly, I SHALL represent to the reader the serviceableness of this

to our common Christianity.

I. THAT the Heathers did receive from the Jews many of those

things, which we now read in their Books.

The names of places and countries, and persons, which we find among the ancient Heathen writers, are confessedly derived from the words made use of by Moses. And here, I believe, we have no dispute with any learned men. A g very learned man assirms, Ex uno capite Moses, &c. That is, That from one chapter of Moses, rightly understood, may be collected both a greater number, and more certain proofs of the original of people, than from all the most ancient monuments of antiquity, which we have.

Bur then it is also very clear, that the mythologies of the ancient heathens were grounded upon some relations in Moses, or in some other writings of the old Testament. This is very often true, and sometimes so

S. Bocharti Prafat, in Phaleg.

apparently

apparently and evidently so, that no man can with any colour deny it. It is not credible, that it can in several cases be otherwise; so very remarkable are the correspondencies between the first ground and account of things, which the scripture gives, and that account given by the heathen

mythogolists, who have turned the first relation into fable.

Nor can it seem strange, that the truth should be disguised, and the original Kabbala corrupted, considering the decay of knowledge, the increase of idolatry, the consusion of languages, the general corruption of mankind, and sabulousness of the poets. Hence it came to pass, that Noah's slood was represented sometimes under the names of Deucalion and Ogyges; and that the original names of persons, and relation of things was disguised, by substituting other names, and putting the relation into other characters.

I SHALL not enlarge upon this subject, it having been handled by several learned men, upon one occasion or other. I shall content my self with some instances, which are more remarkable and pregnant proofs of what I have inserted.

And the first, which I shall mention, is the history of Noah, and his three sons. This is by the mythologists, who were Heathens, represented under the name of Saturn and his sons, in such a manner that it is very

easie to discern, from whence all that mythology was derived.

I BEGIN with Saturn, and shall shew, what these mythologists have reported of him; and afterwards shew, whence these fabulous reports were taken, and how fitly they belong to Noah. First, h Saturn, hath been observed to be called in the hymns of Orpheus Παιγενέτωρ and Γενάρχης, That is, The father or origin of at least humane race: And his wife expresly called the mother of mortal men: Upon which account, I suppose, it was, that it hath been believed, that he was substituted in the room of Adam, but without sufficient ground. Secondly, i Saturn is much cried up for his justice, and his times for the golden age, free from oppression, and from property; which latter is the occasion of the former. Thirdly, It is faid, that in those times men had conversation by a common language with beafts. Fourthly, Saturn is faid to be married to the earth: And his wife Rhea is taken for the earth. Fifthly, husbandry, and the skill in planting vines, and making wine, is by the heathens attributed to Saturn. Sixthly, Saturn is faid to preside over drunkenness; and the Saturnalia, dedicated to him, were feasts of excess in that kind, and of great liberty to servants. Lastly, Saturn made a law, that none should be permitted to see the gods naked. I might proceed farther: I shall not do it, but instead thereof,

I SHALL shew, how these particulars agree to the story of Noah.

AND as to the First, where it is said that Saturn was the father or origin of humane race, and his wise Rhea the mother of mortal men; this may with great congruity be applied to Noah, and his wise; for there are no persons after the general slood, and destruction of humane race, to whom this can be truly applied but to them only: And hence it was, that some learned men have applied this to Adam, and to Eve. But there is no need of going up so far; and what I shall have occasion to add as-

terwards

Bochart, Phaleg, lib. 1, cap. 1, V. Vossii de Theolog. Gent, lib. 1. cap. 18.

terwards will determine this to Noah, and his wife; who after the flood

must be allowed to be the common parents of mankind.

As to the Second, the congruity is no less. If Saturn be cried up for his justice and righteousness, so is Noah likewise. Of him it is said, that he was a k just man and perfect in his generation; and that he walked with God. And not only that he was righteous, but also a preacher of righteousness. He was m righteous in the time of wrath, says the son of Sirach. That which adds to his character is this, that he was so, when all slesh was corrupted, and the wickedness of man was great in the earth. And this I take to be intimated in those words, where God said to him, Thee have I seen righteous before me in this generation. To be righteous in a depraved and corrupt age, as Noah was, adds much to his character: And what the scripture says of him in this respect is very emphatical. To all which the author of the epistle to the Hebrews adds, that he became the heir of righteousness. In his time was that golden age of which the heathers speak so frequently, when there was neither claim of property, or oppression, or violence. To this time the poets words are to be referred;

Antiqui rex magne poli, mundique prioris; Sub quo pigra quies, nec labor ullus erat, Nec regale nimis fulmen, nec fulmine digna: Scissa nec ad manes; sed sita dives humus.

AND all this admirably agrees with the prediction of Lamech, the father of Noah; who called his name Noah, faying, This same shall comfort us concerning our work, and toil of our hands, because of the ground, which the LORD hath cursed.

Thirdly, WHEREAS it is said, that in the times of Saturn men had conversation by a common language not only with one another, but with the beasts also; this seems to be drawn from those words, Gen. xi. 1.

And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech.

Fourthly, Saturn is said by the mythologists to be married to the earth. And his wife Rhea is by them taken for the earth. This is most exactly agreeable to the text of Moses, and there can hardly be any doubt, but it was taken from thence. It is said that Noah began to be an husbandman. So we render the words; and, the context considered, that rendring is not blameable. But what we render husbandman is in the Hebrew with the words do significe the husband of the earth, and might easily give ground to the mythologists for their sable.

Fifthly, HUSBANDRY, and the skill in planting vines, and making wine, is by the heathers attributed to Saturn. And of Noah it is said,

that he was an t busbandman, and planted a vineyard.

Sixthly, Saturn is faid to preside over drunkenness; and the Saturnalia, which were dedicated to him, were sestivals of great excess of that kind, and of great licentiousness. 'Tis certain, that Noah did not only plant a vineyard, u but he drank of the wine and was drunken.

**√** And

And upon that account the practice began, and the relation of Saturn was grounded.

Lastly, The poets affirm, that Saturn made a law, that no man should under a penalty see the gods naked. We know that it is said, that Noah was not only drunken, but also that he was uncovered in his tent: That his son saw his nakedness, and his posterity was cursed upon that account: Nay, we are assured from our holy writers, that this curse did light on them, and the effects of it were direful.

I PROCEED to the sons of Noah, and of Saturn also. It is by the heathen poets said, that Saturn devoured all his children, excepting the three which were samous among the ancients, viz. Jupiter, Neptune, and Pluto; and that these surviving sons divided among them the whole earth. This is very applicable to Noah, who might be said to destroy the rest of mankind, as he was a prophet, and predicted their destruction. For it is very common, in the scripture-language, to impute the event to the prophet, which the prophet doth only foretel. Thus the chief butler tells Pharaoh, how truly Joseph had predicted the sate of him, and the chief baker: And it came to pass (says he) as he interpreted to us, so it was: me he restored unto mine office, and him he hanged. Thus the v dividing them in Jacob, and scattering them in Israel, can import no more, but the foretelling such a dividing, &c. And Noah is expressly said to have 2 condemned the world. And in this sense Noah might truly be said to have destroyed the world.

AND as for his three fons, Shem, Ham and Japhet, who were faved with him in the ark, they are the very same with the three sons of Saturn; as, I believe, will sufficiently appear upon farther consideration of the

matter.

I WILL begin with Ham, who saw his father's nakedness, and was the younger fon of Noah, and was the occasion of the curse, which Noah pronounced, and was that very person, whom the heathen mythologists must be understood of, when they speak of Jove, or Jupiter: His portion or lot fell in the barren and naked fands of Africa, where he was for many ages worshipped under the title of Jupiter Ham, or Jupiter Hammon. Heredotus 2 fays expresly 'Αμμων 'Αιγύπλιοι παλέκσι τον Δία ' i. e. The Egyptians call Jupiter by the name of Ammon; and thence he affirms, that a neighbouring people are called Ammonians. The scripture mentions him under the title of Amon, or Hamon, as a b very learned man hath well observed, v. g. Jer. xlvi. 25. We render it, indeed, Behold, I will punish the multitude of No: But what we render, the multitude of No, is in the Hebrew אל־אמון מנא, i. e. Amon of No, i. e. the god Amon in honour of whom a temple was dedicated in the city of No. And hence cit is obferved, that the city No is sometimes called by a compound name, Amon No, and No Amon. Thus Ezek. xxx. 15. I will cut off Amon No: We render it indeed the multitude of No, without sufficient ground. We find No mentioned again, v. 16. No shall be rent asunder; where the Seventy render those words thus; Έν Διοσσόλει έςσει έκρηγμα: That is, there shall be a rent in the city of Jupiter, sc. Hamon. Again, d Art thou better

 than No Amon? We render it indeed populous No; but our marginal reading, from the Hebrew text, lets us know, that it is No Amon in the original. And to suppose that by No Amon in that place is meant Alexandria, is to suppose, that the prophet borrows a comparison or similitude from a place not in being: For it is not to be believed, that Alexandria was before Alexander who built it, and from whom it had its name. He that will see more of this argument, may consult Bochartus

This name of Ham or Amon, as it is thought, obtained in Africa and Arabia so far, that it gave a denomination to a river of that name, to a promontory, a people (as I have observed from Herodotus) a city, a province, as well as to a samous temple. Egypt it self from Ham is called the

land of Ham.

BESIDES, Ham and Zews signific alike, and denote heat. Ham was of

Noah, Jupiter of Saturn, the youngest son.

I PROCEED next to Japhet, the same with the heathen's Neptune: He is said to preside over the sea. As Africa was the lot of Ham; so Shem had vast territories in Asia; but Japhet had in his share many islands, and such places as were in a great measure incompassed with the sea's. I will not insist upon the testimony produced out of Lastantius by the learned Bochart. It is acknowledged by an e heathen author of much greater antiquity; I mean Plato. He tells us, that when the gods took their several lots in the distribution of the earth, some more and some less, and appointed their worship and their temples, Neptune took the Atlant ick island for his share, and that he placed his children, begotten of a mortal woman, in a part of that island. It is f agreed on all hands, that Japhet had his lot in the islands of the Mediterranean sea, and went from thence into Europe: And from him it is, that men are called by Horace, Iapeti genus. It is said, God hall enlarge Japheth, Gen. ix. 27. And 'tis observed by Bochart, that both Neptune and the Greek word normal comes from a word, that denotes enlargement or latitude.

I PROCEED to Shem, whose family God chose for his peculiar people, and out of whose family Jesus Christ proceeded according to the flesh. He is thought to be the same, which the heathen meant by Pluto; who was allowed to be a god; but the idolatrous heathens out of their hatred to piety detruded him, and allowed him only to be an in-

ferior one.

I WILL not pursue this matter to the grand-children of Noah, nor to after-times. That hath been done g by divers learned men with great success, whom the curious may consult. It would be too great a digression in this place to enlarge upon this matter. I have produced a few instances out of a vast number, which might have been insisted on. I shall therefore now proceed to shew,

II. THAT this doth more particularly appear from the writings of *Plato*. I have in some measure observed this above: I shall now proceed in this matter. Thus much, I doubt not, will appear, that *Plato* had read the writings of *Moses*; or at least had been informed in the

Jewish

3

e Platonis Critias. 

Vossius de Theol. Gentili, lib. 1. cap. 15. 

Bocharti Phaleg. Vossius de Idololast. Dickensoni Delphi Phæniciz.

Jewish Kabbala, and in the doctrine of the sacred books of the old Testa-ment.

THE first place, which I shall mention is a h passage in his Convivium. That book is a dialogue concerning love and the praises of it. When others had delivered their opinions, it came to the turn of Aristophanes to déliver his; which he also did. And thus he begins his speech: An 3 mp in tov, &c. That is, But we must first understand humane nature and the affections of it. For our humane nature was not of old what it is now, but diverse from it. For at the first there were three sorts of humane race; not, as now it is, two only, male and female, but there was a third, being common and made up of both these; the name whereof now remains only, the thing is destroyed. For man and woman were then one kind, and had one name in common, being made up of the male and female; but now there is nothing left of that fort, but the reproachful name onby. He goes on, and tells us, that mankind in that first and primitive state, before the male and female were divided, was round, encompassed with back and sides, had four hands and feet is in postume Sio, i. e. and two faces. That after, upon an occasion which he mentions, he says Jupiter resolved to divide this creature into two, and so he did, "ETEMPE TES aνθρώων s siza, i. e. He did divide mankind in two; and after this the one did desire and imbrace to Apuou to durg, i. e. its other part. And hence it comes to pass, that these two (which were at first but one) do naturally desire their other part; this natural love Transpor moinou er on dusiv, vi id σαωθου των φύσι των ανθρωπίνην, i. e. endeavouring to make one of two (again) and to heal humane nature. Thus doth he express himself, and adds soon after, Zητά ο ακι το έκωτε έκασον ξύμβολος. That is, That each part now seeks its fellow. I shall now shew, how exactly all this agrees with the text of Moses, and with the Jewish Kabbala.

WITH the text of Moses nothing can be more agreeable than this account is. It is expresly said, God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him, male and semale created he them. The very least that can be concluded from these words is, that the woman was at least virtually and potentially created in the same body. And not only the text above cited, but what follows afterwards (ch. ii. 21, 22) doth sufficiently teach us no less. God is said to have created Man, to have created him, and to have created them. What he created at first was certainly the original and sourse of all humane kind. The very text of Moses

gave a fair ground for what Aristophanes affirms.

But still his words are more agreeable to the Jewish Kabbata. For it was the opinion of R. Nachman (as k Menasseh Ben-Israel tells us) that Adam and Eve were at first made together, and that Eve was joined to him, in such manner, that Adam was in the front and Eve behind him. And the author of the Rabboth affirms, that Nachman was of a belief, that this body was Adrogynous, and that God made the first man, as Aristophanes reports it, with two faces. This was the opinion, as M. B. Israel affirms, of R Solomon, Ab. Ezra, R. Bahye, R. Eliezer, and R. Isaac Karus. And what is said of God's taking a rib, they understand of a side or moiety of the body. This is certain, that the word, which

both, fol. 9. col. 3. Edit. Amstelod. Gen. i. 27. k Men. Ben. Israel Concil. pag. 144 ! Rab.

Digitized by Google

#### 122 ADEMONSTRATION Part III.

we render rib doth elsewhere signifie a side, in the law of Moses. And according to this opinion, God divided this first body into two parts, as it is expresly said in Plato. My author (who was also of this opinion himself) adds, that because those parts were full of blood, it is said, in that God chosed up the flesh instead thereof. And that because in all this here was no creation, therefore the words Bara and Jatzar are not here made use of. And that, where it is said, It is not good, that man should be alone. I will make him an help meet for him, or, as before him, the meaning is not, that man was at any time without a wife, but that God thought it fit to divide his body, and place that part which was behind him, before him. And to this n purpose he applies the words of the Pfalmist; Thou hast beset me behind and before. I will not concern my self in this matter, nor determine in this controversie among the Jews. I must say however, that this account is not to be contemned, as it hath fometimes been by some Christians of great name. It is enough, at present, that the Few, whom I quoted before, owns that Plato took his fable (as he calls it) from the history of Moses. And this account, which I last gave of the creation of man, from the Jewish writers, is no new opinion, but both very ancient, and a catholick doctrine among the Jewish doctors.

This particular alone doth sufficiently, and irrefragably prove, what it is produced for; viz. that Plato was acquainted with the writings of Moses; or at least that he was not a stranger to the doctrine, and the

Kabbala of that people.

It would be too great a digression in this place to enlarge much more upon this subject: 'Tis an argument well worth the pains and labour of learned men; but I am obliged to touch upon it only so far, as my present argument doth require. But the curious reader that would have farther proofs of this kind, may consult one of the ancient writers of the church, who will give him out of Plato many instances to the same purpose: Such as these; the paradise spoken of by Moses is represented by Plato under the idea of the garden of Jupiter, and the fraud of the serpent by the insidious practice of Penia: He teacheth conformably to the holy Scripture, that things inserior are the symbols of heavenly things; and very many other things, that are very agreeable to what we read in the old Testament. I proceed:

III. I SHALL shew the reader, what the ancient heathers have deli-

vered concerning the  $\lambda \delta \gamma \Theta$ , and the holy trinity.

And under this head I shall have a fair occasion of considering what *Plato* hath taught in this matter: And by that time I hope it will appear, that our doctrine of the *Holy Trinity* is not a novelty, or devised by *Justin Martyr*, whatever some men infinuate or averr upon this occasion.

It is well known, that the ancient Persians worshipped the sun under the name of Mithras; and it is commonly known, that that Mithras was frequently called  $\tau e \iota \pi \lambda \acute{a} \sigma \Theta$ , i. e. threefold or triplicated: The reason whereof hath been inquired into by several learned men. It hath been p thought, that it was so called with respect to the light, heat and distinction of times caused by the sun. And by another, that it was so called

m Gen. ii. 21. n Pfal. cxxxix. 5. e Euset. Prapar. lib. 12. cap. 11. 19, &c. P Vessius de Idol. lib. 2. cap. 9. with

with regard to the wisdom, goodness, and power of God. It was rather an indication of a Trinity in the Persian theology, as a very q learned writer of our own observes.

THE fragments, which we have of the Chaldean oracles, are by no means to be despised. They cannot with any reason be supposed to be forged by Christians, because there are some things in them that are magical, and abhorring from the Christian principles. We may from those tragments learn, that this doctrine was admitted into the theology of the ancient Chaldees. I shall mention some of these fragments.

Ταναή δει μόνας, η δύο γενια.

Δυὰς γὸ σερά τῷ ἡ κάθηται, καὶ νοεεσες ἀς εκπτε τομας.

Καὶ τὸ κυβερναν τὰ πάντα, καὶ τάτ Ταν ἔκας τον ἐ ταχθέν.

Παντὶ γὸ ἐν κόσμω λάμπα τριὰς ῆς μονὰς ἄρχα.

᾿Αρχη πάσης τμήσεως ἡ ἡ πάζις.

Ἐις τρία γὸ νῶς ἔπε παῖρὸς τέμνεο σαμ ἄπαντα,

"Ον τὸ θέλαν κατένουσε, καὶ ἡδη πάντα ἐτέτμητο.

Ἐις τρία γὸ νῶς ἔπε τραῖρὸς ἀἰδίω,

Νῷ πάντα κυβερνῶν.

Καὶ ἐφάνησαν ἐν ἀυπῆ ἡ τ' ἀρετή καὶ ἡ σοφία,

Καὶ ἡ πολύφρων ἀτρέκεια.

Τῆ τῶνδε ρέα τριάδ Θ. δέμας πρὸ τ΄ ἔσης,

Οὐ πρώτης, ἀλλ΄ ἔ τὰ με ρεῦταμ.

᾿Αρχαῖς γὸ τριοὶ ταῖς ἡ λαβοις δελούς τὰ πανλα.

THESE words I found thus translated to my hand:

Where the paternal Monad is,

The Monad is enlarged, which generates two.

For the Duad sits by him, and glitters with intellectual sections.

And to govern all things, and to order every thing not ordered.

For in the whole world shineth the Triad, over which the Monad rules.

This order is the beginning of all section.

For the mind of the Father faid, that all things be cut into three,

Whose will assented, and then all things were divided.

For the mind of the eternal Father said into three, governing all things by mind.

And there appeared in it [the Triad] virtue and wisdom,

And multiscient verity.

This way floweth the shape of the Triad, being pra-existent.

Not the first [Essence] but where they are measured.

For thou must conceive, that all things serve these three principles.

 $Q_2$ 

AND immediately after these words, we find the following.

THESE

## 124 ADEMONSTRATION Part III.

THESE words are also translated into English by the same hand, but I conceive not duly, and especially as that translation is pointed; The false pointing perhaps was the fault of the printer, not of the learned author. I would translate them thus:

The first course is sacred, but in the middle The Aerial, Another a third——

AND soon after the foregoing words, we find another passage, under the title of TATHP KAINOYS.

Πάντα η εξετίλεσε πατήρ. Καὶ νῷ παρέδωκε δευτίρφ. Ον πρῶτον κλιίζεται πᾶν γένΘο ανδρῶν.

Thus in English:

For the Father perfected all things, and delivered them over to the fecond mind; whom the whole race of men calls the first.

As for Orpheus, though he afferted one supreme deity, as is owned; yet he hath been observed to make use of three names, viz. light, counsel, and life; and that by these three names of one deity he affirms all things to be made. The Clemens Alexandrinus, (and Eusebius, I presume from him) relates a verse of his, relating to the  $\lambda \ell \gamma \odot$ : And it is thus,

Έις 3 λόρον θείον βλέψας τέτφ προσέδρουε.

In which he adviseth to a fixed adherence to this Divine word.

AND that there was in the *Egyptian* theology some kind of *Trinity* acknowledged, is not only probable from hence, that *Plato* seems to have learned his doctrine thereof from thence; but is proved from a testimony of *Jamblicus*, by a very tlearned countryman of our own, who hath given us the same account of *Parmenides*.

And as to the λόγ. Clemens Alexandrinus cites a passage of Epicharmus, that doth perfectly agree, not only with what I have observed before out of Philo the Jew, but with the new Testament also. Tis this: Ο λόγ. ἀνθρώπες κυβερνα, That is, The Word governs the world.

BUT I shall next proceed to *Plato*, and consider what he hath said to my present purpose: And I make no doubt but it will appear, that the *Platonic* Trinity is not any figment of the followers of *Plato*, by them salfly ascribed to him, whatever some men have advanced to serve their purpose.

THIS doctrine of the Holy Trinity was plainly revealed to the Jews; and therefore it cannot be expected, that the Pagans, who received some intimations of it from the Jewish Kabbala, should speak of this doctrine with that accuracy and wariness, which may be expected from a Christian. I hope however to prove, that Plato hath made great advances towards the Christian verity in this doctrine: And that the Trinity

\* Clem. Alexandr. Strom. 5: Euseb. Prapar. lib. 13. EDr. Cudworths Intellect, system. pag. 414. Strom. V.

which

which *Plato* teacheth, is not a *Trinity* of bare names, nor a *Trinity* of creatures, but of persons, who are necessarily substituting, undestroyable, and one Goo.

THE three Hypostases which " Plato mentions are Tayator, vus (else-

where by him called  $\lambda \delta \gamma \otimes \lambda$  and  $\psi u \chi \lambda$ .

As for the first of these, the rayabor, who answers to God the Father in the Christian Trinity, this is Plato's highest Hypostasis; of whose divinity there is no dispute even among the greatest adversaries of the holy Trinity. 'Tis he (says \* Plato) who gives truth, and the power to know it. He is the author of science and truth. He is the great author and parent of all things; even of selection, of the most divine, as he tells us y elsewhere. He is God who is, the rid on and the rid outes on. He who ever and truly is: For thus he elsewhere speaks of God.

The second Hypostasis is NES, intellect or understanding, elsewhere expressed by <sup>2</sup> Plato by λόγω, or Word, of whose divinity there can be no dispute from the principles of Plato. Anaxagoras ascribed to this NES or intellect, the making of the world; which Socrates approved of. The same is said of the λόγω. (as we have seen before) by Philo and by the new Testament. And indeed Plato <sup>2</sup> elsewhere owns the λόγω the efficient of the world. For speaking of the world, he adds, δν επαξε λόγω. δαπόντων θειδικών, δ. επαίνων, i. e. Which the most divine Word of all ren-

dred visible.

As for the Juxh or third Hypostasis of Plato, none can doubt of his belief of the divinity of that person. In his book of laws he undertakes to prove three things, viz. The being of a Numen (in his phrase of gods) or a deity; that there is a providence; and that God is not to be drawn from what is right, by sacrifices. Under the first head he proves this Hypostasis of ψυχh: And among other things says, that this ψυχh is της παίντων πρεσθυτάτη and αρχή πινήσεως, i. e. More ancient than all things, and the beginning of motion. And presently afterwards he affirms, that this ψυχh doth δητιμελείωθαι το πόσμο παίντος, καὶ άγοιν αυτόν, i. e. Take care of the world and conduct it.

And after all, in c his epistle to Dionysius, he mentions the Trinity at

once; which I leave to the reader to consult.

This Trinity of persons could never be devised by humane wit; and it could serve no temporal interest. Besides, it cannot be said to be the device of Plato: It was older than he; and there were in sundry times and countries and religions (as appears from what hath been said before) several intimations of it. As the promise of the Messias was contained in the Jewish books, and yet there was, about that time when he appeared, a mighty expectation of the birth of some extraordinary person, in the Eastern part of the world at least, (as appears from Suetonius and Tacitus and Josephus, not to say Virgil) so the Trinity, which was revealed (and that but obscurely) to the Jews; yet was in some measure from them imparted to the Gentile world also: From which it is very natural to conclude, that it was  $\theta_{eo} \approx 3 \times 3 \times 3 = 0$ .  $\theta_{eo} \approx 3 \times 3 \times 3 = 0$ .  $\theta_{eo} \approx 3 \times 3 \times 3 = 0$ .

pag. 69. C. Ibid. pag. 27. D. Phædrus 247. D. Phædo. pag. 97. C. Epinom. pag. 986. C. De leg. lib. 10. Ad Dionysium Ep. 2.

Digitized by Google

### 126 A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

IV. I SHALL represent to the reader the serviceableness of what hath been said upon this occasion to our common Christianity.

1. It takes off the pretence of novelty, with which our doctrine of the Holy Trinity is charged by the late Socinians: According to this account this doctrine is older than Christianity it self. And to charge it with being introduced by Justin Martyr, is against all reason. If the doctrine was novel, I confess it might be a very just plea against it; and I do not see, how we could be obliged to receive it. Yet was it but as old as Christianity it self, or as the new Testament, this would oblige us to receive this doctrine, who profess the Christian religion, and own the books of the new Testament. But if it appears to be as old as Moses, and to have been owned by the ancient Jews, and the wisest and most inquisitive of the heathen writers, this doth render it more venerable at least, and more unexceptionable. And this doctrine of the Holy Trinity being a great bar to the Jews receiving the Christian religion (for so it is, at least, pretended to be by themselves) nothing can conduce more to their conversion, than to shew that it was the belief their forefathers; and that it is proveable from their own law: And this was the inducement, which prevailed with me to infift so largely on this matter. Had it not been for that, these last chapters might have been censured as too great a digression.

II. I ADD, that this doctrine of the Holy Trinity did make way for the reception of the Christian religion; especially among those gentiles, who were most inquisitive, and of the most elevated understandings. I shall express my self in the words of a d very learned man, which are these: Wherefore we cannot but take notice here of a wonderful providence of almighty God, that this dostrine of a Trinity of divine Hypostases, should find such admittance and entertainment in the pagan world, and he received by the wifest of all their philosophers, before the times of Christianity amongst the learned Pagans; which that it proved successful accordingly, is undeniably evident from the monuments of antiquity, That learned author observes farther, that the junior Platonists, who continued in their enmity to Christianity, were so sensible of this, that they adulterated the Kabbala, and the genuine doctrine of their master Plato; and in all probability did so for this very reason; of which that excellent person gives a fuller account afterwards.

It may perhaps be said, that whatever essect this doctrine might have upon the more learned Gentiles; yet that it was doubtless a stumbling-block to the Jews at that time, and a great bar to their embracing the

Christian faith.

I CANNOT see, why it should be said to be a stumbling-block to the Jews in the first times of Christianity: I do not find any proof of this. I have elsewhere laid before the reader the causes and occasions of the Jewish insidelity. We are not to judge of the Jews of that time by the Jews of this. The present Jews are departed from the ancient belief of their foresathers. It doth not follow, that because the present Jews presend, that our doctrine of the Trinity is a bar to their embracing Cristian-

d Dr. Cudworth's Intellectual System. pag. 625.

Digitized by Google -

ity

ity, that their forefathers in the very beginning of Christianity laboured under the same prejudice. Besides, if the doctrine of the Trinity had not been taught by the Christian religion, the Jews would not have become Christians. They pretend that to be a bar; but after all, if that doctrine was not in the new Testament, and was disclaimed by all Christians, the Jews would not however embrace the Christian faith. I find e R. Isaac (one of their greatest champions) disputing against the Trinity; and this Jew denies this doctrine to be taught in our gospels. But though he was of that opinion; yet we do not find him ever the nearer to the embracing of the Christian religion. The Socinians are very vain, if they fansie, that our doctrine of the Trinity is the only obstacle, that hinders the conversion of the Jews. If it was, yet they, who deny this doctrine to be taught in the gospel, would still be without plea. Indeed this is one of their pretences; nor do I know any better way to deal with the Jews, than what hath been attempted before, viz. to make it appear, that this doctrine was infinuated in the old Testament, and taught by their forefathers.

III. Another advantage, (and a very considerable one it is) is this; that the account given above is of great use, towards the repressing the vanity of those men, who insolently charge the doctrine of the Holy Trinity with non-fense and contradiction, and a mere imposition upon our wiser faculties. I choose to express my sense in the words of the learned author. whom I have had occasion to mention before; and his words are these: But besides this advantage from the ancient Pagan Platonists and Pythagoreans, admiting a Trinity into their theology, in like manner as Christianity doth (whereby Christianity was the more recommended to the Philofophick Pagans) there is another advantage of the same, extending even to this present time, probably not unintended also, by divine providence: That whereas bold and conceited wits, precipitantly condemning the doctrine of the Trinity for non-sense, absolute repugnancy to humane faculties, and impossibility, have thereupon some of them quite shaken off Christianity, and all revealed religion, professing only Theism, others have frustrated the design thereof by paganizing it into creatureworship or idolatry; this ignorant and conceited considence of both may be retunded and confuted from hence, because the most ingenious and acute of all the Pagan philosophers, the Platonists and Pythagoreans, who had no byass at all upon them, nor any scripture revelation (which might seem to impose upon their faculties) but followed the free Sentiments, and dictates of their own minds, did notwithstanding not only entertain this Trinity of divine hypostases eternal and uncreated, but were also fond of the hypothesis, and made it a main fundamental of their theology.

I Do not deny, but that some men have given such an account of the Trinity, as implies a contradiction; but this is not therefore chargeable upon the doctrine, as it is delivered in the Scripture, and by the wiser Christians. I do also very well know, that the doctrine of transubstantiation, as taught in the Roman church, is full of contradiction: Upon which account, as f Lyra observes, many converted Jews have relapsed

Digitized by Google

e R. Isaac Chizuk Emun. pag. 117. f De probat, advent. Ctristi; apud Hieron de sancta side.

## 128 ADEMONSTRATION Part III.

and returned to their vomit. But then that doctrine is not the doctrine of Christianity. It is an easie thing for men to declaim against this doc-Arine; but to shew the contradiction is impossible. Men of the greatest wit and learning, both Jews and Christians and heathers also, have not been able to see the inconsistence of this doctrine with sound reason. shall end this particular in the words of the fore-cited author. His words are these: We shall conclude bere with considence, that the Christian Trinity, though there be very much of mystery in it; yet is there nothing at all of plain contradiction to the undoubted principles of humane reason, that is, of impossibility to be found therein, as the atheists would pretend; who cry down all for non-sense and absolute impossibility, which their dull stupidity cannot reach to, or their infatuated minds cannot easily comprehend; and therefore, even the deity it self. And it is to be wished, that some Religionists and Trinitarians did not here symbolize too much with them, in affecting to represent the mystery of the Christian Trinity as a thing directly contradicting all humane reason and understanding; and that perhaps out of design to make men surrender up themselves and consciences, in a blind and implicit faith, wholly to their guidance: As also to debauch their understandings by this means, to the swallowing down of other opinions of theirs, plainly repugnant to bumane faculties. As who should say, He that believes the Trinity, (as we all must do, if we will be Christians) should boggle at nothing in religion ever after, nor scrupulously chew or examine any thing: As if there could be nothing more contradicting or impossible to humane understand ing propounded, than this article of the Christian faith.



CHAP.

#### CHAP, VII.

Of the time within which the MESSIAS was to come. The Jews are uneasie in this controversie. That the time is past. This is proved from Gen. xlix. 10. The ancient Jews own that place to relate to the MES-SIAS. That it is very agreeably expounded to that purpose. The great care to keep the tribe of Juda distinct. They were numbered by themselves. Juda gave denomination to the Jews. A testimony from Abravenel. Benjamin an accessory to this tribe. The true religion and worship of God preserved in it. Priests and Levites preserved in it. They had also teachers of the law, and some rulers in our  $S_{AVIOUR}$ 's A testimony from R. David Gantz: Another from Josephus. Out of this tribe the MESSIAS was to arise. That by scepter Jacob doth not mean kingly power. We do not produce Gen. xlix. 10. as a direct proof, that JESUS is the CHRIST. The later Jews pretensions against the Christians interpretation. M. Ben. Israel's attempts. The reason why I do not think fit to consider them particularly. J. Aben Amram confidered fully. His reflections on the Latin version considered. His first considerable exposition examined. and shewed to be inconsistent. His second considerable opinion, being that of Abravenel. The Jews have no Jurisdiction or dominion at this time. Testimonies from Abravenel and M. Ben-Israel to this purpose. That the MESSIAS was not to be a temporal prince. The vain attemps of the Jew upon ער כי Gen. xlix. 10. That those particles are not to be separated. The authority of Onkelos considered in this matter. That the exposition of Onkelos doth neither hurt the Christians, nor help the Jews. The pretence that JESUS was not born in the latter days, as it was foretold of the MESSIAS The reader referred for an answer to that pretence to its proper place. The Jew leaves his reader to believe R. Sueb and Abravenel also, if he think fit.

HE Jews are never more uneasse in their controversies with the Christians, than when they are pressed by them with arguments to convince them, that the time of the coming of the Messias is already passed. They are in this matter so hardly put to it, that they are forced to their shifts, to get themselves clear from those straits into which they are driven. For as there was a general expectation of some great person, and particularly of the Messias, in the Jewish nation, about that time when Jesus did appear; so it is evident from the writings of the old Testament, and from the other very ancient writers of the Jewish nation, that the time, when Christ was to come, is long

First, They pretend, that the time of the coming of the MESSIAS is not fixed and certain, but conditional, and therefore alterable. They fay, that the b time of his coming depends upon their repentance: For repentance, they fay, is necessary to prepare men for the receiving of the MESSIAS; and this hath always been the sense of their wise men: Hence e we find it said amongst them, that if Israel would repent one day, their redeemer would forthwith come. And again, That the MESSIAS shall

come if they deserve well; if they do not, he shall not come.

Secondly, THE Jews affirm (and we cannot deny the truth of that affertion) that the MESSIAS was to come in the last days. By the last days, in the style of the old Testament, is meant the days of the MES-SIAS. Menasseh Ben-Israel d tells us, that R. Moses Gerundensis affirms, that wherever it is said in the last days, those words are to be understood of the days of the MESSIAS. Hereupon the Jews take the liberty to put off the coming of the MESSIAS till the end of the world: And they do e affirm, that Jesus cannot be the Messias, because he did not come in those days, which by the prophets had been called the last days; by which they will needs understand the end of the world: Whereas it is almost 1700 years since our Jesus appeared; which is too great a distance from the end of the world to be called the last days.

For the more orderly proceeding in this weighty matter, I shall,

First, PROVE, that the MESSIAS is already come; or which amounts to it, that the time, in which God promised to send the Messias, is past; and this I shall prove from the text of the holy Scripture.

Secondly, I SHALL prove, that the promise of the MESSIAS was an

absolute, and not a conditional promise.

Thirdly, THAT allowing the last days to denote the days of the MES-SIAS; yet that this is no objection against JESUS, whose coming was in these last days.

L THAT the MESSIAS is already come; or which amounts to it, that the time, within which God promised to send the MESSIAS, is past. This I shall prove from several places of Scripture.

First, FROM the words of Jacob; The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be, Gen. xlix. 10. That these

V. Munsteri Disputat. de Messia cum Judæo. Basil. A. D. 1639. b Bechai in Legem, fol, 160, c Menais, B. Israel de Resur. lib. 3. cap. 3. eol. 4. c Menass. B. Israel e E. R. Isaac Chizuk Emun. cap. 1. d Menass. B. Israel de resur. lib. 3. cap. 3.

words

words do contain a promise of the MESSIAS, all Christians affirm; and fo do very many Jews. The Jews, that are most ancient, especially acknowledge this; they having not learned the many arts, which the latter Tews have found out to elude the force of these words, and reporting truly the sense of their ancient wise men in this matter. For the better apprehending the sense of these words, it is to be remembred, that the first promise of the Messias was made to Adam, as f the seed of the woman that should break the ferpent's head. Thence it was derived to g Shem the son of Noah; Japhet and Ham being passed by. Hence it was deduced to h Abraham; the other sons of Terah not being considered. From Abrabam, his son Ishmael being passed by, it is transmitted unto 1 Isaac. This bleffing of Abraham, as 'tis called, is from Isaac, Esau being passed by, conveighed to k Jacob: Here it now rests; and we find Jacob near his death, and calling his fons together, and telling them what should happen to them in the last days. And here he predicts the coming of the MES-SIAS, and tells us, within what space of time he should come, and what should follow upon his coming; and this Jacob doth, when he comes to foretel what should happen to the posterity of Judah, from whom the Messias was to be born. The 1 scepter — i. e. The posterity of Judah, (from whom the Jews, especially after the captivity of Babylon, were denominated) shall not cease to be a distinct tribe and polity, professing their own laws and enjoying the teachers of it, till Shiloh (who is MES-SIAS, according to the ancient Jews themselves) shall come; and to him the gentiles shall be obedient. So that the MESSIAS was to come before the destruction and dispersion of that people. From whence it is evident, that he is come already.

ALL things do admirably agree, both for the confirming of that sense, which I have given of these words, and the applying them also to our Jesus. I shall not however touch upon the many particulars, which

might upon this occasion be insisted upon.

Thus much is evident, that in the words of Jacob, which relate to Judah, fomething that is very peculiar and very great is predicted concerning his posterity or tribe. Indeed Philo the Jew m lays a great stress upon all the words of Jacob which we find in this chapter. He tells us, that these words speak him to be a prophet and divinely inspired. He says, that n it doth from other things appear, that Jacob was a prophet; but more especially from these words of his in this chapter. He says, that those words of his, Gather your selves together, that I may tell you, that which shall befall you in the last days consumed. In, i. e. They were an oracle of a person divinely inspired. But his words of Judah do more particularly speak this inspiration, and the divine benediction also: For these words contain this benediction, v. 28. And whereas Reuben and Simeon and Levi have something said of them, that insinuates their fault and their diminution; Judah hath nothing of this; but instead of it many things, which imply the priviledge of that tribe.

AND indeed there was fomthing peculiar to that tribe: I say peculiar, not only with respect to those mentioned before, but also with respect to

R 2

them

f Gen. iii. 15.

Chap. ix. 26. 27.

Gen. xii. 3.

Gen. xxii. 18. with chap. xvii. 19.

Gen. xxii. 18. with chap. xvii. 19.

W. Philo pag. 404. E.

Philo Quis rerum divin.

hares?

#### 22 A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

them who follow. This appears from the history of aftertimes. For when the other ten tribes, after the death of Solomon, departed from the appointed worship of God, this tribe continued therein. And whereas the oten tribes were carried away captives in the days of Hosea king of Israel, Judah remained in his own land. The other tribes were carried away, the distinction of their tribes and families was lost, and they return'd no more to their own country. On the other hand, Judah did not lose his tribe, but continued a separate and distinct people, both before and under, and after the captivity of Babylon. The sceptre or ptribe (for so the Hebrew word signifies in this chapter especially) did not depart from Judah: It was so far from it, that there was special care taken to preserve Judah distinct in its tribe and families; the conservation whereof is pre-

dicted in those words of Jacob. We find even in the time of Saul, that the men of Judah were numbred apart, and not put into the gross number of the men of Israel. When 4 he numbred them in Besek, the children of Israel were three hundred thousand, and the men of Judah thirty thousand. Again in David's time it was so; Joab gave up the sum of the number of the people unto the king: and there were in Israel eight hundred thousand valiant men, that drew the sword; and the men of Judah were five hundred thousand men. Such care was taken to preserve this tribe distinct, that when the kingdom was settled in the family of David, there was a prophet also to take care of the genealogies of that tribe. Thus i we read of the book of Iddo the seer concerning genealogies, in the story of Rehoboam; and of his flory or commentary in that of Abijah. That this care was not wanting during the captivity of Babylon, appears abundantly from the first book of Chronicles, the book of Ezra and Nehemiah, and from Josephus. For tho' there was a doubt of the genealogy of some others (Neb. vii. 64. with Ezra ii. 62.) yet 'tis evident, that the tribe of Judah preserved it self distinct: And indeed this care was not wanting to the days of Augustus, in whose time Jesus was born. Augustus set forth a decree for the enrolling those, which were subjected to the Roman power. Upon that u occasion Joseph comes to Bethlelem, because he was of the house and lineage of David. And this enrolling or taxing \* Josephus also mentions, as that which happened in the time of Cyrenius, as St. Luke relates it. And therefore well might Justin Martyr y appeal to the Romans for the truth of what he affirmed, when he tells them, that Jesus was born in Bethlehem, Ως και μαθείν δύνα δε όκ των άπογεαρών τη χυομένων όπι Κυρηνία, τ ύμετίρε ον Ίεδαία πρώτε χυομένε Επηρόπε, i. e. As (fays he) ye may learn from the rolls, which were made under Cyrenius, your first procurator in Judea.

I CANNOT but take notice of 2 a passage in Abravenel, that comes up to my present purpose. That Jew is discoursing of the excellencies of this tribe of Judah above the rest. As proofs of this, he mentions the order of Judah's encampment, and that he was chosen to go first to battel: He adds, that when the people were numbred, Judah was always numbred by it self, and not as an accessory to the other tribes, of which matter I

Digitized by Google-

<sup>\* 2</sup> King xviii. 9. P 22 Gen. xlix. 10, 16, 28. q 1 Sam. xi. 8. 2 Sam. xxiv. 12 Chro. xii. 15. with ch. xiii. 22. I Joseph. Antiquit. lib. 11. chap. 4. Luke ii. 1, 2, 3, 4. 3 Joseph. Antiq. lib. 18. chap. 1. J Justin Martyr. Apol. 11. 2 V. Tertulian. contra Marcignam lib. 4. 2 Abravenel in Prophetas priores. Lips, fol. 95. 6 fol. 100.

have spoken before: He reckons up the places, where this is mentioned in the old Testament. He says, that whereas the other tribes were conjoined and numbred in the gross, this tribe was for its excellency numbred distinctly 'אַנין לאַ יסור: אַנין לאַ יסור: אַנין לאַ יסור: And this is the meaning of those words (Gen. xlix. 10.) The scepter (or tribe) shall not depart from Judah, &c. He adds, that whereas the other tribes were carried away out of their land, their tribe continued there; and that even when it was in captivity, it retained some sovereignty, and a lawgiver or teacher of righteousness; and that it would do so to the coming of our Messias. We find him also discoursing in another place to my present purpose, very agreeably to what I have said before.

Thus were the posterity of Judah preserved distinct and separate, when the other tribes were almost lost. As for Benjamin, who adhered to Judah in the true worship of God, when the other tribes fell off, and continued with that tribe also, it is to be considered, that it was reputed but an accession or appendix to Judah; and whatever privilege it preserved, it was upon that account; viz. as it adhered to Judah. And we find b Judah and Benjamin together called one tribe, three several times in one chapter. And afterwards, when mention c is made of the captivity of the ten tribes, it is said, The LORD was very angry with Israel, and removed them out of his sight: There was none left but the tribe of Judah only. And we find, that after the schism, the very cities of Benjamin are called the cities of Judah. And not only so, but the d men of Benjamin were reputed, after the schism, the men of Judah. So that this tribe of Benjamin was but an accession to that of Judah; And Judah gave denomination to all the Jews, after the captivity of Babylon. And this of Justin Martyr takes notice of; 'Isdas & wegnarup Isdaiw, ap' ชี พละ 🖚 ไชชิลเอง พละพิติเชิญ egingon. i. e. Judah was the ancestor of the Jews; and from him it was that they were called Jews. And to this purpose we have a remarkable f place in the book of Esther: The words are these. In Shushan the palace there was a certain Jew, whose name was Mordecai, the son of fair, the son of Shimei, the son of Kish a Benjamite. The same man is said to be a Judite or one belonging to Judah, and a Benjamite.

But as the tribe continued after the ten tribes were dispersed; so did the doctors and teachers of the law (which is meant by what we render lawgiver) continue in this tribe of Judah, when they were not among the other tribes. And this is another remarkable privilege of Judah, which Jacob predicts in these words; Nor a law-giver from between his feet. Tis very well known, that God appointed an order of men to minister in holy things, and instruct his people; namely, the sons of Aaron and the Levites. The Levites were dispersed about the tribes for this end: This benefit was common to all the tribes, till the schism in the time of Jeroboam; after that it was peculiar to Judah, and continued so till the destruction of the second temple. To this purpose we heread in the days of Rehoboam, that the Priess and the Levites, that were in all Israel, resorted to him out of all their coass. For the Levites left

b 1 King, xi. 13, 32, 36. ° 2 King, xvii. 18. xiv. 4, 8, 12. ch. xx. 3, 4, 5, 13, 15. • Apol. 11. • Efth, ii. 5. • ביש יחור ו איש יחור איש און איש יחור איש איש יחור איש איש יחור איש יחור איש יחור איש יחור איש איש יחור איש יחור איש יחור איש יחור איש יחור

#### 124 A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

their suburbs and their possession, and came to Judah and Jerusalem: For Jeroboam and his sons had cast them off from executing the priest's office unto the LORD. And to this purpose Abijah i speaks to Jeroboam and all Israel. Have ye not (says he) cast out the priests of the LORD, the sons of Aaron, and the Levites, and have made you priests after the manner of the nations of other lands? So that who soever cometh to consecrate himself with a young bullock. and seven rams, the same may be a priest of them that are no gods. But as for us, the LORD is our GOD, and we have not forsaken him; and the priests which minister unto the LORD are the sons of Aaron, and the Levites wait upon their business. Nor did this law giver or teacher of the law depart from Judah, till the final destruction of the Jews by the Romans. The religious kings of Fudah took care for the instruction of that people. Thus k did Fehoshaphat; He sent to his princes to teach in the cities of Judah, and with them he sent Levites—And they taught in Judah, and had the book of the law of the LORD with them, and went about through all the cities of Judah, and taught the people. Hezekiah also 1 calls the Levites to their duty; and m fosiah takes care for the instruction of all the men of Judah. Thus it was to the captivity; Judah had the instructors and teachers of the law, and that tribe, upon that consideration, was prone to be puffed up. How do ye say, We are wife (says Jeremiah to them) and the law of the LORD is with us? Thus it was also in the captivity of Babylon; the doctors of the law did not depart from this tribe: Ezekiel, both n a priest and a prophet, was there with them; there was Daniel; there were both priests and Levites: There o they continued during this captivity; and we have a particular account of their return from thence. So that the law-giver, even during that captivity, did not depart from the feet of Judah. After this, we have p abundant evidence, that they continued in Judah, and had upon them the charge of instructing the people in the law of Moses. And in our Saviour's time we have in the gospels frequent mention of a priests and Levites, of scribes or doctors of the law. The scribes and pharisees sit in Moses's chair, says Jesus, And St. Paul tells us, he was brought up in Jerusalem at the feet of Gamaliel. This Gamaliel was a famous doctor of the law, the fon of that Simeon, who took Jesus into his arms; and that Simeon was the fon of Hillel, a most eminent doctor of the law, and a great founder of a school in Judah.

By a law-giver, in the words of Jacob, is not meant any person or persons who have a legislative power, or a power of making laws, but only those who were the doctors and teachers of those statutes and ordinances, which were made to their hand. These men had not power to make new laws; they only expounded them that were made. And the Jews ought not to resuse this interpretation of the word, both because it is in it self unexceptionable, and besides that, it is their own. Onkelos renders it by Scribe; and as for the Jerusalem Targum and that of Jonathan, they do expressly expound it by doctors and teachers of the law. And we have very frequent mention of such scribes, lawyers, and teachers of the law,

<sup>1 2</sup> Chro. xiii. 4, 9, 10.

\*\*\* Ezek. i, 3.

ch. iv. 4.

\*\*\* Chro. xvii. 7, 8, 9.

1 2 Chro. xxix. 5, 30.

\*\*\* Ezek. i, 3.

ch. iv. 4.

\*\*\* Mat. xxiii. 2.

\*\*\* Acts xxii. 3.

in the Gospel. And that fuch teachers of the law were among the Jews till the destruction of the nation, is not questioned by Jews or Christians.

I AM very fensible, that the word wew (Gen. xlix. 10.) which we translate scepter is by the LXXII. Greek interpreters rendred by "Apar, i. e. a ruler or governor. And I do very well know the ill use, which some Christians have made of that rendring. I will not here so far digress, as to shew how unreasonably they have, on that occasion, been missed. Let the translation be admitted, our cause against the Jews will not suffer by it. For certain it is, that the Jews had rulers of their own, even then when they were under the Roman yoke. And even in this sence the place doth make against the Jews. When they had a Roman president, they had "Apportas or rulers of their own. These they had in our Saviour's time; the "Appar was not then departed from Judah. We have abundant proof of this. We find a truler applying to Jesus in behalf of his daughter. And that he was a few, we may learn from a parallel place, where he is named and called A ruler of the synagogue. Elsewhere " we find, that JEsus went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees. We render it, chief Pharisees; but it is in the Greek A apxivow of caesoniws i. e. he was one of the rulers of the Pharisees. It is plain, that he was a Jew, and a ruler among them. We read of another, who was certainly a few also. We read elsewhere of the x chief priests and rulers; and they were unquestionably rulers over the Jews. And these Jewish rulers are elsewhere faid to have delivered JESUS to be condemned to death, and to have crucified him. Nicodemus is y expresly said to be a ruler of the Jews: And it appears from another place, that there were z divers of these rulers among the Jews.; and a many of these rulers are said to have believed on JESUS. Before b these rulers of the people St. Peter makes his defence. These rulers are said to have condemned Jesus, and to have persecuted his followers. So that if the words of Jacob were to be read thus, A ruler shall not depart from Judah, there would be no danger, in the Christians admitting it, from the Jews. But though what I said last is sufficient to satisfie any Christian in this matter; yet I must remember, that I have to do with the Jews, who will not think themselves concluded by proofs from the new Testament.

And therefore I proceed to the testimony of a Jewish writer on this subject. I mean R. David Gantz, who tells us, that it was the custom at Jerusalem, that the the kingdom were in the Hasmonaans, and afterwards in Herod and his samily; yet the Nass or prince was always of the samily of David. And though the king with his army took care of matters of state; yet matters of the law or of religion were always managed by the high-priest, and this Nass. He tells us, that Herod, after some time of his bad reign, constituted Hilles and his sons princes or rulers of the house of David. And if this be so, the scepter was not departed from Judah, even then when the kingdom was departed; which is a matter of great importance in this subject, which I am now upon: I may afterwards have a sair occasion to resume this matter. I shall now only add, to what I have said upon this occasion, the testimony of two

other

<sup>\*</sup> Matth. ix, 18. with Luk. viii. 41.

\* Luk. xiv. 1.—xviii. 18.—xxiii, 13.—xxiv. 20.

\* Luk.xxiv. 20.

\* Acts xiii. 27.

\* Acts xiii. 27.

\* Acts xiii. 27.

\* Acts xiii. 27.

#### Part III. A D E M O N S T R A T I O N 126

other Jews in this matter. Josephus e gives an account of the Jews af ter their return from Babylon. He tells us, that they had rulers among them; and he names them that were "Apparts or rulers; among which he reckons Salathiel, of the family of David. And Aben Amram allows. that f there were Prasidentes ex Juda, or rulers of Judah even in the time of Jesus.

ANOTHER privilege peculiar to this tribe of Judah, and indeed the greatest, was that the Messias was to be born of it. This the Jews grant, and do expect a MESSIAS the son of David; and consequently of the tribe of Judah. That by Shiloh here is meant the MESSIAS, many of the Jews grant. And that this privilege should be altogether omitted by Jacob, is by no means credible. If it be mentioned at all, it must be in these words of Jacob, which speak of the coming of Shiloh. And that a thing of this importance is not omitted, will be evident to him that considers it with due application. Jacob promiseth to tell his sons, what shall befall them in the last days. That expression the Jews are wont to apply to the days of the MESSIAS. Jacob doth foretel, what would happen to the several tribes; and the event was agreeable to his prediction, and is the best interpreter of his words. We shall find many things predicted, which are very minute in comparison with the birth of the Messias. But whatever those things were in themselves, they were punctually fulfilled; and he that will compare the words of Jacob with other Scriptures, which relate the events in which his predictions were fulfilled, will be convinced of it. If he faith of Reuben, Thou shalt not excel (Gen. xlix. 4.) see it fulfilled afterward (Judg. v. 15, 16.) If he foretels the dispersion of Simeon and Levi (ver. 7.) it was exactly accomplished in them both (Josh. xix. 1, 9. with 1 Chron. iv. 39.) What he faith of the situation of Zebulun (ver. 13.) was fulfilled (Josh. xix. 10, &c. with Deut. xxxiii. 18.) What he faith of Dan (ver. 17.) was verified in Samson, of that tribe (Judges xiv. 15, 16.) The oppression of the posterity of Gad, and their victory after this, are plainly predicted by Jacob (Gen. xlix. 19.) and they are as evidently fulfilled afterwards, (Judg. x. 7, 8. with 1 Chron. v. 18,19,20,21, 22.) As for what he faith of Asher and Napthali (ver. 20, 21.) see what account we have of these things afterwards, (Deut. xxxiii. 24. Judges iv. and ch. v. 18.) The fruitfulnels of the posterity of Joseph predicted (ver. 22.) was eminently fulfilled (Numb. i. 33, 35. Josh. xvii. 14, 15, 16, 17. with Deut. xxxiii. 17.) And when he calls Benjamin a ravening wolf (ver. 27) the off-spring of Benjamin made good the character (Judg. xx, and ch. xxi. Esther ii. 5. and ch. ix. with Judg. iii. 15.) Nay here are other things said of Judah, with respect to the power which his posterity should arive to, and the fruitfulness of his country (ver. 9, 11, 12.) which received an evident accomplishment (2 Sam. ii. 4. with Numb. xiii. 22, 23.) compared with other forms of speech used in scripture; (Deut. xxxiii. 14. Job xxix. 6.) And do we think, that the birth of the MESSIAS, which was promised to the first man, and conveighed down to Jacob, is omitted here?

I KNOW very well, that the h later Jews have with all their skill, en-

deavoured to avoid the force of this place. And i Menasseh Ben-Israel

e Joseph. Antiq. lib. 11. cap. 4. Numb. 591. 6 um, pag. 266. Menasseh Ben-Israel quass. 65. in Gen. 6 Gen. xlix. 1. h Shevet Jehuda per Genzium, pag. 266. hath

hath found out no less than eleven several ways of expounding these words of Jacob. Some of these are transparently, nothing but trick and subterfuge; the rest groundless; and none of them able to bear up against what hath been said before.

BEFORE I proceed to examine the Jews pretences against the Christian's exposition of this place, I shall premise, that the Christians are not altogether to be excused. I do not think my self obliged to defend them,

when they have not proceeded upon found principles.

IT is certain, that they who have affirmed, that by scepter Jacob means kingly power, and that he hath a respect to the kingdom of David, and his family, are in a gross error, and will never be able to defend this place against the Jews. These men betray the Christian cause, and give the Tews the greatest advantage against it. This kingdom did not commence till above 600 years after Jacob spake these words; and was intirely expired above 500 years, before Jesus was born. If this was meant by scepter, it was above 600 years before it came into the hands of Judah, it continued but 500 and odd years, and was removed before the coming of the Messias about 500 years. David was the first king, Zedekiah the last. After this 'twas in the Asmonean hands, who were of another tribe; and then in the hands of *Herod*, who was an alien. There is no shadow for this opinion, that is worth the taking notice of. The Jews are glad of this advantage; and there is hardly any thing, which they more infultingly throw in our teeth than this very inconfistent opinion. The truth of it is, this is not maintainable by any means. It is loaded with insuperable difficulties. We affirm, what we can never prove, and what the Jews can disprove with the greatest ease imaginable.

THE k author of one of the Nizachons tells us, how the Christians expound this place, viz. of Jesus; and that they affirm, that upon his coming the kingdom of Judah should cease. But (says he) this kingdom ceased long before Jesus was born; namely, from the time of Zedekiah. This is also objected to the Christians by Aben Amram, and by R. Isaac, to name no more; and so far the Jews must be allowed to be in the right, and the Christians in the wrong. But then this is not to be im-

puted to all Christians, but to some only.

It is to be considered in the next place, that we do not produce (Gen. xlix. 10.) against the Jews, as a direct proof that our Jesus is the Christ. No, we are far from it. We produce it as a proof that, whereas they say the Messias is not yet come, the time in which he was to come is long since elapsed; and that he was to come before the final destruction of the Jewish polity and state. We have other unexceptionable proofs, that Jesus is the Christ. So that the main cause doth not depend upon this place. And we readily grant, that though it be evident, that Jesus was born within that time predicted here, in which the Messias was to come; yet we are not so vain as to infer from thence, that he is the Christ. Thus much however is certain, that whosoever shall, now the time is elapsed, pretend to be the Messias, will be justly esteemed an impostor, because he doth not come in the appointed time. For though we do not conclude Jesus to be the Christ, because he was of the samily of David; yet on the other hand, we do justly con-

k Nizachon vetus, pag. 29. num. 585.

Chizuk Emun. pag. 137.

clude,

#### 138 ADEMONSTRATION Part III.

clude, that he who is not of that tribe, ought not to be received as the true Messias. And that whoever shall hereafter set up for a Messias, ought not to be received, because the scepter is already departed from

Judah.

I SHALL now proceed to consider the Jews pretensions against what hath been said before. I will not trouble my self or the reader with what Menasseb Ben-Israel hath advanced to elude the sorce of this testimony; because it hath been answered already by sundry of our learned writers; and also because much of what he hath said is so vain and trisling, that I do not think it worth mine or the readers while to insist upon it. But yet

what he hath said of moment shall not be passed by.

I WILL rather choose to consider what Aben Amram hath said on this occasion; he having considered what Menasseh Ben-Israel had said before him, and insisting upon what he judged to have been said by him of the greatest weight and moment. Besides, I take him to be far the greatest man, that this age hath produced, of the Jewish people, and the sharpest and most considerable enemy to Christianity. He hath discoursed of this place, not occasionally, but separately, and with a design to wrest it out of the hands of Christians: And we may be sure, that he hath exerted his utmost force and wit to effect it.

I SHALL follow him in his own method, and endeavour to answer all that he hath to say in this matter. And this I the rather choose to do, not only because Menasseh Ben-Israel hath been answered by other hands, but because I think Aben Amram says more than any Jew, that I have

yet seen, either in print or MS.

HE m repeats the text, as it is in the Latin translation of St. Hierony. mus. He owns the place to be meant of the Messias, as the Chaldee paraphrast doth expound it, Et est apud nos recepta sententia: i. e. he owns this to be the received opinion among the Jews. This is frankly and honestly said; though if he had not granted it we could have proved it abundantly. But so far I find we are agreed. But then he proceeds to shew, how the Christians argue from hence, viz. Thus. Since the kingly scepter is departed, the MESSIAS must be come: None appeared but JESUS; therefore is he the Messias. Thus untruly doth he represent the Christian's argument. Some weak Christians perhaps might have said something like it: But no wife Christian could ever argue after that manner. What we argue is, that if the scepter be departed, the MESSIAS must needs be come. But this is not all. He found in the Latin version the word Sceptrum; and he, out of his own brain, puts Regium to it, in the Christian's argument, which he represents him to draw from this text. He doth unfairly all this while: He makes the Christian speak what he pleaseth; and then, in n one of his following numbers, he falls foul upon him. The observing this is a sufficient and full answer to what he there says upon this occasion.

He next falls foul upon the Latin version: And first, because Shebet is rendred Sceptrum. For though it sometimes (he grants) signifies dominion or empire; yet it doth not always signifie regal dominion. And we say so too; and more, that it doth not signifie kingly dominion in this place; not is it by the Latin rendred so. He might therefore have spared himself this

m J. Aben Amram Porta veritatis MS. numb. 585.

labour.

labour. He says, that the word hath other fignifications in Holy Writ, and quotes Menasseh Ben-Israel to prove it. But the Jew might have spared himself this trouble; for we Christians do grant it, and are far from de-

nying it: Nor do we see any kind of danger in all this.

HE goes on, and fays, It is still a greater fault, that the word מחוקק should be rendred by Dux. For, he says, the word signifies one that makes constitutions, or a scribe; as the Chaldee hath it: That it is rendred by the Latin, elsewhere, by doctor; and he asks Why it is not so rendred bere? I am content, for my part, it should be rendred doctor or scribe; if that will content the Jew, I am sure it will do the Christian cause no hurt.

Bur the most grievous fault of all in the Latin version (he says) is this; that what we render, And unto him shall the gathering of the people be, is in the Latin, Et ipse erit expectatio gentium. For (says he) in the Hebrew it is יקהר, which is as much as Congregatio; and therefore it ought to be to him, and not he. And then he would not have it Gentium, but Populorum. I am not bound to defend the Latin; though I think, that he hath not so much cause to complain of it, as he pretends. But I will not differ with him about it. Our English, even in this last clause, which he finds the greatest fault with, is exactly as he would have it. And for my part, I am so well satisfied in the question disputed between us, that as I would not lay hold upon little uncertain criticisms to uphold my cause; so I am ready to grant the Jew, what advantage he can possi-

bly make of them.

THESE things the Jew premiseth; he after this begins his assault with all his force. And first he tells us, how the words may be turn'd into Latin from the Hebrew: And in that version, instead of Sceptrum, he puts in Virga, as that word fignifies a rod for correction or castigation. He says, the text is diversly interpreted by the Jews: And refers us again to Menasseh Ben-Israel; who hath indeed laid before his reader a very great variety of interpretations. But he is fo wary, as only to infift upon two of them, as most considerable. I will follow him; and examine whether they be considerable or not. If it should at last appear, that these are not considerable, the reader will easily believe, that the other interpretations in Menasseh Ben-Israel, which I thought fit to pass by, are very inconsiderable; and consequenly, if I can answer these two considerable interpretations in Menasseh Ben-Israel, I may be presumed to have answered all that is considerable in him.

I. I BEGIN with his first considerable opinion, which he finds in Menasseh Ben-Israel: And that is the opinion of R. Ben Sueb, whose interpretation of the words is this: Non deficiet virga [afflictio] Judais, nec adversarii statuentes contra Judæos, donec veniat Messias, i. c. The rod (viz. of affliction) shall not cease from the Jews, nor enemies decreeing against them, till the MESSIAS comes, &c. Or, supposing this exposition, Nec scriba inter pedes ejus (according to Abravenel) i. e. Nor a scribe from between his feet, i. e. Wise men that shall teach them the law of God in their affliction. According to what we read Psal. xliv. 17. All this is come upon us; yet have we not forgotten thee, neither have we dealt falfly in thy covenant. He adds, that this exposition doth not clash with

### 140 A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

what we read, (Gen. xlix. 28.) where Jacob is said to have blessed the twelve tribes. For (says he) it was Jacob's intention to shew the end of their afflictions, viz. when the Messias came; nor did he call his sons together only to bless them, but to predict what should afterwards happen to them. This is the most, that I can make of this considerable opinion. Before I proceed to his second, I will examine this.

1. As to his translating Shevet by virga, it is by no means to be allowed in this place. I say in this place: For I deny not, but the word fometimes imports no less. But the Jew cannot be excused for thus rendring it here: And that upon many accounts. For (1.) in that he departs from the LXXII, who were *fews*, and they render it by  $A_{\rho\chi\omega\nu}$ . To the same sense it is rendred by the *Targumist*, whom he elsewhere calls divine. But I find he is not fo fond of him, but he will depart from him to serve a turn, and to oppose the Christians. (2.) It is certain that this fense of the word bears no manner of proportion to the other senses of scepter or tribe, &c. which it hath in other places. So that as he departs from the ancients; so he takes it in a sense, that is far from being the more common sense of the word. (3.) Nor is it by any means agreeable to the context. They are great things, that are said of Judah in the context, and fuch as speak him blessed: There is nothing that imports affliction or misery; nothing that lessens him. (4.) Nor is the exposition agreeable to the event of things. If afflictions were predicted, they might better have agreed to the other tribes than him. There could be nothing peculiar to him supposed in such a sad prediction. Nay, of all the tribes, it least belong'd to him. The other tribes were scattered and lost. Benjamin was in after-times near extinct: The other tribes were obscure in comparison with Judah. Judah was preserved, when the other tribes were extinguished; he was kept separate, when the others were jumbled together; he governed, whiles the others were subject; he returned from his captivity, when the rest were lost; and continued a principal, when the others were but accessories. He by the Jew's confession gain'd a good part of the blessing of the primogeniture from Reuben; and it was not likely, that he should have the curse with it.

2. As for his rendring pand (which we render law-giver) by Adverfarii statuentes contra Judeos, it is insufferable. I challenge all the Jews
to shew me any such sense of the word in all the old Testament. Judah
himself is called a law-giver; but sure the Jews will not allow him to
have decreed any severe thing against himself. This is a lewd way of proceeding; destitute not of proof only, but of pretext. A strange liberty
the Jew takes, when he puts a sense upon Jacob's words, and upon the
Christian's opinion too. At this rate he may conclude what he will, if he
may have the liberty of forging the premisses. But I must observe, that
the Jew hath not effrontery enough to lay the stress of his cause upon this
interpretation, which can never hold. And therefore adds, that supposing
this exposition (it must be supposed, for it is impossible to prove it) then
instead of statuentes, &c. he would have it be, Nec scriba inter pedes
ejus. The cunning Jew could not but know, that the former exposition
would not hold: For between his feet was lest out quite; and besides,
it would have spoiled all, had it been put in; for it would not agree. If

by between his feet were meant his offspring, it would be hard to conceive, that they should be supposed to decree severely against themselves. Take it in what sense we can, it will be hard to make it cohere with the rest of the text. And therefore he forsakes R. Sueb there, and endeavours to patch up his exposition with a fragment from Abravenel. To this lamentable shift is this wretch driven to make this exposition consistent. Thus unlucky is this Jew in his first considerable opinion, as he would have it thought to be.

II. His fecond o confiderable opinion is that of Abravenel. And thus he delivers his exposition of the text: Non deficiet ex Judá [ejus femine] aliquale dominium, aut aliqua jurisdictio, donec veniat Messia, cui erit regnum continuum, perpetuum & monarchicum, i. e. There shall not cease from Judah [viz. from his seed] some sort of dominion or jurisdiction, till the Messias come, whose kingdom shall be continual, perpetual and monarchical. He explains himself afterwards, and says, that even after the coming of Jesus there were certain presidents and makers of constitutions out of Judah, and that so there are to this day; and consequently, the Messias is not yet come. This is his second considerable opinion, which I now proceed to examine.

Answ. 1. That it lies upon him to prove, that there is in Judah to this day some dominion and jurisdiction left, that can amount to that which may answer to scepter in the text. He affirms this indeed roundly, with his ut notum est, as it is known. But a Christian will expect some proof of this: And the several princes under whose protection the Jews are permitted to live, will not allow, that they have any dominion or jurisdiction in their countries. The Jews had not best pretend to it; if they do, they will foon find themselves deceived. They will find, that They must first they have very much to prove on this occasion. prove, that de facto they do exercise any such dominion and jurisdiction; and then that they do it de jure; and last of all, that they are descended from Judah. And this last may be the hardest task of all, since their genealogical books or tables are lost. I do not know, what reason Chriflians have to take all this upon trust. In the mean time it is by the Jews confessed, that there was in Judah something of this dominion and jurisdiction to the times of Jesus. So much is owned on all hands; but as for the rest, the Jews are to prove it before we can believe it.

2. Whatever the Jews may say in their disputes with Christians, I am sure at other times, this, which they here affirm, is denied by them. I will appeal to p Menasseh Ben-Israel, and to Abravenel, to whom Amram refers us in this question. The first of these, in his preamble to his question on Gen. xlix. 10. inquires into the cause why, if Shilo be the Messias, how Jacob could say, The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor a law-giver from between his feet; until Shilo come; when God had threatned the Israelites, that for their sins he would send them and their king into an unknown land? Quam panam (says he) nunc patimur, sine rege, sine principe, sine regimine agentes, i. e. Which punishment we now suffer, living without king, without prince, and with-

• Num. 591, 592. PM. B. Israel Quaft, 65. in Genef.

Digitized by Google

#### A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

out government. Abravenel q is as express in this matter; for where he reckons up the feveral kinds of mifery of their captivity; the third he fays is this, that they were without kingdom, and without dominion, and without שבט משכט, i. e. the scepter of judgment. I need not cite any other testimonies to this purpose: But the reader, that is curious, may find more in Const. L'Empereur's dissertat. ad lectorem in Benjamini itinerarium.

THE Jew r proceeds and falls upon Lyra, for affirming, that the scepter did not depart from Judah till Herod's time. But I am no ways concerned in that matter, nor obliged to defend Lyra, if he has not managed his argument as he ought: And the fame I say as to what he objects against Adrichomius and Thomas Biatiensis in his following numbers.

In his following numbers he misrepresents the Christian's doctrine, and repeats what hath been sufficiently considered before; and therefore I do not think it worth my while to follow him. He translates Shevet by Regnum; in which he deals very infincerely, He makes Jacob say what he never did, when the affirms that he said, The kingdom shall not

depart from Judah.

The Jew " pretends afterward, that Christians do not understand these words of Jacob. He says, that those words, until Shilo come, cannot be understood, as if the MESSIAS came with a design that the kingdom should cease from Judah upon his coming, because the Messias was to be himself a king, of the family of Judah. Besides, the Messias was promised to the fews in favour, and not to ruin their kingdom. This is the substance of what he says; to which I answer: (1) That we do not affirm, that the end of the coming of the MESSIAS was to destroy the Jewish policy and power. It is enough to us, that he came before it was destroyed; and that he was to do so according to this prediction of 7acob. (2) That he was promised in favour, none more firmly believe than we Christians do. (3) That if by the Messias his being a king, he means a temporal king or prince (as the Jews believe in this matter) we deny it; and so did Jesus, who own'd that his kingdom was not of this world. And 'tis a temporal power (which the Jews contend for, and which they suppose sometime lodged in Judah; and which the Jew essewhere allows) that should cease upon the coming of the MESSIAS.

The few x goes on. If (fays he) the MESSIAS is to be a king, why doth Jacob say, The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until the MESSIAS come? He ought to have said, It shall never depart. The Jew says so it is. He tells that my hath a double signification in Holy Writ. Sometimes it signifies for ever; sometimes, until: And on that supposition, he takes the liberty to translate the words of Jacob thus; Non auferetur sceptrum de Judá & scriba inter filios ejus (in æternum) quia veniet Messias, cujus erit regnum omnium populorum. This exposition (he says) is confirmed, because the accent Fethib follows the adverb by, which separates it from what follows, and joins it to what goes before; and then follows which signifies quia. He adds that my alone fignifies until, and then is superfluous, when added to it, and is supposed to signifie no more. He adds, that the Chaldee para-

Abravenel in Isa. Liii. fol. 80. col. 2. Edit, Amstel. 5. Num. 602. Num. 605. \* Num. 593. \* Num. 606, 607, & 608. Num. 594, & phrast,

2

phrast, which is to him of divine authority, takes the adverb by in this double sense, and expounds Gen. xlix. 10, thus; Non auferetur dominium de Juda, & scriba inter filios ejus unquam: donec veniat Messias, cujus erit regnum; & ei aggregabuntur populi. In which (says he) he only varies the species and continuance of dominion in the seed of Fudah, before and under the MESSIAS; but he doth not vary the genus dominantis in aternum; it must always be in Judah. Before the MES-SIAS it was various and interrupted: But under the Messias it will be perpetual, &c. Cujus erit regnum, &c. cannot belong to Jesus; as appears from John xviii. 36. The Jew goes y on and tells us, that the repetition of Ty twice by the Chaldee paraphrast, the latter of which signifies Donec, is for great reason: It implies (1) that the dominion should not pass from Judah to another tribe. And (2) that it shall continue there for ever. He z adds, that this overthrows the Christian's exposition; and subjoins, that in Jesusthe kingdom of David is not restored, according to the prediction of Amos; and that Jacob predicts the coming of the MESSIAS in the last days; Which cannot agree to Jesus. What <sup>2</sup> he adds under his next number, is of little moment, it being only a repetition of what he had faid before. In this last number, after all this pother he leaves his reader at liberty (if he think fit to take it) to follow both the opinion of R. Sueb, and Abravenel joined together; tho' they be very different, as distant as rod and scepter, or ruling and being scourged: And admires Jacob for using such an equivocal word as Shevet is. To these things I answer,

1. As for what the Jew says of the adverb by, that it hath two several significations in Holy Writ, I admit it; let him make the most of it. It doth not follow, that because it sometimes signifies for ever, sometimes until, it must in this place be taken in the first sense. Such words are always interpretable pro subject materia, i. e. according to the subject matter. He had done something, if he had given any example where by signifies for ever, when 'tis sollowed with the particle is as it is here. I can give him several examples where it signifies until; as, Gen. xxvi. 13. 2 Sam. xxii. 10.

2. As for his dividing or separating by from it is unreasonable: And the reason, which he offers for it, is trisling. He says, there is a Jethib upon by, and that separates it from what follows, and annexeth it to what goes before; and then it must necessarily significe for ever. Thus he may amuse his ignorant reader; but will never convince him that understands these matters. That there is a Jethib, I deny not; but that that accent hath any such power I utterly deny. This fond opinion is easily consuted from (Gen. 1. 15. 1 Kings xiv, 23.) From these places (I doubt not but from many more) it will appear, that that accent hath no such sorce. It is farther evident, that it hath no such power in this place, by is it self here separated from the preceeding word by an Athnach, which is equivalent to a Colon. So that now there is no pretext less for this division, which this Jew contends for. This was well observed by a converted Jew, in a book, which he wrote against the Jews

Num. 609. <sup>1</sup> Num. 610. <sup>2</sup> Num. 611. <sup>3</sup> De Confutatione Hebraic. Secta. Argent, in Anno Dom. 1500. <sup>3</sup> Num. 611. <sup>3</sup> De Confutatione Hebraic. Secta. Argent, in Anno Dom. 1500.

# 144 ADEMONSTRATION Part III.

about two hundred years ago. He concludes his observation with these words; Idcirco eorum falsa inventio, seu malitia, deridenda atque rejicienda est: Pracipuè cùm à nullo vestrorum expositorum id dissum reperiatur. He calls this a false invention, and a piece of malice to be derided; and not warranted by any of their expositors. The truth of it is, nothing can be more transparent than the artistice of this few in this matter. It is very hard to think, that a man of his great wit and learning should ever think, that there was any strength in what was in this matter assirmed: It might serve indeed to amuse a weak Christian, but could never convince a wise one. But he is more inexcusable still, for affirming that this exposition is necessary; and that because he fancies would be supersuous if must be joined to what follows; whereas he could not but know, that elsewhere these two particles are joined, and signifie no more than Until.

3. What he offers from Onkelos is next to be considered. He says, that the Chaldee paraphrast is Supremæ authoritatis, i. e. Of supreme authority. He may think him so, when he serves his turn; but at other times he departs from him, as we have seen before. I doubt not, but to make it appear, that whatever his authority be, he hath said nothing, that will either help the Jew, or hurt the Christian. I will however follow the Jew closely, and consider with all possible care and

application, whatever Onkelos offers.

I HAVE always had a great opinion of Onkelos. But I still believe, in questions of this nature, the Hebrew text only to be of supreme authority. But I shall proceed to consider, what is offered from Onkelos. The Jew c says, that Onkelos takes the adverb by in both the senses mentioned above. This he thinks appears from his paraphrase on the place, which he turns into Latin thus. Non auferetur dominium de Judâ, & scriba inter filios ejus unquam; donec veniat Messias, cujus erit regnum; & ei aggregabuntur populi. I will not quarrel with the Jew for his version; though I do not think it an unexceptionable exposition of the Chaldee. But I will admit it for once: What doth the Jew infer from hence? viz. That there always must be a government in Judab before the MESSIAS and under him. But all that Onkelos says is, that there shall be always some government in Judah, till the MESSIAS come, whose is the kingdom. The Jew pretends, that Jesus renounced the kingdom, and therefore he cannot be the Messias: But that has been answered above. Jesus only says, his kingdom was not of this world: He was not fuch a king as the Jews expected. Let us then grant, that Onkelos teaches us, that the dominion should not pass from tribe to tribe. and that in the MESSIAS it should be perpetual: I do not see how this can bear upon Christians. We own our Jesus to be a king, and that his kingdom will have no end: Are we therefore obliged to think him a temporal king?

He pretends, that d this account given before hath ruin'd the Christian's exposition. But I confess I cannot see it. He pretends likewise, that this text cannot belong to Jesus; because he hath not raised up the kingdom (it is tabernacle in e Amos) of David, according to the predic-

c Num. 608, d Num. 610, d Amos ix, 11.

tion

## Part III. of the MESSIAS.

145

tion of Amos: And again, because the MESSIAS was to come in the last days; which JESUS did not, those last days not being yet past,

though near at hand. I answer,

THAT others will judge, what hurt the Christians have received from this Jew: For my own part, I see nothing of it. As for what he says of the prediction of Amos, I do not know, what he would have. Had he formed thence any argument against Jesus, I should have thought my self obliged to answer it: And shall not fail to do it, if any such thing be laid in my way. I shall be so far from declining it, that I shall be glad of the occasion. What he says of Jesus, that he did not come in the last days, shall be considered fully in its proper place.

HE is very courteous, after all this stir, which he has made, to leave his reader the liberty (if he thinks sit) to believe with Sueb, and A-bravenel likewise. Their opinions are so distant from one another, that it will be very hard for the same man to believe them both. But he that believes, what the Jew hath said on this occasion, may do

much.



 ${f T}$ 

CHAP.



#### CHAP. VIII.

That the Messias is come is proved from Haggai ii. 6, 7, &c. The occasion of those words. Of the defire of all nations. Of the greater glory of the second temple. What accounts the Jews give of that matter. The vanity of what they offer upon that occasion. pretence that this latter house is not to be meant of the second temple. Abravenel is justly exposed for advancing an observation to that purpose. Several arguments to prove that the latter house is to be understood of the second temple. Some pretences of J. Aben Amram considered. His first pretence, with an answer thereunto. An answer to his second pretence. An answer to his third, fourth, fifth, and fixth. The interpretation of J. Aben Amram upon the words of the prophet. The vanity of his interpretation shewed in several particulars.

THAT the Messias is come, may be farther proved against the Jews from the words of the prophet Haggai; in which his coming is foretold during the standing of the second temple: That temple hath been destroyed for above these 1600 years; and confequently the Messias did come above 1600 years ago. The words of the prophet are these: For thus saith the Lord of hosts, Tet once it is a little while, and I will shake the heavens and the earth, and the sea and the dry land: And I will shake all nations, and the defire of all nations shall come; and I will fill this house with glory, faith the LORD of hosts. The silver is mine, and the gold is mine, saith the LORD of hosts. The glory of this latter house shall be greater than of the former, saith the LORD of hosts: And in this place will I give peace, saith the LORD of hosts; Haggai ii. 6, 7, 8, 9. For the better comprehending the design of these words, it is to be considered, that the temple, which Solomon built, was destroyed by the Chaldees; and that the people were now newly returned from the Babylonian captivity, and were upon building another temple to the LORD. To the doing of this they are quickened and encouraged by this prophet; ch. i. 8. And his endeavours to this purpose are successful, v. 14. But then so it was (and 'twas a discouraging consideration) that the second temple, that was building, was short of that which Solomon built. Under this discouragement ragement they are required not to fear, v. 5. For thus faith the LORD

of hosts, &c.

I SHALL not in this place enter upon the consideration of all the words, which I have cited out of the prophet, both because I have a elsewhere had an occasion to make use of them, and because I have had a farther occasion to reflect upon them in my preceding discourse, where I have treated of the perpetuity of the law of Moses. At the present it shall suffice, that I insist upon that part of them only, in which my present argument is concerned: And that is, the promise that is here made, that the Messias shall come in the time of the second temple; and that his presence in it shall render the glory of this house greater than the glory of the former temple, which Solomon built. 'Tis expressly said, That the desire of all nations shall come; and that God will fill this house with glory; and that the glory of this latter house

shall be greater than of the former.

THAT by the desire of all nations is meant the Messias, no Christian questions, and no Jew can reasonably deny. For though he was to be born of the nation of the Jews, yet not for their benefit only. He was b at first promised as a blessing to humane race, before there was any nation of the Jews: And again, after this, to Abraham, as one in whom all the nations of the earth should be blessed; and spoken of by Jacob, as the Shiloh, to whom should be the gathering of the people. Many prophecies there are in the old Testament, that speak of the blessings, which the nations should receive from the Messias; and from whence it may fairly be concluded, that he was designed to be a light to lighten the gentiles, as well as the glory of his people Israel. Agreeably whereunto the angel proclaimed to the shepherds, upon the birth of Jesus, saying, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. Luke ii. 10. 'Tis enough that by the desire of all nations in this place be meant that person that was most desirable, and would be the greatest blessing to them. It is not supposed, that the nations had an expectation of him, but that he was worthy of all acceptation when he did appear.

God promifeth also to fill this house with glory; and that the glory of this house should be greater than that of the former, i. e. of Solomon's. Now this could not be in splendor and riches, or in respect of the symbols and tokens of God's special savour to that second temple. For, as it hath been observed elsewhere, it came much short, in this respect, of the temple of Solomon. And therefore it is to be considered, in what respect

the glory of this house should exceed the glory of that.

AND that can only be upon the account of the presence of the Messias, who was to come not only in the time of this second temple, but was to come into it, and honour it with his presence. And for the proof of this, I may well call in the testimony of the prophet Malachy, who speaks expressy to this matter. The Lord whom ye seek, shall suddenly come into his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in. Chap. iii. 1. By the Lord, in this place, several of the Jews themselves understand the King Messias; and indeed the place must be

Part I. pag. 83. Gen. iii. 15. Gen. xii. 3. Ch. xviii. 18. & xxii. 18. Ch. xlix. 10. Y. Dr. Pocock on Malac. iii. 1.

understood of him; as will appear to him, who considers the context. And thence it was, that the wiser Jews expected him about the time, that our Jesus was born; as I have f elsewhere shewed. And in this temple was our Jesus presented by his mother; there at twelve years old he sate among the doctors. We find him often there: Wist ye not (says he) to his mother, who sought him sorrowing, that I must be in the words are thought to import. As the Messias was to come before the dissolution of the civil polity of the Jews, according to the prediction of Jacob, Gen. xlix. 10. so he was also to come before the dissolution of the ecclesiastical polity of the Jews, or before the destruction of the second temple. And our Jessus did come according to these predictions.

I SHALL now consider, what the Jews say to this, and how they interpret the words: And here I shall with all sincerity represent their pre-

tences, and shew the vanity of them.

I ONLY premise, that they ought to alledge somewhat very material in this matter, viz. to prove that the glory of this house was greater than that of Solomon's. (1) Because 'tis very certain, that it was in many particulars very short of it. They who had seen Solomon's h wept, when they faw the foundation of this; so far did it come short of it. And we may learn from this prophet, that this temple in comparison of Solomon's was i as nothing. Besides the Jews tell of several things of great moment wanting in this temple; viz. The ark, the urim and thummim, fire from heaven, the Shechinah, and HOLY GHOST: The spirit of prophecy ceased under it: It was defiled by Antiochus, and Romans; and the succession of the high priests disturbed. It must be something very considerable, that can make up these great desects. (2) The people of the Fews are in this prophet supposed to be under great fear and discouragement, and the prophet is fent to put them in heart: Be strong and fear not, says k the prophet. 'Tis but reasonable, that what he offers from God to encourage them, and discharge them of their sears, must have weight and sorce enough to that purpose: And therefore the greater glory, which is promised, v. 9. must be so explained, that it may be a comfort and encouragement to them to whom these words are spoken,

LET us see now, what the Jews have to offer to us upon this occasion.

Three things they have to fay:

I. THAT the glory of the fecond house was greater than that of the first, because it continued longer. Solomon's temple (say they) continued but 410 years before it was destroyed by the Babylonians; but this second temple stood 420 years before it was destroyed by the Romans; and in that respect, and upon that account, the glory of this latter house was greater than the glory of the former.

But could this be any comfort or encouragement to these builders, who cannot be presumed to know before, how long this house would continue? Is the continuance of ten years such a mighty thing? Will this make a compensation for the desects before mentioned? Doth God say, he will shake the heaven and the earth for this? Is this all that God designed or

f Part I. pag. 27.

B Fuller Miscell, lib. 4. ch. 17.

Ezra, iii. 3, 22.

Hagg. ii. 3,

promised,

promised, when he said, that he would fill this house with glory? Will this make it more glorious than the house, which Solomon built? If the bare continuance of a few years longer be fuch an addition of glory; the tabernacle of Moses was more glorious than the temple of Solomon: And if the Romans had chanced to have destroyed the second temple ten years sooner, all this promised glory had been lost; and so it would have been if Solomon's temple had stood ten years longer. What encouragement could this be? Of what force to animate the people, and to dispel their fears? Could the people of the land tell how long precisely Solomon's temple stood, and how long this should stand? If they did not understand this, how could it be of any force to encourage them? Is there any thing in the text, that speaks of the duration of this house? There is something to this purpose, or there is not: If there be, let the Jew shew us where to find it: If not, they must excuse us, if we do not give credit to it. \*

II. THE Jews pretend, the glory of this house to have been greater than that of Solomon, upon account of the cost, which Herod bestowed upon it, and of the gifts, with which it was enriched by the kings of the earth.

Bur it is to be considered, what proof they can produce that this fecond temple was more enriched than that of Solomon: We require them to prove this; and to produce greater evidence than that of the testimony of Ben Gorion.

Bur suppose this was proved; yet it would be to no purpose. What encouragement could this be to the people of the land to build this house? Will the gold and precious gifts of the gentile kings fill it with a glory beyond the glory of Solomon's temple? Will the loss of the ark, the fire from heaven, the holy oyl, and spirit of prophecy, &c. which were wanting in this temple, and were in the time of Solomon's; will these defects be made up and compensated with Herod's expence, and the gifts of some heathen princes? Is filver and gold fit to be put in the balance against those symbols of the divine favour? Doth God regard gold and silver?

#### Quid juvat hoc, templis nostros immittere mores, Et bona diis ex hâc sceleratâ ducere pulpâ?

Is it likely, that God should in such solemn words promise no more to this people, to encourage them to build, than such things as these? Because we are fond of gold, do we think that God is so likewise?

THESE things are so vain, that several of the Jews themselves have been forced to quit these pretences; and have therefore stretched their

Digitized by Google

<sup>\*</sup> To this may be added, that the prophet Haggai, chap. ii. 6, 7. gives a reason, why the glory of this latter house, shall be greater than of the former, viz. Because in some time after, whilst this house is standing, God will shake the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and the dry land. And he will shake all nations; and the desire of all nations shall come, and he will fill this house with glory. How can we imagine, that God shall shake the heavens, the earth, the sea, and the dry land, and indeed all nations, and that the design of this wonderful commotion is for no other end, but to cause this latter house to continue ten years longer than the former? He saith, that the desire of all nations shall come to this house. And can we suppose, that it was the desire of all nations, that this house should continue ten years longer than the former? If the Jew can prove this, he may prove whatever he pleaseth. If not, all that he offers, can only be a perverting of the text. The Jews might desire, that this house might continue for ever; but it is certain, that other nations cared not, how soon it was desiroyed.

wits to find out fomething else to fay; and have frankly owned, that these things want weight, and are insufficient in this present argument.

III. THEY do therefore pretend, that by this latter house, v. 9. is not meant the second temple, that was then building, when these words were spoken, but a third house, that is still to be built when the long captivity, which the fews are now in, shall come to an end. Abravenel and others have betaken themselves to this shift, not being able to defend those which I have named before. This third temple ('tis pretended) is that which Ezekiel describes, and is to be built in the days of the Messia Sias: And then those things which were wanting under the second temple (viz. the ark, the holy oyl, &c.) shall be restored.

Abravenel m pretends, that the words of the text require, that this latter house must be understood, not of a second, but of a third house at least. And to this purpose he affirms, that the Hebrew word [האחרון] which we translate latter, with the word [הראשון] which we render former, can by no means be understood of two only; but must of necessity import three at least. And to that purpose he appeals to the first chapter of Genesis; where the first and the second day are not expressed by and

שני: but by אהר and שני:

INDEED if what he says was true, it would be of great moment in the present question: But it is so far from being true, that it is manifestly false, as I shall make appear. When God fent Moses to Egypt, Mofes objected, that the people would not believe, that God had sent him: But God gives him a command to shew two signs of his mission, by turning his rod into a ferpent; and by putting his hand into his bosom, and turning it into another colour, or as leprous as snow. It follows, If they will not believe thee, neither hearken to the voice of the first sign nan ] [האת האחרון That they will believe the voice of the latter sign [ האת האחרון] i. e. of the fecond sign, as 'tis in the o Greek. This doth abundantly confute, what Abravenel would advance to serve his turn. For here we find אחרון and אחרון to denote two only: This is evident from what goes before; and also from what follows, v. 9.—If they will not believe these two signs, &c. Again, the divorce p of a wife was allowed by Moses: The divorced woman might marry to another husband, but might not return to her former. The First husband is called ראשון, the second אחרון: And therefore these words (which are the same with those in the prophet) do not necessarily imply more than two. And for his allegation out of the first of Genesis, 'tis of no moment in this case: And he that will look into 2 Kings vi. 28, 29. will find, that no certain rule can be made from them.

I SHALL therefore proceed to make it appear, that the words, v. 9. do belong to the *second temple*. If this be made good, I have intirely, and beyond all contradiction, gained my point: As for the *other* pretences, the *sews* themselves have been forced to quit them; and have run to this as their last hold and refuge.

AND to make it appear, that the words v. 9. where the glory of this latter house is promised, and that it shall be greater than that of Solomon's,

Abravenel in Hagg. ii. R. Isaac Chizuk Emunah. pag. 289. 
Exod. iv. 8. 9. 
Të Aurieu Lxxii. 
P Deut. xxiv. 3.

Digitized by Goegle

do belong to the fecond temple, and not to a third still to be built; I offer the following particulars to be considered, for proof hereof.

- I. The main design of this prophecy: And that may soon be learned from the prophecy it self. It was to encourage the Jews to build their temple upon their return from the captivity of Babylon. Of this there can be no question. We see the prophet reproves their backwardness, Ch. i. 2, 4. puts them upon building: v. 8. lets them know, that the calamities which befell them, were sent for their negligence in not building this second temple, ver. 9, 10, 11. Tis evident, that this part of this prophecy can have no reference to any third temple, but of necessity must refer to the second temple only.
- II. THE discouragement, which the people were under at this time. They were but poor, and had many enemies, that had hindred them: And after all, they were not like to build such a one, which could answer to the temple of Solomon, which the Chaldeans had destroyed. It was not, for glory, to be compared to it. Ch. ii. 3. This must be understood of this second temple, and cannot possibly belong to a third.
- III. THE method taken by the prophet (God's messenger. ch. i. 13.) to encourage them in the building this fecond temple: And itis reasonable to suppose, that the messenger whom God sends, should offer some encouragement, which would be suitable, and bear some proportion to the discouragement and difficulty, which they were then under. The discour ragements, which they were under, were partly from their enemies, and partly from the meanness of this house in comparison with the glory of Solomon's. (Ch. ii. 3.) With respect to the first, the prophet assures them, that God will be with them, ch. i. 14. ii. 4. And then they need not fear their enemies. (v. 4, 5.) But then as to the meanness and despicable. ness of this second house, which they were building, in comparison with the glory of Solomon's, God assures them, by his prophet, that he will make that up: That he will fill this house with glory. (v. 7.) Nor is this all: For whereas some of them remembred the glory of Solomon's temple, he farther assures them, that the glory of this latter bouse (or, second temple) shall be greater than that of the former. It was very proper to encourage their diligence, by assuring them that the desects of this second house should be some other way made up: But according to Abravenel's exposition, the words of v. 9. could not have encouraged the Jews to build the fecond temple. Supposing the latter house signified a third, which should be built some thousands of years afterward, and many hundreds after this fecond house should be destroyed, which now they are exhorted to build; what encouragement could this be to build this fecond house? Why should they build that which was so mean, and that which would be destroyed to make room for a better, that should be built they know not when, or by whom? We have little encouragement to build what is designed to be taken down again.
- IV. THERE is no mention of a third house in any other part of the prophet; and the words v. 9. will by no means justifie this interpretation of Abravenel. For, as I have shewed, there is no connexion between

tween the sense of the words, which this Jew contends for, and the words that go before, and the main delign of the prophecy; no manner of mention before of a third house; no reason from the words, as they lie in the Hebrew, to put this interpretation upon them, as I have demonstrated already: Besides all this, the words themselves, as they lie in the text, are very emphatical; and confidered with the context, deliver to us a certain sense that excludes this interpretation of the Jew, and must be understood of the fecond temple. The words are הבות הוה האחרון. This latter house, as we render it. The words manifestly point at some house, that was spoken of before: And if we had translated them by this second house (as a Diodati hath done) we had given the true sense of the words; and the text it felf would have born us out. For if what we render by former, fignifie the first, what we render latter may well be rendred by fecond; especially since the Hebrew words signific thus in other places, as I have observed before. To which we may add, that the Hebrew words are accompanied with a demonstrative particle, three times repeated; that we might thereby be out of doubt what house is meant; and might not fancy the words to speak of an house not mentioned before.

To what hath been said before, I add, that the temple built by the Jews, after their return from the captivity of Babylon, was the same temple (or fecond house, as the Jews always call it) which was destroyed by the Romans in the days of Vespasian. The Jews consent with the Christians in this matter, as is well known to those, who are conversant in their writings; who constantly call it בית שני, the second house. It is true, it was profaned by Antiochus Epiphanes, and otherwise damaged; and the continual facrifice was taken away for some years: After this it was repaired and cleansed, and dedicated anew in the time of the Maccabees; and the feast of the dedication (mentioned in St. John's gospel) was annually kept in remembrance thereof, on the twentie fifth day of the month Casseu (called also the feast of lights) which answers to our month November: Yet after this change, it is owned still to be the same house. After this it received great alteration in the days of Herod the great. I will not call in question the truth, of what Josephus relates upon this occasion. Admitting all that he says to be true, that I Herod laid a new foundation, and that he enlarged its courts, and raifed the fabrick higher; yet was it still allowed to be the same temple; and is constantly called the fecond house by the fewish writers. They own but a first and a second. We reckon thus in other matters. We reckon that the same river, which yet in process of time is much enlarged, and swells over a larger compass of ground than it did before. The same may be laid of bouses and cities, which retain the same name after very many additions and enlargements. And an infant is the same person, and is justly called by the same name in his infancy, which belongs to him, when he is arrived to his full age.

AFTER I had written the foregoing lines, I met with a f MS. written by a Jew, intituled porta veritatis; of which I have made mention before. That Jew labours hard to wrest this prophecy of Haggai out of the hands of the Christians, and to prove that it makes nothing to their purpose. I did expect from him great matters, and shall consider, what

9 Questa Seconda Casa. V. Selden de Synedr. lib. 3. cap. 13. IJ. Aben Amram. num. 677. &c.

he hath offered upon this occasion, which hath not been considered before. And the reader may take his pretences in the following particulars.

First, He pretends, that Jesus could not be called in truth the defire of all nations; because the Jews (to whom the Messias was promised) rejected him when he appeared, and continue to do so still: Nor did the Romans, who were the greatest nation when he appeared, desire him; and therefore all nations desired him not.

But if what hath been said before be duly considered, there will be no weight in this pretence. The Jews indeed generally rejected him; but yet some of them received him also: And the Roman empire did afterwards embrace his religion; and soon found, that it was the greatest blessing, and that the author of it was of all the most desirable one.

Secondly, He pretends that those words, Tet once, it is a little while, and I will shake the heavens, &c. v. 6. cannot belong to this matter. And that because it was about 400 years after this, that Jesus appeared; which is too long a space to be called a little while: And also because

we have no account of this shaking predicted by the prophet.

I ANSWER, that both Abravenel, and this other few endeavour to apply this prophecy to a third temple still to be built. And if a little while cannot suit with the Christian's interpretation, I would fain know, how it can consist with that of the fews?

As for the *shaking* predicted by the prophet, I have accounted for it elsewhere; and shall not repeat, what I have there said, upon this occasion.

Thirdly, He pretends, that those words v, 9. And in this place will I give peace, forbid us to understand this prediction of the fecond temple; because during the standing of this temple, and that which Herod built, there were wars between the Jews and Greeks, among the Maccabites with Herod, and against the Romans.

But this is of no weight in this place; because it is manifest, that the greater glory of this house above that of Solomon's consisted in this, that the Messias (called Shiloh, Gen. xlix. 10.) the prince of peace, appeared here: Who was not only the preacher of peace; but the great procurer of it between God and man; as well as among men with one another.

Fourthly, H E pretends, that by the desire of all nations is meant, either persons of quality and condition, that came to this temple out of honour to it; or that it is to be understood of the gold and other precious things with which in aftertimes it was adorned: And he lays a stress upon this, that the word Come, in the Hebrew, being plural, agreeably to it he supposeth, that desire may comprehend desireable persons or things.

ALL which is so trisling and unproved, that it requires no answer at all. The *Enallage* of number is very frequent among the *Hebrews*.

Fifthly, HE pretends, that JESUS did not come during the standing of the fecond temple; but in the time of the temple of Herod, which he calls the third; and then his presence could not be the glory of the fecond house, spoken of by the prophet.

Bur in this he goes against the sense of all the Jews; and this matter

hath been also considered above.

Sixthly, This Jew t pretends, that on supposition that the prophet doth not speak of the Messias in this place, that then he treats of the second temple: Which in that case he pretends to be greater, than that

Num. 685

w hich

which was built by Solomon, upon these three accounts. (1) In respect of its duration. Whereas the temple of Solomon stood but 410, this continued 420 years; or more, if Josephus may be credited. Again, (2) They did not come to Solomon's temple from the ends of the earth, as they did to the second temple: The Romans offered continual sacrifice in the second; as, he says, Josephus affirms in several places. (3.) Because the structure of the third temple, in the room of the second by Herod, was more magnificent than that of the sirst: And according to this exposition the prophet (he says) encouraged Zorobabel and the other Jews; to proceed in their building this second temple. I answer,

I. THAT whether the prophet speak of the Messias or not, (as it is certain he doth) 'tis manifest that he speaks of the fecond temple; as hath been shewed before: And therefore the fews ought to shew, how the glory of that fecond house could be said to be greater than the glory

of the former.

- 2. What the Jew says of the duration of the fecond temple 10 years longer than that of the first, doth not prove it. (1.) Because that wants proof it self. He hath not attempted to prove, that it stood longer; and we are not obliged to take it upon his word. (2.) That if he could prove this; yet would this be no argument of its greater glory, as hath been shewed above. (3.) What the Jew affirms under his third head, quite overthrows what he affirms under the first. For he reckons the magnificence of Herod's temple, as an argument of the greater glory mentioned by the prophet: And yet he calls Herod's temple the third, built in the room of the second. If it was really the third, how can that prove the greater glory of the second? Again, if it was the third, then his first reason from duration is utterly destroyed: For according to this account, the second temple stood less time than the sirst by very many years. So that the Jew overthrows his own work, and hath entangled himself before he is aware.
- 3. As for the Romans offering sacrifice, it is nothing to the purpose. How could the offerings of heathens add glory to the house of God? Besides, that was a contingent thing, and if they had not done it, according to the Jew's opinion, the glory of the second house had sailed; which is very unreasonable to suppose. After all, what encouragement could these things afford to Zorobabel and the Jews to build the second house, who could not know of these events? And if they could have foreseen them, they could not have been encouraged by them.

THESE things are so transparently shifts, that this Jew thought sit not to rely upon them; but betakes himself to another exposition of these words. I shall sollow him, and see what he hath to offer worthy of notice.

To do him right, he doth allow "that the name, in the text, doth fignific sometimes no more than fecond; and he produceth instances to prove it from Exod. iv. 9. and Gen. xxxiii. In this he shews greater sincerity, than Abravenel had done. I proceed to his new exposition; which he thinks, as he says, may be better than his former.

HE would \* have us understand the prophet predicting the building of the last temple, which the Jews expect hereaster in the days of their long expected MESSIAS; and this he adheres to, as probably the truest meaning of the prophet Haggai. And then he makes the prophet's mean-

u Num. 687. имт. 688.

Digitized by Google

ing to be this: (Haggai ii. 6.) Tet once it is a little while, &c. q. d. Adbuc unum modicum illa, which he fays is according to the Hebew text; and the meaning is, that, for the illa, i. e. illa domus secunda, i. e. that fecond house, which the Jews were then building, it should continue but a little while; and not for ever, as they hoped the last house, which should be afterward built in the days of the MESSIAS, would do: I will shake the heavens, &c. i. e. I will shake the universe, &c. In the last days, when the MESSIAS shall come, and reduce, and redeem the scattered Israelites, and build the last temple: And the desire of all nations shall. come, i. e. When this last temple is built, and the nations subdued to their MESSIAS, then shall the best of the gentiles come to worship the LORD of hosts at Jerusalem: And I will fill this house with glory, i. e, Then will I fill this last house with glory. Istam domum, i. e. not the house which Zorobabel built, which was to endure but a little while; but this last house. But then the Jew, being sensible that this would seem a little harsh, that that should be called an house, and this house which was not then built, he adds, that Istan, This refers to the place or Area, where the second house stood, but not to the structure which was built upon it. He lays great stress upon the word Novissima, v. 9. used by St. Hierom; which he is willing to understand of this last house still to be built; though he was before displeased with him for using that word, when it did not feem to serve his purpose. This is the main of what the few hath to say, and his last effort.

I SHALL make some reflections upon what this Jew hath offered upon this occasion.

First, What he says here destroys his second pretence or exception. which I mentioned above.

Secondly, This account is very far from being confishent with that entouragement which the prophet gives to Zorobabel and the builders to go on with their building. They would have little heart to build, when they are told (as they are by this Jew supposed to be) that their building shall stand but a little while.

Thirdly, His interpretation of those words, The desire of all nations shall come, is dogmatically delivered; but without any offer of proof, that that is the meaning of the words.

Fourthly, His interpreting this house of an house, that was to be built hereafter, is the most extravagant conceit imaginable. 'Tis inconsistent with the context, with the letter and plain meaning of the text, with the purpose of the prophet; and in truth with common sense. This house was not then built: 'Tis not yet built, after above 2000. years expired; Nor doth the Jew pretend to know when it will be built. And when the prophet is speaking of an house, that was building, and encouraging the Fews to go on with it, and pointing all along at it, to affirm that by this house is meant an house hereafter to be built, is beyond all belief. But thus will men blunder, who oppose the truth, and would wrest so noble a prophecy out of the Christian's hands. CHAP.

#### CHAP. IX.

The promise of the MESSIAS is absolute, not conditional. Jews give up their cause, when they deny this. The MESSIAS was promised as a great blessing to the gentiles. There is no condition annexed to the promise of the coming of the MESSIAS. The time is fixed, within which he was to come. The impenitence of the Jews could not hinder his coming. That the coming of the MESSIAS is a fundamental article of the Jewish faith; and therefore the promise cannot be conditional. An enquiry for what sins of the Jews they can pretend, that the coming of the MESSIAS is delayed. That the Jews in this matter are inconsistent with themselves. The Jews are not all of one mind in this question. Of the different case of the prophets, who foretold good; from that of them, who foretold evil. Of the last days, in which the MESSIAS was to come. In what terms the days (or time) of the MESSIAS are expressed by the ancient Hebrews: How it is expressed by the Chaldee paraphrasts, and how by the writers of the new Testament. Of the true sense and importance of the last days, when applied to the time of the MESSIAS. They are the same with the world to come; and that to be explained with reference to the Jewish polity. Times, in holy writ, are divided with regard to the church, or to the world. With respect to the church they are to be considered as before and under the law; and under the MESSIAS. Times with respect to this world are reckoned by the four kingdoms in Daniel. This may be called the greater Kalendar. Of the less or provincial Kalendar in Daniel. That the Jews have no cause to object against the time, in which IESUS did appear. the time, in which JESUS appeared, was the same with the last days; both with respect to the Jewish church, or Mosaick oeconomy, as also with respect to the four great kingdoms in Daniel.

II. SHALL now prove, that the promise of the Messias is an absolute and not a conditional promise, and therefore an unalterable
one: And that it doth not depend upon the condition, that the
fews repent them of their sins. Nor shall I pass by this pretence of the
fews; because they do not produce any probable grounds for the support
thereof. For since it is so commonly received among them, and is of a
most dangerous consequence, I shall take the more pains to expose, and
shew the vanity thereof. And to that purpose I shall commend to serious
consideration the following particulars.

I. THAT

I. That the Jews, in affirming the promise of the coming of the Messias to be conditional, do in truth give up their cause. The old Testament is express as to the time of his coming: He was to come before the Jewish polity was quite dissolved, during the standing of the second temple; and within the compass of Daniel's weeks. All these times are long since lapsed; and this subter-suge, which the Jews betake themselves to, is a tacit confession, that the time set for the coming of the Messias is expired. For this pretence being attended with no grounds, which the Jews are able to produce in its desence, is only an argument that they are not able to keep their ground, when they are by the Christians press'd with proofs, that are beyond exception, that the time appointed for the coming of the Messias is past. They would have no need to sly to this refuge, were they not forced out of the field.

II. This vain pretence of the Jews supposeth that, which cannot be granted; viz. that the Messias was to come only upon the account of the Jews; whereas he was to appear on behalf of the gentiles also: It is therefore ridiculous to suppose, that the impenitence of the Jews should hinder his coming. He was promised, before there was such a people as the Jews in the world; in the days of Adam the common parent of mankind; and after that, to Abraham, as that seed, in which, not only the Jews, but all the families of the earth should be blessed. It is true, that he was to arise from the Jews; but in the very place whence that is collected, it is also said, that to him shall the gathering of the people be. This is so evident a truth, that Abravenel be reckons this among the characters of the Messias, that the gentiles shall seek him; and that not only the Israelites, but all people shall be subject to him: And to this purpose he applies several passages in the old Testament belonging to this matter. I have elsewhere produced many testimonies hereof; which I shall not need to repeat here. The gentiles being concern'd in his appearance, 'tis not reasonable to suppose, that the impenitence of the Jews should retard it. He was to be a light to lighten the gentiles, as well as the glory of the people of Israel.

III. The promise of the time, when the Messias should come, hath no condition annexed to it; and is therefore an absolute promise. 'Tis great sawciness in us to annex a condition, where God hath made no mention of any. There is not in those three samous places, which I have mentioned above, any intimation of a condition annexed to this promise: And 'tis not credible, that the time should be delayed. Four hundred and thirty years were d allotted for the sojourning of the Israelites, and their foresathers, and for the sinishing their oppression: Did God delay this time of their deliverance? By no means. It came to pass at the end of the four hundred and thirty years, even the self same day it came to pass, that all the hosts of the Lord went out from the land of Egypt. Again, after seventy years captivity, God restored his people from Babylon, because he had promised no less; For thus saith the Lord, that

Gen. xlix. 10. with Exod. xii. 41. b Abravenel in Isa. 11.

c Part I. chap, 9.

d Gen. xv. 13.

after

after seventy years be accomplished at Babylon; I will visit you, and perform my good word towards you, in causing you to return to this place. Shall we affirm, that God failed in this promise, and that a condition, and such a condition too as may for ever obstruct the making this promise good, is to be understood, though no where expressed? Here is no shadow for this pretence. On the other hand, 'tis very evident, that the promise was absolute, and not conditional. For we have not only a promise of the Messias; but the time, within which he was to come is precisely limited, the place is expressed where he was to be born, the family named out of which he was to arise, and many other particulars relating to his birth and life and death and burial, &c. are predicted, 'Tis very absurd to allow all this in a promise, which is conditional only.

IV. This condition, of the repentance of the Jews, can by no means be admitted: For, not to infift upon what hath been faid before, that the MESSIAS was promised from the beginning of the world, and for the sake of the gentiles; certain it is, that the impenitence of the Jews could not obstruct his coming. For this very impenitence of the Jews is predicted also by those very prophets, which foretel the coming of the MESSIAS; and the very destruction of Jerusalem, which supposeth the great wickedness of the Jews, is foretold by Daniel, even then when he precisely lays down the time of the coming of the MESSIAS. There's the greatest need of a physician, when diseases are rife and raging. It cannot be denied, but that the MESSIAS, when he came, e was to bring men to a right mind: His fore-runner also was to prepare and dispose them to repentance. And 'tis therefore vain to pretend, that the ME SSIAS did not come, because the Jews did not repent: For the MESSIAS comes to call men to repentance. And the repentance be a preparative for the reception of the Messias; yet the impenitence of the Jews could not obstruct his coming, the main end of which was to bring men Abravenel t tells us, that their wisemen say, that the Son of David will not come, unless it be to a generation which is altogeter pure, or altogether unclean: If this be true, then the wickedness of the Jews cannot hinder his coming.

V. The coming of the Messias is reckoned by g the Jewish writers a fundamental point of their law; and is therefore placed among the articles of the Jewish creed: But this vain opinion subverts it quite, and undermines the truth of a great and fundamental point of their religion. For if the coming of the Messias depend upon the merit or repentance of the Jews, what assurance can they or we ever have, that he will come at all? For supposing that the Jews will obstinately continue in impenitence, he will not come at all. So that we have no greater assurance, according to this principle, that the Messias will come, than we have that the Jews will repent: And this is to suppose, that a main article of their religion may be false.

VI. I would fain know, what are the fins, which the Jews continue in to this day; which, as they pretend, hinder the coming of the Messer. Ser. xxxi, 32. Mal. iv. 5, 6.

Abravenel cap. fidei, cap. 14.

SIAS?

SIAS? Before they were carried captive into Babylon, they were guilty of idolatry, and contempt of the law of Moses: They were, for their fins captives in Babylon seventy years. When that time was expired, they returned to their own land: There they continued some hundreds of years; there they dwelt some years, after they had put our Jesus to death: They were destroyed by the Romans about 1600 years ago; and ever fince that, have been scattered over the face of the earth, and have been a scorn and by-word to them that are round about them. They never were able to form themselves into a distinct polity since: They have been so far from that, that they live dispersed among their enemies; and many, and almost innumerable, are the afflictions and oppressions, which they have been followed with, from the enemies among whom they have lived from age to age. A man would be apt to conclude, from these long and severe sufferings, that they are indeed great sinners: But whatever the sins of the Jews are, for which they are so severely chastisfed or punished, it is not for those fins, which sent them into Babylon. We cannot accuse them of idolatry; nor yet of a total neglect of the law of Moses. As for idolatry, they are far from it; and the worshipping any image is that which they detest, and upon all occasions declaim against. As for the law of Moses, they cannot be accused for a total neglect of that neither. Many of those precepts of Moses they do not indeed conform to: But they are excused from them by that law it self. For those precepts were annexed to the land of Canaan, or to the temple; and do not oblige them elsewhere. Such were their laws about tythings, first-fruits, facrifices, and many other, which are now rendred unpracticable by the providence of God. As for the other precepts, they observe them still. They keep their fabbaths, and feast of unleavened-bread, and their other festivals, as far as they can. They circumcife their males, wear their phylacteries and fringes, and observe many other of the rites of their law. But yet they continue h without a king, and without a prince, and without a facrifice, and without an image, and without an ephod, and without a teraphim. In a word, they are a people scattered and peeled, and who have for many hundreds of years been deluded with false Christs and prophets, and greatly afflicted in strange lands. I would know, What is their fin?

THEIR crucifying of Jesus they will not allow to be a crime: And if it was not a crime, it was a virtue. Their putting a false Christ to death (for so they believe Jesus to be) is so far from being a fault, that it was an acceptable service. This would be so far from obstructing the

coming of the true MESSIAS, that it would rather hasten it.

WILL they say, they are thus severely punished for the idolatry of their foresathers before the captivity? Or will they assirm, as they sometime have done, that there is no calamity befalls them, there is but an ounce of the golden calf in it? Will they pretend, that upon consideration of the rebellon of these their ancestors, God delays to send the Messias in his appointed time? There is no shadow for this pretence: For the prophets, who lived after the times of that idolatry, did not only predict the coming of the Messias; but the precise time also when he should appear. It would be to question their authority, to suppose that they

h Hof. iii. 4.

would

would have done this, if God had altered his purpose of sending the MESSIAS, upon the account of the idolatry of their foresathers.

VII. The Jews, at other times, are very inconsistent with themselves: and are so far from owning their sins to be the cause, why God doth not lend the MESSIAS (under which confideration they ought to be very humble) that they justifie themselves, and vaunt as God's peculiar. Thus Abravenel i interprets the 53d of Isaiah of the sufferings of Israel; and consequently, takes off the guilt from them that suffer. For certain it is, that the sufferer, in that chapter, is not the sunner; for he is represented as bearing the iniquities of others, and as one that had done no violence, neither was there any deceit in his mouth. And I find several of the Jewish writers giving such an interpretation of Dan. ix. 24. as is inconsistent with this pretence, that the MESSIAS is not fent, because the Jews continue in their fins. Thus k R. Solomon, upon those words, To finish transgress. sion, and to make an end of sins (Dan. ix. 24.) hath these words, i. e. That Israel may receive their full punishment in the captivity of Titus, and the bondage of Edom; that their transgressions may be finished, and their sins made an end of, and their iniquities expiated, and so ever lasting righteousness introduced. And to the same purpose another fewish commentator speaks upon the same words. He tells us, that those transgressions and sins, which in the captivity of Babylon were not consumed or finished, shall be finished in this long captivity: For (says he) such a great captivity shall expiate iniquity, and the house of Israel shall sin no more. According to these men, these sufferings were to purifie the Jews, and prepare them for the greatest blessings: They have been 1600 years already in this furnace of affliction; and one might juftly expect, that in this time their filthiness might have been consumed, and that their fins should not still obstruct the coming of the Messias.

VIII. The Jews themselves, though they use this pretence when they are pressed by Christians, are not constant in it: Nor doth the whole nation agree, that the promise is conditional. Abravenel 1 tells us, that, according to Hillel, there is a two-fold term of the coming of the MESSIAS: one of which is contingent and alterable; namely, if the Israelites repent; for then he shall hasten his work, and prevent the time of his coming: The second is necessary and fixed; this is known to God, and determined absolutely, whether the Israelites repent or not: Beyond this time, the MESSIAS will not tarry: And of both these the Hebrew doctors expound the words of the m prophet, I the LORD will hasten it in his time; i. e. If they deserve, I will hasten it; if they deserve not, it shall be in its time. So that they are forced after all to allow a fet and fixed time; and consequently an absolute promise, that the MESSIAS should come. This is enough to my present purpose: Their pretence that it should be hastened, hath no shadow of ground to build upon. They are forced to acknowledge a certain fixed time. Menasseh Ben. Israel, in his epistle to his reader before his Spes Israelis, tells us, that the design of his book is to shew, that their hope, in which they live, of the coming of the MES-

1 Abrayenel in Ifa. liii. c. 14. \_\_\_\_\_ Ifa. lx. 22. k R. Solomon and Jacchiades in Dan. ix. 241

1 De cap. fidei

SIAS,

promissione dei benedicti, i. e. because it is built upon the absolute promise of the blessed God. To the same purpose, R. Bechai tells us, n that Redemption depends upon repentance; but if repentance do not intervene, the fixed time for it shall not be removed. And to that purpose he applies that o law concerning the redemption of land. If a man sold his land, his kinsman might redeem it: If his kinsman did it not, he might do it himself: If he was not able, it would yet return at the year of fabilee: So though repentance might hasten the redemption (says he) yet if that happens not, there is a time fixed, like the year of fubilee, that will bring our release. Hence 'tis plain, that the fews are forced at last to own, that there is a fixed and determined time for the coming of the Messia and I have already shewed, that the time fixed is expired.

IX. THAT the promise of the Messias being a promise of a great good, according to the Jewish principles it cannot fail of being made good. The prophets might predict an evil; and though that evil came not to pass, they are for all that to be reputed true prophers. The reason is plain, and may be fetcht from Jer. xviii. 8. The threatned evil might be prevented by the repentance of them, who were thus threatned. But the prophet, who foretels good to them, if that good come not, is to be reputed a false prophet. For Go D doth not promise a bleffing, (though it be a conditional promise) but it always comes to pass, says p Maimonides. Nor have we a fure rule, unless this be admitted. (says the same author in another place) to judge of the truth of prophecy. This was the case between Hananiah and Jeremiah: Jeremiah predicted evil to come, Hananiah good: Now Jeremiah might have been a true propher, though the evil had not come to pass (as he is brought in saying to Hananiah by Maimon.) because God might have mercy on the people on their repentance: But if the good, which Hananiah foretold, did not come to pass he must needs be a false prophet, and nothing but the event could prove him to be a true one. This seems to be the meaning of feremiah's words to him, fer. xxviii. 7, 8, 9. Hear now this word, &c. The prophets, that have been before me, and before thee of old, prophesied both against many countries, and against great kingdoms, of war, and of evil, and of pestilence. In this case, though the event followed not; yet they ought not to be thought false prophets: But he goes on and tells him, The prophet, which prophesied of peace, when the word of the prophet shall come to pass, then shall the prophet be known, that the LORD hath truly sent him. Whence it follows, that as we cannot conclude him to be a false prophet who threatens an evil, that happens not; so we cannot have cause to believe him to be a true prophet, who promises a blessing, till that bleffing confirms the truth of the prophecy: And therefore to suppose the MESSIAS not come in the time foretold, is to reproach the prophets, who foretold this his coming.

AND thus I have exposed the vanity of that pretence of the Jews, that the promise of the MESSIAS was conditional, and depended upon the re-

In Pentat. fol. 160. col. 4. Lev. xxv. 25. P H. Fund. Legis, cap. 1012 V. Port. Moss, pag. 25, 26.

pentance

pentance of the Jews: Of which matter I have said, I hope, what is sufficient; tho not all that might have been said. I proceed to shew,

III. THAT allowing the last days to denote the days of the MESSIAS, this is no objection against our Jesus, whose coming was in these last days. And if this be made good, there will be no ground for the Jews on this account to expect a MESSIAS towards the end of the world, and near the time of the general resurrection. And for the better speaking to this whole Matter,

First, I SHALL shew, in what terms the ancient Hebrews do express the times of the MESSIAS; where that of the last days will fall in.

Secondly, I SHALL confider the true sense and importance of this, of the last days.

Thirdly, I SHALL briefly shew, that the Jews have no cause from hence to object against our JESUS.

First, I SHALL shew, in what terms the days of the MESSIAS are

expressed by the ancient Hebrews.

As for the writers of the old Testament, we grant readily, that the days of the Messias are called the last days. Jacob tells his sons, what shall befall them in the I last days, when he predicts the birth of the MESSIAS. Thus the f prophet Isaiah, And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the LORD's house, &c, Thus Daniel, There is a God in heaven that revealeth secrets, and maketh known to the king Nebuchadnezzar, what shall be in the last days. Thus " Hosea, Afterward shall the children of Israel return and seek the LORD their GOD, and David their king, and shall fear the LORD, and his goodness, in the latter days. Where instead of those words, And David their king, the Chaldee paraphrast hath these, And they shall obey the Messias the son of David their king. By which it is evident, that by the latter days he meant the days of the MESSIAS. Thus \* Micah, In the last days it shall come to pass, that the mountain of the house of the Lord, &c. Where the last days refer to the days of the Messias; and Kimchi expresly fays so upon the words. We have no controversie with the Jews in this matter.

Let us now fee, how the Chaldee paraphrasts express the time of the Messias; which they do with some variety: By the end, or extremity of days, they mean the same with the last days. Thus the Jerusalem Targum on Gen. iii. 15. hath it; In the end of the extremity of days, in the days of king Messias. And the Targum of Jonathan, upon Exod. xl. 9. mentions the king Messias, who was to come, that he might redeem Israel, in the end of the days. And the Targum on Ecclesiastes i. 11. by those that shall come after, gives us to understand, those that shall be in the days of the Messias. Elsewhere the time of the Messias is expressed by the world to come, Thus the Targumist on Psalm cx. 4. upon those words, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedeck, hath paraphrased thus; Thou shalt be great in the world to come,

r Gen. xlix. 1. with ver. 10. Isaiah ii. 2. Dan, ii. 28. Hof, iii. 5. with the Targum. Micah. iv. 3. with R. D. Kimchi.

Digitized by Google

because thou wast a righteous king. And to the same purpose the Targumist on the 1st of Kings iv. 33. where of Solomon 'tis said, That be spake of trees, from the cedar-tree, that is in Lebanon, even unto the hyssop, that springeth out of the wall: Upon which the words of the Targumist are these: He prophessed of the kings of the house of David, that were to reign in this world, and in the world to come of the Messias. And among the other y Jewish writers, nothing is more common, than to call the times of the Messias the Rose of the world to come. Sometimes this time is called the end of the world

AGREEABLY hereunto our 2 new Testament speaks of the days of the MESSIAS, or time of CHRIST'S appearance and kingdom: 'Tis called the last days, and the last time: The eleventh, and the last hour, which is the same with the last time, there being no new age and dispensation to succeed unto it: 'Tis sometimes called the end, or ends of the world, and also the world to come. Which expressions, as they are conformable to the Hebrew way of expressing this matter; so they being made use of by the writers of the new Testament, it evidently follows, that they who used them, looked upon them as very expressive of that, to which they applied them. And that they are so will appear by considering,

Secondly, THE true sense and importance of the last days, when ap-

ply'd to the days of the MESSIAS:

AND before I pass on to that, I shall say something to the other expressions of the end of the world, in which the MESSIAS was to come; and the world to come, by which the times of the MESSIAS are express fed. We need not from hence cast the coming of the MESSIAS to the close of this world, and begin his kingdom from thence. The authors of the Jews law called Talmud (as a learned man observed long since) treating of sacrifices in the chapter, number, i. e. The bullock of the sin offering, contained the whole time of this life, from Adam the firstman to the last that ever shall be born, in two worlds; which in Hebrew they call with the first from the beginning of things created to the coming of Christ; the second from that time to the resurrection of the dead. This tradition of the Hebrews made an end of the old world in the coming of CHRIST. This opinion of the Jews was the sense of their wise-men. For hence it was, that they called the time of the MES-SIAS the world to come: For that expression must refer to some world or age, that went before it, and to which this was to succeed; and that must be the Jewish state and oeconomy. And 'tis certain, that with refpect thereunto our Jesus did appear in the end of the world, i. e. of the Jewish state and polity. And that by the end of the world, when it refers to the coming of the Messias, cannot be meant the destruction of this lower world, is evident; not only from the b confession of those Jews, who grant some thousands of years for the continuance of this kingdom of the MESSIAS in this world, but also from the express testimonies of the Holy Scriptures. For thus the Psalmist speaks of this time of the

Y See Targ. Hierofol. in Exod. xii. 42.

Heb. i. 2. Acts ii. 17. 1 Pet. i. 20. Mat. xx. 6. 1 John ii. 18. Heb. ix. 26. Heb. ii. 5. 1 Cor. x. 11.

Mr. Lively's Chronology of the Persian Monarchy, pag. 250.

V. G. Vorsti. not ad. cap. 14. Abravenel cap. fid.

Pfal. lxxii. 5, 17.

Pfal. lxxii. 5, 17.

MESSIAS:

MESSIAS: They shall fear thee, as long as the sun and moon endure, throughout all generations. His name shall endure for ever, &c. And again, His seed shall endure for ever, and his throne as the sun before me. It shall be established for ever as the moon, and as a faithful witness in heaven. And that those places belong to the MESSIAS, I ap-

peal to the Jews themselves.

That the times of the Messias are expressed by the phrase of the world to come, is evident; hardly any thing is more common than this way of speaking among the Hebrew writers: The state of the Jews, or oeconomy of Moses, must therefore be the age or world to which this succeeded. So that by the end of the world (in which the Messias was to come) must of necessity be meant, either the final close and dissolution of this material world, or else the end of the Jewish polity: For no man can be so stupid as to understand it of the end of the world to come, as that imports the days of the Messias: it cannot be understood of this lower and material world, consistently with the doctrine of the Jewish writers; and therefore the end of the world (when that expression relates to the coming of the Messias) must be understood of the end of the Jewish polity.

And this end of the Jewish polity is every fitly expressed, in the new Testament, by συντίλεια τε αιώνω, the end of that Seculum or age, when the Jewish polity was to be dissolved. This seems to be the meaning of that question, Matth. xxiv. 3. if we compare it with the parallel places. And because several ages were run out, from Moses, to that time when the Jewish polity and Mosaical oeconomy was near its end, therefore that time is elsewhere called τα τέλη τελη αιώνων, and in another place συντέλεια τελη αιώνων: The ends, or end of the several ages of the Mosaical oeconomy. Sometime it is called the end: But the end is not yet. (Matth. xxiv. 6.) This is very fitly expressed after this manner. For we find this time by Daniel called h the consummation, or end: And the destruction of the Jews is expressed elsewhere, after the same manner. (Ezek. vii. 2, 6.) And the times preceeding the dissolution of the Jewish polity, I am now speaking of, are called by Tobit (ch. xiv. 5.) Kaiego τε αιώνω. And this time by Moses is called the latter days.

AND now, it will be no hard matter to give an account of the importance of the phrase, the last days, when it refers to the coming or kingdom of the Paragraph of the Indiana.

dom of the MESSIAS.

TIMES are divided in the Holy Scriptures with regard to the

church, or to the world:

WITH respect to the church, the most remarkable times are these three: First, The time before the law, from Adam to Moses: Secondly, The time under the law, viz. from Moses to the dissolution of the fewish polity, and that dispersion of the Jews, which rendred them uncapable of practising those laws, which were annexed to their land and temple: Thirdly, The times of the Messias, which the Jews are wont to call the world or age to come.

d Pfal. lxxxix. 36, 37. Matth. xxiv. 3. With Mark xiii. 4. Luke xxi. 7. I Cor. x. 11. B Heb. ix. 26. Dan. ix. 27. Kal ins the outtender raise surtineas raise surtineas different, LXII. V. Tob. Heb. P. Fag. 6. 14. v. 5. N. B. Deut. xxxi. 29.

The

THE times may also be considered with reference and respect to this world, and the kingdoms of it. Daniel i gives us a particular account of the four great kingdoms of this world, succeeding one to another: And they are that of Babylon, that of the Medes and Persians, that of the Greeks; and the last that of the Romans: And with this reference and respect, whatever fell out in the time of the Romans, might be said to happen in the last days. So that speaking in general, the last time is the time of the last kingdom or empire; the latter time, as a part of it, is the latter part of this kingdom.

And as the four great kingdoms in Daniel are the great Kalendar, by which the times are, to be distinguished, with reference to the world; so there is to be found in the same prophet a less and a provincial Kalendar, with reference to the legal worship, or Jewish state: And that is the feventy weeks of Daniel, or 490 years: In which time the MESSIAS was to come; after which the Jewish polity was to be dissolved.

Thirdly, I SHALL now briefly shew, that the Jews have from hence no cause to object against our Jesus.

THAT time, in which Jesus did appear, was the last time or the last days, both with respect to the Jewish church, and the Mosaical oeconomy; and with respect to the great king doms of this world, mentioned by

the prophet Daniel.

WITH respect to the Jewish state, it was the last days when JESUS did appear, It was not long before the destruction of Jerusalem and the temple, and the miserable dissolution of their polity. Jesus lived in that very age, when that lamentable destruction happened to the Jews: He did not only foretel it; but he said also that it should k come to pass in that age; Verily I say unto you, this generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled. And that time was the last days of that state; and twas within the time of the standing of the Jewish polity, city, and temple, that the MESSIAS was to come, according to the prediction of Jacob, of Daniel, of Haggai, and of Malachy.

AND then, with respect to the world, or the four great kingdoms in Daniel, the time when Jesus appeared was also the last days, or the last time. He was baptized in the reign of Tiberius Casar; and his forerunner preached in the fifteenth year of his reign, when Pontius Pilate was governour of fudæa. This was m the time, in which that kingdom was to be fet up, never to be destroyed; and the God of heaven, says Daniel, shall set it up. And hence it is, that the kingdom of the Mes-SIAS is, by the " Chaldee paraphrast sometimes called the kingdom of God; and conformably hereunto in the gospel it is called sometimes the kingdom of God; and elsewhere in a parallel place, the kingdom of heaven: It being set up, as Daniel expressed it, by the God of heaven.

<sup>1</sup> Dan. ii. 44. k Matth, xxiv. 34. Chald. Paraphr. on Isa, lii, 7. with ver. 13. k Matth, xxiv. 34. 1 Luke iii. 1, m Dan: ii. 44. • V.

CHAP.

# TO THE TOTAL STATE OF THE STATE

#### CHAP. X.

An historical account of the false CHRISTS that have appeared since our SAVIOUR'S time in the several ages, according to the prediction of Jesus, John v. 43. The history of Bar Cochab: An account of Moses Cretensis, and Dunaan and Julian: Of Mahomet, and a Syrian impostor, and another in France. Of another that appeared in Persia, A. D. 1138, and another, in the same century, who appeared at Corduba in Spain: Of one, mentioned by Maimonides in the kingdom of Fez; as also one in Arabia, and another beyond Euphrates. Another disturbs Persia: Another arises in Moravia: Another mentioned by the author of Shevet Tehuda. An account of David el David. Of several others that appeared in Spain, Germany, and East-India. A more particular account of Sabatai Sevi. Of R. Mordecai. The usefulness of this account in several particulars: To which is added an account of the destruction and extirpation of the Jews out of the empire of Persia. The relation of Antonius Montezinus made to M. B. Israel, concerning the ten tribes. The stress which M. B. Ifrael laid upon it. The great vanity thereof. The great variety of opinions among the Jews, concerning the coming of the MESSIAS; and their inconsistence.

SHALL in the next place give an account of the many impostors, which have imposed upon the fews, since the time of our Jesus, to this very age in which we live; and shall afterwards say some-

thing of the usefulness of this account.

It is very well known (and a most surprizing consideration it is) that the Jews rejected Jesus, and to this day continue so to do: Yet was Jesus born at the very time, and in the place, and of the family, and after the supernatural manner, which were predicted by the prophets. His birth was foretold by an angel, declared and published by an heavenly host, signified by a star, and owned by the eastern sages, as well as by the devonter persons of the house of Israel. He lived a most holy and heavenly life, a most innocent and useful one: And as he spake as never man spake; so he consirmed his words by works, which none but

God could do. He sealed his doctrine with his blood, he rose from the dead, and sent the Holy Ghost from heaven, and spread his holy religion in the world, not only without human aid and power; but in despight of all the opposition and sorce, which the world could make against it. In a word, he gave sufficient proof, that he came from God; and yet when he came unto his own, his own received him not.

AND yet this people, in after-times, and even to this very age in which we live, have been and are so very credulous, that they suffer themselves to be deluded with cheats and impostors, who have led them aside, to their great loss and destruction. They who were obstinately bent upon the rejecting of our Jesus, have been very prone ever since to embrace and entertain salse people and impostors. The words which Jesus and unto them have been abundantly verified, I am come in my father's name, and ye receive me not: If another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.

I HAVE elsewhere given some account of the deceivers, which appeared in the very first times of *Christianity*; especially of those, who are mentioned by *Josephus*. I shall now proceed to give a short history of the salse *Christs*, and those who pretended to be at least his fore-runners, and such impostors, as have from time to time imposed upon the *Jewish* people.

I. I BEGIN with Bar Cochab (which fignifies the son of a star) in the reign of Adrian. He was the head of the Jews in their rebellion; he pretended to be the MESSIAS, and bore the title of the fon of a star, with allusion to what we read Num. xxiv. 17. He would be thought a star from heaven, to give light and ease to his afflicted country-men. He pretended to a miracle, and made oftentation of fending forth a flame out of his mouth. He was one of great cruelty; which he exercised especially against Christians, to make them renounce their SAVIOUR. Incredible numbers were flain by him, and by his followers; and he occasioned at the last a vast slaughter of the Jews. The Jews b crowned him; and R. Akiba proclaimed him to be the Messias. Upon this the Roman forces were raised, and besieged a place called Bitter, and destroyed it with an incredible number of the rebellious Jews. This deceiver was by the furviving Jews afterward called בר כוובא Bar Coziba, i. e. the son of a lye. This is said by the Jews to have happened about fifty two years after the destruction of the Jewish temple by Titus. So soon were they encreased, and returned to their rebellion. Mighty expectations were raised in the Jews upon the appearance of this false Christ. He was cried up, and applauded by a vast multitude of deluded Jews: But he brought an incredible destruction upon the whole nation, and lost his own life. He was fo far from delivering his people, that he was the occasion of rendring the condition of those of them who survived much worse, than it was before. For whereas before the Jews enjoyed the liberty of living in their own land, and enjoyed there a vast number of synagogues, for the worship of God, they were after this debarred of this liberty, and excluded from their own land. We have many c testimonies

Digitized by Google

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>a</sup> John v. 43. <sup>b</sup> R. David Ganz, Zem. David. Pag. 101. Juchafin fol. 35. <sup>c</sup> Gr. Abul-Pharagii, Hist. Dynast., pag. 77.

to this purpose. Adrian commanded, that the ears of the surviving Jews should be cut off; and made a law, that none of them should for the sature, though at a distance, be admitted so much as to see Jerusalem. Eusebius d relates much to the same purpose from Aristo Pellaus. They were now prohibited so much as to come into their land, and forced to wander about into countries, to which they did not belong. After this the Jews met with great reproaches, and hardships, were scorned and ill used; and suffered for their folly and too great credulity.

II. Another great impostor appeared in the days of Theodofius the younger, in the year 434. This Jew was of Crete, now called Candia; and is commonly known by the title of Mases Crevensis. He pretended to a divine mission, and that he was sent from heaven to the Jews who were in that island, to make a passage for them through the sea, as Meses of old had done by the Israelites. He went to all the cities of that island, and gained belief of the Jews, who gave him credit. He promised them to carry them into their own land, and to dry up the fea, which lay in their way. The Jews believed him so far, as to lay aside their business, and to leave their goods to any one, that would lay hold of them. The impostor appointed them a day, and when the time was come, they met together, and he march'd before them to the sea-side. They followed him universally, with their wives and children, to a promontory upon the seafide. He commanded them thence to through themselves into the sea; and was in that obeyed by those, who had gotten to the top of the promontory, who forthwith perished by the rock, or in the waters. Many more, it chath been said, had perished, had it not been for some fisher-men, and fome Christian traders who were at hand. They faved some out of the waters, who were ready to perish, and hindred others from throwing them-selves into the sea. The Jews hereupon condemn'd themselves for their folly, and fought to destroy the impostor, but he escaped their hands: And, which was the greatest advantage, some of them herespon renounced their Judaism, and turned Christians.

III. As the last impostor pretended to be Moses; so there followed another in the days of the emperour Justin, who professed himself to be the son of Moses. The name of this Jew was Dungan: He went into a city of Anabia Falix, and oppressed the Christians, and among them Arethas the bishop: But he did not go long unpunished for his enveloy; for he was taken captive, and put to death.

IV. In the year 529 the Jews with the Samaritans in Palestine rebelled, and endeavoured to shake off the Roman yoke. They set over them one Julian, they crowned him, and armed themselves to destroy the Christians: And because he succeeded in this attempt, they owned him for the Messias; this success being among the Jews a mark or note of the true Messias. It was not long, before the Romans opposed them, and destroyed an innumerable company of them, together with their captain or leader.

4 Hist. lib. 4. cap. 6. V. Socrat. Hist. Eccl. lib. 5. cap. 37.

V. In

V. In the year 571 was Mahomet, that grand impostor, born into the world. I do not pretend that he was a Jew; however he may well be mentioned in this place, as a salse prophet, and one that missed the Jews, as well as others. As for his religion, it is indeed a mixture: But there is a great deal of Judaism in it, as appears from their practice, viz. circumcision, washings, polygamy, &c. Besides, 'tis well known that a cunning Jew had a great hand in contriving the imposture: After all he professed himself to be the Messias, which was promised in the old Testament; and was by the deluded Jews owned as their Messias; of which we have several testimonies collected by a late learned writer. To which I may add, that the Jews have too often, both of later times, and from the beginning, renounced their own religion, and embraced that of Mahomet. Upon which considerations he may justy stand in the catalogue of the impostors, which I am obliged to give an account of.

VI. ANOTHER impostor appeared in the time of Leo Isaurus, who professed himself to be the Messias, in the year 721. He was a Syrian: This wretch was followed by the credulous Jews, and they were seduced by him. After this the Jews were in great affliction from the Christians. I will not examine, how it came to be so: But in great distress they were; and as it is natural for men in that case to wish for a deliverer; so the Jews were very credulous, when there appeared any shadow of such a one: And after they had suffered very severely, they were very easily imposed upon.

VII. In the year 1137 there appeared an impostor in France, who professed himself to be the Messias; he deluded the Jews, and brought destruction upon himself, and upon the Jewish people.

VIII. In the g year 1138 another impostor appeared in the kingdom of Persia, who professed himself to be the MESSIAS, and so far succeeded, as to get a great number of Jews to follow him. He with his numbers advanced towards the king of Persia, to wage war with him. The king was terrified with his attempt: He called together the Jews, which were in his kingdom, and told them, that if they did not divert this impostor from invading his kingdom, he would at once destroy them with their wives and children. Upon this the Jews apply themselves to the impostor, fall at his feet with groans and tears, beseech him to forbear to proceed, and not to bring destruction upon the Jewish nation. The impostor reply'd in this manner, I am come to save you, ye will not be Saved. Whom do ye wretches fear? Who can stand before my face? The king of Persia is formidable to you; I will make him fly at the very sound of my arms. The Jews asked him, By what sign he could prove himself to be the MESSIAS? He answered, He would prove it by his prosperous successes, and that there was need of no other proof. The Jews reply'd, that many had pretended as much with ill success; upon which freedom he fent them away in great anger. These poor Jews return to the impostor the following day, which they had set apart for prayers and fasting: They fet before him their little children, to mollifie him and bring

f Joan, à Lent, Schediasm, cap. 2.

g Shevet Jehud. vers, per Gentium, pag. 169.

Y

him

him to some measure of compassion. Upon the sight of them, he told them that out of compassion to them he would forbear fighting the Perfian king, upon this condition, that he would defray all the charge, that he had been at in getting such an army together. Thus insolent was this impostor grown. Nor was this all: For when the Jews objected against this unreasonable demand, that so great a prince, as the king of Persia was, should stoop so low as to bear the expences of his army; the insolent impostor reply'd thus, Let me no more hear such words; otherwife I will not only have my expences, but besides them I will not be satisfied with one moyety of the Persian kingdom. The Jews report the impostor's answer to the king; and the king complied with his unreasonable demand: But this was an occasion of great fufferings to the Jews afterwards, and cost the impostor his head.

IX. In the same century arose another impostor in Corduba, in the kingdom of Spain: He deceived the credulous Jews to the almost universal destruction of that nation throughout all the kingdom of Spain. He is mentioned by h Maimonides in one of his epistles.

X. Maimonides mentions another, who appeared not long after the above-named impostor in the kingdom of Fez; and so doth Solomor Ben Virga, in the place above cited.

XI. In the very same year appeared another deceiver, who pretended to be the fore runner of the MESSIAS; and he appeared in Arabia. The history of this impostor is related by Maimonides i in one of his epistles: I will give the reader an account of what he relates on this occasion. i e. There arose (says he) a certain man two and twenty years ago, who professed himself to be the fore-runner of the Messias, who was to prepare his way before his coming. He declared that the MES-SIAS would appear in the south. Many both Jews and Arabians flocked unto him. He went about the mountains, and drew his followers aside, and frequently used these words: Come with me, and let us go forth to meet the MESSIAS; for he hath sent me unto you, to prepare the way before him. Our brethren of the fouth (says Maimonides) wrote to me largely, and acquainted me with his way and manner, and what alteration he made in the prayers, and what he said to them, and re-lated to me, that they had seen his miracles, and asked my opinion: Upon the whole matter and imformation from their writing, I found that be was a poor man, unlearned (though he feared God) and of no wifdom; and that all, that he was said to have done or made use of, was altogether false. He goes on and relates, that he wrote to the Jews on this occasion, concerning the subject of the king MESSIAS, of his marks, and the time of his appearing; and warns them, that they should admonish this impostor, that he might not bring destruction upon himself and upon the Jews. He tells us, that he was afterwards taken, and that his adherents forfook him, and that he was brought before the Arabian king, who questioned him for what he had done. To whom the impostor re-

\_ Digitized by GOOGLE\_\_

h Shevet. Jehud. pag. 169. Vorstin observationes in D. Gantz, pag. 294. Maimon. Ep. ad Judzos Marsilienses. plied,

plied, That he had spoken the truth, and had asted by a divine commission. The king demanded a sign or miracle to confirm this commission. The impostor replied in these words, Cut off my head, and I will rise again, and live as before. The king told him, This would (if it happened as he said) convince him and the rest of mankind, who would then believe his words. His head was cut off, and he appeared no more, but brought great damage to the surviving Jews. This is a true account of what Maimonides relates on this occasion.

XII. The same k author mentions another Jewish impostor, who appeared about the same time beyond the river Euphrates, who pretended to be the Messias, and promised this sign for proof of it, That whereas he was leprous over night, he would in the morning be freed from that distemper; but he sailed in his sign, and the poor Jews were so far from being delivered by him, that they soon fell into great afflictions.

XIII. Persia again is disturbed with another impostor, who professed himself to be the long expected and much desired MESSIAS. He appeared about the year 1174, to the very great misery of his country-men the Jews.

XIV. ANOTHER appeared in *Moravia*, who pretended to be the MESSIAS; his name was *David Almusser*. He was a great *Cabbalist*, and endeavoured to hide himself from the king of the country. But the king obliged the *Jews* of the country to take the impostor, and deliver him up under a very severe penalty: He was at length taken and put to death, and the *Jews* underwent the mulct of a very great sum.

XV. Solomon Ben Virga 1 mentions another of these impostors; but we are not so certain of the precise time of his appearing.

XVI. ANOTHER famous impostor arose also in *Persia*, and professed himself to be the Messias: He was called *David el David*, and otherwise *Alroi*. The *fewish* writers make a great mention of this salse *Christ*, and from them I shall give an account of him.

Benjamin Tudelensis m gives us this account of him, viz. That this David Alroi was of the city of Amana, and a disciple of Hastai; that he was eminent for his knowledge of the law of Moses, of the constitutions, and of the Talmud, and all exotick sciences, and the Arabick language and writings, and not ignorant of magical books. He undertook to rebel against the king of Persia, and to bring the Jews to Jerusalem; and as he pretended, to deliver them from the yoke or bondage of the Gentiles, and gained belief among the Jews by certain signs and salse miracles, which he wrought to confirm his mission, upon which the Jews owned him for their Messias. The king of Persia hearing of this, sent for the impostor; and he came to him without sear. The king asked him if he was the king of the Jews? He replied that he was, The king upon that put him into prison; from whence he in a little time escaped, and presented himself again before the king; but in such a manner, that

V. Maimon. Ep. de Australi reg. apud Vorstium. Shevet Jehuda. pag. 169.
pag. 169.

"Itinerar. Benjamin, pag. 91.

! Shevet Jehud.

those

#### Part III. A DEMONSTRATION 172

those, who were present with the king could not see him, they only heard his voice. After this he made his escape after a very surprizing manner: but was at last beheaded by the procurement of the king of Persia; and the Jews his country-men were forced to pay a very great

fum, to pacifie the wrath of the king.

Solomon Ben Virga n gives us also an account of this impostor, and calls him David el David. He tells us, that in that city where this impostor appeared, there were no less than 1000 families of the Jews: That the Jews paid a tribute to the king of Persia; that this El David was not only a disciple to Hasdai, but to another great man, a rector of the academy of Bagdad, who was very skillful in the Talmudick learning, and the liberal arts, and greatly vers'd in the magical books of the Chaldeans. That this impostor was very proud and insolent, and re-folved to rebel against the *Persian* king. That he perswaded the *Jews* to take up arms; and to gain credit, he did some prodigious works; which some imputed to his magical skill, others to divine assistance. That his followers called him the MESSIAS, and with praises extolled him to the heavens. The king was startled at this, sends for him, and examines him, before whom he owned himself to be the Messias; upon which he was imprisoned, and made his escape, as is related above. But after his flight and wonderful passage over the water, he was at length killed by his father-in-law, and his head carried to the Persian king.

R. David Gantz, gives us also o a short account of this impostor, by the title of David el David; and refers us to the Shevet Jehuda above-

mentioned for a larger history of him.

IT must be confessed, that the two last Jewish writers make this impostor to be the same whom Maimonides mentions in his epistle, and of whom I have given an account, Numb. XI. That, for what I can fee, may be their mistake: But I shall not spend any time about that enquiry, nor do I think it worth my while. I am fure, that the account which is given of El David by the Jewish historians, cannot agree with the relation of Maimonides.

IT is observed, that after this the Jews were greatly afflicted and oppressed in the several countries, where they lived; and consequently were very desirous of a deliverer. Hence it was, that they were very prone to believe impostors and deceivers; for we are naturally prone to believe what we mightily defire.

XVII. In the year 1222 an impostor appeared in Germany as the king MESSIAS, whom the Jews called the son of David. And in the same year the Jews about Worms in Germany expected one to be born of a young woman, who was then big with child: But so it happened (against the vehement desire and expectation of the Jews) the young woman was delivered of a daughter. For the truth of this p a late writer hath produced several testimonies; to whom I refer the reader.

XVIII. ABOUT 4 the year 1497, in the days of Ferdinand king of Spain, another impostor appeared, deluding the poor Jews with the hope

? Joh à Lent. Schediasm. of

Digitized by Google

of their Messias. He was called Ismael Sophus, and with a company of miscrable wretches, who followed him, prevailed in Media, Parthia, Persia, Mesopotamia and Armenia, insomuch that the Jews flattered themselves, that he would be their Messias and great deliverer: But he was far from giving them any help.

XIX. In the year 1500 another impostor appeared in Germany, pretending himself to be the Messias: His name was Lemlem a German Jew of a principality of Austria. The Jews say, that he professed himself to be the fore-runner of the Messias.

David Gantz, gives us this account of him, viz. That he foretold, that the coming of the Messias would happen that year; that all the dispersed Jews believed him, and many of the gentiles also. He pulled down his oven, where he was wont to bake their cakes against the passover, being consident, that the following year he should bake them in the holy land. He adds, that R. Eliezer told him, that he did not only foretel what is said of him, but gave some sign or miracle to prove his prediction. Thus he.

XX. ABOUT f the year 1534, another impostor appeared in Spain, and gave out himself to be the MESSIAS; but with very ill success, being burn'd for his imposture, by the command of Charles the fifth.

XXI. ABOUT the year 1615, another false Christ appeared in the East-Indies, and was followed by the Portuguese Jews.

XXII. ABOUT " the year 1624 and 1625 there appeared another impostor, who pretended to be the Messias, of the family of *David*, and of the line of *Nathan*. He appeared in the *Low Countries*: He gave out, that he would overthrow the kingdom of *Anti-christ*, and of the *Turk*; and that *Rome* should be overturned. He was a great *enthusiast*, as appears from the accounts given of him.

XXIII. I PROCEED to \* another impostor, who appeared in the year 1666. This was a year of great expectation, and some wonderful thing was looked for by many. This was a fit time for an impostor to set up; and accordingly lying reports were carried about. 'Twas told about, that great multitudes marched from unknown parts into the remote deserts of Arabia; and they were supposed to be the ten tribes of Israel, who have been dispersed for many ages. That a ship was arrived in the north-parts of Scotland with sails and cordage of silk; that the mariners spake nothing but Hebrew; that on the sails was this motto, The twelve tribes of Israel. Thus were credulous men possessed at that time.

of Israel. Thus were credulous men possessed at that time.

Then it was, that Sabatai Sevi appeared at Smyrna, and professed himself to be the Messias. He promised the Jews a deliverance and a prosperous kingdom. This which he promised they firmly believed; the Jews now attended to no business, discoursed of nothing but of their return. They believed Sabatai to be the Messias, as sirmly as we Chri-

Zemach David, pag. 150.

1 J. à Lent. ubi supra.

2 J à Lent. lbid.

2 V. History of the 3 Impostors published by J. E. A. D. 1669.

stians believe any article of our faith. A right reverend person then in Turkey told me, that meeting with a Jew of his acquaintance at Aleppo, he asked the Jew, what he thought of Sabatai. The Jew replied, that he believed him to be the Messias, and that he was so far of that belief, that if he should prove an impostor, he would then turn Christian. It will be very fit, that I should be very particular in this relation, because the history is so very surprizing and remarkable; and we have an account of it from those, who were then in Turkey, and are now alive. I am so well satisfied as to the sacts, that I dare vouch for the truth of the relation, and appeal for the truth of it to very many persons of great credit, who are now alive.

Sabatai Sevi was the fon of Mordechai Sevi, a mean Jew in Smyrna. Sabatai was very bookish, and arrived to a great skill in the Hebrew learning. He was the author of a new doctrine; and for it was expelled the city. He went thence to Salonichi (of old called Thessalonica) where he married a very handsome woman, but was divorced from her. Then he travelled into the Morea, then to Tripoli, Gaza and Jerusalem. By the way he picked up a third wife. At Jerusalem he began to reform the Jews constitutions, and abolish one of their solemn sasts, and communicated his design of professing himself the Messias to one Nathan: He was pleased with it, and sets up for his Elias, or fore-runner, and took upon him to abolish all the Jewish sasts, as not beseeming when the bridegroom was now come. Nathan prophesies, that the Messia should appear before the Grand Seignior (in less than two years) and take from him his crown, and lead him in chains.

AT Gaza, Sabatai preached repentance (together with a faith in himself) so effectually, that the people gave themselves up to their devotions and alms. The noise of this Messias began to sill all places. Sabatai now resolves for Smyrna, and then for Constantinople. Nathan writes to him from Damascus; and thus he begins his letter: To the king, our king, lord of our lords, who gathers the dispersed of Israel, who redeems our captivity, the man elevated to the heighth of all sublimity, the Messias of the God of Jacob, the true Messias, the cælessial Lion, Sabatai Sevi.

AND now the Jews throughout Turkey were in great expectation of glorious times: They now were devout and penitent, that they might not obstruct the good which they hoped for. Some fasted so long that they were famished to death; others buried themselves in the earth, till their limbs grew stiff; some would endure melted wax to be dropped on their slesh; some rowled in snow; others in a cold season would put themselves in cold water; and many whipped themselves. Business was laid aside, superfluities of houshold utensils were sold; and the poor were provided for by immense contributions.

Sabatai comes to Smyrna, where he was adored by the people, tho' the Chacham contradicted him; for which he was removed from his office. There he in writing stiles himself The only, and first-born son of God the Messias, the Saviour of Israel. And though he met with some opposition; yet he prevailed there at last to that degree, that some of his followers prophesied, and sell into great extasses: Four hundred men and women prophesied of his growing kingdom; and young infants,

who could hardly speak, would plainly pronounce Sabatai, MESSIAS, and the for of God. The people were for a time possessed, and voices heard from their bowels; some fell into trances, soamed at the mouth, recounted their future prosperity, their visions of the lion of Judah, and the triumphs of Sabatai; All which (says the relator) were certainly true, being effects of diabolical delusions, as the Jews themselves have since confessed unto me.

No w the impostor swells and assumes. Whereas the Jews in their synagogues, were wont to pray for the Grand Seignior, he orders those prayers to be forborn for the future, thinking it an indecent thing to pray for him, who was shortly to be their captive; and instead of praying for the Turkish emperour, he appoints prayers for himself, as another author relates: And (as my y author goes on) he elected princes to govern the Jews in their march towards the holy land, and to minister justice to them, when they should be possessed of it. These princes were as follows,

> I Saac Silvera, Solomon Lagnago, Solomon Lagnado, jun. Joseph Cohen, Moses Galente, Daniel Pinto, Abraham Scandale, Mokiah Gaspar, Abraham Leon, Ephraim Arditi, Sālom Carmona, Matassia Aschenesi, Meir Akaira, Jocob Loxas, Mordecai Jesserun. Chaim Inegna, Joseph Scavillo, Conor Nehemias, Joseph Del Caire, Elcukin Schavit, Abraham Ruvio, Elias Sevi, Elias Azar Joseph Zevi, Joseph Inernuch,

> > 2

was King David, was Solomon, named Zovah, Uzziah, Josaphat Hilkiah, or rather Hezekiah, Jotham Zedekiah, Achaz, Joram, Achab, Asa, Rehoboam, Ammon, Jehojachin, Jeroboam, Abia, Zorobabel, Joas, Amasia Tofia, King of the king of kings. His vice-king.
The king of the kings of Judah. His vice-king.

THESE were men well known in the city of Smyrna at that time. The people now were pressing to see some miracles to confirm their faith, and convince the gentiles. Here the impostor was puzzled; though any jugling trick would have served their turn. But the credulous people supplied their defect. When Sabatai was before the Cadi (or justice of peace) some affirmed, they saw a pillar of fire between him and the Cadi; and after some had affirmed it, others were ready to swear it, and did swear it also: and this was presently believed by the Jews of that city. He that did not now believe him to be the MESSIA'S, was to be shunn'd as an excommunicate person. The impostor declares now, that he was called of God to see Constantinople, where he had much to do. He ships himself to that end in a Turkish Saick, in Jan. 1666. He had a long and troublesome voyage: He had not power over the sea and winds. Vizier upon this news fends for him, and confines him to a loathfome

J J. à Lent.

prison.

prison. The Jews gave him their visits; and they of this city are now as much infatuated as those of Smyrna. They forbid traffick, and refused to pay their debts. Some of our English merchants, not knowing how to recover their debts from the Jews, took this occasion to visit Sabatai, and make their complaints to him against his subjects; whereupon he wrote this following letter to the Jews:

TO you of the nation of the Jews, who expect the appearance of the MESSIAS, and the salvation of Israel, peace without end, Whereas we are informed, that you are indebted to several of the English nation, it seemeth right unto us to order you to make satisfaction to these your just debts; which if you refuse to do, and obey us not herein, Know you that then you are not to enter with us into our joys and dominions.

Sabatai remained a prisoner in Constantinople by the space of two months. The Grand Vizier, designing for Candia, thought it not safe to leave him in the city, during the Grand Seignior's absence and his own. He therefore removed him to the Dardanelli; a better air indeed, but yet out of the way; and consequently, importing less danger to the city: Which occasioned the Jews to conclude, that the Turks could not, or durst not take away his life; which had (they concluded) been the surest way to have removed all jealousse.

THE Jews flocked in great numbers to the castle, where he was a prifoner; not only those that were near, but from Poland, Germany, Legorn, Venice, and other places: They received Sabatai's blessing, and promises of advancement. The Turks made use of this confluence; they raised the prise of their lodgings and provisions, and put their price upon those, who desired to see Sabatai, for their admittance. This prosection shopped their mouths, and no complaints were for this cause sent to Adria-

nople.

Sabatai, in his confinement, appoints the manner of celebrating his own nativity. He commands the Jews to keep it on the ninth day of the month Ab, and to make it a day of great joy, to celebrate it with pleafing meats and drinks, with illuminations and musick. He obligeth them to acknowledge the love of God, in giving them that day of consolation, for the birth of their king Messias, Sabatai Sevi, his servant and first

born son in love.

I ONLY observe, by the way, the insolence of this impostor. This day was a solemn day of fasting among the Jews formerly, as I have shewed elsewhere, in memory of the burning of their temple by the Chaldeans: Several other sad things happened in this month, as the Jews observe; that then, and upon the same day, the Jecond temple was destroyed; and that in this month it was decreed in the wilderness, that the Israelites should not enter into Canaan; &c. Sahatai was born on this day; and therefore the sast must be turned into a feast: Whereas in truth it had been well for the Jews, if he had not been born at all; and much better for himself, as will appear from what sollows. But I return to my author.

THE Jews of the city paid Sabatai Sevi great respect. They decked their synagogues with S. S. in letters of gold, and made for him a crown

\* Serm. on Zachariah vii. 5,

Digitized by Google\_

in the wall; and they attributed the same titles and prophecies to him,

which we apply to our SAVIOUR.

HE was also during his imprisonment visited by pilgrims from all parts, who had heard his story. Among whom Nehemiah Cohen from Poland was one, a man of great learning in the Kabbala and eastern tongues; who defired a conference with Sabatai, and at the conference maintained, that according to the Scripture, there ought to be a two-fold MESSIAS; one the fon of Ephraim, a poor and despised teacher of the law; the other the fon of David to be a conquerour. Nehemiah was content to be the former, viz. the son of Ephraim, and to leave the glory and dignity of the latter to Sabatai. Sabatai (for what appears) did not mislike this. But here lay the ground of the quarrel: Nehemiah taught, that the son of Ephraim ought to be the fore-runner of the son of David, and to usher him in: And Nehemiah accused Sabatai of too great forwardness, in appearing as the fon of David, before the fon of Ephraim had led him the way. Sabatai could not brook this doctrine; for he might fear, that the fon of *Ephraim*, who was to lead the way, might pretend to be the fon of David, and so leave him in the lurch; and therefore he excluded him from any part or share in this matter; which was the occasion of the ruin of Sabatai, and all his glorious defigns.

Nehemiah being disppointed goes to Adrianople, and informs the great ministers of state against Sabatai, as a lewd and dangerous person to the government, and that it was necessary to take him out of the way: The Grand Seignior being informed of this sends for Sabatai; who much dejected appears before him: The Grand Seignior requires a miracle, and chooses one himself, and 'twas this; that Sabatai should be stripped naked, and set up as a mark for his archers to shoot at; and if the arrows did not pierce his sless, he would own him to be the Messias. Sabatai had not saith enough to bear up under so great a trial. The Grand Seignior let him know, that he would forthwith impale him, and that the stake was prepared for him, unless he would turn Turk. Upon which he consented to turn Mahometan, to the great consustion of the Jews. And yet some of the Jews were so vain, as to affirm, that it was not Sabatai himself, but his shadow, that professed the religion, and was seen in the habit of a Turk: So great was their obstinacy and insidelity; as if it were a thing impossible to convince these deluded and

infatuated wretches.

AFTER all this, several of the Jews continued to use the forms (in their publick worship) prescribed by this Mahometan-Messias; which obliged the principal Jews of Constantinople to send to the synagogue of Smyrna, to forbid them this practice: The letter is to be seen in my

<sup>2</sup> author, with the names of those who wrote it.

During these things, the Jews, instead of minding their trade and traffick, filled their letters with news of Sabatai their Messias, and his wonderful works. They reported that when the Grand Seignior sent to take him, he caused all the messengers that were sent, to die; and that when other Janizaries were sent, they all sell dead by a word of his mouth; and being requested to do it, he caused them to revive again: They added, that the prison, where Sabatai lay, was

\* P. 94, &cc.

barr'd

barr'd and fasten'd with strong iron-locks; yet was he seen to walk through the streets with a numerous train. That the shackles, which were upon his neck and feet, did not only fall off, but were turned into gold, with which Sabatai gratified his followers. Upon the fame of these things, the Jews of Italy sent legates to Smyrna, to enquire into the truth of these matters. When these legates arriv'd at Smyrna, they heard of the news, that Sabatai was turned Turk, to their very great confusion: But going to visit the brother of Sabatai, he endeavoured to persuade them, that Sabatai was still the true MESSIAS; that it was not Sabatai, who went about in the habit of a Turk, but his angel or spirit; that his body was taken into heaven, and should be sent down again, when God should think it a fit season. They added, that Nathan (his fore-runner) who had wrought many miracles, would foon be at Smyrna; that he would reveal hidden things to them, and confirm them. But this Elias was not suffered to come into Smyrna; and though the legates saw him elsewhere they received no satisfaction from him at all.

XXIV. There appeared another impostor in the Year 1682, one Rabbi Mordechai, a Jew of Germany, a man famous among his country-men for his learning, and austere kind of life: He was also much cried up for his prophecies, which he utterred about five years before at Prague and other places. He was a very sharp reprover of vice, and was for that reason commonly called Mochia, i.e. the reprover. He was so vain, as to profess himself to be the Messias; and not only to require the Jews to salute him as such, but, upon that matter, to adore him. The Italian Jews gave him credit, and so did many of the Jews in Germany also, whither he came out of Italy. We are told, that he was mightily careffed in Italy, and received for the MESSIAS; though the Jews of that place, after they faw their errour, did not care to own him. A certain few, who by order of the fews called him into Italy, tells us, that upon conversing with him he found him to be an inchanter and very filly; that he thereupon warned the Jews not to believe him: Upon which the credulous Jews were so enraged, that they treated their monitor very malitiously, and dismissed him from the place of his abode. They withall threatned him very severely, if he durst speak evil any more of their Messias: That this Jew continuing to disparage this impostor, the Italian Jews were so enraged, that they endeavoured to cast him out of the place, where he was settled, and declared, that whoever should do him mischies, or bear salse witness against this person, who desamed their Messias, should be esteemed guiltless.

Thus I have given a very short account of the false Christs, who have appeared in the several ages of the World. It remains now that I represent to the reader, what this concerns my present argument and what are the advantages of such an account as this. Now the usefulness of this short history appears in the following particulars.

I. This confirms our LORD's prediction, who did foretel, that there would appear deceivers and false Christs, and did let the Jews know,

b J. à Lent.

that

that they would be deceived by them, John v. 43. Those words of JESUS, have been often fulfilled: And the knowledge of it confirms us in the belief, that JESUS was a true prophet: And this is one great advantage, which we receive from the fore-going history. I have shewed before, that what our SAVIOUR foretold, did come to pass, and have given unexceptionable proofs of it; and made it appear, that whereas Moses is received as a true prophet, because what he predicted did come to pass, the Jews have the same and sar greater reason to believe, that JESUS is so likewise. And what I have offered before to this purpose, will receive a farther confirmation, from what hath been related above. The Jews have believed those, who came in their own name, though they did resuse JESUS who came in the name of God. They have believed impostors to their own destruction; but refused Jesus who came to save them. They have been (which is very furprizing) at once the most incredulous, and the most credulous persons upon the face of the earth; hardly brought to believe the truth, and very prone to believe a lye.

2. We may learn, of what great use miracles are to beget faith in us. Moses wrought many in Egypt to prove his divine mission; but they are not to be compared with those, which \ Esus wrought, as I have shewed before. But here these impostors failed; though this was expected from them by their own people, and by the heathens also, and some of the impostors attempted it. Maimonides doth affirm, that the MESSIAS shall not work miracles. He is singular in that opinion, and he sets up for it to undermine the belief of Christians. I have elsewhere exposed that opinion of his: And it is evident, from what has been related before, that it is destitute of any ground. The miracles, which JEsus wrought, were a mighty confirmation of his Doctrine; as those, which Moses wrought, were of his divine mission. But these impostors were not able to beget faith in their followers this way; which was highly necessary, when they pretended to be sent by GoD.

3. We may learn, how vain the Jews are, and how little to be credited; especially when they discourse of their Messias, and the time of his appearance, and the end of their captivity. We see, how often they have been deceived and baffled in their hopes. And yet it is very certain, that some weak Christians have been too easily drawn aside to listen to their dreams. One would think, that the Jews should by this time bethink themselves. The former account ought to have that influence upon them: And yet what hath been faid before, is not all that can be produced to shew the vanity of the Jewish People, We have several other accounts of them that are much to their Confusion. I will not think much to mention some of them.

And First, I will give an account of the destruction and banishment of the Jews out of the empire of Persia, which we have from

a b very good hand; and is as follows. In the reign of the famous Abas Sophy of Persia, and grandfather to the present emperour, (says my author) the nation being low, and fomewhat exhausted of inhabitants, it entred into the mind of this prince, to feek some expedient for the revival and improvement of trade, and by all manner of privileges and immunities to encourage other contiguous nations to negotiate and trade amongst them: And this project he fortified

V. History of three Impostors, by J. E. Lon. 1669. p. 114.

with

with fo many immunities, and used them so well who came, that repairing from all parts to his country, in a short time the whole kingdom was filled with multitudes of the most industrious people and strangers, that any way bordered on him.

It happened, that amongst those who came, innumerable flocks of Jews ran thither from all their dispersions in the East; attracted by the gain which they universally make, where-ever they set footing. And it was not many years, but they had so impoverished the rest, and especially the natural subjects of Persia, that the clamour of it reached to the ears of the emperour: And indeed it was intolerable; for even his own exchequer began to be sensible of it, as well as his people's purses, and estates, which they had almost devoured.

How to remedy this inconvenience, without giving umbrage to the rest of those prositable strangers now settled in his dominions, by falling severely upon the Jews on the sudden, he long consulted; and for that end called to his advice his chief ministers of state, the Musti, and expounders of the law: After much dispute 'twas at last sound, that the Jews had already long since forfeited their lives, by the very text of the Alcoran; where it is expressed, that if within six hundred years from the promulgation of that religion, they did not universally come in, and prosess the Mahometan saith, they should be destroyed. The zealous emperour would immediately have put this edict in execution; but by the intercession of the Musti and the rest of the doctors, 'twas thought sit to suspend it for the present: But that these growing evils might in time have a period, His Majesty commanded that all the Chachams, Rabbins, and chief amongst the Jews should immediately appear before his tribunal, and make answer to some objections that were to be propounded to them.

THE Jews being accordingly convened, the Sophy examines them about feveral passages of their law; and particularly concerning the prophet MoJes, and those rites of his, which seem'd to have been so long annihilated amongst them, since the coming of Isai (for so they call Jesus) after whom they pretended their Mahomet was to take place, and all other predictions to determine.

THE Jews much terrified with the manner of these interrogatories, and dubious what the meaning and drist of them might signifie, told the emperour, that for CHRIST they did not believe in him; but that they expected a MESSIAS of their own to come, who should by his miraculous power deliver them from their oppressors, and subdue all the world to his obedience.

At this reply, the Sophy appeared to be much incensed: How! says he, Do you not then believe Christ, of whom our very Alcoran makes so honourable mention? As that he was the Spirit of God, sent down from him, and returning to him, &c. If we believe him, why do not you? What say you for your selves, you incredulous wretches? The consounded Jews, perceiving the emperour thus provoked, immediately prostrated themselves on the ground, humbly supplicating him to take pity on his slaves, who acknowledged themselves altogether unable to dispute with his majesty; that for the Christians, they seem'd indeed to them to be gross idolaters; men who did not worship God, but a crucisted malesactor and deceiver: Which still the more displeased the Sophy; not enduring, that they should so blaspheme a person, for whom their Alcoran had so great a reverence. However for the present he dissembles his resentment: 'Tis

well (fays he) you do not believe the God of the Christians: But, tell me, What think you of our great prophet Mahomet? This demand exceedingly perplexed them, not knowing what to reply: And, indeed, it was contriv'd on purpose, that convincing them of blasphemy (as they thought it) against their prophet, the Sophy might find a specious and legal pretence to ruin and destroy them, without giving any jealousic or suspicion to the rest of the strangers, who were trafficking in his country of several other religions, but who were not in the least obnoxious to his displeasure.

AFTER a long pause and secret conference with one another, it was at last resolved among them, that though they had denied Christ; yet they would say nothing positively against Mabomet: Therefore they told the emperour, that though their religion forbad them to believe any prophet save Moses; yet they did not hold Mahomet for a salse prophet, inasmuch as he was descended of Ishmael the son of Abraham, and that they desired to remain his majesty's humble vassals and slaves, and cray'd

his pity on them.

The Sophy easily perceiving the cunning and wary subtersuge of their reply, told them, this should not serve their turn; that they were a people of dissolute principles, and that under pretence of their long expected Messias, they persisted in a salse religion, and kept off from proselyting to the true belief; and therefore required of them to set a positive time, when their Messias was to appear; for that he would support them no longer, who had imposed on the world, and cheated his people now so many years: But withall assuring them, that he would both pardon and pretect them for the time they should assign, provided they did not go about to abuse him by any incompetent procrastinations, but assign the year precisely of his coming; when, if accordingly he did not appear, they were sons of death, and should all of them either renounce their faith, or be certainly destroyed, and their estates consistence.

THE poor Jews, though infinitly confounded with this unexpected demand and resolution of the Sophy, after a second consultation among themselves (which the emperour granted) contrivid to give him this answer: That according to their books and prophecies their MESSIAS should infallibly appear within seventy years; prudently (as they thought) believing, that either the emperour or they should be all of them dead before that time; and that in the interim, such alterations might emerge, as all this would be forgotten or averted; and that at the worst, a good sum of money would reverse the sentence: But that something was of necessity

to be promised to satisfie his present humorous zeal.

The emperour accepts of the answer, and immediately causes it to be recorded in form of a solemn stipulation between them: That in case there was no news of the Messias within the seventy years assign'd (to which of grace he added sive more) they should either turn Mahometans, or their whole nation utterly be destroyed throughout Persia, and their substance confiscated: But with this clause also inserted, that if their Messias did appear within that period, the emperour would himself be obliged to become a Jew, and make all his subjects so with him. This, drawn (as we said) in form of an instrument, was reciprocally sign'd and seal'd on both parts; and the Jews for the present dismiss'd, with the payment yet of no less than two millions of gold (as my author affirms) for the favour of this long indulgence.

SINCE

Since the time of this emperour Abas, to the present Sophy now reigning, (says my author) there are not only these seventy years past, but one hundred and sisteen expired: During which time the Persians have been so molested by the Turks, and by continual war in the East-Indies, &c. that the succeeding princes no more minded this stipulation of their predecessor; till (says he) by a wonderful accident in the reign of the second Abas, sather of him who now governs, a person extreamly curious of antiquities, searching one day amongst the records of his palace, there was found this writing in the journal of his sather, intimating what had so solemnly pass'd between him, and the chiefs of the Jews, in the name of their whole nation.

Upon this the Sophy instantly summons a council, produces the instrument before them, and requires their advice, what was to be done; and the rather, for that there began now to be great whispers, and some letters had been written to them from merchants out of Turkey, of the motions of a pretended Messias; which was the samous Sabatai Sevi. This so wrought with the emperour and his council, that with one voice, and without longer pause, they immediately conclude upon the destruction of the Jews; and that this wicked generation of impostors and oppressours of the people were no longer to be indured upon the earth.

In order to this resolution, proclamations are issued out and published to the people, and to all that were strangers and inhabitants amongst them, impowering them to fall immediately upon the Jews in all the Persian dominions; and to put to the sword, man, woman, and child, except such as should forthwith turn to the Mahometan belief; and to seize on their

goods and estates, without any remorfe or pity.

This cruel and bloody arrest was accordingly put in execution, first at Ispahan, and suddenly afterwards in all the rest of the cities and towns of Persia: Happy was he that could escape the sury of the inraged people, who by virtue of the publick sentence, grounded upon the declared stipulation, and now more encouraged by the dwindling of their pretended MES-SIAS, had no commiseration on them, but slew and made havock of them, where-ever they could find a Jew through all their vast territories; falling upon the spoil, and continuing the carnage to their utter exterminati-Nor did the persecution cease for several years, beginning from about fixty three till fixty fix, at Ispahan, the cities and countries of Seyra, Ghelan, Humadan, Ardan, Tauris, and in short throughout the whole empire, without sparing either sex or age; excepting (as we said) such as turn'd Mehometans, or escaped through the deserts into Turkey, India, and other far distant regions; and that without hopes of ever re-establishing themselves for the future in Persia, the hatred of that people being so deadly and irreconcileable against them. And, in truth, this late action and miscarriage of their pretended MESSIAS, had rendred them so universally despicable, that nothing but a determined obstinacy, and an evident and judicial malediction from heaven, could proffibly continue them in that prodigious blindness, out of which God of his infinite mercy, deliver them, that they may at last see and believe in him, whom they have pierced; and that so both Jew and gentile may make one flock under that one shepherd and bishop of our souls, Jesus Christ the true Mes-SIAS. Thus far my author. ISHALL

I SHALL next give a short account of the relation of Antonius Montezinus, which he made to Menasseh Ben-Israel at Amsterdam, A. D. 1644. which made a great noise in Europe, and raised in the Jews at that time a great expectation of their Messias, to deliver them from their present captivity, and to take upon himself the government of the world. This Montezinus was a Portugese Jew: He had travelled into the West-Indies, and after that came to Amsterdam, in the year above written; and makes the following relation before Menasseh Ben-Israel, and some of the principal Portugese Jews in that place. I shall not transcribe the whole relation, as it is printed by Menasseh Ben-Israel, but content my self with so much of it only, as is sufficient to my present purpose. The curious reader may see the whole in a book written by Menasseh-Ben-Israel d upon that occasion, which is called Spes Israelis. Montezinus relates as follows:

THAT two years and an half were elapsed, since he lest the port of Honda in the West-Indies, and went thence into the province of Quito. That he hired the mules of a certain Indian, who was called Franciscus Castellanus; and that there was in his company another, who was called Franciscus Cazicus. It fell out, that as they were passing over some mountains, so great a tempest happen'd, as threw down their laden mules. The Indians were much concerned at that misfortune: but yet owned, that their sins were such that they deserved greater calamity. Francis perswaded them to take heart, and affured them that they should meet with quiet They replied, that they deserved it not; and added, that they at length. looked upon the great cruelty, which the Spaniards had exercised upon them, to have befallen them very justly from the hand of God, because they themselves had evil intreated God's holy and innocent people. Mon. tezinus reproved Francis for speaking so hardly of the Spaniards: He replied, that he had not related one half of their cruelties, and that they intended to be revenged on them by the help of an unknown people. Hence Montezinus went to Carthagena, where he was imprisoned by the inquisition: And that in prayer to God these words slipped from him, Blessed be the name of God, that he hath not made me an idolater, a barbarian, a Black, or an Indian. And that upon his faying Indian, he was angry with himself, and said, that the Indians were Hebrews. And that upon consideration he own'd his mistake, in affirming that the Indians were Hebrews; yet repeating the same prayer again twice or thrice, he repeated the word Indian as before; which put him upon thoughtfulness, how he should slip so often in this matter, and therefore resolved, when he should be released from prison, as he was after a while, that he would discourse with his fellow-traveller Francis, and renew that subject, which he began with him on the mountains. To that purpose he goes to Honda, finds Francis, engages him to travel with him, and to him he owns himfelf to be an Hebrew, and that Adonai was his God, &c. And when the Indian asked him, Who were his parents? He answered Abraham, Isaac and Jacob; and being farther asked, if he had no other father, he answered, that his father's name was Ludovicus. After this the Indian told him, if he would follow him, he would shew him what he defired. He followed him to the bank of a river, where the Indian told him, that

d Amstelodami 1650.

Digitized by Google

# 184 ADEMONSTRATION Part III.

he should see his brethren. Upon a sign given, he was fetch'd over to the other fide of the river, where he met with men that repeated to him your : ישראל יהוה אלהינו יהוה אחר Hear, O Ifrael, the Lord our God, is one LORD. Or the fourth verse of Deut. 6. And that then they told Mon-tezinus, that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob were their parents, and afterward named Reuben; and they promised a place to them, that were disposed to live among them; That Joseph lived in the midst of the sea; that shortly some of them should go out to see and tread undersoot; that they should some time talk together and pronounce Ba, Ba, Ba; and that their going out should be, as if they had come out from their mother the earth; that a messenger should go; that Francis should say more: They craved leave to prepare themselves, and prayed, saying, Ne differ, i. e. Delay not; and desired that twelve men should be sent to them, &c. They repeated the same things on the two following days, without adding any thing. Upon this Montezinus took boat, but escaped narrowly; and they told him after that, that he must expect no more than what he had been told before. He relates, that the boat which brought him over never flood still, for the three days which he spent among this people: But as it took four off, so it return'd four others, who spake all the very fame things mentioned above; and that in that space of time there were not less than 300 comers and goers in that boat. He tells us, that he was, when he took leave of this people, dismissed very courteously, and prefented with necessaries for his journey. He tells us, next, what the complexion, the habit, &c. of these men were (in which I am not concern'd to follow him) and of his taking his journey with the *Indian*: And upon the way he examined the *Indian*, what he had to relate to him farther, fince his brethren had intimated, that he should tell him more. Upon which after some condition interposed, the *Indian* told him, that those men were Ifraelites, brought thither by the providence of God, who wrought great miracles for them even beyond his belief; that the Indians had treated them worse, than they were afterwards treated by the Spaniards: That by the instigation of the Magi they had waged war with them three times; but their armies were each time intirely destroyed, not a man escaping. Upon this the Indians slew their Magi, sparing some few who pretended, that they had some secret to impart: That these Magi (who were spared) declared, that the God of these Israelites was the true God; that the inscriptions upon the stones among them were true; that these Israelites should be lords of the earth, towards the end of the world. They advised the Indians to make a league with them; which they accordingly did upon certain terms mentioned. In a word, Montezinus parted with great assurance, that his brethren, who commanded the Indians, would, when they had brought under the Spaniards, fet the Jews at liberty, and put an end to their long captivity.

This is the substance of the relation; and this was the occasion of the book called Spes Israelis, written by Menasseh-Ben-Israel, about 50 years ago. That Jew was infinitely fond of this relation: He now expected the Messias to deliver them, and thought this a fore-runner of that deliverance. This part of the world rang of this matter: But alas! All this came to nothing. The relation is resulted by a learned Christian: And he might have spared his pains; for it would soon have fallen of it self, as in truth it did.

THE reason why I mention this, is to shew, how little credit is to be given to the wisest and most learned Jews in matters of this nature. They that would not believe Jesus, do easily believe a lye, and an imposture; and this they are, and have from time to time been very prone to do.

I WILL add one relation more, which f the author of Fortalitium Fidei relates from Cæsarius: And in short it is this; That a certain man of the city of Limoges had been too familiar with a young Jewess. She being with child, and he fearing her parents, used this artifice to divert their displeasure. He gets an hollow reed, goes to the door of the chamber, where the parents slept, puts one end of his reed into the keyhole, and through it he spake these words, calling the parents by their proper name; O ye just persons and beloved of God, your daughter, remaining a virgin, is with child of the MESSIAS. The old-man heard the words, and asked his wife, if she did not hear them. They prayed that they might hear these words repeated. Upon this he repeated them again through his reed: The parents examined the daughter, by whom the was with child? The daughter replied (as the was instructed by him, who had defiled her) that whether she was with child or not she could not fay; but this she could affirm, that she never had the knowledge of a man. Upon this there was great joy, and the Jews were big with expectation. But to their great confusion, the young woman was delivered of a daughter.

BE this as it will; this is very certain, that the Jews are in these matters of easie belief. And it is no wonder, for they have no steady and constant principles concerning the coming of the MESSIAS, and the end of their captivity. Now they have rejected Jesus, there is great a variety of opinions among them about the time, when the MESSIAS is to come. Of old it was believed, that he came about the time of the destruction of the fecond temple; but afterwards that he is not come yet. It hath been believed, that the promise of his coming was conditional; and at other times that it is fixed and absolute. There are those, who have computed the time, and been miserably deluded: At other times all computation of times hath been forbidden under a curse. The later Rabbins have said, the time is near; and others, that it is not to be, but when the world is near at an end. Sometime the belief of the coming of the MESSIAS hath been reckoned a fundamental article of their faith: At other times it is esteemed at most but a probable opinion. I should be too large, if I should count up the various opinions of their several doctors upon this subject. That hath been done by g several hands. God open the eyes of the Jews, and turn their hearts!

\* Spizelii Elevatio Relat. Montezin. Basil. 1661. 
Fortal. fidei, lib. 3. fol. 212. Lugd. 1525.
Fortal. fid. lib. 3. Wagensel Tela ignea, Part I. pag. 614.

CHAP.

A a



#### CHAP. XI.

What it was, which diverted me from treating of the general conversion of the Jewish nation. What methods are to be avoided by those, who attempt to convert any of them; viz. compulsion or force; professing any thing that is against sound reason; weak arguments, and ill words. A short account of the present condition of the Jews. What Christian princes and states may do toward the conversion of the Jews: The Jews may be obliged to hear our sermons, and submit to our conferences: They ought not to use in their synagogues what prayers they please: They ought not to he injured, but kept low: They may be obliged to give the government their reasons, why they reject Christianity: Of some other Matters that may be taken care of by the government. What may be done this way by others. What may be done by the universities, and what by men of estates, and men of learning. Of the best way of proceeding with them in sundry particulars. Mean men may do something this way. That the questions agitated between the Jews and Christians are things of the highest importance. That the Jews, of all men in the world, are the most considerable enemies of the Christian religion. The great advantages of gaining them to the Christian faith. Some Objections against attempting to convert them. Obj. 1. That it will be lost labour. An answer to it. Obj. 2. That it will bring many poor upon us. An answer to it. Obj. 3 That the converts from them are generally scandalous and infincere. An answer to that Objection. The conclusion.

Did fully intend, in this place, to have made an enquiry into that belief, that the Jewish nation shall be converted to the Christian faith, and to have strictly examined the grounds, upon which it is built. I know very well, that very learned men are divided in that question, and that very much may be said on both sides. It so happened that, as I was come to that argument, I received a letter from a \* very learned friend

\* As this right reverend and learned Prelate, having mentioned in the Preface to this third Volume that he intended to have given us an account of Daniel's seventy weeks, but was prevented from the same by receiving a letter from a learned Prelate, who affured him, that a work of this nature was ready for the Press, and would shortly be published, and being asked, Who this Prelate was? was pleased to answer, that it was the reverend Dr. Lloyd, then Bishop of Woreester, which account has been since exactly printed in Chronological Tables, by the reverend Mr. Benjamin Marshall, who was then his Lordships domestick chaplain: So upon this occasion being asked, Who that learned friend was, that intended

friend, who did affure me, that there was a book now in the press, that treated of that matter so fully, that there would be no need of my pains. I was very glad, that I had so just an excuse to my reader, having in my presace to my second part, signified my intention of doing something that way. Upon this I resolved to consider, in this chapter, what we are to do toward the conversion of the Jews; that being a matter, wherein we are more nearly and highly concerned. For those who are of each side of the other question, agree in this, that we are all bound, in our several capacities, to contribute what we can to so blessed a work. And those men, who do not believe, that the Jewish nation shall ever be generally converted; yet make no doubt, but some of them may, and that it is our unquestionable duty to promote their conversion what we can: And before I proceed to my main design, viz. to shew what we are obliged to do to that end, I shall shew what we are to sorbear, or what we ought not to do.

And it is certain, that we must forbear force and violence. We ought not to compel them into the Christian church by force of arms. This carries no conviction with it. It may make hypocrites; it will never make true converts. Christianity, where it is pure, doth not inspire its disciples with this spirit of persecution; 'tis the worst cause that is most sierce and cruel. He that is born after the sless him that is born after the spirit. The Jews will never be gained this way. This will rather alienate them from the Christian saith, and make them suspect, that we want arguments to evict the truth of our religion, when instead of them, we endeavour to bring them over by blows. Dragooning will never convince mankind: All the conviction it can carry is of a bad cause, and an impotent passion in them that use it. The primitive church did not proceed in this method.

Nor are we ever like to convert the Jews, while we teach any doctrines against common sense, and against the express letter of the law of Moses. The Jews are not such sools, as to be gained over in this case: The worshipping of images, and the doctrine of transubstantiation, are great stumbling-blocks to the Jews. The church, which teacheth these doctrines, is very unsit to bring over the Jews. Had Jesus delivered these doctrines, I should have absolutely despaired of the Jews conversion: For if things be duly weighed, this would have been a perpetual and an insuperable barr: But as we do not find these things taught by Jesus; so are they no where to be found in any of the sermons or writings of the Apostles. These things are indeed taught in the church of Rome; but are inconsistent with the scriptures, and repugnant to the reason of

intended to write concerning the belief, that the Jewish nation should be converted to the Christian faith? he was pleased to answer, that it was Dr. Whitby, who in the end of his annotations on the Epistle to the Romans, p. 100. hath a particular discourse on this subject. The Texts, which this learned author produceth to prove his affertion, are Rom. xi. throughout, particularly ver. 12, 15, 24, 36. Isai. liv. 9, 10. Isai. lix. 20, 21. Isai. lix. 15, 18, 19, 20. Isa. lixi. 7, 8. Isa. lixi. 4, 12. Isa. lixi. 22. ger. xxxii. 39, 40. Ezek. xxxiv. 28, 29. Ezek. xxxvii. 25, 26, 27. Ezek. xxxix. 29. Hos. iii. 4, 5. and to those might be. added, Gen. xvii. 1, to 8. Deut. xxx. 1, to 10. Isa. iv. 2, and vi. 13. and xi. 11, to 16. and xii. 1, to 6. and xxiv. 23. and xxv. 1, to 12. and xxvii. 6, 12, 13. and xl. 9, 10, 11. and xliii. 1, to 7. and xlv. 17. and xlix. 8, to 26. and li. 1, to 11, 22. and lii. 1, 2, 3, 7. and lx. 1, to 9, and lxiii. 7, to 19. and lxv. 8, 9, 10. and lxvi. 8, 10, to 14, 19, 20. Jer. iii. 12, to 25. and xxiii. 3, to 8, and xxx. 1. to 8, 10. to 22. and xxxii. 1, to 17, 21, 23, 24, 27, 35, 36, 37. and xxxiii. 1, to 7, 19. to 26. and xlvi. 27, 28. Ezek. xx. 33, to 44. and 28, 24, 25, 26, and xxx. 20, to 31. and xxxvii. 1, to 38. and xxxvii. 1, to 23, and xxxix. 25, and chap. xl. 1, to the end of the book. Joel ii. 21, to 32. Zeth. viii. 7, to 15. and x. 5, to 12.

A 2 

Mankind.

Digitized by Google

mankind. I know, that it hath been pretended, that transubstantiation is not more repugnant to reason, than the doctrine of the trinity is. This matter hath been in some measure considered before. I have said enough to prove, that transubstantiation is utterly repugnant to sound reason.

But on the other hand, the scripture doctrine of the trinity is no ways repugnant to it. They that think otherwise; have not yet been able to defend that belief. That there are three persons, and one nature, is what we believe: That is, that there are three in one. We do not affirm, that three persons are but one person, or that one nature is three natures. It is no ways against reason to affirm, that one individual nature is communicable to three persons: And while we believe one nature, we are fure there cannot be three Gods. Nor can we with reason affirm, that the divine nature cannot communicate it self after any other manner, than a created nature can. There are many things, that we have reason to believe, which yet we have not ability to comprehend. We believe that G o D is eternal: But to conceive, how a being should be from it felf, is as hard to comprehend, not to fay much harder, than it is to comprehend, how an individual nature should be communicated to three distinct persons. As for the a first of these, we have nothing to resemble it by: But as for the other, we have fomething like it: Allowing the foul to have three faculties, understanding, will, and memory, we may say here are three in one, and these three are not confounded one with another, and yet is there but one Again, we believe God's omnipresence: And yet it is hard to conceive that attribute without extension and divisibility; which yet are by no means to be attributed to God. They who object against the trinity, should consider what account they can give of these things, which yet they have reason to believe (and do believe) but not abilities to comprehend. But this may be thought too great a digression: I therefore return.

I ADD, that the Jews are never like to be converted with weak arguments, and hard words. We must use them with great humanity, and dispute with them with arguments that are proper and cogent, and that carry with them great conviction and evidence. It is very certain, that too many Christians, who have written against them, have been very defective this way. Many have used arguments, that have no force; and have advanced many propositions that are void of truth. It would be too invidious a thing for me to produce any instances to this purpose; nor is it any way needful, that I should do it. This is certain, that this method will be so far from convincing them, that it rather serves to harden them. The Jews will be apt enough to conclude, that we have little to fay, when we urge them with arguments that are trifling, or untrue. We do but lose ground, when we do this; and instead of gaining them, we expose our selves, and our cause also. The Jews do mightily triumph upon all fuch occasions. Thanks be to God, we do not want the most clear and folid arguments to prove our Christian religion against the Jews. We can prove the truth of our religion against all its enemies, but especially against the fews; because we agree with them in many principles, on which we may proceed against them. We need not to use sophistry, or weak and insufficient mediums. But then I must add, that we must not give them

\* See Dialogue between a Protestant and Papist, 1687.

Digitized by Google

ill words neither. We must avoid all reproachful language, all that is sarcastical and biting. This never did good from the pulpit or from the press. The softest words will make the deepest impression. And if we think it a fault in them to give ill language, we cannot be excused when we imitate them.

Nor ought we to quit any article of the Christian faith, that we may gain the Jews. 'Tis a fond conceit of a late Socinian writer, that we shall upon their principles be most likely to prevail upon the Jews: It is not true in matter of fact. Let them shew, if they can, what proselytes they have made: Or if any, what proportion they bear to those, who have been gained by others. We must not give up any article to gain them. I say, not any article: But then the church of Rome ought to part with many practices, and some doctrines too; but they are such as were never in any ancient creed. We are not to design to gain the Jews over to a party, or a system of dogmata; but to the ancient and primitive faith.

BEFORE I proceed to shew, what we are to do toward the conversion of the Jews, it is sit, that I should premise some account of the present state of the Jews. And indeed their condition is very much to be pi-

tied, and requires the greatest commiseration.

A VERY great number of them are in the countries of the Mahometans. There have been formerly great numbers of them in Persia. There are still vast numbers at Constantinople and Salonichi, and in other parts of the Turkish dominions. In these places there is nothing to be expected, as to their conversion to the Christian faith. Too many of them have, instead of turning Christians, turned Turks; and are under too great temptations so to do: For when it happens, that they fall into any great straits, and are become obnoxious to the government, this is the only way to gain relief and protection. The immunities and security, which they gain by this means, is a great temptation upon them.

THERE are a great number of them, who live in Christian countries, and many of them live undisturbed. But then as to the hopes of their

conversion, they are not in circumstances all alike.

GREAT numbers are in the Popish countries, in Poland and in Italy, and particularly at Rome. But such are the stumbling-blocks, which that church lays in their way, that there is little hope of their conversion there. Besides that in Rome it self there is very little care taken of this matter. This is the more strange, because the bishop of Rome pretends to be the successor of St. Peter; and we know that he was the apostle of the circumcision: To which I may add, that whereas they have in Rome a samous college pro propaganda side, and they have made great attempts to convert other nations, and have a vast number of types for printing books in their feveral languages to that purpose; yet are the poor Jews neglected: And whatever St. Peter was; yet his successors do not manage matters, as if they had any concern for the circumcisson: So that the unhappy Jew may truly say, No man careth for my soul. This is a very fad story; I wish still, that it was all the fault, which the church of Rome could be charged with in this matter. That church is so far from using all due means for the converting that people; that their doctrines and practices are such, that they hinder them from embracing of the Christian faith.

# 190 A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

Whatever pains they take to gain other proselytes, the care of the faith. Jews is laid aside. A late learned writer, who well understood these matters, offers at the reason of this conduct of the church of Rome, in shewing a great concern for the conversion of other nations, and at the same time a neglect of the Jews. If they could convert any Pagan or infidel nation, they might from thence have a confiderable accession to their church, both of glory and revenue also. But alass! the Jews are a scattered and a peeled people: Their conversion would add no new territory, or country, nor any revenue or preferments. Nay rather on the other hand, it would be a loss to the churches treasure. It cannot be supposed, but that the Jews pay some tribute into the churches treasury for the privilege of living securely in the pope's territores, which, if they should turn Christians, could not be exacted. If all the Jews in Rome were converted, the churches patrimony would not be enlarged by it, the tribute would be less, and the poor (who must be maintained) would be more. If this be the reason of this conduct, I am sure it is not derived from the Chri*stian* religion.

But yet after all I must own, that there is something done at Rome, that hath some appearance of care for the conversion of the Jews. The Jews are obliged to hear sermons at a certain place appointed; and so they do. There is an officer with a wand in his hand, who overlooks them, and doth not fail to strike them also, when they do not behave themselves decently. There is also a Dominican appointed to preach before them, and he doth preach. This is the care, that St. Peter's successor takes over this his peculiar slock. All this amounts to very little; and it cannot be thought, that it should have any great effect, all things duly considered. What the Dominican is, I know not: I'm sure of this, that he had need be a man of great learning and skill: And after all, there is little hope of doing much good, till that church shall remove the stumbling-

blocks, which she has laid in the way of the Jews.

FROM what hath been faid, we see the sad condition, in which the

far greater part of the Jews are.

Some of them indeed are in *Protestant* countries, where the *Christian* doctrine is truly represented. Some numbers of them are in the *Low countries*, where they are used with great humanity: Others there are in *Hamburgh* and other cities. We have a small number in *London*. After all I fear we have not taken that care of their souls, which well becomes us to do. Much might be done to this end by princes and states; something by persons of estates and of learning; and indeed somewhat this way by men of low condition.

I WILL first shew, what Kings and States may do towards so blessed a work. I am well aware, that this is a tender argument, and to be handled with great caution, and all due submission: And I hope, that I shall offer nothing, which can give offence. I am sure of this, that I shall not offend any of those, who are the genuine followers of Jesus, who was content to take our nature upon him, and to die upon a cross, that he

might feek and fave that which was lost.

I. Firft,

I. Though I am not for compelling the Jews to turn Christians; yet Christian kings and states may oblige them to hear our Sermons, and admit of our conferences. This is what they have submitted to at Rome, and elsewhere. Their law doth not forbid them thus much. They read our new Testament, and other books; and can out of curiofity hear our fermons also. And 'twill be no hardship at all to oblige them to thus much at least. I remember, that Aben Amram complains greatly, that they have not the liberty of the press, and that for want of it they are hindred from producing their force, as they would otherwise do. Far be it from me for pleading for any such liberty as that: But if some men were appointed to preach to them, and at certain times to confer with their teachers, and more learned men, they would have no cause to complain for want of the press. They might have liberty to draw out all their force upon such occasions; and that also before their own people. This course would be sufficient for them, and much better than to grant them the liberty of printing. If they have a mind to draw up their forces, let them do it, when their enemies are within fight. In a conference they will be present, that are ready to answer and best able; their prints may fall into other hands: And Christian kings will think themselves obliged to preserve their subjects in the true faith. If the Jews were called at certain fixed times before the prince, or some deputed by him, to give in the reasons why they reject the Christian religion, those reasons in a fair conference might be discussed, and satisfaction given to them, and then the Jews might have a fair occasion to shew their full strength. Such a fettled course as this might be of great use; and by the blessing of G o D, might bring them into the church upon conviction. I say upon conviction: For it is much to be feared that some that have formerly come into the church, have not come in upon conviction, but for bread or for preferment, out of some great fear, or in hopes of some worldly benefit: And this hath manifestly appeared afterwards in some of them. Certain it is, that it is a very great favour in Christian kings and states, to permit the Fews to live in their several kingdoms and countries without disturbance. They do very well know, that the Jews are professed enemies to the Christian faith, that they are also the most bitter enemies, that the Christians have in the world, and that they repute Jesus, whom we worship, as a deceiver and an impostor. They can never expect such humanity which they find: And therefore it is highly reasonable, that they who permit them to live securely, should put such terms upon them, as their law doth not forbid, and use all imaginable ways to bring them over to the true faith. This is the greatest charity, that can be shewed them, and the greatest imitation of the love of God in Christ Jesus. God of his mercy inspire all Christian princes and states with this Christian spirit.

II. Though I am not against the liberty allowed to the Jews, of reading their law, and using their prayers and hymns in their synagogues; yet I humbly offer, that all Christian princes and states should not permit this liberty without some restraint and conditions. It is not reasonable, that they should have the liberty to use what prayers they please, or to blaspheme the holy name of Jesus; or to do any thing reproachful

# 192 A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

ful to our holy religion. 'Tis fit, that the government should be secured To curse the Christians (under the name of Edomites, as to these things. or Minim, i. e. hereticks) is not to be allowed; nor is it fit, that they should revile JESUS, either in their publickoffices, or in their conversation, and blaspheme the Holy Trinity. I will not take upon me to prescribe to my superiors in this case: They may use their own wisdom in appointing an inspector, or requiring such security, as they in their wisdoms shall think fit. But this I will dare to fay, that it cannot confift with the honour of Christian princes and states, to allow the Jews an absolute and unrestrained liberty, to use what prayers and stated offices they think fit. For though they do not believe our doctrine, nor yet our Jesus to be the CHRIST; yet it is highly reasonable, that they should not be permitted to revile and reproach them. As for their belief, we cannot hinder them of that; nor is it always in our power to bring them over to believe as we do: But they ought not to be permitted to blaspheme, and fpeak evil of our SAVOUR. For this is an high immorality, which is to be chastised: And as this practice of the Jews is against good manners, so it is (as I have elsewhere observed out of Josephus) also against the letter of their own law. And that b grave author tells us elsewhere, That it becomes those, who are wise to continue stedfast in their own laws, which concern their religion but not to revile the laws of others. This is a profaneness, which is to be punished severely, and would not have gone unpunished among the heathers themselves. I very well know, that the Jews will not own, that they are guilty in this kind. But we can prove it upon them very eafily. And though I have that charity to believe, that the Jews are not guilty of all those ill practices with which they stand charged; yet they have been very guilty in this matter.

III. Though the Jews ought not to be injured and oppressed; yet I verily believe nothing can be more advisable than to keep them low. They cannot bear great prosperity: Nothing can be more disagreeable to their present captivity. Christian princes and states cannot be blamed for protecting them from rude assaults and from oppression: But they cannot think themselves obliged to advance them to dignities, to caress and court them, to grant them uncommon favours, or vest them with great priviledges, or any kind of power and jurisdiction. This course would rather obstruct, than any way promote their conversion; which yet is that, which all Christian kings and states should aim at. They cannot reasonably expect such favours, who crucified the holy Jesus, and profess to believe, that he was an impostor. These favours and preferments will render them insolent and untractable; and they will foon conclude themselves the favourites of heaven, when they meet with such great prosperities on earth. They have always judged thus: Besides, they will think themselves in a safer condition, than they are, when they find themselves caressed by Christian states. I have heard of a rich Jew at Amsterdam, who treated a Christian very splendidly. When the Christian mentioned to him the present captivity of the nation, the Jew smiled at it; and said, What is this captivity? and protested, that he should not be willing to return to the land of Canaan, where he could not expect the conveniencies, which he enjoy-

b Josephus Contr. Appion. lib. 2.

Digitized by Google -

ed where he was. The truth is, they are wedded to this world: And though they do magnifie their law in their books and fermons; yet it is wealth and worldly splendor, which they drive at. And when a Jew was told of the prophets, he replied frankly; that he cared not for the sayings of the prophet; it was only his profit that he regarded.

IT is very well known, that their books are full of relations of the dignity and glories of their nation: That they had even in the Babylonish captivity their princes, which were the governours among them. They brag to this day of the favour, which they have in the courts of princes: And Benjamin in his Itinerary relates wonderful stories of the greatness of this people in some parts of the world (no man can find where) even during this captivity: And Montezinus related a blind story of the ten tribes to Menessah-Ben-Israel, which that learned Jew believed, and made a great stir about it. So vain are this people, and prone to believe a lye. But if any Christian prince or state should grant them any power or jurisdiction, even over their own people, in matters of small concernment, they would exult upon this occasion, and make a very ill use of it. A learned friend of mind assures me, that he hath had the experience of this: He relates, that when he was at Worms, A. D. 1682, the Jews of that city did, before the magistrates and clergy, when they were met together, make their exception against the Christians urging of Gen. xlix. 10. The scepter shall not depart from Judah, &c. They assirmed, that they had the scepter among them still; and they grounded it upon this, viz. Because they were permitted by the magistrates of that place to punish some of their own people in lesser crimes, or injuries, to the value of fifteen-pence of our money. Of fo dangerous a consequence it is to grant them any degree or shadow of authority and jurisdiction, who make so ill an use of The liberty, which the Jews are permitted among us, is as much as they can reasonably expect, and as much as they can bear, and a great deal more than they do deserve. They are the greatest enemies of our religion; and I have reason to believe, that the deists, and enemies of all revealed religion, have received the main of their artillery from the Jews themselves, with which they have attacqu'd it. The Jews endeavour with all their might to run down the Christian belief; and consequently the Christian life and devotion: Nor do they, in the room thereof, give us any pattern of any devotion at all. If any man would take the pains to go to their fynagogue, and observe their behaviour, he will strongly be tempted to believe, that they are so far from being of the true religion, that they are of none at all. They do indeed read the law and the prophets, and make use of several hymns and ancient forms of prayer: But all this while they shall discourse with any stranger who comes to them, about any trivial and trifling matters, as if they were altogether unconcerned in the publick worship of God. This is their constant practice in their synagogues on their sabbath-days. Such men as these are not to be caressed and favoured, who revile our religious worship, and at the same time cast a contempt upon their own.

IV. Christian princes and states may oblige the Jews to appear before them or their commissioners, at certain fixed times (as they shall think fit to appoint) and by their Chachams and wise-men to exhibit their reasons

# 194 A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

in writing, and figned, why they continue in Judaism, and reject Christianity. These papers they may order to be delivered to such learned men, as are fit to draw up an answer to them, which may be returned to the Jews; to which they should be obliged to give an answer in writing, as before, at a limited time. After this a publick conference may be appointed, and the Jews permitted to defend themselves without molestation, and to answer the Christians, who shall be deputed to dispute with them. The Jews will then have no cause to complain of the want of the press; nor have any ground to say, that they have many things to fay for themselves, had they but liberty to produce them. This course would intirely remove that pretence. Nor could they under this method complain, that they were furprized; for they would have time enough to consult and premeditate and put all their force in order. Nothing can be offered, that is more fair and reasonable than such a method as this. But then these papers, between the Christians and the Jews, ought to be preserved in some safe repository; as also all the minutes of the conferrences well attested; that it may appear to future ages, what care has been taken by the government to bring them over to the true faith; which will be much to the honour of it, whatever other success this method may have. And verily, it is much to be hoped, that this course. if steadily pursued, will not want good success.

V.And in that case the government may appoint learned and six men, farther to instruct these converts, in the doctrine of the New Testament. And after they are baptized, to prepare them for a solemn confirmation, and the receiving the holy communion. And by this time, the governors of the church will think it reasonable to consider of some form of consession, to be constantly used before their admission into the church by baptism; and what methods are sit to be used afterwards, for the confirming them in their holy saith,

VI. To this purpose it will be needful, that the Oriental learning, especially of the Hebrew tongue, should be encouraged and revived; that men may be this way fitted and prepared to encounter the Jews. The time hath been, even in this last age, that our kingdom hath been furnished with men as eminent this way, as any that ever appeared in the world; men that understood the Jewish learning incomparably better than the most learned of the Jews themselves. But these men are dead, and those studies have been too much neglected, and by too many despised also. 'Twill be a very easy thing for Christian princes and states to take care to encourage these studies: I must not presume to tell them by what methods: That must be lest to their great wis-I am fure it is high time, that something should be done this way. Especially since the Jews endeavour now to deprive us of all the needful instruments, which we should use in our disputes with them. For (as I have elsewhere observed) fince we have intermitted these studies, they have bought up the Rabbinical Books of the learned Christians deceased. And we are dealt by, as the Israelites once were by the Philistines, who deprived them of the instruments of war; so that in the day of battel there was neither sword nor spear found in the hand of any of the people, I Sam. xiii. 22. VII. THE

VII. THE government will think it needful to protect the converts from the infults and oppressions of the synagogue. And that must be done by some severe penalty. It is hard to conceive, how much they detest an Apostate, as they are pleased to call the convert to Christianity. They curse him bitterly, and persecute him where 'tis in their power. Their people are under great dread and slavish fear on this consideration. And this is a great barr to many, who might otherwise be wrought upon. It is but reasonable to secure those that come over to us.

What I have said under this last head concerning conferences with the Jews, is no novel project or conceit of my own. It was practised in the earliest times of Christianity. Thus we read of Apollos, an Alexandrian Jew, that he mightily convinced — Acts xviii. 28. And of St. Paul, that the Jews had appointed him a day — Acts xxviii. 23. And it appears from v. 24. that this conference was not without success. I mention it under this head, because it is very sit, now Christianity is the religion of the nation, that the Christian prince or state should appoint the time and place for such publick meetings: And also because the countenance of the government will give these meetings the greater authority and power, render them more regular, and more likely to prevail and gain their end. And I make no doubt, but that Christian kings and states will readily give countenance and assistance to so blessed a work, if they be applied to, with that regard, which is sit, by their ministers and especially by ecclesiasticks. But this may suffice at present as to this head, what Christian kings and states may do in so good a work.

I COME next to consider, what others may do in this matter. For certain it is, that much may be done this way by our united studies and endeavours. I will presume, that the governors and instructors of the church will not be wanting in promoting so good a work. And next to them

THE Universities may do very much. What they do, and may do, will be of a mighty influence in this matter. They are furnished with all the instruments and weapons to be used in this holy war. They may easily raise a very sufficient number of men, well sitted on all occasions to engage in it. The *beads* of *bouses* can easily engage men in these studies, and encourage and reward them. They, who are in those places, have not adverted to the state of have vast advantages: They have all manner of books relating to these studies (which are no where else to be had) and have the advantage of convertation and mutual affistances. They may with their united strength easily search into all the Jewish antiquity, examine nicely into all the main questions agitated between Christians and Jews, digest the whole controversie under its proper heads, and bring into their service whatever hath been said by Jews or other writers, which will make to their purpose. They may sometimes in their publick Schools, and frequently in their several houses, dispute these questions, and by that practice become very expert in the controversie: They have leisure and time, and all the helps imaginable. Others who live remote from books, and have a multitude of business, can do but little; when nothing can be too hard or knotty for those in such fair circumstances. And nothing can be more agreeable to the end of these foundations, Bb 2

# 196 A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

and the pious intentions of their founders and benefactors, than to endeavour to bring men to the true faith, and defend our revealed re-

ligion against its opposers.

MEN of estates also may do very much this way: And 'twill be hard to find any other way of bestowing them, that can vye with this. For this is to lay them out for the propagating that faith, and defending that holy religion, by which we hope to be faved. And if that be considered duly, we shall need no other motive to excite us. What is beshowed this way, can never miss of a reward. And was it not for this advantage of wealth, that it enables us to encourage virtue and advance religion, it would be a very contemptible thing. There are fome young men (even at this time) who would be able to make vast progress in those studies, which tend immediately to this end, was it not for want of some assistance this way: And many very great men have been lost for want of such help. Very many, who have a great genius, have but a narrow purse: And no man can arrive at any persection in these studies without considerable supplies. Many things might be offered under this head; as, great benefactions to those who are able and disposed; e.g. The founding a lecture in the city, on this condition, that the fews were obliged to be present, wherein all the controversies between them and us should be handled by several persons yearly chosen: The founding some Hebrew scholarships in the university, to be enjoyed by none before they had taken their first degree, and could give some Specimen of their skill, and who should enjoy it no longer, than they give good proofs of their proficiency: The affigning some reward to him, that should translate some part of the Misna, which hath not been done before: Or to him that should turn the whole with short notes; which hath been attempted by several learned men, but hath been performed by no man.

I COME next to shew, what learned men may do toward the conversion of the Jews. I am very far from excluding any sort of learning: All that deserves the name is of great use: But the Jewish learning in this matter is especially so. He that hath good skill in the Biblical Hebrew, the Chaldee Paraphrasts, and the other Jewish learning, will certainly be much fitter to confer with the Jews, than he that wants it. The Jews are a very subtle people; and (which is worse) not fair in their disputes with Christians, as I have abundantly proved before. They will advance propositions void of all truth; and lay hold of an accent, or a little Grammatical criticism, to amuse the Chrifians, and to serve their cause. And though there be no weight in what they say, and ('tis to be seared) they know it; yet they will endeavour to blunder their adversary, and put him to a stand, and triumph and This makes it much more difficult to deal with them; and next to impossible, without some competent skill in their learning. Besides, he that is skilled in their books hath this advantage against them, that he can thence be furnished with a great many argumenta ad hominem; which is of great moment in this case. The more the things are, which the Jews grant, the greater is the advantage which we have against them. They pay a mighty reverence to the Targums, and some other old books: and though they make no scruple to depart from them to serve a turn:

yet they do not care to have them urged against them. Their great design is to run down Christianity; and they care not if they depart from the belief of their forefathers to gain that end, though otherwise no people in the world are more tenacious of the traditions of their ancestors. Upon these accounts it is very needful, that those who are employed in publick conferences with them, should not be altogether strangers to their learning: The learned professors of the Hebrew tongue, and others skilful in those matters, will be fit persons to be chosen on this occasion.

I SHALL now proceed to consider the best way of proceeding with the Jews, in order to bring them over to the Christian saith: In this I am far from prescribing, and shall be most ready to submit to better judgements. In the mean time,

I. I CANNOT but admit of the advice of a certain learned person, who hath been an instrument of converting more Jews (among which are a considerable number of Rabbins) than perhaps have ever been converted by any one person in the world, since the age of miracles: It is the reverend Esdras Edzard S. Th. L. of Hamburgh. He tells me (in a Letter dated Sept. 13. 1698.) that he generally begins with the Jews from Deut. xxvii. 26. Cursed be be that confirmeth not all the words of this law to do them, and all the people shall say, Amen. And Chap. xxviii. v. 58. If thou wilt not observe to do all the words of this law, that are written in this book, that thou mayest fear this glorious and fearful name, THE LORD THY GOD; it follows v. 59. Then the LORD will make thy plagues wonderful, and the plagues of thy seed; even great plagues, and of long continuance; and fore sickness, and of long continuance. And though I will not fay, that the very same method is to be used in all cases; yet I cannot but think, that generally speaking it is very fit to begin here. For here we begin with an avowed principle: We make use of the law to the best purpose, as a school-master to bring men to CHRIST; and use the same topick, which St. Paul used, Gal. iii. 18. As many as are of the works of the law, are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one, that continueth not in all things, which are written in the book of the law, to do them. On which place I have, in b the foregoing part of this treatife, had occasion to enlarge against the pretentions of Amram. I always thought it to bear very hard upon the Jews, and think so still. They are certainly under the curse of their own law; and that is expressed by as plain words as may be. They could never pretend to have continued in all the words or precepts of the law, to do them.

They could not say this of themselves during their abode in their own land, and the standing of their temple. Then indeed they had some relief in this matter, because God allowed of an atonement by sacrifices, in some cases of failure; they might then hope, that though they have sailed in obedience, they might upon their sacrifices be admitted to God's savour. But they have not that hope now, they being without a sacrifice. (Hos. ch. iii. v. 4.) And though even under the law they were in some cases not permitted a sacrifice, but for the hei-

ь р. **69** 

noulnels

# 108 A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

nousness of their sin were liable to excision (Lev xx.) yet now is their condition much worse, they not being in any case permitted to sacrifice; and consequently they lie under the curse of their own law: And the providence of God, that hath excluded them from their own land, and from their temple, seems to direct them plainly enough to our Messias, and the meritorious sacrifice of his death, who died for mankind. This topick may be so urged against the Jews, that with God's assistance it may have a good effect upon them. It may be so pursued and pressed, that the Jew will not find it an easy thing to bear up against the weight of it.

II. Since the Jews cannot but own a guilt, we may here press them with the necessity of some atonement or expiation, to quiet the mind, and set the conscience at ease. There is great need of this whereever there is guilt; and this hath been the general sense of mankind. Hence it was, that the Gentiles used sacrifices and other rites to appease an offended deity: A great number of the sacrifices appointed the Jews were upon this account, as appears plainly from the law of Moses.

III. THAT there is no atonement to be expected, but that, which the Messias was to make, as is predicted and fet forth in Holy Writ. Here we may urge them with Pfal. xxii. with Dan. ix. and especially with Isa. liii. It will be no hard thing to prove, that Isaiah doth not in that place describe the sufferings of the prophet, or of the people of Israel.

IV. THAT JESUS is that MESSIAS, and consequently his religion is true. And this may be proved by all those ways, by which they are able to prove the divine mission of Moses; by an infinite number of testimonies out of the Old Testament; by many facts that are incontestable; by the miraculous success of his religion against all the wit and force, that could be used against it; by a conjugation of arguments, that bear down before them all cause of doubting in this matter. I consider, that it is not sit, that I should be very particular, because they who are supposed to be concerned, are men of learning, and do not therefore need any operose direction: And the more they consirm, what they urge against the Jews with authorities from their own writings, the more likely they will be to prevail.

In this bleffed work meaner men may be able to do something. They are not able to dispute, but they can live. They can adorn their religion; they can put up earnest prayers to God for the Jews; they can shew them great humanity, and deal and traffick with them with great integrity and simplicity. And certainly, if all private Christians would do this, they would be able to do much in so blessed a work: And 'twill be worth our while to do our utmost (according to our several abili-

ties) toward so good an end. For

First, The questions debated between us and the Jews are things of the highest importance and concern whatever. It is at once the whole Christian religion, that the Jews call in question, and would overturn. We Christians dispute one against another with great heat and animosity:

animosity: We do it about trisles concerning rites and modes of worship: about decrees, and the divine prescience, about things that we do not understand, and in which we may be safely on the wrong side; here we are fierce and politive, fond of our feveral opinions, and uncharitable to one another: In the mean time in the main controversie between us and the Jews, we are cold and indifferent: As if the skirts and fringes of religion were of greater care to us than the vitals and power of it. We feem to be willing enough, that the Jews should be indulged, even without any terms and conditions, when we think much of any kind of forbearance of one another: And if it be reasonable (and 'tis thought so by the government) that a liberty should not be granted to those, who disfent from our established forms and constitutions, but upon certain terms and conditions; furely it is highly reasonable, that the Jews, who are enemies to our whole religion, should be under some restraints and conditions; and more especially under such as tend to bring them into the church, and may secure us, that they shall not blaspheme our LORD and SAVIOUR. If the Jews be in the right, we are indeed in a very miferable condition; our faith and hope are in vain, we are still in our Sins, without GoD, and without hope in the world. In our differences with each other many times such is the question, that we may be mistaken, and be fafe; be on the wrong side of the question, and yet in the right way to heaven. If we be wrong in this dispute with the Jews, we err fundamentally, and must never hope for salvation. So that either we, or the Jews must be in a state of damnation. Of such great importance are those matters in dispute between us and them.

Secondly, The Jews are of all men in the world the most considerable enemies of Christianity. They are so at this day, and I believe were always fo. No doubt but the ancient Pagans did their utmost against our religion, and in defence of their own. Some remains we have of their attempts that way, and much is lost. We do not find any thing of that kind, that we can think formidable. And the ancient fathers of the church have baffled the pretences of that fort with great effect. They have not only gotten the victory; but had a just claim to a triumph also. We have several ancient books on this argument, that can never be answered. As for the Mahometans, who are much spread, we may be secure of them. If we can keep out of the reach of their swords, we need never fear the edge of their arguments. The founder of their religion was lustful and cruel; he did no miracles, and deserves no credit; his followers are filly and stupid, rude and illiterate. That religion gives the loose to lust and cruelty, to sensuality and filthiness. It hath spread by violence and temporal interests, not by any force or energy of truth. It grew upon the follies and divisions, and profaneness of Christians. And yet after all, they of this religion speak honourably of our Jesus, and are more favourable to our religion, than the Jews are; who speak of him in terms of con-of tempt and scorn. Indeed the Jews arethe most considerable by far, of all the enemies to the Christian religion. They are a people subtle and sharp, great natural wit, and some learning. They have been brought up from the breast in great prejudices against our religion. They were once God's peculiar people, to them he gave his oracles, which predicted the coming of CHRIST. Their Sanhedrim and fore-fathers consented to the death

Digitized by Google

of Jesus, and rejected him as an impostor. In this belief they have been educated; and as their late Rabbins expound their law, they pretend, that the predictions of it were not fulfilled in our Jesus. They look for a temporal prince, and for worldly greatness: And they bend their studies, and all their wits to disparage Jesus, and the holy gospel. The Deists among us, who would run down our revealed religion, and those among us, who oppose any of its sundamental articles, are but underworkmen to the Jews: Their tools and instruments, with which they labour, are to be found in the shops of the Jews; who are generally more dextrous in using them, than those men are among our selves, who trade under them.

Thirdly, The bringing the Jews over to the Christian religion will be of great advantage. That it will be of great advantage to the Jews, no Christian can deny; for it will put them into a state of salvation. By this course we may save souls from death, and hide a multitude of sins. And we doubt not, but he that is the instrument of so good a work, shall receive a great reward. They that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the sirmament, and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever, Dan. xii. 3. The Christian church will receive no little advantage likewise. This will be the way to enlarge its borders, and to confirm its faith, to lessen its enemies, and to strengthen its weaker members, and to bastle its opposers. I add, that it will be for the lasting honour and glory of Christian princes and states, who have encouraged and set forward so blessed a work. In a word, it will make joy in heaven, contribute to the peace of the earth, and bring glory to God on high.

Obj. 1. But some will object against this good work, and say, that to attempt any thing will be but lost labour. The Jews are obstinate, and past hope. That its a folly to think to gain these men, when their sathers were not gained by the miracles, and sermons, and exemplary life and death of Jesus; by his glorious resurrection, and ascension, and the wonderful mission of the Holy Ghost on the day of pentecost, &c.

Answ. 1. It must be granted, that it is a work of great difficulty: But that may be faid of many other things, which yet must not be declined. Who-ever tries, will find it an hard task to reform what is scandalously amiss among our selves, though he have the laws and government of his side; so rampant is vice and profaneness: But still I hope, that a good man will not therefore be discouraged from doing his utmost. For though he should suffer much in so good a cause (which often happens) and should at last be unsuccessful; yet he will not lose his reward. And a good man will rejoyce in fuffering, and be willing to die in so good a work. The Jews are obstinate. Be it so. Yet this only speaks a difficulty: And that alone ought not to discourage us, either in that or any other good design. Besides, the Jews are not all alike. I have known a Jew, that hath professed to me, that though he was born a Jew, and brought up in that religion; yet he was willing to become a Christian upon evidence and conviction: And I hope, that he had done it, had he not been prevented by death soon after. I know very well, that the work is difficult; and two things especially make it so; viz. the slavish fear, which they are under from the synagogue; and their general aversion from a solemn and fixed conference. I have had experience of this my self. But

then the government may in great measure assist us herein.

- 2. 'T is very certain, that though it be a difficult work; yet it is not to be despaired of. There hath been much done this way in the several fucceeding ages since the time of Jesus. It is true, that we do not pretend to that power of miracles, which was in the church in the first times of Christianity; and (which is a sad consideration) we who call our felves Christians, are not exemplary in our lives, as the ancient Christians were. Besides this, a great part of those, who profess the Christian religion, have put bars in the way, by departing from the primitive faith and simplicity, and depraying the Christian faith and manners. These things cannot be denied, but we must confess them to our shame. Yet after all, much may be done still this way; and I need no other proof of it than this, that in fact much hath been done. In the city of Hamburgh in the last seven years, several hundreds have been brought over to the Christian faith: That reverend person mentioned above hath baptized several of the Jewish rabbins, whose names I could set down. I shall mention but one of them, and that is R. Jacob Melammed, whose confession is printed in the German language. If one man hath been the instrument of so many conversions, what might not a number of men do. if they were encouraged and affifted by publick authority? The worthy fon of this Dr. Edzard (now a preacher in London) hath of late years brought over several of the Jews to the Christian saith. And this is proof enough, that how difficult fo ever this work may be thought; yet it is not a desperate attempt. There may be very great hopes of success, if the government assist and encourage it. And that which hath been effected by private persons, cannot reasonably be thought unpracticable, when publick authority interposeth.
- Obj. 2. Some perhaps may object, that the converting the Jews will fill us with poor. 'Tis fit, that these converts should be kept, when they are in the church; and we are already oppressed with our own poor. I answer,

I. This objection supposeth, that we shall gain no proselytes but of the poorest of that people, which is not to be supposed. For the rich and the learned will be applied to, according to the proposed method, as well as the poorest; and will be principally concern'd in the desence of

their religion. This care will bear heaviest upon them.

2. Supposing we should gain none but some of the poorest; yet if they come in upon conviction, there will not want charity enough among Christians to maintain them. I doubt not, but there would soon be some publick house erected (by voluntary contributions) to receive them. Such provision hath been formerly made for them in the city of London. Here they might live under strict discipline, and one might be appointed to instruct them more persectly in the Christian religion, and to look narrowly to their morals, and keep them to constant prayers and holy exercises.

3. THE

# 202 A DEMONSTRATION Part III.

- 3. The government may (without any shadow of injustice) oblige the synagogue to allow these poor converts the very same relies, which they did allow them, when they were Jews. This is not to add any new burthen: The synagogue cannot complain of this as any hardship: It might have very good effects: The poor, who are maintained by the synagogue, are now under a slavish fear; and though some of them should be inclined to turn Christians; yet their poverty and entire dependance on the synagogue for a maintainance is a snare and temptation to them to keep them in Judaism for bread. It is not sit, that these poor converts should lose their subsistence by turning Christians; and 'tis not sit, that the synagogue should be the only gainers. The poor, which the synagogue hath brought upon us, they ought to maintain: Nor do we think it reasonable, that the poor converts should lose by becoming Christians. But I need not insist on this. I leave it with all submission to the wisdom of my superiours.
- Obj. 3. I know very well, that it is commonly objected against attempting any thing this way, that the Jewish converts are generally very bad men, and a very great reproach to the Christian religion, which they have professed; and, more than that, have, often continued Jews in their hearts, and have declared no less by apostatizing to Judaism again, at or before their deaths; of which we have too much evidence from history. To this I answer,
- t. I no readily own, that there is too much truth, in what is affirmed in this objection. Too many of these converts have been very bad men, and some have revolted to Judaism again. But then it cannot be denied, but that very many of old, and some of later times, have not only been very sincere, but have proved very eminent lights and ornaments in the Christian church. This, as to the matter of sact, is undeniably true; and this doth in a great measure answer the force of the objection.
- 2. It will be no hard matter to give an account of the miscarriage of some number of them in later times, since the great decay and corruption of Christianity. As for those of them, who have turned Turks, I am not oblig'd to account. They embraced a lye from the first, and nothing could be expected from them. As for those, who have turned to be of the Roman religion, it is no wonder, that they should prove bad men or relapse; because 'tis certain, that they could never come into that church upon conviction, whatever other considerations might move them. As for others (which are not many) they also cannot be excused: But it is to be feared, that we cannot likewise excuse our selves. We ought to be very scrupulously careful, whom we baptize; and to have a more competent assurance of their leading principle and sincerity: But all our care is not over, assorbed their leading principle and sincerity: But all our care is not over, assorbed as we have baptized them. There must be great care of their farther instruction, and to prepare them for confirmation, and the holy communion. Besides, if they be poor, they must be provided with means of a comfortable subsistence. 'Tis a shame that they should run about begging, and

be put to any hardship to get bread. Our great care must be to bring them over upon clear conviction; and to take care after that, that they neither want law nor meal (as the fews phrase it) that is, instruction, nor bread. If we would take due care in the whole matter, there will not be for the suture so great on occasion for this objection. To conclude,

I HAVE in all this matter spoken my conscience freely. I might have added much more on this argument. I hope, that I have said what is necessary. May God incline the hearts of Christian princes and states to encourage so good a work; and all others according to their capacities to contribute to it! And may the same God take away the veil that is upon the hearts of the Jews, that they may be converted and saved! Amen.

#### FINIS.

#### ERRATA.

Part I. Page 11. Line 35. Read being. p. 20. l. 20, r. is CHRIST?. p. 21. l. penult. r. it is. p. 34. l. 15. after named r. for the habitation of our Saviour. p. 35. l. 39. r. tidings. p. 41. l. 8. r. argumens. p. 46. Margin r. Fundamenta. p. 46. l. 45. r. of my own. p. 52. l. 17. r. It is so far. p. 53. l. 33. for obwed r. bowed ibid. l. 40. r. seeing. p. 72. l. 5. before for r. as. p. 88. l. 6. r. this. ibid. l. 43. dele it. p. 112. l. 40. r. names.

Part II. Page 45. Line 15. r. call. p. 71. l. 19. r. these words were. p. 84. l. 17. r. only. p. 89. l. 29. dele 3. p. [94.] l. 18. for did, r. determined, l. 27. r were. p. 122. l. 15. for 112 r. 122 p. 132. l. 30. r. letter. p. 188. l. ult. and p. 159. l. 1. r. agreeable. p. 159. l. 9. for 71777 r. 32777 p. 165. l. 8. r. shews, that they were. p. 166. l. 27. r. captivity. p. 171 l. 13. r. that he.

Part III. Page 4. Line 3. for do Read doth. p. 4. l. 13. r. 1977 p. 20. l. 42. for made r. make. p. 41. l. 39. r. shalt. p. 52. l. 5. r. 1971 p. 63. l. 14. r. xetsiv. p. 79. l. 40. r. 1772 p. 79. l. 19. r. that this one. p. 95. l. 27. for yik r. yik. p. 107. l. 19. r. 1977 p. 108. l. 19. leave out v. 9. p. 109. l. 10. for makes, that, r. saith, that this is. p. 123. l. 20. r. auxi. p. 148. l. 25. r. and the Romans. p. 150. l. 9. r. 778 p. 159. l. 42. r. but there is. p. 170. l. 25. r. 1971 p. 184. l. 8. r. see their enemies, and tread them under foot. p. 199. l. 18. r. our faith. and p. 201. l. 3. after in read a.

#### ADVERTISEMENT.

THE Proprietors of the Rest of Bishop Kidder's Works intending to reprint a small Number of 'em, on the same Paper, and with the same Character, with this Volume on the Messias, in Order to compleat his Works, if due Encouragement be given, Propose to print

His Lordship's Commentary on the Pentateuch.

Treatise on the Sacrament.

on Christian Fortitude.

the Young Man's Duty.

Charge to the Clergy of his Diocess.

Remarks on several Places of Scripture.

Sermons on several Occasions, &c.

The whole is computed to make about an 150 Sheets; but the Number not being certain, it is propos'd at Three Half-pence per Sheet, Five Shillings to be paid Down, and the Remainder on the Delivery of a perfect Book in Sheets, which will be put to the Press by Christimas next; if 200 are subscrib'd for, and sinished by Lay-Dady following. Subscriptions are taken in by J. and B. Sprint, and A. Ward in Little-Britain, R. Wilkin, D. Midwinter, and W. and J. Junys in St. Pauls-Church-Tard, J. Downing in Batholomew-Close, J. Osborn, and T. Longman in Paternoster-Row, R. Ford in the Poultry, and S. Billingsley in Chascery-Lane.

#### BOOKS Printed for J. OSBORN and T. LONGMAN, R. FORD, A. WARD, and J. BILLINGSLEY.

Otanicum Officinale: or, a compendious Herbal, giving an Account of all fuch Plants as are now used in the Practice of Physick, with their

Descriptions and Vertues. By Joseph Miller. 1722. 8vo. 2. Some Sermons preached on several Occasions, and an Essay towards a new Book of Homilies, in seven Sermons, prepared at the Desire of Archbishop Tillot-fon and some other Bishops. By the Right Reverend Dr. Gilbert Burnet, Lord

Bishop of Sarum. 1702. 8vo.

3. Truth in Fiction: or, Morality in Masquerade; a Collection of Two Hundred and Twenty-five select Fables of Esop and other Authors; done into Englist by Edmund Walker, A. M. Chaplain to his Grace the Duke of Ormond. 1708.

4. A Defence of the Validity of the English Ordination, and of the Succession of the Bishops in the Church of England; written in French by the Reverend Father, Peter Francis le Courager, Canon Regular, and Librarian of St. Genevieve at Paris; done into English by Dan. Williams, Presbyter of the Church of England. 1715.

5. A Supplement to Mr. Samuel Puffendorff's Introduction to the History of

Europe, &c. by the Publisher of the said Introduction, &c. 8vo.

- 6. The Wife and Ingenious Companion, French and English, by Mr. Boyer, Author of the Royal French Dictionary.
- 7. The History of New-England, in 2 Volumes, by Daniel Neal. M. A. 8vo. 8. The Compleat Surveyor, by William Leybourn. The Fifth Edition very much enlarged. 8vo.

9. Seldeni Opera, Six Tomes. Both Small and Large Paper. Fol.

- 10. The Elements of Euclid, explained in a New, but most easie Method, together with the Use of all Parts of the Mathematicks, translated from the French of de Chales. 8vo.
  - 11. Dr. Fiddes's Answer to the Fable of the Bees.

#### Now in the Press, and will be publish'd in a Little Time,

12. Cyclopædia: or, an Universal Dictionary of Arts and Sciences; containing the Definitions of the Terms, and the Descriptions of the Things signify'd thereby, in the several Arts, both Liberal and Mechanical, and the several Sciences, Human and Divine: The Figures, Kinds, Properties, Productions, Preparations, and Uses of Things Natural and Artificial; The Rife, Progress, and State of Things Ecclesiastical, Civil, Military, and Comercial; The various Phænomena of Nature, with their Causes; The Inventions and Discoveries of Men, and their Uses: With the several Systems, Sects, Opinions, &c. among Philosophers, Divines, Mathematicians, Physicians, Antiquaries, Criticks, &c. The Whole making a Course of Ancient and Modern Learning. Compiled from the best Authors, Dictionaries, Journals, Memoirs, Transactions, Ephemerides, &c. in several Languages. In Two Volumes. By E. Chambers, Gent. Folio.

I. The Book will be printed in Two Volumes in Folio. II. The whole Copy being finish'd, above half of it already printed, and the rest in the Press at several Houses; 'tis propos'd to deliver it to Subscribers soon after next Michaelmas. III. It is computed at upwards of Four Hundred Sheets, the Price to Subscribers will be Two-pence per Sheet in Quires: One Guinea to be paid down, and the Remainder on Delivery of the Book. JV. Such as subscribe for Six Books shall have a Seventh gratis. V. The Names of the

Subscribers will be printed before the Book.

N.B. The Figures necessary for explaining the several Matters, will be engraven on Copper; amounting to apwards of Thirty Folio Plates; for which nothing further will be required of the Subscribers.

Subscriptions are taken in by the Undertakers, J. OSBORN and T. LONGMAN, at the Ship in Pater-Noster-Row, and AARON WARD, at the King's-Arms in Little-Britain.

\_\_\_\_\_Digitized by Google



#### The SEVERAL

# for this Volume.

#### INDEX the First.

N. B. That the Letter (p.) signifies Part, and the following Pages are distinguished from it by a Period, as, p. 2. 28, 96. signifies, Part the Second, and the 28 and 96 Pages.

The Hebraisms made use of by this Author for expounding several Texts of the old and new Testament.

N Affive Verb without a nominative case before it, and of the third person is taken for a Verb impersonal. p. 2. 28, 96.

Or for a verb passive. p. 2. 28, 96, 108.

The word Bretbren takes in more distant relations. p. 2. 56. To be called fignifies to be. p. 1. 2. p. 2. 65, 103. The Conjunction Copulative omitted. p. 2. 90. The Conjunction Copulative redundant. p. 3. He could not do, that is, It was not fit for him to do.

p. 2. 59.

Daughter in law, vid. Son in law.

The eleventh bour for the Days of the Messias. p. 3. 164.

Enallage of the plural number for the singular. p. 2.

45. P. 3. 153. The End or Ends of the world fignifies the days of the

MESSIAS p. 3. 164.
The first-born doth not always imply a second. p. 2. 55.

Horn put for dominion and power. p. 1. 5.

The eleventh boar and the last boar put for the times

of the Messias p. 3. 164.

Hyperbolical expressions used in Scripture. p. 3. 67.

The destruction of the Jewish polity is expressed by words, which signify an universal destruction of the

whole world. p. 3. 17.

And the coming of Christ to judgment. p. 2. 173.

The last or latter days fignify the days of the Messias. p. 3. 130, 162.

The last hour and the last time fignify the days of the

MESSIAS. p. 3. 164.

A like case represented as if it was the same case. p. 2. 81.

Name put for a person. p. 1. 2.

Names of persons frequently omitted. p. 2. 126. Two or more names to one person common in Scrip-

ture. p. 2. 73, 123, 160.

Not until doth not imply a thing done afterward. p.

Part of a day, year or other time put for the whole. p. 1. 104. p. 2. 61.

The preterperfest tense in prophesies put for the suture

tense. p. 2. 74.
Ascribing to a prophets ast what he foretels. p. 3.

Sball fignifies a duty, not always a thing future. p. 3.

33.
The fign put for the thing fignified. p. 1. 115.
Son in law called fon, and daughter in law call'd daugh-

ter. p. 2. 159. Sons put for sons of grandfathers, or of more remote ancestors, and said to be begotten of them. p. 2.

The last time put for the days of the Messias. p.

The last time put for the days of the Messias. p. 3. 164.

The Type put for the Antitype. p. 1. 115.

Word put for things. p. 1. 2. p. 2. 65, 95.

Word NOW or 200 of signifies a divine person, p. 3. pref. 5, 11. and p. 3. 100. &c.

The end or ends of the world signify the days of the Messias. p. 3. 164.

The world to come signifies the days of the Messias.

p. 2. 164.

p. 3 164.

D d

INDEX

#### INDEX the Second.

#### A Catalogue of Greek Words explained by the Author.

The siew of the Messias.

p. 3. 164.

p. 3. 164.

p. 3. 164.

Emptaking το αίων of the times of the Messias.

p. 3. 164.

Emptaking το αίων of the times of the Messias.

The many of aiws of the Messias.

The many of aiws of the Messias.

The times of the temple.

The times of th 3. 164.
'AAA, unless. p. 2. 58.
Amejung, Miracles. p. 1. 42.
Ewi, about or before. p. 2. 72. Ewindup ; an heir or heires. p. 1. 150.
O'észáds ; a title of the Messias. p. 1. 37.
'Ira, doth not always fignify the defign, but sometimes the event. p. 3. 44.

Kaige ve alay G., The times of the Messias. p. 3. 164.

Zujuna, Miracles. p. 1. 42. Eugystona, kindred. p. 2. 87. Empirona, traine, The days of the Messias. p. 3. 164. Euriana, A aisire. The days of the Missias. p. 3. 164.
Zoluara, Slaves. p. 2. [91].
Tian of alcorus. The days of the Messias. p. 3. to uphold or govern. p. 3. 103.

### INDEX the Third.

#### A Catalogue of Hebrew Words explained by the Author?

The last A chief prieft. p. 2. 73.

The A miracle. p. 1. 43.

The Where? p. 2. 96.

The Where? p. 2. 96.

The Lord of the doubtful trespass offering. p. 1. 149.

The Athing and a name. p. 1, 2. p. 2. 65, 95.

The Rabbinical name of Jesus. p. 1. 2.

Dif Num. 25. 8. For a sign or type. p. 1. 74.

The To give and to receive. p. 2. [86.]

The Nood The Word of the Lord. p. 3.

Pref. 5, 6, 11. signifies a divine person. ibid. and p. 100, &c. p. 100, &c. Depoi Judgments, a section of the law. p. 1. One who lives out of his own country. p. 3. 76.
7DID'I siug. The received conflitution. p. 2, 143.
DJ A Mirack. p. 1, 43.

D17 Num. 25. 8. For a fign or type. p. 1. 74.

193 To uphold or govern. p. 3. 103.

193 A chief prieft. p. 2. 73.

194 With. p. 2. 173.

197 Man age. This word doth not always fignify for ever. p. 2. 10. The Holy Ghost. p. 1. 29.

The Holy Ghost. p. 3. 109.

To hear, and to obey. p. 2. [90].

The Modern The time of prayer. p. 1. 77.

INDEX

### INDEX the Fourth.

A Catalogue of Texts of Scripture explained or otherwise mentioned in this Treatise.

N. B. That the Texts; to which Exp. is added, are such Texts, which were formerly collected by the Author in a Table intituled, A Catalogue of such Texts of Scripture, as are explained in this Book. Heb. signifies a Text explained by an Hebraism, and the other Words are Names of Rabbinical Authors, upon the Text, or some ancient Version.

N. B. 2. That where Exp. is put before any Part, the Text is frequently explained in several Pages of the same Part, as Gen. 1. 26.

```
OLD TESTAMENT.
                                          EN. 1. 1. Exp. p. 3. 81, 84.
                Gen. 1, 2. p. 3. 84.
Gen. 1. 9. p. 1. 114.
Gen. 1. 14. p. 1. 114.
              Gen. 1. 20. p. 1. 114.
Gen. 1. 26. Exp. p. 3. 81, 84, 90, 93, and 98. Philo,
                        Targum. 115.
           Targum. 115.
Gen. 1. 27. p. 1. 114. Chald. p. 3. 108.
Gen. 2. 1. p. 1. 114.
Gen. 2. 3. p. 2. 81.
Gen. 2. 21. p. 3. 121.
Gen. 3. 9. Heb. Chald. p. 3. 108.
Gen. 3. 15. p. 2. 99. Targ. p. 3. 162.
Gen. 3. 22. Exp. Philo. p. 3. 98.
Gen. 3. 23. Heb. Chald. p. 3. 108.
Gen. 4. 2. p. 2. 104.
Gen. 5. 2. p. 2. 104.
Gen. 5. 32. p. 2. 86.
Gen. 9. 3, 4, 5, 6. p. 3. 115.
Gen. 9. 6. Exp. p. 1. 137.
Gen. 9. 12. Heb. Chald. p. 3. 106.
Gen. 9. 20. Exp. p. 3. 118.
Gen. 10. 4. p. 3. 68.
Gen. 11. 7. p. 3. 115.
Gen. 11. 12. Exp. p. 2. 130.
Gen. 11. 26. p. 2. 86.
Gen. 11. 28, 29. p. 2. 122.
Gen. 11. 29. p. 2. 86.
Gen. 12. 3. Exp. p. 1. 16. p. 2. 163.
Gen. 12. 5. p. 2. 56. Heb.
Gen. 13. 10. Exp. p. 2. 39.
Gen. 13. 16. p. 3. 67. Heb.
Gen. 15. 1. Onk. p. 3. 107.
Gen. 15. 5. p. 3. 168. Heb.
Gen. 16. 6. Onk. p. 3. 107.
Gen. 17. 2. Onk. p. 3. 107.
Gen. 18. 2. Exp. p. 2. 45.
Gen. 18. 9. Exp. p. 2. 45.
Gen. 18. 9. Exp. p. 2. 45.
Gen. 19. 22. p. 2. 59. Heb.
Gen. 19. 22. p. 2. 59. Heb.
Gen. 19. 24. Chald. p. 3. 107, 115.
Gen. 20. 12. p. 2. 122. Heb.
Gen. 20. 13. p. 3. 81.
Gen. 21. 30, 31. p. 2. 81.
Gen. 23. 16, 17. p. 2. 88.
Gen. 24. p. 2. 167.
Gen. 25. 25, 30. p. 2. 81.
            Gen. 5. 2. p. 2. 104.
Gen. 5. 32. p. 2. 86.
   Gen. 25. 25, 30. p. 2. 81.
 Gen. 26. 34. p. 2. 74. Heb.
Gen. 27. 46. p. 2. 167.
Gen. 28. 2, 6, 7, 8, 9. p. 2. 167.
```

```
Gen. 28, 15, p. 2, 54, Heb.
Gen. 28,21, Onk. p. 3, 108,
Gen. 29, 5, p. 2, 122, Heb.
Gen. 30, 22, Chal. p. 3, 108,
Gen. 31, 28, p. 2, 122, Heb.
Gen. 31, 43, p. 2, 122, Heb.
Gen. 31, 49, Onk. p. 3, 108,
Gen. 33, 18, 19, p. 2, 88,
Gen. 34, 1, Bechai, p. 2, 100,
Gen. 35, 7, p. 3, 82,
Gen. 35, 9, Targ. p. 3, Pref. 5,
Gen. 35, 9, Chald. p. 3, Pref. 5,
Gen. 35, 21, Targ. Exp. p. 1, 20,
Gen. 37, 4, p. 2, 59, Heb.
Gen. 37, 4, p. 2, 159, Heb.
Gen. 41, 13, p. 3, 119,
Gen. 46, 2, p. 2, 126, Heb.
Gen. 46, 6, 7, 8, p. 2, 86,
Gen. 46, 23, p. 2, 46, Heb.
Gen. 46, 26, 27, p. 2, 86,
Gen. 48, 9, p. 3, 162, Heb.
Gen. 49, 1, p. 3, 162, Heb.
Gen. 49, 1, p. 3, 162, Heb.
Gen. 49, 1, p. 3, 136,
Gen. 49, 9, p. 3, 119, 136,
Gen. 49, 9, p. 3, 129, 130, &c. 162, and 193,
Gen. 49, 11, Bereshith Rabba, p. 1, 71, and p. 3, 136,
Gen. 49, 12, p. 3, 136,
         Gen. 49. 12. p. 3. 136.
Gen. 49. 13. p. 2. 88. p. 3. 136.
Gen. 49. 17. p. 3. 136.
Gen. 49. 17, 18. Exp. Targ. and Aben Ezra. p.
        Gen. 49. 19. p. 3. 136.
Gen. 49. 20, 21. p. 3. 136.
Gen. 49. 22. p. 3. 136.
Gen. 49. 26. p. 2. 67, 68.
 Gen. 49. 26. p. 2. 07, 00.
Gen. 49. 27. p. 3. 136.
Exod. 3. 8. p. 3. 68. Heb.
Exod. 6. 23. p. 2. 149.
Exod. 7. 13. Exp. p. 2. 28, 29. Heb.
Exod. 8. 32. p. 2. 29. Heb.
Exod. 12. 6. Exp. Aben Ezra. p. 1. 75. and Solomon Jarhi. p. 1. 76.
Exod. 12. 17. p. 3. 19.
Exod. 12. 17. p. 3. 19.

Exod. 12. 23. Targ. p. 3. Pref. 6.

Exod. 12. 42. Targ. p. 3. 163.

Exod. 12. 46. p. 1. 81. p. 2. 71.
                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      Exod,
```

Exed. 13. 2. Exp. p. 2. 55. Heb. Exod. 13. 13. Exp. p. 2. 55. Heb. Exod. 14. 31. Exp. p. 2. 15. Exod. 16. 8. Chald. p. 3. 108. Exod. 17. 16. Chald. p. 3. pref. 6. Exod. 17. 16. Chald. p. 3. pref. 6. Exod. 17. 10. Chald. p. 3. pici. o. Exod. 17. 14, 16. p. 2. 69. Exod. 18. 8. Onk. p. 3. 108. Exod. 20. 5. Midrath. p. 2. 84. Exod. 20. 7. Targ. p. 3. pref. 6. Exod. 20. 11. p. 2. 81. Exod. 20. 23. Abravenel. p. 1. 10. Exod. 20. 23. Abravenel. p. 1. 10.

Exod. 20. 23. Abravenel. p. 1. 10.

Exod. 21, &c. p. 1. 140.

Exod. 21. 16. Exp. Onk. p. 2. 70. Targ. p. 3. 19.

Exod. 22. 29, 30. p. 2. 55. Heb.

Exod. 23. 4. 5. p. 2. 69.

Exod. 23. 23. Exp. p. 3. 102.

Exod. 24. 7, 8. Exp. p. 3. 71.

Exod. 25. 20. p. 1. 114.

Exod. 25. 31. p. 1. 114.

Exod. 26. p. 1. 113.

Exod. 28. 15. p. 3. 104.

Fxod. 29. 21. p. 2. 105.

Exod. 29. 32. p. 1. 104.

Exod. 31. 8. p. 1. 114.

Exod. 31. 16. p. 3. 19.

Exod. 34. 12, 16. p. 2. 69.

Exod. 34. 19. p. 2. 55. Hell.

Exod. 40. 9. Targ. p. 3. 162.

Exod. 40. 15. p. 3. 20.

Lev. 4. 3. Exp. p. 3. 105.

Lev. 7. 23. 25. p. 3. 30.

Lev. 10. 4. p. 2. 56. Hell. Lev. 7. 23, 25. p. 3, 30, Lev. 10. 4. p. 2, 56. Heb. Lev. 10. 4. p. 2. 50. Field

Lev. 10. 9. p. 3. 20.

Lev. 16. 2. p. 1. 1094

Lev. 16. 31. p. 3. 20.

Lev. 17. 7. p. 3. 20.

Lev. 17. 11, 12. p. 2. 81.

Lev. 19. 18. Exp. p. 2. 51, and 70.

Lev. 19. 28. p. 2. [90.]

Lev. 20. 5. p. 1. 145. Lev. 20. 5. p. 1. 145. Lev. 21. 5. p. 2. [90.] Lev. 23. 10, 11, 12. p. 1. 105. Lev. 23. 16, 11, 12, p. 1. 105.

Lev. 23. 14, 17, 21. p. 3. 20.

Lev. 24. 3. p. 3. 20.

Lev. 24. 13. p. 1. 145.

Lev. 24. 17. p. 1. 145.

Lev. 25. 10, 11. p. 2. 62. Heb.

Lev. 25. 25. p. 3. 161.

Lev. 26. 9. Onk. p. 3. 107.

Lev. 26. 11, 12. Chald. Aben Ezra. p. 3. 107.

Lev. 26. 46. Onk. p. 3. 108.

Num. 1. 33, 35. p. 3. 136.

Num. 3. 15. p. 2. 55. Heb.

Num. 5. 7. p. 1. 149.

Num. 6. 24, 25, 26. p. 3. 82, 85.

Num. 7. 12. p. 2. 166.

Num. 8. 15, 16. p. 2. 55. Heb.

Num. 10. 8. p. 3. 20.

Num. 11. 10. Onk. p. 3. 108.

Num. 11. 10. Onk. p. 3. 108.

Num. 12. 6, 7, 8. p. 1. 73.

Num. 13. 16. Exp. p. 1. 3.

Num. 13. 22. p. 3. 136.

Num. 13. 22. p. 3. 136.

Num. 13. 22. p. 3. 136. Lev. 23. 14, 17, 21. p. 3. 20. . Num. 13. 16. Exp. p. 1. 3.

Num. 13. 22. p. 3. 136.

Num. 13. 33. p. 3. 68. Heb.

Num. 15. 15. p. 3. 20.

Num. 16. 5. Exp. p. 1. 46.

Num. 18. 23. p. 3. 20.

Num. 19. 7, 8, 9, 10. p. 1. 147.

Num. 21. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9. Exp. p. 1. 73.

Num. 23. 21. Exp. p. 2. 165.

Num. 27. 3, 4. p. 142, 147, 148.

Num. 28. 4. p. 1. 76 and 78. Num. 35. 31, 32. p. 1. 145. Num. 36. 6, 8, 10. Exp. p. 2. 142, 143, 147, and Deut. 4. 2. Exp. 1. 3. 20. Deut. 4. 7. p. 3. 83. Deut. 5. 5. p. 1. 32. Exp. Onk. &c. p. 3. 108, Deut. 5. 5. p. 1. 3.

109.

Deut. 5. 26. p. 3. 82.

Deut. 6. 4. p. 3. 82, 83, 86, 114.

Deut. 6. 13. Exp. Rabbi Bechai, Rabbi Solomon, and Aben Ezra. p. 2. 48, 49, 50.

Deut. 7. 2, 3. p. 2. 69.

Deut. 8. 3. Exp. Chald. p. 3. 100.

Deut. 12. 17. p. 2. 59. Heb.

Deut. 13. 1, 2, 3. Exp. p. 2, 4.

Deut. 14. 28. p. 2. 63. Heb.

Deut. 15. 2, 3. p. 2. 70. Deut. 13. 1, 2, 3. Exp. p. 2, 4.
Deut. 14. 28. p. 2. 63. Heb.
Deut. 15. 2, 3. p. 2. 70.
Deut. 15. 12. p. 2. 63. Heb.
Deut. 16. 2. p. 1. 142.
Deut. 16. 5. p. 2. 59. Heb.
Deut. 16. 6. Exp. Targum. Rabbi Solomon, & Rabbi Bechai. p. 1. 77.
Deut. 16. 15. p. 2. 59. Heb.
Deut. 16. 15. p. 2. 59. Heb.
Deut. 16. 18. Exp. p. 1. 30.
Deut. 18. 18. Exp. p. 1. 30.
Deut. 20. 11. Onk. p. 3. 108.
Deut. 21. 11. p. 2. 149.
Deut. 22. 1, 2, 3. p. 2. 69.
Deut. 22. 3. p. 2. 59. Heb.
Deut. 23. 14. Exp. p. 1. 76.
Deut. 23. 19, 20. p. 2. 70.
Deut. 24. 7, 14. Exp. Onk. p. 2. 70.
Deut. 25. 5, 6. Exp. p. 2. 142, 143, 147.
Deut. 25. 17, 19. p. 2. 69.
Deut. 27. 26. p. 1. 144. p. 3. 197.
Deut. 31. 10. Exp. p. 2. 62. Heb.
Deut. 31. 29. p. 3. 164. Heb.
Deut. 33. 4. p. 3. 2. Exp. p. 3. 24.
Deut. 33. 14. p. 3. 136.
Deut. 33. 18. p. 3. 136.
Deut. 33. 24. p. 3. 136.
Deut. 34. 6. p. 2. 54. Heb. Deur. 33. 18. p. 3. 130.
Deut. 33. 24. p. 3. 136.
Deut. 34. 6. p. 2. 54. Heb.
Josh. 9. 29. p. 2. 59. Heb.
Josh. 10. 26, 27. p. 1. 56.
Josh. 17. 14, 15, 16, 17. p. 3. 136.
Josh. 19. 10. &c. p. 3. 136.
Josh. 22. 22. p. 3. 85.
Josh. 24. 19. p. 3. 82. Josh. 24. 19. p. 3. 82. Josh. 24. 26. Exp. p. 2. 39. Josh. 24. 32. p. 2. 88, 89. Joth. 24. 32. p. 2. 88, 89. Jud. 3. 15. p. 3. 136. Jud. 4. p. 3. 136. Jud. 5. 15, 16. p. 3. 136. Jud. 5. 18. p. 3. 136. Jud. 7. 12. p. 3. 68. Heb. Jud. 10. 7, 8. p. 3. 136. Jud. 14. 3. p. 2. 149. Jud. 14, 15, 16. p. 3. 136. Jud. 19. 7, 8, 9. p. 1. 76. Jud. 20. p. 3. 136. Jud. 21. 13. p. 2. 149. jud. 21. 13. p. 2. 149. Ruth. 1. 16, 17. Targ. p. 2. 177. Ruth. 2. 12. p. 2. 177. Ruth. 4. 10. p. 2. 149. 1 Sam. 1. 22. p. 3. 19.
1 Sam. 9. 1. p. 2. 73. Heb. p. 2. 74.
1 Sam. 13. 1, 2. Exp. p. 2. 91.
1 Sam. 13. 5. p. 3. 68. Heb. I Sam

1 Sam. 14. 41. p. 2. 91.

1 Sam. 15. 22. p. 1. 146. p. 3. 71.

1 Sam. 15. 35. p. 2. 54. Heb.

1 Sam. 17. 33. p. 2. 59. Heb.

1 Sam. 18. 27. p. 2. 149.

1 Sam. 21. 1 Exp. p. 2. 72.

1 Sam. 21. 11. p. 2. 73. Heb.

2 Sam. 21. 11. p. 2. 73. Heb.

2 Sam. 22. 18. p. 2. 126. Heb.

2 Sam. 2. 4. Exp. p. 1. 12. p. 3. 136.

2 Sam. 2. 3. p. 2. 74. Heb.

2 Sam. 4. 8, 10. p. 2. 92.

2 Sam. 4. 8, 10. p. 2. 92.

2 Sam. 11. 2. Exp. p. 1. 76.

2 Sam. 11. 3. p. 2. 73. Heb.

2 Sam. 17. 25. Exp. Kimchi. p. 2. 68.

2 Sam. 17. 25. Exp. Kimchi. p. 2. 68.

2 Sam. 24. 1. p. 2. 29. Heb.

1 Kings 1. 40. p. 3. 68. Heb.

1 Kings 4. 33. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.

1 Kings 8. 57. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.

1 Kings 9. 7. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.

1 Kings 10. 27. p. 3. 68. Heb.

1 Kings 10. 27. p. 3. 68. Heb.

1 Kings 14. 11. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.

1 Kings 15. 1. p. 2. 62. Heb.

1 Kings 15. 1. p. 2. 62. Heb.

1 Kings 15. 2. p. 2. 122. Heb.

1 Kings 15. 3. p. 2. 62. Heb.

1 Kings 15. 10. p. 2. 62. Heb.

1 Kings 16. 8, 10. p. 2. 62. Heb.

1 Kings 19. 6. Michal Jopki. p. 1. 10.

1 Kings 19. 10. P. 2. 122.

2 Kings 10. 17. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.

2 Kings 19. 10. P. 2. 124. Heb.

2 Kings 18. 1. Exp. p. 3. Pref. xi.

2 Kings 18. 10. 17. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.

2 Kings 18. 10. 17. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.

2 Kings 18. 10. 17. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.

2 Kings 18. 10. 17. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.

2 Kings 18. 10. 11. p. 1. 104. Heb.

2 Kings 18. 10. 11. p. 1. 104. Heb.

2 Kings 20. 6. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.

2 Kings 23. 29. 30. 31. p. 2. 114.

2 Kings 23. 34. p. 2. 1160.

2 Kings 23. 36. p. 2. 1114.

1 Chron. 2. 1, 2, 3. p. 2. 126. Heb.

1 Chron. 3. 1. p. 1. 74. Heb.

1 Chron. 3. 19. Exp. p. 2. 123. Heb.

1 Chron. 3. 19. Exp. p. 2. 123. Heb. 1 Sam. 14. 41. p. 2. 91. 1 Chron. 2. 17. Solomon Jarhi. p. 2. 68.
1 Chron. 3. 1. p. 1. 74. Heb.
1 Chron. 3. 5. p. 2. 73. Heb.
1 Chron. 3. 19. Exp. p. 2. 123. Heb.
1 Chron. 4. 1. p. 2. 126. Heb.
1 Chron. 4. 9. p. 3. 136.
1 Chron. 5. 18, 19, 20, 21, 22. p. 3. 136.
1 Chron. 6. p. 2. 126.
1 Chron. 7. p. 2. 126.
1 Chron. 8. 2. p. 2. 126.
1 Chron. 8. 32. p. 2. 126.
1 Chron. 8. 33. p. 2. 92.
1 Chron. 9. 1. p. 2. 126. Heb.
1 Chron. 9. 1. p. 2. 126. Heb.
1 Chron. 11. 6, 10, 11, 26, 39. p. 2. 126. Heb.
1 Chron. 21. 1. Exp. p. 2. 29. Heb.
2 Chron. chap. vi. p. 2. 127. Heb.
2 Chron. 36. 4. p. 2. 74, and 160. Heb.
Ezra 7. p. 2. 127. Heb.
Efth. 2. 5. p. 3. 136.
Efth. 9. p. 3. 136.
Efth. 9. p. 3. 136.
Job 1. 21. Exp. p. 1. 99.
Job 26. 13. p. 1. 84.
Job 27. 5. p. 2. 55. Heb.
Pfal. 2. per totum. p. 2. [87].
Pfal. 2. 5. p. 1. 98.
Pfal. 2. 7. Exp. p. 1. 98. and Exp. p. 2. [87].
Pfal. 8. 5. Exp. p. 2. [88].
Pfal. 11. 4. p. 1. 115. Heb.

Fal. 15. p. 3. 51. Pal. 16. 10. p. 1. 103. Pal. 18. 6. p. 1. 115. Heb. Pfal. 18. 6. p. 1. 115. Heb.
Pfal. 18. 22. p. 1. 80.
Pfal. 19. 7. Exp. p. 1. 138.
Pfal. 22. 1. p. 1. 80.
Pfal. 22. 7, 8. p. 1. 80.
Pfal. 22. 16. p. 1. 74.
Pfal. 24. 7, 8, 9, 1 D. p. 1. 107.
Pfal. 33. 6. p. 3. 84, 115.
Pfal. 34. Tit. p. 2. 73. Heb.
Pfal. 40. 6. p. 2. [89], &c.
Pfal. 41. 9. p. 1. 80.
Pfal. 45. 6, 7. p. 3. 115.
Pfal. 50. 1. Exp. Midrafh. p. 3. 82, 84.
Pfal. 50. 8, 9. p. 1. 145.
Pfal. 50. 8, 9. p. 1. 145.
Pfal. 51. 16. Exp. Sept. Vulg. Latin and David Kimchi. p. 1. 8, 145.
Pfal. 56. 12. Midrafh Tehillim. p. 1. 150.
Pfal. 68. 18. Exp. p. 1. 107. Exp. p. 2. [86]. p. 3. Pfal. 68. 18. Exp. p. 1. 107. Exp. p. 2. [86]. 1
58.

Pfal. 69. 21. p. 1. 80. p. 2. 71.

Pfal. 72. 5. p. 3. 163. Heb.

Pfal. 72. 7, 8. Exp. p. 3. 33.

Pfal. 72. 17. Exp. p. 3. 163. Heb.

Pfal. 74. 9. p. 1. 44.

Pfal. 78. 2. p. 2. 80. Heb.

Pfal. 81. 1. Exp. p. 2. 165.

Pfal. 89. 3, 4. p. 1. 19. p. 2. 99.

Pfal. 89. 16, 17. p. 2. 165. Heb.

Pfal. 89. 20, 30, to 37. Exp. p. 1. 19. p. 2. 164.

Pfal. 89. 36, 37. p. 3. 163. Heb.

Pfal. 97. 7. p. 2. [89].

Pfal. 110. 1. Exp. p. 1. 108. p. 3. 115.

Pfal. 110. 1. Chald. p. 3. 108.

Pfal. 110. 3. p. 3. 115. Pfal, 110, 1. Chald. p. 3. 108.
Pfal, 110, 3. p. 3. 115.
Pfal, 110, 4. Targ. p. 3. 162.
Pfal, 132. 11. p. 2. 164.
Pfal, 132. 14. p. 3. 20.
Pfal, 132. 17. David Kimchi. p. 1. 5. Heb. p. 2.105.
Pfal, 133. 3. p. 2. 90. Heb.
Pfal, 139. 5. p. 3. 122.
Pfal, 142. 10. p. 3. 83.
Pfal, 147. 19. Exp. p. 1. 139.
Prov. 7. 11, 12. p. 2. 100. Pial. 147. 19. Exp. p. 1. 139. Prov. 7. 11, 12. p. 2. 100. Prov. 30. 19. Exp. p. 2. 102. Prov. 31. 6, 7. p. 1. 80. Eccles. 1. 11. Targ. p. 3. 162. Heb. Eccles. 5. 1. p. 1. 146. Eccles. 12. 1. p. 3. 82. Cant. 6. 8. Exp. p. 2. 102. Ifai. 1. 10. p. 2. [85]. Ifai. 1. 11. p. 1. 145. Hai. 1. 10. p. 2. b5 J.

Hai. 1. 11. p. 1. 145.

Hai. 1. 12. p. 1. 145.

Hai. 1. 14. Chald. p. 3. Pref. xi.

Hai. 1. 22. p. 1. 108. p. 3. 162. Heb.

Hai. 2. 18. p. 1. 78.

Hai. 2. 19. p. 2. 173. Heb.

Hai. 2. 21. p. 2. 173. Heb.

Hai. 5. 2. p. 2. 28, 80, 82. Heb.

Hai. 6. 2. p. 2. 28, 80, 82. Heb.

Hai. 6. 3. Exp. p. 3. 82, 85, 115.

Hai. 7. 1, 2, 3, 4. p. 2. 98.

Hai. 7. 1, 12, 13, 14. Exp. p. 1. 23.

Hai. 7. 13, 14. p. 1. 2. Exp. p. 2. 98.

Hai. 7. 14. p. 2. 108. Heb.

Hai. 7. 15, 16. p. 2. 106.

Hai. 9. 1, 2, 3. Exp. p. 1. 33.

Hai. 9. 1, 2, 3. Exp. p. 1. 33.

Hai. 9. Chald. p. 3. Pref. xi.

E e

Hai. Isai. 1. 11. p. 1. 145. Isai. 9.

Ifai. 9. 6, 7. Exp. p. 3. 28.

Ifai. 9. 16. p. 2. 29.

Ifai. 10. 20. Chald. p. 3. Pref. xi.

Ifai. 11. 1. Exp. p. 2. 66. Abravenel. Chald. p. 3. 83.

Ifai. 11. 4. Exp. p. 3. 32. and 36.

Ifai. 11. 4, 5. p. 3. 33. Heb.

Ifai. 11. 10. Exp. p. 1. 19, 90, 108. and p. 2. 99.

Ifai. 12. 2. Chald. p. 3. Pref. xi.

Ifai. 13. 10, 13. p. 2. 173. Heb.

Ifai. 14. 1. p. 1. 108.

Ifai. 22. 14. p. 2. 55. Heb.

Ifai. 25. 8. p. 2. 96.

Ifai. 28. 5. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.

Ifai. 29. 13. p. 2. 81. Heb.

Ifai. 32. 16, 17, 18. Exp. p. 3. 33, and 36.

Ifai. 33. 22. Exp. p. 3. 82.

Ifai. 34. 4. p. 2. 173. Heb.

Ifai. 35. 5, 6. p. 1. 35.

Ifai. 38. 1. Exp. p. 2. 7.

Ifai. 39. 7. p. 1. 144.

Ifai 38. 1. Exp. p. 2. 7.

Ifai. 39. 7. p. 2. 129. Heb.

Ifai. 40. 5. p. 1. 25. Isai. 39. 7. p. 2. 129. Heb. Isai. 40. 5. p. 1. 35. lsai. 40. 22. p. 1. 113. Isai. 42. 1, 2. Exp. p. 2. 79. Hai. 42. 2. p. 1. 35.
Hai. 42. 7. p. 1. 35.
Hai. 44.3. p. 1. 144.
Hai. 45. 1. Kimchi. p. 1. 10.
Hai. 45. 7. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.
Hai. 48. 13, 15, 16. Targ. p. 3. 107.
Hai. 49. 2. p. 3. 95.
Hai. 49. 3. Exp. p. 2. 79.
Hai. 49. 6. p. 1. 108.
Hai. 52. 7, 13. Targ. p. 3. 164.
Hai. 53. p. 1 69. Abravenel. p. 3. 160.
Hai. 53. 4, 5, 6. p. 1. 82.
Hai. 53. 9. Exp. Abravenel. p. 1. 90.
Hai. 53. 9. Exp. Abravenel. p. 1. 90. Isai. 42. 2. p. 1. 35. Mai, 53, 10, p. 1.82.

Mai, 53, 12, p. 1. 79, and 80.

Mai, 55, 3, p. 1. 100

Mai, 56, 7, p. 2. 56. Heb.

Mai, 59, 21, p. 3, 27.

Mai, 60, 3, p. 1. 108.

Mai, 60, 14, p. 1. 2. Heb.

Mai, 60, 20, p. 3, 36.

Mai, 60, 22, p. 3, 160.

Mai, 61, 1, 2, 3, Exp. Septuagint, p. 1, 35, Exp. p. 1.

38. 38. Isai. 62. 4. p. 1, 2. Heb. Isai. 65. 19, 25. Exp. p. 3. 36. Isai. 66. 1, 2, 3. p. 2. 174. Isai, 66.3. p. 1. 145. Ifai, 66. 12. p. 3. 36. Jer. 1. 19. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi. Jer. 3. 17. p. 1. 2. Heb. Jer. 3. 17. p. 1. 2. Heb.
Jer. 4. 23, 24. p. 2. 173. Heb.
Jer. 7. 11. p. 2. 80. Heb.
Jer. 7. 22, 23. p. 1. 145. p. 2. 71.
Jer. 18. 7, 8. p. 2. 7.
Jer. 22. 11, 12. Exp. p. 2. 114.
Jer. 22. 11, 12. Exp. p. 2. 114.
Jer. 22. 24, 28. p. 2. 114.
Jer. 22. 30. Exp. p. 2. 120.
Jer. 23. 5. p. 1. 19. Exp. p. 2. 66. Targ. p. 2. 99.
Jer. 23. 5, 6. p. 2. 105.
Jer. 23. 6. p. 2. 104.
Jer. 27. 5. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.
Jer. 28. 7, 8, 9. p. 3. 161.
Jer. 28. 23. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.
Jer. 28. 29. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.
Jer. 30. 9. p. 2. 105.
Jer. 31. 15, 16, 17. Exp. p. 2. 66, and 79. Heb.
Jer. 31. 22. p. 2. 101, 105.

Jer. 31. 31. Exp. p. 3. 18.
Jer. 31. 31. 32. p. 1. 139. Exp. p. 2. [89].
Jer. 31. 33. p. 1. 144. Exp. p. 2. [89].
Jer. 31. 34. p. 1. 156. Exp. p. 2. [89].
Jer. 34. 14. Exp. p. 2. 62. Heb.
Jer. 37. 7, 8, 9. Exp. p. 3. 161.
Jer. 42. 5. Targ. p. 3. Pref. xi.
Jer. 44. 22. p. 2. 59. Heb.
Jer. 46. 25. Exp. p. 3. 119.
Ezek. 7. 2, 6. p. 3. 164.
Ezek. 9. 4. p. 1. 160. Ezek. 7. 2, 6. p. 3. 104. Ezek. 9. 4. p. 1. 160. Ezek. 16. 3. p. 2. 85. Ezek. 20. 7. Exp. p. 2. 69. Ezek. 20. 25. p. 3. 3. Ezek. 28. 24. p. 3. 36. Ezek. 30. 15, 16. Exp. p. 3. 119. Ezek. 32. 7. p. 2. 173. Heb. Ezek. 34. 22. p. 3. 36. Ezek. 32. 7. p. 2. 173. Heb.
Ezek. 34. 22. p. 3. 36.
Ezek. 34. 23. Kimchi. p. 1. 19. Exp. p. 2. 182.
Ezek. 37. 24. Exp. p. 2. 182.
Ezek. 48. 35. p. 1, 2. Heb.
Dan. 1. 6, 7. p. 2. 123. Heb.
Dan. 2. 28. p. 3. 162. Heb.
Dan. 2. 34. Exp. p. 3. 38.
Dan. 2. 44. Exp. p. 3. 38, 165.
Dan. 4. 20. p. 3. 68. Heb.
Dan. 7. 14. p. 3. 37, 38. Dan. 7. 14. p. 3. 37, 38.
Dan. 7. 24. p. 1. 5. Heb.
Dan. 8. 10. p. 2. 173. Heb.
Dan. 9. 19. p. 3. 82.
Dan. 9. 24, 25, 26, 27. p. 1. 26. R. Solomon Jarhi p. 3. 160. Dan. 9. 27. p. 1, 150. Exp. p. 2, 11. p. 2, 164. Heb. Hosea 2. 23. p. 1. 78. Holea 2. 23. p. 1. 70. Holea 3. 4. p. 3. 197. Holea 3. 5. Exp. p. 2. 182. Targ. p. 3. 162. Heb. Holea 6. 6. p. 1. 145. Holea 11. 1. Exp. p. 2. 77. Holea 13. 10. Exp. p. 2. 96. Holea 13. 14. Exp. p. 2. 96. Joel 2. 10. p. 2. 173. Heb. Joel 2. 28, 29. Abravel. Exp. p. 1, 44, and 144. Amos 6. 25. 26. Exp. p. 2. 90. Amos 5. 25, 26. Exp. p. 2. 90. Amos 9. 5. p. 2. 173. Heb. Jonah 2.6. p. 1. 100. Jonah 3. 4. P. 2. 7.

Micah 2. 13. p. 1. 107.

Micah 4. 1, 2. Kimchi. p. 3. 162. Heb.

Micah 4. 4. Exp. p. 3. 28.

Micah 5. 2. Targum. Exp. p. 1. 20, 21, &c. 29. p. 2. Micah 5. 2. Targum. Exp. p. 1. 20, 21, dec 29. p. 99.

Micah 6. 8. p. 3. 50.

Nahum 3. 8. Exp. p. 3. 119.

Haggai 1. 8. Kimchi and Solomon Jarhi. p. 1. 28.

Haggai 2. 6. Exp. p. 3. 17. Heb.

Haggai 2. 6, 7, 8, 9. Exp. p. 3. 146.

Haggai 2. 7, 8, 9. Exp. p. 1. 26. Kimchi and Solomon Jarhi. Exp. p. 1. 29, and 34.

Zech. 2. 4. p. 1. 118.

Zech. 6. 12. Exp. p. 3. 105.

Zech. 8. 3. p. 1. 2. Heb.

Zech. 8. 22. p. 1. 118.

Zech. chap. 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14. chapters written by Jeremiah. p. 2. 76.

Zech. 9. 4. p. 1. 118.

Zech. 9. 9. p. 1. 35. Solomon Jarhi. Exp. p. 1.

71. Zech. 9. 9. p. 1. 3). Solution jumps of the property of the pr Mal. 4.

Mal. 4. 4, 5, 6. Exp. p. 1. 172, Exp. p. 2, 169, 172, 173, 174, 181. &c. 184.

#### APQCRYPHA.

TOBIT 3. 15. p. 2. 152,
Tobit 8. 6. p. 3. 91.
Tobit 14. 5. p. 3. 164. Heb.
Wifd. 1. 7. p. 3. 91.
Wifd. 7. 22, 23. p. 3. 91.
Wifd. 9. 1, 2. p. 3. 91.
Wifd. 9. 8, p. 1. 114.
Wifd. 9. 17. p. 3. 91.
Wifd. 16. 20, 26. p. 3. 101.
Wifd. 18. 15, 16. Exp. p. 3. 95.
Ecclus. 1. 4, 5. p. 3. 91.
Ecclus. 44. 19, 20. p. 2. 165.
Ecclus. 50. 10. p. 3 91.
Baruk 3. 35, 36, 37. p. 3. 91
1 Maccab. 1. 28. p. 2. 173. Heb.
1 Maccab. 3. 19. p. 2. 100.

#### NEW TESTAMENT.

Matth. 1. 1. &c. p. 2. Pref. vi.
Matth. 1. 1 Exp. p. 2. 112, 115.
Matth. 1. 1. to 17. p. 2. 108 to 167.
Matth. 1. 3. Exp. p. 2. 166.
Matth. 1. 5. p. 2. 149.
Matth. 1. 5, 6. Exp. p. 2. 141, 166.
Matth. 1. 8. Exp. p. 2. 124. p. 2. 126. Heb.
Matth. 1. 11. Exp. p. 2. 116.
Matth. 1. 12. Exp. p. 2. 116. Matth. 1. 11. Exp. p. 2. 116.

Matth. 1. 12. Exp. p. 2. 116, 120, and 140.

Matth. 1. 13. Exp. p. 2. 123.

Matth. 1. 17. Exp. p. 2. 124.

Matth. 1. 18. p. 1. 24.

Matth. 1. 12. p. 1. 5.

Matth. 1. 22, 23, Exp. p. 2. 97.

Matth. 1. 23. Exp. p. 1, 2, and p. 2. 108. Heb.

Matth. 1. 25. Exp. p. 2. 54, 55. Heb.

Matth. 2. 5, 6. Exp. p. 1. 20, 21. &c.

Matth. 2. 15. Exp. p. 2. 76.

Matth. 2. 17, 18. Exp. p. 2. 79. Heb.

Matth. 3. 2. p. 2. 172.

Matth. 3. 3. p. 2. 171.

Matth. 3. 6. p. 2. 175.

Matth. 3. 7. p. 1. 161, 177. Matth. 3. 7. p. 1. 161, 177. Matth. 3. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12. p. 2. 172. Matth. 3. 11, 12. p. 2. 175. Matth. 3. 11, 12. p. 2. 175.

Matth. 3. 13. p. 1. 11.

Matth. 4. 5. p. 1. 114. p. 2. 13.

Matth. 4. 10. Exp. p. 2. 4, 49.

Matth. 4. 14, 15, 16. Exp. p. 1. 33.

Matth. 5. 13. Exp. p. 2. 28. Heb.

Matth. 5. 17, 18. Exp. p. 3. 24.

Matth. 5. 34. Exp. p. 2. 68.

Matth. 5. 43. Exp. p. 2. 68.

Matth. 8. 32. Exp. p. 3. 51.

Matth. 9. 13. p. 2. 174.

Matth. 9. 15. p. 2. 59. Heb.

Matth. 10. 34. Exp. p. 3. 43.

Matth. 10. 35. p. 3. 44.

Matth. 11. 4, 5. Exp. p. 1. 36.

Matth. 11. 7. p. 2. 171.

Matth. 11. 9. p. 2. 170, 178.

Matth. 11. 10. p. 1. 37. Exp. p. 2. 169, 171, 178, 184, 185. 184, 185. Matth. 11. 14. Exp. p. 2. 171, 185. Matth. 11. 14. Exp. p. 2. 171, 105.

Matth. 12. 20. p. 2. 55.

Matth. 12. 31, 32. Exp. p. 1. 157, 158,

Matth. 12. 32. p. 1. 40. Exp. p. 1. 157, 158,

Matth. 12. 39, 40. Exp. p. 1. 101.

Matth. 12. 40. Exp. p. 1. 104. Heb. and p. 2. 61, Heb.

Matth. 12. 46. Exp. p. 2. 56.

Matth. 13. 14, 15. p. 2. 28. Heb, 80, and 82. Heb. Matth. 13. 58. p. 2. 56. Matth. 13. 58. p. 2. 59. Heb. Matth. 14. 5. p. 2. 178. Matth. 14. 15. Exp. p. 1. 76. Matth. 14. 15. Exp. p. 1. 76. Matth. 14. 21. p. 2. 178.

Matth. 14. 23. p. 1. 76.

Matth. 14. 26. p. 1. 178.

Matth. 15. 7, 8. p. 2. 81. Heb.

Matth. 16. 4. p. 1. 50.

Matth. 16. 21. p. 1. 101. p. 2. 63.

Matth. 17. 1. Exp. p. 1. 105.

Matth. 17. 10, 11. p. 2. 170, 185.

Matth. 17. 12, 13. p. 2. 185.

Matth. 19. 19. p. 2. 56.

Matth. 19. 19. p. 2. 51. Matth. 14. 21. p. 2. 178. Matth. 19. 17. Exp. p. 2. 50.

Matth. 19. 19. p. 2. 51.

Matth. 20. 6. p. 3. 163. Heb.

Matth. 20. 23. Exp. p. 2. 58.

Matth. 20. 28. p. 1. 83. p. 2. [85,] [86.]

Matth. 21. 19. p. 2. 38. 177.

Matth. 21. 20. p. 2. 177.

Matth. 21. 25. p. 2. 178.

Matth. 22. 15. p. 3. 30.

Matth. 22. 22. 23. 24. 25. p. 1. 108. Matth. 21, 25, p. 2, 178,
Matth. 22, 15, p. 3, 30,
Matth. 22, 22, 23, 24, 25, p. 1, 108.
Matth. 23, 35, Exp. p. 2, 73, 74, Heb.
Matth. 24, 39, p. 2, 51,
Matth. 24, 3, p. 3, 164, Heb.
Matth. 24, 5, Exp. p. 2, 9,
Matth. 24, 6, 7, Exp. p. 2, 10,
Matth. 24, 7, p. 3, 17, Heb.
Matth. 24, 14, Exp. p. 2, 14,
Matth. 24, 14, Exp. p. 2, 14,
Matth. 24, 21, Exp. p. 2, 14,
Matth. 24, 24, p. 1, 15,
Matth. 24, 24, p. 1, 15,
Matth. 24, 37, p. 3, 17, Heb.
Matth. 24, 37, p. 3, 17, Heb.
Matth. 26, 15, p. 1, 81,
Matth. 26, 15, p. 1, 81,
Matth. 26, 28, p. 1, 160,
Matth. 26, 32, p. 1, 160,
Matth. 26, 32, p. 1, 100, Exp. p. 3, 53,
Matth. 26, 34, Exp. p. 3, 55,
Matth. 26, 38, p. 7, 81,
Matth. 26, 48, p. 1, 81, Matth. 26. 46. p. 1. 81. Matth. 26. 46. p. 1. 81. Matth. 26. 48. p. 1. 81. Matth. 26. 54. p. 1. 71. Matth. 26. 56. p. 1. 71. Matth. 26. 74. Exp. p. 3. 55. Matth. 27. 9. Exp. p. 2. 75. Matth. 27. 24. Exp. p. 3. 65. Matth. 27. 24. Exp. p. 3. 65. Matth. 27. 39. p. 1. 80.

Matth. 27. 39. p. 1. 80.

Matth. 27. 51. Exp. p. 1. 115.

Matth. 27. 53. p. 1. 114. p. 2. 13.

Matth. 27. 54. p. 2. 42.

Matth. 27. 53, 64. Exp. p. 1. 104. Heb. p. 2. 63.

Matth. 28. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. Exp. p. 2. 43, 44.

Matth. 28. 9. p. 1. 100.

Matth. 28. 10. Exp. p. 3. 53.

Matth. 28. 16. p. 1. 100. Exp. p. 3. 53.

Matth. 28. 16, 17. p. 1. 100.

Matth. 28. 18. p. 1. 85, 117, 160. Exp. p. 3. 66, 86, 103.

Matth. 28. 19, 20. p. 2. 176.

Mark 1. 2, 3. p. 2. 171.

Mark 1. 4, p. 1. 161.

Mark 1. 7, 8. p. 2. 175.

Mark 1. 9. p. 1. 11. Matth. 27. 39. p. 1. 80. Mark 1. 7, 0. p. 2. 7/7Mark 1. 9. p. 1. 11.
Mark 1. 32. p. 1. 76.
Mark 2. 26. Exp. p. 2. 72.
Mark 3. 28, 29, 30. p. 1. 158. Mark. 5.

Mark 5. 1. p. 3. 51.

Mark 6. 5. Exp. p. 2. 59. Heb.

Mark 8. 11. p. 1. 50.

Mark 8. 31. Exp. p. 2. 61. &c. 63. Heb.

Mark 8. 32. Exp. p. 3. 51.

Mark 9. 2. p. 1. 105. Heb.

Mark 9. 21 p. 2. 63. Heb.

Mark 10. 19, 21. Exp. p. 3. 50.

Mark 10. 45. p. 2. [85] [86].

Mark 11. 13, 14. Exp. p. 2. 38.

Mark 11. 17. p. 2. 65. Heb.

Mark 13. 2. Exp. p. 2. 9.

Mark 13. 4. p. 3. 164. Heb.

Mark 13. 23, 24, 25. p. 3. 17. Heb.

Mark 13. 32. Exp. p. 2. 59.

Mark 14. 6. p. 1. 85.

Mark 14. 24. p. 1. 84. Mark 14. 6. p. 1. 85.

Mark 14. 24. p. 1. 84.

Mark 14. 30. Exp. p. 1. 55.

Mark 14. 62 p. 1. 85.

Mark 14. 72. Exp. p. 3. 56.

Mark 15. 25. p. 1. 78.

Mark 15. 34. p. 1. 78.

Mark 15. 37. p. 1. 78.

Mark 15. 42, 43. p. 1. 81.

Mark 16. 2. Exp. p. 2. 43, 44.

Mark 16. 3. 4. Exp. p. 2. 39. Mark 16. 2. Exp. p. 2. 43, 44.

Mark 16. 3, 4. Exp. p. 2. 39.

Mark 16. 5. p. 2. 43.

Mark 16. 7. p. 1. 100. Exp. p. 3. 53.

Mark 16. 9. p. 1. 100.

Mark 16. 12. Exp. p. 3. 53.

Mark 16. 14. p. 1. 100. Exp. p. 3. 53.

Mark 16. 19. Exp. p. 3. 53.

Luke 1. 5, 6, 7. p. 2. 170.

Luke 1. 14, 15, 16, 17. p. 2. 173.

Luke 1. 16. p. 2. 171.

Luke 1. 26. Exp. p. 2. 151.

Luke 1. 35. p. 1. 100. Luke 1. 10. p. 2. 171.

Luke 1. 26. Exp. p. 2. 151.

Luke 1. 35, p. 1. 100.

Luke 1. 36, 37. p. 2. 171.

Luke 1. 59. p. 2. 105. Heb.

Luke 1. 61. p. 2. 140.

Luke 1. 65, 66. Exp. p. 2. 179.

Luke 1. 67. p. 2. 171.

Luke 1. 69. Exp. p. 1. 5. Heb. p. 2. 105.

Luke 1. 74, 75. p. 1. 5. p. 2. 171.

Luke 2. 1. p. 1. 20.

Luke 2. 3, 4, 5. Exp. p. 2. 152.

Luke 2. 7. p. 1. 20.

Luke 2. 10. p. 1. 8.

Luke 2. 21. p. 1. 105. Heb.

Luke 2. 22, 23, 24. Exp. p. 3. 50.

Luke 2. 32 p. 1. 8.

Luke 2. 32 p. 1. 8.

Luke 2. 52. p. 2. 60. Luke 2. 52. p. 2. 60. Luke 2. 52. p. 2. 60.

Luke 3. 2. p. 2. 73.

Luke 3. 5, 6. p. 2. 177.

Luke 3. 9. p. 2. 172.

Luke 3. 16, 16. p. 2. 175.

Luke 3. 16, 17. p. 2. 175.

Luke 3. 21, 22. p. 1. 11.

Luke 3. 22. p. 2. 150. Heb. Luke 3. 21, 22. p. 1. 11.

Luke 3. 23. p. 2. 159. Heb.

Luke 3. 23. to the End. Exp. p. 2. 108 to 169,

142, 143 146, 147, 158.

Luke 3. 27. Exp. p. 2. 140.

Luke 3. 31. Fxp. p. 2. 141.

Luke 3. 36. Exp. p. 2. 141.

Luke 4. 25. Exp. p. 3. 49.

Luke 8. 27. p. 3. 51.

Luke 9. 7, 8. p. 2. 184.

Luke 9. 7, 8. p. 2. 184.

Luke 9. 12. Exp. p. 1. 76.

Luke 9. 27. p. 1. 105. Heb.

Luke 12. 15. Exp. p. 3. 44.

Luke 12. 20. Exp. p. 2. 28. Heb.

Luke 12. 28. Exp. p. 1. 105. p. 2. 28.

Luke 12. 48. Exp. p. 2. 28. Heb.

Luke 12. 51. p. 3. 44. Luke 14. 35. Exp. p. 2. 29. Heb. Luke 16. 2. p. 2. 59. Heb. Luke 16. 9. Exp. p. 2. 28. Heb. Luke 16. 9. Exp. p. 2. 28. Heb.
Luke 16. 14. p. 2. 21.
Luke 16. 16. p. 3. 23.
Luke 16. 29. Exp. p. 3. 25.
Luke 19. 44. Exp. p. 2. 9.
Luke 21. 7. p. 3. 163, 164. Heb.
Luke 21. 8. Exp. p. 2. 9.
Luke 21. 8. Exp. p. 2. 9.
Luke 21. 11. p. 3. 17. Heb. Exp. p. 2. 10.
Luke 21. 11. p. 3. 17. Heb. Exp. p. 2. 10.
Luke 21. 20. Exp. p. 2. 11.
Luke 21. 23. Exp. p. 2. 14.
Luke 21. 24. Exp. p. 2. 9, 10.
Luke 21. 25, 26. p. 3. 17. Heb.
Luke 22. 19. p. 1. 84.
Luke 22. 20. p. 1. 84.
Luke 22. 60. Exp. p. 3. 55.
Luke 23. 14. p. 1. 81.
Luke 23. 14. p. 1. 81.
Luke 23. 14. p. 1. 81. Luke 23. II. p. I. 81. Exp. p. 2. 41.

Luke 23. 34. p. I. 80. Exp. p. 2. 41.

Luke 23. 53. p. I. 100.

Luke 23. 54. p. 3. 59.

Luke 24. I. Exp. p. I. 43, 44.

Luke 24. 4. p. I. 43.

Luke 24. 5. p. 2. 45.

Luke 24. IS. p. I. 100.

Luke 24. 18. p. I. 100.

Luke 24. 24. p. I. 100. Luke 24. 18. p. 1. 100.

Luke 24. 18. p. 1. 100.

Luke 24. 24. p. 1. 100.

Luke 24. 26. Exp. p. 1. 71.

Luke 24. 33. Exp. p. 1. 71.

Luke 24. 46. Exp. p. 1. 71, 161.

Luke 24. 50. Exp. p. 3. 53.

John 1. 7. p. 2. 171.

John 1. 14. p. 3. 27, 107.

John 1. 18. p. 1. 32.

John 1. 19, 20. p. 2. 169, 183.

John 1. 21. Exp. p. 2. 183, 184, 170.

John 1. 22,23. p. 2. 169, 183.

John 1. 23. p. 2. 171.

John 1. 26, 27, p. 2. 175.

John 1. 30, 31. p. 2. 175.

John 2. 19. p. 1. 101, 104. Heb. p. 2. 22, 63.

John 3. 14. Exp. p. 1. 73, 101.

John 3. 15. p. 1. 84.

John 3. 35. p. 1. 84. p. 3. 103. John 3. 16. p. 1. 8.
John 3. 35. p. 1. 84. p. 3. 103.
John 4. 23. p. 1. 163.
John 5. 19, 20. p. 3. 105.
John 5. 27. p. 3. 105.
John 5. 39. p. 1. 85.
John 5. 44. p. 20. John 5. 43. p. 1. 15. Exp. p. 3. 100, 175
John 5. 44. p. 2. 23.
John 6. 27, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35. p. 3. 101.
John 7. 3, 4, 5. p. 2. 23.
John 7. 7. p. 2. 59. Heb.
John 7. 26. p. 2. 25.
John 7. 37. p. 2. 174.
John 7. 38. Exp. p. 2. 70.
John 7. 39. Exp. p. 3. 58, 59.
John 7. 48. p. 2. 25.
John 8. 12. p. 1. 85.
John 8. 39. p. 2. [85], 172.
John 9. 29. p. 2. 5.
John 9. 39. p. 3. 45. John 9. 29. p. 2. 5.
John 9. 39. p. 3. 45.
John 10. 17. p. 1. 84.
John 10. 17, 18. p. 1. 85.
John 10. 11. Exp. p. 1. 45.
John 11. 19. p. 2. 63. Heb.
John 11. 39. Exp. p. 1. 103.
John 11. 41, 42. p. 2. 41.

John 11.

John 11. 45. p. 2. 22.
John 12. 10. p. 2. 22.
John 12. 19. p. 3. 68. Heb.
John 12. 32. p. 1. 76, 119.
John 12. 32, 33. p. 1. 101.
John 12. 39, 40. Exp. p. 2. 28, 29. Heb.
John 12. 42. 43. p. 2. 24.
John 13. 1. Exp. p. 3. 59.
John 13. 10, 11. p. 1. 79.
John 13. 18, 19. p. 1. 79.
John 13. 34. Exp. p. 2. 51.
John 13. 38. Exp. p. 3. 55.
John 14. 6. p. 1. 163.
John 14. 31. p. 3. 61. Acts 13. 21. Exp. p. 2. 91. Acts 13. 21. Exp. p. 2. 91.

Acts 13. 27. p. 2. 20.

Acts 13. 33. Exp. p. 1. 98, and Exp. p. 2. [87].

Acts 13. 34. p. 1. 100.

Acts 13. 38, 39. p. 1. 9.

Acts 14. 19. p. 2. 22.

Acts 15. 1, &c. p. 2. 94.

Acts 15. 10. p. 1. 144.

Acts 15. 10. 23. p. 2. 94. Acts 16. 19, 23. p. 2. 94. Acts 16. 3. Exp. p. 2. 93. Acts 17. 31. p. 2. 174. Acts 18. 6. p. 2. 22. John 13. 30. Exp. p. 3. 55.

John 14. 6. p. 1. 163.

John 14. 31. p. 3. 61.

John 15. 12. Exp. p. 2. 51.

John 15. 24. Exp. p. 1. 58.

John 15. 26. p. 1. 117.

John 16. 7. Exp. p. 3. 56 and 58.

John 16. 13. Exp. p. 3. 56, 58, 83.

John 16. 23. p. 2. 41.

John 16. 20. p. 2. 41.

John 17. 1, 2. p. 1. 82.

John 17. 19. Exp. p. 3. 55.

John 18. 27. Exp. p. 3. 55.

John 18. 27. Exp. p. 3. 55.

John 19. 23, 24. p. 1. 80.

John 19. 23, 24. p. 1. 80.

John 19. 28, 29. p. 1. 18. Exp. p. 2. 71.

John 20. 12. p. 2. 43.

John 20. 12. p. 2. 43.

John 20. 14. P. 1. 93.

John 20. 16. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55.

John 20. 10. Exp. p. 1. 02. Exp. p. 2. 55. Acts 10. 6. p. 2. 22.

Acts 19. 4. p. 2. 175.

Acts 22. 16. p. 1. 161.

Acts 28. 17. p. 2. 29. Heb.

Acts 28. 27. Exp. p. 2. 28, 29.

Rom. 1 4. p. 1. 100. Acts 28. 27. Exp. p. 2. 28, 29. Rom. 1. 4. p. 1. 100. Rom. 3. 18. p. 2. [92]. Rom. 3. 20. p. 3. 69. Rom. 3. 21. p. 3. 27. Rom. 3. 24. 25, 26. p. 1. 83. Rom. 3. 28. Exp. p. 2. [92]. Rom. 3. 30. p. 2. 93. Rom. 3. 31. Exp. p. 3. 26. Rom. 4. 14. p. 3. 69. Rom. 4. 25. Exp. p. 1. 159. Rom. 5. 8, 9, 10. Exp. p. 1. 156. Rom. 5. 13. p. 3. 69. Rom. 5. 14. Exp. p. 1. 155. Rom. 5. 14. Exp. p. 1. 155. Rom. 5. 20. p. 3. 45. Rom. 5. 13. P. 3. 69.

Rom. 5. 14. Exp. p. 1. 155.

Rom. 5. 20. P. 3. 45.

Rom. 7. 8. p. 1. 144.

Rom. 7. 14. p. 3. 25.

Rom. 8. 3. p. 1. 144.

Rom. 8. 9. p. 1. 13.

Rom. 8. 11. p. 1. 100, 160.

Rom. 8. 16, 17. p. 1. 160.

Rom. 8. 34. p. 1. 160.

Rom. 8. 35. p. 1. 110.

Rom. 9. 4, 5. Exp. p. 2. 23. p. 2. 164.

Rom. 10. 9. Exp. p. 1. 102.

Rom. 14 12. p. 2. 174.

1 Cor. 2. 8. p. 2. 20.

1 Cor. 6. 11. p. 1. 157.

1 Cor. 7. 18, 19. p. 2. 93.

1 Cor. 10. 3. p. 3. 101.

1 Cor. 10. 4. p. 3. 163, 164. Heb.

1 Cor. 12. 12. p. 2. [86].

1 Cor. 15. 4. p. 1. 104. Heb.

1 Cor. 15. 5. p. 1. 93.

1 Cor. 15. 54, 55. Exp. p. 2. 95. Heb.

2 Cor. 5. 2. p. 1. 160.

2 Cor. 5. 5. p. 1. 160.

2 Cor. 5. 2. p. 1. 82.

2 Cor. 5. 2. p. 1. 82.

2 Cor. 5. 2. p. 1. 82.

2 Cor. 13. 14. p. 3. 86.

Gal. 2. 3. p. 2. 95.

Gal. 3. 10. p. 1. 144. Exp. p. 3. 69.

Gal. 3. 13. p. 1. 83.

Gal. 3. 15. p. 1. 85.

Gal. 3. 15. p. 1. 85.

Gal. 3. 16. p. 1. 17. Exp. p. 2. [85]. 163. John 20. 12. p. 2. 43. 44.

John 20. 12. p. 2. 43.

John 20. 14. p. 1. 93.

John 20. 19. Exp. p. 1. 93. Exp. p. 3. 55.

John 20. 24. p. 1. 93, 94.

John 20. 26. Exp. p. 1. 94. Exp. p. 3. 55. p. 1.

104, and p. 2. 63. Heb.

John 20. 31. Exp. p. 1. 39.

John 21. 1. p. 1. 94. Exp. p. 3. 53.

John 21. 14. Exp. p. 1. 94.

John 21. 15. Exp. p. 3. 67. Heb.

Acts 1. 1, &c. p. 1. 94.

Acts 1. 3. Exp. p. 1. 93.

Acts 1. 6. p. 1. 37.

Acts 1. 12. Exp. p. 3. 53.

Acts 2. 3, 4. p. 2. 175.

Acts 2. 12, 13. p. 1. Introd. 3. p. 1. 116.

Acts 2. 17. p. 1. 144. p. 3. 163. Heb.

Acts 2. 20. p. 2. 173.

Acts 2. 20. p. 2. 173.

Acts 2. 20. p. 2. 106. Acts 2. 20. p. 2. 173. Heb.
Acts 2. 29. p. 1. 100.
Acts 2. 30. p. 2. 105.
Acts 2. 31. p. 1. 100.
Acts 2. 33. p. 3. 58.
Acts 2. 34. p. 1. 108.
Acts 2. 36. Exp. p. 1. Introd. 3, 4.
Acts 2. 38. p. 1. 161.
Acts 2. 40. p. 1. 161. Acts 2. 38. p. 11. 161.

Acts 2. 40. p. 1. 161. p. 2. 177.

Acts 3. 1. Exp. p. 1. 77, 78.

Acts 3. 11. p. 2. 20.

Acts 3. 18. Exp. p. 1. 71.

Acts 3. 26. p. 1. 26.

Acts 4. 20. p. 2. 59. Heb.

Acts 4. 27, 28. p. 1. 71

Acts 5. 1, &c. Exp. p. 2. 84.

Acts 5. 31. p. 1. 6.

Acts 5. 33. p. 2. 22.

Acts 7. 4. Exp. p. 2. 85.

Acts 7. 14. Exp. p. 2. 86.

Acts 7. 16. Exp. p. 2. 88, 90. Heb.

Acts 7. 42, 43. Exp. p. 2. 90.

Acts 7. 51. p. 2. 22.

Acts 7. 51. p. 2. 22.

Acts 7. 51. p. 2. 22. Gal. 3. 10. p. 1, 144. Exp. p. 3. 69.
Gal. 3. 13. p. 1. 83.
Gal. 3. 15. p. 1. 85.
Gal. 3. 16. p. 1. 17. Exp. p. 2. [85]. 163.
Gal. 3. 18. p. 3. 197.
Gal. 3. 19. p. 1. 162.
Gal. 3. 21. Exp. p. 1. 144. and Exp. p. 1. 163.
Gal. 3. 22, 23, 24. Exp. p. 1. 163.
Gal. 3. 28. p. 2. [86].
Gal. 3. 28. p. 1. 152.
F f Acts 10. 34. p. 1. 8. Acts 11. 15, 16. p. 2. 175. Gal. 4.

Heb. 8. 2. p. 1. 163.
Heb. 8. 5. p. 1. 163.
Heb. 8. 6. p. 1. 32 and 153.
Heb. 8. 7. Exp. p. 1. 140.
Heb. 8. 8. 8. & Exp. p. 1. 140.
Heb. 8. 10. p. 1. 144.
Heb. 9. 6. p. 1. 150.
Heb. 9. 6. p. 1. 150.
Heb. 9. 6. p. 1. 150.
Heb. 9. 7. 8. 9. p. 1. 113.
Heb. 9. 9, 10. p. 1. 148. p. 3. 71.
Heb. 9. 10. 11, 12. p. 1. 109.
Heb. 9. 12. p. 1. 44.
Heb. 9. 13. Exp. p. 1. 148. p. 3. 71.
Heb. 9. 15. p. 1. 83.
Heb. 9. 16. 17. p. 1. 85.
Heb. 9. 16. 17. p. 1. 85.
Heb. 9. 16. 17. p. 1. 84.
Heb. 9. 19. Exp. p. 3. 72, 74. Heb.
Heb. 9. 16. 17. p. 1. 84.
Heb. 9. 21. p. 1. 110 and 1111. p. 2. 104.
Heb. 9. 22. p. 1. 113 and 115 Heb.
Heb. 9. 24. & Exp. p. 1. 110 and 1111. p. 2. 104.
Heb. 9. 26. p. 3. 163, 164. Heb.
Heb. 9. 27. p. 2. 174.
Heb. 10. 1. p. 1. 113, 144 and 165.
Heb. 10. 1. p. 1. 147.
Heb. 10. 4. p. 1. 147.
Heb. 10. 11. p. 1. 148.
Heb. 10. 11. p. 1. 148.
Heb. 10. 11. p. 1. 148.
Heb. 10. 12. 13. p. 1. 108.
Heb. 10. 19. p. 1. 113.
Heb. 10. 20. p. 1. 113.
Heb. 10. 20. p. 1. 116.
Heb. 11. 26. p. 2. Fx.
Heb. 11. 39, 40. p. 1. 153.
Heb. 12. 24. Exp. p. 1. 183.
Heb. 13. 11. p. 1. 79.
James thoroughout. Exp. p. 3. 76.
James 2. 24. Exp. p. 2. [22].
James 5. 3. p. 2. 173. Heb.
Jet. 2. 24. Exp. p. 1. 83.
Heb. 17. 20. p. 3. 163.
Heb. 19. 3. 163. Heb.
Jet. 3. 21. p. 1. 161. p. 2. 177.
Let. 4. 7. p. 2. 173. Heb.
Jet. 3. 21. p. 1. 161. p. 2. 177.
Let. 4. 7. p. 2. 173. Heb.
Jet. 3. 21. p. 1. 161. p. 2. 177.
Let. 4. 7. p. 2. 173. Heb.
John 1. 4. p. 3. 105.
John 2. 20. Exp. p. 1. 13.
John 2. 20. Exp. p. 1. 13.
John 2. 20. Exp. p. 1. 13.
John 3. 5. p. 1. 5.
John 3. 5. p. 1. 5.
John 3. 8. p. 1. 5. Exp. p. 1. 49.
John 4. 10. p. 1. 18.
John 3. 5. p. 1. 5.
John 3. 8. p. 1. 5. Exp. p. 1. 49.
John 4. 10. p. 2. 51.
John 5. 7. Exp. p. 3. 79.
John 6. p. 2. 51.
John 6. p. 2. 51.
John 7. 8. p. 1. 56.
John 6. p. 2. 51.
John 7. 9. 2. 59.
Heb. 10. 10. 10.
Heb. 10. 10. 10. 10.
Heb. 10. 10. 10. 10.
Heb. 10. 10. 1 Gal. 4. 3. p. 1. 144. Gal. 4. 6. p. 2. 143. Gal. 4. 9. p. 1. 144. Gal. 4. 6. p. 2. 143.
Gal. 4. 9. p. 1. 144.
Gal. 4. 24 p. 1. 144.
Gal. 5. 1. p. 2. 94.
Gal. 5. 2, 3, 4. Exp. p. 2. 93, 94, 95, 176.
Gal. 5. 22. p. 1. 162.
Ephel. 1. 7. p. 1. 83.
Ephel. 1. 13. p. 1. 163.
Ephel. 1. 19. 20. Exp. p. 1. 102.
Ephel. 1. 19. 20. Exp. p. 1. 102.
Ephel. 1. 19. 20. Exp. p. 1. 102.
Ephel. 3. 6. p. 1. 152.
Ephel. 3. 6. p. 1. 152.
Ephel. 4. 8. Exp. p. 1. 107.
Ephel. 4. 8. Exp. p. 1. 107.
Ephel. 4. 8. Exp. p. 1. 107.
Ephel. 5. 2. p. 1. 84.
Phil. 2. 6, 7, 8. p. 1. 84.
Phil. 2. 6, 7, 8. p. 1. 84.
Phil. 2. 9. p. 1. 160.
Phil. 4. 8. p. 1. 151.
Colof. 1. 14. p. 1. 83.
Colof. 2. 17. p. 1. 163.
2 Thel. 2. 3, 8, 9. p. 2. 6.
1 Tim. 1. 13. p. 1. 157.
1 Tim. 2. 4. p. 1. 8.
1 Tim. 2. 6. p. 1, 8, 83.
1 Tim. 2. 8. p. 2. 162.
1 Tim. 2. 11, 12, 13, 14. Exp. p. 1. 24.
1 Tim. 2. 11, 12, 13, 14. Exp. p. 1. 24.
1 Tim. 2. 15. Exp. p. 1. 24.
1 Tim. 2. 15. Exp. p. 1. 24.
1 Tim. 3. 8. p. 2. 162.
2 Tim. 3. 8. Exp. p. 2. 65.
Tit. 3. 3. p. 1. 6, 157.
Tit. 3. 5. p. 1. 16.
Tit. 3. 5. p. 1. 85.
2 Tim. 3. 8. Exp. p. 2. 65.
Tit. 3. 5. p. 1. 16.
Tit. 3. 5. p. 1. 16.
Tit. 3. 5. p. 1. 18.
Heb. 1. 12. p. 1. 84. p. 3. 103.
Heb. 1. 12. p. 3. 163. Heb.
Heb. 1. 12. p. 1. 82.
Heb. 1. 10, 11, 12. p. 1. 82.
Heb. 1. 10, 11, 12. p. 1. 82.
Heb. 1. 10, 11, 12. p. 1. 82.
Heb. 2. 7. Exp. p. 2. [88].
Heb. 2. 7. Exp. p. 2. [88]. Gal. 4. 24. p. 1. 144. 3. 163. Heb.
Heb. 2. 7. Exp. p. 2. [88].
Heb. 2. 9. p. 1. 8. Exp. p. 2. [88].
Heb. 2. 16. p. 2. 164.
Heb. 2. 17. p. 1. 160.
Heb. 3. 5. Exp. p. 1. 163.
Heb. 3. 12. Exp. p. 3. 95.
Heb. 4. 8. p. 1. 3.
Heb. 4. 15. p. 1. 160.
Heb. 5. 2. p. 1. 160.
Heb. 5. 5. p. 1. 100. p. 3. 105.
Heb. 5. 6. p. 1. 108.
Heb. 6. 5. p. 1. 37.
Heb. 6. 20. Exp. p. 1. 113, and 115. Heb.
Heb. 7. 1. p. 1. 144. Heb. 7. 1. p. 1. 144. Heb. 7. 12. p. 1. 142. Heb. 7. 16. p. 3. 25. Heb. 7. 18, 19. p. 1. 144. Rev. 1, 16, p. 3, 95. Rev. 2, 2, p. 2, 59. Heb. Rev. 2, 16, p. 3, 95. Rev. 2, 17, p. 3, 102. Heb. 7. 19. p. 1. 154. Heb. 7. 22. p. 1. 153. Heb. 7. 24, 25. p. 1. 160. Heb. 7. 25. p. 1. 4. and 110. Heb. 7. 26, 27. p. 3. 105. Rev. 7. 3. p. 1. 160. Rev. 7. 5, 6, 7, 8. Exp. p. 2. [95]. Rev. 19. 13, 15, 21. p. 3. 95.

### I N D E

#### INDEX the Fifth.

#### An Index of the Principal Matters contained in this Book.

BAS the first, a Sophy of Persia, how he began the destruction of the Jews in that kingdom. p. 3. 179.

Abas the second, how he proceeded

therein. p. 3. 182.

Abrabam, Precepts given to him. p. 1. 16.

An Altive Verb without a nominative case before it, And Attree verb without a nominative case before it, and of the third person, is taken for a verb impersonal. p. 2. 28, 96. and for a verb passive. p. 2. 28, 96, 108.

Adam, Precepts given to him. p. 1. 16.

Adoption. p. 2. 143.

Adrian, Miracles reported of him, what. p. 1. 62.

Afflictions sanctified. p. 1. 89.

David Almusser, a Pretender to be the Messias.

P. 3. 171.

David Alroi, the same. Bid.

Ammon, the same with Jupiter and Ham. p. 3. 119.

Ammon, the same with Jupiter and Ham. p. 3. 119.

Amram, Precepts given to him. p. 1. 16.

Anointing was the separation to some particular use, p. 1. 9. Kings, priests, and others, were anointed. p. 1. 9. why and how. p. 1. 10. Jewish constitutions concerning anointing. p. 1. 12. anointing of Current See Current.

Christ, See Christ.

Apollonius Tyanzus his pretended Miracles. p. 1.63.
The Apostles were inspired by the Holy Ghost. p. 1. Introd. 3. their testimony most certain. p. 1. 96, 97,

8. p. 2. 16,&c. A Pretender in Arabia to be the Messias. p. 3. 168,

Weak Arguments hinder the conversion of the Jews,

p. 2. 30. p. 3. 137, 188.

Articles of Religion not to be quitted to gain converts, P. 3. 189.
Ajcension, See Christ.

Ascension, See Christ.

Assurance of pardon obtained by the Gospel. p. 1.155.

Assurance of pardon obtained by the Gospel. p. 1.155.

for all sin. ibid. by for the greatest sins. p. 1.157. for all sin. ibid. by the death of Christ. p. 1. 158. and by his resurre-tion, ascension, and intercession. p. 1.159.

Augustus Cesar's decree of taxing or enrolling the

world. p. 1, 21.

PAPTISM brings men to Christ. p. 2. 175. obliges us to obedience. p. 2. 176, and faves us from judgments. p. 2. 177.

Baptist. See John.

Bar Coubab a Pretender to be the MESSIAS. p. 1.128. p. 3. 167.

Benjamin, an accessory to the Tribe of Judab. p. 3.

Betblebem, the place of Christ's birth. p. 1. 20, 131.

the same with Ephratab. p. 1.22.

Brazen Serpent a Type of Christ. p. 1.73.

The word Brethren takes in more distant Relations.

p. 2. 56.
Burial. See Christ.

C.

TO be Called fignifies only to be. p. 1.2. p. 2. 653

A Carnal temper a Cause of insidelity. p. 2. 21.

Ceremonies undervalued a cause of insidelity. p. 2. 14.

Motives to Charity. p. 1. 87, 88.

Christ. See Jesus, Messias, and Word. The word Christ what it signifieth. p. 1. 9. his character. p. 3. 166. why he was anointed. p. 1. 9. and how. p. 1. 11. Application of Christ's death, in recommending a suffering state, p. 1. 89. meditating on death. ibid. frequent receiving the Lord's-Supper. p. 1. 89. Christ ascended into heaven. p. 1. 109. why at forty days distance from his resurrection. p. 1. 110. Types thereof. p. 1. 109 and 110. foretold. p. 1. 107, 134. Effects of his Ascension the sending of the Holy Ghost. p. 1. 116. and success of the Gospel. p. 1. 117. Assurance of pardon by his Ascension. p. 1. 159. Of Christ's Birth. p. 1. 19. Of his Lineage and Kindred, as of the seed of David. p. 1. 19, 131. p. 3. 131, 147. born in Betblebem. p. 1. 20, 131. born of a Virgin. p. 1. 23, 131. when the Jews were a distinct Polity. p. 1. 25, 132. p. 3. 129. in the time, which Daniel had foretold. p. 1. 26. when the second temple was standing. p. 1. 26, 132. p. 3. 146. Christ was buried, and honourably buried. p. 1. 90. Christ ris crucifixion. See Christ's death. Christ proved to be of the seed bly buried. p. 1. 90. Christ's crucifixion. See Christ's death. Christ proved to be of the feed Christ's death. Christ proved to be of the feed of David by other instances beside the genealogies p. 1. 151, 152, 162. Christ's death and sufferings were foretold p. 1. 67, 69, 130, 133. not to be reproach'd for them, p. 1. 68. Christ did suffer, p. 1. 70. on the cross. p. 1. 73. his sufferings prove him to be Christ. p. 1. 70. Time of Christ's death. p. 1. 75. Place. p. 1. 79. other circumstances. ibid. he died for us. p. 1. 81. as a testator. p. 1. 84. as a witness to his dostrine. p. 1. 85. his death an example. p. 1. 86, &c. See Example of Christ to be meditated on. p. 1. 19. and applied to us. p. 1. 89. See Application of Christ. Christ despised. p. 2. 66. Christ's deliverances, see Christ saves. Christ vanquished the Devil. p. 1. 49. Christ's death an example of patience. p. 1. 86. forgiveness of injuries. ibid. humility. p. 1. 87. 1.86. forgiveness of injuries. ibid. humility. p. 1.87. refignation, charity and fortitude.p.1.87. See Christ's refignation, charity and fortitude, p. 1.87. Sce Christ's Sufferings. Christ how he fulfilled the Law of Mofes. p. 1.138. p. 3.24 Christ preached in Galilee, p. 1.33. Christ fent the Holy Ghost. p. 1.116. Gospel of Christ, see Gospel. Christ was to be holy. p. 2.67. Christ's hamanity. p. 2.59, 60. Christ's intercession. p. 1.110. Assurance of pardon obtained thereby. p. 1.159. Christ's innocency in his life. p. 1.51. Christ was to be just. p. 1.35. he was just. p. 1.72. Christ justifies us. p. 1.8. Christ was a king. p. 1.72. not of this world. p. 3.142, 144. Christ observed the law of Moses, p. 1.138, and fulfilled it, p. 3.24. Christ was to be meek. 138, and fulfilled it, p.3. 24. Christ was to be meek. P. 1. 35, 72. CHRIST was to do many miracles, p. 1.

#### I N D $\boldsymbol{E}$

35, 35, 44: they were proofs of his divine Mission. 35, 35, 44: they were proofs of his divine Million. p. 2. 2. they were well attested, p. 1. 64. true and unexceptionable, p. 1. 51. intended to destroy the power of the Devil. p. 1. 53. stupendous p. 1. 53, 58. various. p. 1. 53. works of mercy. p. 1. 54, 58. publick, p. 1. 54. by his own power. p. 1. 56. seasonable and necessary. p. 1. 61. compared with those of Modes. jes. p. 1.56. of the Church of Rome; p. 1.59. and of Apollonius Tyanzus. p. 1. 63. how they were vilify'd by the Jews with lies and forgeries. p. 1.40. Christ was praceable both in Church and State. p. 3. 29. made peace between the Jew and the Gentile. p. 3.34. CHRIST was poor. p. 1.72. p. 2.21 what power he had, and what was given him. p. 3.66. Christ preached in Galilee as foretold. p. 1.33. he was to preach the Gospel to the poor. p. 1.38. his preaching. p. 1. 134. Christ a perfect priest, p. 1. 160. a real priest. p. 1. 111. Christ was promised. p. 1. 129. Christ was to be a prophet, p. 1. 30, 130. his prophecies were a sure proof of his mission, p. 1. 130. p. 2. 5. The prophecies concerning Christ were suffilled by his high p. 1. 130. his prophecies p. 1. 130. his birth, p. 1 129. his working miracles. p. 1. 130. fuffering and dying. p. 1. 130, 133. rifing again. p. 1. 130. the fuccess of the Gospel. ibid. its being I. 130. the success of the Gospel. ibid. its being brought about by unlikely means, p. 1. 130, 132. by his being born of a virgin, p. 1. 131. at Betblebem. ibid. of the family of David. ibid. before the destruction of the second temple. p. 1. 132. p. 3. 146. when the Fins were a distinct people. p. 1. 132. p. 3. 129. by his preaching, p. 1. 134. his resurrection. p. 1. 133. and ascension. p. 1. 134. Christ's resurrection was foretold. p. 1. 130, 134. it was a proof of his being the Messias, p. 1. 101. it confirm'd his doctrine. p. 1. 50. it was both foretold proof of his being the Messias, p. 1. 101. it confirm'd his doctrine. p. 1. 59. it was both foretold and typified. p. 1. 98, &c. he role from the dead, p. 1. 92. on the third day. p. 1. 103. he proved it to be the same body. p. 1. 95. This was was witnessed by men. p. 1. 93. by angels. p. 1. 94. by the Holy Ghost. ibid. and by the Aposties. p. 1. 95. Christ a Saviour. p. 1. 72. he saves or delivers all mankind, and not the Fews only. p. 1. 7. his salvation or deliverance is eternal. p. 1. 2. spiritual from vation or deliverance is eternal. p. 1.3. spiritual from fin. p. 1.5. and from the Devil. p. 1.5, 6. Christ's fetting on the right-hand of God. p. 1. 108. CHRIST fetting on the right-hand of God. p. 1. 108. Christ was to suffer. p. 1. 67. he did suffer. p. 1. 70. See Christ's Death. Christ was to come to his temple. p. 1. 34. p. 3. 146. Types of Christ. Foshua. p. 1. 3. slaac. p. 1. 104. Manna. p. 3. 100. Moses. p. 1. 31. the High-Priest. p. 1. 109, 111. the brazen serpent. p. 1. 73. Samson. p. 1. 4. the wav'd sheaf. p. 1. 105. Christs false. p. 1. 14, 128. p. 2. 10. and p. 3. 166. Christians the Holy Ghost assistance of Christian ought to put us in mind of our duty. p. 1. 13. Agreement between Tems and Christians.

ty. p. 1. 13. Agreement between Jews and Christians. p. 1. 13. Christian Religion contains sufficient motives of credibility. p. 2. 2. first Christians were peaceable. p. 3. 34. and good. p. 1. 7, 158, and p. 2. 30. Christian Religion true. p. 2. 99. how proved to be so. p. 3. 198. will abide the trial. p. 3. pref. xii. the excellency of the Christian Religion. p.1.52. the Christian Religion compared with the Pagan. p.1.135, and with that of Moses. p.1.137. tends to peace. p.3. 31. most excellent in its precepts. p.1.135, 150, and reasonable. ibid. its reward is eternal life. p.1.152. it gives us power to obey it. p. 1.154. p. 3.70. the success of the Christian religion. p. 1.119, 130. a proof of Jesus being Christ. p. 1.120. otherwise unlikely to prevail. p. 1.130. 132. if we consider the authors and preachers of it. p. 1.121. the matters of faith contained therein, p. 1. 121. the precepts. p. 1. 122. the rewards. p. 1. 123. the dangers. p. 1. 124. not propagated by eloquence. p. 1. 125. nor arms. p. 1. 126. but by sufferings, p. 1. 127. the Christian Religion gives assurance of pardon. p. 1. 155. for the greatest sins. p. 1. 157. and for all sin. ibid.

Christina, miracles reported of her. p. 1.60. Circumcifion not necessary. p. 2. 25. p 3. 3.

Compulsion makes no converts. p. 3. 187.

The Conjunction copulative omitted. p. 2. 90. or redun-

dant. p. 2.74.

Conversion. The Universities ought to endeavour after the conversion of the Jews; and how. p. 3. 195. also rich men. p. 3. 196. and learned men. ibid. and even meaner people. p. 3. 198. their conversion would be of great advantage. p. 3. 200. not to be despaired of. p. 3. 201. Objections answered. p. 3. 200. Popish doctrines hinder the conversion of the Jews. p. 2.31. p. 3. 187.

Converts. Christian princes may appoint men to in-fruct the Fewish converts, p. 3. 194. the converts ought to be protected. p. 3. 195. and to be main-tained by the Fews, p. 3. 202. Compulsion makes no

Converts. p. 3. 187. nor weak arguments. p. 3. 188. Covetousness a cause of infidelity. p. 2. 20. He could not do, for it was not sit for bim to do. p. 2.

Crete, a pretender to be the Messias there. p. 3. 168. Crucifixion, see Christ, what punishment, p. 1. 73.

ANIEL's prediction verified in the birth of Christ, p. 1. 26.

Daughter-in-law called daughter. p. 2. 159.

David, Christ was to be of his feed. p. 1. 19, 131.

David a type of Christ. p. 2. 67. his flock liable to perfecutions for Christ's fake. p. 2. 154.

David Almusser, a pretender to be the Messias. p. 3.171.

David El David, or Bavid Alroi, the fame. ibid.

Meditate on Death. p. 1.89. The death of Christ brings pardon. p. 1. 158. See Death in Christ.

The Devil vanquished by Christ. p. 1.49.

Diospolis, a Town, why so called. p. 3. 119.

Divorce only permitted among the Jews. p. 2. 18, 52.

Popish Dostrines hinder the conversion of the Jews. p.

2. 31. p. 3. 187.

St. Dominick, miracles reported of him. p. 1. 60.

Domitian persecuted such as were of the family of

David, p. 2. 154.
Dositbeus a salse prophet. p. 2. 10.
Dunaan a salse Messias. p. 3. 168.

Pretender in the East Indies to be the Messias, The tower of Edar, where the shepherds watched at birth of Christ. p. 1. 20.
The Eleventh bour put for the days of the MESSIAS. p. 3. 164.

John the Baptist was the promised Elias. p. 2. 169.

was like Elias. ibid. Of the opinion of the fathers, that Elias was yet to come. p. 2. 185. Emmanuel the name of Christ. p. 1. 2. Enallage of the plural number put for the fingular. p. 2. 45. P. 3. 145. The End or Ends of the world, signifies the days of the

MESSIAS. p. 3. 164. Eternal life the reward of Christians. p. 1. 152. Evenings, what among the Jews. p. 1.75 A Pretender beyond Euphrates to be the MESSIAS.

p. 3. 171. Ill Examples hinder the conversion of the Jews. p. 2.

F.

AITH implicit, a cause of insidelity. p. 2. 25. Ju-fitiscation by Faith doth not make the law void. p. 2. [92]. p. 3. 26.

### N D E

Fez, a Pretender there to be the Messias. p. 3. 170. First born doth not always include a second. p. 2. 55. Force makes no converts. p. 3. 187. Forgiveness of injuries, motives to it. p. 1. 87. Fortitude, motives to it. p. 1. 88. France, a Pretender there to be the Messias. p. 1. 169. Francis, St. miracles reported of him. p. 1.60.

Gentiles, their calling foretold. p. 3. 4, 157.

Germany, a Pretender there to be the Messias. p. 3. 172, 173, 178.

172, 173, 178.

Holy Ghost inspired the Apostles. p. 1. Introd. iii. the Holy Ghost assists Christians. p. 1. 154. p. 3. 26. Sin against the Holy Ghost, what. p. 1. 158. the Holy Ghost brings pardon. p. 1. 159. the the sending the Holy Ghost the effect of Christ's Ascension. p. 1. 116. the Holy Ghost promised under the Messias. p. 3. 7. the Holy Ghost owned by the ancient Jews. p. 3. 109.

Man's happiness from God. p. 1. 137. how God hardens sinners. p. 2. 28.

Man's happinels from God. p. 1. 137. how God hardens finners. p. 2. 28.

Gospel. See Christian Religion under Christian. The Gospel Ministers offer pardon. p. 1. 161. Gospels unfuspetted. p. 1. 65. the success of the Gospel the effect of Christ's Ascension. p. 1. 117. the truth of the Gospels unquestionable. p. 1. 129. p. 2. 1, &c. 16, &c. why they should be believed. p. 2. 2. they contain things of great moment. p. 2. 17. and are not corrupted. p. 2. 18.

Ham's Happines not from himself. p. 1. 137. but from Gop. ibid.

How God bardens finners, p. 2.28.

Heathens learned many things from the Jews. p. 3. 111, 116. and had a notion of the Trinity. p. 3. 122.

Hebrew language neglected is of ill consequence. p. 2.

33. the study thereof ought to be encouraged. p. 3.

194, 196.
The law concerning Heiresses among the Jews. p.2.153.
Herod taken by some to be the Messias. p. 1.14.

The High Priess a type of Christ. p. 1. 109, 111. p. 2. 67.

Different degrees of Holiness in the land of Canaan. p. 1. 114. The Holy of Holies a type of Heaven. p.

Horn fignfies dominion. p. v. 5.
The eleventh Hour and the last bour, put for the days of the Messias. p. 3. 164. Humility, motives to it. p. 1. 87.

Hyperbelical expressions used in Scripture. p. 3. 67.

J.

JACOB procepts given to him. p. 1. 16.

Jannes and Jambres. p. 2.65.

Japbet the fame with Neptune. p. 3. 120.

Idolatry confirmed by pretended miracles. p. 1. 60.

JESUS. See CHRIST, MESSIAS, and Word. Of the name. p. 1. 1. it fignifies a Saviour. p. 1. 2. why? p. 1. 3. there was such a person as Jesus. p. 1. 14. who lived, when there was a general expectation of the MESSIAS among the Jews. ibid. and Gentiles. p. 1. 27.

pettation of the Messias among the Jews. ibid. and Gentiles. p. 1. 27.

A Jewess with child of a daughter, said she was with child of the Messias. p. 3. 185.

Jews, they are objects of indignation and compassion. p. 1. pref. i. the law was given as a restraint to them. p. 1. 162. their conversion to be endeavoured. ibid. p. 2. 35. p. 3. 180. Christ born when the Jews were a distinct polity. p. 1. 25, 132.

The Jewish obstinacy and insidelity. p. 1. 2. they have sufficient means for their conviction. p. 2. 2.

their ignorance not excusable. p. 2. 20. Fewish learning known to the heathens. p. 3.111, 116. agreement between Jews and Christians. p. 1. 13. causes of the Jewish infidelity. p. 2. 20. they are destitute of the means for their conversion. r. they take care of the education of their children. p. 1. 33. their severity against Christians. ibid. the convert Jews have too often been men of ill lives. p. 2. 34. the Jews not always obliged to marry into their own tribe. p. 2. 149. the Jews have no jurisdiction or dominion at this time. p. 3. 141. the impenitence of the Jews could not hinder the coming of the Messias. p. 1. 158. nor their fins. ibid. the Fews inconsistent with themselves concerning the delay of the Messias. p. 1. 160, 185. the Jews rejected Christ, and are credulous to believe impofetted Christ, and are creditions to believe impo-flors, p. 3. 166, 179, 185. not to be credited in their talk of the Messias, p. 3. 179, 185. the defiruction of the Jewish polity is expressed by words, which signify the defiruction of the whole world. p. 3. 17. and the coming of Christ to judgment. p. 2. 173. they boast of their prosperity, p. 3. 192. they are enemies to the Christian Religion, p. 3. 193, 199. and careless in their own devotion. ibid. they ought not to use in their synagogues what prayers they not to use in their synagogues what prayers they please. p. 3. 191. they ought to maintain their Christian converts. p. 3. 202. how they were destroy'd and banished out of Persia. p. 3.179. their present state. p. 3. 189. how the Jews are to be argued with. p. 3. 189. how the Jews are to be argued with. p. 3. 197. they may be obliged to hear our fermons. p. 3. 191. and submit to our conferences. ibid. they ought not to be injured. ibid. but kept low. p. 3. 192. they may be obliged to give the government their reasons, why they reject Christianity. p. 3. 193. Christian princes may oblige the Jews to publick conferences about Religion. p. 3. 193, 195. and appoint fit men to instruct their converts. p. 3. 194. Universities ought to endeavour for the conversion of the Jews. p. 2. 195. and rich men. p. 2. r94. Onvertites ought to endeavour for the conversion of the Jews. p. 3. 195. and rich men. p. 3. 196. and learned men. ibid. the questions debated between us and the Jews are of the highest nature. p. 3. 198. how meaner people ought to endeavour after the conversion of the Jews. p. 3. 198. their conversion would be of great advantage. p. 3. 200. not to be despaired of. p. 3. 201. Objections answered, p. 3. 200.

Impenitence of the Jews could not hinder the coming of the Messias. p. 3. 158.

OI the Missias. p. 3. 150.

Causes of Infidelity. p. 2. 20.

Motives to forgiveness of Injuries. p. 1. 87.

The Intercession of Christ brings pardon. p. 1. 159.

John the Baptist supposed to be Christ. p. 1. 45. why he did no miracles. ibid. he was the promised E-lias. p. 2. 169. how he discharged his office. p. 2. 171. by his preaching. p. 2. 172. his birth made way for the beliet of the birth of Christ. p. 2. 171. he discharged his office by baptism. p. 2. 175. thereway for the belief of the birth of Christ. p. 2. 171. he discharged his office by baptism. p. 2. 175. thereby engaging men to repentance. ibid. and to obedience. p. 2. 176. and bringing men to Christ. p. 2. 175. and receiving them into the divine Protestion. p. 2. 177. he knew not Christ personally. p. 2. 175. he removed impediments. p. 2. 177. he led a holy life. p. 2. 178. he directed to Christ. p. 2. 179. was an extraordinary person. ibid. is vindicated. ibid. was like Elias. p. 2. 181. of the opinion of the fathers, that Elias was yet to come. p. 2. 186.

Jonathan's Targum on the Pentateuch, his antiquity. p 3. pref. ix. his style. ibid. pref. viii. a fabulous writer. ibid. pref. ix. varies from the text. ibid. contradicts the text. ibid. and is full of modern

words, ibid. pref. x.

Jonathan's Targum on the Prophets, an ancient writer of good effecen. p. 3. pref. vii. his ftyle. ibid. pref. viii. ancient. ibid. pref. ix.

Jonathan, a Pretender to be the Messias. p. 1. 15.

# I N D E

Is a type of Christ. p. 2. 78.

Is a type of Christ. p. 3.

Is a type of Christ. p. 3. 133.

Is a type of Christ. p. 3. 133.

Is a type of Christ. p. 3. 133. ibid. the true worship of God preserved in this tribe. ibid. Priests and Levites preserved in it. ibid. they had teachers of the law, and rulers in our Saviour's time. ibid. the Messias was to be born of this tribe, p. 3. 136. the excellency of this tribe above the rest. ibid.

Judas, a pretender to be the MESSIAS. p. 1. 14.

Baptism saves us from Judgments. p. 2. 177. Julian, a pretender to be the Messias. p. 3. 168. Jupiter, that is, juvans pater. p. 1.2. the same with

Ham. p. 3. 119.

Fusification by Christ. p. 1.8. doth not make void the law. p. 2. [92]. p. 3. 26. not by the law. p. 1.8. p. 3. 69, 70, &c. St. Paul and St. James reconciled herein. p. 2. [92].

K. Katherine of Sienna, miracles reported of her. p. 1. 60.

Kings were anointed. p. 1. 9. why and how. p. 1. 10. by a fountain. p. 1. 12. Christian Kings may oblige the Jews to publick conferences about religion. p. 3. 193, 199. and appoint fit men to instruct their converts. p. 3. 194.

AST or latter days mean the days of the Messias.

p. 3. 130, 162. the last bour and the last time tignify the same. p. 3. 164.

Law of Moses cannot justify. p. 1. 8. p. 3. 69. was a perfect law. p. 1. 138. came from God. ibid. inferior to the Christian Religion. p. 1. 137. Christ observed the law of Moses. p. 1. 138. this law was not perpetual or unalterable. p. 1. 139, &c. p. 3. 3. the law was either moral, ecclesiatical, or civil. ibid. desective, p. 1. 140. in its precepts, ibid. given only to one nation. ibid. not intended for all people. p. 3. 2. many laws did not oblige the Fews out of their 3. 3. many laws did not oblige the Jews out of their own land. p. 1. 141. many only political. p. 1. 142. the rewards temporal. p. 1.143. eternal life not revealed by the law. p. 1. 143. p. 3. 72. the law gave not power to obey it. p. 1. 144. p. 3. 70. and no affurance of pardon. p. 1. 144. p. 3. 70. and no affurance of pardon. p. 1. 144. p. 3. 198. the law was typical. p. 1. 162. given as a reftraint to the Jews. ibid. to dispose them for the Gospel. p. 1. 163. not good in it self. p. 2. 2. might be dispensed with not good in it self. p. 3.3. might be dispensed with. p. 3.4. repealing of the ceremonial law foretold. p. 3. 17. and confirmed by providences. p. 3. 18. the great things spoken of the law is no argument, that the ceremonial part should continue for ever. p.3.21. how far these laws were good. ibid. not made void by justification through faith, p. 3. 26. the law must be perfestly obeyed. p. 3. 70, 197. reasons why it should be believed. p. 2. 2.

Learned men ought to endeavour after the conversion

of the Jews. p. 3. 196.

Lemlem, a Pretender to be the Mrssias. p. 3. 181.

Eternal life the reward of Christians. p. 1. 152.

A like case represented as if it was the same case. p. 2.81.

Aby . vide Word. p. 3.122.

A Pretender in the Low Countries to be the MESSIAS.

p. 3. 173.

M. AHOMET propagated his Religion by the fword, and why. p. 1. 127. an account of his imposture. p. 3. 169.

Malice a cause of infidelity. p.2. 21.

Man's happiness not from himself. p. 1. 137. but from Gop. ibid.

Isaac, a type of Christ. p. 1. 104. Precepts given to him. p. 1. 16.

Isaac, a type of Christ. p. 1. 104. Precepts given to him. p. 1. 16.

Vicgin Mary, miracles reported of her. p. 1. 79. an heires. p. 2. 72. allowed by the ancient Jews to be of the family of David. p. 2. 153.

Isaac, a type of Christ. p. 1. 104. Precepts given to Manna a type of Christ. p. 3. 100.

Vicgin Mary, miracles reported of her. p. 1. 79. an heires. p. 2. 72. allowed by the ancient Jews to be of the family of David. p. 2. 153.

Isaac, a type of Christ. p. 1. 104. Precepts given to Manna a type of Christ. p. 3. 100.

Vicgin Mary, miracles reported of her. p. 1. 79. an heires. p. 2. 72. allowed by the ancient Jews to be of the family of David. p. 2. 153.

Isaac, a type of Christ. p. 1. 104. Vicgin Mary, miracles reported of her. p. 1. 79. an heires. p. 2. 72. allowed by the ancient Jews to be of the family of David. p. 2. 153.

Fews. p. 3. 100.
Messias. See Jesus, Christ, and Word. All nations were to serve the Messias. p. 1.117. the two-fold Messias mentioned by the Jews. p. 1.69. a meer fable. p. 1. 69, 70. promiles of the Messias gradually revealed. p. 1. 15. p. 3. 131, 147. that the Messias is come, proved at large. p. 3. 130, 146. It is agreed by Christians and Fews, that the Messias was promiled, p. 1. 13. he was promiled particularly in the old Testament. p. 1. 15, 129. he was not to be a temporal prince. p. 3. 142. the promile of the Messias is absolute. p. 3. 156. he was promifed as a blessing to the Gentiles. p. 3. 158. the belief of his coming a fundamental point of the Fewish law. ibid. the impenitence of the Jews could not hinder his coming. ibid. nor their sins. ibid. the Fews inconsiscoming. ibid. nor their fins. ibid. the Jews inconsistent with themselves concerning the delay of the Messias. p. 3. 161, 185, and credulous to believe every salse Messias. p. 3. 167. the Messias was to be born of a Virgin. p. 1. 23, 131. of the family of David. p. 1. 19, 131. in Betblebem. p. 1. 20. 131. when the Jews were a distinct polity. p. 1. 25, 132. in the time of Daniel's weeks. p. 1. 26. when the second temple was standing. p. 1. 26, 132, 146. to be a prophet. p. 1. 30, 130. to preach in Galilee. p. 1. 33, 134. to be meek. p. 1. 35, 72. and just. ibid. to do many wonderful works or miracles. p. 1. 35, 36, 44, 130. to preach the gospel to the poor. p. 1. 38, 134. to suffer. p. 1. 67, 69, 130, 133, to be a king. p. 1. 72. coming. ibid. nor their fins. ibid. the Jews inconfifuster. p. 1. 67, 69, 130, 133, to be a king. p. 1. 72, and a Saviour. ibid. to be crucify'd. p. 1. 73. to die. p. 1. 73, 130, 133. to be honourably buried. p. 1. 90. to rise again from the dead. p. 1. 98, 130, 133. on the third day. p. 1. 103. to ascend into heaven. p. 1. 109, 134. to sit on the right-hand of God. p. 1.

1.109, 134. to fit on the right-hand of God. p. 1.
108. and to intercede for us, p. 1. 110, &c.

The Gospel Ministers offer pardon, p. 1. 161.

Miracles a good proof of a dostrine. p. 1. 39, 45. p. 2. 2.

a miracle, what, p. 1. 41. Christ's miracles intended to destroy the power of the Devil. p. 1. 53.

and wrought in seasonable times, p. 1. 61. See Christ.

A necessary proof of a divine mission p. 2. 170.

A necessary proof of a divine mission. p. 3. 179.

Montezinus, his sabulous relation of the ten tribes. p. 3. 183.

Moon's appearance, and the beginning of months how determined among the Fews. p. 3. 63.

Rabbi Mordecai, a pretender to be the Messias. p.3.1784

Moses his law. See Law. Moses a type of Christ. p. 1. 31. precepts given to him. p. 1. 16. his miracles compared with those of Christ. p. 1.56. his miracles were real. ibid. and proved him to be a true prophet. ibid. Moses only an instrument. p. 1. 58. his miracles came short of those which Christ did. ibid. and were acts of vengeance. p. i. 59. his writings authentick. p. 2. 16, 18. and worthy of belief. p. 2. 16.

Moses Cretensis, a pretender to be the Messias. p. 3. 168.

Names of persons frequently omitted. p. 2. 126. two names to one person common in feripture. p. 2. 73, 123, 160.

Nathan sets up to be the Elias, and the forerunner of Sabbatai Sevi, a pretender to be the Messias. p. 1.174. Nazarenes who, and why so called. p. 2. 64. Nazarites types of Christ. p. 2. 67.

Negligence among Christians hinders the conversion of the Jews. p. 2. 32.

Nebemiah, as a forerunner of Sabbatai Sevi, pretends to be the Messias of the tribe of Epbraim. p. 3. 177. Neptune the same with Japbet. p. 3. 120.

-Digitized by Google

No, a Town dedicated to Jupiter, and called Diospolis.

p. 3. 119.
Noab and Saturn the same. p. 3. 117. precepts given to him. p. 1. 16.

Not until doth not imply a thing done afterward. p.

2. 54.

BAptism obliges us to Obedience. p. 2. 176. Obstinacy a cause of insidelity. p. 2. 21. Onkelos his Targum on the Pentateuch an excellent writer. p. 3. pref. vii. and page 106. his Style. p. 3. pref. viii, and p. 106. a strict version. p. 3. 75, 106. Oral law how pretended to be delivered. p. 2. 26.

Pagan religion not worthy of regard. p. 1. 136. A pretender in Palestina to be the Messias. p. 3. 168.

The Holy Gbost brings pardon. p. 1. 159. the Sacraments bring pardon. p. 1. 161. the Gospel ministers offer pardon. p. 1. 161. by Christ's death. p. 1. 158. resurrection, ascension and intercession. p. 1. 159. pardon offered for the greatest fins. p. 1. 157. and for all sin. ibid.

Part of a day, year or other time put for the whole.
p. 1. 104. p. 2. 61.
All passions not unlawful. v. 1. 127.

All passions not unlawful. p. 1. 137.

Passover differently observed in Egypt and in after ages.
p. 3. 19. Passover of two sorts, and how observed.
p. 3. 62.

Motives to patience. p. 1. 87.

Exhortation to peace. p. 3. 45. of the peace under the Messias. p. 3. 28.

Massias. p. 3. 28.

Persecution no mark of Religion. p. 1. 127.

A pretender in Persia to be the Messias. p. 3. 169, and 171, two of them. How the Jews were defiroyed and banished out of Persia. p. 3. 179. The Persians had some knowledge of a Trinity. p. 3. 122.

Philo the Jew testifies largely of a Trinity. p. 3. 93, and of the Aby or Word. p. 3. 100. it doth not appear that Philo borrowed his notions from Plato. p. 2. 111. other lewish writers agree with Philo. p. 2.

3. 111. other Jewish writers agree with Philo. p. 3.

Plato had notions of the Trinity. p. 3. 124. he did not transmit his notions of the Trinity to Philo. p. 3. 111. but received them from the Jews. p. 3. 111, 120. other heathens agree with Plato. p. 3. 122. Plato

went into Egypt. p. 3 111.

Pluto the same with Shem. p. 3. 120.

Polygamy only suffered. p. 2. 18, 52.

Ill Practices hinder the conversion of the fews. p. 2. 31. See Examples.

Afternoon Prayer. p. 1. 16.

Precepts given to Adam, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Amram, and Moses. p. 1. 16.

The Preterperset Tense in prophecies put for the Future tense. p. 2. 74.

Priests were anointed. p. 1. 9. why and how. p. 1. 10.
High Priest a type of Christ. p. 1. 109, 111. p. 2. 67.

Promises gradually revealed. p. 1. 15. p. 3. 131, 147.

Prophets foretelling good or evil two different cases.
p. 3. 161. Ascribing to the Prophets act what he foretold common in Scripture. p. 3. 119. whether Prophets were anointed? p. 1. 9. Prophecies fulfilled an argument of a divine Mission. p. 2. 5.

Profiles of how many forts, and how admitted p. 2.

Proselytes of how many forts, and how admitted. p. 2.

Pythagoras went into Egypt, p. 3. 111.

Q. UARRELS among Christians hinder the converfion of the Jews. p. 2. 32.
The Questions debated between us and the Jews are of the highest Nature. p. 3. 198.

Religion. See Christian, Law of Moses, Pagan, and Romish. How to judge of any religion. p. 3. 45.
Repentance fits men for Christ. p. 2. 174. Motives to Resignation. p. 1. 87. The Resurrection of Chair brings pardon. p. 1. 159.

Sec Christ.

Rich men ought to labour after the conversion of the

Jews. p. 3. 196. Romish Church corrupt. p. 1.52. a persecuting church. p. 1. 127. her miracles, what, p. 1. 45. compared with those of Christ. p. 1. 59. ridiculous. ibid. out of season. p. 1. 61. reported only to confirm transulfiantiation and idolatry. p. 1. 60.

Romish religion corrupted. p. 1. 52. hinders the conversion of the Jews. p. 2. 30, 31.

ABB ATAI Sevi a pretender to be the Messias.

p. 3. 173. he turns Turk. p. 3. 177.

The Sacraments bring pardon. p. 1. 161.

Of Sacrifices. p. 1. 144, &c. The Sacrifices were imperfect. ibid. not allowed in all cases. p. 1. 145. not good in themselves, ibid. were repeated. p.1. 148. made no inward sansification, ibid. alone not suffimade no inward fanctification. ibid. alone not sufficient. p. 1. 149. gave no assurance of pardon. p. 1. 149. p. 3. 71. not to continue for ever. p. 1. 150. acceptable for the fake of the offerer. p. 1. 146. Expiation came not from the worth of the Sacrifice. ibid. the offerer did not partake of the Sacrifice. p. 1. 147.

Samfon a type of Christ. p. 1. 4. p. 2. 67.

Samuel a type of Christ. p. 2. 68.

Santification not attainable by facrifices. p. 1. 148.

Sanduary represented the universe. p. 1, 113.

Saturn the same with Noah. p. 3.117.
Scepter doth not always signify Kingly Power. p. 3.137.
Schiffms among Christians hinder the conversion of the

Schifms among Christians hinder the conversion of the Jews. p. 2. 32.

Self-Murder unlawful. p. 1. 136.

The brazen Serpent a type of Christ. p. 1. 73. p. 2.78.

Shall fignifies a duty, not always a thing future. p. 3.33.

The wav'd Sheaf a type of Christ. p. 1. 105.

Shem the same with Pluto. p. 3. 120.

The Sign put for the thing fignified. p. 1. 115. Several forts of figns. p. 2. 104, &c.

Simeon mentioned in St. Luke the son of Rabbi Hillel.

p. 1. 14. 24. p. 3. 134. and father of Gamaliel. ibid.

p. 1. 14, 34. p. 3. 134. and father of Gamaliel, ibid. Simen Magus a falle prophet. p. 2. 10.

The Sins of the Jews could not hinder the coming of

the Messias. p. 3. 158.

Socious confuted. p. 1. 83.

Son in law call'd Son. p. 2. 159. Sons put for fons of grandfathers, or of more remote ancestors, and said to be begotten of them. p. 2. 122, 129.

Ishmael Sophus a pretender to be the Messias. p. 3.180. A pretender in Spain to be the Messias. p. 3. 170,172,

173. Stoicks blameable. p. 1.136. they held felf-murder lawful. ibid. that man's happiness is from himself. p. 1. 137. and condemned all the passions. ibid.

Sunday why to be kept holy. p. 1. 105.

The Lord's-Supper is to be frequently received. p. 1.88.

a token of peace, p. 3. 31.

Swearing when lawful or unlawful, p. 2. 48.

A Syrian pretender to be the Messias, p. 3. 169.

HE Tabernacle a type of the Universe. p. 1.113. Targums or Chaldee Paraphrases on the Old Te-Oukelos on the Pentateuch and Jonathan on the prophets, ancient writers, p. 3. pref. viii. Antiquity of Jonathan on the Pentateuch. p. 3. pref. ix. Antiquity of the Jerusalem Targum. p. 3. pref. x. the style of all the four paraphrasts. p. 3. pref. viii, &c. Jonathan's Targum on the Pentateuch a fabulous wri-

#### I N D $\boldsymbol{E}$ X.

ter. p. 3. pref. ix. varies from the text. ibid. ix. p. 3. pref. ix. varies from the text. ibid. ix. p. 3. 75. contradicts the text. ibid. ix. full of modern words. ibid. x. Chaldee Paraphrases or Targums of great use. ibid. xi, p. 3. 76. they speak largely of the Aby G., or Word. p. 3. 106. they add to the text. p. 3. pref. ix. p. 3. 75. and own the Holy Ghost. p. 3. 109.

What things were wanting in the second Temple. p. 1. 28, 113. p. 3. 148. presenting in the Temple a type of Christ's ascension. p. 1. 110. of the greater type of Christ's ascension. p. 1. 110. of the greater glory of the second Temple. p. 3. 146. it's duration p. 3. 148. it's being enrich'd. p. 3. 149. the expression in Haggai, this latter bouse, means the second Temple. p. 3. 150. Christ was to come into it. p. 3. 146.

Books in the new Testament unsuspected. p. 1. 65. unquestionable. p. 1. 129. See Gospels.

Theudas, a pretender to be the Messias, his life. p. 1. 14. p. 2. 9.

Times how divided in scripture. p. 3. 164. the last times put for the days of the Messias. p. 1. 164. the time in which the Messias was to come. p.3.129. Titus Vespasian would have saved the temple. p. 2.9.

miracles reported of him what. p. 1. 62. Tradition how far to be depended on. p. 2. 15, 16, 18, 26. adhering to Tradition a cause of insidelity. p. 2. 26.

Trajan persecuted such as were of the family of David.

p. 2. 154.

Transubstantiation false. p. 1. 43. p. 2. 42, 60. p. 3.79.

pretended miracles brought to confirm it. p. 1. 60.

Ten Tribes a fabulous ftory of them. p. 3. 183.

The Trinity proved at large. p. 3. 78. not abfurd. p. 3. 79. doth not infer Tritheim. p. 3. 80. not repugnant to the law of Moses. ibid. not absolutely revealed in the old Testament. p. 3. 81. but fair intimations of it. ibid. opinion of the ancient Rabtis p. 2. 80. Testimories of Rhite. p. 2. 80. bins. p. 3. 82. Testimonies of Philo. p. 3. 93. Ob-

jections answered. p. 3. 87. Trinity known to the Heatbens. p. 3. 122. not chargeable with nonsense or contradiction. p. 3. 127. no novel doctrine. p. 3. 113, 126. it's being known to the Heatbens made way for the reception of Christianity. p. 3. 126. The Type put for the Antitype. p. 1.115.

JESPASIAN, See Titus. Universities ought to endeavour after the conversion of the Jews, and how. p. 3. 196.

Hings wanting in the second Temple. p. 3. 148. Wars among Christians hinder the conversion of the Jews. p. 2. 32.

Word put for thing. p. 1.2. p. 2.65, 95. Word in the Targums fignifies a divine person. p. 3. pref. v, xi. p. 3. 106. See Jesus, Christ, and Messias known to the Heathers. p. 3. 122. Philo testises largely hereof. p. 3. 100. that the Manna was a type hereof. ibid. as also Aaron's breast-plate. p. 3. 104. and the High Priest. p. 3. 105. that it was the governor of the world. p. 3. 102. the Son of God. p. 3. vernor of the world. p. 3. 102. the Son of God. p.3. 103. eternal. ibid. necessarily immortal. ibid. the image of God. ibid. the Advocate. p. 3. 104. the same with the wissom of God. ibid. the Branch. p. 3. 105. the mediator between God and man. ibid. without sin. ibid. a divine person. p. 3. 106. not begotten as man, nor unbegotten as the Father. ibid. testimonies of the Paraphrass concerning the Word. it.

Works do not justify. p. 3. 69.

The Ends or End of the World fignify the days of the MESSIAS. p. 3. 164. The World to come fignifies the days of the MESSIAS. p. 3. 164.

A Worldly temper a cause of infidelity. p. 2. 21.

## FINIS.



To the latter sew.

If They Joseph Jhat Those he believe not in X! are in g! Sin. 711 363 Notis.

To Hidden most Jucchif Those of overting v Jews.

Those of overting v Jews.

Fol 20 197.

